

# ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!

The Document Revealing GOD's Secret!

New Expanded Edition

Sadhu. C. Selva Raj (Appa) MSc.



**PRAISE THE LORD !  
ALLELUIA !**

**TO GOD, OUR FATHER BE PRAISE,  
THANKS, HONOUR AND GLORY BOTH  
NOW AND FOR EVER. AMEN.**

**“ FOR WE CAN DO  
NOTHING AGAINST THE TRUTH,  
BUT FOR THE TRUTH. ”**

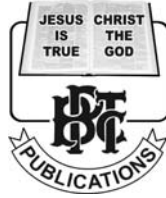
*II Corinthians 13 : 8*

*This page has been intentionally left blank*

# ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!

## THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!

*SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (APPA) MSc.*



**ஆதி பெந்தெகொஸ்தே சக்திய சபை**

தலைமை இடம் : மலவிலை

**ADHI PENTECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI**

Headquarters : Malavilai

**BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH**

Headquarters : Malavilai

**Copyright © ஆதி பெந்தெகொஸ்தே சத்திய சபை**

**தலைமை இடம் : மலவிலை**

**ADHI PENTHECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI**

**Headquarters : Malavilai**

**BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH**

**Headquarters : Malavilai**

**Author : SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (Appa) MSc.**

**Author's Address :**

**Sadhu. C. Selva Raj (Appa)**

**Malavilai Jeba Veedu**

**House of Prayer - Malavilai**

**Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai**

**Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church**

**Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai Malavilai Salai**

**Cheruppalur P.O., PIN - 629 161**

**Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India.**

**Name and Address of the Publisher :**

**ஆதி பெந்தெகொஸ்தே சத்திய சபை**

**தலைமை இடம் : மலவிலை**

**ADHI PENTHECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI**

**Headquarters : Malavilai**

**BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH**

**Headquarters : Malavilai**

**Edition : 2017**

**BPTCBN 0-00-01**

**All Scripture quotations are from  
the Authorized King James Version 1611.**

**Websites: [www.onegodonepeople-sadhuselvaraj.org](http://www.onegodonepeople-sadhuselvaraj.org)**

**[www.bptchurch.org](http://www.bptchurch.org)**

**E-mail : [spiritual@bptchurch.org](mailto:spiritual@bptchurch.org)**

PRAISE THE LORD! - ALLELUIA!

## Preface

Beloved in CHRIST,

**“BEHOLD, the days come, saith the LORD GOD, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the Words of the LORD.”**

Amos 8:11

In these last days, we have begun to feel and understand that this declaration of GOD through the prophet Amos is becoming more and more true. If we keep this in mind, even a cursory inspection of the book, **“ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!” – “THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD’S SECRET !!”** will convince us that it is a rare book.

This is a **rare book** because not many books of this kind, emphasizing the wages of sin, hell and the wrath of GOD are written nowadays. This is because most people like to hear and talk only about what they want for themselves, not what GOD wants for them. They want physical prosperity in this world, as that alone is pleasing to them and satisfying. They seem to think worldly prosperity alone is sufficient for them. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

**“But seek ye first the kingdom of GOD, and HIS righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.”**

St. Matthew 6:33

If we seek GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for HIS righteousness and HIS kingdom, then HE will surely supply all our need; HE will surely meet all our need according to HIS riches; HE will surely meet all our need gloriously; and HE will surely meet all our need by CHRIST JESUS HIMSELF. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures says,

**“But my GOD shall supply all your need according to HIS riches in glory by CHRIST JESUS.”**

Philippians 4:19

It is not only a rare book, but also a **precious book**. It is a **blessed book of GOD's secret**. In this precious book, the secret things (Deuteronomy 29:29) and the hidden things and the new things (Isaiah 48:6) which belong to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, are revealed to us by HIS own gracious will.

**“It is the glory of GOD to conceal a thing (matter): ...”**

Proverbs 25:2

**“O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of GOD! how unsearchable are HIS judgments, and HIS ways past finding out!”**

Romans 11:33

It is a precious and **blessed book** since it has been written through the immense grace of the ONLY TRUE GOD, for the physical as well as the spiritual goodness, for the worldly as well as the heavenly blessings of mankind.

It is a **challenging book**; because it gives a stern, severe, serious and solemn final call to GOD's people, reminding them of the trumpet call and urging them to be holy and sinless, faithful and obedient and to be prepared for the glorious appearing of the great GOD and our SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. **This book is the divine revelation of truth.**

“ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!” is an ancient saying in Tamil widely known and worthy of acceptance. This book has been written by the will and decision of the ONE GOD for mankind so that whoever reads it can understand who the ONE GOD is, who the ONE PEOPLE are, and live as one among the people of the ONE GOD and inherit the everlasting Kingdom of the ONE GOD and rule there with the ONE GOD for ever and ever as king and priest.



The author of this book is not in anyway worthy to write this book. Since the exceeding grace, mercy, kindness and love of the LORD GOD are upon the author, he has written this book for the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, by HIS great wisdom and on the leading of the HOLY SPIRIT. Let praise, honour, glory, majesty, wisdom, power and strength be to the ONE GOD, our SAVIOUR both now and ever. Amen.

Now, for the good of all and the safety and security and comfort of all, I write the same things again and again. As Paul, the apostle has said,

**“...To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe (a safeguard).”**

Philippians 3:1

Repetition has been used as a device to build up and develop a concept or a theme, step by step. It is the brick-by-brick method, which I have found very effective in spiritual discourses.

The phrases, **ONE GOD, ONLY ONE GOD** and **ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD** have been repeated several times so that they are intended to be watershed points where the reader can stand and gasp, admire and adore the divine attributes of the **MOST HOLY GOD** and rejoice in the Spirit. I am also convinced that the more the LORD GOD is praised and extolled, the better HE is known and HIS ways and HIS thoughts understood.

Attention has been drawn to the awareness of modern methods of worship and preaching of the Word of GOD in an entertainment saturated environment and self-indulgent atmosphere. Emphasis has been laid on the necessity to adhere meticulously to the life-changing aspect of our LORD's Gospel, with utmost care and all seriousness, without any watering down or dilution, without compromise or diminution, subtraction or substitution, confusion or contradiction or distortion, contortion or deviation.

The central subject of **the Holy Bible** is **THE HOLY GOD**. So, it is called and revered as **the Holy Bible**. It is a book for all times and all generations. It is in every respect a unique book. No other book can be compared with it. It is the only **Good Book** from time immemorial. It is the heavenly book given to mankind by the grace of the **LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST**, the Creator of heaven and earth. It is an unchanging and unchallengeable book. It is a true and everlasting testimony of what **GOD** has done, what **HE** is doing and also what **HE** is going to do. Thus, it is a '**divine bridge**' between man and **GOD**. **GOD has self-existence from Eternity to Eternity—Eternity past to Eternity future. The Holy Bible tells us of HIS Plan for all ages Eternity to Eternity—Eternity past to Eternity future.**

The **Holy Bible** in its completed form exhorts and calls upon the entire humanity to become true followers of the **LORD JESUS CHRIST**, the **ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD** and to have divine fellowship with like-minded people. Keeping this aim and need in mind, this book, "**ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!**" has been expanded with new additional insights to bring the **Holy Bible** to life for all. **I hope this edition will enable the present as well as the future generations to know and understand the superior and final triumphant status of all true Christians and the superiority and finality and fullness of Christianity.**

"**THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!**", revealed about my writing to **Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya)**, is put to bear the stamp of the documental authority of the **LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD**, over this precious book "**ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!**" — "**THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!**"

I am very grateful to my beloved co-worker in **CHRIST** and my own sister, born of the same parents, namely **C. Kanaka Bai**, demised in **CHRIST**, who worked very hard day and night for this precious book at about 14 years from ordinary hand type-setting to computer type-setting and I am very grateful to my beloved brother in **CHRIST**

namely **S. Damodaran** for all the help he has given me and I am very grateful to my beloved co-workers of our church in CHRIST for their help in publishing this precious and blessed book. May GOD bless them all richly and abundantly.

I have been praying for all to know and understand this precious book and to get worldly and heavenly blessings abundantly and to attain the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. I have also been praying for the future generations to know and understand this precious book and to get worldly and heavenly blessings abundantly and to attain the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

Let the grace of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD be with all those who read this book, who listen to the facts of this book, and who walk in the facts of this book. Amen.

**Yours in CHRIST,**

**SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (APPA)**

The LORD's Servant, who wishes the goodness of body and soul and the worldly and heavenly blessings of one and all.

**"...Happy is that people, whose GOD is the LORD."**

**Psalm 144 : 15**

*" ... Blessed are they that hear the Word of GOD, AND KEEP IT."*

*St. Luke 11:28*

**O my GOD, do not forsake me (Sadhu. C. Selva Raj) till I preach the Gospel, the Life-Giving Word of GOD to this generation and the generations to come**

*(Psalm 71:17-18).*

PRAISE THE LORD!

## Dedication

This precious book "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" – "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!" is written by the will of GOD and dedicated to our most holy GOD, the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, our REDEEMER and to all people in the world who are willing to live as ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, to the glory and praise of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST our FATHER. Grace and peace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.

*I (Sadhu. C. Selva Raj) wish Grace, Mercy,  
and Peace through JESUS CHRIST  
our LORD and our GOD.*

# Contents

<i>Preface</i>	5
<i>Dedication</i>	10
<i>Introduction: "ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!"</i>	29
<b>1. GOD, MAN, SPIRIT</b>	<b>31</b>
1. DIVINE QUALITIES OF GOD	43
2. THE WILL OF GOD	58
3. COMPONENTS OF MAN	63
3.1 THE LIFE OF MAN—DO YOU BELIEVE IN LIFE AFTER DEATH?	69
3.2 MAN, THE OUTWARD AND THE INWARD	71
3.3 WHAT IS MAN GOVERNED BY ?	73
3.4 SOULS OF SINNERS AFTER DEATH	74
3.5 SOULS OF SAINTS AFTER DEATH	75
4. THE SPIRIT OF MAN, THE SPIRIT OF GOD	76
5. ANGELS	85
6. EVIL SPIRITS	87
6.1 HORRIBLE PIT OF SATAN, THE DEVIL	88
6.2 PRIDE AND FALL OF SATAN, THE DEVIL	93
7. DIVINITY AND SATANISM	95
8. THE SHEKINAH GLORY OF GOD	96
<b>2. SIN, SALVATION AND PRAYER</b>	<b>99</b>
1. SINS BY BIRTH AND DEED	99
1.1 WAGES OF SIN	100
1.2 ORIGINAL SIN	101

1.3	WHAT ARE SINS ?	114
2.	HOW CAN A SINNER GO TO HEAVEN ?	150
3.	REPENTANCE FROM SINS	152
3.1	FORGIVENESS (REMISSION)	157
4.	SALVATION (DELIVERANCE)	159
4.1	DIVINE GOODNESS (DIVINE CONVERSION)	169
4.2	BORN-AGAIN EXPERIENCE (REGENERATION)	170
4.3	HOLINESS AND HOLY LIFE	171
4.4	EXPERIENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT	175
4.5	REDEMPTION FROM SINS	178
5.	PRAYER AND PRAYER LIFE	181
5.1	HOW SHOULD WE PRAY ?	185
5.2	WHAT IS HUMILITY ?	186
5.3	PRAYING FOR OTHERS	187
5.4	PRAYER ACCEPTABLE TO GOD	190
5.5	PRIVATE PRAYER	192
5.6	CONGREGATIONAL PRAYER	193
5.7	MEDITATIVE PRAYER	193
5.8	PRAYER WITH HANDS LIFTED UP	194
5.9	WAITING PRAYER	196
5.10	PRAYER WITH ONE ACCORD IN THE SPIRIT	200
5.11	SPIRITUAL GROWTH	202
5.12	WHAT SHOULD WE PRAY FOR ?	205
6.	BEWARE OF THE MUTILATION	208
<b>3.</b>	<b>GOD'S PLAN FOR HIS PEOPLE</b>	<b>209</b>
1.	THE ONLY ONE PEOPLE	209
1.1	THE FIRST STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN	216
1.2	THE SECOND STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN	217
1.3	THE THIRD STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN	218
1.4	THE FOURTH STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN	218
1.5	THE FINAL STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN	219

---

2.	GOD DWELLS IN HIS PEOPLE	220
3.	SALIENT FEATURES OF THE ONE PEOPLE	221
4.	GOD'S PEOPLE CAN NEVER BE SEPARATED	225
<b>4.</b>	<b>THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD</b>	<b>229</b>
1.	ATTRIBUTES	229
2.	PROPHETIC REVELATIONS	237
2.1	THE SEED OF THE WOMAN	237
2.2	THE FIRST COMING	244
2.3	CHRISTMAS	248
2.4	WHAT THE LORD JESUS GAVE UP	251
2.5	REASONS FOR COMING INTO THE WORLD	254
3.	SELF REVELATIONS	262
3.1	JESUS IS GOD, THE FATHER	262
3.2	GOOD SHEPHERD	262
3.3	DOOR	263
3.4	BREAD OF LIFE	263
3.5	TRUE VINE	264
3.6	RESURRECTION AND LIFE	265
3.7	THE WAY AND THE TRUTH AND THE LIFE	268
3.8	LIGHT OF THE WORLD	268
3.9	MASTER FROM HEAVEN	269
3.10	MODEL OF GOD'S SERVANTS	269
4.	GLORIOUS LIFE IN THIS WORLD	270
4.1	DIVINE HUMILITY AT BIRTH	270
4.2	VISIT OF THE WISE MEN (VISIT OF THE MAGI)	273
4.3	THE DIVINE SECRET	279
4.4	INDIAN HINDU REVIVALISM	279
4.5	ORIGIN OF ALL LANGUAGES	280
4.6	BAPTISM	282
4.7	TEMPTATION	283
4.8	DIVINE HEALER	285
4.9	GREAT MIRACLES	286
4.10	DIVINE SURGEON	286

---

4.11	DISCIPLES	287
4.12	JESUS MAKES HIMSELF INACCESSIBLE	288
4.13	THE TRANSFIGURATION	289
5.	TEACHINGS	291
5.1	THE LORD'S PRAYER	291
5.2	THE GREAT COMMANDMENT	301
5.3	THE LORD'S CALL	302
5.4	ELECTION AND PREDESTINATION	303
5.5	THE GREAT INVITATION	314
5.6	GREATEST IN THE KINGDOM OF GOD	314
5.7	CHILDREN BLESSED, NOT BAPTIZED	315
5.8	ADULTERY	315
5.9	DIVORCE	316
5.10	ANGER	317
5.11	OATHS	318
5.12	LOVE	319
5.13	RESURRECTION	320
5.14	CARE AND ANXIETY	322
5.15	WHOM TO FEAR ?	323
5.16	WARNING OF PERSECUTIONS	324
5.17	THE BEATITUDES	325
5.18	THE STRAIT AND WIDE GATES	325
6.	BEFORE CRUCIFIXION	326
6.1	THE TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM	327
6.2	CLEANSING THE TEMPLE	329
6.3	END-TIME SIGNS	331
6.4	JESUS ANOINTED	333
6.5	CONSPIRACY OF JUDAS	335
6.6	WASHING DISCIPLES' FEET	336
6.7	THE LORD'S SUPPER (HOLY COMMUNION) ESTABLISHED	338
6.8	BETRAYAL FORETOLD	339
6.9	THE NEW COMMANDMENT	341
6.10	GREAT PROMISE	341
6.11	PASSION IN THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE	342
6.12	BETRAYAL BY JUDAS	344



---

6.13	LAST MIRACLE	347
6.14	JESUS IN A PIT	348
6.15	SEVEN UNJUST TRIALS	348
6.16	JESUS SENTENCED	370
6.17	THE VIA DOLOROSA	371
7.	CRUCIFIXION AND AFTER	374
7.1	CRUCIFIXION	374
7.2	THE MOST TERRIBLE DEATH OF JESUS WITH GREAT AGONY ON THE CROSS	376
7.3	THE MOST AWFUL VISION OF JESUS ON THE CROSS	378
7.4	PIERCED	379
7.5	JUDAS HANGS HIMSELF	380
7.6	DEATH ON THE CROSS	382
7.7	THE PASSION	388
7.8	CHRIST DIED FOR THE GLORY OF GOD AS WELL	398
7.9	THE GREAT EVENT BEFORE DEATH	399
7.10	THE GREAT POWER TO GIVE UP AND TAKE BACK HIS LIFE	400
7.11	SEVEN WORDS ON THE CROSS	401
7.12	EVENTS AFTER DEATH	422
7.13	TRUE SACRIFICE	423
7.14	<b>12</b> BLESSINGS THROUGH THE BLOOD	426
7.15	GOOD FRIDAY	429
7.16	THE GREAT I AM	429
7.17	THE HOLY SEPULCHRE (THE HOLY TOMB)	430
8.	THE GLORIOUS RESURRECTION AND AFTER	432
8.1	RESURRECTION	432
8.2	<b>12</b> THINGS OVERCOME BY JESUS	434
8.3	<b>10</b> BLESSINGS OF RESURRECTION	437
8.4	<b>7</b> CONSEQUENCES OF THE RESURRECTION CONFIRMED	439
8.5	EASTER	441
8.6	FIRST APPEARANCE TO MARY MAGDALENE	441
8.7	FIRST APPEARANCE TO DISCIPLES	442
8.8	THE SABBATH	443

---

8.9	THE LORD'S MINISTRY CONTINUES	444
8.10	THE GREAT COMMISSION	445
8.11	THE GLORIOUS ASCENSION	446
8.12	JESUS WILL COME AGAIN	447
9.	THREE PARABLES	449
9.1	THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS	449
9.2	THE RICH FOOL	452
9.3	THE LOST SON (THE PRODIGAL SON)	453
10.	SEVEN SIGNIFYING MIRACLES OF JESUS	455
11.	THE LOVING GOD, ALWAYS WITH US	458
11.1	EMMANUEL, GOD WITH US	458
11.2	JESUS CHRIST IS THE LOVING GOD	458
<b>5.</b>	<b>WHY SHOULD THE LORD JESUS SUFFER AND DIE FOR SINNERS ?</b>	<b>461</b>
1.	GOD IS MERCIFUL AND JUST	461
1.1	GOD'S MERCY MOVED THE THIEF	463
1.2	GOD'S MERCY MADE HIM SHED BLOOD	467
1.3	GOD'S MERCY GRANTS SANCTIFICATION	469
1.4	GOD'S MERCY GRANTS THE HOLY SPIRIT	472
2.	TO AVOID HELL-FIRE	473
2.1	TO SEPARATE US FROM SIN	474
3.	JESUS SUFFERED TO BECOME OUR MEDIATOR	477
3.1	SINNERS TO KNOW GOD	481
3.2	SINNERS TO SEEK GOD	482
3.3	SINNERS TO SEEK GODLINESS	483
4.	DIED FOR A HOLY CHURCH	484
4.1	TO GRANT POWER OF RESURRECTION	485
4.2	TO GRANT SPIRITUAL GIFTS AND FRUITS	486
4.3	TO SAVE SINNERS	489
4.4	TO BE THE ONLY SAVIOUR	490

---

<b>6. CHRISTIANS, END-TIME, MILLENNIUM, JUDGMENT, HELL AND KINGDOM OF GOD</b>	<b>493</b>
1. WHO IS A TRUE CHRISTIAN ?	493
1.1 WHO IS A TRUE MAN ?	500
2. WHO IS JEHOVAH ?	503
2.1 WHO IS MESSIAH ?	507
2.2 THE HOLY TRINITY	510
2.3 THE WAY OF CHRIST	513
3. END-TIME	514
3.1 THE SECRET COMING	514
3.2 TWO RESURRECTIONS	515
4. THE GREAT TRIBULATION	519
4.1 TWO WITNESSES	519
4.2 ANTICHRIST	520
5. MILLENNIUM (1000 YEARS) RULE	525
6. JUDGMENT	530
6.1 JUDGMENT TO SATAN, THE DEVIL	530
6.2 THE GLORIOUS OPEN COMING OF CHRIST	531
6.3 FINAL JUDGMENT	533
6.4 WHO WILL BE PUNISHED ?	537
6.5 HORRIBLE HELL	545
6.6 WHO WILL NOT ESCAPE HELL ?	551
6.7 HELL FOR SATAN, FALLEN ANGELS	553
6.8 HELL FOR MANKIND	554
6.9 THE ETERNAL DESTRUCTION IN HELL	555
7. HEAVEN, THE KINGDOM OF GOD	556
7.1 THE MOST WONDERFUL HEAVEN	558
7.2 THE MOST GLORIOUS LIFE IN HEAVEN	559
7.3 GOD'S KINGDOM FOR MANKIND	560
7.4 RESURRECTION EXPLAINED	561
7.5 SEVEN PARABLES DESCRIBING THE COURSE OF THIS AGE	562

<b>7. THE HOLY BIBLE AND TRUE WORSHIP</b>	<b>565</b>
1. THE HOLY BIBLE	565
1.1 FIVE BOOKS OF HEAVEN	574
1.2 WHAT DOES THE HOLY BIBLE SHOW ?	577
1.3 THE SECRETS OR MYSTERIES IN THE HOLY BIBLE	577
1.4 CONTENTS OF THE HOLY BIBLE	579
1.5 HOW DOES GOD REVEAL THROUGH THE HOLY BIBLE ?	580
1.6 WHAT DOES THE HOLY BIBLE REVEAL ?	581
1.7 THE UNIQUE BOOK	583
1.8 WHICH IS THE BEST VERSION OF THE HOLY BIBLE ?	586
1.9 TO SPEAK ILL OF THE HOLY BIBLE IS SIN	593
1.10 DOCTRINAL TRUTHS	594
1.11 GOD SPEAKS TO US	600
2. USELESS WORSHIP AND TRUE WORSHIP	603
2.1 GOD CANNOT BE CONTAINED	605
2.2 WHOM TO WORSHIP ?	606
2.3 NO IDOLS	607
2.4 USELESS WORSHIP	609
2.5 GOD, SELF-EXISTENT CREATOR AND RULER	610
2.6 TRUE WORSHIPPERS	612
2.7 WITH WHOM TO WORSHIP ?	612
2.8 HOW TO WORSHIP ?	613
<b>8. REVELATION ABOUT ETERNAL LIGHT AND ETERNAL KINGDOM</b>	<b>617</b>
1. QURAN ON LORD JESUS	617
1.1 QURAN INSTRUCTS NOT TO DOUBT JESUS	617
1.2 QURAN CONFIRMS THE HOLY BIRTH OF JESUS	618
1.3 QURAN TELLS ABOUT THE MIRACLES OF JESUS	618
1.4 QURAN TELLS ABOUT THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS	619
2. GOD IS LIGHT AND SALVATION	619

---

2.1	JESUS CHRIST IS THE TRUE LIGHT	620
2.2	LIGHT OF GOD	621
2.3	GOD'S WORD GIVES LIGHT	621
2.4	LORD JESUS IS LIGHT AND SALVATION	621
2.5	JOHN, THE BAPTIST BEARS WITNESS	622
2.6	GLORY OF LORD JESUS IS GLORY OF TRUE GOD	622
2.7	JESUS, THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD	623
2.8	LIGHT OF LIFE	623
2.9	FINAL JUDGE	623
2.10	WHO WILL NOT PERISH ?	624
2.11	JESUS CAME TO SAVE	624
2.12	JESUS IS ETERNAL LIFE	624
2.13	THE LIGHT OF THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST	625
2.14	JESUS, THE PRECIOUS LIGHT	625
2.15	JESUS, THE MARVELLOUS LIGHT	625
2.16	JESUS, THE GREAT LIGHT	626
2.17	JESUS, THE WORD OF GOD IS THE LAMP AND THE LIGHT	626
2.18	JESUS, THE REVIVING LIGHT	627
2.19	THE LIGHT IN THE LAND OF THE LIVING	627
2.20	JESUS, THE ETERNAL LIGHT	627
2.21	JESUS, GOD OF THE LIVING	628
2.22	JESUS, THE ONLY DELIVERER	628
2.23	JESUS, THE ONLY SAVIOUR	628
2.24	JESUS, THE ONLY REDEEMER	629
2.25	JESUS, THE PROPITIATION	629
3.	OUR LIFE IN THIS WORLD	630
3.1	HOW SHOULD WE WALK ?	630
4.	HEAVEN, THE ETERNAL KINGDOM	632
4.1	REVELATION TO JOHN	632
5.	AGASTHIYAR, THE HINDU SAGE'S REVELATION	637
5.1	ON TRUE WORSHIP	637
5.2	ON THE WAY TO HEAVEN	639

<b>9. BESTOWAL OF DIVINE EXPERIENCE</b>	<b>643</b>
1. SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	643
1.1 WITNESS OF SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	644
1.2 A HORRIBLE VISION	647
1.3 HE WAS SAVED	648
1.4 AFTER HIS SALVATION	649
1.5 THE LORD COMMANDED HIM TO DO THE LORD'S MINISTRY	649
1.6 THE LORD'S MINISTRY STARTED	650
1.7 A MOST GLORIOUS VISION OF JESUS CHRIST	650
1.8 CONTINUED HIS GOVERNMENT JOB	650
1.9 THE LORD COMMANDED HIM TO RESIGN HIS JOB	652
1.10 THE LORD'S MINISTRY STARTED IN THIS PLACE AT MALAVILAI	652
1.11 ANOINTED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD	653
1.12 THE LORD COMMANDED HIM TO GIVE BAPTISM TO THE SAVED	653
1.13 LEFT FROM THE HEAD-PREACHER OF KIRUBASANAM	654
1.14 BIBLE STUDY OR THEOLOGICAL STUDY	655
1.15 THE LORD JESUS CHRIST STARTED TO TEACH HIM DIRECTLY	656
1.16 A HORRIBLE VISION OF DEVOURING FIRE OF THE LORD'S JEALOUSY ON THE WHOLE WORLD	656
1.17 A PROPHECY IN KIRUBASANAM AT KANCHIRACODE	657
1.18 150 DAYS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING	658
1.19 6 MONTHS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING	658
1.20 10 MONTHS AND 1 WEEK CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING	659
1.21 HE WAS STABBED—HIS WITNESS	659
1.22 13 MONTHS AND 4 DAYS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING	663
1.23 THE LORD SENT MICHAEL, THE ARCHANGEL TO HELP HIM IN A 40 DAYS CONTINUOUS LONGHARD FASTING	664
1.24 HE FELT UNCONSCIOUS	665

---

1.25	THE LORD GAVE HIS HEAVENLY FOOD THREE TIMES TO KEEP HIM ALIVE	665
1.26	WENT INTO A VERY DENSELY FOREST AREA, FAR NORTH FROM PECHIPARAI DAM TO PRAY	666
1.27	WENT TWO TIMES TO VELIMALAI; A MOUNTAINOUS PLACE TO PRAY	668
1.28	THE MOST GLORIOUS VISION ABOUT HEAVEN, THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND THE MOST TREMENDOUS VISION ABOUT JUDGMENT AND HELL, THE FIERY LAKE OF BURNING SULPHUR	670
1.29	A GLORIOUS VISION ABOUT PARADISE	671
1.30	THE SEMINARY OF HIS STUDY	671
1.31	RECEIVED THE CERTIFICATE FROM THE LORD JESUS CHRIST	672
1.32	WHO IS GOING TO SIT ON THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S RIGHT HAND IN HIS KINGDOM?	672
1.33	OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST HAS GIVEN TO SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA) THE FOLLOWING PROMISES	674
1.34	SOME IMPORTANT PROPHECIES ABOUT THE LORD'S CHURCH AND ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	675
1.35	VISIT OF THE HOLY LAND	677
1.36	AFTER RETURNING FROM JERUSALEM, HE HAD SPOKEN THE FOLLOWING PROPHECY	678
1.37	ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA), OUR GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST HAS WRITTEN IN HIS BOOK, THE HOLY BIBLE	679
1.38	THE LAST PROPHECY THROUGH SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	679
1.39	SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA) SLEPT IN CHRIST	680
1.40	MY MOST HOLY FAITH (BELIEF) AND LIVING HOPE ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	681
2.	SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (APPA)	683
2.1	MY MOTHER GAVE ME A STAUNCH FAITH (BELIEF) ABOUT THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST	683

2.2	MY FAMILY BROTHER GAVE ME A STAUNCH FAITH (BELIEF) ABOUT THE LORD'S CHURCH AND ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	683
2.3	MY LORD AND MY GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST TOUCHED ME AND MET ME	684
2.4	USED TO GO TO THE LORD'S CHURCH, ADHI PENTHECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI (BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH) AT MALAVILAI AND SAVED	684
2.5	I SOUGHT THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AND RECEIVED HIS BLESSINGS	685
2.6	RECEIVED BAPTISM AND BECAME A BELIEVER OF ADHI PENTHECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI (BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH)	686
2.7	GOD'S DIVINE CALL REVEALED	686
2.8	RESIGNED MY GOVERNMENT JOB TO DO THE LORD'S MINISTRY	686
2.9	ANOINTED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD AND JOINED IN HIS MINISTRY	687
2.10	ORDAINED AS A MINISTER OF GOD	688
2.11	GLORIOUS PROMISES OF THE LORD ABOUT ME	688
2.12	AGAIN ORDAINED ME AND HANDED OVER TO ME THE RECORDS AND SEALS OF THE CHURCH	689
2.13	A GLORIOUS VISION ABOUT MY WRITINGS REVEALED TO SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	690
2.14	THE SCHEMER SATAN, THE DEVIL SCHEMED TO KILL ME MANY TIMES	690
2.15	FROM THE HANDS OF ROBBERS, FROM KANNIYA- KUMARI-CAPE COMORIN, THE SOUTHERN MOST POINT, A HEADLAND OF INDIA, OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST SAVED US THROUGH SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)	692
2.16	A SMALL AND HOLY AND FAITHFUL WITNESS	694
2.17	MY STRIVING, LABOURS, PAINS AND TRIBULA- TIONS FOR THE LORD'S CHURCH AND FOR THE LORD'S MINISTRY	696



---

2.18	MY MOST HOLY FAITH (BELIEF) AND LIVING HOPE AND MY WISH	708
3.	DIVINE EXPERIENCE THROUGH WHOM ?	709
3.1	DIVINE EXPERIENCE	709
3.2	STUMBLING-BLOCKS	709
3.3	DIVINITY THROUGH THE HOLY BIBLE	711
3.4	DIVINITY THROUGH WHOM ?	711
3.5	DIVINITY REVEALED BY LORD'S SERVANTS	712
3.6	THE WAY TO DIVINITY	712
3.7	WHO WILL ENTER THE DIVINE WORLD ?	713
4.	FOLLOWING LORD JESUS	713
<b>10.</b>	<b>GOD'S MINISTERS OR SERVANTS</b>	<b>719</b>
1.	THE FIRST CHRISTIAN CHURCH	719
1.1	BISHOPS OR ELDERS AND DEACONS	720
2.	<b>66</b> CHARACTERISTICS OF GOD'S MINISTERS	727
3.	SEVERE WARNINGS	784
3.1	FALSE PROPHETS	785
3.2	WOMEN AND MINISTRY	786
3.3	THEOLOGICAL INSTITUTIONS	789
3.4	FALLIBILITY OF THE PRESENT BIBLICAL EDUCATION SYSTEM	798
3.5	HOW IS THE SEMINARY EMBEDDED IN OUR CHURCH ?	802
4.	THE MINISTRY OF OUR CHURCH	806
5.	A PERILOUS MINISTRY —THE EMERGING CHURCH MOVEMENT	807
<b>11.</b>	<b>FOODS, GREETINGS AND FESTIVALS</b>	<b>809</b>
1.	CLEAN AND UNCLEAR FOODS	809
1.1	<b>9</b> RESTRICTIONS	810
2.	GREETINGS OR PRAISING	821
2.1	<b>13</b> POINTS ABOUT PRAISES	822

2.2	THE REVELATION REGARDING PRAISE (PRAISE THE LORD)	832
3.	CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS	833
3.1	<b>19</b> POINTS ABOUT FESTIVALS	834
4.	DO CHRISTIANS NEED PILGRIMAGES?	887
<b>12.</b>	<b>BAPTISM AND LORD'S SUPPER OR HOLY COMMUNION</b>	889
1.	BAPTISM	889
1.1	WHAT IS BAPTISM? AND BLESSINGS OF BAPTISM—31 BLESSINGS	889
1.2	WHERE TO GO ?	897
1.3	HOW TO RECEIVE ?	898
1.4	HOW TO BE BAPTIZED ?	898
1.5	BY WHOM ?	899
1.6	IN WHOSE NAME ?	899
1.7	WHO TO BE BAPTIZED ?	903
1.8	CHILD BAPTISM	917
1.9	HOW MANY BAPTISMS ?	924
1.10	NEGLECT OF BAPTISM	924
1.11	SIGNIFICANCE OF BAPTISM	925
2.	LORD'S SUPPER OR HOLY COMMUNION	927
2.1	PASSOVER	927
2.2	PARTICIPANTS	931
2.3	MEANING OF LORD'S SUPPER	956
2.4	IMPORTANCE	959
2.5	IMPROPER PARTICIPATION	960
2.6	WASHING OF FEET	961
2.7	WHOSE REMEMBRANCE ?	963
2.8	BLESSINGS OF LORD'S SUPPER	964
2.9	SIGNIFICANCE OF LORD'S SUPPER	965

---

<b>13. THE LORD'S CHURCH</b>	<b>969</b>
1. THE CHURCH	969
1.1 ASSEMBLING TOGETHER	973
1.2 COMMUNAL SHARING—NOT COMMUNISM OR MAOISM	975
1.3 CHURCH DISCIPLINE	976
1.4 CHURCH AND STATE	979
1.5 PURPOSE OF THE CHURCH	979
1.6 CHURCH—BRIDE OF CHRIST	980
1.7 CHURCH—BODY OF CHRIST	980
1.8 CHURCH—ONE NEW MAN	980
1.9 CHURCH—KINGDOM OF GOD	981
1.10 CHURCH—GOD'S FIELD	981
1.11 CHURCH—HOUSE OF GOD OR HOUSEHOLD OF GOD	981
1.12 CHURCH—DWELLING PLACE OF THE LIVING GOD	981
1.13 CHURCH—WARRIOR OR FIGHTER	982
1.14 CHURCH—SALT OF THE EARTH	982
1.15 CHURCH—LIGHT OF THE WORLD	983
2. THE LORD'S CHURCH	984
3. SALIENT FEATURES	986
4. DIVINE HEALING OR FAITH HEALING	989
4.1 WHY SHOULD THE BELIEVERS NOT TAKE ANY MEDICINE ?	998
4.2 WHY SHOULD THE BELIEVERS NOT DEFILE THEIR BODIES ?	999
5. SOME IMPORTANT PROMISES	1003
6. DIVINE REVELATION OF THE SUN-CLAD WOMAN	1005
7. GOD'S MANDATE ABOUT JEWELLERY AND DRESS	1013
<b>14. CHRISTIANITY</b>	<b>1021</b>
1. GOD IS LOVE	1023
2. RELIGION OF LOVE	1025
3. BLESSINGS OF CHRISTIANITY	1026
4. CHRISTIAN LIFE	1028
5. SELF-SURRENDER	1037

6. ESSENCE	1037
7. ONLY UNIVERSAL RELIGION	1039
8. CONTINUATION OF JEWISH RELIGION	1041
9. HISTORY (FROM ADAM TO CHRIST)	1043
10. BELIEVERS OF CHRIST OR MESSIAH ARE CALLED CHRISTIANS	1110
10.1 CHRISTIANITY—THE ONLY DIVINE RELIGION OF CHRIST OR MESSIAH	1111
10.2 CHRISTIANITY IS THE CONTINUATION OF THE FIRST-EVER RELIGION	1112
10.3 CHRISTIANITY—HIDDEN AND REVEALED	1118
11. OTHER RELIGIONS	1119
12. CULTS OR SECTS AND ISMS	1125
12.1 SPIRITISM	1127
12.2 MORMONISM	1128
12.3 JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES	1129
12.4 CHRISTIAN SCIENCE	1132
12.5 UNITARIANISM	1133
12.6 UNIFICATION CHURCH	1134
12.7 THE WORLDWIDE CHURCH OF GOD	1135
12.8 THE UNITY SCHOOL OF CHRISTIANITY	1136
12.9 THE SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS	1137
12.10 THE SALVATION ARMY	1141
12.11 CHRISTADELPHIANISM	1141
12.12 ARMINIANISM AND CALVINISM	1141
12.13 FREEMASONRY	1144
12.14 HUMANISM—HUMANISTS	1145
12.15 THEOSOPHY	1146
12.16 HINDU-BUDDHIST CULTS	1146
12.17 ROMAN CATHOLICISM—THE CULT OF MARY	1146
12.18 CAN CHRISTIANS (THE SAVED) REMAIN CATHOLICS ?	1148
12.19 NEW AGE	1149
12.20 SCIENTOLOGY	1150
12.21 THE CHRISTIAN MIND SHOULD NEVER BE SEDUCED	1153
12.22 APOSTOLIC AND EVANGELICAL AND CHARISMATIC AND PENTECOSTAL AND PROTESTANT CHAOS	1157

---

13. THE DEITY AND HUMANITY OF JESUS CHRIST	1160
13.1 THE DEITY OF JESUS CHRIST	1160
13.2 THE HUMANITY OF JESUS CHRIST	1162
14. CHRISTIANITY IS THE ONLY TRUE RELIGION	1164
14.1 TRIALS, TRIBULATIONS AND SUFFERINGS	1166
<b>15. THE LAST DAY</b>	1175
1. <b>66</b> EVENTS	1175
2. HOW TO ESCAPE THE WRATH OF GOD ?	1226
3. PERILOUS TIMES OF THE PRESENT AGE	1227
<b>16. GOD IS WONDERFUL ! GOD IS TERRIBLE !</b>	
<b>GOD'S FINAL CALL TO BE THE ONE PEOPLE !</b>	1229
1. GOD'S MIGHTY POWER DEMONSTRATED [18 INSTANCES]	1229
2. WHO ARE THE BLESSED ?	1246
3. MAN-MADE GODS	1254
4. GOD'S DWELLING	1257
5. RESPECT HOLY PLACES	1259
6. ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!	1261
6.1 WHO IS THE ONE GOD ?	1266
6.2 EXISTENCE OF GOD	1273
6.3 THE HOLY BIBLE ALONE DECLARES " THE ONLY TRUE GOD "	1278
6.4 STRIVE TO ENTER INTO HEAVEN	1281
6.5 GOD'S FINAL CALL TO BE THE ONE PEOPLE	1287
6.6 SOME VERY IMPORTANT SPIRITUAL THINGS REGARDING SPIRITUAL LIFE—THE SO-CALLED CHRISTIAN WORLD OR CHRISTENDOM	1300
6.7 SOME MOST IMPORTANT END-TIME EVENTS	1332
6.8 INCOMPREHENSIBLE AND IMMEASURABLE DIVINE PERFECTION AND INEFFABLE DIVINE WONDERFUL- NESS OF GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST	1343
6.9 EVERYONE REQUIRES THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD	1356

---

6.10	THE UNSEARCHABLE AND UNTRACEABLE RICHES OF THE RICH CHRIST	1369
6.11	THE DIVINE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST	1373
6.11.1	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY REGARDING OBEDIENCE	1376
6.11.2.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY ON DIGNITY	1377
6.11.3.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IS NOT OF THIS WORLD	1377
6.11.4.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IS PATERNAL- ISTIC	1378
6.11.5.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY ON CHILDREN AND PARENTAL CARE	1378
6.11.6.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IN LEADERSHIP	1381
6.11.7.	JESUS NEVER IMPOSED HIS DIVINE AUTHORITY ON OTHERS	1382
6.11.8.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY REGARDING FREEDOM	1382
6.11.9.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IN SPEAKING	1383
6.11.10.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY ON POWER OF MONEY	1384
6.11.11.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY REGARDING HIS MINISTRY	1384
6.11.12.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY OVER HIS CHURCH	1385
6.11.13.	JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT	1386
6.12	THE SUPERIOR AND FINAL TRIUMPHANT STATUS OF CHRISTIANS! THE SUPERIORITY AND FINALITY AND FULLNESS OF CHRISTIANITY!	1388
6.13	MY MOST HOLY FAITH (BELIEF) AND LIVING HOPE	1391
	<i>Prayers of Adoration!</i>	1401

# Introduction

## **ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !! THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!**

It is a well-known fact that the ancient Tamil proverb, "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" has been widely accepted, approved, recognized and often quoted as truth. Yet, the question arises—Why are there so many sects of people, so many gods and so many ways of worship? It is because of man's sins, vain thoughts, immoralities (including incest, adultery, fornication, homosexuality, lesbian relationship, bestiality, or even the desire for such immoral activities), lasciviousness, hallucinations, revellings (revellings, orgies and carousals), rivalries, obscenities, debauchery, insensitiveness, selfishness, envy, murder, idolatry, sorcery, greediness, covetousness, drunkenness, ignorance and lack of true wisdom. It is because of man's heart and mind, depraved and deceived by Satan, the devil and darkened and hardened by him. As a result, man's heart is embedded in pride and rebellion and nurtured in wickedness and evil.

No wonder, man with such a heart is unwilling to receive the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and to worship HIM in spirit and in truth, with holiness and fear.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST knew me and predestined me by HIS

will to be a servant of JESUS CHRIST before HE formed me in my mother's womb and accordingly ordained me through **Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya)** to glorify, in these last days the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD through this book. This book is a divine writing of the subject of this present time and eternity. This book is the divine revelation of truth.

The LORD by HIS abundant grace gave me the desire and the talent to write this book. The ways to seek, to find and to know intimately and to continue to serve and please the ONE GOD through the Word of GOD, have been lucidly explained and exhaustively dealt with. To understand its contents one should read it thoroughly and thoughtfully with prayer and devotion. If we keep and obey the facts and truths of this book we will receive immense blessings, since this book is "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!"

**"But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the FATHER in spirit and in truth: for the FATHER seeketh such to worship HIM."**

St. John 4:23

'The FATHER' is 'GOD the FATHER'. 'GOD the FATHER' is 'the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF'. HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

Once the famous scientist **Sir James Young Simpson**, the pioneer practitioner of Anesthesia to humans in the field of medicine, was asked, **"What is your greatest invention?"** He replied, **"I am a sinner but JESUS CHRIST is my SAVIOUR; I consider this my greatest invention."** He also added that, **"I looked unto JESUS CHRIST who was very severely whipped and who horribly died on the cross. I cried unto HIM by confessing my sins. My sins were forgiven by HIM (St. Mark 2:10). And in HIM I received salvation from sins and redemption from sins through HIS precious blood (St. Matthew 26:28; Ephesians 1:7; 2:8) free of cost and I made up my mind and took it as my whole duty to tell about my SAVIOUR and HIS Salvation."** What a blessed thing it is!



## GOD, MAN, SPIRIT

**“FOR THERE IS ONE GOD, . . . JESUS CHRIST.”**

**I Timothy 2:5**

**“The fool hath (has) said in his heart, There is no GOD.  
They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, . . .”**

**Psalms 14:1**

This fool is surely empty-headed. Every deed of his, is abominable and he is corrupt or impure.

**THERE IS A GOD. There is ONE GOD. There is ONE AND ONLY GOD. There is ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and eternal life, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I John 5:20).** There is a divine sweet and gentle and delicate little voice in our hearts. GOD has most wonderfully recorded (written) this little voice in our hearts. This little voice in our hearts asks for GOD. And this little voice in our hearts tells us that there is a GOD.

In our GOD and LORD JESUS CHRIST are hidden all the treasures of divine wisdom and knowledge (Colossians 2:3). All the riches of spiritual knowledge and wisdom are stored-up and hidden in HIM. These divine wisdom and knowledge are comprehensive insights into the ways and purposes of GOD.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is our wisdom and knowledge (I Corinthians 1:30).

It is from GOD that we have our life in CHRIST JESUS. Our GOD revealed to us a knowledge of the divine plan of salvation, previously hidden, manifesting itself as our Righteousness. This divine

Righteousness makes us upright and puts us in right standing with GOD and provides our ransom from eternal penalty for sin.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is all wise. HE is the only wise GOD (Jude 25). HE wants all mankind to know 'there is a GOD'. So HE makes them hear this by a delicate little voice in their hearts (I Kings 19:12; Proverbs 8:4).

*"Unto you, O men, I call; and MY voice is to the sons of man."*

Proverbs 8:4

But, **we cannot see** GOD. All people have this little voice in their hearts, telling them there is a GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

All people reveal the Law of GOD written (recorded) in their hearts, their consciences bearing witness (Romans 2:15). Hence, all people reveal the existence of GOD written (recorded) in their hearts, their consciences bearing witness. Further, all people have this little voice in their hearts; revealing them there is a GOD, the glorious existence of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The voice of the sun, moon, planets and stars also goes out into all the earth. The heavens declare the glory of GOD; the skies proclaim the work of HIS hands (Psalm 19:1-4).

Some people (the atheists) say there is no GOD (Psalm 14:1). They do not like to retain GOD in their knowledge (Romans 1:28). They do not like to retain GOD in their hearts. They do not pray at all! But deep down their hearts there is that little voice that says, "Yes, there is a GOD".

Once an atheist started to write an atheistic book with an atheistic title—"There is no GOD'. When he was writing that book, many times he had that little voice in his heart that said again and again, "Yes, there is a GOD. Yes, there is a GOD. ..." But, he never minded that little voice in his heart. As he was about to finish that book, he heard a very fearful voice from heaven that said,

"I AM".

When he heard this voice, he was terrified and frightened and troubled. His face turned very pale and his thoughts greatly troubled him. He could not write any more against GOD. Then, again and again

he heard this very fearful voice with a very terrible sound. This very fearful voice sent shivers up and down his spine. He shivered and trembled with great fear. He was so frightened that the joints of his hips were loosed and his knees knocked against each other and his hands were greatly shivering and trembling. He was unable to write even a single word more against GOD. So, he stopped his atheistic writings. He tore that book and put it into the fire. His atheistic writings came to an end. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

All moral filth and evil are the outcome of the denial of GOD's glorious existence. The atheists' defect is moral as well as mental. Though they deny GOD, HE really sees; HE really speaks and HE really acts (Psalm 14:1-4).

**We cannot see GOD.** We can look and look. We can search everywhere. We cannot see GOD. But, **we can know GOD.** HE is very important. So we want to know HIM. Would you like to see GOD? Yes, you would. We have listened to GOD but we cannot see GOD. Nobody has ever seen GOD. No one has ever seen GOD.

**Why can we not see GOD ?** We cannot see HIM because HE is Spirit. We cannot see a spirit; can we?

**What is a spirit ?** GOD forms the spirit of man within him (Zechariah 12:1). When GOD made (created) you, HE gave you a spirit (Ecclesiastes 12:7). This spirit is invisible. Where is your spirit? It is inside your body. It lives inside your body. So, you cannot see your spirit. But, you live because your spirit lives and you die because your spirit returns to GOD (Ecclesiastes 12:7).

What are you doing now? You are listening (while you are reading). What does it mean? It means that your spirit is listening (while you are reading). It means that your spirit is listening (while you are reading or hearing) through your heart (Acts 16:14).

It is your spirit that listens while you read. Now, nobody can see your spirit. No one can see your spirit. But, you can feel it is inside you.

**GOD is Spirit** (St. John 4:24). HE is All-Spirit. That is why we cannot see HIM. But, HE really sees; HE really hears; HE really speaks;

HE really acts; and HE really loves. But we cannot see HIM and we must not see HIM. Why mustn't we see HIM?

**There is a reason, too, why we must not see GOD.** GOD is all glorious. That means that HE is very holy and shiny bright. HE is exceedingly bright; HE is dazzlingly bright. **Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of Glory** (Acts 7:2). Midday sunlight is very bright; we cannot then look at the sun because that light will dazzle us and make us blind for a moment. But GOD's glory is far more dazzling than the midday sun.

GOD's glory is so bright, so dazzling that nobody could bear to see HIS glory. GOD's glory is much greater than the sun's glory.

The sunshine and the stars tell us, reveal to us GOD's glory. GOD's creations reveal HIS glory. But, do we reveal HIS glory? (Psalm 19: 1-4).

We read in the Holy Bible about a man named Moses. He greatly respected GOD. He implicitly obeyed GOD. GOD often talked to Moses. But Moses never saw GOD.

One day, Moses said to GOD,

*"Shew me THY glory (Please, show me YOUR face, YOUR glory)."*

Exodus 33:18

GOD said to Moses,

*"Thou canst not see MY face: for there shall no man see ME, and live (You cannot see MY face; for no man can see ME, and live)."*

Exodus 33:20

Again, GOD said to Moses,

*"Behold, there is a place by ME, and thou shalt stand upon a rock: And it shall come to pass, while MY glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a cleft of the rock, and will cover thee with MY hand while I pass by: And I will take away MINE hand, and thou shalt see MY back parts: but MY face shall not be seen."*

Exodus 33:21-23

Moses went up a mountain alone. GOD hid him between the rocks and GOD passed by him. GOD let Moses (allowed Moses) see just a

little (tiny) bit of HIS glory. Even a man like Moses could not stand to see more of HIS glory.

When Moses came down from the mountain, his face was bright as sunshine. Just seeing a tiny bit, wee bit of GOD's glory made his face shine so bright. Then the people who saw his face shine became afraid of him (Exodus 34:29-30).

If we also saw part of GOD's glory, we would be afraid of HIM. We could not even live! Even though GOD is so glorious, we may pray to HIM. HE will hear us because HE loves us.

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the 'Creator' (Isaiah 40:28), 'Judge' (Genesis 18:25) and 'King' (Jeremiah 10:7). HE is the **GOD of all the universe** (Numbers 16:22; Jeremiah 32:27).

Now, **GOD is the Creator of all things**. GOD has created the earth. GOD has created the sun. GOD has created the moon. GOD has created the stars. GOD has created the planets. GOD has created the fish. GOD has created the whales (the great sea creatures). GOD has created the reptiles. GOD has created the animals. GOD has created the birds. GOD has created the mankind.

GOD has made the sunshine. GOD has made the night. GOD has made the darkness. GOD has made the morning light. GOD has made the ocean. GOD has made the seas. GOD has made the rivers. GOD has made the rocks. GOD has made the mountains. GOD has made the hills. GOD has made the trees. GOD has made the precious stones. GOD has made the precious metals. GOD has made the pearls. GOD has wonderfully painted the rainbow colours on the tiny raindrops falling from the sky. What an unimaginably wonderful GOD, our GOD is!

**GOD feeds all**. GOD gives us food to eat. GOD gives us water to drink. GOD gives us air to breathe. GOD gives us clothes to wear. GOD feeds the animals. GOD feeds the beasts (Psalm 147:9). GOD feeds the ravens. GOD feeds the birds (St. Luke 12:24). GOD provides food for the young ravens that cry to GOD (Job 38:41). How immeasurable our GOD's love is! We should not forget to remember GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in poverty as well as in riches. We should always remember our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

**We cannot see GOD, but we see GOD's works.** There is so much to see around us! There is so much to learn! We learn by seeing and hearing. Can we learn about GOD that way? We cannot see HIM. We do not hear HIM speak to us. Then how can we learn about HIM? How can we know HIM?

**We can know HIM through the things HE made.** Did you ever look at the stars, shining bright in the sky? Do you often look around at the earth? There are so many wonderful things on the earth. Animals, birds, flowers, insects, etc., are on the earth. There are big wide oceans of water, with thousands of big fish and little fishes. Who made the beasts of the field and the birds of the air and the fish of the sea? Who made all this? Who takes care of all this? Somebody must have made it all. Somebody must have taken care of it all. That somebody is GOD, GOD only.

Sometimes we hear the thunder roar and we see the lightning flash. Can you and I make thunder and lightning? No, we can't. Can you and I make clouds and rain? No, we can't. Can you and I make the wind blow? No, we can't. Can you and I make the wind stop when it blows? No, we can't.

What do we know from this? All these things that we cannot do tell us that there is a great GOD. HE does things, great things that man can never do. GOD's works are wonderful and HIS deeds are marvellous.

Sometimes we hear a little bird sing. We cannot give a little bird a sweet song to sing; can we? Can we teach the bird how to make his little nest? When we see a little bird fly and hear him sing, do we think of the great GOD who made birds?

Flowers are very pretty. They have pretty petals. There are all kinds of flowers—blue ones and yellow ones and red ones and white ones and brown ones. Some have a drop of honey-water deep down in their throats. Some have sweet perfume in its petals. Only GOD has made all these. We cannot make even one real flower with honey and sweet perfume. Flowers tell us there is a great GOD. So, when we see a flower, do we think of the greatness of GOD?

All these declare the glory of GOD. The heavens declare the glory of GOD. Do we declare HIS glory?

**GOD walked with people long ago.** GOD walked with Adam and Eve—the first man and the first woman, in the garden of Eden (Genesis 3:8).

Further, GOD walked with HIS people Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego amidst terrible fire (Daniel 3:14-25).

**GOD talked to people long ago.** Adam and Eve were the very first people GOD made—a man and a woman, just these two. After GOD made them HE used to talk to them. In the cool of the day (in the evening breeze), HE came to the garden to talk to them (Genesis 3:8).

Many years later, GOD talked to a man named Abraham. Abraham was GOD's friend (James 2:23).

Later GOD talked to Moses, too. GOD talked to Moses many times. Once Moses was up on mount Sinai with GOD for forty days. Moses did not have to eat or drink (Deuteronomy 9:9) because GOD took care of him while HE talked to him.

The Holy Bible also tells us how GOD talked to a little boy one night. This little boy lived in GOD's tabernacle. His name was Samuel. Samuel helped Eli, the old priest. One night GOD talked to Samuel.

Samuel was in bed. GOD called, "Samuel, Samuel!" Samuel thought, "It must be Eli calling me". But when he ran to Eli, Eli said, "No, my son, I did not call you" and Samuel went back to bed again. But then he heard the voice again, "Samuel, Samuel!" Samuel ran to Eli once again. Eli said, "No, my son, I did not call you" and Samuel went back to bed again. Then he heard the voice again the third time, "Samuel, Samuel!" Samuel ran to Eli again the third time. Then Eli perceived that the LORD had called the boy. Therefore Eli said to Samuel, "Now I know who is calling you. It is the LORD! Go back to bed. And if you hear HIS voice again, you must say, "Speak, LORD; for THY (YOUR) servant heareth (hears)". I Samuel 3:9.

Samuel lay down once again. He could hardly believe that GOD would really talk to him. He was only a little boy. He lay very still.

He listened carefully. And then he heard the voice again, "Samuel, Samuel!" And he said, "Speak, LORD; for THY servant heareth". GOD talked to Samuel that night. HE told him things that were going to happen.

After that, GOD spoke to Samuel many times. Samuel became one of the great prophets. He told people what GOD wanted them to do.

GOD has talked to many others. They were HIS prophets too. GOD sent them to tell HIS Word to HIS people.

**But, does GOD talk to us ? Can we hear HIM ?**

Long ago, HE talked to Samuel. HE talked to many others. But, does HE talk to you and to me?

**Yes, HE does talk to us.** HE talks to us in several ways. HE talks to us through HIS book, the Holy Bible most of all.

When GOD talked to men long ago, HE told them to write down HIS Words. HE told them to write HIS Words in a book. They made a big book. We call this book **the Holy Bible** or **the Good Book**. The Holy Bible is GOD's Word.

GOD took care of the Holy Bible. Though it was written many, many years ago, we can still read it today. HE took care of it because HE wanted to talk to you and me through the Holy Bible. When we read the Holy Bible, GOD is talking to us. When the minister reads the Holy Bible to us, GOD is talking to us. When father and mother read the Holy Bible to their children, GOD talks to the children. When teachers read the Holy Bible to pupils, and tell them Bible stories, GOD is talking to them.

**We talk to GOD when we pray to HIM.** We close our eyes. We think about GOD. And our spirit thinks about HIM. And then we talk to HIM. And we know that HE really hears us.

There are many, many books in this world. The Holy Bible is the most wonderful of them all. The Holy Bible, the whole Bible is GOD talking to us.

So, what should we do? We should love the Holy Bible, why? It is GOD's Word. We should take care of the Holy Bible, why? It is



GOD's Word. We should read the Holy Bible often, why? Because, we want to know what GOD says to us and we want to know who HE is? Is HE a person? If HE is a person what sort of person is HE? Does GOD reveal HIMSELF in HIS Bible?

GOD loved us, GOD loves us at present and HE will love us in the future also. How do we know that GOD loved us in the past? GOD speaks through HIS Bible that HE sent HIS SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (GOD the SON) to live on earth. Many of the things that our LORD JESUS CHRIST spoke are in the Holy Bible.

When GOD speaks through HIS Bible, do we listen to HIM? Does our spirit listen to HIM? To whom does HE talk? To whom does HIS Spirit talk? HE talks to our spirit with HIS Spirit. We should listen carefully with our spirit. We should listen to HIM with awe and reverence. We should listen to HIM with fear and trembling.

**Now, no one has seen GOD at any time (I John 4:12). But, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the exact image (imprint) of the invisible GOD (Colossians 1:15). Since GOD is Spirit, HE is invisible (St. John 4:24). So, the invisible GOD could be seen in our LORD JESUS CHRIST. In our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST we have redemption through HIS blood, the forgiveness of sins (Colossians 1:14).**

**GOD is very great.** Our very great GOD is very great, immensely great in nature and glory, in holiness and righteousness, in authority and power, in Word and deed, in love and grace and in every divine attribute (Titus 2:13). There are many people who worship many gods. Most people worship man-made gods. But we know that there is ONLY ONE GOD. That GOD is Spirit. And that is our GOD. HE is the ONE AND ONLY GOD. There is no other in this world or in any other. Some people when they watch the sunrise in the morning think the sun is god. They watch the sun go higher and higher in the sky. The sun gives light and heat. The sun makes all green things grow. So these people say that the sun is their god. And they pray to the sun. But the sun is not a god. The sun cannot hear them when they pray. The sun cannot help them when they need something.

Some people think that the stars are gods. The stars are very wonderful and pretty. These people pray to the stars. But the stars

cannot hear them when they pray. The stars cannot help them when they need something.

Long ago, people made gods. They made idol gods of wood or clay or of stone or iron or of gold or silver. But these idol gods could not hear them when they pray. These idol gods could not help them when they need something. Even today many people pray to idols. They do not know who the TRUE GOD is! The TRUE GOD alone hears our prayers (Psalm 65:2). The ONLY TRUE GOD helps us when we need something (Psalm 46:1). HE is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Many years ago, GOD chose the Israelites to be HIS very special people. HE talked to them through Moses. HE gave them a beautiful country to live in. HE told them that HE alone was GOD, that there are no other gods and they must worship only HIM. They were HIS chosen people. HE elected them. They were elected by HIS foreknowledge and will. They knew how wonderful and good their GOD was. But after sometime, they forgot about HIM. They made idols of gold and iron and wood and stone and clay. They prayed to these idols.

One day GOD sent a prophet named Isaiah. A prophet is a person who declares the Word of GOD to people. Isaiah told them how very foolish they were. Isaiah said, "Listen, I'll tell you how foolish you are! A man goes to the woods with his axe. He finds a good tree and cuts it down. He chops it into pieces. He uses some of the pieces to make a fire. When he sees a fire burning, he is very happy. Then he takes home a piece of the same tree. He cuts and carves it and makes it look like a man or woman. Then he puts a cloth and shining jewels on it. And he says, "There I have made me a god!" He kneels down to that piece of wood. He prays to that piece of wood, to that piece of a tree! What a foolish man he is! He is not alone in worshipping that wood. Many others join with him and say it is their god. That piece of wood has ears, but it cannot hear. It has eyes, but it cannot see. It has nose, but it cannot breathe. It has hands, but can it move its hands and work? It has legs, but can it move its legs and walk? No, it cannot do anything. How can it listen to their requests! How can it listen to anybody's words!"

The prophets told them there is ONLY ONE GOD who made all things. HE is omnipresent and omnipotent and omniscient. HE alone is GOD and LORD over all things. Everything belongs to HIM. HE takes care of them. We cannot see HIM because HE is Spirit. But HE is the GOD who really sees us. HE is the GOD who really hears us when we pray. HE is very great.

**GOD is everywhere.** But, we cannot see HIM when we look around. But HE is here; HE is over there; HE is close beside us and HE is above us too, in heaven. HE is far away on the other side of the earth. HE is supreme, all-knowing, all-powerful, all-present and without any equal. GOD can be present everywhere at the same time, since GOD is All-powerful and HE is Spirit. HE is very, very great.

The Holy Bible tells us about a young woman named Hagar. She was a slave and Sarah, the wife of Abraham was her mistress. One day, she ran away from her mistress. She went far away to a strange place. She thought nobody loved her. She was very unhappy. She sat down by a well of water. And she thought she was all alone.

But she was not alone. GOD was there. HE really saw her; HE really knew her trouble. HE really knew her heart was very sad. And HE really loved her. HE is the ONLY GOD who really loves all mankind. HE loves the powerless, the outcasts, the poor, the mistreated, the slaves who have no rights, not even the right of reply, and those who are far from faith.

Suddenly Hagar heard GOD talk to her! GOD said to Hagar,

*"Return to thy mistress, and submit thyself under her hands."*

Genesis 16:9

Hagar was so surprised! She did not think GOD would see her there! But GOD did see her! Then she called the name of GOD who spoke to her,

*"THOU GOD seest me (YOU-Are-the-GOD-Who-Sees me): ..."*

Genesis 16:13

Hagar was glad. She obeyed GOD. She went back to her mistress and GOD took care of her.

It made Hagar happy to know that GOD saw her. She had been so sad and she had thought she was all alone. But GOD saw her all the time.

It should make us happy to think that GOD is everywhere, that HE really sees us and that we are never alone. When we go to bed at night, GOD is there. Wherever you go during the day, GOD is with you. You are never alone. Doesn't it make you happy to know that HE is everywhere?

It should make us careful too, to think that GOD is always everywhere. So we should do only things that please HIM.

*"...HIS eyes behold, HIS eyelids try (test), the children of men."*

Psalm 11:4

*"The eyes of the LORD are in every place, beholding the evil and the good."*

Proverbs 15:3

GOD is always everywhere. But, it does not mean that GOD is in the plank or in the speck or in the pillar. If anyone says like this, that is completely an absurd thing.

**The eyes of the LORD are over the righteous** (I Peter 3:12). A child in Burma went to study in a Christian Mission School. Then she had lost her faith in the idols. Her parents were very sad. One day her father brought her to a gayest of the temple where the fragrance of incense and flowers filled the air and he showed her the glittering jewels of the idol god and said, "This is your god. The Christians cannot show you their GOD". "Yes," said the child, "we cannot see Christians' GOD, but their GOD can see us". "Was not this child wise in choosing the GOD from whom even the thoughts of the heart cannot be hidden?"

**GOD never sleeps!** Ancient pilgrims used to sing Psalm 121 when they saw mount Zion or mount Moriah. Their guide was GOD and HE took care of them. They retired under the open sky with complete confidence.

*"Behold, HE that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep."*

Psalm 121:4

Implicit faith in GOD's provision and watchcare is the best of all tranquilizers. Endless life, endless provision and endless watchcare belong to Christians. But, endless destruction belongs to those opposed to CHRIST (St. Matthew 25:41, 46).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Supreme Being, perfect in power, wisdom and goodness. HE created the entire universe and rules over it. HE is eternal, without beginning and without end (Psalm 90:2). Man is GOD's foremost and most important creature. He was created with a perfectly holy and righteous nature. If man had not disobeyed GOD, he would not be a sinner with sinful nature.

All the works of GOD from the beginning of the world are known unto GOD (Acts 15:18). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST knows each and everything (Psalm 139:1-6). Hence, HIS people can come and ask HIM of the things to come (Isaiah 45:11). And no one should go to a witch or a wizard or a diviner or an enchanter or a charmer or a consulter with familiar spirits or a necromancer or an observer of times and hear divination, enchantment, sorcery, witchery (witchcraft), etc., by the bad spirits, for our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST utterly hates whoever does these ugly things (Leviticus 19:26, 31; Deuteronomy 18:10-12). So, our concern should be to show forth to the world the safety and security and blessedness of hearkening to the voice of divine wisdom.

*"But whoso hearkeneth (hearkens) unto ME shall dwell safely,  
and shall be quiet from fear of evil".*

Proverbs 1:33

**"O my GOD, incline our hearts to be faithful to YOU and not to entertain any other thing."**

## **1. DIVINE QUALITIES OF GOD**

The GOD who possesses all the glorious and divine qualities such as sinlessness (quality of committing no sin), flawlessness, spotlessness, great kindness, great love, great grace, great mercy, great compassion, great pity, great faithfulness, great favour, great righteousness, great meekness, great self-control, great goodness, great humility, great obedience, great consideration, great modesty, great truth, great lowliness, great gentleness, great longsuffering, great peace,

great sacrifice and great holiness, is the TRUE GOD. Forgiveness is also a divine quality of the TRUE GOD.

The GOD who has created heaven, who was in heaven, who is in heaven, who came from heaven, who went to heaven and who is to come from heaven, is the TRUE GOD.

The GOD who died, who resurrected and who lives for ever and ever, is the TRUE GOD. These are the glorious and divine qualities of the TRUE GOD. As the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone has all these qualities, it is preached to the world that HE alone is the TRUE GOD.

This TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is sovereign in HIS acts of creation and redemption. HIS sovereignty was shown in HIS life, death and resurrection. HE is sovereignly involved in the affairs of mankind. In fact, HE is very near to us. Therefore everyone should repent and turn to HIM, because a resurrection and a judgment day are coming. It is the duty of every man to seek, to know, to find JESUS CHRIST, the TRUE GOD, and to keep HIS commandments and laws with fear. You will be held responsible for the blame of not seeking and finding HIM.

*"And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the LORD, if haply they might feel after HIM, and find HIM, though HE be not far from every one of us. And the times of this ignorance GOD winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: Because HE hath appointed a day, in the which HE will judge the world in righteousness by that MAN whom HE hath ordained; whereof HE hath given assurance unto all men, in that HE hath raised HIM from the dead."*

Acts 17:26-27, 30-31

CHRIST created the world we see, for CHRIST and of CHRIST. HE created the heavens (the skies), the earth, and the sea and everything in the skies, in the earth and in the sea. HE is for ever and ever, before the foundation of the earth; HE is the GOD for ever; HE is the GOD who says **I AM**; HE is the LORD Almighty who is, who was and is to come; HE is the Almighty, All-powerful and all wise TRUE GOD; HE is upholding all things by the word of HIS power. Study the

Biblical verses listed below, to know about this Almighty GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, ..."*

Hebrews 1:3

*"In whom we have redemption through HIS blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible GOD, the firstborn of (the first in rank over) every creature: For by HIM were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by HIM, and for HIM: And HE is before all things, and by HIM all things consist."*

Colossians 1:14-17

*"Which in HIS times HE shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the KING of kings, and LORD of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."*

I Timothy 6:15-16

*"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise GOD, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen."*

I Timothy 1:17

*"And GOD said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and HE said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you."*

Exodus 3:14

*"I am the LORD thy GOD, ... Thou shalt have none other gods before (besides) ME."*

Deuteronomy 5:6-7

*"...Behold, heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain THEE; ..."*

II Chronicles 6:18

*"I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no GOD beside ME: ..."*

Isaiah 45:5

*"But the LORD is the true GOD, HE is the living GOD, and an everlasting King: ..."*

Jeremiah 10:10

*"Forasmuch as there is none like unto THEE, O LORD; THOU art great, and THY name is great in might. Who would not fear THEE, O King of nations? for to THEE doth it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their kingdoms, there is none like unto THEE."*

Jeremiah 10:6-7

*"I, even I, am the LORD; and beside ME there is no saviour."*

Isaiah 43:11

*"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of HIS government and peace there shall be no end, ..."*

Isaiah 9:6-7

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the LORD, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty."*

Revelation 1:8

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."*

Revelation 22:13

*"...Even GOD, who quickeneth (gives life to) the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were."*

Romans 4:17

The knowledge about the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will lead you in the path of heaven and help you to go to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Now, the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Supreme Being, perfect in power, wisdom and goodness and HE is the Only Creator and Ruler of the universe (Psalm 90:2). The earth and all that is in it and the skies and all that is in them belong to our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens is the LORD's thy GOD, the earth also, with all that therein is."*

Deuteronomy 10:14



**Our Almighty GOD is very orderly** (I Corinthians 14:33). HE is the Only Wise Creator, Sustainer and Designer of the universe. There is orderliness in the universe. There are many things which we can see and be certain of, each day—the sunrise and the sunset, the rotation of the earth on its axis, the revolution of the earth on its axis round the sun, etc.

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is great.

*“Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised; and HIS greatness is unsearchable (beyond our understanding).”*

Psalm 145:3

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST blesses HIS people (Psalm 128:5-6); HE is with HIS people (St. Matthew 28:20); HE is good (Nahum 1:7); HE is their strength and their shield (Psalm 28:7); HE is their strong habitation and HE is their rock and their fortress (Psalm 71:3); HE is their refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble (Psalm 46:1); HE is their stronghold in their trouble (Nahum 1:7); and HE stabilizes HIS people and keeps them from evil (II Thessalonians 3:3).

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is faithful (II Thessalonians 3:3); HIS mercy is everlasting and HIS truth endures to all generations (Psalm 100:5); HE gives HIS wisdom, knowledge and understanding (Proverbs 2:6); HE gives HIS counsel (Psalm 16:7); HE gives HIS discretion (Proverbs 5:2); HE reveals the instruction of wisdom, justice, judgment and equity (Proverbs 1:3); and HE diffuses the fragrance of HIS knowledge in everyplace through HIS people (II Corinthians 2:14).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is great and of great power and HIS understanding is infinite (Psalm 147:5); HE shows HIS people marvellous things (Micah 7:15); HE alone does great wonders (Psalm 136:4) and HE is the Wonderful GOD (Isaiah 9:6); HE is the GOD of peace (Romans 15:33; I Thessalonians 5:23); HE is the LORD of peace and HE HIMSELF gives HIS peace always in every way (II Thessalonians 3:16); HE will be the peace (Micah 5:5); HE is the GOD of patience and consolation (Romans 5:5); and HE is the GOD of all comfort (II Corinthians 1:3).

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Comforter and HIS comforts delight our soul (Psalm 94:19); HE gives us rest (Exodus 33:14); we obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need from HIM (Hebrews 4:16); HE gives us joy and happiness (Psalm 5:11); HE gives us riches (enduring riches); honour and righteousness (Proverbs 8:18); HE gives us health and cure and HE reveals us the abundance of peace and truth (Jeremiah 33:6); HE delivers the needy who cry out and HE delivers the poor also who have no helper (Psalm 72:12).

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST establishes us in HIM and HE strengthens us in HIM (Psalm 89:21); the blood of JESUS gives us boldness (Hebrews 10:19); HE gives us the victory through HIM (I Corinthians 15:57); HE comes up before us (Micah 2:13); HE goes before us by day in a pillar of cloud to lead the way, and by night in a pillar of fire to give us light, so that we could travel by day and night (Exodus 13:21) towards HIS kingdom, the kingdom of heaven; HE fights for HIS people (Exodus 14:14); and HIS right hand and HIS holy arm have gained HIM the victory (Psalm 98:1).

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST relents from doing harm (Jonah 4:2); HE is gracious and righteous and full of compassion (Psalm 112:4); HE is the Good Shepherd (Psalm 23:1; St. John 10:14); HE is the Redeemer (Psalm 78:35); HE is the Saviour (St. Luke 2:11); HE is the divine Healer (Exodus 15:26; Psalm 103:3; Hosea 11:3); HE takes sickness away from the midst of us (Exodus 23:25); and HE makes all things new (Revelation 21:5).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST always pleases to bless HIS people (Numbers 24:1); HE is the strength of our life (Psalm 27:1); HE is our light and our salvation (Psalm 27:1); HIS way is perfect and HIS Word is proven (II Samuel 22:31).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST blesses the labour of our hands (Psalm 128:2); HIS people shall not be in want (Psalm 23:1); HE makes their way prosperous (Joshua 1:8); HE sets HIS people on high above all nations of the earth (Deuteronomy 28:1); HE gives HIS gifts to HIS people (Romans 11:29); HE causes HIS face to shine upon HIS people (Psalm 67:1); HIS people dwell in HIS presence (Psalm 140:13); HE maintains the cause of the afflicted and justice for the

poor (Psalm 140:12); and all goodness and mercy shall follow all the days of our life (Psalm 23:6).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the eternal GOD (Deuteronomy 33:27); HE is the LORD Most High and HE is the great King (Psalm 47:2); HE subdues all things unto HIMSELF (Psalm 47:3; Philippians 3:21); HE is the GOD of glory (Acts 7:2); GOD is not a man, that HE should lie, nor a son of man, that HE should change HIS mind (Numbers 23:19); HE speaks and then HE acts accordingly and HE promises and then HE fulfils accordingly (Numbers 23:19).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST loves us (Malachi 1:2); HIS eyes have seen our unformed substance in the womb (Psalm 139:16); HE upholds us from birth and HE bears us and HE carries us and HE delivers us; HE carries us, as a man carries his son (Isaiah 46:3-4; Deuteronomy 1:31); HE is the GOD who sees us (Genesis 16:13); HE desires to gather HIS children together, as a hen gathers her own brood (of chicks) under her wings (St. Luke 13:34); HE cares for HIS people as a bird flutters or hovers over her young (Isaiah 31:5; Deuteronomy 32:11-12); HE is a strength to the poor, a strength to the needy in his distress, a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat, when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm against the wall (Isaiah 25:4).

**The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is All-Powerful (omnipotent). HE only has unlimited power (omnipotence).**

*"For with GOD nothing shall be impossible."*

St. Luke 1:37

*"For THOU hast possessed my reins (formed my inward parts): THOU hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise THEE; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are THY works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance (bones) was not hid from THEE, when I was made in secret, and curiously (skillfully) wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. THINE eyes did see my substance (unformed body), yet being unperfect (unformed); and in THY book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned (the days fashioned for me), when as yet there was none of them."*

Psalm 139:13-16

**The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is All-Knowing (omniscient). HE only has all-knowledge (omniscience).**

*"Great is our LORD, and of great power: HIS understanding is infinite."*

Psalm 147:5

*"O LORD, THOU hast searched me, and known me. THOU knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, THOU understandest my thought afar off. THOU compasses (comprehend) my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O LORD, THOU knowest it altogether. THOU hast beset (enclosed) me behind and before, and laid THINE hand upon me. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it."*

Psalm 139:1-6

**Our GOD, JESUS CHRIST is Present at All Times Everywhere (omnipresent). HE only has presence at all times everywhere (omnipresence).** But, it is a false and delusive/deceptive saying of the heathens and pagans that GOD is in the pillar or plank and in the mote or dust. GOD is in heaven (Psalm 2:4) and in HIS holy temple (Psalm 11:4)—the holy House of Prayer (Isaiah 56:7) and in HIS people, the saved (I Corinthians 6:19) at the same time, reveals HIS omnipresence.

*"Whither shall I go from THY Spirit? or whither shall I flee from THY presence? If I ascend up into heaven, THOU art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, THOU art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall THY hand lead me, and THY right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from THEE; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to THEE."*

Psalm 139:7-12

**The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST never fails; HE never forsakes (Deuteronomy 31:8); and HE never changes.**

*"For I am the LORD, I change not; ..."*

Malachi 3:6

*"JESUS CHRIST the same yesterday, and today, and for ever."*

Hebrews 13:8

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is holy and just.

*"And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of HIS glory."*

Isaiah 6:3

*"O LORD GOD of Israel, THOU art righteous: for we remain yet escaped, as it is this day: behold, we are before THEE in our trespasses: for we cannot stand before THEE because of this."*

Ezra 9:15

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is always fair and impartial, regardless of a person's race, colour, age, sex, social status or anything else.

*"For there is no respect of persons with GOD."*

Romans 2:11

With GOD, there is no variation or shadow of turning. HE is immutable. HE only is good. HE is always good.

*"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the FATHER of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning."*

James 1:17

Though GOD tempts (tests) HIS saints (St. John 6:6), HE never tempts them with evil intent (James 1:13).

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is able to perform what HE had promised.

*"And being fully persuaded (convinced) that, what HE had promised, HE was able also to perform."*

Romans 4:21

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST cannot lie. It is impossible for GOD to lie (Hebrews 6:18).

*"In hope of eternal life, which GOD, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;"*

Titus 1:2

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of truth.

*"...THOU hast redeemed me, O LORD GOD of truth."*

Psalms 31:5

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is gracious and compassionate, slow to anger and rich in love.

*"The LORD is gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of great mercy."*

Psalm 145:8

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Wonderful. HE is the most wonderful healer of all sorts of diseases. When HE was in this world as Saviour, HE cleansed the lepers (St. Luke 17:11-19). Leprosy has always been, and is still, one of the contagious skin diseases, causing serious and permanent damage to the body, including loss of fingers, toes, ears, nose, etc., and destroying the nerves and mucous membranes. Under the Law of Moses, lepers were regarded as unclean and excluded entirely from human society. Cleansing of the lepers reveals the cleansing of the human race by the Redeemer, the LORD JESUS CHRIST from the leprosy of sin, the leprosy of soul.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the **peerless** GOD. In St. Matthew 14:13-21, we see the miraculous feeding by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the miraculous feeding of about five thousand men, besides women and children with five loaves of bread and two fishes. Besides these men, a large uncounted group of women and children were also miraculously fed with those loaves of bread and fishes. This miracle itself is amazing as well as stunning. HIS disciples had collected twelve baskets full of fragments remained over and above what was eaten. Collection of the fragments clearly shows the sufficiency and immensity of GOD's provision. Collection of the fragments for future use is a good lesson in economy, a protest against waste.

Our peerless GOD is good to all and has compassion on all HE has made (Psalm 145:9). The compassion of JESUS is shown in HIS interest in the multitude and in HIS ministry to the multitude. The gentleness of JESUS is seen in HIS gracious answer to HIS disciples and in HIS patience dealing with HIS disciples. The power of JESUS is manifested in the feeding of the multitude. The power of JESUS is exercised through the service of HIS disciples (St. Matthew 14:14-21).

Our peerless LORD JESUS CHRIST is concerned about our needs. HE has compassion upon us on our needs. HE considers us in our needs

when others do not care. HE is not restricted by circumstances in the supplying of our needs. HE is not restricted by our lack of resource. HE is not restricted by any other lack. HE meets our needs abundantly. HE provides much more than enough (St. Matthew 14:14-21).

Our peerless LORD JESUS CHRIST is abundantly able to solve our problems. We are sometimes faced with problems of great proportion and of a pressing nature and of impossible solution. HE is abundantly able to solve our problems, on condition that we obey HIM implicitly (St. Matthew 14:14-21).

Our peerless LORD JESUS CHRIST is abundantly able to solve any challenge to faith. Relating faith to human need, the challenge to faith is seen in St. Matthew 14:14-16; the work of faith, the reward of faith, the blessedness of the reward of faith and the greatness of the reward of faith are also seen in St. Matthew 14:17-21.

Our peerless GOD's great creative power and lordship over nature are beyond natural explanation. HIS benevolence and bounty are inexplicable. HE gives HIS people enough and much more than enough (St. Matthew 14:14-21). HE is the spiritual food to mankind. HE is the bread of life, sustaining the souls of those who believe on HIM (St. John 6:48).

The personal presence of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the redeeming presence for succour (Isaiah 63:9), the resting presence for safety (Exodus 33:14), the rejoicing presence for joy (Psalm 16:11), the regarding presence for love (Psalm 31:20), the restoring presence for revival (Psalm 80:3, 7, 19), the resuscitating presence for health (Psalm 43:5) and the reflecting presence for beauty (Psalm 67:1).

*"...I will fear no evil: for THOU art with me; ..."*

Psalm 23:4

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's sovereignty and omniscience are very highly praised by the statement that HIS thoughts (purposes or intentions) and ways (directions or deeds) are higher than ours. So, no one should question HIM about HIS ways.

*"For MY thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways MY ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the*

*earth, so are MY ways higher than your ways, and MY thoughts than your thoughts."*

Isaiah 55:8-9

*"...Just and true are THY ways, THOU King of saints."*

Revelation 15:3

GOD's ways are perplexing and puzzling. They are intricate and complex. But, HE reveals them to those who sincerely seek HIM. It is to accept every circumstance, every trial that our loving GOD allows in our lives. Let us joyfully accept whatever is given to us. Let us continue to live up to our loving GOD's expectations. **Let us remember that all our disappointments are GOD's appointments.** Let us praise and thank HIM for HIS choice is always better than our best. What a glorious experience it will be!

*"...We must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 14:22

**The best things of life come out of wounding.** Wheat is crushed before it becomes bread. Incense must be cast upon the fire before its odours are set free. The ground must be broken with the sharp plough before it is ready to receive the seed. Our hearts must be broken with tears and with cries and with humility, showing deep regret for our wrong doings or sins to receive salvation from sins (Psalm 34:18). It is the broken-heart that pleases GOD. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST was wounded and crushed for our transgressions, iniquities and sins (Isaiah 53:5). **The eternal life comes to us out of HIS wounding.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**GOD can reveal good out of suffering.** A man's born-blindness led him to meet GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE opened his eyes and he saw. HE opened his mind and he believed. But, the sighted due to their pride, prejudice and unbelief blinded themselves to the truth. Their minds were closed. They won't listen to that man's own simple and understandable logic in what he said about JESUS (St. John 9:30-34).

The unwavering witness of the above born-blind man reveals his unshaken faith and boldness and courage. Everyone needs such faith and boldness and courage to stand for JESUS our LORD until the end



of his/her life, without any fear of the consequences or dangers that would follow him/her.

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is merciful, showing great kindness and forgiving those who sin against HIM when they turn from their sins and seek HIS forgiveness (Deuteronomy 4:31; Isaiah 55:7).

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is faithful, always keeping HIS promises.

*"If we confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."*

I John 1:9

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is good.

*"For the LORD is good; HIS mercy is everlasting; and HIS truth endureth to all generations."*

Psalms 100:5

Even though the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST hates sin, HE loved us, sinners (you and me) so much that HE came into the world as SON OF GOD (SON OF MAN) to take our place and to live a sinless life for us and to pay for all of our sins with HIS most holy and precious blood.

*"For HE hath made HIM to be sin (sin offering) for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of GOD in HIM."*

II Corinthians 5:21

*"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation (conduct) received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

I Peter 1:18-19

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST died for our sins, and on the third day HE rose from the dead, just as HE said HE would.

*"For in that HE died, HE died unto sin once: but in that HE liveth, HE liveth unto GOD."*

Romans 6:10

*"...Why seek ye the living among the dead? HE is not here, but is*

*risen: remember how HE spake unto you when HE was yet in Galilee, Saying, The SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again."*

St. Luke 24:5-7

After HIS resurrection from the dead, the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST showed HIMSELF to many people for forty days.

*"...CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that HE was buried, and that HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures: And that HE was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: After that, HE was seen of above five hundred brethren at once (at the same time); of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep."*

I Corinthians 15:3-6

*"To whom also HE shewed HIMSELF alive after HIS passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 1:3

Then the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST gave final instructions to HIS disciples to tell everyone in the world about HIM, and after that HE returned to HIS heavenly throne, to prepare a place for all those who love HIM and put their trust in HIM for everlasting life.

*"And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in HIS name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of these things. And, behold, I send the promise of MY FATHER upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high. And HE led them out as far as to Bethany, and HE lifted up HIS hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while HE blessed them, HE was parted from them, and carried up into heaven."*

St. Luke 24:47-51

*"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in GOD, believe also in ME. In MY FATHER'S house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and*

*receive you unto MYSELF; that where I am, there ye may be also."*

St. John 14:1-3

'MY FATHER' refers to 'GOD the FATHER'. 'GOD the FATHER' refers to 'the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF'.

There is ONE GOD; there is ONLY ONE GOD; there is ONLY ONE TRUE GOD. HE is the Holy Triune GOD—ONE in three functional Persons, GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON, and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT as ONE GOD. HE is the GOD of Holy Trinity, the unity of GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON (the Word of GOD), and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in ONE GODHEAD.

*"For there are three that bear record (witness) in heaven, the FATHER, the WORD, and the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT): and these three are one."*

I John 5:7

'The WORD' is 'the LORD JESUS CHRIST' or 'GOD the SON.'

The ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's first and second commandments are:

*"I am the LORD thy GOD, ... Thou shalt have no other gods before (besides) ME. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve (worship) them:..."*

Exodus 20:2-5

There are many so-called gods. But, they are not gods at all. Everyone must separate himself/herself from idolatrous worship, the useless worship.

*"They are dead, they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise: therefore hast THOU visited (punished) and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish."*

Isaiah 26:14

*"Their idols are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. They have mouths, but they speak not: eyes have they, but they see not: They have ears, but they hear not: noses have they, but they smell not: They have hands, but they handle not: feet have they, but*

*they walk not: neither speak they through their throat."*

Psalms 115:4-7

So, no one should make mention of the name of other gods.

*"...Make no mention of the name of other gods, neither let it be heard out of thy mouth."*

Exodus 23:13

The sorrows of those who run after other gods will be increased. Their increased sorrows will be complete in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"Their sorrows shall be multiplied that hasten after another god: ..."*

Psalms 16:4

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is mercy upon those who do not know GOD. Those who were not loved, HE will call, 'MY loved ones.' Those who were not HIS people, HE will call, 'MY people' (Hosea 2:23). This promise assures hope for all sinners.

**'Life with CHRIST is an endless hope; without HIM it is a hopeless end'.**

## **2. THE WILL OF GOD**

Everyone should obey GOD more than men. Everyone should obey the will of GOD more than anything. GOD's never-changing will and wish is that the people of the whole world should obtain salvation from sins; they should obtain a perfect knowledge of the truth, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; and they should obtain a perfect knowledge of the truth, the Scripture of Truth or the Holy Scriptures (Daniel 10:21). Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the truth (St. John 14:6); and HIS Law is the truth (Psalm 119:142).

*"Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth."*

I Timothy 2:4

Again, our GOD's never-changing will and wish is that the people of the whole world should be holy, and they should obtain the HOLY SPIRIT and live a life, perfectly holy; and they should abstain from all forms of sexual impurity or sexual immorality or sexual

misconduct (I Thessalonians 4:3-8). Without holiness no one will see the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Hebrews 12:14). The people who live according to the Will of GOD alone will go to heaven, not others (St. Matthew 7:21).

*"For this is the will of GOD, even your sanctification (holiness), that ye should abstain from fornication:"*

I Thessalonians 4:3

The will of GOD the FATHER is that everyone who sees the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and believes in HIM may have everlasting life; and the LORD JESUS CHRIST will raise him up on the last day—the day of the first resurrection of the saints (St. John 6:40). GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. What GOD wants us to do is to believe in the ONE HE sent—the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 6:29). In the prayer that JESUS taught us, we pray that the will of GOD will be done (St. Matthew 6:10).

Further, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's never-changing will and wish is that the people of the whole world should be joyful always in CHRIST JESUS; they should pray to GOD continually with alertness and humility; they should praise GOD and thank GOD in everything and for all things; they should salute or greet one another; and they should not praise one another; and they should not say 'Praise the LORD' to one another, for the LORD GOD will never give HIS glory or praise to another (Isaiah 48:11).

*"Rejoice evermore. Pray without ceasing. In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of GOD in CHRIST JESUS concerning you."*

I Thessalonians 5:16-18

*"Giving thanks always for all things unto GOD and the FATHER in the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST;"*

Ephesians 5:20

*"And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the LORD JESUS, giving thanks to GOD and the FATHER by HIM."*

Colossians 3:17

Some personal greetings or salutations mentioned in the Holy Bible are given below:

*"The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute*

*you much in the LORD, with the church that is in their house.  
The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand."*

I Corinthians 16:19, 21

*"All the saints salute you."*

II Corinthians 13:13

*"Salute every saint in CHRIST JESUS. The brethren which are  
with me greet you. All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are  
of Caesar's household."*

Philippians 4:21-22

*"Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints.  
They of Italy salute you."*

Hebrews 13:24

*"Salute one another with an holy kiss. The churches of CHRIST  
salute you."*

Romans 16:16

*"Greet one another with an holy kiss."*

II Corinthians 13:12

*"Greet all the brethren with an holy kiss."*

I Thessalonians 5:26

Now, bodily kiss is an expression of mutual love, mutual affection, mutual respect, or mutual friendship. Holy kiss does not mean the above bodily kiss. There is no relationship between the bodily kiss and the holy kiss. Bodily kiss is related to human body and human spirit. Holy kiss is related to the HOLY SPIRIT and the holy body of CHRIST, since the believers of the church are the holy body of CHRIST.

*"Now ye are the body of CHRIST, and members in particular  
(individually)."*

I Corinthians 12:27

Moreover, the believers of the church should be holy in their whole spirit, soul and body. They should be holy without blame before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in love. They should always keep themselves in the love of GOD.

*"And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I  
pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved  
blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

*“According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by JESUS CHRIST to HIMSELF, according to the good pleasure of HIS will.”*

Ephesians 1:4-5

*“Keep yourselves in the love of GOD, looking for the mercy of our LORD JESUS CHRIST unto eternal life.”*

Jude 21

Hence, salute one another with an holy kiss or greet one another with an holy kiss does not mean the bodily kiss; it does not mean the fleshly kiss; it does not mean the physical kiss. It means the spiritual kiss; it means the spiritual love with one another; it means the holy and godly love with one another. Thus, this holy kiss means an holy and godly love.

Again, salute or greet one another with an holy kiss means salute or greet one another with an holy and godly love; salute or greet one another with an holy and godly love and with gentleness and respect; salute or greet one another with an holy and godly love and with gentleness and respect and with folded hands. Hence, this holy kiss is not at all a bodily or fleshly kiss.

Without understanding the true spiritual meaning of an holy kiss, some people who call themselves spiritual people, are kissing one another bodily or fleshly. Thus, the spiritual matter is wrongly changed into bodily or fleshly matter; the holy and godly matter is wrongly changed into bodily or fleshly matter; the spiritual thing is wrongly and differently interpreted as bodily or fleshly thing; the holy and godly thing is wrongly and differently interpreted as bodily or fleshly thing. This is an ungodly act against the LORD GOD. This is an unrighteous act against the LORD GOD. Suppressing the truth by unrighteousness will bring the fierce anger and wrath of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*“For the wrath of GOD is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold (suppress) the truth in unrighteousness.”*

Romans 1:18

Moreover, salute one another or greet one another was written from some far-off countries to some far-off countries, from some far-off countries to some far-off people by Paul, the apostle. Then, how is the bodily kiss or the fleshly kiss possible to one another? It is not at all a possible thing. Therefore, the believers of the church should always live and keep themselves in the most holy love of the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is the unchanging will of our GOD.

Now, the Holy Bible says,

*"...Let all things be done unto edifying."*

I Corinthians 14:26

*"Let all things be done decently and in order."*

I Corinthians 14:40

The bodily kiss or the fleshly kiss is not a decent or orderly thing to spiritual people; and it is not at all a good thing for edification. Hence it should not be done. Again, a man shaking hands with a woman is not a decent or orderly thing to spiritual people; and it is not at all a good thing for edification. Hence it should not be done.

Now, the hearts of HIS people should not be troubled and they should not be afraid. They should have a firm belief in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is also the will of GOD.

*"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in GOD, believe also in ME. Peace I leave with you, MY peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid."*

St. John 14:1, 27

Only those who do the will of GOD will enter into the kingdom of GOD. Only the saved people can do the will of GOD. Only the saved people will enter into the kingdom of GOD, the kingdom of heaven.

*"Not every one that saith unto ME, LORD, LORD, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of MY FATHER which is in heaven."*

St. Matthew 7:21

Now, in the Old Testament period, the casting of lots was a divinely approved method of discerning GOD's will (Joshua 18:8).



*"The lot is cast into the lap; but the whole disposing thereof is of the LORD."*

Proverbs 16:33

Prior to Pentecost this method was adopted. But after Pentecost, in the New Testament church, there is no record about using lots. After Pentecost, the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD wonderfully provides that divine direction (Acts 16:6-7; Romans 8:14; Galatians 5:18). So, the will of GOD should not be discerned by the casting of lots. Further, learning more about GOD is HIS will (Colossians 1:9). Growing strong in the grace that is in CHRIST JESUS is HIS will (II Timothy 2:1). Studying the Word of GOD is HIS will (II Timothy 3:14-17). Sharing our faith is HIS will (Acts 1:8). When you disobey HIS will, HE will utterly destroy you and all your expectations about you and about your life.

### **3. COMPONENTS OF MAN**

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST always desires to reveal HIMSELF through man. To fulfil this, HE created man in HIS own image and in HIS own likeness (Genesis 1:26). **Man consists of three things: body, soul and spirit (I Thessalonians 5:23).** The human body is absolutely caught by sin (Romans 6:6). The human spirit (the human power or the human strength) is absolutely caught by self-will/selfishness (II Peter 1:21). The human soul is absolutely caught by death, the second death—the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Psalm 116:8; Revelation 21:8). Sin/evil is the destroyer/killer of man's spirit and soul and body (Psalm 34:21; Ezekiel 18:20; I Thessalonians 5:23). Sin is the fulfilment of wicked desires (James 1:15); sin will cut off from the restored kingdom of GOD (Psalm 9:17); sin will preserve false and delusive/deceptive thoughts and inspirations (Micah 4:12).

**Human soul** is the immortal part of body (Genesis 2:7). This living soul is also called the spirit (Ecclesiastes 12:7). **Human spirit** means human power or human strength. This **spirit of man** (human spirit) is the LORD's candle (lamp); it searches out all the inner depths of his heart (Proverbs 20:27). By this spirit, man knows and discerns the things of man (I Corinthians 2:11). The HOLY SPIRIT is **the Spirit of GOD**, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. By the Spirit of GOD, man knows

and discerns the things of GOD (I Corinthians 2:11-12). Again, **spirit** also indicates a supernatural being, the demon or the devil or the ghost or the evil spirit or the unclean spirit (St. Matthew 10:1). **Heavenly spirit** or celestial being is an angel of GOD. Angel is a ministering spirit or messenger or servant of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Hebrews 1:6-7, 14).

Now, the human body contacts and receives the things of the physical faculty. Man contacts the physical world through the five senses of his physical body: feeling, tasting, seeing, smelling and hearing. Animals and other creatures have only these five senses.

Apart from these five senses, we have one more sense, that is called the **sixth sense**—the sense of discernment—the ability to judge or know things without using the senses of sight, hearing, smell, taste and touch—an unexplained GOD's power of intuition by which one is aware of things that are not seen, heard, smelled, tasted or touched—the ability to discern both good and evil (Hebrews 5:14).

**A man having these six senses should have the knowledge of six important things. They are:**

1. Who is the ONLY TRUE GOD?
2. Which is the only true way of the ONLY TRUE GOD?
3. Which is the only true book given to mankind by the ONLY TRUE GOD?
4. Who is the true man?
5. Which is the true church of the ONLY TRUE GOD?
6. The coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST—Why is our LORD JESUS CHRIST going to come again?

**The answers to these six questions are lucidly explained in this precious book " ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !! "**

The human soul contacts and receives the things of the mental faculty. Man contacts the psychological or soulish world through his mind. Now the human soul also consists of three things: emotion (I Kings 3:12; St. John 14:27; Ecclesiastes 2:10; St. Matthew 26:38), mind (Psalm 139:14; Proverbs 19:2), and will (Job 7:15). In the emotion we have joy or grief or fear. In the emotion we love or desire or

hate. In the mind we have thoughts or reasons or ideas or concepts. In the will we choose or make our decisions.

In the human soul there is the conscious mind. In the human soul there is the subconscious mind. In the human soul there is the self-will. In the human soul there is emotion. In the human soul there is imagination. In the human soul there is conscience—a clear/guilty/doubting/good/evil/pure conscience.

The human spirit is made to contact and receive GOD HIMSELF (St. John 4:24; II Corinthians 3:17). We can contact GOD by our spirit, because GOD is Spirit.

*"GOD is a (the) Spirit: and they that worship HIM must worship HIM in spirit and in truth."*

St. John 4:24

'Spirit' refers to the divine Spirit, GOD HIMSELF. 'spirit' refers to our human spirit.

GOD is Spirit. So we must worship HIM in our spirit and by our spirit. Since GOD is Spirit, we must worship HIM, contact HIM and fellowship with HIM in our spirit and by our spirit.

Man is created to contain GOD in his spirit (Ephesians 5:18). By containing GOD in his spirit, man can reveal GOD (II Corinthians 4:7). Man contacts the spiritual world through his spirit. We can contact GOD through our spirit.

Now, Adam was the head of the human race. When Adam sinned, we were all in the body of him. When Adam sinned, we were actually sinning with him. In this sense, all members of the human race are sinners (Romans 5:12). Thus, sin entered into each and every member of the human race. Sin entered into each and every man. Sin entered into each and every man's spirit and deadened the human spirit (Ephesians 2:1). Sin made man an enemy of GOD in his mind (Colossians 1:21), and it deadened the human soul (Psalm 116:8; Revelation 21:8). Sin transmuted man's body into sinful flesh (Genesis 6:3; Romans 6:12). Thus, sin damaged man's spirit, soul and body wholly, alienating him from GOD (Isaiah 59:2). In this wretched condition, no man could receive GOD, and no man could reveal GOD.

In order to redeem or save mankind from this wretched condition, GOD first became a man called JESUS CHRIST (St. John 1:1, 14). Then HE died on the cross to redeem or save mankind (Ephesians 1:7), taking away their sin (St. John 1:29) and bringing them back to GOD (Ephesians 2:13). Then in HIS glorious resurrection, HE became the Life-Giving Spirit (I Corinthians 15:45), the HOLY SPIRIT. This Life-Giving Spirit gives birth to spirit (St. John 3:6). So we need the new birth in our spirit. For this, the Spirit of GOD, the Life-Giving Spirit, must regenerate our spirit. The Life-Giving Spirit (the Spirit of GOD) comes into us and mingles with our spirit (the human spirit), thereby joining us to HIM as one spirit (I Corinthians 6:17). Now we are one with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in our spirit.

The human body (the earthly body) is related to earth and the human spirit is related to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Ecclesiastes 12:7; St. Luke 23:46). The human soul is related to human life (Genesis 2:7). In relation to GOD, the human spirit is very important.

The human soul has wisdom, knowledge and understanding. It is in the midst of body and spirit. When a sinless and blameless and holy human soul without any sinful lust, joins with a sinless and blameless and holy human body without any sinful lust, then man can do great good works. When a sinless and blameless and holy human soul without any sinful lust, joins with a sinless and blameless and holy human spirit, then man can do great godly deeds.

When a sinless and blameless and holy human soul without any sinful lust, joins and works with a sinless and blameless and holy human body and with a sinless and blameless and holy human spirit without any sinful lust, then man will be filled with goodness, righteousness, truth, love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, faith, meekness and temperance, the fruit of the Spirit (Ephesians 5:9; Galatians 5:22-23), and that man will be a godly man, and he will do great and wonderful works of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

When a sinful human soul with sinful lust, joins with a sinful human body with sinful lust, then man will do all kinds of evil works. When a sinful human soul with sinful lust, joins with a sinful human spirit with sinful lust, then man will do all kinds of ungodly deeds in an ungodly way. When a sinful human soul with sinful lust, joins with

a sinful human body and with a sinful human spirit with sinful lust, then man will do all kinds of evil works and all kinds of ungodly deeds, and he will be filled with all kinds of filthy deeds, and that man will be the worst ungodly sinner.

As our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has become the Life-Giving Spirit, man can receive GOD's life into his spirit and he can reveal GOD's life in his spirit. The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD calls this glorious spiritual experience as the born-again experience or the born-from-above experience or regeneration (I Peter 1:3; St. John 3:3). To receive this GOD's life, man should believe GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and he should repent to GOD by confessing his sins with broken-heart and with humility and with tears and with cries (Acts 16:31; 20:21). The regenerated people are the saved people.

After getting this glorious spiritual experience, he must be baptized in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Mark 16:16; St. Matthew 28:19) by immersion baptism.

If all desires, thoughts, deeds, and decisions of a man become one with those of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, then this life-giving Spirit (the Spirit of GOD) will gloriously and wonderfully spread into man's spirit and soul and body (Ephesians 3:17; I Thessalonians 5:23). Further, man should also be committed to doing the will of GOD as it is revealed in the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures (St. John 7:17; Romans 12:1-2). Then he will be a transformed man and he will not be conformed to this world. This glorious spiritual experience given by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is called **transformation**. "**GOD formed us, sin deformed us, but only CHRIST can transform us!**"

Then man should pray for holiness and holy life in all his conduct (I Peter 1:15-16) and obtain holiness and holy life. And he should pray for the anointment of the HOLY SPIRIT (I John 2:27) and obtain the HOLY SPIRIT with speaking in tongues (Acts 2:1-4).

After receiving this glorious spiritual life, a believer should pray for his/her full spiritual growth (Ephesians 4:11-13) and obtain full spiritual growth. Further, a believer should attend spiritual meetings (Hebrews 10:25) in order to be nourished spiritually. No one should be carried about with various and strange teachings (Hebrews 13:9).

A believer should make fellowship with other believers in the Body of CHRIST (the church) to enjoy the riches of the Christian life in CHRIST. A believer should continue steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, in the Breaking of Bread (the Holy Communion) and in prayers (Acts 2:42). Finally, at our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's return, HIS believers will be glorified (Philippians 3:21). HE will fully saturate HIS believer's body with HIS life eternal. This divine experience is called **glorification**. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23). The penalty of sin is death. Both spiritual death and physical death occur due to sin. The moment Adam sinned, he died spiritually. This means that everyone is born dead in sin (Ephesians 2:1). The unsaved people die in their sin. After their physical death, the unsaved people will face a **second death**, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8). To escape from this terrible second death, everyone must be saved.

Again, a physically dead person surely is physically blind. A spiritually dead person surely is spiritually blind. The devil or Satan, the god of this world (age) has blinded the thoughts of the unbelievers or the unsaved people. So, they need the illumination of the Gospel of the glory of CHRIST to shine on them (II Corinthians 4:4), to open their spiritually blinded eyes, to turn them from darkness (blindness) to light (unblindness) and from the authority of Satan to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Acts 26:18). This is the most glorious changing of death into life. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is changing our death, the second death into life eternal. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The believers of GOD or the saved people have come to the city of the living GOD, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of joyful angels, to the general assembly and church of the first-born, whose names are written in the Book of Life in heaven, to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST the Judge of all and to the spirits of righteous men made perfect (Hebrews 12:22-23). **This is the superior and final triumphant status of Christians. This is the superiority and finality and fullness of Christianity. See also pages from 1388-1390.** So, after their bodily death, the believers of GOD will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and live with HIM for ever and ever. No one will separate the true believers of

GOD from the love of CHRIST. Nothing will be able to separate the true believers of GOD from the love of GOD that is in CHRIST JESUS our LORD (Romans 8:35-39).

### 3.1 THE LIFE OF MAN—DO YOU BELIEVE IN LIFE AFTER DEATH?

Human beings who are born in this world, certainly pass away. The **worldly life** prior to death is not a permanent life; not an everlasting life; it is a vanishing life; a life seen for a short while and vanishing like a mist or vapour or smoke.

*"Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away."*

James 4:14

We should always remember that we are but grass in GOD's sight (Isaiah 40:6-7). In GOD's sight the nations are like a drop of water from a bucket and are accounted as specks of dust on the balance (scales). What a base and low people we are! Indeed, GOD's people or the true Christians fully realize that they are nothing and vanity; and CHRIST JESUS our LORD GOD is everything (Isaiah 40:15, 17; Philippians 3:7-8).

Man's **worldly days** are like grass, he flourishes like a flower of the field; the wind blows over it and it is gone, and its place remembers it no more. Thus, man is like grass and his glory is like a flower of the field; the grass withers away and the flower falls away (I Peter 1:24).

Hence, man does not endure and his worldly life does not endure.

*"As for man, his days are as grass: as a flower of the field, so he flourisheth. For the wind passeth over it, and it is gone; and the place thereof shall know it no more."*

Psalms 103:15-16

Man's worldly days are like a shadow (Job 14:1-2). Now, the life most people lead is purposeless, meaningless, profitless, useless, hopeless, hollow, worthless, vain, futile, unwise and foolish. This is because they have not themselves relied on GOD as much as they should have (Ecclesiastes 12:1-7). For a true joyful godly life, everyone should acknowledge and revere GOD (Ecclesiastes 12:13).

Without HIM, nothing else can give satisfaction or a true joyful godly life (Ecclesiastes 2:4-11, 25). Man's worldly days are like a dream and like a vision of the night (Job 20:8). Man's worldly days are like a tale told (Psalm 90:9).

**Do you believe in life after death? Life after death**—the life of man after his death is a **permanent life**, an **everlasting life**, and a **never-vanishing life**. But, the life after death is one thing for the sinners who live and die in their sins; and another for the saints who obtain salvation and live a holy life.

*“His bones are full of the sin of his youth, which shall lie down with him in the dust.”*

Job 20:11

*“Precious in the sight of the LORD is the death of HIS saints.”*

Psalm 116:15

God takes no pleasure in the death of the wicked.

*“Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the LORD GOD: and not that he should return from his ways, and live?”*

Ezekiel 18:23

It is certainly true that the saints and good people, delivered from sins and saved by the LORD JESUS CHRIST will go to heaven and the wicked sinners will go to hell. It is an **everlasting truth** that the saints who go to heaven will enjoy immense happiness with JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD for ever and ever; and undying worms and eternal fire will torment the sinners who go to hell for ever and ever (St. Matthew 25:34, 41, 46). To escape hell, everyone should be dead to sin—freed from sin (Romans 6:2, 7; I Peter 2:24); everyone should be dead to the Law—no retaliation for an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth (Galatians 2:19; St. Matthew 5:38-39; Romans 12:21); everyone should be dead to the rudiments of the world (Colossians 2:20); and everyone should be dead to this world—not be fashioned according to this world (Romans 12:2). **Our LORD JESUS CHRIST died unto sin once for all to save us from the evil power of Satan, the devil (St. Luke 10:19; Ephesians 6:16) and from the punishment and power of sin (Romans 6:10, 23).**



### 3.2 MAN, THE OUTWARD AND THE INWARD

Man is of two persons. (i) The outward man or **the earthy body**. (ii) The inward man or **the soul**. The **redemption of our soul** is very precious (Psalm 49:8). The **transfiguration of our natural earthy body** (Philippians 3:20-21) or the **resurrection of our body from the dead** is mysterious (I Corinthians 15:51-54).

*"...But though our outward man perish (is perishing), yet the inward man is renewed day by day."*

II Corinthians 4:16

We can see the **outward man** or the earthy body with our eyes. But we cannot see the **inward man** or the soul with our eyes. The LORD GOD formed the man from the dust of the ground and HE breathed HIS breath of life into his nostrils. The man became a living being with a **living soul**. This living soul is also called the spirit (Ecclesiastes 12:7). This soul is incorruptible. This soul is the real person. But, one's earthy body is just a house for one's soul. This earthy body is corruptible.

*"And the LORD GOD formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul."*

Genesis 2:7

**Bodily death** is described as the soul's departing from the body (Genesis 35:18). Bodily death is described as the soul's or the ghost's or the spirit's departing from the body (St. Luke 23:46). Both soul and breath (spirit) leave the body at death—physical death or temporal death (I Kings 17:17-22; Daniel 5:23). Every human being must face physical death.

*"There is no man that hath power over the spirit to retain the spirit; neither hath he power in the day of death: and there is no discharge (release) in that war; neither shall wickedness deliver those that are given to it."*

Ecclesiastes 8:8

**Physical death is the end of this temporal life and it is the beginning of the life to come. This is the significance of death. Thus, death is one of the most important events in one's life.** Now, to the

saints, the life to come will be eternal bliss in heaven. To the sinners, the life to come will be eternal destruction in hell.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour of our soul; HE is the Only Redeemer of our soul; HE gives eternal life to our soul; HE gives eternal rest to our soul. So, HE told the thief on the cross (who repented of his sins and trusted in HIM for eternal life),

*"Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with ME in paradise."*

St. Luke 23:43

When a Christian (the saved) dies, his/her soul goes immediately to **paradise** to be with all other believers, and then to **heaven**, the kingdom of GOD to be with JESUS and the holy angels and all other believers for eternal bliss for ever and ever. When an unbeliever (unsaved) dies, his soul wanders in the world as an evil spirit or devil, and then his/her soul goes to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, to remain there for eternal torment for ever and ever.

Furthermore, man contains in him a **human spirit**. Human spirit means human power or human strength. Man cannot survive in the world without human spirit or human strength.

*"But there is a spirit in man: ..."*

Job 32:8

**Therefore, man contains in him the spirit, the soul, and the body.** No one can see his spirit or soul with his eyes. They are inside his body. They live inside his body. The soul gives us awareness of ourselves (Psalm 42:2). The Spirit of GOD gives us awareness of GOD with our spirit (Romans 8:16).

*"And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

The human spirit is controlled and seized by the wishes and works of selfishness. The human spirit should be totally delivered from this worst selfishness. The soul has been seized by the second death or the terrible hell. Man's soul should be totally delivered from this most dangerous condition. Man's body is sinful and remains immersed in

abominable and filthy sins. Man's sinful body should be totally delivered from this most filthy condition. Further, man's spirit, soul and body should be freed or delivered totally and they should be filled with holiness. Such a man is a fully delivered or saved man. Such a man will get complete salvation, the redemption of body. Such a man will get a glorious body like that of CHRIST.

Hence, everyone should obtain the experience of awaiting the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. Everyone should be blameless and unblemished in everything. Everyone should avoid every kind of evil.

Now, a sinner has a **sinful body** and a **sinful spirit** and a **spiritually dead soul**. His/her sinful spirit will always induce him/her to do sinful acts and deeds, and unclean acts and deeds. Finally his/her spiritually dead soul with a hellish body will be cast into eternal hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

Further, a fully saved one has a **holy body** and a **new spirit** and a **spiritually living soul**. His/her new spirit will always induce him/her to do good works and holy works. Besides these, the holy power, the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD will always reside in him/her to live a holy life. Finally, his/her spiritually living soul with a heavenly body will enter into eternal heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 3.3 WHAT IS MAN GOVERNED BY ?

The three things that rule over or govern a man are mind (intellectual mind), wisdom and will. Mind is his heart to think and feel. Wisdom is his knowledge and understanding. Will is his wish or desire to choose or make decisions (I Corinthians 7:36).

*"Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see GOD."*

St. Matthew 5:8

*"The fear of the LORD is the instruction of wisdom; ..."*

Proverbs 15:33

*"...THY will be done in earth, as it is in heaven."*

St. Matthew 6:10

A man turns to where his mind or heart turns. Therefore, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST began to preach the people about repentance, to

turn their mind or heart towards HIM (St. Matthew 4:17). Man's mind should totally turn to GOD leaving its sins and sinful ways, unholy ways and unholy thoughts and sinful and wicked thoughts. He should obtain divine knowledge, wisdom and understanding.

With fear of GOD, everyone should obey the commandments of GOD, according to GOD's will and wishes. If a man continues to live according to his own will and wish and according to his own thoughts and wisdom, he cannot escape the terrible judgment and hell (St. Mark 7:20-23).

*"The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?"*

Jeremiah 17:9

Again, in the beginning, man's mind, wisdom and will were fully governed by GOD. That is, he was fully under GOD or GOD's Government (Genesis 1:26-27; 2:7, 16-17). Then, because of his disobedience to GOD, he had deviated from GOD or GOD's Government to his own conscience (Genesis 3:1-6, 22-24) and from his own conscience to human government (Genesis 6:5-6, 11-12; 9:6) and from human government to lawlessness (Romans 3:20-22) and he failed in all these things. Now, by the death of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST on the cross at Calvary, we, the human beings, receive HIS grace to come again under GOD or GOD's Government through faith in HIM (Romans 3:23-25). Glory be to GOD!

### 3.4 SOULS OF SINNERS AFTER DEATH

When a sinner dies, his body or his outward man is buried in earth or cremated. The buried body disintegrates and it is consumed by soil. The body cremated to ashes mixes with the dust.

The soul of the sinner or his inward man wanders in the world as evil spirit or devil in great agony. As an evidence of this fact, we know the troubles and evils caused to people by the evil spirits of people who die prematurely or commit suicide.

Sometimes the wailing of lost souls (the evil spirits of dead sinners) sounds like the howling wind. Sometimes the evil spirits of dead sinners make very fearful sounding words.

Thus the soul of a man, who dies as a sinner wanders, groans and mourns as evil spirit or devil in great agony and exceeding sorrow until the day of the final judgment of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. The souls of all dead sinners meet with the same end. The condition of the souls of the dead sinners is miserable, because their pains, agonies, troubles, sorrows, languishing and worries are greater than what they were for them when they were alive.

The groaning and mourning of a soul of a sinner after death, and the groaning and mourning of a soul of a sinner until judgment is clearly explained in the Holy Scriptures.

*“And thou mourn at the last, when thy flesh and thy body are consumed, And say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof; And have not obeyed the voice of my teachers, nor inclined mine ear to them that instructed me! I was almost in all evil in the midst of the congregation and assembly.”*

Proverbs 5:11-14

In Roman Catholic teaching, **purgatory** is a place or state in which the souls of dead people suffer for the bad things or sins they did when they were living, so that they can become pure enough to go to heaven. This Roman Catholic teaching is absolutely against the Holy Bible. This Roman Catholic teaching is completely wrong since the Holy Bible is not telling anything about this purgatory. **There is no purgatory at all.**

### 3.5 SOULS OF SAINTS AFTER DEATH

When saints die, their bodies or their outward men are buried in earth. They disintegrate and are consumed by soil. The ONLY TRUE GOD, LORD JESUS CHRIST, gloriously takes their souls or their inward men into **paradise**, the third heaven for rest. They are the people who die in CHRIST. They are the people who live in CHRIST and die in CHRIST. They are the people greatly blessed.

*“I knew a man in CHRIST above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: GOD knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: GOD knoweth;) How that he was caught up into paradise,*

*and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter."*

II Corinthians 12:2-4

'I cannot tell' means 'I do not know'.

Thus, the LORD GOD never lets the souls of the saints who die in CHRIST to wander in this world. Their souls cannot be encountered in the world as the souls of the sinners are. The souls of the saints are relieved of their labours, troubles, pains, tears and sorrows.

*"And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the LORD from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them."*

Revelation 14:13

They rest in paradise, the third heaven until the LORD JESUS CHRIST comes to this world to gather HIS holy and glorious church and enjoy great bliss and exceeding happiness in a state in which they cannot feel whether they are in the body or out of it. The saints who rest in paradise hear new languages not spoken or understood by any people in the world. They speak new languages. They hear new words and they speak new words. They rest there in great glory and happiness.

They will be blessed through rest; they will be blessed through resurrection; they will be blessed through reigning with CHRIST during the Millennium; they will be blessed through reigning eternally with CHRIST in HIS glorious kingdom, the kingdom of heaven, or the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### **4. THE SPIRIT OF MAN, THE SPIRIT OF GOD**

*"The spirit of a man will sustain (endure) his infirmity; ..."*

Proverbs 18:14

*"For what man knoweth the things of a man, save (except) the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of GOD knoweth no man, but the Spirit of GOD."*

I Corinthians 2:11

*"But ye shall receive power, after that the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come upon you: ..."*

Acts 1:8

A man cannot do his worldly duties without his human spirit or human strength. In the same manner, without the HOLY SPIRIT or the strength of GOD, no man can survive as a godly man, a holy man, a righteous man, a spiritual man, a child of GOD or as a man belonging to heaven. Therefore, it is very essential for a man, to be delivered from his sins and be strengthened by the HOLY SPIRIT, the Spirit of GOD. The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD gives the holy power or the holy strength to live a holy life and lives within the heart of every believer to the glory of GOD. The HOLY SPIRIT is also called the SPIRIT of GOD (I Corinthians 12:3).

When a man obtains the HOLY SPIRIT, he is filled with divine wisdom, divine conscience, divine intelligence, fear of GOD, divine counsel, divine love, and a clear mind (Isaiah 11:2). The HOLY SPIRIT is also called the SPIRIT of TRUTH (St. John 14:17). The HOLY SPIRIT gives us understanding about our sinful life and the saving knowledge of JESUS CHRIST. We are saved by the power of the HOLY SPIRIT.

Only the people who have obtained the HOLY SPIRIT, the Divine Spirit are the true children of GOD. They alone can call JESUS CHRIST 'ABBA, FATHER'. They are eligible to call JESUS 'LORD'.

*"For as many as are led by the Spirit of GOD, they are the sons of GOD. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, ABBA, FATHER."*

Romans 8:14-15

*"Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of GOD calleth JESUS accursed: and that no man can say that JESUS is the LORD, but by the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

I Corinthians 12:3

The glorious works of the Divine Spirit or the HOLY SPIRIT are compared in the Holy Scriptures to rain, fire, and wind. The worldly rain begins as a drizzle and slowly intensifies into a heavy and very heavy rain, then its intensity slowly decreases, and then the rain ceases. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD works in the same manner. The

glorious rain of the HOLY SPIRIT pours on the souls of people and quenches the thirst of the souls.

*"In the last day, that great day of the feast, JESUS stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto ME, and drink. He that believeth on ME, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly (heart) shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake HE of the Spirit, which they that believe on HIM should receive: for the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) was not yet given; because that JESUS was not yet glorified.)"*

St. John 7:37-39

The HOLY SPIRIT gives man immense happiness, peace, health, strength, and consolation. Man needs worldly rain for his survival in the world. But the spiritual rain is more essential than the worldly rain. No man can survive as a spiritual man or a man of heaven, without this spiritual rain. It is very essential to pray for the rain of the HOLY SPIRIT, or spiritual rain.

*"Ask ye of the LORD rain in the time of the latter rain; so the LORD shall make bright clouds, and give them showers of rain, to every one grass in the field."*

Zechariah 10:1

*"Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your GOD: for HE hath given you the former rain moderately, and HE will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month."*

Joel 2:23

Again, man needs worldly wind or air for his survival in the world. But the spiritual wind is more essential than the worldly wind. No one can survive as a spiritual man or a man of heaven, without this spiritual wind. The spiritual wind or air, the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the life-giving wind. It gives eternal life to us. So it is very essential to pray for the wind of the HOLY SPIRIT, or spiritual wind. The wind symbolizes the eternal life in the HOLY SPIRIT.

Furthermore, when the worldly wind blows on trees, they sway in the wind, and there is rustling and roaring of the wind. The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD works in the same manner. When the HOLY SPIRIT works on holy people, their bodies sway like trees, which sway in the wind. When the holy people assemble and pray, there is



glorious rustling sound and an orderly roaring of the HOLY SPIRIT. It clearly reveals the work of the LORD. All things will be done decently and in order and in the proper manner. Let all things be done for edification.

*"And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting."*

Acts 2:1-2

*"Let all things be done decently and in order."*

I Corinthians 14:40

*"...Let all things be done unto edifying."*

I Corinthians 14:26

Again, the worldly fire purifies silver and gold by burning off its filth and dirt. It also burns stinking, garbage and rubbish into ashes. In the same manner, the fire of the HOLY SPIRIT purifies and sanctifies man by burning off all his filthy sins and abominations and dirt of sins. This act of the HOLY SPIRIT makes man holy. Everyone must be aware of this glorious and wonderful work of GOD by the HOLY SPIRIT, the Spirit of Burning or the Spirit of Fire.

*"And there appeared unto them cloven (divided) tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."*

Acts 2:3-4

*"When the LORD shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the Spirit of judgment, and by the Spirit of burning."*

Isaiah 4:4

Our LORD JESUS has said,

*"I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!"*

St. Luke 12:49-50

'Baptism to be baptized with' refers to the LORD JESUS CHRIST's horrible death.

Without this glorious work of the HOLY SPIRIT or the power of GOD, no man can obtain a sanctified soul, live a holy life, escape judgment and hell, and go to heaven. This is a great and never-changing truth. It is a great truth that the LORD JESUS CHRIST came into this world, suffered horribly, and died, to send the HOLY SPIRIT into this world. It is essential for everyone to think of the great love and affection of this exceedingly glorious and good LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and to become HIS own children.

The HOLY SPIRIT has been given many names such as, the Divine Spirit, the Spirit of FATHER, the LORD's Spirit, the Spirit of CHRIST, the Spirit of GOD, the Spirit of HIM that raised up JESUS from the dead, the Spirit of Life, the Spirit of Adoption, the Spirit of HIS SON, the Spirit of Burning (Fire), the Spirit of Holiness, the Spirit of Truth, the Spirit of Faith, the Comforter, the Fresh Oil (the New Oil), the Oil of Joy, the Power from on High, the River of Pleasure, Pure River of Water of Life and the River of Fire.

Only the people who have obtained the HOLY SPIRIT, the Spirit of CHRIST are the true Christians.

*"...If any man have not the Spirit of CHRIST, he is none of HIS."*

Romans 8:9

Only those who have obtained the Spirit of Faith are the true believers.

*"We having the same Spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak."*

II Corinthians 4:13

The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD removes the mean pleasures of sin and of the world and fills every man with divine pleasures, divine happiness, divine holiness, and strengthens him with divine power. The LORD blesses the man immensely with consolation and comfort. The LORD helps the man to live a holy life. The LORD gives him a new radiance of face through the HOLY SPIRIT, the Fresh Oil. This Oil makes his face shine.

*"...I shall be anointed with fresh oil."*

Psalm 92:10

*"...Oil to make his face to shine, ..."*

Psalm 104:15

The acts of mocking, blaspheming and talking ill of the HOLY SPIRIT is a great sin deserving terrible punishment from the LORD GOD. It is a sin deserving fierce wrath and punishment by GOD. It is a sin deserving the punishment of horrible judgment and hell.

*"Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come."*

St. Matthew 12:31-32

The saints of GOD who have obtained the HOLY SPIRIT enjoy the happiness of speaking to GOD, the divine secrets, the wonderful works, and glories of the LORD in different kinds of languages not known to them. They highly magnify (praise) and exalt GOD with varieties of tongues. They enjoy great pleasure, comfort and consolation and they grow in godliness. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"For they heard them speak with tongues (in different kinds of languages), and magnify GOD. ..."*

Acts 10:46

*"Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of GOD."*

Acts 2:11

*"For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto GOD: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries. He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; ... Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: ..."*

I Corinthians 14:2, 4, 22

*"For with stammering lips and another tongue will HE speak to this people."*

Isaiah 28:11

Being filled with the HOLY SPIRIT, and anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT, and sealed with the HOLY SPIRIT, and baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT and with Fire are one and the same spiritual blessing of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Acts 9:17; II Corinthians 1:21-22; Ephesians 1:13; St. Matthew 3:11; Acts 1:4-5).

First in Jerusalem, on the day of Pentecost, about 120 people received the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. They were filled with the HOLY SPIRIT and began to speak the wonders of GOD in other tongues (other languages). They were baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 2:1-4).

In Samaria, Peter and John laid their hands on the believers, and they received the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. They were baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 8:14-17).

In Caesarea, while Peter was speaking the Word of GOD at Cornelius' house, the gift of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD was poured out on the Gentiles. They spoke in other languages and praised GOD. They were also baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 10:44-46; 11:15-18).

In Ephesus, Paul found some disciples of the LORD and asked them,

*"...Have ye received (Did you receive) the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) since (when) ye believed? ..."*

Acts 19:2

They answered that they had not even heard that there was a HOLY SPIRIT. When Paul laid his hands on them, the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD came on them, and they spoke in other languages and prophesied. They were about twelve men in all (Acts 19:6-7).

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is of very great and manifold significance. They are explained below.

The HOLY SPIRIT is the earnest of the Spirit or the earnest of our inheritance. Earnest means deposit or down payment, guaranteeing what is to come and what is to possess. Inheritance denotes salvation, viz., the final salvation, the redemption of body. The gift of the

HOLY SPIRIT is viewed as an instalment or as part of the full and final salvation. The earnest of the Spirit or the earnest of our inheritance brings some right over the redemption of the body and the kingdom of heaven.

The HOLY SPIRIT is the seal for the day of redemption and for the redemption of the body. The seal is the HOLY SPIRIT. The sealer is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE seals HIS people with the HOLY SPIRIT of promise (the promised HOLY SPIRIT) for the redemption of the body and for the kingdom of heaven.

Seal denotes the full identification of ownership and protection provided by the owner and the full authority of the owner. Again, seal indicates genuineness; seal preserves safety and seal guarantees safe keeping.

*"Now HE which stablisheth us with you in CHRIST, and hath anointed us, is GOD; Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts."*

II Corinthians 1:21-22

*"In Whom (HIM) ye also trusted, after that ye heard the Word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that HOLY SPIRIT of promise, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of HIS glory."*

Ephesians 1:13-14

*"And grieve not the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption."*

Ephesians 4:30

The SPIRIT of GOD (the HOLY SPIRIT) who raised JESUS CHRIST from the dead should always live in us, because HE who raised JESUS CHRIST from the dead will also give life to our mortal bodies by HIS Spirit, who lives in us.

*"But if the Spirit of HIM that raised up JESUS from the dead dwell in you, HE that raised up CHRIST from the dead shall also quicken (give life to) your mortal bodies by HIS Spirit that dwelleth in you."*

Romans 8:11

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD gives us the great holy power of GOD; GOD strengthens us with power through HIS Spirit in our inner man (soul). The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD gives great joy and happiness, and great longsuffering. The faith is growing more and more and the love of everyone towards each other is increasing by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.

*"But ye shall receive power, after that the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."*

Acts 1:8

*"That HE would grant you, according to the riches of HIS glory, to be strengthened with might by HIS Spirit in the inner man."*

Ephesians 3:16

*"We are bound to thank GOD always for you, brethren, as it is meet (fitting), because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity (love) of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth; So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of GOD for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure."*

II Thessalonians 1:3-4

Hence, all people should wait and pray for the salvation from sins first; and after getting salvation, they should wait and pray for the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, by believing the promises of GOD. Even sinful men are kind to their children; they know how to give good gifts to their children; therefore, how much more will our heavenly FATHER give good gifts to those who ask HIM!

*"If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly FATHER give the HOLY SPIRIT to them that ask HIM?"*

St. Luke 11:13

Everyone should live according to GOD in the Spirit and walk in the Spirit and no one should put out the Spirit's fire. To live in the Spirit and to walk in the Spirit, filling with the Spirit (Ephesians 5:18), keeping the oneness in CHRIST (Romans 12:5), growing up into the Head, CHRIST (Ephesians 4:15), learning CHRIST (Ephesians 4:20), living in the love of CHRIST (II Corinthians 5:14) and living in the light of CHRIST (St. John 8:12) are very essential.

*"If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."*

Galatians 5:25

*"Quench not the Spirit."*

I Thessalonians 5:19

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD reproves the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.

*"And when HE is come, HE will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment."*

St. John 16:8

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD helps us in our weaknesses. We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD HIMSELF intercedes for us with groans that words cannot express. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because the Spirit of GOD intercedes for the saints according to the will of GOD. What an extremely loving GOD, our GOD is!

*"Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And HE that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because HE maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of GOD."*

Romans 8:26-27

By money we cannot buy or earn the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD but GOD's holiness and holy life in our lives alone can buy and earn the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (Acts 8:20). That is, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone can give HIS HOLY SPIRIT of GOD freely by sanctifying us. Glory be to GOD!

## **5. ANGELS**

First the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD created the angels to worship HIM and attend on HIM and serve HIM in heaven. The angels have no earthly body as human beings have. They have glorious heavenly bodies. The speciality of their heavenly body is that they can move about visibly and invisibly. They can enter anyplace where even air cannot enter. They can come out of anyplace

where air cannot come out. They cannot be locked or contained in anyplace. Nothing can be done to them. They have eyes with very special sight. They have bodies with the power to fly. They have wings too. They are tremendously powerful and strong. They are the wonderful and mighty creations of the LORD.

*“Above it stood the seraphims (angels): each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of HIS glory.”*

Isaiah 6:2-3

Angels are heavenly beings created by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are described as spiritual beings. Our LORD has innumerable angels in heaven. They are HIS ministering spirits. They are always serving our LORD in heaven. They are always worshipping our LORD in heaven. They don't have earthly bodies as ours but have spiritual existence. They can go anywhere they want to, in accordance with GOD's orders. Angels are sent into the world from time to time as GOD's messengers to inform HIS people and to comfort HIS people and to minister to HIS people. They are very powerful and cannot be controlled by men. At times, they are incarnate in human form. They have great strength, intelligence, and wisdom, far superior to that of human beings. They look over the activities of men (I Peter 1:12).

Further, angels are called the host of heaven. They are organized in ranks or orders. Michael is the head of a host and Gabriel is another. Michael is the head of a host of warriors. By the command of GOD, they fight against GOD's rivals. Gabriel is the head of a host of messengers. They bring messages from GOD. The cherubims (cherubs) and seraphims (seraphs) are also angels. They show GOD's majesty and fulfil GOD's purposes (Revelation 12:7-10; Daniel 8:15-19; Genesis 3:24; Isaiah 6:2-3).

Angels appeared to shepherds in the field, announcing the birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Luke 2:8-14). Angels also announced our LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection, the rising from the dead (St. Luke 24:5-7). Angels also announced that our LORD JESUS CHRIST would return again from heaven (Acts 1:10-11).



Angels are empowered to seize Satan, the devil and other evil spirits and to bind them with great chains and to cast (imprison) them into the bottomless pit (Revelation 20:1-3).

Once an angel massacred single handed, 1,85,000 Assyrian soldiers who came against Israelites, the children of GOD. The Assyrian soldiers lay dead early in the morning (Isaiah 36; 37:1-36). The great power of an angel, created by GOD, thus makes one wonder how mighty, GOD is.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is incomparably greater than the angels. HE is the Almighty GOD; HE is the omnipotent GOD; HE is the omniscient GOD; HE is the omnipresent GOD. Angels have great power and ability, but are not omnipotent. They possess intellect, emotion, and will, but are not omniscient or omnipresent. Their number is great, but not limitless. They are servants of GOD. The word 'angel' means 'messenger'. Man is made "a little lower than the angels".

*"For THOU hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour."*

Psalm 8:5

## **6 . EVIL SPIRITS**

Satan was once prominent among the angels in heaven. He was one of the creations of GOD. He was created as GOD's highest angel. He led angels in a rebellion. Hence, Satan and his angels were cast out from heaven; they had no access to heaven; they had no access to GOD. Therefore, Satan and his angels confine their activities in the earthly sphere. Satan, the devil is the chief of the fallen angels or devils or evil spirits. He is the deceiver of the whole world. He is the adversary of mankind. Satan, the devil is the originator and the chief practitioner of sin.

*"He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. ..."*

I John 3:8

Satan, the devil is very crafty and cunning. Opposing the will of GOD, counterfeiting the work of GOD, destroying all that is good, are

his present-day activities. He travels to and fro in the earth for evil purposes (I Peter 5:8).

Satan's other names are 'Lucifer, son of the morning' (Isaiah 14:12), 'the great dragon, that old serpent, the Devil' (Revelation 12:9), 'leviathan' (Isaiah 27:1), 'the prince of the power of the air' (Ephesians 2:2). 'Beelzebub' (St. Matthew 10:25), 'Baalzebub' (II Kings 1:6), 'that wicked one' (I John 5:18), 'the fowler who lays the snare to the soul' (Psalm 91:3; 124:7), 'the bird that snatches away the Word of GOD sown in our hearts' (St. Matthew 13:4, 19), 'the accuser of our brethren' (Revelation 12:10), 'the tempter' (St. Matthew 4:3), 'a murderer, a liar and the father of lies' (St. John 8:44), 'the thief to steal and to kill and to destroy people' (St. John 10:10), 'Belial' (II Corinthians 6:15), and 'the deceiver of the whole world' (Revelation 12:9). Satan pretends or disguises himself as an angel of light, as a holy angel of heaven (II Corinthians 11:14). Hence, Satan is a pretender. Now, Satan is an enemy of GOD as well as mankind.

The **spirit of Satan**, the devil is the spirit of whoredom or the spirit of harlotry (Hosea 4:12-14); it is a spirit of treachery (Judges 9:23); it is a lying spirit (I Kings 22:21-22); it is a perverse spirit (Isaiah 19:14); it is the spirit of error—the spirit of deceit (I John 4:6); it is the spirit of the antichrist (I John 4:3); it is the unclean spirit—the evil spirit (St. Matthew 10:1); it is a spirit of lying wonders (II Thessalonians 2:9); it is a spirit of infirmity (St. Luke 13:11); it is a spirit of divination (Acts 16:16); it is a spirit of sorcery (Acts 13:6-12); it is a foul spirit (Revelation 18:2); it is a spirit like unclean frog (Revelation 16:13-14); it is a spirit of trouble (I Samuel 16:14); it is a spirit of bondage (Romans 8:15); it is a spirit of fear (II Timothy 1:7) and it is a spirit of madness (St. Mark 5:1-20).

The souls of the sinners wander in the world as evil spirits or devils in great agony. As an evidence of this fact, we know the troubles and evils caused to people by the evil spirits of people who die prematurely or commit suicide.

## 6.1 HORRIBLE PIT OF SATAN, THE DEVIL

The **jail of Satan**, the devil, is a horrible pit—waterless deep pit full of miry clay, the sinful miry clay. This jail of Satan is a deep and dark

pit of darkness—the sinful darkness. The jail of Satan is the shadow of death—the shadow of hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. All sinners are in the jail of Satan, the devil. All sinners are the prisoners of Satan, the devil.

*“HE brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock, and established my goings (steps).”*

Psalm 40:2

*“...That Rock was CHRIST.”*

I Corinthians 10:4

*“...I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water.”*

Zechariah 9:11

*“To give light to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, ...”*

St. Luke 1:79

*“...To bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.”*

Isaiah 42:7

Satan, the devil tightly binds the unsaved or the sinners, with the cords of their sin. He puts them into his jail—the horrible pit full of sinful miry clay, and shuts them up in his jail. The sinners sit in sinful darkness, and in the shadow of hell. Satan, fully armed, guards his own jail. Besides, Satan, the devil appoints them to death, the second death or hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Thus, Satan, the devil appoints all the unsaved or the sinners to second death or hell. What a pitiful thing it is!

*“His own iniquities shall take the wicked himself, and he shall be holden (held) with the cords of his sins.”*

Proverbs 5:22

Now, these prisoners or sinners must groan to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, by confessing their sins, for their release from this horrible jail of Satan, the devil. To hear the groans of these prisoners or sinners, and release those appointed to death, and bring out these prisoners from the jail of Satan, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST looks down from the height of HIS sanctuary; from heaven HE beholds the earth.

*“For HE hath looked down from the height of HIS sanctuary; from heaven did the LORD behold the earth; To hear the groaning of the prisoner; to loose those that are appointed to death.”*

Psalm 102:19-20

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to release those appointed to death, and bring them up out of the horrible pit, out of the sinful miry clay. HE came into the world to set their feet upon the Rock, and establish their steps upon the Rock. This spiritual Rock is our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's own power is unlimited. HE is the strongest and the best in doing holy works, good works, righteous works, rightful works, sinless works, faithful works, and truthful works. By HIS HOLY SPIRIT, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is always inducing the people to do holy works, good works, righteous works, rightful works, sinless works, faithful works, and truthful works, to inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD. By HIS HOLY SPIRIT, HE is always inducing the people to tell the truth; HE is always inducing the people to speak incorrupt words for the edification of themselves and to the hearers. Again, by HIS HOLY SPIRIT, HE is always inducing the people to escape judgment and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. By HIS HOLY SPIRIT, HE is always inducing the people to inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Everyone must obey the work of HIS HOLY SPIRIT to escape judgment and hell and to inherit heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

But, Satan, the devil is the strongest and the worst in doing sins, unholy works, evil works, ugly works, abominable works, unrighteous works, unlawful works, sinful works, unfaithful works, untruthful works, sexually immoral acts, sorcery, idolatry, murders, etc. He is the father of lies. He is a murderer of mankind from the beginning. Satan, the devil is the father of all sinners. So, they want to persist in their father's lusts.

*“Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.”*

St. John 8:44

**By his evil spirit, Satan, the devil is always shooting his sinful fiery darts (arrows) against the people to do sins (Ephesians 6:16).** By his evil spirit, he is always inducing the people to do sins, unholy works, evil works, ugly works, abominable works, unrighteous works, unlawful works, sinful works, unfaithful works, untruthful works, sexually immoral acts, sorcery, idolatry, murders, etc., to inherit hell. By his evil spirit, he is always inducing the people to tell lies, and pervert speeches, so that they will inherit hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. No one should obey the evil spirit of Satan, the devil and inherit hell.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to overcome Satan, the devil, and save the people from sin, curse, flesh, fleshly lusts, world, death—the second death or hell, destruction and Satan. HE came into the world to take from Satan all his armour, and redeem the people from his horrible jail. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“When a strong man armed keepeth (guards) his palace, his goods are in peace: But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.”*

St. Luke .11:21-22

The stronger man stands for our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The strong man stands for Satan, the devil.

*“Forasmuch as there is none like unto THEE, O LORD; THOU art great, and THY name is great in might.”*

Jeremiah 10:6

*“O LORD GOD of hosts, Who is a strong LORD like unto THEE? ...”*

Psalms 89:8

According to HIS promise, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world, and overcame Satan, the devil. HE crushed the head of Satan, the devil on the cross at Calvary. Eventually HE crushed the kingdom of Satan, the devil. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“...It (HE) shall bruise (crush) thy head, ...”*

Genesis 3:15

**Satan is the prince of devils.** Satan, the devil is the most powerful evil spirit. His intention is to destroy the work of GOD, especially

mankind, but he will not succeed. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to destroy the works of the devil. When HE was on the cross at Calvary, HE crushed the head of Satan, the devil. The GOD of peace or the LORD JESUS CHRIST will soon crush Satan under the feet of HIS people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...For this purpose the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was manifested, that HE might destroy the works of the devil."*

I John 3:8

*"And the GOD of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet ..."*

Romans 16:20

The saved people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST can resist the devil with the Word of GOD (I John 4:4; James 4:7).

Satan, the devil is accountable to GOD (Job 1:6-7). Satan can be at only one place at a time (Job 1:6-7). So, his presence is limited. Satan cannot see into our minds (hearts) or foretell the future (Job 1:9-22; 2:4-10). Satan can do nothing against GOD's people, without GOD's permission. GOD puts limitations on Satan's doings (Job 1:12; 2:6).

CHRIST is the LORD of HIS own people, the saved people (the believers). CHRIST indwells believers. Satan is likewise the lord of his own people, the sinners (the unsaved people). Satan indwells sinners. But CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD is incomparably greater than he who wreaks havoc in the world. The strength of HIS people lies in the fact that they are of GOD. The strength of HIS people lies in the fact that they are born of GOD.

*"Whosoever is born of GOD doth not commit sin; ..."*

I John 3:9

The persons born of GOD or the saved people should reflect this sinless perfection in their behaviour. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST redeems and saves people from the evil power of Satan, the devil. Those who are redeemed and saved will be delivered from the evil power of Satan, the devil. To stand against the schemes of the devil and to resist and to overcome the temptations of the devil, the saved people must always put on the whole armour of GOD.

*"Put on the whole armour of GOD, that ye may be able to stand*

*against the wiles of the devil. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of GOD, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of GOD."*

Ephesians 6:11, 13-17

Without prayer GOD's armour is not sufficient to achieve victory. To achieve victory, prayer is indispensable. We are to pray not just for ourselves but also for all saints (Ephesians 6:18).

**Satan, the devil promises wealth and great honour to deceive and destroy GOD's children.** The tragic end of **Balaam**, who was a prophet of GOD, is an example (Numbers 22-25; 31:1-8).

## 6.2 PRIDE AND FALL OF SATAN, THE DEVIL

*"...GOD resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble."*

James 4:6

Satan coveted in his heart to be equal to the Almighty GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He wished that other angels should worship him. In his pride, he exalted himself above GOD, the Most High. Thus, he committed the terrible sin against his own GOD who created him. In addition, Satan had some followers there. Because of this evil act Satan and his followers were cast into the world from heaven. First, they became the devils and evil spirits who roam about the world, causing great troubles and wicked deeds against people.

*"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of GOD (angels): I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit."*

Isaiah 14:12-15

Then those who lived as sinners and died as sinners became evil spirits or devils that roam about the world, creating troubles, evils and wickedness against people. As an evidence of this fact, we are aware of many incidents in which people who met with sudden and premature death and those who committed suicide lament in agony, roam about as evil spirits causing troubles and evils to people.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in the world, HE healed many people who were possessed by evil spirits or unclean spirits.

*“And they that were vexed (tormented) with unclean spirits: and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch HIM: for there went virtue (HIS most holy power) out of HIM, and healed them all.”*

St. Luke 6:18-19

In addition, the disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST cast out many devils.

*“And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.”*

St. Mark 6:13

Finally, the evil spirits or devils will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Satan, the devil, and his angels will also be thrown into hell, the eternal fire prepared for him and his angels (St. Matthew 25:41; Revelation 20:10). The worm (maggot) will be spread out beneath them and the worms will cover them. Their worm does not die and the fire is not quenched. Hell from beneath will be moved for Satan, to meet and devour him at his coming.

*“Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming: ... Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy viols (musical instruments): the worm (maggot) is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee.”*

Isaiah 14:9, 11

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is omniscient. HE only knows our thoughts (I Chronicles 28:9). HE only knows all things (St. John 16:30). HE is the Only wise GOD (Jude 25). HE only knows what is in man (St. John 2:25). HE searches all hearts and HE only understands all the intent of the thoughts (I Chronicles 28:9).**



**Since Satan, the devil is not omniscient, he cannot know our thoughts; he cannot know all things;** he cannot hear our thoughts; and he cannot read our thoughts. But, without knowing human thoughts, he is deceitful in predicting the common responses of men or in predicting human behaviour, by deceitfully inducing and injecting his chimerical ideas and schemes into the hearts of human beings (Revelation 12:9). What a deceiver Satan, the devil is!

**Beware of GOD's eternal enemy—Satan, the devil and of us, GOD's people.**

## **7. DIVINITY AND SATANISM**

The attributes of divinity are perfect sinlessness, absolute holiness, total righteousness, immaculate uprightness, absolute truth, immeasurable mercy, impartial sympathy, abject humility, never-changing affection, perfect love and imperishable glory. Only in our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, can anyone see the divinity of GOD, the divine qualities of GOD. No one can prove HIM guilty of sin (St. John 8:46).

Contrary to these, the qualities of Satanism are sinfulness, deceitfulness, filthiness, lusts, whoremongering, fornication, drunkenness, quarrels, murders, idolatry, sorcery, necromancy, divination, witchcraft, revellings, amusements, lies, theft, cheating, treachery, malice, hypocrisies, envies and evil speakings and all other sins. CHRIST came to destroy the devil's deeds—sins (I John 3:8).

All people, born in this world possess the sins of Satanism. They are liable to be cast into hell. It is necessary that those who are found in devilish sins should obtain the divine and holy experiences and become the people worthy to inherit heaven.

Only the person who has obtained these divine experiences is the true man. He alone is worthy of being called 'man'. To live as a righteous, holy and truthful man, worthy to inherit heaven, it is very essential to know who GOD is. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to know who the ONLY TRUE GOD is.

One of the divine qualities of GOD is to reprove the world, for the sins, to uphold righteousness, to pass judgment and to give the

ultimate and inescapable punishment of hell to those who despise GOD's reproof. The inevitable consequence of not giving up sins and persisting in evil ways will be eternal damnation in hell.

Again, **Satanism** is the worship of Satan, the devil. Satanists are the worshippers of Satan, the devil. Hence, Satanists are sinners; Satanists are liable for eternal damnation in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

**So, all are warned** that they should not worship Satan, the devil or other devils or evil spirits to escape eternal hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Everyone should worship the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to inherit eternal heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **8. THE SHEKINAH GLORY OF GOD**

The visible presence of GOD's dwelling with HIS people is called the shekinah glory of GOD. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST freed the Israelites from Egypt and led them through the way of wilderness of the Red sea. At that time our LORD GOD went before them by day in a pillar of cloud to lead the way, and by night in a pillar of fire to give them light, so as to go by day and night. The LORD GOD did not take away the pillar of cloud by day or the pillar of fire by night from before the Israelites (Exodus 13:21-22) to protect them from the Egyptians (Exodus 14:19-20). The pillar of cloud and the pillar of fire were the shekinah glory of GOD. This shekinah glory of the LORD had been with the Israelites at Sinai, had guided them through the wilderness and had led them into Canaan, the Promised Land.

This shekinah glory of the LORD GOD later filled the tabernacle (Exodus 40:35) and then Solomon's temple (I Kings 8:10) and finally departed from the temple due to the sins of the Israelites, just before the Babylonian captivity (Ezekiel 10:18-19). Due to the departure of the shekinah glory of the LORD GOD from the temple of GOD, the Babylonians destroyed the temple completely, without divine judgment.

Then, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came into the world and dwelt among HIS people, the believers, in the Person of GOD the

SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 1:14). At that time many people saw HIS shekinah glory (I John 1:1-3). Now, from the day of Pentecost onwards, HE dwells within HIS believers, in the Person of GOD the HOLY SPIRIT, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Finally, all believers of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will enjoy GOD's glorious presence throughout all eternity (Revelation 21:2-3).

Further, as "the glory of the LORD GOD had filled" both tabernacle and temple at their inauguration, "the HOLY SPIRIT" came in visible power to the church at its beginning (Acts 2:1-4). The shekinah glory of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came in visible power to the church. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The **glory of GOD** is the Divine Presence of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The glory of GOD is upon HIS people; the glory of GOD is seen upon HIS people (Isaiah 60:1-2). HIS people are the saved (Ephesians 2:8); they are the holy; they are the righteous (Ephesians 4:24); they are the truthful; they are the faithful (Ephesians 4:25); they are strengthened in the grace of CHRIST (II Timothy 2:1); they are strengthened in the power of the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 1:8); they are strengthened in the LORD and they walk up and down in HIS glorious name (Zechariah 10:12). EMMANUEL—GOD with us, is always with HIS people (St. Matthew 1:23) and HIS glory is always seen upon HIS people.

*"For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and HIS glory shall be seen upon thee."*

Isaiah 60:2

*This page has been intentionally left blank*

## SIN, SALVATION AND PRAYER

### 1. SINS BY BIRTH AND DEED

SINCE Adam, the first man, was the father or the head or the federal representative of the entire human race (Romans 5:12-20), his state of sin, corruption and guilt is transmitted to his descendants.

The Holy Bible (the Holy Scriptures) clearly says that evil qualities or sinful qualities are present in one's birth or conception.

*"Behold, I was shapen (brought forth) in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me."*

Psalm 51:5

*"...And wast called a transgressor from the womb."*

Isaiah 48:8

*"The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies."*

Psalm 58:3

*"But they are altogether brutish and foolish: ..."*

Jeremiah 10:8

*"...The imagination (intent or thought) of man's heart is evil from his youth (childhood); ..."*

Genesis 8:21

Every man is sinful at his birth and every man is sinful from the time his mother conceived him. Man is brought forth in iniquity and in wickedness and he is conceived in sin. Thus sin is unremittably ingrained in man from the very first moment of his conception and continues to dominate his character throughout his existence. This is the sin found in man at his birth. This is the sin by birth. This is called the **original sin**. Every human being is a sinner, born in sin and

iniquity. Hence, all people are sinners at their birth itself. They are sinners by birth. Therefore, no one can say that there is no sin in him and that he is without sin. Thus, the Holy Bible says,

*"If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us."*

I John 1:8

No one can see or know the wickedness and sin of a child, which is born in wickedness and in sin, while it is still a child. However, as the child grows and begins to speak, its wickedness and sins begin to rise to the surface in deeds. When the child begins to speak, the first sin, which appears in the child, is lie. Lie is the first sin, which appears in any man or woman. Further, as the child grows, all wickedness and sins contained in the child appear openly in deeds and it proves clearly that the person is a wicked sinner. Thus, the sinner by birth becomes a sinner by deeds also. The sinners by birth become sinners by deeds also. They become sinners by their deeds and works. They become sinners by their acts and deeds. Therefore, no man can say that he is not a sinner.

So, everyone should avoid his/her self-righteousness; and everyone should check his/her wicked nature to obtain salvation from sins.

### 1.1 WAGES OF SIN

The sins by birth and the sins by deeds found within man and also found in his actions lead to eternal damnation in hell; these sins are the cause of the terrible judgment; these sins are the cause of death; these sins are the cause of all illnesses and diseases; these sins are the cause of all sufferings, all evils, all dangers, all troubles, all losses, and all mental agonies. The wages of sin is perpetual suffering in the lake of eternal fire, the hell, where fire and brimstone burn together for ever. The only escape from this eternal hell-fire is to receive the gift of eternal life from the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of GOD is eternal life through JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

Romans 6:23

Here, death means second death, the hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*“But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.”*

Revelation 21:8

If we are set free (saved or delivered) from our sins and if we live as slaves to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the benefit we receive will be holiness, and the end will be the gift of eternal life or everlasting life. This gift of everlasting life will be given to the saved people, when they are saved or delivered from their sins. Finally, this gift of everlasting life will make us enter into the everlasting life, the everlasting kingdom or the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

*“But now being made free from sin, and become servants to GOD, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.”*

Romans 6:22

## 1.2 ORIGINAL SIN

In the beginning, the LORD GOD created the sky, the sun, the moon, the planets and the earth and everything on the earth and the seas and everything in the seas, by the Word of HIS power, except mankind. Read Genesis chapters 1-3. The LORD GOD who created all the above things is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*“But to us there is but one GOD, the FATHER, of whom are all things, and we in (for) HIM; and one LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom are all things, and we by (live by) HIM.”*

I Corinthians 8:6

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST created man in HIS own image; in the image of GOD HE created man. The LORD GOD formed the man from the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and the man became a living soul. **At that moment, the man's soul clung to the divine Soul of GOD and the man clung to GOD.** What a blissful thing it is! When HE breathed into his nostrils, an invisible living soul entered into the man. Hence, the invisible living soul is incorruptible.

*“And the LORD GOD formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a*

*living soul."*

Genesis 2:7

*"So GOD created man in HIS own image, in the image of GOD created HE him; male and female created HE them."*

Genesis 1:27

The name of the first man was Adam. He was the first man and the forefather of the entire human race. He was created with the ability to communicate with GOD.

Moreover, the LORD GOD caused the man to fall into a deep slumber, and he slept. While Adam was sleeping, the LORD GOD took one of his (Adam's) ribs and closed up the place by the flesh. Then the LORD GOD made a woman from the rib, HE had taken out of the man, and HE brought her to the man. The man said,

*"This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man."*

Genesis 2:23

The close relationship between the man and woman is made known by their names, since she is called Woman because she was taken out of man. Now, **one man for one woman for one lifetime is our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's ideal plan for marriage.** The name of the first woman was Eve. Adam and Eve were created equally 'in GOD's image'. Between them, there was no competition or domination. They were independent and co-dependent, jointly responsible for the welfare of themselves and of their children and of the world.

Adam and Eve were both naked, and they felt no shame, since the LORD GOD clothed them in HIS glory. The LORD GOD created mankind for HIS glory (Isaiah 43:7). HE created mankind upright, honest and honourable, righteous in thought and deed. HE created mankind to bear godly offspring. HE created mankind to be called by HIS name. So, they lived and moved without guilt, shame, or fear. Their perfect innocent state is revealed in their shamelessness.

*"Lo, this only have I found, that GOD hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions (schemes)."*

Ecclesiastes 7:29

*"And did not HE make one? Yet had HE the residue (fullness) of the Spirit. And wherefore one? That HE might seek a godly seed*



*(offspring). Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth."*

Malachi 2:15

The LORD GOD created mankind to be accountable to GOD for their actions. GOD's perfect justice demands punishment for sin. We, human beings cannot ignore the fact that GOD holds us accountable for our sins (St. Matthew 12:36). GOD demands that we pay for our sins.

*"For the wages of sin is death; ..."*

Romans 6:23

'Death' means 'second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur'.

*"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of CHRIST; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad."*

II Corinthians 5:10

The LORD GOD took Adam and Eve, and put them into the garden of Eden. The LORD GOD told them that they might freely eat of all the trees; but commanded that they must not eat the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, which was in the middle of the garden, for on the day they ate of it they would surely die.

*"But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."*

Genesis 2:17

Adam and Eve kept the commandment of the LORD GOD and they lived in GOD in great happiness and joy. They had a good knowledge of GOD. They had taken a solemn oath of loyalty to the LORD GOD. They made a good covenant with the LORD GOD with a good conscience, and they were faithful to the LORD GOD. They were holy and they belonged to the LORD GOD. They conversed with the LORD GOD. They walked with the LORD GOD. They worshipped the LORD GOD.

Now, the serpent was a creature made by GOD but used by Satan, the devil. Satan was a cast-out angel from heaven (Revelation 12:9). Satan, the devil will be cast into the lake of fire with his henchmen, the antichrist and the false prophet. Their torment will be eternal. They will become the first inhabitants of the lake of eternal hell-fire. Satan, the devil is a habitual and perpetual liar (St. John 8:44).

*"And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast (the antichrist) and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever."*

Revelation 20:10

When Eve was not with Adam, the vile and cunning serpent, the Satan or the Devil or Lucifer, the fallen angel, pretending to be a well-known friend, sneaked in and craftily said to the woman,

*"Yea, hath GOD said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?"*

Genesis 3:1

Here, Satan, the devil's conversation centered round a restriction and he was casting doubt on GOD's Word, by not emphasizing the fact that GOD had said in Genesis 2:16.

*"And the LORD GOD commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat."*

Genesis 2:16

Then, the woman said to the serpent,

*"We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, GOD hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die."*

Genesis 3:2-3

Here, Eve's reply reveals her carelessness with the wording of Genesis 2:16. Eve had the necessity to converse with the LORD GOD, her Creator, and she had no necessity to converse with Satan, the devil. The only reply to Satan's question should have been 'away from me, Satan, the devil'. But, Eve erred in replying Satan's crafty question. Thus, she had taken her first step in succumbing to the vile plans of Satan. Again, Satan, the father of lies falsely told the woman,

*"Ye shall not surely die: For GOD doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil."*

Genesis 3:4-5

Here, Satan, said a blatant lie to Eve. Satan, the devil is a habitual and perpetual liar. Here, Satan, the devil deliberately deceived Eve. Hence, the above verses clearly reveal the wicked and evil character of Satan; the above verses clearly reveal the satanic characteristics.

Due to the lies and false promises of Satan, Eve doubted GOD's absolute righteousness. Her doubt about GOD's absolute righteousness made her a double-minded woman (James 1:8). Her double-minded character made her unstable in all her ways and thoughts (James 1:8) and made her heart absolutely unclean (James 4:8) before GOD; and she was in a very desperate plight. She believed Satan more than GOD, her Creator who gave her a husband to be with him in one flesh and a beautiful Garden of Eden to reside. In her avarice to be as GOD, she forgot the divine command of GOD and ate the fruit and gave it to Adam. He also ate it and both of them disobeyed GOD and fell into sin.

Satan, the devil is the originator and the source and the chief practitioner of sin (Genesis 3:5; I John 3:8; St. John 8:44). By the sin of lie or falsehood, he made Adam and Eve and the entire mankind sin against GOD. By this only sin, lie, he filled all mankind with all kinds of sins (Genesis 6:5). Thus, lie is a great sin and liars are great sinners liable to be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8).

The woman was deceived by the false and enticing words of Satan, the devil. She did not think about the LORD GOD's truthful Words of eternal life. Therefore, the woman keenly looked at the tree of the knowledge of good and evil; and she keenly looked at the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Here Eve's eyes faltered. She should have always been looking keenly at the LORD GOD. But, her look was turned towards Satan, the devil and towards the forbidden tree and its fruit. To her mind, the fruit of the tree was good for food; to her eyes, the fruit of the tree was pleasant and enticing and desirable for gaining wisdom. Here Eve's mind erred. She should have always been thinking about the LORD GOD and HIS commandment. But, her thought was turned towards the false words of the devil and towards the forbidden tree and its fruit. The temptation prevailed and she took the fruit of the tree and ate it. Thus, Satan deceived Eve. She also gave the fruit to her husband and he ate it. **The disobedience of Adam and Eve totally spoiled their wisdom, knowledge and understanding.**

Thus, Adam was deceived by Eve. Hence, Satan deceived both Adam and Eve. At the moment Adam and Eve ate the fruit of the

tree of knowledge of good and evil, their **spiritual death** occurred to them (Genesis 2:17; 3:6). **At that moment, Adam and Eve were separated from GOD and their souls were separated from the divine Soul of GOD. And their souls clung to the dust (Psalm 119:25). Their souls clung to the devil, Satan.** What a cursed thing it is! At the moment Adam and Eve disobeyed, they died spiritually. Death means separation. It can mean spiritual separation, physical separation and/or eternal separation.

*“And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.”*

Genesis 3:6

At that time, Eve fully forgot about the greatness, goodness, sinlessness, harmlessness, truthfulness, faithfulness, loving kindness, uprightness, holiness, righteousness, glory, wisdom, majesty, honour, power and might of our LORD GOD and she never thought about the worst low status, badness, evilness, sinfulness, untruthfulness, unfaithfulness, dishonesty, unholiness, unrighteousness, deceitfulness, cunningness, lies, boastfulness, covetousness, murderousness and GOD-antagonism of Satan, the devil. Eve fully gave herself to the pride of life, the lust of the eyes and the lust of the flesh. When Satan caused the fall of Adam and Eve, the fall of the human race, he appealed to **three fundamental areas of weakness** (Genesis 3:6)—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life (I John 2:16). Now, GOD's people became Satan's people; godly people became satanic or devilish people; and godly people became worldly and ungodly people. See St. John 8:44.

Again, Adam and Eve had broken the covenant with GOD. They violated the oath by breaking the covenant. They disobeyed the commandment of GOD and sinned against GOD. Their good conscience became evil conscience; their good hearts that were attached to GOD became evil hearts that were attached to Satan, the devil (Genesis 6:5) and they were unfaithful to GOD.

*“But they like men (like Adam) have transgressed the covenant: there have they dealt treacherously against ME.”*

Hosea 6:7

Only by making a covenant with the LORD GOD, can a man become a godly man or spiritual man. By breaking the covenant with the LORD GOD, no one can be a godly man or spiritual man.

*"...Shall he break the covenant, and be delivered? Seeing he despised the oath by breaking the covenant, when, lo, he had given his hand, and hath done all these things, he shall not escape. Therefore thus saith the LORD GOD; As I live, surely MINE oath that he hath despised, and MY covenant that he hath broken, even it will I recompense upon his own head."*

Ezekiel 17:15, 18-19

Since, Adam and Eve disobeyed the commandment of the LORD GOD, and sinned against GOD, GOD's glory departed from their bodies. Their holy eyes were closed and their eyes of sinfulness or their lustful eyes were opened, to see evil in everything and they realized that they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

*"And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons (girding coverings)."*

Genesis 3:7

Again, the fundamental cause of their sin is their desire or lust to eat the fruit of the forbidden tree, against the will of GOD. That is, the fundamental cause of their sin is their sinful lust or sinful desire. Thus, the fundamental cause of conception of one's sin is his/her sinful lust or sinful desire; the fundamental cause of birth of one's sin is his/her conception of sin due to his/her sinful lust or sinful desire; the fundamental cause of maturity of one's sin is his/her birth of sin due to his/her sinful lust or sinful desire; and the fundamental cause of one's death, the second death or the fiery lake of burning sulphur, is his/her maturity of sin due to his/her sinful lust or sinful desire.

*"Then when lust (desire) hath conceived, it bringeth forth (gives birth to) sin: and sin, when it is finished (full-grown), bringeth forth death."*

James 1:15

Now, the desire or the lust to steal or rob someone's property makes one a thief or robber. A thief or robber is a sinner. The desire

or the lust to covet makes one a covetous person. A covetous person is a sinner. The desire or the lust to disobey the Word of GOD makes one a disobedient person. A disobedient person is a sinner.

The desire or the lust to tell falsehood makes one a liar. All liars are sinners. The desire or the lust to quarrel makes one a quarrelsome person. A quarrelsome person is a sinner. The desire or the lust to murder makes one a murderer. A murderer is a sinner. The desire or the lust to cheat makes one a cheat. A cheat is a sinner. The desire or the lust to deceive makes one a deceiver. A deceiver is a sinner.

The desire or the lust to conspire makes one a conspirator. A conspirator is a sinner. The desire or the lust to worship idols makes one an idolater. Idolaters are sinners. The desire or the lust to worship devils or demons makes one a demonolater. Demonolaters, the devil worshippers are sinners. The desire or the lust to do sorcery makes one a sorcerer. Sorcerers are sinners.

The desire or the lust to do adultery makes one an adulterer or adulteress. Adulterers and adulteresses are sinners. The desire or the lust to revel makes one a reveller. Revellers are sinners. The desire or the lust to revile makes one a reviler. Revilers are sinners.

Furthermore, the desire or the lust to see unwanted and ugly things causes one's eyes to do sinful act by looking. The desire or the lust to hear unwanted and ugly things causes one's ears to do sinful act by hearing. The desire or the lust to speak unwanted and ugly things, lies and blasphemies and proud words causes one's lips or tongue or mouth to do sinful acts by speaking. The desire or the lust to think unwanted and ugly things causes one's heart or mind to do sinful acts by thinking. The desire or the lust to do unwanted and ugly acts causes one's hands or legs to do sinful act by deeds. The desire or the lust to write obscene books makes one an ugly person. The desire or the lust to read obscene writings (books) makes one an ugly person. The desire or the lust to see obscene pictures or photos or films or movies or cinemas makes one an ugly person. One's lustful look makes a person's eyes full of adultery. One's lustful look makes a person's eyes never stop sinning.

Originally, the LORD GOD had clothed Adam and Eve in HIS glory. Since Adam and Eve were dispensed with HIS glorious

garment, they saw their nakedness. Hence, they sinned against GOD and fell short of the glory of GOD.

*"For all have sinned, and come (fall) short of the glory of GOD."*

Romans 3:23

Since Adam and Eve disobeyed the commandment of the LORD GOD, they became sinners. The first sin committed by mankind against the LORD GOD was disobedience. Hence, disobedience is a great sin against the LORD GOD. Disobedience or transgression or trespass is a great sin against the LORD GOD. Thus, the first sin entered into the first man Adam and into the first woman Eve; thus, the first sin entered into mankind and into the world.

*"...Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams."*

I Samuel 15:22

When Adam and Eve heard the sound of the LORD GOD as HE was walking in the garden in the cool of the day; they hid themselves from the LORD GOD among the trees of the garden. Due to the sin of disobedience, Adam and Eve had lost their divine fellowship with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I John 1:3). So, they hid themselves from the most glorious presence of GOD (Genesis 3:8). Thus due to their sin, they became nervous and fearful. They felt shame and were not bold enough to face the LORD GOD. **"Where there is sin, there is shame."** When they sinned, they had lost their divine holiness and were driven out of the Garden of Eden **"Where there is sin, there is no holiness."**

Now, the LORD GOD called to the man,

*"Where art thou (Where are you)?"*

Genesis 3:9

The man answered,

*"I heard THY voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself."*

Genesis 3:10

And the LORD GOD said,

*"Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?"*

Genesis 3:11

The man said,

*"The woman whom THOU gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat."*

Genesis 3:12

The LORD GOD said to the woman,

*"What is this that thou hast done? ..."*

Genesis 3:13

The woman said,

*"The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat."*

Genesis 3:13

The LORD GOD said to the serpent,

*"Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it (HE) shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise HIS heel."*

Genesis 3:14-15

Genesis 3:15 has been recognized as the **first promise** of GOD in the Holy Bible. Also this verse has been recognized as the **first messianic prophecy** of the Holy Bible. It reveals **three important truths**. Satan, the serpent is the worst enemy of the human race. That is why GOD put enmity between Satan, the devil, and the woman. There is a spiritual barrier between Satan's people and GOD's people. 'Thy seed' means 'Satan's people'. 'Her seed' means 'GOD's people'. GOD promised redemption through the seed of the woman. The seed of the woman, viz., JESUS CHRIST is the Redeemer and the Saviour. HE came into the world and delivered the deathblow to Satan, but in doing so, HE bruised HIMSELF. 'It' means 'HE'. 'It (HE) shall bruise (crush) thy head, and thou shalt bruise HIS heel' refers to CHRIST's bruising on the cross, which led to the eventual crushing of Satan and his kingdom. Then the LORD GOD said to the woman,

*"I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee."*

Genesis 3:16



And the LORD GOD said to Adam,

*“Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.”*

Genesis 3:17-19

The closest human relationship with GOD was spoiled because of their deliberate disobedience to GOD and abuse of freedom. Yet GOD showed them HIS tender, parental care of love, affection and support (Genesis 3:21). The LORD GOD made garments of skin for Adam and Eve and clothed them. Afterwards, HE drove them out of the garden of Eden. Access to the 'tree of life' was denied to them.

*“And the LORD GOD said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the LORD GOD sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So HE drove out the man; and HE placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.”*

Genesis 3:22-24

‘Of us’ the plural does not refer to angels, but is a plural of HIS Majesty.

The great love of our GOD towards mankind is revealed in these verses. Because of the disobedience of Adam and Eve, they became sinners. Hence, disobedience is the first great sin of mankind. Now, if a saint or a holy man eats the fruit of the tree of life, he will live as a holy man for ever. No change will occur in his holy life. However, if a sinner eats the fruit of the tree of life, he will live as a sinner for ever. No change will occur in his sinful life. To withhold Adam, Eve, and their seed from such a disastrous condition, the LORD GOD drove them out of the garden of Eden. What a loving GOD our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

Now, Adam and Eve had not earlier thought of the terribly disastrous consequences of disobedience. Their intimate fellowship with GOD was broken due to their disobedience. The earth was cursed because of Adam. Sorrow, pain, and physical death became part of the experience of their life. Labour became burdensome. They became cursed. The woman should experience multiplied sorrow and pain in child-bearing. GOD cursed Satan, the serpent, since he deceived mankind.

Now, Adam had concealed and hidden his sin, his disobedience or transgression or trespass and his guilt or iniquity. He did not confess his sin, his disobedience and his guilt. So, he did not prosper, and he did find no mercy.

*"If I covered my transgressions as Adam, by hiding mine iniquity in my bosom."*

Job 31:33

*"He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy."*

Proverbs 28:13

Further, Eve had also concealed and hidden her sin, her disobedience, and her guilt. She did not confess her sin, her disobedience and her guilt. So, she did not prosper, and she did find no mercy.

Again, Adam did not accept that he had committed a sin against the LORD GOD, and hence he did not ask the LORD GOD any forgiveness of sin. But, he said to the LORD GOD that the woman HE put there with him—she gave him the fruit of the tree and he ate it. Adam attributed his fault and guilt and transgression and sin to the woman. Again, Adam blamed the woman and GOD, since GOD was the one who brought her to Adam (Genesis 2:22). He did not take responsibility for eating the fruit of the forbidden tree. But he employed an evasive tactic—blame-shifting. Adam did not accept his fault and guilt and transgression and sin. He did not regret his sin. He was not seized with remorse for his sin. Adam had also broken the covenant with the LORD GOD. He had behaved treacherously against the LORD GOD.

*"But they like men (like Adam) have transgressed the covenant: there have they dealt treacherously against ME."*

Hosea 6:7

Similarly, Eve did not accept that she had committed a sin against the LORD GOD, and hence she did not ask the LORD GOD any forgiveness of sin. But, she said to the LORD GOD that the serpent (the Satan) had deceived her and she ate. She did not take responsibility for eating the fruit of the forbidden tree. But she also employed an evasive tactic—blame-shifting. Nowadays also, this worst evasive tactic—blame-shifting is employed by almost all fallen men and women. Eve tried to transfer her fault and guilt and transgression and sin to Satan. She did not accept her fault and guilt and transgression and sin. She did not regret her sin. She was not seized with remorse for her sin. She had also broken the covenant with the LORD GOD. She had acted treacherously against the LORD GOD. Now, GOD never tempts any man to evil. HE cannot be tempted with evil. The **three stages in Eve's fall due to Satan's evil temptations** are lust, sin and death (James 1:13-15; Genesis 3:6-22).

Both Adam and Eve did not ask the LORD GOD forgiveness of sin. They did not regret their sins. They did not repent of their sins. Hence, they were driven out of the garden of Eden. Then all sins entered into Adam and Eve.

Now, we know that the bodily diseases of the parents are transmitted to their children bodily. In the same manner, the sins of Adam and Eve are passed to their children and to the coming generations. Hence, all are sinners. Adam's sin resulted in a sinful race. Adam's sin affects all who are part of the human race. Adam's transgression results in a reign of death, the second death in hell-fire.

*"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned."*

Romans 5:12

Man's sin is GOD's sorrow (Genesis 6:5-6; Ephesians 4:30). The sins and iniquities of mankind have separated them from their own loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"But your iniquities have separated between you and your GOD, and your sins have hid HIS face from you, that HE will not hear."*

Isaiah 59:2

But, the gift of grace through the righteous act of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST results in a spiritual race. CHRIST's righteousness is for all who are a part of HIS spiritual race. CHRIST's righteous obedience results in a reign of life, the eternal life in heaven.

*"That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

Romans 5:21

Now, **original sin** is the sinful and evil nature that is present in everyone from birth or conception as a result of Adam's disobedience in the garden of Eden. Hence, this original sin brought spiritual death to all people. But our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save all of us from our original sin and all actual sins of thought, word, deed, and omission. HE led a perfectly holy life for us, and HE paid for all our sins on the cross at Calvary (I Peter 2:24; Romans 4:25).

*"For as in Adam all die, even so in CHRIST shall all be made alive."*

I Corinthians 15:22

This spiritual life or new life is the glorious work of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or the HOLY SPIRIT of CHRIST, through the Word of GOD.

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

By faith in CHRIST anyone can be freed from sin's guilt and punishment. When a man believes in CHRIST or when a man is fully saved from sins, he is a new creation, and he perceives CHRIST in a new and living way. Then, original sin will be totally destroyed from him by the glorious work of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or the HOLY SPIRIT of CHRIST, and no original sin will cling to his life.

### 1.3 WHAT ARE SINS ?

**The greatest sin is unbelief in JESUS CHRIST (St. John 3:18; 16:9), the ONLY TRUE GOD (I John 5:20).**

*"For all have sinned, and come (fall) short of the glory of GOD."*

Romans 3:23

Sin is the transgression of the law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Sin is the transgression of the commandment of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Sin is the transgression of the law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST by thoughts, words, deeds or omissions. Trespass is sin; wickedness is sin; evil is sin; iniquity is sin. Doing something that is prohibited by GOD is a sin of commission. Failing to do what is required of us is a sin of omission (I John 3:4, 6, 8-9).

*"Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law."*

I John 3:4

To be very cautious about not doing any sin and to caution everyone extremely, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has wonderfully set a conscientious heart as an **"alarm bell"** or **"caution bell"** in everyone's system. When anyone thinks about doing any sin or makes an attempt to do any sin, this "alarm bell" or "caution bell" starts ringing by means of very fearful and rapid heartbeats, to stop doing any sin. If anyone sins, this fear will follow him/her continually and this sin will catch up with him/her permanently (Proverbs 5:22). What a wonderful device it is! Now, before Adam and Eve sinned or transgressed or disobeyed the commandment of GOD by eating the fruit of the forbidden tree, they were cautioned in their conscientious hearts by their "alarm bells" or "caution bells" ringing fearfully and rapidly by means of very fearful and rapid heartbeats. But they were not cautioned and alarmed. So, they fell into sin and they were caught up with sin permanently and this fear followed them continually (Genesis 3: 8-13). What a terrible thing it is!

Adam, the first man and Eve, the first woman transgressed the commandment of the LORD GOD and sinned.

*"And the LORD GOD commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."*

Genesis 2:16-17

*"And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and*

*that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat."*

Genesis 3:6

Adam and Eve sinned due to their desire or lust; they sinned due to their lust of the flesh and due to their lust of the eyes; and they sinned due to their pride of life (I John 2:16).

The desire or the lust to do wrong once conceived gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death, the second death. The second death is hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished (full-grown), bringeth forth death."*

James 1:15

**Sin is a very serious criminal offence against our GOD and HIS Word. Certain sins and their punishments are mentioned in Leviticus and Deuteronomy of the Holy Bible. But, the everlasting/the eternal punishment for sins is in the fiery lake of burning sulphur—the everlasting/eternal hell-fire (Revelation 21:8).**

Sinners are the children of Satan, the devil. Satan is a perpetual liar. Satan is called a liar and the father of lies. Hence, all liars are the children of Satan; and all liars are sinners. Sin is of the devil (St. John 8:44). The LORD JESUS CHRIST came to destroy the devil's deeds and to redeem and save sinners (I John 3:8).

The main cause of sin is Satan, the devil who has been sinning from the beginning. **Satan, the evil spirit is the external and internal cause of sin.** Satan is the wicked one. He is the evil one. Satan, the evil spirit is always causing sin externally and internally in a sinner. Besides, he is tempting the people of GOD, the saved people to commit sin. So, they should always depend on the Holy Scriptures to defeat Satan's temptations. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST defied Satan's temptations by relying on the authority of the Holy Scriptures (St. Matthew 4:1-11).

Because our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF has suffered, being tempted, HE is able to help those who are tempted (Hebrews 2:18). No temptation will overtake them except such as is common to man. Since our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is faithful, HE will not allow

HIS people to be tempted beyond what they are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that they may be able to bear it (I Corinthians 10:13). Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation (St. Matthew 26:41).

**Satan, the evil spirit is always shooting his sinful fiery darts (arrows) on people, to induce them to commit sins or evil doings or unholy acts, etc., against GOD. By the shield of faith, believers will be able to extinguish all the sinful fiery darts of Satan, the evil spirit. Satan, the wicked one is the driving force in the children of unbelief, and he is tempting the children of GOD to do evil.**

*"Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked."*

Ephesians 6:16

*"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world."*

I Peter 5:8-9

**Another internal cause of sin is the heart of man, since all evils come from inside and make a man unclean. Sins come out of the heart and defile the man.**

*"And HE (JESUS CHRIST) said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man."*

St. Mark 7:20-23

Not abstaining from meats (things) offered to idols, from blood, from the meat of strangled animals, and from sexual immorality are sins. By abstaining from these sins, a person will get religious, moral, and physical purity.

*"That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well."*

Acts 15:29

Departing from the law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is sin, whether it is great or small, known or unknown, intended or accidental. One who knows and does things deserving punishment will be beaten with many blows (will be given greater punishment) and one who does not know and does things deserving punishment will be beaten with fewer blows (will be given lesser punishment).

*"And if a soul sin, and commit any of these things which are forbidden to be done by the commandments of the LORD; though he wist it not (does not know it), yet is he guilty, and shall bear his iniquity."*

Leviticus 5:17

*"And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. ..."*

St. Luke 12:47-48

Anything that is at variance with the Word of GOD is sin. The transgression of man-made laws and rules contrary to the commandment of GOD is not sin.

If we transgress the laws of the government, we sin against GOD, because HE has commanded us to submit to every authority instituted among men. But, in all things, we must obey the laws of the government that are in line with the LORD's will.

*"Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the LORD's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well."*

I Peter 2:13-14

Cursing and blaspheming one's parents are sins (Leviticus 20:9; Deuteronomy 27:16). Showing disobedience and dishonour to parents is also sin. Children should obey those parental instructions that are in line with the LORD's will.

*"Children, obey your parents in the LORD: for this is right. Honour thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise; That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth."*

Ephesians 6:1-3



Doing something against one's own conscience is also sin. Conscience is a knowing within oneself. The conscience of man dwells in the heart. Memory and thinking are the chief functions of the heart. The heart is the seat of intellect, emotions, will, and moral consciousness. The heart is the seat of conscious life and the fountainhead of life.

*"Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life."*

Proverbs 4:23

Conscience is a knowledge or sense of right and wrong, with a compulsion to do that which is right. Heart is the apparent location of the conscience. Conscience provides the awareness and sufficient grounds for condemnation, because it establishes a framework of right and wrong and it also reflects the law of GOD written in our hearts.

*"Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another."*

Romans 2:15

Again, we also sin when we cause or encourage anyone to sin against his or her conscience by doing anything that he or she thinks is wrong, even though the law of GOD does not forbid it.

*"But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak. For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols; And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom CHRIST died? But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against CHRIST. Wherefore, if meat (food) make my brother to offend (stumble), I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend."*

I Corinthians 8:9-13

However, when people ask us to do anything that is contrary to the law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, then it is not a sin if we disobey them. In all things, we must be loyal to GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...We ought to obey GOD rather than men."*

Acts 5:29

**Now, those who play with the whale will perish by the whale; whoever does so destroys his own body. Likewise, those who commit sins will be killed by their sins; those who commit sins will perish by their sins; those who commit sins will be destroyed in the fiery lake of burning sulphur; whoever does so destroys his own soul. Sin is the most dangerous soul-destroying virus.**

*"For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew (killed) me."*

Romans 7:11

*"The soul that sinneth, it shall die. ..."*

Ezekiel 18:20

*"Upon the wicked HE shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup."*

Psalms 11:6

Lies, thieving, cheating, tainting, deceitfulness, ruthlessness, cunningness, plot, treachery, forgery, robbery, stealing, burglary, jealousy, arrogance, pride, presumptuousness, covetousness, greediness, enmity, emulations, strife, rebellion, stubbornness, avarice, whispering, talking ill of others, hatred, anger, rage, disobedience to parents, false witness, love for money, bribery, brokerage, buying raffle tickets, making mean profits, playing, gambling, playing cards, horse race and other races, and speculating and investing in stocks and shares expecting huge profits but with the risk of losing money are sins.

Wearing fancy dresses, seeing bull fight, boxing and many other fights, using lipstick for colouring the lips, yellowing the face and body, blackening the eyebrows, polishing the nails, a mark or marks worn on the forehead, marks on hands or on body, worldly entertainments, wearing transparent dresses, tattooing the body, fastening threads on hands, etc., hanging a piece of cloth on the neck by fastening with a thread, etc., are sins. Wearing charms to keep away evil or devil or to bring good luck is sin.

Lusts, adultery, fornication, murders, quarrelling, evils, wickedness, drinking toddy, drinking whisky or brandy or any other spirits, using opium or brown sugar or other narcotics, smoking, using snuff

(inhaling powdered tobacco, etc.), chewing tobacco and chewing betel, nut, etc., amusements, sports, playing games, matches, contests or competitions, tournament or championship, etc., witnessing cinema, drama, circus, dances and plays, games, matches, sports, contests, tournaments, etc., arguing, unkind and merciless nature, iniquity, cracking jokes, mocking, backbiting, abusing, blasphemy, using foul words, cursing and swearing, acting in plays, films, television, etc., mimicry (the practice of mimicking), juggling, josh making, conjuring, making caricatures, gymnastics, ragging somebody, teasing, teasingly smiling, chattering talk and catchpenny acts are sins.

Injustice, evil acts, idolatry, satanic rites, worshipping devils and evil spirits and idols made of stone, sand, wood, gold, silver and other metals, worshipping fire, air, rain, skies, weapons, sun, moon, stars, planets, trees, cattle, birds, photos, pictures and figures, worshipping cows, serpents and other creatures and doing unholy and unclean acts are sins. Sun worship (surya namaskar) in **Yoga** is sin, since the worshipping/serving the created things of the Creator, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is sin (Romans 1:23, 25).

Offering eatables and other things to devils and idols, eating eatables offered to devils and idols, and using other things offered to devils and idols are sins. Living to please the world, dressing to please the world, beautifying the body, adorning the body with gold or silver or platinum jewels, adorning the body with rings, chains, bracelets, pearls, etc., an idolatrous love of material wealth, an idolatrous love of children or wife or husband or anybody or anything, a man having more than one wife, a woman having more than one husband, committing suicide and contemplating suicide are sins.

Necromancy, witchcrafts, observing omens of time and day, divination, enchanting, consulting familiar spirits, fortune-telling, performing and witnessing magic shows, mesmerism, hypnotism, animal magnetism, performing and witnessing snake and monkey charming, observing omens of lizards, birds and shrews, palmistry, astrology and cat-acoustics or cat-aphonics—divination by observing an echo, the reflecting of sound waves off a wall or an enclosed space so that a noise appears to be repeated are sins.

Beliefs in a variety of superstitions in relation to good luck or bad luck and taboos are sins. Using taboo words is sin. Beliefs in supernatural, mystical and magical things are sins. Causing hypnosis (a sleep like state caused by the action of another person who can then make the hypnotized person obey his commands) and the act or practice of hypnotizing someone (**hypnotism**) are sins.

Kissing or garlanding the idols or photographs, showing the smoke of incenses before idols or photographs, and groping or worshipping idols or photographs are sins. **Yoga** meditations and all sorts of such other meditations are sins. Aasanas (postures) in yoga are sins. Addictions to drugs, tobacco, alcohol, sex, violence and orgies are sins. Chewing arecanut and chewing betel leaf with arecanut and lime are sins.

Nudism (the practice of not wearing clothes) or naturism is sin. Nudists or naturists are sinners. Strippers'/striptease artistes' **entertainments** or enthrallments or enticements are sins. No doubt, entertainers/enthrallers/enticers of all kinds, types and varieties are sinners; strippers/striptease artistes are sinners; actors/actresses are sinners. Cabaret entertainment is sin. Cabaret artistes are sinners.

Seeking for omens and coincidences, and making decisions on the basis of these are sins. Giving significances to dreams or visions or imaginations are sins. Involvements in seances, Ouija boards, and Dungeons and Dragons are sins. Interest in UFO (unidentified flying object) is sin. Witchcraft (both black and white) and spiritism (the belief that living persons can receive messages from the spirits of dead people, usually sent through a person with evil powers, called a medium) are sins. Mediums are sinners. Be aware of these persons. GOD hates the sin of witchcraft and Wicca witchcraft and all sin.

Exposures to occult (demonic) themes in novels, audios, videos, movies, television series/show/programme, cable/satellite TV, internet (the Net), Worldwide Web (the Web), computer, radio, magazines, newspapers, telecast and telecommunications (telecoms) are sins. The New Age beliefs and practices are occult or demonic.

However, let us not forget one thing. These sophisticated materials can also be used and handled to bring glory to the LORD. Nowadays one can have access to many commentaries on the Holy Bible

and there are also some useful websites available. Hence we should use our discrimination together with GOD's guidance in deciding what is good and beneficial and what is harmful and prohibitory.

'Just for fun' readings of magazines, newspapers and books featuring astrology, horoscope (a forecast of future based on the position of the stars and planets), numerology, tarot cards, dream interpretations, palm reading, clairvoyance, and the like are sins. Computer games and other games, bets, comics, etc., are sins. Comedians are sinners.

Necrophagia (the practice of eating corpses), necrophilia (sexual attraction to dead bodies), alectryomancy (divination by means of using rooster or cock to select grains or food), aleuromancy (divination by the use of flour), alphetomancy (divination by the use of barley), anthropomancy (divination from the entrails or the internal organ of human being), arithmancy or arithmomancy (divination by the use of number of letters in names), onomancy (divination from the letters of a name), armomancy (divination by the shoulder of animals), astragalomancy (divination by throwing dice), astromancy (divination by means of stars), axinomancy (divination by means of putting a heated hard black mineral on the head of an ox), belomancy (divination by means of drawing arrow from a quiver), bibliomancy (prediction of future by reading some verse from the Holy Bible by ones own will, but not by the revelation and will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST), phyllomancy (divination by means of leaves), botanomancy (divination by means of plants), cartomancy (divination by means of playing cards), psephomancy (divination by pebbles), ornithomancy (divination by means of birds), oomancy (divination by means of eggs), xylomancy (divination by means of pieces of wood), theomancy (divination through inspired oracles), oneiromancy (divination by means of dreams), pyromancy (divination by forms appearing in fire), rhabdomancy (divination by means of a magic wand or rod, especially in discovering springs of water), scapulimancy (divination by observing a shoulder blade cracked from a fire), sciomancy (divination by consulting the shades of the dead), crithomancy (divination by the meal scattered over the victims or sacrifice), catoptromancy (divination by a mirror or by gazing at a crystal), ceromancy (divination from figures formed by melted wax in water), chiromancy (divination by analyzing the appearance

of hand), cleromancy (divination by means of casting lots), coscinomancy (divination by sieve), crystallomancy (divination by means of crystal), enoptromancy (divination by means of mirror), geomancy (divination by throwing handful of earth at random), gyromancy (divination by rotating feeling giddy and falling unconscious), hydromancy (divination by means of signs in water), lithomancy (divination by stones or charms or talismans of stone), lecanomancy (divination by inspecting water in a basin), aeromancy (divination by observing the weather) and floramancy (divination by choosing one of the white and red flowers), mantology (the art of divination) are sins. Kleptomania (an uncontrollable desire to steal) is sin.

Divination is the art of finding out and saying what will happen, especially in the future. Divination is a pagan counterpart of prophecy. This is a false prophecy by the evil power of the devils or demons. Pagans are irreligious people. Pagans are those who worship many gods or no god at all, rather than the ONE and the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST as revealed in the Holy Bible. Divination is by the evil power of the devils; divination is by the evil power of the demons. Therefore, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST detests divination of any kind.

*"There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD thy GOD doth drive them out from before thee."*

Deuteronomy 18:10-12

One who makes his son or daughter pass through the fire (one who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire to an idol) is a sinner. One who tramples on the fire in pagan rituals is a sinner.

The true prophecy of GOD does not originate by the will of man, but by the will of GOD. It comes from our heavenly GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF through HIS holy men and they speak by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (II Peter 1:20-21). False prophets are sinners.

Magicians, sorcerers, etc., have the worst satanic power against the highest spiritual power of those who worship and serve GOD (Exodus 7:8-12; II Timothy 3:8-9). Magic, sorcery, etc., are some illegitimate ways to fulfil some illegitimate needs. So they are strictly prohibited. They are contrary to the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Floral make-up (covering or decorating with a design of flowers over the hair or shoulders or round the neck), plaiting or braiding one's hair, fringing or banging one's hair, curling one's hair, parting one's hair, waving one's hair, Afro hair style, dressing sideboards or sideburns, wearing shining clothes, wearing expensive clothes, wearing changeable suits of apparel, wearing the dress of a prostitute (very light or fluffy garment), women wearing men's clothing, men wearing women's clothing, seeing erotic art, photographs or pictures, reading erotic books or papers, erotic fantasies, and trickery are sins.

Neither inner peace nor separation from sin nor union with GOD will take place through **yoga** meditations or contortions. **Contortion** (a twisted state of the face or legs or hands or body), performing a series of yoga contortions or meditations are sins. Transcendental meditation (TM) in yoga by thinking deeply in silence and repeating a phrase over and over again was first introduced as a religious exercise or philosophy, and then as a scientific exercise or non-religious psychology by levitation. It fully concentrates on Hindu pantheistic views. Hence, TM is sin. Transcendentalists are sinners. TM ignores the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST completely. So, no one should practise this worst satanic and sinful meditation. Every one should read and meditate day and night upon the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Bible (Psalm 1:1-2) and meditate upon GOD (Psalm 104:34) to get salvation.

Desecration of a sacred thing, viz., the Holy Bible or sacred place, viz., church, dissipation (living a life of harmful pleasures and waste), eating the blood of any manner of flesh, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination and the mouse, surfeiting (having too much appetite for food or flesh), drunkenness, cares of this life (anxieties of this life), etc., are sins (Leviticus 17:14; St. Luke 21:34; Proverbs 23:2, 20-21).

Those who sanctify themselves and purify themselves, to go to the gardens after an idol in the midst are sinners. Going into the gardens to worship an idol is sin. Going into a mosque to worship is sin. Going into a Hindu temple to worship is sin. Going into a Buddhist temple to worship is sin. Going into a Sikh temple to worship is sin. Going to any unwanted place to worship is sin. Our GOD warns,

*"They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together. "*

Isaiah 66:17

Showing partiality is sin. Whoever keeps the whole law of the LORD GOD and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. Law-breakers are sinners. They are the cursed.

*"But if ye have respect (show partiality) to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced (convicted) of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend (stumble) in one point, he is guilty of all. For HE that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law."*

James 2:9-11

*"Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law to do them. ..."*

Deuteronomy 27:26

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has **never commanded** HIS disciples to worship the cross or to make the sign of the cross on the forehead or chest. The act of making the sign of the cross on the forehead or chest (**signation**) does not give any relief from sins. It won't protect anyone from evil or sin. Hence, it is an unwanted and unnecessary act; and it is an act against the will of GOD. Thus, signation is sin. The worship of the cross (**staurolatry**) is also sin. Kissing the signet-ring of a Pope or Bishop or any other is an unwanted act. Hence, it is sin. Wearing ring or chain or any other ornament is also sin (I Peter 3:3).

Since the Roman Catholic teaching about the **blessed, beatification** and **canonization** of dead persons by the Pope is not Biblical, this teaching is a pure camouflage (deception). **Deception** is sin.



Roman Catholic teaching is very deceptive. Roman Catholicism is filled with lies and deception.

**The Mass or Eucharist**—the heart of Roman Catholicism, is blasphemous, heretical and damnable. It is filled with heresies, paganism, pantheism, mysticism and deception. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST died only once for our sins. But, HE never dies at all times and at all places as in Roman Catholic Eucharist or Mass.

*“Who (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people’s: for this HE did once, when HE offered up HIMSELF.”*

Hebrews 7:27

*“... But now once in the end of the world hath HE appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of HIMSELF.”*

Hebrews 9:26

Hence, the Roman Catholic Eucharist or Mass is sin.

Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has **never commanded** HIS disciples to worship Virgin Mary, the mother of JESUS; HE has **not commanded** HIS disciples to worship saints; HE has **not commanded** HIS disciples to worship angels. But, HE has **commanded** them to worship and serve the LORD GOD only. The worship of Virgin Mary (**Mariolatry**) is sin. The worship of **Madonna**, the figure or statue of Virgin Mary is sin. The worship of saints or sacred things (**hierolatry**) is also sin. Hence, one who worships Virgin Mary is a sinner. One who worships a saint is also a sinner. One who worships an angel is also a sinner. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has said,

*“Thou shalt worship the LORD thy GOD, and HIM only shalt thou serve.”*

St. Matthew 4:10

Hence, **the worshipping of Mary or saints or angels is sin. The worshipping of kings or emperors or human beings is sin. Rastafarianism, the worshipping of the former Emperor of Ethiopia is sin.** Rastafarians (Rastas) are sinners. Further, JESUS has said,

*“And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after ME, cannot be MY disciple.”*

St. Luke 14:27

'**Bear his cross**' does not mean to bear anything having the shape of the cross, on which the LORD JESUS CHRIST died. But it means to bear sorrows, troubles, sufferings, problems, pains, humiliations, insults, etc., in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, the mere bearing the symbol of the cross or crucifix (a model of the cross with the figure of JESUS on it) is an unwanted act. Such an act is sin.

Moreover, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has **not commanded** HIS disciples to wear any ring on any finger or to wear any chain on the neck. HE has **never commanded** HIS disciples to fasten threads on the hands or on the neck or on any part of the body. Hence, the wearing of rings or chains, fastening of threads, etc., are sins.

Whipping (scourging) oneself or somebody by means of a whip (scourge) to show the whipping of JESUS before HIS crucifixion, and nailing somebody on a wooden cross by means of nails to show the crucifixion of JESUS on the cross, are unwanted acts. Such unwanted acts are sins. Thus, **flagellation** is sin.

The worship of human beings (anthropolatry) is sin. The worship of one's own self (autolatry) is sin. The worship of the dead (necrolatry) is sin. The worship of martyrs (martyrolatry) is sin. The worship of wealth (plutolatry) is sin. The worship of archaism (archaeolatry) is sin. The worship of tools or weapons is sin. The worship of words (epeolatry) is sin. The worship of cosmos (cosmolatry) is sin. Physiolatry or nature worship is sin. The worship of plants (phytolatry) is sin. The worship of state (statolatry) is sin. The worship of snakes (ophiolatry) and the worship of fire (pyrolatry) are sins. The worship of flag or flags is sin.

The worship of the heavenly bodies (astrolatry) is sin. The worship of demons (demonolatry) is sin. The worship of trees (dendrolatry) is sin. The worship of the sun (heliolatry) is sin. The worship of the moon and other planets is sin. The worship of saints or sacred things (hierolatry) is sin. The worship of images, pictures or sacred persons (iconolatry) is sin. The worship of idols (idolatry) is sin. The excessive veneration of saints (hegiolatry) is sin. The worship of animals or theriomorphic things (theriolatry) is sin. The worship of cows and other animals (zoolatry) is sin.

The worship of the devil (black mass) is sin. A follower of the devil (diabolonian) is a sinner. Practising ceremony in honour of those who are dead (feralia) is sin. The veneration of images (iconoduly) is sin. The worship of an inanimate object regarded with holy respect as being the habitation of a spirit (fetishism) is sin. A system of worship, which includes the employment of sorcery and fetishes (macumba) is sin. The worship of a female figure with outstretched arms as in the ancient Greek art (orant worship) is sin. The worship of the male sexual organ (phallicism) is sin. The worshipper of the male sexual organ (phallicust) is a sinner. The Hindu worship of the lingam is sin. The worship of monsters (teratism) is sin. The employment of magic to prevent evil (apotropaism) is sin. The worship of ancestral spirits (manism) is sin. Black magic (pishogue) is sin. Sabbat or demonology is sin. One who worships demons (demonolater) is a sinner.

Sin like murder, idolatry, heresy, and adultery are called canonical sins. The carving of god in a stone (joss) is sin. The image worshipped by ancient Hebrews (teraphim) is sin. The eating of god in the form of animal or other symbols (theophagy) is sin. The worship of Satan (Satanism) is sin. A system of beliefs that concentrates on common human needs and seeks ways of solving problems based on reason rather than on faith in GOD (humanism) is sin. The belief that GOD does not exist (atheism) is sin. A person who is not sure whether or not GOD exists (agnostic) is a sinner. Gnosticism (unbelief about CHRIST) and Montanism (unbelief about the HOLY SPIRIT of CHRIST) are sins. The belief in many gods (polytheism) and the belief that GOD is manifest in all things, since everything is divine (pantheism) are sins. Atheists, polytheists, pantheists, animists, etc., are sinners.

One who plots to do evil will be called a schemer. A schemer is a sinner (Proverbs 24:8). One who acts with arrogant pride will be called a scoffer—a proud and haughty one. A scoffer is a sinner (Proverbs 21:24). The thought of foolishness is sin (Proverbs 24:9)—belief in a power that organizes and controls the universe or the belief that all natural things have a living soul (**animism**) is sin.

The quality of increasing evil desire (**eroticism**) is sin. Desiring to sin and thinking of sins in the heart is equal to committing sins in

deeds. A man's lustful look, thought and liking at a woman other than his own wife is adultery in his heart. It is a sin of adultery.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart."*

St. Matthew 5:28

A woman's lustful look, thought and liking for a man other than her own husband is adultery in her heart. It is a sin of adultery. Thinking of murdering a person is equal to doing it. Committing a single sin or many sins, makes a man sinner in the sight of GOD. A man who steals one rupee and another who steals lakhs of rupees are equally sinners. One who steals is a thief and one who commits a sin is a sinner.

*"For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend (stumble) in one point, he is guilty of all."*

James 2:10

Thus, we come to know that **thinking of murdering a person is equal to doing it. Thinking of murdering a person is a murder. Murder is a sin. Murderer is a sinner.** Hence, euthanasia or mercy killing—the action or an instance of killing somebody out of pity, because they are in severe pain, is a sin. **Mercy killers are sinners.** No one has any right to take anyone's life. **Suicide** (the act of killing yourself deliberately) is a sin. An **attempted suicide** is a sinner. **Killing a person's soul by false teachings is a sin. False teachers are sinners.** The Holy Bible warns,

*"Thou shalt (shall) not kill."*

Exodus 20:13

**Homosexuality**, sodomy, gay, whoredom, etc., are sins. **Homosexuals**, sodomites, gay persons, whores, etc., are sinners (Leviticus 20:13; Romans 1:27). **Lesbians/Lezzies** are sinners (Romans 1:26).

*"There shall be no whore of the daughters of Israel, nor a sodomite of the sons of Israel."*

Deuteronomy 23:17

Homosexuals or gay persons and lesbians are the deluded, the perverted, the deceived, the diseased, the ugly, the brainwashed, the

wicked and the filthy (II Peter 2:7). They are totally denying GOD and HIS Word, the Holy Bible. They are constantly rationalizing the moral values of human beings. They will not inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD (I Corinthians 6:9-10).

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created woman distinct from man. Marriage is a divine union between a man and a woman (Psalm 128:3; St. Matthew 19:6). Thus, a man taking up the physiological role of the wife or a woman taking up the physiological role of the husband is a terrible curse (Romans 1:26-27). Homosexuals and lesbians are the cursed and the cursed will be thrown into hell, the everlasting hell-fire (St. Matthew 25:41).

**Homosexuals and Lesbians destroy lives**—their own and multitudes of others! They destroy lives physically, morally and eternally. They draw others into their loathsome and ugly way of life. They lead others into their loathsome and ugly sin. Nowadays TV, videos, audios, magazines, telephones, cable programmes, computer programmes, and pornography feed fleshly lusts. Homosexuals, lesbians, sodomites, gay persons, and whores are also feeding fleshly lusts. Fleshly lusts war against the soul; fleshly lusts destroy the soul. So, do not think about how to gratify the desires of the sinful nature.

*"Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul."*

I Peter 2:11

*"Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put ye on the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof."*

Romans 13:13-14

**Birth control**—the practice of controlling the number of children one has, especially by contraception, is a sin. Taking contraceptive pills is a sin.

**Family planning**—the process of planning the number of children in a family by using birth control, is a sin. The best birth control method or the best family planning method insisted in the Holy Bible of our LORD is that, since the time is short, those who have wives should live as though they had none. If it is followed correctly, then

there is absolutely no necessity for the family planning programme of various governments.

*"But this I say, brethren, the time is short: it remaineth, that both they that have wives be as though they had none."*

I Corinthians 7:29

*"Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge (with understanding), giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered."*

I Peter 3:7

**Abortion**—the act of causing a pregnancy (pregnant) to end early, in order to prevent the baby from developing and being born alive, is a sin. Abortions are sins.

**Miscarriage**—the process of giving birth to a baby before it is fully developed and able to survive, is sin.

**Incest**—sex between people who are closely related, e.g., a father and daughter or a brother and sister, is a sin. People having an incestuous relationship are sinners (Leviticus 18:6-18).

**Bestiality**—sex between a human and an animal or any creature is a sin. Anyone who acts bestially (like a beast) is a sinner (Leviticus 18:23).

**Ventriloquism**—the art of pretended speaking in such a way that the voice would appear to come from elsewhere is sin.

**Voodoo** is a religion practised originally in the West Indies and southern US involving witchcraft, sorcery and magic. Voodooism is sin. Voodooists are sinners.

It is a sin if we fail to love the LORD JESUS CHRIST above all things, and fail to worship the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, and fail to obey HIS commandments. It is a sin to be the enemies of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"If any man love not the LORD JESUS CHRIST, let him be Anathema Maran-atha."*

I Corinthians 16:22

'Anathema' means 'accursed'. 'Maran-atha' means 'O LORD, come'.

The soul who sins will die. The son will not bear the guilt of the father, nor will the father bear the guilt of the son. The righteousness of the righteous will be upon himself, and the wickedness of the wicked will be upon himself (Ezekiel 18:20).

The second death is eternal death. The second death is eternal punishment in the hell-fire, experienced only by the unsaved. When a person is saved, he has passed from death to life, the everlasting life, and he will never come into condemnation (St. John 5:24).

*"But the fearful (cowardly), and unbelieving, and the abominable (vile), and murderers, and whoremongers (sexually immoral), and sorcerers (those who practise magic arts etc.), and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone (the fiery lake of burning sulphur): which is the second death."*

Revelation 21:8

The works of the flesh listed below will make one enter into hell-fire. Idolatry is not just the worship of graven images, but putting one's chief affections on any object or person instead of on GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations (jealousies), wrath, strife, seditions (dissensions), heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of GOD."*

Galatians 5:19-21

**Revellings** are the worst ugly sins. Revellings include revelries, orgies and carousings. Seeing cinema, drama, circus, dance, sport, erotic arts and photographs and erotic TV and Internet and Website programmes are revellings. Playing in cinema, drama, circus, dance, sport, erotic TV and Internet and Website programmes are revellings. Drawing erotic arts and photographs and reading erotic books and filming erotic scenes are revellings. **Revel** is to engage in unrestrained, wild, noisy festivities or merrymakings. **Revellers** are persons who are having fun in a noisy way. Revellers are sinners. **Revelry** is the action of revelling, unrestrained, wild, noisy merrymakings. **Orgy** is a wild

and noisy drunken party at which there is a lot of eating, drinking, dancing, laughing, and over-indulgence in indiscriminate sexual activities. **Carousing** is a noisy drinking session to spend time in drinking, eating, dancing and laughing in a noisy way with other persons. **Carousal** is a noisy revel.

The three worst ugly sins, the lust of the eyes and the lust of the flesh and the pride of life (I John 2:16) produce the worst ugly sin, **revelling** and all other ugly sins. Due to these **three ugly sins**, Adam the first man and Eve the first woman had fallen into sin. So no one should indulge in revellings. No one should be a reveller.

The sinners do not like to retain GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in their knowledge. They have a debased mind, to do those things, which are not fitting. They are filled with all forms of sexual depravity and uncleanness. Knowing the righteous judgment of GOD, they commit sins. Knowing the eternal death in hell-fire, they commit sins. They not only continue to do these sins but also approve of those who practise them. What a terrible thing it is!

*“And even as they did not like to retain GOD in their knowledge, GOD gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient (fitting); Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate (strife), deceit, malignity (evil-mindedness); whisperers, Backbiters, haters of GOD, despiteful (violent), proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable (unforgiving), unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of GOD, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.”*

Romans 1:28-32

To the unsaved the judgment will result in indignation and wrath. They do not obey the truth; and they are quarrelsome.

*“But unto them that are contentious (quarrelsome), and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath.”*

Romans 2:8



It is not proper for saints or Christians to be guilty of committing the sins listed below. Such evil deeds should not even be the topic of normal conversation. No one should share in the sins of others. Everyone should keep himself/herself pure (I Timothy 5:22).

*“But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient (proper): but rather giving of thanks. For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of CHRIST and of GOD. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of GOD upon the children of disobedience. Be not ye therefore partakers with them.”*

Ephesians 5:3-7

The Holy Bible (the Holy Scriptures) urges us to put to death all sins residing in our bodily members, and to put off the old man of sinful acts and worldly thinking, and to lie not to one another.

*“Mortify (put to death) therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection (passion), evil concupiscence (evil desire), and covetousness, which is idolatry: For which things’ sake the wrath of GOD cometh on the children of disobedience: In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them. But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds.”*

Colossians 3:5-9

Everyone should know this: there will be perilous times in the last days; and there will be perilous men in the last days. So, be very careful about your soul.

*“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous (money lovers), boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers (irreconcilable), false accusers (slanderers), incontinent (without self-control), fierce (brutal), despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more (rather) than*

*lovers of GOD; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth."*

II Timothy 3:1-7

The Law reveals man's evil character or sinful character, but the Gospel reveals GOD's salvation from sins and from the law's curses.

*"Knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for whoremongers (fornicators), for them that defile themselves with mankind (sodomites), for menstealers (kidnappers), for liars, for perjured persons (perjurers), and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine; According to the glorious Gospel of the blessed GOD, which was committed to my trust."*

I Timothy 1:9-11

Everyone is cautioned to avoid consulting mediums and spiritists. Turning to familiar spirits and wizards will give judgment and hell.

*"Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I am the LORD your GOD."*

Leviticus 19:31

Telling or writing or using **abracadabra** is sin. Abracadabras are magic words or empty words. One who performs skilful balancing acts and tricks is an **acrobat**. Acrobats are sinners. **Acrobatism** is sin. Rebellion and stubbornness are sins. Divination and idolatry are sins.

*"For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft (divination), and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. ..."*

I Samuel 15:23

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is omnipotent. So, the evil practices like sorcery and divination are powerless against HIS people.

*"Surely there is no enchantment (sorcery) against Jacob, neither is there any divination against Israel: ..."*

Numbers 23:23

Here 'Jacob' and 'Israel' mean 'the people of the LORD GOD'.

Consulting mediums and spiritists is sin. Mediums and spiritists are sinners. GOD's people should set themselves apart from these sinners. Otherwise HE will cut them off from HIS people.

*"And the soul that turneth after such as have familiar spirits, and after wizards, to go a whoring after them, I will even set MY face against that soul, and will cut him off from among his people."*

Leviticus 20:6

'Soul' means 'person'.

Anything that does not come by faith is sin. No one should cast off their first faith, since it will bring judgment.

*"...For whatsoever is not of faith is sin."*

Romans 14:23

*"Having damnation (condemnation), because they have cast off their first faith."*

I Timothy 5:12

When the words are many, sin is certainly present. The tongue is a system of iniquity that sets on fire the whole course of life, and is even set on fire of hell.

*"In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin: but he that refraineth (restrains) his lips is wise."*

Proverbs 10:19

*"Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before GOD: for GOD is in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few."*

Ecclesiastes 5:2

*"And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature (life); and it is set on fire of hell."*

James 3:6

**Tongue** causes many problems and troubles to your family life, social life and spiritual life. Unless you control your tongue, losing of your soul and others souls are sure. What a terrible tongue it is! So, our speech should be always with grace or graciousness (Colossians 4:6).

Anyone who knows to do a good deed, and doesn't do it, sins.

*"Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin."*

James 4:17

Testing the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD is sin (Acts 5:9). Despising the HOLY SPIRIT of grace is sin (Hebrews 10:29). Resisting the HOLY SPIRIT is sin (Acts 7:51). Vexing the HOLY SPIRIT is sin (Isaiah 63:10). Grieving the HOLY SPIRIT is sin (Ephesians 4:30).

The blasphemy against the HOLY SPIRIT is a great sin. Anyone who speaks against the HOLY SPIRIT is a great sinner.

*"Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come."*

St. Matthew 12:31-32

Before HE died for the sinners, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had spoken these verses in St. Matthew. But by HIS terrible death on the cross for the sinners, all sins are forgiven by HIM. HE HIMSELF bore all the sins of the people in HIS holy body on the tree (the cross), to give a life of righteousness to all.

*"Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed."*

I Peter 2:24

Not praying is considered a sin against the LORD GOD.

*"Moreover as for me, GOD forbid that I should sin against the LORD in ceasing to pray for you: but I will teach you the good and the right way."*

I Samuel 12:23

The price of blood (the blood-money), the money paid to a person hired to kill somebody, or the hire of a whore, the earnings of a female prostitute or male prostitute, or the price of a dog, or the

money earned in any filthy way should not be brought into the holy house of the LORD GOD. It is not lawful to put these into the treasury. Hence, these kinds of earnings are sins.

*“And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.”*

St. Matthew 27:6

*“Thou shalt not bring the hire of a whore, or the price of a dog, into the house of the LORD thy GOD for any vow: for even both these are abomination unto the LORD thy GOD.”*

Deuteronomy 23:18

Everyone should flee from idolatry (I Corinthians 10:14); everyone should flee from fornication (I Corinthians 6:18); everyone should flee from youthful lusts (II Timothy 2:22); and everyone should flee from love of money. The love of money is a source of all kinds of evil. But, it is not the only source from which evils come (I Timothy 6:10-11). Idolatry, fornication, youthful lusts and love of money are sins.

Gay marriage/homosexual marriage (Leviticus 20:13; Romans 1:27), lesbian marriage (Romans 1:26) and artificial insemination are sins. Artificial inseminators are sinners. A baby that is born through artificial insemination or that is developed elsewhere than in a mother's body through in-vitro fertilization is sin. Such a baby is called a test-tube baby. Asexual reproduction by cloning method and other unnatural fertilization methods are sins. Such shameful and unclean and ugly sins are abominable unto GOD. The abominable people will be thrown into hell-fire (Revelation 21:8).

Anyone who sins against the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, harms his own soul and those who hate the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, love death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*“But he that sinneth against ME wrongeth (harms) his own soul: all they that hate ME love death.”*

Proverbs 8:36

**Fornication** is sexual immorality. Having sex between a man and woman not married to each other is fornication. According to the Old Testament, anyone who is of illegitimate birth and any of his

descendants shall not enter the congregation of the LORD, even down to the tenth generation (Deuteronomy 23:2). Having more than one wife is fornication. Having more than one husband is fornication. All other sins a man/woman commits are outside the body, but he/she who commits fornication sins against his/her own body. Fornication is a grievous sin. Fornicators are grievous sinners. Hence, everyone should always flee fornication, the worst awkward sin. Now, the body is not for fornication, but for the LORD; and the LORD for the body (I Corinthians 6:13). If our body is the temple of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, then HE is ours and we are HIS. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without (outside) the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) which is in you, which ye have of GOD, and ye are not your own?"*

I Corinthians 6:18-19

**Molestation** and **trafficking** of children, women, etc., are sins. **Abuse** and **misuse** of children, women, etc., are sins. Molesters, traffickers, abusers and misusers are sinners.

**Polygamy**—the practice or custom of having more than one wife is sin. Polygamists are sinners. Having more than one wife is fornication. He who commits fornication sins against his own body.

**Polyandry**—the practice or custom of having more than one husband is sin. Polyandrists are sinners. Having more than one husband is fornication. Always flee fornication. She who commits fornication sins against her own body.

*"Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband."*

I Corinthians 7:2

*"If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of riot or unruly."*

Titus 1:6

Showing disrespect for the aged and the deaf and the blind and the mute and the poor is sin, since they are all made by the LORD GOD.

*"Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honour the face of the old man, and fear thy GOD: I am the LORD. Thou shalt not curse the deaf, nor put a stumblingblock before the blind, but shalt fear thy GOD: I am the LORD."*

Leviticus 19:32,14

*"And the LORD said unto him, Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the LORD?"*

Exodus 4:11

Ill-treating or oppressing a stranger or an alien is sin.

*"And if a stranger sojourn with thee in your land, ye shall not vex (ill-treat) him."*

Leviticus 19:33

*"Also thou shalt not oppress a stranger (sojourner): ..."*

Exodus 23:9

Defrauding labourers or wage-earners of their wages is sin. The worker deserves his wages. Holding back the wages of a wage-earner overnight is sin.

*"Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbour, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning."*

Leviticus 19:13

Using dishonest scales (balances), dishonest weights, and dishonest measures is sin. Using dishonest standards when measuring length, weight or quantity is sin (Proverbs 11:1; 20:10; Micah 6:10-11).

Perverting justice is sin. Perverting justice in a lawsuit by siding with the crowd is sin. Showing partiality in lawsuits is sin. Showing favouritism to a poor man in his lawsuit is sin (Leviticus 19:15). Denying justice to a poor in his lawsuit is sin. Accepting a bribe is sin. A bribe blinds the eyes of the wise and perverts the words of the righteous (Deuteronomy 16:19). Putting an innocent or honest person to death is sin.

*"Thou shalt not follow a multitude to do evil; neither shalt thou speak in a cause to decline (turn aside) after many to wrest (pervert) judgment: Neither shalt thou countenance a poor man in his cause. Thou shalt not wrest the judgment of thy poor in his*

*cause. Keep thee far from a false matter; and the innocent and righteous slay thou not: for I will not justify the wicked."*

Exodus 23:2-3, 6-7

*"He that justifieth the wicked, and he that condemneth the just, even they both are abomination to the LORD."*

Proverbs 17:15

**Sin always blocks our vision of the eternal GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.** To see GOD, we must renounce sin and obey HIM (Psalm 24:3-4). Without holiness, no man can see GOD (Hebrews 12:14). Believers' lives should demonstrate the qualities GOD desires. If we remain faithful and holy, GOD can keep us from falling and HE will bring us before HIS glorious presence with everlasting joy (Jude 24). To be sinless and perfect (without a single fault) will be the ultimate condition of the believer to see GOD face to face.

The pleasures of this world are futile (useless and unprofitable); human ambitions are futile; wealth is futile; fashions are futile (Ecclesiastes 1:2,14). The revellings, entertainments, debaucheries, movies, T.V., Internet, Web-site, cell-phones, computers, etc. are farce and futile, and they have ruined many lives. The whole world is farcical and futile. The search for these corruptible things will be ultimately disappointing. The profligate people do not know anything about these ugly things. Without the slightest compunction, they deliberately sin against GOD. So, seek GOD to have an eternal relationship with HIM for HIS eternal blessings, with great compunction about what you have done in the past against GOD. Then, sins' stronghold will be broken and buried.

Afflicting a widow or a fatherless child or an orphan is sin.

*"Ye shall not afflict any widow, or fatherless child. If thou afflict them in any wise, and they cry at all unto ME, I will surely hear their cry; And MY wrath shall wax hot, and I will kill you with the sword; and your wives shall be widows, and your children fatherless."*

Exodus 22:22-24

Now, the saved people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST or the members of HIS church are spiritual brothers and sisters. Charging a spiritual brother or sister interest, is sin. But, he may charge a stranger or an alien interest. Exorbitant interest should not be charged on any



stranger or alien. Only simple interest, but not compound interest may be charged with a low rate of interest. In olden days, only one per cent interest per month was charged as the highest rate of interest (Nehemiah 5:11).

*"Thou shalt not lend (charge interest) upon usury to thy brother; usury of money, usury of victuals, usury of any thing that is lent upon usury: Unto a stranger thou mayest lend upon usury; but unto thy brother thou shalt not lend upon usury: that the LORD thy GOD may bless thee in all that thou settest thine hand to in the land whither thou goest to possess it."*

Deuteronomy 23:19-20

*"He that by usury and unjust gain increaseth his substance (possessions), he shall gather it for him that will pity the poor."*

Proverbs 28:8

Taking or receiving something from somebody or something temporarily, with the agreement that it will be returned is called borrowing. Taking money from a person or bank with the agreement that it will be paid back to them at a later time is called borrowing. Even though the borrower is servant to the lender (Proverbs 22:7), he is not servant to sin. So this borrowing is not at all a sin. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has not forbidden this in HIS Ten Commandments. When our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was in the world as Saviour, HE has not forbidden this; HE has not prevented anyone from doing this. In Romans 13:8, St. Paul is not setting down the fiscal policy of borrowing. So, borrowing for our physical or spiritual needs is not at all a sin. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, some people choose Deuteronomy 28:12 and say that no one should borrow. This is utterly absurd.

*"...Thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow."*

Deuteronomy 28:12

From the rich man and Lazarus, anyone can clearly understand that earthly blessedness does not necessarily mean GOD's greatest favour; the reverse may be true (St. Luke 16:19-31).

Further, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has advocated the exchange of money through bankers or banks (St. Matthew 25:27). Bankers or banks provide various financial services, for keeping and lending money. People get the exchange of money by cheques/checks, notes, deposits, loans, interests, etc., easier through bankers or banks.

Taking either the upper one or the lower one of a millstone, as a pledge, is sin, since that would be same as taking a man's life as a pledge.

*"No man shall take the nether (lower) or the upper millstone to pledge: for he taketh a man's life to pledge."*

Deuteronomy 24:6

Taking one's neighbour's raiment (clothing) as a pledge is sin. If raiment is taken from one's neighbour as a pledge, it should be returned to him by sunset.

*"If thou at all take thy neighbour's raiment to pledge, thou shalt deliver it unto him by that the sun goeth down: For that is his covering only, it is his raiment for his skin: wherein shall he sleep? and it shall come to pass, when he crieth unto ME, that I will hear; for I am gracious."*

Exodus 22:26-27

*"When thou shalt vow a vow unto the LORD thy GOD, thou shalt not slack (delay) to pay it: for the LORD thy GOD will surely require it of thee; and it would be sin in thee. That which is gone out of thy lips thou shalt keep and perform; even a freewill offering, according as thou hast vowed unto the LORD thy GOD, which thou hast promised with thy mouth."*

Deuteronomy 23:21, 23

Sinners destroy their body and spirit and soul. Sinners destroy their most precious life. Hence, sinners destroy much good.

*"...One sinner destroyeth much good."*

Ecclesiastes 9:18

Obviously we are all sinners and the wages of our sin is hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. We are all by nature, dead in transgressions and sins. Therefore, we cannot do anything to save ourselves from eternal damnation. But, by the grace of GOD, the

LORD JESUS CHRIST, anyone can be saved from eternal damnation. When we are saved, HE made alive us together with CHRIST.

*"And you hath HE quickened (made alive), who were dead in trespasses and sins. Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with CHRIST, by grace ye are saved."*

Ephesians 2:1, 5

Now, by observing the law of the Old Testament, no one will be justified.

*"Knowing that a man is not justified (declared righteous) by the works of the law, but by the faith of JESUS CHRIST, even we have believed in JESUS CHRIST, that we might be justified by the faith of CHRIST, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified."*

Galatians 2:16

But, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST does not want anyone to perish in his sins. HE desires the repentance and salvation of all.

*"Say unto them, As I live, saith the LORD GOD, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel?"*

Ezekiel 33:11

*"The LORD is not slack concerning HIS promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."*

II Peter 3:9

*"Who will (desires to) have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth."*

I Timothy 2:4

Even though the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST hates sin, HE loves us so much. HE came into the world to save us. HE came into the world to keep the law for us. HE came into the world to suffer for us. HE came into the world to bear all the punishment that we deserve due to our sins. HE innocently suffered for us from Gethsemane to Calvary. HE innocently died for us on the cross at Calvary.

*"But HE was wounded for our transgressions, HE was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon HIM; and*

*with HIS stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on HIM the iniquity of us all."*

Isaiah 53:5-6

*"For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life."*

St. John 3:16

No one should be worthy of death, the eternal death of hell-fire. Everyone should be worthy of eternal life, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

*"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of GOD is eternal life through JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

Romans 6:23

Rejecting the LORD JESUS CHRIST our Saviour is the worst possible sin, since there is no other way to eternal life.

*"He that believeth on the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the SON shall not see life; but the wrath of GOD abideth (remains) on him."*

St. John 3:36

Salvation for Jew and Gentile alike is only through the name of JESUS CHRIST (St. John 14:6). Forgiveness for Jew and Gentile alike is only through the name of JESUS CHRIST.

*"Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

*"Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of JESUS CHRIST for the remission (forgiveness) of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT). For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our GOD shall call."*

Acts 2:38-39

Testing the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST our Redeemer is sin.

*"JESUS said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt*

*(test) the LORD thy GOD."*

St. Matthew 4:7

By confessing sins with a broken-heart and with a contrite spirit to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, anyone can be saved or delivered from sins (Psalm 34:18).

**Voodoo** is a religion practised originally in the West Indies and southern US involving witchcraft, sorcery and magic. Voodooism is sin. Voodooists are sinners.

No one should sin. The penalty of sin is death. Death means second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. The only escape from this second death is to receive the gift of eternal life in the person of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 3:15).

Man in his sin is compared to a snake ('viper' or 'adder') for its venom (Job 20:16; Psalm 140:3), a wild ass's colt for its stubbornness (Job 11:12), a dog for its uncleanness (Proverbs 26:11), a moth for its appetite (Job 27:18), a bear for its cruelty (Daniel 7:5), a leopard for its fierceness (Daniel 7:6), a spider's web for its flimsiness (Isaiah 59:5-6), a horse or a mule for its stupidity (Psalm 32:9), a fox for its cunning (St. Luke 13:32), a wolf for its ferociousness (St. John 10:12), and a pig for its filthiness (II Peter 2:22).

Men seek refuge in lying and it is their hiding place. They also seek refuge in false alliances (Isaiah 28:17); but the LORD will try them when HE comes back to judge. **Due to sin, GOD hides HIS eyes from HIS people.**

No one should depend on **astrology** or **soothsaying** or **foretelling** or **divination** (Deuteronomy 18:10) for his/her future plans, since our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST knows the secret things (Deuteronomy 29:29) and the hidden things or future things and new things (Isaiah 48:6). Depending on astrology is sin and depending on foretelling or soothsaying or divination is sin. Everyone should pray to GOD for all his/her future plans and depend on HIM only.

Even a little sin has a corrupting and polluting influence in the life of every human being. Hence, no sin can be considered a playful thing; no sin can be considered a sport event; no sin can be

considered a spectacle. Every sin should be purged, or else it would contaminate his/her whole life. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST asks,

*"Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth (leavens) the whole lump?"*

I Corinthians 5:6

Now, no one should forget the fact that good deeds always pursue the righteous or the saved or the regenerated people. That is, even after their bodily death, their good deeds pursue them. And they will finally receive the kingdom of heaven, the kingdom of GOD as their good reward.

Besides, eyes have been the wide and open doors to sin. Eve ate the fruit of the forbidden tree as it was pleasant to her eyes (Genesis 3:6). It was the sight of gold, silver and the Babylonian garments that led Achan to sin (Joshua 7:17-25; 22:20; I Chronicles 2:7). When David saw a woman bathing, he had fallen into sin, which led him to adultery and murder (II Samuel 11; 12:1-14). So, our LORD JESUS warns, *"Whosoever looketh (looks) on a woman to lust after her hath (has) committed adultery with her already in his heart"* (St. Matthew 5:28). No one can hide his/her sins or wickedness from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, as *"The eyes of the LORD are in every place, beholding the evil and the good"* (Proverbs 15:3). Our LORD GOD promised by HIS blessed assurance that *"the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew (show) HIMSELF strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward HIM"* (II Chronicles 16:9).

Again, no one should forget the fact that evil deeds always pursue sinners, the evil doers. That is, even after their bodily death, their evil deeds or sins pursue sinners. Their evil deeds or sins pursue them till their judgment and death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Evil/sin will kill the wicked sinners (Psalm 34:21).

*"Evil pursueth sinners:..."*

Proverbs 13:21

**It is not difficult to identify sin/evil; it is usually symbolized by scarlet and crimson (blood-red). The colour of sin/evil is like scarlet and as red as crimson (Isaiah 1:18). The nature of sin/evil is destroying/killing humans' spirit and soul and body (Psalm 34:21; Ezekiel 18:20; I Thessalonians 5:23).**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth (commits) sin is the servant of sin."*

St. John 8:34

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST warns,

*"...Sin no more."*

St. John 8:11

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD warns,

*"Awake to righteousness, and sin not; ..."*

I Corinthians 15:34

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST asks,

*"Which of you convinceth (convicts) ME of sin? ..."*

St. John 8:46

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD says,

*"He that committeth (commits) sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth (sins) from the beginning. For this purpose the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was manifested, that HE might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of GOD doth not commit sin; for HIS seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of GOD. In this the children of GOD are manifest, and the children of the devil: ..."*

I John 3:8-10

No one should lie unto GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Ananias and Sapphira died because they lied unto GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Acts 5:1-10). All liars will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8).

**The greatest work is belief in JESUS CHRIST (St. John 6:29), the ONLY TRUE GOD (I John 5:20).**

**From this sub-heading, 'What are sins?' anyone can clearly infer that any evil act against the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is sin; and any evil act against man or mankind created by HIM in HIS own image and in HIS own likeness is also sin (Genesis 1:26-27).**

## 2 . HOW CAN A SINNER GO TO HEAVEN ?

How can a sinner go to heaven with all his sins he has committed? His sins certainly need a remedy. A relief from his sins is necessary. There must certainly be a cure for his sins. He must obtain repentance from sins. He must obtain forgiveness of sins. He must obtain salvation from sins. He must obtain the experience of divine goodness. He must obtain the experience of born-again or the experience of born-from-above. He must obtain holiness and live a holy life. He must obtain the HOLY SPIRIT. He must obtain redemption from sins. He must have the prayer life and he must have the full spiritual growth. Then only he can go to heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

All are sinners. Hence, all sinners should repent of their sins. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Forgiver of sins, must forgive their sins. They must be saved or delivered from their sins by the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Saviour. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Redeemer must redeem them. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Sanctifier must sanctify them. They must be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT, the Spirit of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the TRUE GOD. A person who has not received the HOLY SPIRIT cannot live a holy life. He cannot live a spiritual life. Moreover, they must have the prayer life and they must have the full spiritual growth to enter into the kingdom of GOD. Only those who obtain these experiences will go to heaven, the kingdom of GOD and it is impossible for others.

**Who can forgive sins ?** The most holy GOD who is sinless and has committed no sin alone can forgive sins. HE is the forgiving GOD. HE forgives all sins. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said:

*"Which of you convinceth (convicts) ME of sin? ..."*

St. John 8:46

No one can prove that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is guilty of sin. Pilate, the Roman governor had witnessed our LORD JESUS CHRIST's faultlessness again and again.

*"I find in HIM no fault at all."*

St. John 18:38

*"I find no fault in HIM."*

St. John 19:4



*"I find no fault in this MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST)."*

St. Luke 23:4

**Who can deliver or save man from sins ?** The GOD who is the Saviour of the world and the GOD who is without sin, without blemish and without spot can do it (I Peter 1:18-20). No sinner can save himself or deliver any other sinner from sins.

*"...For we have heard HIM ourselves, and know that this is indeed the CHRIST, the Saviour of the world."*

St. John 4:42

**Who can redeem man from sins ? Who can buy back man from sins ?** The GOD who is the Redeemer of the world and the GOD who is full of great love, great mercy, great grace, great favour, great righteousness, great modesty, great truth and great sacrifice can do it.

*"...And all flesh shall know that I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, ..."*

Isaiah 49:26

**Who can give holiness and holy life and righteousness and spotlessly clean life to man ?** Only the most holy GOD can give holiness and holy life (I Peter 1:15-16) and righteousness and spotlessly clean life to man (Job 25:4).

*"How then can man be justified (righteous) with GOD? or how can he be clean (pure) that is born of a woman?"*

Job 25:4

**How can the man who has not seen heaven go to heaven ?** Man can go to heaven only through the GOD, who created heaven, who was in heaven, who descended from heaven, who ascended into heaven, who is now in heaven and who is to come from heaven.

*"For by HIM were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by HIM, and for HIM: And HE is before all things, and by HIM all things consist."*

Colossians 1:16-17

*"Now that HE ascended, what is it but that HE also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? HE that descended is the*

*same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that HE might fill all things."*

Ephesians 4:9-10

*"Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same JESUS, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen HIM go into heaven."*

Acts 1:11

**How can the dead be resurrected and go to heaven ?** The dead can be resurrected and can go to heaven by the mighty saving power of the everliving GOD, who died, who resurrected HIMSELF and who ascended to heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that HE was buried, and that HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures."*

I Corinthians 15:3-4

*"Until the day in which HE was taken up, after that HE through the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) had given commandments unto the apostles whom HE had chosen: To whom also HE shewed HIMSELF alive after HIS passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 1:2-3

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the only way to go to heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"JESUS saith unto him (Thomas), I am the way, the truth, and the life: ..."*

St. John 14:6

### **3 . REPENTANCE FROM SINS**

**Why will you die (Ezekiel 33:11)?** If you repent of your sins and sinful ways and obtain forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life and live a holy and sinless life, you will not die. The soul (the person) who sins will die (Ezekiel 18:20).

**Repent** means to be sorry for one's sins and be determined not to sin again. Repent refers to a sincere feeling of regret for having

grieved GOD with sinful thoughts and conduct. Repent refers to a divine change of evil mind into good mind that ends in a divine change of bad conduct into good conduct. It is always accompanied by tears and groaning and weeping and humility.

**Repentance** refers to a great sorrow toward GOD on account of sin and an extreme hatred of sin. Repentance refers to the actual forsaking of sin with a very humble surrender to the will and wish of GOD. It is always accompanied by tears and groaning and weeping and humility.

Repentance from sins is very essential for salvation from sins, but this repentance alone does not save anyone. It is the first step for salvation from sins. Repentance from sins is very essential for all other spiritual blessings, viz., forgiveness of sins (remission of sins), salvation from sins (deliverance from sins), divine goodness (conversion), born-again experience, holiness and holy life, experience of the HOLY SPIRIT, redemption from sins, prayer and prayer life, and spiritual growth.

Repentance from sins arises always by the wonderful work of the most holy blood of CHRIST and by the glorious work of the HOLY SPIRIT of CHRIST and by the abundant mercy and grace of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Romans 2:4).

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST's glorious message of repentance is very essential for our preparation for HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven which is near to those who repent of their sins.

*"From that time JESUS began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand (near)."*

St. Matthew 4:17

If anyone has not repented, then he will not be able to enter the kingdom of heaven. If anyone has not repented, the kingdom of heaven is far away from him and he will not be able to reach it or see it or enter it. Therefore, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST calls everyone to repent of sins.

How do we to repent? The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures says,

*"Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his*

*thoughts; and let him return unto the LORD, and HE will have mercy upon him; and to our GOD, for HE will abundantly pardon."*

Isaiah 55:7

*"...Ye turned to GOD from idols to serve the living and true GOD."*

I Thessalonians 1:9

*"Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry."*

I Corinthians 10:14

*"Flee fornication. ..."*

I Corinthians 6:18

*"Flee also youthful lusts: ..."*

II Timothy 2:22

*"For the love of money is the root of all (all kinds of) evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But thou, O man of GOD, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness."*

I Timothy 6:10-11

Everyone should flee from idolatry (idol worship), everyone should flee from sexual immorality, everyone should flee from youthful lusts, everyone should flee from eagerness for money and everyone should flee from all other sins of thought, word, deed, and omission and everyone should make a sincere and steadfast treaty with the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, that he would not commit or desire sin till the day of his death and he would live to please GOD. This is called repentance from sins. This is called "repentance from dead works" (Hebrews 6:1). This is called "repentance unto life" (Acts 11:18).

In order to get repentance from sins, everyone should believe the Gospel, the Good News of GOD; everyone should believe the Gospel, the Gospel preached by the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD; everyone should believe the Gospel of the kingdom of GOD our LORD.

*"...JESUS came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdom of GOD, And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom*

*of GOD is at hand (near): repent ye, and believe the gospel."*

St. Mark 1:14-15

The LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to call the sinners to repentance.

*"...For I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."*

St. Matthew 9:13

No sin is too hard for JESUS CHRIST to forgive if we are truly repentant. Repentance from sins is the most essential thing for salvation, but this repentance alone does not save. Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation, but worldly sorrow brings second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of (regretted): but the sorrow of the world worketh death."*

II Corinthians 7:10

There will be more rejoicing in heaven (the kingdom of GOD) over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous persons who do not need to repent; and there is rejoicing in the presence of the angels of GOD over one sinner who repents. Our LORD JESUS told this parable of the **Lost Sheep**:

*"What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance. Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of GOD over one sinner that repenteth."*

St. Luke 15:4-7, 10

If a shepherd takes joy in rescuing a single sheep, then how much more joyful our LORD JESUS will be in the salvation of a sinner. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is not impersonal or aloof from human affairs. In this parable, our LORD JESUS teaches of HIS divine concern

for every individual. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's searching love is clearly revealed in this parable. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Unless you repent, you will all perish. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST reminds that all are deserving eternal punishment in the eternal hell-fire, and that can be avoided only by turning in repentance to a merciful GOD. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"...Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."*

St. Luke 13:5

Everyone should take his/her evil deeds from the sight of GOD, and stop doing wrong.

*"Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before MINE eyes; cease to do evil."*

Isaiah 1:16

'Wash' indicates a cleansing of the heart, offered by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to sinners. This cleansing of the heart is very essential for true repentance.

Moreover, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST meets with sinners with HIS wounds and blood. HE meets with sinners by HIS HOLY SPIRIT. HIS most holy blood is ceaselessly running around the world to meet sinners to repentance. HIS HOLY SPIRIT and HIS mercy and grace are ceaselessly working to bring sinners to repentance. Deep understanding about one's sins is only by HIS holy blood, and by HIS HOLY SPIRIT, and by HIS mercy and grace. Everyone should allow himself/herself to be led by the glorious works of HIS holy blood, and HIS HOLY SPIRIT and HIS mercy and grace to repentance and salvation. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The sorrows of those who run after other gods to get deliverance or salvation will increase. Other gods are dead; they are deceased; they live no more; they do not rise; they are no gods at all.

*"Their sorrows shall be multiplied that hasten after another god: ..."*

Psalms 16:4

*"...For they were no gods, ..."*

Isaiah 37:19

*"They are dead, they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise: ..."*

Isaiah 26:14

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is patient with all, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance and salvation. GOD desires for the salvation of all. Whoever believes in HIM and obtains repentance and salvation will not perish but will have eternal life (St. John 3:16). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"The LORD is not slack concerning HIS promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."*

II Peter 3:9

Everyone should turn from all vain gods unto the Living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who made heaven and earth and the sea and all things in them (Acts 14:15) and repent to HIM, because a resurrection and a judgment day are coming shortly (Acts 17:30-31).

### 3.1 FORGIVENESS (REMISSION)

Man's sinful mind is always hostile to GOD. Man's sinful nature is always hostile to GOD (Romans 8:7). Man's sins and iniquities always kindle GOD's anger. Because of man's sins and iniquities, his flesh becomes sick and there is no health in his bones. Man's sins and iniquities have gone over his head; like a heavy burden they are too heavy for him.

*"There is no soundness in my flesh because of THINE anger; neither is there any rest (health) in my bones because of my sin. For mine iniquities are gone over mine head: as an heavy burden they are too heavy for me."*

Psalms 38:3-4

All blessings of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD are obtained free. They are obtained as gifts, free of cost. The blessings of the LORD are priceless, and no one can buy them from any other source or by any other means or at any cost or under any circumstances and they are immensely glorious blessings.

## **How is the blessed and glorious experience of the forgiveness of sins or remission of sins obtained free?**

Forgiveness is a divine quality. If a man commits a sin or a crime, he should be punished. This is justice. But, JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, who came into this world, bore in HIS most holy flesh horrible pains, the punishment for sins committed by sinners. HE shed HIS most holy blood for mankind from Gethsemane to Calvary (Golgotha, the place of a skull): and HE sacrificed HIS most holy life for mankind on the Calvary, by hanging on three nails on the cross. Therefore, people get this glorious experience of remission of sins or forgiveness of sins by HIM and by HIS most holy flesh and by HIS most holy blood and by HIS most holy life, without any cost, through faith. Forgiveness is the gift of GOD by grace.

*"In whom we have redemption through HIS blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of HIS grace."*

Ephesians 1:7

*"To HIM give all the prophets witness, that through HIS name whosoever believeth (believes) in HIM shall receive remission (forgiveness) of sins."*

Acts 10:43

## **What should man do to obtain forgiveness of sins?**

One should decide to give up his sins, and hate sinful ways, sinful thoughts, sinful deeds, wicked ways, wicked thoughts, wicked deeds, filthy ways, filthy thoughts, lying words, harsh words, deceptive words, malicious words, idle words, filthy words, corrupt words, foolish talking, coarse jesting (joking), obscenities, and filthy deeds and he should totally repent to GOD. He should make a sincere and steadfast treaty with GOD that he would not commit or desire sin till the day of his death and he would live to please GOD in HIS truth, the truthful way and he would glorify HIS name for evermore (Psalm 86:11-12). Moreover, he should believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, suffered for him horribly, shed HIS most holy blood and died for the forgiveness of sins.

After having repented as above, everyone should confess all his sins of thought, word, deed, and omission to the LORD JESUS CHRIST with tears and groaning and weeping and humility, by remembering



the crucifixion of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and giving up all his sins. Those who hide their sins will not prosper. Those who confess their sins and give them up will receive mercy and forgiveness of sins.

*“He that covereth (covers) his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth (confesses) and forsaketh (forsakes) them shall have mercy.”*

Proverbs 28:13

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the sole authority to forgive sins.

*“But that ye may know that the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath power on earth to forgive sins, ...”*

St. Matthew 9:6

When a man receives the experience of forgiveness of sins, he enjoys immense peace, happiness and consolation. He is relieved of all his mental troubles, all sorrows, all heaviness, all worries, all sufferings, all infirmities, all diseases and all bonds of devils, caused by his sins. He enjoys good health, strength and vitality. This divine healing is a true sign of a man who has obtained forgiveness (remission) of sins or iniquities (Psalm 103:3).

Forgiveness is not based on a show of godliness and good works, fastings, pilgrimages, and giving of alms. It is based on the shedding of blood of JESUS. Without the shedding of blood, there is no forgiveness of sins (Hebrews 9:22).

#### **4. SALVATION (DELIVERANCE)**

Salvation from sins means deliverance from sins. Everyone must do the works GOD desires and requires. Steadfast belief on the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the **primary work** GOD desires and requires. We must be saved to do the works GOD desires and requires.

Salvation is near those who fear HIM (Psalm 85:9). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is near unto those who are of a broken heart and saves those who are of a contrite spirit (Psalm 34:18). Salvation is far from the wicked for they do not seek HIS statutes (Psalm 119:155). GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saves the upright in heart (Psalm 7:10).

How do people obtain this free and glorious experience of salvation from sins, or the experience of sinlessness, or a life with an aversion to sins, or the experience of being dead to sins and living for righteousness? Our LORD JESUS CHRIST who came in this world, bore the sins borne by people, by hanging on three nails on the cross. Therefore, salvation from sins is obtained free of cost by people. By grace anyone can be saved, through faith. It is the gift of GOD.

*"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD."*

Ephesians 2:8

You will be saved if you repent of your sins. Even the prayers of Noah, Daniel and Job would not save you (Ezekiel 14:14).

### **What should man do to be saved?**

*"...Sirs, what must I do to be saved? And they said, Believe on the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house."*

Acts 16:30-31

One should have faith to be saved. One should have belief to be saved. One should believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour, who suffered and died to save mankind. In order to get salvation from sins, everyone should pray to the LORD JESUS CHRIST with tears and groaning and weeping and humility, as stated above (Psalm 34:18; 6:6-8; St. Matthew 5:4; St. Luke 22:62; James 4:9-10). Further, in order to get salvation from sins, everyone should have much love toward the Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST with great humility, and implicit faith in HIM. Love comes out of faith and humility also comes out of faith. Faith, love and humility bring peace—the divine peace to the saved (St. Luke 7:37-38, 47-48, 50).

One who acknowledges JESUS CHRIST as GOD, the LORD and believes that GOD, the LORD raised HIM from the dead will find salvation. Salvation involves inward belief with the heart and outward confession with the mouth (Romans 10:9-10). Confession of sins by mouth is very essential for getting salvation from sins (Romans 10:10). Whoever calls upon the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be saved (Romans 10:13). Anyone who believes on HIM will not be put to shame (Romans 10:11). When a man is

saved, he experiences a great flood of happiness and joy. The LORD JESUS CHRIST will remove his sins and his sins cannot be seen by anyone (Psalm 103:12). The following verses describe the blessedness of forgiveness and salvation.

*"Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile."*

Psalm 32:1-2

*"HE will turn again, HE will have compassion upon us; HE will subdue our iniquities; and THOU wilt cast all their (our) sins into the depths of the sea."*

Micah 7:19

Those who obtain salvation, experience a state of great relief, easiness, and separation from sins. The perfect salvation makes one, a man of good and noble qualities, a man of immense happiness and joy. Others can see this great change in his life as a bright light and a burning torch or lamp (Isaiah 62:1; Psalm 13:5). The saved people possess the grace of GOD, the grace of the HOLY SPIRIT (Ephesians 2:8). But, they should wait and pray for the anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 1:4-5, 8; 2:1-4).

The saved one is a person who lives with hatred for sins. He is a person who dislikes a dress, which appeals to the world. He hates luxuries and worldly amusements. He has not conformed (fashioned) himself to this world. The man who is saved is fully transformed into a new man, with the knowledge of the good, acceptable and perfect will of GOD. He offers himself wholly to GOD as a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable unto GOD. This is the reasonable (spiritual) act of worship. By this worship, he attains an entirely new experience of a new life, the Christian life. This Christian life begins with total commitment and irrevocable presentation of the body to GOD.

*"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of GOD, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of GOD."*

Romans 12:1-2

The LORD JESUS CHRIST alone has the power to save people from sins. Salvation is by none but JESUS CHRIST. This salvation is so great. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour of the world. There is no other saviour (Isaiah 43:11; Acts 4:12; St. Matthew 1:21; I Timothy 1:15). GOD's **propitiation** (atoning sacrifice) removes GOD's punishment for our sins.

*"...For we have heard HIM ourselves, and know that this is indeed the CHRIST, the Saviour of the world."*

St. John 4:42

*"And HE is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world."*

I John 2:2

*"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the LORD, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard HIM; GOD also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers (various) miracles, and gifts of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), according to HIS own will?"*

Hebrews 2:3-4

**"Look unto ME, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth"** (Isaiah 45:22) is a glorious invitation to the whole world to come to the LORD GOD to get salvation from sins. **To be saved**, everyone should look upon the terribly pierced LORD JESUS CHRIST whose hands, feet and side were terribly pierced for us on the cross at Calvary (Psalm 22:16; St. John 19:34, 37) and everyone should greatly mourn for HIM by confessing his/her sins, as one mourns in bitterness for his/her only son or for his/her firstborn (Zechariah 12:10). All the families of the whole world, including men, women and children should mourn like this for their salvation from sins (Zechariah 12:10-14). When we greatly weep and mourn for our salvation from sins and for our forgiveness of sins by confessing our sins, the open fountain from the Rock of our salvation, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Zechariah 13:1; Deuteronomy 32:15)—the most holy blood of HIS cross at Calvary, cleanses and removes all our sins and all our uncleanness from us (I John 1:7, 9). Now this is not the time for us to laugh and dance. But, this is the time for us to mourn and weep (Ecclesiastes 3:4) for our sins.

Our LORD JESUS has said,

**“Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh. Woe unto you that laugh now! For ye shall mourn and weep.”**

St. Luke 6:21, 25

Further, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls us all to give us rest (St. Matthew 11:28).

Salvation from sins gives us rest for our bodies. It also gives us rest for our spirit; and it also gives us rest for our souls (St. Matthew 11:29). **We can not save ourselves from sins since salvation belongs to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Psalm 3:8). GOD alone can save us.**

The saved people should always bear good witness (testimony) by the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD and by the truth and by the servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and by all men and by GOD.

*“The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of GOD.”*

Romans 8:16

*“Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we also bear record; and ye know that our record is true.”*

III John 12

*“Ye are witnesses, and GOD also, how holily (devoutly) and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe.”*

I Thessalonians 2:10

**The saved have a new heavenly Master—JESUS CHRIST and they are HIS servants** (Jude 1). We have CHRIST in heaven to plead our cause (I John 2:1). No power in heaven or earth can separate us from HIS love (Romans 8:35-39). We can live according to the SPIRIT. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is alive and actively at work in our lives. We are freed from our sins and live in the light of this divine freedom, as GOD's children (Romans 8:14). We were dead to GOD before; and we are alive to HIM now.

Because of the following assurance of salvation, the believers need not be ashamed of CHRIST, even when they find themselves in dangerous and difficult circumstances (I John 5:13-15).

Now, a man must trust CHRIST alone for his salvation. Salvation is the gift of GOD; salvation is by divine grace of GOD; salvation is through the faith of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Salvation gives deliverance, safety, preservation, healing, and soundness. If one is saved from sin, then he has been saved from the guilt and penalty of sin; he is being saved from the habit and dominion of sin in this worldly life; and finally, when the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST returns, he will be saved (raised or transformed) from corruptible to incorruptible and from mortal to immortal (I Corinthians 15:52-53).

*“Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us (made us alive) together with CHRIST, (by grace ye are saved;) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD.”*

Ephesians 2:5, 8

Again, JESUS gives salvation from sins. When our LORD GOD, JESUS was in this world, people thought that they must do some works to earn everlasting life which they thought they would be able to do. So JESUS reminded them that an exclusive focus on material blessings is wrong. The only work GOD desires and requires is faith or trust in JESUS as MESSIAH and SON OF GOD (St. John 5:24; 6:28-29). The saved or the righteous live by faith (Hebrews 10:38).

The saved are the sinless; they have died to sins; they are living for righteousness and holiness.

*“Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.”*

I Peter 2:24

**The saved live a sinless life in a sinful world like the saltwater fishes (not absorbing saltiness) in seawater (salty water).**

The saved have presented their whole spirit, soul, and body wholly to GOD as a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to GOD—this is their reasonable (spiritual) act of worship (I Thessalonians 5:23; Romans 12:1). The saved do not conform to this world; they are transformed by the renewing of their mind; they are able to prove what GOD's will is—HIS good, acceptable and perfect will (Romans 12:2).

The saved do not beautify their body by outward adornment, such as braided hair and the wearing of gold or any other jewellery and costly (fine) clothes. Instead, they beautify their hidden person of the heart (inner self), with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of GOD.

*“Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel (fine apparel); But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price.”*

I Peter 3:3-4

**The souls of the saved (believers) cling to the divine Soul of GOD; the saved cling to GOD. The souls of the unsaved (sinners) cling to the dust (Psalm 119:25); the souls of the unsaved cling to the devil, Satan; the unsaved cling to Satan, the devil. Lastly, the souls of the unsaved will inherit hell, the hell-fire; the unsaved will inherit hell (St. Matthew 10:28; Psalm 9:17). The souls of the saved will inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD; the saved will inherit heaven (Hebrews 10:34).**

The saved wear modest apparel, with sobriety and moderation; they adorn themselves with godliness and with good works (I Timothy 2:9-10). The saved separate themselves from vain worships; they do not hearken to any vain teachings, the doctrines of men (St. Matthew 15:7-9). The saved have saved themselves from the perverse generation (Acts 2:40).

The saved have died with CHRIST from the rudiments (the basic principles and regulations) of the world (Colossians 2:20). They never nullify the Word of GOD by their traditions, the traditions of men (St. Mark 7:8-9, 13).

The saved do not walk in the counsel of the ungodly; they do not stand in the way of the sinners; they do not sit in the seat of the scornful; they do not sit in the company of the mockers (revellers); they do not rejoice with the revellers; their delight is in the law of the LORD; in HIS law they meditate day and night (Psalm 1:1-2; Jeremiah 15:17). **Anyone's association with people in secret or public sin will bring his/her fall in his/her spiritual life. When anyone**

**attends the feasts and festivities of the ungodly sinners, it will incline his/her heart towards sin. What a horrible thing it is!**

The saved give thanks to the LORD at the remembrance of HIS holiness (Psalm 30:4). They give thanks to the LORD because of HIS righteousness and they sing praise to the name of the LORD Most High (Psalm 7:17). They greatly mourn at the remembrance of HIS afflictions, sufferings, pains, sorrows, troubles, and distresses (Isaiah 53:3-7).

The saved are the holy; they are holy in all their conduct (I Peter 1:14-16). The saved are the righteous (Psalm 1:5). They hate lying (Proverbs 13:5). The saved are the saints; the LORD GOD does not forsake HIS saints; they are preserved for ever (Psalm 37:28). The saved are the children of GOD; they are born of GOD; they do not sin; they cannot sin (I John 3:9-10).

JESUS CHRIST saves us not by our works of righteousness which we have done, but according to HIS abundant mercy (Titus 3:5). HE gives us HIS perfect and stable salvation by the washing of regeneration received through baptism and by the renewing of the HOLY SPIRIT and by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST received through baptism (Titus 3:5; I Peter 3:21). Wisdom and knowledge and strength of salvation will be the stable foundation of our times. The fear of the LORD is the treasure due to perfect and stable salvation (Isaiah 33:6). **GOD's salvation is perfect and stable and it abides in us for ever and ever.**

The saved live remembering HIS love (I John 4:8). They are the disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST and they are called Christians. The disciples were first called Christians in Antioch (Acts 11:26).

The saved live like the blind; they live like the deaf; they live like the dumb (the mute). They have seen many things, but have paid no attention; their ears are open, but they do not hear; they refrain their tongues from evil and their lips from speaking deceit (Isaiah 42:19-20; I Peter 3:10). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The saved are pure in heart (Psalm 73:1). They live by faith (Hebrews 10:38). They are healed by the prayer of faith (James 5:15). In their illness or disease they do not seek the physicians or doctors, but their LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST only.



Now, one's salvation burns like a burning lamp. Hence, it is not a hidden one. If anyone is saved, his/her salvation will be clearly visible to all (Isaiah 62:1). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Again, the saved people are the salt of the earth (St. Matthew 5:13). Salt is used to give a better sweetness, pleasantness, tastefulness and flavour to foods and it is also used to preserve foods. Likewise, the saved people give sweetness, pleasantness, tastefulness and flavour to the world in which they live and they act as a preservative to the world in which they live. They live holy and godly lives.

Further, the saved people are the light of the world. So, their light must shine before men, that they may see the good works of the saved, and glorify our FATHER in heaven (St. Matthew 5:14, 16).

**In GOD's perfect and stable salvation, HE gives forgiveness of sins, redemption, sanctification, justification, regeneration, reconciliation, transformation, conformation, etc.; HE removes the record of our sins from before HIM from HIS book (Revelation 20:12, 15); HE purges away the dross of our sins; HE takes away the tin of our sins (Isaiah 1:25); HE burns away the garbage and trash of our sins (Isaiah 4:4); HE washes away the traces of our sins, making us as snow and white like wool (Isaiah 1:18); HE purifies and cleanses our sins (I John 1:7); and HE cancels the punishment of our sins, the second death—the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8).**

**For the perfect and stable salvation, the human body should be absolutely saved/delivered from sin (Romans 6:6); the human spirit (the human power or the human strength) should be absolutely saved/delivered from self-will/selfishness (II Peter 1:21); and the human soul should be absolutely saved/delivered from death, the second death—the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Psalm 116:8; Revelation 21:8).**

Here let us remember a question raised by many. It is: "Can any sinner be saved on the day of the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST?"

**Many people have a wrong and absurd thought that the spirit/soul of any sinner will be saved in the day of the LORD JESUS CHRIST; the spirit/soul of any sinner will be saved during the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. But, no sinner will be saved in the day of the LORD**

**JESUS CHRIST; no sinner will be saved during the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The spirit/soul of any sinner will not be saved in the day of the LORD JESUS CHRIST; the spirit/soul of any sinner will not be saved during the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST.**

**No sinner will be saved in the day of the LORD JESUS CHRIST**, unless he/she repents off his/her sins and gets forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life. No sinner will be saved during the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, unless he/she repents off his/her sins and gets forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life. The spirit/soul of any sinner will not be saved in the day of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, unless he/she repents off his/her sins and gets forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life. The spirit/soul of any sinner will not be saved during the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, unless he/she repents off his/her sins and gets forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life. Each one will receive the things done while in the body, according to what he/she has done, whether good or bad.

*“For we must all appear before the judgment seat of CHRIST; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.”*

II Corinthians 5:10

GOD's children, the saved or the redeemed should not forget their former days of darkness, sickness, poverty and bondage to sin to receive HIS blessings abundantly. Moses exhorts the Israelites four times to remember their former days of bondage in Egypt to receive HIS abundant blessings (Deuteronomy 15:15; 16:12; 24:18, 22).

In Israel, to enter into the wedding feast of a king or a king's son, everyone in the feast should have the wedding garment given by the king (St. Matthew 22:11). If anyone does not wear the wedding garment given by the king, it means that he fully despises the king (St. Matthew 22:12). In the same manner, to enter into our heavenly KING, the KING of kings, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's heavenly house, the kingdom of GOD/the kingdom of heaven for HIS heavenly feast/eternal feast, everyone should have the fine, bright, white and clean spiritual robe of righteousness and spiritual garments of salvation (Isaiah 61:10; Revelation 19:8). Without these very valuable (invaluable) and beautiful spiritual clothes (Zechariah 3:4)—the spiritual

garments and robe, no one should enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD—the divine world of wonders. Anyone who does not have these spiritual garments and robe, that is, anyone who does not receive salvation from sins, righteousness, holiness and holy life, will be thrown into outer darkness, hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur and there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth for ever and ever (St. Matthew 22:13). What a pitiable thing it is!

#### 4.1 DIVINE GOODNESS (DIVINE CONVERSION)

After getting salvation, everyone should pray to the LORD JESUS CHRIST for the experience of divine goodness or divine conversion with tears and groaning and weeping and humility as stated above.

*“For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth.”*

Ephesians 5:9

*“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness (kindness), goodness, faith (faithfulness), Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.”*

Galatians 5:22-23

At divine conversion every believer has crucified the flesh with its passions and lusts.

*“And they that are CHRIST's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.”*

Galatians 5:24

At divine conversion the Spirit of GOD gives us new life to walk in step with the Spirit (Galatians 5:25).

When a man gets divine goodness, the fruit of the Spirit from the LORD JESUS CHRIST, he is a new creation; the old things have gone away from him, and new things have come into him. All bad habits and bad behaviours have gone away from him; all good habits and good behaviours have come into him and he will be in CHRIST.

*“Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.”*

II Corinthians 5:17

Every man is sinful at his birth and every man is sinful from the time his mother conceived him. Hence, every man is a sinner by

birth; every man is brought forth in sin, in iniquity and in wickedness. When a man gets divine goodness from the LORD JESUS CHRIST, sins are blotted out from him.

*“Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the LORD.”*

Acts 3:19

Unless a man gets the experience of divine goodness (divine conversion) from the LORD JESUS CHRIST, he cannot be a spiritually converted man. Only the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD is giving this divine goodness, the fruit of the Spirit, free of cost.

#### 4.2 BORN-AGAIN EXPERIENCE (REGENERATION)

After getting the above four spiritual experiences, (viz., repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, and the experience of divine goodness) from the LORD JESUS CHRIST, everyone should pray to the LORD JESUS CHRIST for the born-again or born-from-above experience with tears and groaning and weeping and humility as stated above.

Nicodemus was the ruler of the Jews who secretly came to JESUS during the night. He was a member of the Sanhedrin. He was a Pharisee and a master (teacher). At the crucifixion of JESUS, he boldly and publicly stood as HIS disciple (St. John 19:38-40). Our LORD JESUS said to Nicodemus,

*“Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of GOD. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD.”*

St. John 3:3, 5

Thus, a spiritually converted man is a born-again man, born of water and of the Spirit. Spiritual meaning of water is the Word of truth (James 1:18). Such a man is a man born-from-above, born with the Word of truth. A born-again man is a spiritual child or spiritual baby. Only the LORD JESUS CHRIST is giving this spiritual gift, free of cost.

**The above five spiritual experiences are evidences of what is generally called salvation from sins.** A fully saved person is a sinless

person. A sinless person is a fully saved person. After getting the salvation from sins, everyone should pray for his spiritual growth continuously. Then only he will be able to grow in his spiritual life. Whatever one asks in prayer of faith he will get them all.

We know that whoever is saved or whoever is born of GOD does not commit sin, for HIS seed—the Word of GOD sown in his heart (St. Matthew 13:4, 19) remains in him; and he cannot sin (I John 3:9). He who is born of GOD keeps himself, in the ways of JESUS and the wicked one cannot touch him (I John 5:18). **If anyone misses his/her spiritual experience of salvation or lacks in his/her spiritual experience of salvation, he/she is still a sinner.**

### 4.3 HOLINESS AND HOLY LIFE

Holiness as well as holy life is the lifeblood of spiritual life/Christian life. In our Christian life, we should walk and live in the Spirit (Galatians 5:25) and keep ourselves in perfect holiness, as per the Code of Conduct set by our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, through HIS Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD. Now-a-days, the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Bible is highly misinterpreted in many ways and its divine doctrines are highly diluted by many ways by many modern Christian church leaders and by many ancient Christian church leaders and teachers, preachers and pastors. They are utterly decaying and destroying the holiness and holy life of people by their deadly harmful teaching and preaching with enticing words and flattering speeches. Further, love of money and thirst of power also decay and destroy many Christian lives, including GOD's ministers, viz. pastors, teachers, etc.

Holiness and holy life are very essential for our spiritual life of this world as well as our eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Those who keep our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's statutes and live a holy and sinless life have eternal life; others have no eternal life and they will die in their sins. To enter into our GOD's eternal kingdom, we must go to HIM to obtain HIS eternal life (St. John 5:39-40). **GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST loves holiness and holy life. No one should profane his/her holiness and holy life (Malachi 2:11).**

*“Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man*

*shall see the LORD."*

Hebrews 12:14

*"For GOD hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness."*

I Thessalonians 4:7

I Thessalonians 4:7 demands a statement of the Christian doctrine of purity. **Impurity** is (i) From the point of view of the man himself. A dishonouring of the temple of the HOLY SPIRIT, our body (I Corinthians 3:16) brings impurity. So, we must honour the body, not defile it.

(ii) From the point of view of our brothers and sisters and others. A violation of the law of life and love brings impurity. A fraud and a cheat violate the law of life and love. Sins of the flesh were lightly regarded by the heathen world.

For the worldly or bodily preparation and purification to stand before a worldly king Ahasuerus, Esther required twelve months (Esther 2:12). In that case, for us to stand before our most holy heavenly KING, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, how great a spiritually careful preparation is required by us! And how extensively should we have a spiritual purification or sanctification of our spirit, soul and body!

**To sanctify** means to separate and set apart for a divine purpose (I Thessalonians 5:23). Sanctification results in withdrawing from selfishness and the world by gaining fellowship with and towards GOD. Therefore, sanctified people are set apart for a holy purpose. That purpose is to serve the LORD and to glorify HIM in whatever they do. Hence, the believers should constantly set themselves apart from sin and sinful ways and sinful thoughts and sinful deeds, in their life. **Sanctification** is the divine act of GOD's grace, through the power of the HOLY SPIRIT. By sanctification, the affections of the believers are purified and alienated from sin and the world. By sanctification, the believers are exalted to a supreme love of GOD. Only by sanctification, will the believers be holy in spirit, soul and body wholly and without blame before GOD in love (I Thessalonians 4:3). They will be more and more like JESUS through the work of the HOLY SPIRIT (I Corinthians 6:11). **GOD'S Sanctification is very essential for GOD'S Justification. GOD'S Justification is very essential for**

**GOD's Glorification (Romans 8:30).** GOD's Glorification is very essential to worship, obey and enjoy GOD's divine friendship and love eternally in heaven, the Kingdom of GOD. The GOD of Glory is CHRIST (Acts 7:2).

*"...GOD hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth."*

II Thessalonians 2:13

**Justification** — GOD's act of declaring us "not guilty" for our sins. It is the act of GOD that declares a sinner righteous by faith on the merit of the LORD JESUS CHRIST's sacrifice. It is the addition of righteousness of CHRIST as well as the subtraction of sins. Anyone who comes to JESUS CHRIST and trusts HIM for salvation and obtains salvation from HIM will be justified in the name of HIM (Romans 4:25).

*"For all have sinned, and come (fall) short of the glory of GOD; Being justified freely (without any cost) by HIS grace through the redemption that is in CHRIST JESUS."*

Romans 3:23-24

The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD washes off the sins of the people with HIS extremely holy blood and sanctifies them. The extremely holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST purifies us from all sin.

*"...And the blood of JESUS CHRIST HIS SON cleanseth us from all sin."*

I John 1:7

The people of GOD are sanctified and cleansed by the washing of water. 'The washing of water' means 'water baptism' (Ephesians 5:26). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST sanctifies those who abstain from every kind of evil (I Thessalonians 5:22) and those who are keeping HIS statutes and doing according to them (Leviticus 20:8). The people of GOD are sanctified by HIS truth. HIS Word is truth.

*"Sanctify them through THY truth: THY Word is truth."*

St. John 17:17

The people who are saved by JESUS CHRIST are sanctified by baptism, the total immersion in water according to the Word of GOD, in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT. They are further sanctified totally by the HOLY SPIRIT. Thus, the

people obtain the exceedingly glorious experiences of sanctification and holy life, free of cost (I Corinthians 6:11).

Rules relating to male uncleanness caused by his bodily discharge (seminal) and female uncleanness caused by her bodily discharge (menstrual) were given to HIS people in Leviticus 15. Washing was prescribed both to prevent infection and to sterilize. Washing is a GOD-directed means to maintain physical health and to preserve spiritual dignity. Due to CHRIST's perfect sacrifice on the cross at Calvary, such disqualifications mentioned in Leviticus no longer apply. So, no woman should be afraid to read the Holy Bible and join in worship at such a time. All the people are fit to stand in HIS presence at any time.

To obtain the experiences of holiness and holy life, everyone should pray to GOD with tears and groaning and weeping and humility as stated above. JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD alone sanctifies people. HE alone is the exceedingly holy GOD. Everyone should be pure in heart, to see GOD (St. Matthew 5:8).

By a sad countenance, the heart is made better and pure.

*"Sorrow is better than laughter: for by the sadness of the countenance the heart is made better."*

Ecclesiastes 7:3

Firstly, the unsaved people or the sinners should not pray for the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD. Firstly, they should pray for getting salvation from sins and after obtaining salvation from sins, they should pray for getting holiness and holy life. When they attain the required holiness and holy life to obtain the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD, they will be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. **Our hearts will be made clean by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD when we put our faith (trust) in HIM (Acts 15:8-9). GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST wants this inward cleansing of our hearts.**

If the unsaved people or the sinners pray for the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD, they will not receive the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD. The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD will not dwell in the unclean, impure and evil people. The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD will dwell in HIS holy people, since the LORD GOD is the most holy GOD. When the unclean and impure and evil people pray for the anointing



of the HOLY SPIRIT of the most holy GOD, they will not be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, but they will be anointed with the evil spirit of Satan, the devil. The evil spirit of Satan, the devil will enter into the unclean and impure and evil people very cunningly and deceitfully, when they pray for the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD. So, the unsaved people or the sinners are warned of the danger of anointing of the evil spirit. Anointing of the evil spirit of Satan, the devil may cause severe non-peace of mind, severe diseases, and even severe madness (severe mental illness).

Everyone should be holy, because our LORD GOD is holy.

*"But as HE which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation (conduct or living); Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy."*

I Peter 1:15-16

#### 4.4 EXPERIENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

Spirit means power or strength. The HOLY SPIRIT means the holy strength or the holy power of the LORD GOD to live a holy life or spiritual life. A person who has not received the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD cannot live a holy life. He cannot live a spiritual life. The HOLY SPIRIT or the GOD'S SPIRIT or the HOLY GHOST is the holy strength or the holy power from heaven. It is the holy strength or the holy power of the Most High. Those who receive the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD are HIS witnesses.

*"But ye shall receive power, after that (when) the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."*

Acts 1:8

The HOLY SPIRIT is the Spirit of faith. The HOLY SPIRIT is the precious faith (II Peter 1:1).

*"We having the same Spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak."*

II Corinthians 4:13

The HOLY SPIRIT is given to those who obey GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The HOLY SPIRIT is given to those who obey the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"...And so is also the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), whom GOD hath given to them that obey HIM."*

Acts 5:32

The HOLY SPIRIT is given in answer to prayer.

*"If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly FATHER give the HOLY SPIRIT to them that ask HIM?"*

St. Luke 11:13

The saved people should pray to GOD with tears and groaning and weeping and humility to obtain the experience of the HOLY SPIRIT as stated above. A man who has not obtained the HOLY SPIRIT or the Spirit of CHRIST is not at all spiritual; he is not a Christian; he does not belong to CHRIST; he is not eligible to inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"...Now if any man have not the Spirit of CHRIST, he is none of HIS."*

Romans 8:9

Those who have obtained the HOLY SPIRIT or those who have been anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT enjoy the happiness of speaking to GOD, the divine secrets and the wonderful works and the glories of the LORD GOD in different languages not known to them. They enjoy great pleasure, comfort and consolation and they grow in holiness and godliness.

*"Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of GOD. And they were all amazed, ..."*

Acts 2:11-12

*"For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto GOD: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries."*

I Corinthians 14:2

*"He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; ..."*

I Corinthians 14:4

The HOLY SPIRIT or the Spirit of GOD is the Spirit of Truth (I John 4:6). The Spirit of GOD is the divine **Comforter** (St. John 16:7). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the Holy Power from on High (St. Luke 24:49). Anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT is anointing with fresh and fine oil of heaven (Psalm 92:10). The Spirit of GOD or the Spirit of the LORD is the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD (Isaiah 11:2).

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the seal for the day of redemption. The sealer is the LORD JESUS CHRIST; the seal is the HOLY SPIRIT. This seal denotes both identification of ownership and protection provided by the owner, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The HOLY SPIRIT as the seal to the believers is the earnest of their inheritance (Ephesians 1:13-14). The word earnest means down payment. The HOLY SPIRIT is a down payment of GOD's commitment to give them all other things HE has promised.

*"And grieve not the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption."*

Ephesians 4:30

The HOLY SPIRIT (the SPIRIT of TRUTH) dwells in those who believe in JESUS CHRIST.

*"Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth HIM not, neither knoweth HIM: but ye know HIM; for HE dwelleth with you, and shall be in you."*

St. John 14:17

Except by the HOLY SPIRIT, no one can say, "JESUS is the LORD".

*"...And that no man can say that JESUS is the LORD, but by the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

I Corinthians 12:3

The HOLY SPIRIT is the Spirit of adoption. The HOLY SPIRIT is the Spirit of GOD the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST). Only by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, we can cry, "ABBA, FATHER" (Galatians 4:6).

*"...Ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, ABBA, FATHER."*

Romans 8:15

Those who are filled with the HOLY SPIRIT bear the fruit of the Spirit, namely: love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, righteousness, and truth (Galatians 5:22-23; Ephesians 5:9).

Those who are filled with the HOLY SPIRIT live in the Spirit and walk in the Spirit.

*"If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."*

Galatians 5:25

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD bears witness with our spirit, that we are GOD's children.

*"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of GOD."*

Romans 8:16

And if we are GOD's children, then we are HIS heirs—heirs of GOD, and joint-heirs with CHRIST.

*"And if children, then heirs; heirs of GOD, and joint-heirs with CHRIST; ..."*

Romans 8:17

The natural man or unspiritual man has no spiritual discernment, since he has no faith on GOD's revelation. The spiritual discernment is generated only by the HOLY SPIRIT. The things of GOD are spiritually discerned through the power of the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."*

I Corinthians 2:14

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gives to HIS people the most glorious experience of anointing by the HOLY SPIRIT free of cost.

#### 4.5 REDEMPTION FROM SINS

**How is this glorious and free redemption from sins obtained by people, who have been enslaved or possessed by Satan, the devil?**

A man who has pledged his article (with a pawnbroker) cannot redeem it without paying money. If the money is not paid, the

article, which was pledged, will belong to the other person (the pawnbroker).

Likewise, the first man and woman, created by GOD were holy and perfect and they belonged to GOD alone. They obeyed the commandment of GOD. But Satan, the devil cunningly deceived them and made them violate GOD's commandment. He stealthily captured them, took them captives, and made them his own slaves. Satan converted them and their generations into enemies of GOD and grievous sinners. Thus, Satan made them his own people. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD came into this world and offered HIS own extremely holy flesh and blood and HIS immensely glorious life as ransom on the Calvary, to redeem the world from all sin and iniquity (Titus 2:14). As the LORD offered HIMSELF a ransom to redeem the world, people obtain the glorious redemption free. They are redeemed without money. They are redeemed without price. They are purified (Titus 2:14) and justified freely through the redemption (St. Matthew 20:28; Galatians 3:13; I Peter 1:18-20).

*"Being justified freely by HIS grace through the redemption that is in CHRIST JESUS"*

Romans 3:24

*"In Whom we have redemption through HIS blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of HIS grace."*

Ephesians 1:7

They are redeemed from the curse, from the slavery of sins, slavery of Satan and many other slaveries. The great blessing of living as GOD's own children is obtained free. As stated above, everyone should sincerely pray to GOD with tears and groaning and weeping and humility to obtain this great blessing. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Redeemer of the world. There is no other redeemer.

*"...THOU, O LORD, art our FATHER, our Redeemer; THY name is from everlasting."*

Isaiah 63:16

In Christianity, the vicarious **atonement** of CHRIST is a covering for the sinner by the blood of CHRIST. It has opened the door for reconciliation between man and GOD (II Corinthians 5:19) without doing injustice to the holy Law of GOD. GOD is just and HIS justice

demands the punishment of the sinner. So, without atonement, there can be no reconciliation. The atonement of CHRIST is the redemption of CHRIST or the grace of CHRIST, which HE accomplished on the cross. The redemption of CHRIST assures forgiveness and salvation. This redemption of CHRIST is a personal necessity for everyone; it removes the condemnation of sin; it reveals the absolute perfection of GOD's divine holiness and righteousness and man's utter depravity; it fulfils GOD's Law, HIS holy Word; and GOD, being a divine moral Judge, it complies with HIS divine moral order of HIS own judgment. To be consistent with one's moral needs, forgiveness by means of redemption is essential. If anyone is under his/her conviction of sin and knows nothing of the vicarious atonement of CHRIST, his/her conscience will not be consistent with his/her moral needs. A show of godliness and good works, fasting like prayers, pilgrimages, and giving of alms never atone for anyone's sins. Our substitute in atonement and redemption is CHRIST.

Redemption from sins includes redemption from vain conduct received by tradition from fathers, the tradition of men or the commandments of men (I Peter 1:18-19; St. Matthew 15:3, 6, 9; St. Mark 7:8-9, 13). Everyone should be redeemed from vain conduct received by tradition from fathers.

Again, redemption refers to the release of a slave or captive upon receipt of a ransom. The saved people are therefore released from their enslavement to sin and Satan, the devil and the resulting divine wrath. Redemption from sins is achieved by the vicarious atonement wrought by the LORD JESUS CHRIST's death on the cross. HE died as a substitute for sin.

Further, the word redeem means to purchase or to purchase in the market or to purchase and take home or to purchase and give freedom. These meanings emphasize that the saved people have been purchased out of the market-place and are no longer for sale and the liberty that belongs to a soul redeemed by the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The saved people should stand firm in that liberty, the spiritual liberty and in their relationship with CHRIST as sons of adoption. Through CHRIST, the Redeemer, the saved people (believers) have become GOD's sons of adoption (Galatians 4:4-5; 5:1).

## 5 . PRAYER AND PRAYER LIFE

Only the LORD our GOD hears our prayers. Only the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST hears our prayers. We should spend our time with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in prayer. It is always a necessity.

*“O THOU that hearest prayer, unto THEE shall all flesh come.”*

Psalm 65:2

*“Evening, and morning, and at noon, will I pray, and cry aloud:  
and HE shall hear my voice.”*

Psalm 55:17

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was miraculously walking on the sea, HIS disciples saw HIM. **Peter** asked HIM to command him to come to HIM. At once, our LORD JESUS commanded him to come to HIM. When Peter was walking on the sea, he became frightened by the boisterous winds and violent waves around him. His faith and courage were utterly shaken and he began to sink into the water. His unbelief and doubt and cowardice made him sink into the water. Immediately, he called out our LORD JESUS and HE stretched forth his hand and saved him (St. Matthew 14:25-33). In all our spiritual life or Christian life, we should call out our LORD JESUS in all our troubles, diseases, sicknesses, etc. with belief and courage, then, our most loving GOD will save us from all our troubles, diseases, etc. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

For leading a holy life and for the spiritual growth, prayer life is the most important one. Every spirit-filled man should keep on praying in the HOLY SPIRIT on all occasions with all kinds of prayers, supplications and requests, and he should be on the alert always about his spiritual life. Everyone should pray for the saints and everyone should pray for the ministers of the church (I Thessalonians 5:25). Praying in the power of the HOLY SPIRIT is very essential.

*“Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit,  
and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication  
for all saints; And for me, that utterance may be given unto me,  
that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of  
the Gospel.”*

Ephesians 6:18-19

The immensely glorious commandments in the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures of GOD relating to prayer are, pray without ceasing; pray watchfully praising GOD; always pray watchfully; be careful to pray and steadily remain in prayer. '**Be watchful**' does not mean that we should remain with our eyes open. But it means that we should always be careful about our spiritual life; we should always be clear minded, self-controlled and blameless; we should never be lacking in zeal; we should always be ready to take part in the first resurrection of the saints and we should always be ready to be caught up together with the LORD's church (the believers of HIS church) at the coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD alone listens to our prayers. Therefore, it is necessary for everyone to come to the presence of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and pray to HIM in HIS holy name (I Thessalonians 5:17; Colossians 4:2; I Peter 4:7; Romans 12:12).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST said,

*"Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST)."*

St. Luke 21:36

Prayer alone will enable one to stand before the returning SON OF MAN, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is coming to separate the sinners and the saved. Fasting prayer will help us to be holy in our spirit and soul and body, to stand before HIM without blame (I Thessalonians 5:23).

A **holy fast** (Joel 1:14; 2:12, 15) is unto our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Zechariah 7:5) and it is not a mere abstinence from food and sexual life but a whole-hearted surrender to our GOD in repentance. True repentance from sins will transform the whole life and bring GOD's abundant blessings, viz. forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness, holy life, etc.

Some Christians **fast** in memory of CHRIST's suffering during **Lent**, the period of 40 days from Ash Wednesday to the day before Easter. Their **flirtational fast** is very clearly seen in their momentary giving up of smoking/drinking/chocolates/meat for Lent. This flirtational fast is a vain conduct received by the tradition of men,



by laying aside the commandment of GOD (St. Matthew 6:16-18; Isaiah 58:3-7; St. Mark 7:8). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has not told anything about this Ash Wednesday/Lent. The Holy Bible also tells nothing about this Ash Wednesday/Lent. But, everyone should remember the great agonizing sufferings of CHRIST everyday, throughout one's lifetime to receive HIS blessings.

Now, '**Pray always**' is the commandment of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. But, HE had not commanded us to count the number of prayers and HE had not commanded us to use any rosary for counting prayers. Hence, using rosary to count the number of prayers is against the commandment of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Thus, **using rosary to count the number of prayers is an unwanted act** and hence it is sin. Rosary is a string of beads that are used by some Roman Catholics for counting prayers as they say them. The rosary refers to the set of prayers said by Roman Catholics while counting rosary beads.

**Prayer** is our talking to the LORD Most High. Prayer is an earnest request to GOD. Prayer is a request made to the LORD for spiritual and physical goodness, as a child requests its father for physical goodness. Prayer is an act of pleading with GOD; an act of appealing to GOD; an act of begging GOD; an act of calling GOD; and an act of speaking with GOD.

**When we pray to GOD**, we speak with GOD. When we pray to GOD, we speak with our heavenly FATHER. When we do not pray to GOD, we do not speak with GOD. When we do not pray to GOD, we do not speak with our heavenly FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. When we pray to GOD, we are friendly and courteous with GOD. When we pray to GOD, we are friendly and courteous with our heavenly FATHER. When we do not pray to GOD, we are non-friendly and discourteous with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST searches our hearts (Jeremiah 17:10; Proverbs 24:12) and looks at our hearts (I Samuel 16:17). HE searched and looked at the heart of **Cornelius**. Cornelius, the Roman centurion at Caesarea was a devout man and feared GOD and **prayed always to GOD and gave much alms to the poor people** (Acts 10:2). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had heard his prayers and

remembered his alms (Acts 10:31). Thus, **our GOD always likes to hear our prayers and always remembers our alms given by us to the poor.** Our GOD always likes us to give alms to the poor in times of hunger, homelessness, nakedness, etc. (Isaiah 58:7). Giving alms to the poor and needy will give abundant spiritual blessings and bodily blessings (Psalm 41:1-3).

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST knows our heart-felt prayer and mere lip service. HE also knows our whole-hearted giving to the poor and mere deceiving or cheating the poor.

**Everyone should have a prayer life. And everyone should be dutiful in praying and in other matters.** The king **David** was not dutiful. He neglected his duties. So, he did not go with his soldiers to the war-field (II Samuel 11:1). And he even neglected his regular duty, the evening prayer and all other prayers (Psalm 55:17). During his evening time of prayer, he walked upon the roof of the king's house. And he saw a woman bathing. She was the wife of Uriah, the dutiful soldier. David looked at her with a lustful look and sinned against GOD (St. Matthew 5:28). He became a sinner. But, he did not realize his sin, due to his negligence, the result was omission of his evening prayer. So, he did not run for his evening prayer and remorse filled his heart. But, he had committed adultery with her wantonly, against the commandment of GOD (Exodus 20:14). David became a great sinner by committing adultery. Now also he covered up his sins and he did not confess or forsake his sins and did not pray for the mercy of GOD (Proverbs 28:13). That woman conceived and was with a child (II Samuel 11:5).

Now, to cover up his sin, the appalling sinner David, further became an evil enticer. By his sinfulness and craftiness, he brought evil on the dutiful Uriah, two times (Proverbs 1:10; II Samuel 11:6-13). But, David fell himself into his own pit (Proverbs 28:10). Unable to entice him by his sinfulness, craftiness and evil enticement, David became a violent and scheming man. He planned a terrible plot against the dutiful Uriah to kill or murder him. Uriah was murdered by David's terrible plot (II Samuel 11:14-25). Now, David committed murder against the commandment of GOD (Exodus 20:13). He became a very great sinner by committing adultery and murder. After

David became a great adulterer and murderer and evil enticer, he took the wife of the dutiful Uriah as his own wife. Thus, he coveted his neighbour's wife as against the commandment of GOD (Exodus 20:17). Now, David had committed adultery, murder, covetousness and evil enticement. What evil deeds and sins they are! These great evil deeds were very sinful in the eyes of the LORD GOD and greatly displeased the LORD GOD (II Samuel 11:27). So HE punished him very severely.

**So, by neglecting his dutiful evening prayer and prayer life, David fell into these terrible sins and he was very severely punished by GOD.** Now, no one should neglect his/her dutiful prayers and prayer life. Without having a dutiful prayer and prayer life, no one can lead a good spiritual life and enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. So, everyone should persevere in prayer (Romans 12:12) and everyone should pray without ceasing or unceasingly pray (I Thessalonians 5:17), to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD—the unseen world of wonders or the divine world of wonders. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 5.1 HOW SHOULD WE PRAY ?

**How should we pray to the glorious, the Most High and the very great GOD ? How should we pray to GOD, whom the heavens and heaven of heavens cannot contain?**

We should pray to GOD humbling ourselves. We should humble and tremble before GOD and pray on our knees with our arms folded and with our hands placed together (with our palms joined together in front of the chest). We should pray to GOD with great humility and great modesty. We should bow down, kneel before GOD, and pray. We should pray with our eyes closed and in the manner, the Scripture tells us.

*“O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the LORD our Maker.”*

Psalm 95:6

*“Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling.”*

Psalm 2:11

*“That at the name of JESUS every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And*

*that every tongue should confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD,  
..."*

Philippians 2:10-11

'Things' means 'those'.

## 5.2 WHAT IS HUMILITY ?

Humility means divine humility. Humility means to agree with GOD about HIS assessment of our spiritual condition, to abandon ourselves to GOD's plan of salvation, to cast away all our inhibitions at the LORD's feet and to submit to HIS will for our lives in accordance with the Word of GOD. It is not a mindless submission, nor a posture we assume based on what we decide to do. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's absolute dependence on GOD, the FATHER is a model to us. HE said,

*"No man can come to ME, except the FATHER which hath sent ME draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day."*

St. John 6:44

*"HE hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy GOD?"*

Micah 6:8

This quality of humility is the highest form of character. With the humble is wisdom. Be completely humble and gentle (Ephesians 4:2). GOD opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble.

*"...And be clothed with humility: for GOD resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble."*

I Peter 5:5

*"When pride cometh, then cometh shame: but with the lowly (humble) is wisdom."*

Proverbs 11:2

Humility involves total submission to GOD's will and authority. Humility involves constant communion with GOD.

*"I have heard of THEE by the hearing of the ear: but now mine eye seeth THEE. Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes."*

Job 42:5-6

Humility comes before honour. Humility and the fear of GOD bring riches and honour and life. Riches means GOD's abundant grace; honour means GOD's magnificent honour; and life means eternal life in the kingdom of GOD or in the kingdom of heaven.

*"...Before honour is humility."*

Proverbs 15:33

*"By humility and the fear of the LORD are riches, and honour, and life."*

Proverbs 22:4

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine humility is the true humility. HE emptied HIMSELF by veiling HIS glory; HE emptied HIMSELF in that HE assumed a servant's nature and appeared in the likeness of men. And HE humbled HIMSELF in becoming obedient unto death even death by crucifixion.

*"But made HIMSELF of no reputation, and took upon HIM the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, HE humbled HIMSELF, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross."*

Philippians 2:7-8

### 5.3 PRAYING FOR OTHERS

In praying for others, praying for GOD's ministers or GOD's servants is very essential. Paul asks, "*Brethren, pray for us*" (I Thessalonians 5:25).

Praying for others is one of the best things we can do for ourselves. Job's three friends found themselves in deep trouble with GOD. The LORD GOD said to Eliphaz the Temanite,

*"...MY wrath is kindled against thee, and against thy two friends: for ye have not spoken of ME the thing that is right, as MY servant Job hath."*

Job 42:7

As instructed by GOD, Job prayed for them in his great captivity (great suffering). And as he prayed for their forgiveness and restoration, the LORD GOD turned these prayers for blessing back into Job and restored twice as much as Job had before.

*"And the LORD turned the captivity of Job, when he prayed for*

*his friends: also the LORD gave Job twice as much as he had before."*

Job 42:10

The LORD GOD's restoration of Job was immediate and bountiful: Job had given friends and relatives (kith and kin), material prosperity, family, and long life.

When people hurt and offend us, we should pray for them. The real happiness comes if we put our pains behind us and pray for GOD's blessing on them.

Our LORD JESUS said,

*"Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you."*

St. Matthew 5:44

We ought to pray for the goodness of our enemies and not for their ruin. Loving an enemy and praying for an enemy involve doing good deed towards that enemy in order to win him over to CHRIST.

Is anyone among us suffering? Let him pray and we must also pray for him for his comfort (James 5:13). Is anyone among us sick? Let us pray for him with the elders of the church or with the workers of the church for his restoration from physical sickness and spiritual weakness (James 5:14-15). We must also pray for one another, confessing our sins to one another so as to continue in the true fellowship with our LORD (James 5:16). The prayer of a man who is living righteously has unfailing access to the power of healing of our righteous GOD. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man, the true servant of GOD will accomplish much and the power of the prayer of faith will be revealed through him (James 5:15-16). Thus, prayer is the heart of getting relief from physical sicknesses or spiritual weaknesses.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE prayed for HIS disciples and for all Christian believers for their spiritual unity (St. John 17:20-21). So, we ought to pray for HIS ministers (workers) and for all believers. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST prayed for HIS disciples, in St. John 17:9, 15.

*"I pray not that THOU shouldst take them out of the world, but*

*that THOU shouldst keep them from the evil."*

St. John 17:15

Once, JESUS went up a high mountain to pray with HIS three disciples. As HE prayed, HIS face shone like the sun (St. Luke 9:28-29; St. Matthew 17:1-2). HIS clothes became dazzling white. Likewise, as we pray to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST more and more in faith and humility and with broken-heart and by remembering HIS great sufferings and death we will get all the spiritual experiences and spiritual growth, we will be changed into the same image of HIM, sharing more and more of HIS glory (II Corinthians 3:18). Lastly, we will shine as the sun in HIS kingdom, the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 13:43) by the illumination of the brilliant light of life (St. John 8:12).

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was painfully hanging on the cross, HE prayed for the forgiveness of HIS enemies. So, we also ought to pray for the forgiveness of our enemies.

*"FATHER, forgive them; for they know not what they do."*

St. Luke 23:34

'FATHER' is GOD the FATHER. 'GOD the FATHER' is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

Praying for others must be our divine duty. Not praying is considered a sin against GOD.

*"Moreover as for me, GOD forbid that I should sin against the LORD in ceasing to pray for you: ..."*

I Samuel 12:23

### **Your hand—a prayer reminder.**

- Thumb** —for your closest and for your family and friends and neighbours, etc.
- Pointing finger** —for your preachers, teachers, guides, etc.
- Middle finger** —for your rulers and others in authority.  
(Largest finger)
- Weakest finger** —for the helpless, the sick and the poor, etc.
- Small finger** — for you, yourself and your needs.

**Pray earnestly: You can't expect a 1000 dollar answer to a ten-cent prayer!**

#### 5.4 PRAYER ACCEPTABLE TO GOD

Most important of all, we should pray for all men to enjoy a tranquil life. Such prayers are good and acceptable to GOD; such prayers will help the salvation of the ungodly; and such prayers will bring the knowledge of the truth to the ungodly.

*"I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of GOD our Saviour; Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth."*

I Timothy 2:1-4

**Supplications** are precise requests for specific needs. Prayers refer to various kinds of prayer—confession, thanksgiving, etc.

**Intercessions** denote prayers to GOD on behalf of others.

**Giving of thanks** refers to prayers of praise.

So, we should pray with tears, confessing our sins, transgressions, iniquities, faults, mistakes, disobedience and everything which is contrary to holiness. We should pray with great reverence, falling before GOD. We should pray with a shattered and broken-heart and with tears and lamentation.

We should pray meditating how JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD came into the world giving up HIS great glory of heaven; how HE suffered great insults, humiliations, agonies and disgrace and how HE died on the cross of Calvary shedding HIS most holy blood. We should pray with a melting heart and tears.

We should pray to GOD for repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, divine goodness, born-again experience, the experiences of holiness and holy life and HOLY SPIRIT and redemption from sins and for the spiritual growth.



We should pray everyday for our spiritual goodness and blessings, heavenly blessings and worldly goodness, physical health and strength and all other things. We should pray for escaping from the terrible judgment and horrible punishment in hell.

We ought always to pray and not to faint (St. Luke 18:1-8). We should beg the LORD to send out HIS workers into HIS harvest (St. Luke 10:2). We should beg the LORD for rain in the time of the latter rain (latter spiritual rain). We should beg the LORD persistently and repeatedly. We should beg the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST with an importunate begging (Zechariah 10:1; Joel 2:23).

We should pray with faith, belief, and one heart. We should pray without any doubt. We should pray fervently giving praise, thanking, and glorifying GOD. We should not use unnecessary words and vain repetitions while praying. We should never pray in wrong ways to satisfy our desires. We should pray only for the fulfilment of GOD's will in us and in the right manner. We should always give ear to the Law of the LORD and pray (Proverbs 28:9).

*"But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the LORD. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways."*

James 1:6-8

*"Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts."*

James 4:3

*"But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your FATHER knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask HIM."*

St. Matthew 6:7-8

Persistent prayer is very essential (St. Luke 11:5-13; 18:1-8). Humbling ourselves in prayer by realizing our sinfulness in our lives is very essential (St. Luke 18:9-14). Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST's delays in answering our prayers and requests are not denials, but are HIS divine means for HIS glory and renown. Raising of Lazarus from dead after four days by our LORD JESUS reveals this fact (St. John 11:1-45). Glory be to GOD!

The LORD GOD gave two tablets of stone containing the commandments of GOD to Moses after his first forty-day fast (Deuteronomy 9:9). After the second forty-day fast, the LORD GOD granted him extraordinary gifts and graces to do great and mighty works for GOD (Deuteronomy 9:18; 10:10). The forty-day fast by Elijah (Elias) lifted him with renewed faith and courage from great despair (I Kings 19:7-8) and it finally led him to ascend into heaven without dying on a chariot of fire driven by horses of fire (II Kings 2:1-12). The fasting of the Israelites at Mizpeh brought them to GOD's divine presence and subdued the Philistines and restored the cities (I Samuel 7:6, 13-14). The people of Nineveh avoided an imminent annihilation due to their sins by the fasting prayer (Jonah 3:5-10). **The fasting prayer is the most acceptable prayer to GOD.**

### 5.5 PRIVATE PRAYER

Prayer is of three types. They are private prayer, congregational prayer, and meditation. All these types are prayers according to the Holy Scripture and given by the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Private prayer is a prayer to the LORD JESUS CHRIST made behind the door in seclusion in low voice, with sighs and tears being heard by no one in Spirit and in truth.

*"But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet (inner room), and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy FATHER which is in secret; and thy FATHER which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly."*

St. Matthew 6:6

**Loneliness** is good for our private prayer and meditative prayer. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST went up the mountain by HIMSELF to pray. When evening came, HE was there alone (St. Matthew 14:23). Further, HE went away HIMSELF into the wilderness to pray alone (St. Luke 5:16). HE liked to pray in loneliness. Glory be to GOD!

When Mary Magdalene was alone and stood near our LORD JESUS CHRIST's sepulchre, crying, our risen LORD JESUS CHRIST appeared to her first (St. John 20:11-18; St. Mark 16:9). When John the apostle was alone, he saw a number of highly symbolic and magnificent visions. His visions reveal the full identity and authority of our LORD

JESUS CHRIST and give severe warning and good hope to believers (Revelation 1-22). When Daniel was alone, he saw a great vision (Daniel 10:1-9). When Ezekiel was alone, he saw the vision of the valley of dry bones (Ezekiel 37:1-14). Loneliness is very essential to experience our GOD's wonderful visions and revelations.

When we, GOD's people are alone, we are not in loneliness or solitude. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, EMMANUEL is always with us (St. Matthew 1:23; Revelation 21:3-4). Glory be to GOD!

## 5.6 CONGREGATIONAL PRAYER

Congregational prayer is a prayer in which people, who assemble to worship the LORD, raise their voice and cry loudly in tears and wailing and lament in prayer to GOD in Spirit and in truth.

*"Now when Ezra had prayed, and when he had confessed, weeping and casting himself down before the house of GOD, there assembled unto him out of Israel a very great congregation of men and women and children: for the people wept very sore (bitterly)."*

Ezra 10:1

*"Now in the twenty and fourth day of this month the children of Israel were assembled with fasting, and with sackclothes, and earth upon them. And the seed of Israel separated themselves from all strangers, and stood and confessed their sins, and the iniquities of their fathers. And they stood up in their place, and read in the book of the Law of the LORD their GOD one fourth part of the day; and another fourth part they confessed, and worshipped the LORD their GOD. Then stood up upon the stairs, of the Levites, Jeshua, and Bani, Kadmiel, Shebaniah, Bunni, Sherebiah, Bani, and Chenani, and cried with a loud voice unto the LORD their GOD."*

Nehemiah 9:1-4

## 5.7 MEDITATIVE PRAYER

Meditation is a prayer to the LORD JESUS CHRIST made silently at heart sitting in a quiet place in Spirit and in truth. These three types of prayers are necessary for everyone. It is necessary for us to pray and meditate always, while we sit, while we walk, while we travel,

while on bed and while we work. **Thus we can pray to GOD everywhere. This is the way of praying always and without ceasing.**

*"When I remember THEE upon my bed, and meditate on THEE in the night watches."*

Psalm 63:6

*"My meditation of HIM shall be sweet: I will be glad in the LORD."*

Psalm 104:34

If a man does not pray to GOD, he fails to speak to his own heavenly FATHER. It means that he is not asking his heavenly FATHER for anything. It means that he is not friendly with GOD. But he is unfriendly with GOD. This man will lose not only his kinship with GOD but also all the blessings of GOD. Every blessing is taken away from him. He meets with great defeat, great loss, great fall, great problems, and he becomes nothing. He becomes a miserable sinner liable to judgment and hell.

A man who is not praying cannot live and survive as a spiritual being. In order to live and survive as spiritual people, and to inherit heaven, many cried to GOD in tears and confession and in fasting, wearing garments of sorrow, sitting in dust and ash, showering dust and ash on their heads and bodies and lying on the ground. The LORD GOD was merciful to them. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST delivered them and blessed them. **Thus, prayer is victory; prayer is life. There is no victory without prayer and no life without prayer.** Those who live a victorious life obtaining divine and eternal life will alone go to heaven; the saints of the LORD obtain the HOLY SPIRIT and pray in the HOLY SPIRIT.

## 5.8 PRAYER WITH HANDS LIFTED UP

The holy servants of the LORD are permitted to lift up their holy hands in the sanctuary in the house of the LORD.

*"Behold, bless ye the LORD, all ye servants of the LORD, which by night stand in the house of the LORD. Lift up your hands in the sanctuary, and bless the LORD."*

Psalm 134:1-2

In the Holy Bible we read, **they lifted up their voice to GOD with one accord** (Acts 4:24). So, we must also lift up our voice to GOD with one accord.

Singing with all our hearts with a joyful and loud noise to the LORD for edification is good (Psalm 98:4). Here, let us not forget the importance of communicating loudly with our heavenly FATHER; our LORD JESUS also on the cross made the cry "TETALESTAI" (It is finished) with a loud voice (St. Luke 23:46). "Tetalestai" is a Greek word which means 'It is finished' (St. John 19:30). Let it be done decently and in order. Using musical instruments to the LORD for edification is good (II Samuel 6:5). Let it be done decently and in order. Singing to the LORD by clapping hands for edification is good (Psalm 47:1). Let it be done decently and in order.

Nowadays the so-called dancing in the Spirit is not at all done for edification and it is also not done decently and in order. The so-called dancing in the Spirit will never give a Spirit-filled life. So, it should not be done.

Only the holy men, but not the holy women, who are the saints of the LORD can look towards heaven and pray with their holy hands lifted up or raised and stretched towards heaven.

*"I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting."*

I Timothy 2:8

Only holy men have the authority to pray in this manner. Sinners do not have the authority to pray in this manner. Only pure men should pray in this manner. Only holy men should pray in this manner. Sinners should not pray in this manner. Any man with polluted hands should not pray in this manner. Any man with hands that beat, hands that receive bribes and commission, and hands that commit all works of wicked sins should not pray with his hands raised and stretched.

It is not decent or proper for any woman to pray with her hands lifted up or raised or stretched towards heaven. Let all things be done for edification (I Corinthians 14:26, 40).

Prayers enable us to keep GOD's commandments, statutes, testimonies, laws, etc. For this purpose, GOD's commandments, statutes, testimonies, laws, etc., have been converted into prayers by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (St. Matthew 6:9-13).

## 5.9 WAITING PRAYER

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*“Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.”*

St. Luke 11:9-10

Here **ask** means ask in prayer; **seek** means seek in prayer; and **knock** means knock in prayer. Ask, seek and knock suggest perseverance and continual prayer.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has also said,

*“And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.”*

St. Matthew 21:22

Therefore, it is necessary for everyone to pray to GOD in faith and receive abundantly all blessings needed. In the prayer of faith, sinners submit themselves wholly to GOD and pray for salvation and holy life. They confess their sins with tears and groaning and weeping and pray for forgiveness of sins, salvation and experiences of holy life. This is the prayer, the LORD GOD is pleased with. This is the prayer, the LORD GOD likes. This is the prayer, the LORD GOD hears. This is the most important and fundamental prayer.

We should pray to GOD by realizing and confessing our sins to receive all spiritual experiences including HIS holy presence, spiritual rebirth, spiritual growth, etc. We should pray to attain or retain or regain holiness of GOD. We should pray to remove unholiness by sin. **We should pray with fasting to defeat or conquer Satan, the devil and to escape from annihilation by GOD** (St. Matthew 17:21; Jonah 3:5-10). We should pray to receive spiritual and worldly bliss and blessings. We should pray to escape from punishment of GOD. We should pray to re-establish or reconcile with GOD. We should pray to

focus or re-focus our senses and sense organs (eyes, ears, mouth, nose, etc.) on GOD and to curb our sexual appetite and desire. We should pray to renounce our stumbling blocks of sin and to realize, repent and mend our relationship with GOD and to respond to GOD.

**GOD hears our prayer of faith** and forgives, saves, redeems, sanctifies, renews, repairs and resurges our lives; and provides restitution; and completely destroys our earthly, sensual and devilish works; and restricts and tames our eyes, ears, tongues, food, etc.; and helps us to rise from our spiritually fallen state; and reminds us HIS promises; and heals our body and spirit and soul wholly (James 5:15).

**Further, everyone should Wait and Pray for the following:**

1. Wait and pray for the salvation of the LORD GOD.

*"The LORD is good unto them that wait for HIM, to the soul that seeketh HIM. It is good that a man should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD."*

Lamentations 3:25-26

2. Wait and pray for holiness.

*"Draw nigh (near) to GOD, and HE will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the LORD, and HE shall lift you up."*

James 4:8-10

3. Wait and pray for the strengthening of heart.

*"Wait on the LORD: be of good courage, and HE shall strengthen thine heart: wait, I say, on the LORD."*

Psalms 27:14

4. Wait and pray for the grace and mercy of the LORD (Jude 21).
5. Wait and pray for the renewal of strength.

*"HE giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might HE increaseth strength. Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall*

*walk, and not faint."*

Isaiah 40:29-31

6. Wait and pray for the promise of GOD (Acts 1:4).
7. Wait and pray for the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (Acts 2:1-4).

*"And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James. These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of JESUS, and with HIS brethren."*

Acts 1:13-14

8. Wait and pray for the worldly blessings.

*"Are there any among the vanities (worthless idols) of the Gentiles that can cause rain? or can the heavens give showers? art not THOU HE, O LORD our GOD? therefore we will wait upon THEE: for THOU hast made all these things."*

Jeremiah 14:22

9. Wait and pray for the bodily healing. A man waiting at the pool of Bethesda was healed (St. John 5:1-15).
10. Wait and pray for the adoption as sons, the redemption of our body.

*"And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body."*

Romans 8:23

11. Wait and pray for the glorious appearing of the great GOD and our SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

*"Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great GOD and our SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST."*

Titus 2:12-13

12. Wait and pray for the coming of the day of GOD.



*"Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation (conduct) and godliness, Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of GOD, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?"*

II Peter 3:11-12

13. Wait and pray for the new heavens and a new earth (II Peter 3:13-14).
14. Wait and pray for our glorious heavenly body (Philippians 3:20-21).
15. Wait and pray for the kingdom of GOD (the kingdom of heaven).

*"For the kingdom of GOD is not in word, but in power."*

I Corinthians 4:20

'Power' means 'spiritual experience'.

We should always be humble and faithful before GOD while praying to meet our needs and difficulties and concerns. HE is the "Almighty Master of the entire Universe." As HIS beloved children we can always entreat HIM to grant our wishes. We can confidently tell HIM of our needs and difficulties and concerns. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is not an unjust judge. HE is the most righteous Judge. HE is never reluctant to help us or to do what is good for us. We ought to pray not losing heart even if the answer is delayed. We should not be discouraged if time goes by and we see no answer (St. Luke 18:1-8).

**Prayer life is the most important thing for a successful Christian life. Prayer gives full fellowship with GOD.** Prayer includes asking and getting answers from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. We should always ask according to the will of GOD, by keeping HIS commandments (I John 5:14).

*"And whatsoever we ask, we receive of HIM, because we keep HIS commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in HIS sight."*

I John 3:22

When we pray, we should follow the model prayer JESUS gave HIS disciples. Our prayer should be addressed to our heavenly FATHER—beginning with adoration, thanksgiving, confession of sins, making reconciliation with others, etc.; and then for our needs, the needs of others, etc.; and concluding in the name of JESUS, the Redeemer (St. Matthew 6:9-15; St. John 14:14; 16:23-24).

Prayer is so important that not praying is considered a sin against the LORD GOD. Praying for us and others must be our divine duty (I Samuel 12:23).

Many Christians are not praying to GOD. Because of this, they lose all their spiritual blessings. **The value of lost blessings will be understood only as time passes.**

Everyone should learn to wait on GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for HIS blessings and should learn to remember how many days he/she has on earth and keep a count of the remaining days of his/her life by a heart of HIS wisdom (Psalm 90:12).

#### 5.10 PRAYER WITH ONE ACCORD IN THE SPIRIT

Whenever we pray, we must humble ourselves in the sight of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. We must submit ourselves to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. We should always remember HIS great sufferings that HE suffered for us, the sinners. We should always remember HIS horrible death that HE died for us, the sinners. We should always remember HIS great love towards us, the sinners.

Further, we should always pray with the fear of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, as HE sees us always. Again, in faith and in good sense, we should pray. In good sense, we should confess our sins (hidden sins and wilful sins), iniquities, trespasses, errors, faults, etc., to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, with broken-heart and with contrite spirit and with tears and with cries and with humility to get deliverance from sins. Then our hearts will not go hither and thither; our hearts will not move or change towards any unwanted thing; our hearts will be firm and steady in our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This kind of prayer is called a **prayer with one accord**. See Acts 2:1; 4:24. A prayer with

one accord is good and acceptable and perfect in the sight of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The saved people should assemble together and lift up their voice to GOD with one accord (Acts 4:24). They should offer continuous prayers (I Thessalonians 5:17). They should make their steadfast prayers without ceasing (Romans 12:12). This kind of prayer is called a **constant prayer** (Acts 12:5). If the saved people pray like this, the place where they assemble together will be shaken and they will be filled with the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 4:24-31). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

If we pray to GOD filled with the HOLY SPIRIT, then this kind of prayer is called a prayer in the Spirit (Ephesians 6:18). If we pray in the Spirit, we get all blessings—worldly and heavenly blessings. If we pray in the Spirit, we get liberty from the bondage of sin and from the bondage of Satan and from the bondage of the world and from all other bondages and sufferings. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Now the LORD is that (the) Spirit: and where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is liberty.”*

II Corinthians 3:17

Now, by the constant prayer of the church with one accord in the Spirit, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST sent HIS angel from heaven and miraculously opened the prison gate and freed Peter from prison (Acts 12:3-11). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

We always ought to pray and not lose heart. We always ought to pray and not to faint (St. Luke 18:1-8). We must persist in prayers and supplications with patience and perseverance. Glory be to GOD!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST hears the prayers of the righteous or the saved people (Proverbs 15:29). If two of them agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will do it for them. For where two or three are gathered together in HIS name, HE is in the midst of them (St. Matthew 18:19-20). This is the confidence that the saved people have in HIM, that if they ask anything according to HIS will, HE hears them. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“And this is the confidence that we have in HIM, that, if we ask anything according to HIS will, HE heareth us.”*

I John 5:14

## 5.11 SPIRITUAL GROWTH

**Early Morning Prayers:** The Psalms remind us that the early morning hours spent with GOD is vital for our spiritual growth (Psalm 88:13). Each morning we have a fresh opportunity to recall HIS tender mercies and protection (Psalm 59:16; 92:2). Each morning we have a fresh opportunity to find HIS tender direction and guidance for the tasks of the day (Psalm 143:8). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF rose up before daybreak and prayed (St. Mark 1:35). GOD's people had regular early morning worship (I Samuel 1:19; Psalm 63:1). So, we also must have early morning prayer for our spiritual growth. Every morning HE fills us with new grace and mercies (Lamentations 3:22-23). Stillness, silence, solitude and free from voices and noises are essential for GOD's holy presence and for a fully concentrated prayer to GOD. Early morning is the quiet and peaceful time for our prayers and supplications. In the early morning, we can pray to GOD without any hindrance. So, this is the most suitable time for our prayers and supplications with GOD. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST satisfies the thirsting soul, longing for spiritual growth. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"O GOD, THOU art my GOD; early will I seek THEE: my soul thirsteth for THEE, my flesh longeth for THEE in a dry and thirsty land, where no water is;"*

Psalm 63:1

For the spiritual growth, in addition to the above prayer life, every man should first drink the pure spiritual milk of the Word of GOD, and then eat the pure spiritual meat (food) of the Word of GOD, and then eat the pure spiritual strong meat (strong food) of the Word of GOD, and then eat the pure wholesome words, the pure sound words, the pure sound doctrines and the pure faithful Words of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, our GOD.

*"And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in CHRIST. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat (food): for hitherto (until now) ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able."*

I Corinthians 3:1-2

*"When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I*

*thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things."*

I Corinthians 13:11

*"For when for the time (though by this time) ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of GOD; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil."*

Hebrews 5:12-14

*"If any man teach otherwise, and consent (agree) not to wholesome words, even the Words of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;"*

I Timothy 6:3

*"Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in CHRIST JESUS."*

II Timothy 1:13

*"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears."*

II Timothy 4:3

A spiritually newborn baby or a born-again man grows up to the stage of spiritually-young man, by drinking the pure spiritual milk. A spiritually-young man grows up to the stage of man spiritually, by eating the pure spiritual food. A person who is spiritually at the stage of man, further grows into a spiritually matured man, or a spiritually grown-up man, or a spiritually perfect man, by eating the pure spiritual strong food. A spiritually perfect man becomes a mighty man in spiritual life, by eating the pure wholesome words, the pure sound words, the pure sound doctrines and the pure faithful Words of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. A mighty man in spiritual life is a man full of good senses and godliness.

Again, for the spiritual growth, everyone should build himself up on his most holy faith and obtain the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD and pray to the LORD JESUS CHRIST in the HOLY SPIRIT; everyone should

live in the Spirit and walk in the Spirit (Galatians 5:25). To live before GOD in the Spirit, the Gospel is being preached (I Peter 4:6).

*"But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Jude 20

For the spiritual growth, everyone should hate vain thoughts and love HIS Law (Psalm 119:113). They should be wise in what is good and simple about what is evil (Romans 16:19). In regard to malice they should be babes, but in understanding they should be mature (I Corinthians 14:20). No one should be carried about with various and strange doctrines (Hebrews 13:9; Ephesians 4:14; I Timothy 4:1).

In order to grow in the spiritual life, everyone should lay aside all malice, all guile, all deceit, hypocrisies, envies, all evil speakings and all sins and lay apart all filthiness, and superfluity of naughtiness.

*"Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, As newborn babes, desire the sincere (pure) milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby."*

I Peter 2:1-2

*"Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls."*

James 1:21

For the spiritual growth of HIS people: HE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF) gave some to be apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of CHRIST: till we all come to the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the TRUE GOD), to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of CHRIST (Ephesians 4:11-13).

*"And GOD hath set (appointed) some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities (varieties) of tongues."*

I Corinthians 12:28

The LORD JESUS CHRIST our GOD has been appointing the above ministers of GOD for HIS ministry, for the spreading of HIS glorious Gospel and for HIS church. The two important signs of HIS church are miracles and gifts of healings.

Now, for the fullest growth in spiritual life, everyone should grow in the grace, and in the knowledge of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST (II Peter 3:18). Also prayer is the heart of the fullest growth in spiritual life. A spiritually grown-up man (holy man) has **spiritually six eyes**—eyes of his body, 2; eyes of his mind, 2; eyes of his soul, 2.

The saved GOD's people set their hope in the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Timothy 6:17). Their delight is in doing good works (Ephesians 2:10). They abide and live according to the Word of GOD, the incorruptible seed which lives and abides for ever (I Peter 1:23). They receive the eternal divine life from GOD (St. John 10:10). Their labour for our LORD JESUS will never be in vain (I Corinthians 15:58). Surely all goodness and mercy will follow them all the days of their life (Psalm 23:6) and finally they will receive the glorious crown of righteousness in the kingdom of GOD (II Timothy 4:8).

Now, the spiritual growth or maturity is not Biblical knowledge or Bible study. M.Phil., Ph.D., Th.M., Th.D., M.Div., D.Min., B.D., D.D., or any other degrees do not reveal one's spiritual growth or maturity. The spiritual growth or maturity is not automatic. The spiritual growth or maturity is not mystical. The spiritual growth or maturity is not instant. The spiritual growth or maturity is openly known to all.

## 5.12 WHAT SHOULD WE PRAY FOR ?

1. To glorify GOD's name (St. Matthew 6:9).
2. The desire to have fellowship with GOD, HIS Word and HIS saints that motivates praying (Psalm 42:1-2; 68:11; 50:5).
3. For daily sustenance (St. Matthew 6:11).
4. For strategic wisdom (James 1:5) to live in this world amidst unrighteous people.
5. For deliverance in times of trials, tribulations and sufferings (Jonah 2:1-2; Psalm 20:1).

6. For deliverance from fear and anxiety (Philippians 4:6-7).
7. For GOD's protection against enemies as in the past (Psalm 44: 1-3).
8. For deliverance from guilt and guilt feelings (Psalm 32:5; Proverbs 28:13; I John 1:9).
9. For everyone in authority (I Timothy 2:1-3).
10. For spiritual growth (Ephesians 3:14-19; Colossians 1:9-11).
11. For personal requirements such as purity of heart (Psalm 66: 18-19).
12. For forgiving spirit (St. Matthew 6:14).
13. For simplicity (St. Matthew 6:5-6).
14. For unity of believers (St. Matthew 18:19-20).
15. For tenacity in praying without losing heart (St. Luke 18:1-8).
16. For humility and repentance (St. Luke 18:10-14).
17. For importunity (St. Luke 11:5-8) in requesting the LORD.
18. For physical deliverance of GOD's people (Acts 12:5-12).
19. For the salvation of unbelievers (Romans 10:1).
20. For those who proclaim the Gospel of GOD's salvation (Psalm 96:2; St. Matthew 9:38; Acts 13:2-3).
21. For boldness and courage in the proclamation of the Gospel (Ephesians 6:18-19; Acts 4:29).
22. For the physically sick and infirmed (James 5:14-16; Acts 28:8).
23. To ensure that the ministry continues uninterrupted (Romans 15:30-31).
24. To increase in the knowledge of GOD and HIS will (Colossians 1:9-10; Ephesians 1:17).
25. For the power to comprehend the love of CHRIST (Ephesians 3:14-18).
26. For strength and endurance (Ephesians 1:16, 19; Colossians 1:11).
27. For the faith never to fail (St. Luke 22:32; St. Mark 9:24; Ephesians 3:14, 17).



28. For deliverance from temptation (St. Matthew 6:13; 26:41).
29. For power to do good works (Colossians 1:9-10) with the fruits of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22; Ephesians 5:9).
30. For protection from the evil one (St. Matthew 6:13).

*"But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), Keep yourselves in the love of GOD, looking for the mercy of our LORD JESUS CHRIST unto eternal life."*

Jude 20, 21

Prayer is an act of true and humble worship of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. By prayer we truly and humbly offer up praise and thanksgiving to GOD and present our requests before HIM.

"We should seek JESUS, for HE is our GOD.

We should pray to JESUS, for HE intercedes for us.

We should know JESUS, for HE died and lives for us.

We should follow JESUS, for HE is leading us in HIS way.

We should praise JESUS, for HE is providing all for us.

We should love JESUS, for HE is calling us HIS children.

We should live in JESUS, for HE is our eternal life.

We should glorify JESUS, for HE is our great reward."

Now, our purpose and plan must be JESUS; our intention and aim must be JESUS; our thought and everything must be JESUS, for HE is the giver of HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD to us. Persistent prayers bring GOD's blessings abundantly. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

We should pray to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for the removal of unbelief from us wholly, since unbelief blocks all our blessings of GOD (St. Mark 9:23-24). Since faith without works is dead (James 2:20), we should pray for faith with works (James 2:17). We should ask GOD in faith, with no doubting and without wavering (James 1:6-7; St. Matthew 21:22) and without double-mindedness (James 1:8). Without faith (belief) it is impossible to please GOD. So, he who comes to GOD must believe that HE is, and that HE is a glorious rewarder of them that diligently seek HIM (Hebrews 11:6). We must always glorify GOD with the works of our most holy faith, praying in the HOLY SPIRIT (Jude 20). Glory be to GOD!

## 6. BEWARE OF THE MUTILATION

The apostle Paul warns,

*"Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision (mutilation)."*

Philippians 3:2

"The concision" means 'the mutilation'. "The mutilation" means 'the mutilators of the flesh or those who mutilate or cut the flesh'. It is a contemptuous term for the circumcision. The circumcised are the true people of GOD (Philippians 3:3).

The heathens have a wrong thought that they can obtain salvation from sins and kingdom of heaven, by wounding or by causing physical injury to their bodies. So, they mutilate or cut the flesh. Some cut the flesh of their foreskin; some make cuttings in their bodies with knives or swords (I Kings 18:28), some whip them with scourges; some pierce their cheeks by arrows; and some pierce their lips by arrows, to show their **self-willed worship** with **false humility**. There is no value in their self-willed worship and false humility and in severe (harsh) treatment of the body (Colossians 2:23). Thus, **externalism** (excessive regard for the external) and **asceticism** (the practice of self-denial of physical pleasures and comforts) and **legalism** (the observance of the letter of the Law rather than the Spirit) are of no value to put a harness on the sensual appetite of human beings' sinful nature (Colossians 2:23).

The dog is the most despised, shameless and miserable creature and a scavenger roaming the streets. The dog is unclean (Leviticus 11:27). As "the dog returns to his own vomit again" (II Peter 2:22; Proverbs 26:11), they take back their own ugly sins.

The apostle Paul warns against dogs, which are then described as evil workers and finally as the concision. Dogs are unclean. The evil workers are evil. The concision are those deserving contempt. In nature they are unclean dogs. In behaviour they are evil workers. In religion they are the concision, people of shame. The apostle Paul warns the believers to be vigilant of such unclean, evil and contemptible people.

## GOD'S PLAN FOR HIS PEOPLE

### 1. THE ONLY ONE PEOPLE

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD created the heavens and the earth and everything in heaven, everything on the earth and everything in the sea except man by HIS word of great power. See Genesis Chapters 1 and 2.

The LORD GOD said,

*"Let there be light: and there was light."*

Genesis 1:3

The LORD GOD created man with HIS holy hands. HE created man wonderfully and skilfully with the dust of the earth. The LORD GOD created man in HIS own immensely glorious image and likeness. The LORD GOD created man a little lower than the angels. HE crowned man with honour and glory. The LORD GOD put everything under his feet. The LORD GOD gave him dominion and made him ruler over all living things. The LORD GOD formed him with HIS holy hands and breathed into his nostrils, the **breath of life** and man thus became a living soul.

*"So GOD created man in HIS own image, in the image of GOD created HE him; male and female created HE them."*

Genesis 1:27

*"And the LORD GOD formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul."*

Genesis 2:7

Thus, man became a being of two persons. The two persons, man possesses in him are:

1. The outward man whom we see with our eyes, i.e., the body of man.
2. The inward man whom we cannot see with our eyes, i.e., the soul.

The outward body of man or the body of dust is perishable. The inward man or the soul never perishes. Thus, man is of two persons, the perishable body of dust, and the imperishable soul. Animals, birds and all other living things, though created by GOD, have no souls in them.

Many people do not believe that they have a soul, the invisible inward man in them. They believe the existence of invisible air, though they cannot see it. They believe the existence of invisible electricity without seeing it. People believe the existence of certain things without seeing them and certain other things just by hearing about them. Many people do not believe the existence of soul or the inward man created and put into them by the great power of the LORD GOD. Everyone must be mindful of how foolish and dangerous it is to be so.

The LORD GOD created man holy and perfect. HE created man to worship, serve, and glorify HIM. The man, created perfectly by GOD was fair and handsome. He was good, upright, and godly. He had honour and glory. Man was the head of all creations on the earth. Man stood between GOD and other creations on the earth. All these facts about man help us understand who man is.

*“What is man, that THOU art mindful of him? and the son of man, that THOU visitest (pay attention to or care for) him? For THOU hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour. THOU madest him to have dominion over the works of THY hands; THOU hast put all things under his feet: All sheep and oxen, yea, and the beasts of the field; The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the seas.”*

*"Lo, this only have I found, that GOD hath made man upright;  
..."*

Ecclesiastes 7:29

The LORD GOD formed the woman from a rib of the man, whom HE had created. The name of the man was Adam and the name of the woman was Eve. They were sinless and holy. They were one flesh and one blood (Genesis 2:21-24).

The LORD GOD created the man and the woman perfect and holy to fulfil HIS will that one man must have one wife only; and they must be one flesh and one blood, sinless and holy, perfect and immortal; and that they must be GOD's own children and be with HIM. Also the LORD GOD created the man and the woman to fulfil HIS will that a sinless and holy tribe of people, the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD, a godly people, a blessed and immortal people might greatly multiply from them.

*"And did not HE make one? Yet had HE the residue (having a remnant) of the Spirit. And wherefore one? That HE might seek a godly seed (offspring). Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth."*

Malachi 2:15

GOD created mankind to be fruitful (Genesis 1:28). GOD created mankind to fear before HIM always (Proverbs 28:14); and to keep HIS divine commandments, and to delight greatly in HIS divine commandments. If anyone fears GOD, then he/she will hate evil (Proverbs 8:13).

*"Praise ye the LORD. Blessed is the man that feareth the LORD, that delighteth greatly in HIS commandments."*

Psalms 112:1

GOD created mankind to be a blessed and mighty generation of the upright.

*"His seed shall be mighty upon earth: the generation of the upright shall be blessed."*

Psalms 112:2

GOD created mankind fearfully and wonderfully and to be a holy and sinless, a blessed and immortal tribe.

*"I will praise THEE; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made:*

*marvellous are THY works; and that my soul knoweth right well (very well). My substance (frame) was not hid from THEE, when I was made in secret, and curiously (skilfully) wrought in the lowest parts of the earth."*

Psalm 139:14-15

GOD created them to be the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD. HE created them to be the ONLY ONE PEOPLE of the ONLY ONE GOD. HE created them to be the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"But to us there is but one GOD, the FATHER, of whom are all things, and we in (for) HIM; and one LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom are all things, and we by HIM. Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: ..."*

I Corinthians 8:6-7

GOD formed the man and the woman of one flesh and one blood, so that a holy and godly people might multiply from them.

*"And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the LORD, if haply (in the hope that) they might feel after (grope for) HIM, and find HIM, though HE be not far from every one of us: For in HIM we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also HIS offspring. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of GOD, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device."*

Acts 17:26-29

If man had not disobeyed GOD, he would have lived for ever in perfect peace, happiness and harmony with GOD and there would never have been any suffering in the world.

The first man and woman disobeyed the Words of the LORD GOD, and obeyed the words of Satan, the devil and ate the fruit of the forbidden tree. As they violated the commandment of GOD, they became sinners and through them, their generations became sinners. When they fell into sin, they were broken and ruined in the fall. When they fell into sin, they were like a broken and rotten egg and they were a real nothing. We sin because we have a sinful and evil

nature. We break GOD's commandments because we have a sinful and evil nature. The sin of the first man and woman passed on to their generations, just like a disease, which passes on to their children from their parents.

All people (except JESUS) have been born with a sinful and evil nature. Since they are born with a sinful and evil nature, they continually do evil things. Every intent or thought of man's heart is evil from childhood. They lie, cheat, steal, fight, and kill. Their hearts are filled with envy and greed, hate and jealousy.

Thus, mankind inherited hell, the wages of sin. Mankind was thus trapped into a world of great distress and pain. The ONE PEOPLE, the holy, the righteous, and the godly people thus sank into sin, curse and filthiness. The ONLY ONE PEOPLE divided themselves into different tribes and groups of abominations and worshippers of many vain gods (Psalm 14:1, 3; Acts 14:15). They became many groups of sinners and enemies of the ONLY TRUE GOD (Psalm 2:1-2). The ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE converted themselves into many tribes of people liable for destruction and terrible judgment and hell (Psalm 9:17).

Now, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE are the truthful people; they are the saved; they are the faithful people with a faithful spirit and they keep the secrets of GOD.

*"...But he that is of a faithful spirit concealeth the matter."*

Proverbs 11:13

*"...But a faithful man who can find?"*

Proverbs 20:6

Again, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE do not speak falsely with flattering lips and with an inconsistent mind.

*"Help, LORD; for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail (disappear) from among the children of men. They speak vanity (falsely) every one with his neighbour: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak."*

Psalm 12:1-2

Further, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE or the faithful people are honest in what they say; they will be a never-lying people; they will always walk in the truth and they are the truthful people. The faithful people are faithful in obedience; they will obey all the commandments of GOD. The faithful people are faithful in holiness; they will be holy in all their deeds and words. The faithful people are faithful in prayer life; they will pray without ceasing; and they will pray in the HOLY SPIRIT. The faithful people are faithful in humility. They very well know that the LORD GOD opposes the proud, but gives more grace and honour to the humble. The faithful people are faithful in sufferings; they will suffer patiently when they are persecuted for righteousness' sake. The faithful people are faithful in faith and hope. They are the just and they will live by faith. The believers of the LORD should live by faith. The faithful people are faithful in fellowship with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and with HIS people. They will be in fellowship with one another. The faithful people are faithful in love; they will be filled with the love of GOD; they will be holy and without blame before the LORD GOD in love; they will be holy and without blame before everybody in love; and they will love one another. If they love one another, all men will know that they are the disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The faithful people are faithful in doing the will of GOD. The will of GOD may not seem to be pleasing to them, it may not be to their liking, but they know that GOD knows what is good for HIS people. HE is working all things together for good.

*"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love GOD, to them who are the called according to HIS purpose."*

Romans 8:28

GOD's thoughts (plans) are to prosper HIS people, not to harm HIS people, and to give HIS people a future and a hope. Glory be to GOD!

*"For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end."*

Jeremiah 29:11

**St. Paul very astonishingly views at GOD'S own salvation plan for HIS people in Romans 11:33-34, which is revealed to us by HIS own gracious will.**



*"O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of GOD! ... For who hath (has) known the mind of the LORD? or who hath (has) been HIS counsellor?"*

Romans 11:33-34

Again, the will of GOD brings them reproaches, insults and sufferings. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST walked always in the will of GOD. HE walked in the path of great reproaches; HE walked in the path of great insults; HE walked in the path of great sufferings; HE never pleased HIMSELF (Romans 15:3).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is doing all things for our good. Those who love GOD can very well understand this fact, since they love HIM no matter what. As Job says,

*"Though HE slay me, yet will I trust in HIM: ..."*

Job 13:15

*"For I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that HE shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see GOD: Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; ..."*

Job 19:25-27

These verses express the unquenchable love and faith of Job towards GOD. Job was righteous. He lived by faith, not by sight. He viewed GOD HIMSELF as the Redeemer. He viewed here the redemption of the human body or the resurrection of the human body. This love and this faith are very essential to HIS people.

*"Now the just shall live by faith: ..."*

Hebrews 10:38

Moreover, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE, or the faithful people are always faithful in their pledge, promise, or covenant with GOD (Proverbs 20:25; Ezekiel 17:15). The faithful people are always faithful to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and they are always faithful to the Spirit of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT.

Again, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE will abound with worldly and heavenly blessings. They will abound with bodily blessings; they will abound with spiritual blessings; they will abound with immense peace, joy and happiness.

*"A faithful man shall abound with blessings: ..."*

Proverbs 28:20

Moreover, the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE should be faithful, truthful, holy, righteous and godly until their death, to receive the crown of life from the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD.

*"...Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life."*

Revelation 2:10

**Now, before the foundation of this world, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has planned to come into this world from heaven to save us, the sinners. For this, HE has planned to be born in this world as a man and to die and to resurrect and to ascend into heaven. In this connection, our GOD's wonderful salvation plan is explained below in various stages. Glory be to GOD!**

### 1.1 THE FIRST STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN

In order to get deliverance (salvation) and redemption from sins, everyone should repent of his/her sins of thought, word, deed, and omission and pray to GOD for the forgiveness of sins.

The first stage in GOD's salvation plan for HIS people is Deliverance and Redemption. Therefore, HIS people should get deliverance and redemption from their sins through repentance. In GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST we have redemption through HIS blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of HIS grace (Ephesians 1:7). The delivered or saved or redeemed people should be godly, prayerful, holy, faithful, truthful and righteous. Then only the LORD GOD can have an ongoing relationship with HIS people; then only HIS people can enjoy the good life with HIM in the kingdom of heaven. Such people are the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD, and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD.

*"...Believe on the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and thou shalt be saved, ..."*

Acts 16:31

*"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD."*

Ephesians 2:8

*"And the LORD shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto HIS heavenly kingdom: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen."*

II Timothy 4:18

*"Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; ..."*

Psalms 103:4

## 1.2 THE SECOND STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN

The second stage in GOD's salvation plan for HIS people is that the redeemed or saved or delivered people must be obedient to GOD always and they must always be holy and righteous in all manner of conduct. They should perfect their holiness in the fear of GOD. For perfecting their holiness, they should be washed by the most holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, they should be washed in the most holy name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and they should be washed by the Spirit of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and they should be sanctified by the truth, the Word of GOD. Such people are the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"Sanctify them through THY truth: THY Word is truth."*

St. John 17:17

*"As obedient children, not fashioning (conforming) yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as HE which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation (conduct); Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy."*

I Peter 1:14-16

*"Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of GOD."*

II Corinthians 7:1

*"Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the LORD."*

Hebrews 12:14

*"The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein for ever."*

Psalms 37:29

### 1.3 THE THIRD STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN

The third stage in GOD's salvation plan for HIS people is that the redeemed or saved or delivered people should be baptized in the most holy name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT, by complete immersion in water. Those who are baptized in this manner, become the members of the church of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Such people are the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD.

*"...Baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

St. Matthew 28:19

*"That HE might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word."*

Ephesians 5:26

'The washing of water' means 'water baptism'.

*"...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be (were being) saved."*

Acts 2:47

### 1.4 THE FOURTH STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN

The fourth stage in GOD's salvation plan for HIS people is that the redeemed or saved or delivered people should be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT (baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT), the most holy power or strength of GOD, and they should be filled with joy and with the HOLY SPIRIT and they should be witnesses of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Such people are the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD.

*"But ye shall receive power, after that the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."*

Acts 1:8

*"And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Acts 13:52

*"Now HE which stablisheth us with you in CHRIST, and hath anointed us, is GOD; Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts."*

II Corinthians 1:21-22

## 1.5 THE FINAL STAGE IN GOD'S SALVATION PLAN

The fifth and final stage in GOD's salvation plan for HIS people is that the redeemed or saved or delivered people should continue steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in Breaking of Bread, and in prayers. Breaking of Bread is the Holy Communion or the LORD's Supper. The redeemed or the saved or the delivered people or the believers or the saints should have a good prayer life, for the full growth in their spiritual life and to continue steadfastly in their spiritual life and to enter into the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven. The Christians of the first century Christian church continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in the Holy Communion or the LORD's Supper, and in prayers (Romans 12:12; St. Luke 21:36). Such people are the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising GOD, and having favour with all the people. ..."*

Acts 2:42, 46-47

Final glorification is GOD's perfect salvation plan for HIS people. For this glorification, the spiritual experiences of sanctification and justification are very essential. For details, please see page 172-174, 237, 1329 to 1330 and 1388. This final glorification is the ultimate step in GOD's perfect salvation plan, in which, GOD will perfectly change or transfigure the believers' mortal lowly body, conforming it to the resurrected glorious body of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Philippians 3:21). At last, in the kingdom of GOD, GOD's eternal glory will be given to the believers or the saved (I Peter 5:10).

## 2. GOD DWELLS IN HIS PEOPLE

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is divinely dwelling in HIS people. So, our speech should be always with grace, seasoned with salt (Colossians 4:6). The Triune GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is divinely dwelling in HIS people, the believers. But HIS divine dwelling in HIS people is conditional on love towards HIM, and obedience to HIS Words. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"If a man love ME, he will keep MY Words: and MY FATHER will love him, and WE will come unto him, and make OUR abode with him."*

St. John 14:23

'FATHER' is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

*"Let the Word of CHRIST dwell in you richly in all wisdom; ..."*

Colossians 3:16

Further, HIS people should not be yoked with unbelievers and they should not touch any unclean thing, since they are the temple of the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord (accord) hath CHRIST with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel (unbeliever)? And what agreement hath the temple of GOD with idols? for ye are the temple of the living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be MY people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a FATHER unto you, and ye shall be MY sons and daughters, saith the LORD Almighty."*

II Corinthians 6:14-18

Now, if you proclaim the LORD openly that the LORD is your GOD and that you will walk in HIS ways and that you will keep HIS statutes, commandments and judgments and that you will obey HIS voice, the LORD also proclaims that you should be a peculiar and a holy people to

HIM and that you should be the highest and the greatest nation on this earth, in praise and in name and in honour (Deuteronomy 26:17-19). Blessing comes through obedience and HIS people are to bring GOD praise, honour and glory.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST wants to write, teach and sing songs to the praise, honour and glory of HIM (Deuteronomy 31:19, 21). GOD wants our whole-hearted singing with our grateful heart, glorifying for HIS tender mercies. Sing aloud with joy, giving thanksgiving to GOD (Psalm 95:1-2) and "*sing unto the LORD a new song*" (Psalm 96:1; 98:1).

All Christians should live a holy life that reflects the purity of GOD (I Peter 1:16). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD will make one holy and spiritual. All Christians should separate themselves from actions, influences, or people that will contaminate them. They should avoid what is harmful to the body (I Corinthians 6:18-19). They should avoid what is harmful to others (I Corinthians 8:8-13). They should avoid what is offensive to the conscience (James 4:17). They should not have an association that will harm their spiritual life (II Corinthians 6:14-18). They should follow the spiritual purity (I Corinthians 6:17-20). They should avoid all that is against a spiritual prohibition (Exodus 20:3-17). They should follow the supreme example of CHRIST, who saved them (I Peter 2:21).

### **3. SALIENT FEATURES OF THE ONE PEOPLE**

The ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD are the great people of the great GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The LORD GOD is very near to them whenever they worship HIM or they pray to HIM. They are the people who possess HIS righteous statutes and laws; they are the people who live according to HIS righteous statutes and laws.

*"For what nation is there so great, who hath GOD so nigh unto them, as the LORD our GOD is in all things that we call upon HIM for? And what nation is there so great, that hath statutes*

*and judgments so righteous as all this law, which I set before you this day?"*

Deuteronomy 4:7-8

If the people keep the commands of the LORD GOD and walk in HIS ways, then HE will establish them as HIS holy people to HIMSELF, and all the peoples on earth will see that they are called by the name of the LORD, and they will fear them.

*"The LORD shall establish thee an holy people unto HIMSELF, as HE hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy GOD, and walk in HIS ways. And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the LORD; and they shall be afraid of thee."*

Deuteronomy 28:9-10

The blessings of obedience to the commands of the LORD GOD are:

*"And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy GOD. Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine (cattle), and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store (kneading bowl). Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out."*

Deuteronomy 28:2-6

Further, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE are the saved people of the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD. They are the ONLY blessed people. The saved people are spiritually called Israel or Jacob.

*"Happy art thou, O Israel: who is like unto thee, O people saved by the LORD, the shield of thy help, and who is the sword of thy excellency! and thine enemies shall be found liars unto thee (submit to you); and thou shalt tread upon their high places."*

Deuteronomy 33:29

*"HE hath not beheld iniquity in Jacob, neither hath HE seen perverseness in Israel: the LORD his GOD is with him, and the shout of a king is among them. Surely there is no enchantment against*



*Jacob, neither is there any divination against Israel: according to this time it shall be said of Jacob and of Israel, What hath GOD wrought!"*

Numbers 23:21, 23

'Israel and Jacob' mean 'the saved people'.

The LORD GOD will set HIS people in praise, fame and honour high above all the nations.

*"And to make thee high above all nations which HE hath made, in praise, and in name, and in honour; and that thou mayest be an holy people unto the LORD thy GOD, as HE hath spoken."*

Deuteronomy 26:19

The children of GOD are the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD; they are the chosen people of the ONE GOD; they are the own people of the ONE GOD; they are the blessed people of the ONE GOD; they are the royal priests of the ONE GOD; they are the holy people of the ONE GOD; they are the righteous people of the ONE GOD; they are the special people of the ONE GOD; they are the saved people of the ONE GOD; they are the people delivered by the ONE GOD; and they are the redeemed people of the ONE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and they have obtained mercy and grace of the ONE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of HIM who hath called you out of darkness into HIS marvellous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of GOD: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy."*

I Peter 2:9-10

Anyone who eagerly seeks our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, he/she will become HIS people and will obtain HIS mercy (I Peter 2:10). There is a time to seek and get HIM (Ecclesiastes 3:6). At the right time, **Zaccheus** very eagerly sought to see GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and found HIM and received HIS salvation (St. Luke 19:1-10). Glory be to GOD!

Furthermore, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD are GOD's own children. If they are GOD's own children, then they are heirs—heirs of GOD and joint-heirs with CHRIST, and if they share in HIS sufferings in order that they may also share in HIS glory. The HOLY SPIRIT (the Spirit of Adoption) places HIS children as sons and daughters in GOD's family. All HIS people share all of the inheritance together. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...But ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, ABBA, FATHER. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of GOD: And if children, then heirs; heirs of GOD, and joint-heirs with CHRIST; if so be that we suffer with HIM, that we may be also glorified together."*

Romans 8:15-17

Moreover, the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD are eagerly waiting for the glorious appearing or coming of the great GOD AND SAVIOUR, JESUS CHRIST, and for their citizenship in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. During the glorious coming of CHRIST, they will get heavenly bodies, like the most glorious body of CHRIST (Philippians 3:20-21).

*"Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great GOD and our Saviour JESUS CHRIST; Who gave HIMSELF for us, that HE might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto HIMSELF a peculiar people, zealous of good works."*

Titus 2:13-14

*"For the LORD HIMSELF shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump (trumpet) of GOD: and the dead in CHRIST shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the LORD in the air: and so shall we ever (always) be with the LORD."*

I Thessalonians 4:16-17

**Enoch, the seventh from Adam, was the first person to be caught up by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Genesis 5:22-24; Hebrews 11:5; Jude 14). The caught up of Enoch by GOD from the earth without**

dying establishes the divine evidence of the caught up of the saved/ the saints during the Secret Coming of CHRIST. His caught up by GOD depended on his staunch faith (belief) in GOD and on his seeking GOD and walking with GOD day and night for three hundred years. He was also well pleasing to GOD. These divine spiritual experiences are very essential for our being to be caught up by GOD to receive the reward, the kingdom of GOD/the kingdom of heaven (Hebrews 11:5-6).

#### **4. GOD'S PEOPLE CAN NEVER BE SEPARATED**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the portion given to us by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (I Corinthians 1:2). HE is GOD's power and GOD's wisdom and GOD's righteousness and GOD's sanctification and GOD's redemption (I Corinthians 1:24, 30). HE is the LORD of glory (I Corinthians 2:8). HE is for our glorification and HE is for our justification (Romans 8:30). HE is for our complete sanctification of our spirit, soul and body (I Corinthians 6:11; I Thessalonians 5:23). HE is for our washing of regeneration and HE is for our renewing of the HOLY SPIRIT (Titus 3:5). HE is the deep things (depths) of GOD (I Corinthians 2:10). HE is the Unique Foundation of GOD's building (I Corinthians 3:11) and the Corner Stone (Isaiah 28:16; Ephesians 2:20). HE is our Passover (I Corinthians 5:7). HE is our unleavened bread (I Corinthians 5:8). HE is our spiritual food (I Corinthians 10:3; St. John 6:31-35). HE is our spiritual drink (I Corinthians 10:4; St. John 7:37-39). HE is our spiritual Rock (I Corinthians 10:4). HE is the Head of the church (Ephesians 5:23). HE is the Body (I Corinthians 12:12). HE is the first-fruits of those who are the redeemed of the Jews and the Gentiles (I Corinthians 15:20). HE is the second MAN and the LORD from heaven (I Corinthians 15:47). HE is the last Adam and the life-giving SPIRIT (I Corinthians 15:45). GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—the faithful GOD calls us all into the fellowship of our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (I Corinthians 1:9) to be the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. We should always persevere (stand fast) in the LORD JESUS CHRIST, in spite of difficulties, reproaches, insults, thirst, hunger, starvation, famine, cold, nakedness, beatings, floggings, whippings, mockeries, perils, persecutions, tribulations, hardships,

torments, tortures, imprisonments, sufferings and deaths. We cannot be separated from GOD's love, the love of CHRIST. So, HIS people ask,

*"Who shall separate us from the love of CHRIST? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For THY sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through HIM that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of GOD, which is in CHRIST JESUS our LORD."*

Romans 8:35-39

**Disappointments** test our centre of interest (focus), commitment, faith, hope, faithfulness, truthfulness and stability. Disappointment time is our exam time. In some occasions, our GOD leads HIS people into disappointments. So, in GOD's plan for HIS people, there are disappointments. Hence, all our disappointments are GOD's appointments. So, GOD's people should not murmur against their disappointments. Murmuring is sin (I Corinthians 10:10).

*"And when they (the Israelites) came to Marah, they could not drink of the waters of Marah, for they were bitter: therefore the name of it was called Marah. And the people murmured against Moses, saying, What shall we drink? And he cried unto the LORD; and the LORD shewed him a tree, which when he had cast into the waters, the waters were made sweet: ..."*

Exodus 15:23-25

Our GOD, JESUS CHRIST made peace through HIS blood at the cross (Colossians 1:20). So, we can have peace with GOD by accepting CHRIST. **The GOD of Peace, the LORD JESUS CHRIST gives the peace of GOD through HIS blood and through HIS Gospel of peace (Ephesians 6:15).** JESUS CHRIST is the **Prince of Peace** (Isaiah 9:6). HE gives HIS peace to us (St. John 14:27). Apart from HIM there can be no peace between man and GOD. The saved people have peace with GOD (Romans 5:1) and the unsaved and the wicked have no peace with GOD. **GOD's peace** is the heavenly peace; it is the divine peace; it gives peacefulness of mind that frees us from fear and anxiety (St. John 14:27); it gives

harmony and concord with others (Ephesians 4:3); it gives health and welfare (I Corinthians 16:11); it is the fruit of the HOLY SPIRIT (Galatians 5:22) and it signifies the opposite of war (Revelation 6:4). GOD's grace is for our spiritual standing and GOD's peace is for our spiritual standing and spiritual walk (Romans 5:1-2). **Seek the GOD of Peace for the peace of GOD. Our LORD JESUS is The Prince of Peace** (Isaiah 9:6). HIS peace gives joy amid all tribulations of the world (St. John 16:33).

To keep our hearts and minds through CHRIST JESUS, HIS peace (GOD's peace) which surpasses all understanding must rule in our hearts (Philippians 4:7; Colossians 3:15). CHRIST JESUS HIMSELF is our peace (Ephesians 2:14). The **GOD of Peace**, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is with HIS people (Philippians 4:9) and HE HIMSELF sanctifies HIS people completely (I Thessalonians 5:23) and HE HIMSELF gives HIS holiness to HIS people (Hebrews 12:14). In order to keep GOD's peace, we must occupy our minds with right things (Philippians 4:8) and with right activities (Philippians 4:9). To obtain GOD's peace, we must make our requests to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving (Philippians 4:6-7).

The ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD cannot be separated from GOD's love, because it is set forth in a person who is GOD HIMSELF, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is our Saviour. HE is our Redeemer. HE is our peace. HE is our grace. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is working all things together for good. Those who love HIM are best able to appreciate this fact because they love HIM no matter what.

*"Though HE slay me, yet will I trust in HIM: ..."*

Job 13:15

*"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love GOD, to them who are the called according to HIS purpose."*

Romans 8:28

If the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is with you, then you have a prayerful life; you have a powerful godly living by the power of the HOLY SPIRIT;

you have a mind of divine attitudes; you have a truthful and faithful and holy life; you have a new experience of victory over sin, trials and tribulations and no one can separate you from HIM and nothing can change your hope for the future, of sharing the glories and indescribable joy of heaven (I Peter 1:3-5; St. John 14:2-3).

# THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD

## 1. ATTRIBUTES

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST alone is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD who came into this world with divine qualities. HE is the peerless GOD.

Never before in the history of mankind and never since the advent of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, has there been such a manifestation and demonstration of divine attributes in any person as in our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Creator and Saviour and Redeemer of humanity. The divine qualities present in HIM are in perfect measure and in contrast to the imperfect nature of human race as a whole.

Before we set our affection on being transformed into HIS likeness, let us meditate on some of these divine attributes so that we may realize how important it is to get a share of these qualities. If we request HIM earnestly and sincerely in prayer, HE will certainly grant us this blessing for HE has promised to "*do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us.*" *Ephesians 3:20.*

The divine attributes (inherent characteristics) of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD include holiness, truth, righteousness, mercy, patience, affection, love, humility, kindness, compassion, faithfulness, forgiveness, reproof and justice. HE is also eternal, omniscient (all-knowing), omnipotent (All-powerful), and omnipresent (ever-present).

**Holiness:** Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the "HOLY ONE". Psalm 16:10. HE is the fountain of absolute holiness. **So, we can not sanctify and purify ourselves from uncleanness and unholiness (Isaiah 66:17). GOD alone can sanctify and purify us from uncleanness and unholiness.**

*"...These things saith HE that is holy, HE that is true, HE that hath the key of David, HE that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth."*

Revelation 3:7

HE wants us to be holy:

*"But as HE which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation (conduct)."*

I Peter 1:15

*"...Without which (holiness) no man shall see the LORD."*

Hebrews 12:14

**Truth:** Absolute truth shines gloriously only in and around our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"JESUS saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: ..."*

St. John 14:6

HE was born to bring truth to the world. All who love truth are HIS followers.

*"...To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth MY voice."*

St. John 18:37

HE is the ONLY ONE GOD, who is eternally truthful; HIS truthfulness is completely trustworthy. HIS truthfulness leads to freedom and justice. We are also commanded to be truthful.

*"Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another."*

Ephesians 4:25

**Righteousness:** This means uprightness before GOD. Totally righteous is our LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is radiating absolute uprightness.



*"My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the FATHER, JESUS CHRIST the righteous."*

I John 2:1

*"THOU hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore GOD, even THY GOD, hath anointed THEE with the oil of gladness above THY fellows."*

Hebrews 1:9

HE fulfilled all righteousness.

*"And JESUS answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. ..."*

St. Matthew 3:15

*"But with righteousness shall HE judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and HE shall smite the earth with the rod of HIS mouth, and with the breath of HIS lips shall HE slay the wicked."*

Isaiah 11:4

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has covered us with the robe of righteousness.

*"I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my GOD; for HE hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, HE hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, ..."*

Isaiah 61:10

**Mercy:** The Greek word ELEOS translated mercy in English means special and immediate regard to the misery, which is the consequence of sins. GOD's mercy is extended in full for the complete alleviation of the consequences of sin. Mercy is HIS benevolent pity for the misery brought about by our sin. HIS pitying love precedes HIS saving grace. Our LORD JESUS said:

*"But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."*

St. Matthew 9:13

HE exhorts us to be merciful.

*"Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy."*

St. Matthew 5:7

*"For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against (triumphs over) judgment."*

James 2:13

**Patience:** Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the LORD of patience and consolation. HE is infinitely patient; human patience pales into insignificance when compared with HIS longsuffering patience. HE was able to bear trials and tribulations without grumbling. GOD the FATHER is the author of patience and GOD the SON is the example of patience and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT is the source of patience. How great is the quality of patience!

*"HE was oppressed, and HE was afflicted, yet HE opened not HIS mouth: HE is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so HE openeth not HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:7

**Affection:** We find in the Holy Bible at least five kinds of affection, natural, paternal, maternal, fraternal and filial. The Holy Bible says,

*"Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another."*

Romans 12:10

This is the affection of CHRIST. The Holy Bible says,

*"Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth."*

Colossians 3:2

To understand CHRIST-CENTERED affection we must meditate on St. Matthew 10:36-42.

**Love:** Love in its purest form emanates only from our LORD JESUS CHRIST. It is the sacrificial love, which is inimitable and unimitated. It is beyond human reach and human understanding. This love is expressed in Galatians 2:20.

*"I am crucified with CHRIST: nevertheless I live: yet not I, but CHRIST liveth in me: and the life which I now live in*

*the flesh I live by the faith of the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), who loved me, and gave HIMSELF for me."*

Galatians 2:20

Love is an attribute of GOD and love is a description of HIS being. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the only epitome of divine love and the source of all true love. HIS love is unconditional; HIS love consistently seeks the highest good of all. GOD's love was clearly revealed at Calvary when our LORD JESUS CHRIST died for our sins. HE is the propitiation for our sins.

*"...GOD is love."*

I John 4:8

*"Hereby perceive we the love of GOD, because HE laid down HIS life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren."*

I John 3:16

*"Behold, what manner of love the FATHER hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of GOD: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew HIM not."*

I John 3:1

Because GOD loved us, we ought to love one another.

*"Beloved, if GOD so loved us, we ought also to love one another."*

I John 4:11

Because GOD laid down HIS most precious life for us, we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

**Humility:** Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the source of abject humility.

*"Take MY yoke upon you, and learn of ME; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls."*

St. Matthew 11:29

*"...GOD resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble."*

James 4:6

We must be clothed with humility.

*"...Be clothed with humility: for GOD resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of GOD, that HE may exalt you in due time."*

I Peter 5:5-6

We should walk with humility.

*"I therefore, the prisoner of the LORD, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation (divine call) wherewith ye are called, With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love."*

Ephesians 4:1-2

We are warned against false humility in Colossians 2:18.

**Kindness:** Kindness is mildness combined with tenderness. The kindness of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is total, absolute, abundant, extraordinary and never-failing.

*"And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in CHRIST JESUS: That in the ages to come HE might shew the exceeding riches of HIS grace in HIS kindness toward us through CHRIST JESUS."*

Ephesians 2:6-7

Kindness combines meekness and gentleness. We have already quoted St. Matthew 11:29. We have to possess this quality. The Holy Bible says,

*"...Follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness."*

I Timothy 6:11

**Compassion:** Pity or sympathy for the sufferings of others with a great desire to give help or show mercy is called compassion. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is very gracious and HE is filled with heart-felt compassion.

*"The LORD is gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of great mercy. The LORD is good to all: and HIS tender mercies are over all HIS works."*

Psalms 145:8-9

The compassion of our LORD JESUS is very great.

*"But when HE (JESUS) saw the multitudes, HE was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted (were weary), and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd."*

St. Matthew 9:36

As the LORD GOD is gracious and compassionate, HIS people must also be gracious and compassionate.

**Faithfulness:** Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's faithfulness is very great. Everyone must praise and glorify HIS faithfulness, righteousness, holiness, salvation, lovingkindness, truth and mercies (Lamentations 3:22-23).

*"...Great is THY faithfulness."*

Lamentations 3:23

*"I have not hid THY righteousness within my heart; I have declared THY faithfulness and THY salvation: I have not concealed THY lovingkindness and THY truth from the great congregation."*

Psalm 40:10

**Forgiveness:** On top of all these divine qualities is the crowning glory of our LORD's forgiveness. Our LORD is the embodiment of forgiveness.

*"For THOU, LORD, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon THEE. But THOU, O LORD, art a GOD full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth."*

Psalm 86:5, 15

Forgiveness separates the sinner from his sin. Forgiveness implies blotting out, remission, pardon, remembering no more and healing.

*"And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly FATHER will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your FATHER forgive your trespasses."*

St. Matthew 6:12, 14-15

The basis of forgiveness is faith in our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

No man can forgive another if the forgiving Spirit of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is not reflected in him. Forgiving confirms our love towards others.

**Reproof:** Our LORD JESUS CHRIST reproves the world of its sins through the HOLY SPIRIT in order to uphold justice and pronounce judgment. Those who despise the reproof cannot escape the punishment of eternal suffering in hell.

*"And when HE (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come, HE will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment."*

St. John 16:8

**Justice:** Right and fair behaviour or treatment is called justice. The justice of GOD is consistent. The justice of GOD is legislative. The justice of GOD is distributive. The ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has the authority and ability to establish justice.

*"Justice and judgment (Righteousness and justice) are the habitation (foundation) of THY throne: mercy and truth shall go before THY face."*

Psalm 89:14

The ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is faithful, upright and just and HIS judgment is just. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"MY judgment is just; ..."*

St. John 5:30

**Now, in our attempt to understand the greatness of the glory of this ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, let us begin from the beginning from the birth of our LORD and SAVIOUR. Incidentally, let us remember GOD the FATHER HIMSELF addresses HIM as LORD.**

*"And, THOU, LORD, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of THINE hands."*

Hebrews 1:10

HE was manifest in the flesh. HE came into this world, as the seed of the woman, by the word of HIS power.

*"In the beginning was the WORD, and the WORD was with*

*GOD, and the WORD was GOD. And the WORD was made flesh, ..."*

St. John 1:1, 14

The birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST has been unique because of its perfect holiness. One can be born as a man, only from the womb of a woman. Therefore, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was born by HIMSELF (by the HOLY SPIRIT) from the womb of Virgin Mary to save sinners. HE was born holy and sinless to save sinners. HIS name 'JESUS' means 'Saviour', who saves sinners from their sins. HIS name, 'CHRIST' means 'The Anointed ONE, Ordained by GOD'. The Hebrew word for 'CHRIST' is 'MESSIAS' or 'MESSIAH'. HIS name 'LORD' means 'Almighty, All-Powerful, The Most High, Creator of all things, Ruler of all things, Omnipotent, Omnipresent, Omniscient, Infinitely Wise and Exceedingly Merciful GOD'. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour and the Only Redeemer of the world (St. Matthew 1:21; I Timothy 1:15; St. John 4:42; Psalm 78:35).

Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's divine sacrificial death (once-for-all-sacrificial death) on the cross satisfied the **righteous wrath of GOD** against our sins and paid the death penalty for our sins (Revelation 21:8). GOD's righteous wrath is filled with HIS righteousness and it does only GOD's righteous works. CHRIST bore in HIS most holy body the punishment for our sins. HE has taken our sins on HIMSELF and has imputed HIS righteousness to us, the sinners. Even though we clearly and totally deserve to be declared guilty, because of CHRIST's sacrificial death and because of our faith in CHRIST and because of our prayer of faith GOD declares us righteous. Thus we are **justified** (acquitted) freely by GOD and we receive **justification** (acquittal) from GOD, the Just and the Justifier by HIS grace (Romans 3:24-26).

## **2. PROPHETIC REVELATIONS**

### **2.1 THE SEED OF THE WOMAN**

When the time of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's **Virgin birth** came, the angel Gabriel appeared to **Virgin Mary**, a holy and virtuous young Jewish woman betrothed to a just man Joseph and proclaimed to her that she would conceive by the HOLY SPIRIT and give birth to

a SON who will be called the SON of GOD (St. Luke 1:35) and she will give HIM the name JESUS (St. Luke 1:31). She questioned the angel about the truth of his statement since she was a virgin (St. Luke 1:27-35). Then the angel appeared to Joseph and proclaimed to him to call HIS name JESUS (St. Matthew 1:18-21).

According to Mosaic Law, pregnancy of an unmarried woman was an offence punishable by death. But Virgin Mary surrendered herself completely to the will of GOD and said to the angel, "*Behold the handmaid of the LORD; be it unto me according to thy word*" (St. Luke 1:38). In order to save Virgin Mary from the punishment of death, our GOD gave a just man Joseph as her husband to her. He also surrendered himself completely to the will of GOD (St. Luke 2:1-7). Only after the birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, Joseph knew her betrothed wife (St. Matthew 1:25). Thus, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was born of the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Matthew 1:20-21) as the **Seed of the Woman** (Genesis 3:15), but HE was not born of blood and of the will of the flesh and of the will of man (St. John 1:13). Glory be to GOD! After the birth of our LORD JESUS, Virgin Mary did not give birth to any child. See page 407-408.

Though Virgin Mary was unmarried, she did not care about the terrible consequences or the great dangers that would follow her pregnancy, since she had a staunch faith in the LORD GOD, who had chosen her. Nothing could stop her or slow her spiritual life, since our LORD GOD saved her from all spiritual dangers. Her spiritual life continued until the end of her life, since she surrendered herself completely to the will of GOD (St. Luke 1:38; Acts 1:14). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

GOD promised the **Virgin birth** of the SAVIOUR as the **Seed of the Woman** at the time of the fall of mankind. In the garden of Eden, soon after Adam and Eve were deceived by the crafty Satan (the serpent), our LORD GOD said to Satan,

*"And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; IT shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise HIS heel."*



‘ IT ’ means ‘the seed, the offspring’. IT denotes the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

While HE was being nailed on the cross or while HIS heel was nailed on the cross, the head of Satan, the devil was crushed by HIM. And while the cross of JESUS with HIM was forcefully planted into a pit, HE was poured out like water and all HIS bones were out of joint and HIS heart was like wax and it was melted in the midst of HIS bowels (Psalm 22:14). At that time, HE again crushed the head of Satan.

The miracle of the Virgin birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was prophesied by Isaiah. HIS Virgin birth signifies HIS divine holiness. The following prophetic verses clearly reveal the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST.

*“Therefore the LORD HIMSELF shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a SON, and shall call HIS name IMMANUEL.”*

Isaiah 7:14

‘IMMANUEL’ or ‘EMMANUEL’ means ‘GOD with us’. EMMANUEL implies GOD in the Person of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was born with a sinless nature, so that we might have a SAVIOUR who could truly save and redeem us from sin on the cross of Calvary.

Thus our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came into this world as the seed of the woman to save and redeem the whole world. HE came into this world to dwell among HIS own people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“...I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, ...”*

Isaiah 49:26

Salvation or redemption of one's soul would be impossible without a Virgin born SAVIOUR or REDEEMER. The Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST explains the divine and human natures, present in HIM.

*“For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be*

*called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace."*

Isaiah 9:6

This prophecy clearly reveals that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was fully man and fully GOD, when HE was on the earth. Here this prophecy is about these two natures of JESUS CHRIST—the Human one to be 'born' and the Divinity to be 'given', because JESUS CHRIST as GOD was eternal and could not be 'born'.

The miracle of the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST was proclaimed directly in St. Matthew 1:18-25 and in St. Luke 2:4-7. Mary and Joseph were betrothed and she was found to be conceived by the HOLY SPIRIT. The LORD encouraged Joseph to marry Mary, to protect her from the law relating to adultery (Leviticus 20:10). The Holy Bible says that Joseph did not know her till she had brought forth her first-born (St. Matthew 1:25).

The miracle of the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST was professed by St. Paul. While describing the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST, St. Paul wrote,

*"But when the fulness of the time was come, GOD sent forth HIS SON, made of a woman, ..."*

Galatians 4:4

In this verse St. Paul used the Greek word GENOMENON to denote JESUS CHRIST coming from a woman. He used the same Greek verb in Romans 1:3 and Philippians 2:7 to denote the acceptance of the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST. In contrast, St. Paul used the Greek word GEGENNETAL in Galatians 4:23 to denote the birth of Ishmael, associating his birth with the husband. The interpretation of I Corinthians 15:45-48 also shows that Adam and CHRIST came miraculously by the work of GOD. Adam was of the earth, earthy. CHRIST was the LORD from heaven, heavenly. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Virgin birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is recorded as a historical fact in the Holy Bible. The Virgin birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD taking on HIMSELF manhood. Mary and Joseph accepted the offer to bring forth the sinless and holy baby, namely EMMANUEL—GOD with us (St. Luke 1:26-35; St. Matthew 1:18-25).

Our LORD JESUS always claimed that GOD was HIS FATHER. JESUS CHRIST accepted the fact that HE was 'CHRIST' the SON of the Blessed' (St. Mark 14:61-62). HE also accepted the fact that HE was the SON OF GOD or GOD the SON (St. Luke 22:70). HE never claimed Joseph as HIS FATHER (St. Luke 2:48-49; St. John 2:16; 5:17-47; 6:32-40; 8:42).

Our LORD JESUS fully knew the fact that since HIS mother Virgin Mary was from David's family, HE became David's SON as a MAN and HE was David's LORD as GOD (St. Matthew 22:42-46). JESUS never gave a special place for HIS mother and brothers (HIS mother's sister's sons) but contrasted them with HIS disciples who did HIS will (St. Matthew 12:46-50) and HE had no own brothers (for reference see page 407 last paragraph and page 408). JESUS talked directly to HIS mother on two occasions (St. John 2:3-4; 19:26). On both occasions JESUS did not assign a special position for Mary but called her as 'woman'.

Famous scientists, geneticists and many others have no barrier to belief in the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST. They have no problems with HIS Virgin birth. To them, this is the most necessary thing for mankind's remission (forgiveness) of sins, salvation (deliverance) and redemption from sins, holiness and holy life and to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Now, no one can reject the Virgin birth of JESUS. If anyone rejects HIS Virgin birth, he/she will count the cost of his/her rejection in hell-fire.

Our LORD JESUS also claimed that HE was the SON OF MAN and HE had the power to forgive sins (St. Mark 2:10). Our LORD JESUS taught that HE came from GOD (St. John 8:42; 16:27). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST expressed HIS self-identification with GOD the FATHER by HIS 'I AM' statements (Exodus 3:14; St. John 4:26; 6:35; 8:12; 10:7; 11:25; 14:6; 15:1). GOD's proclamation: GOD the FATHER attested GOD the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST thrice (St. Matthew 3:16-17; 17:1-5; St. John 12:27-29). St. John wrote that the WORD became flesh and dwelt among us (St. John 1:1-3, 14, 18).

*"In the beginning was the WORD, and the WORD was with GOD, and the WORD was GOD. The same (HE) was in the beginning with GOD. All things were made by HIM; and without HIM was not any thing made that was made. And the WORD was*

*made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld HIS glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the FATHER, full of grace and truth. No man hath seen GOD at any time; the only begotten SON, which is in the bosom of the FATHER, HE hath declared HIM."*

St. John 1:1-3, 14, 18

Again he wrote that GOD has sent HIS only begotten SON into the world that we might live through HIM (I John 4:9; St. John 3:16). While writing about false prophets, he wrote that they deny, "JESUS CHRIST has come in the flesh" (I John 4:1-3). Again, while writing about the deceivers, he wrote that they would not confess that JESUS CHRIST is come in the flesh (II John 7-10).

St. Peter confessed that CHRIST is the SON of the living GOD (St. Matthew 16:16). He wrote, "JESUS CHRIST verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times" (I Peter 1:20). Again, he wrote that JESUS CHRIST was put to death in the flesh for our sin (I Peter 3:18). Also he wrote that JESUS CHRIST suffered for us in the flesh (I Peter 4:1).

St. Paul wrote that: The mystery of godliness is "GOD was manifest in the flesh" (I Timothy 3:16). GOD sent HIS own SON in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin and HE condemned sin in the flesh (Romans 8:3). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is in the form of GOD. But HE took the form of a servant and came in the likeness of men (Philippians 2:6-8). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the MAN is the Mediator between GOD and man (I Timothy 2:5). In our LORD JESUS CHRIST dwells all the fullness of the GODHEAD bodily (Colossians 1:19; 2:9). GOD sent forth HIS SON, born of a woman (Galatians 4:4) to redeem us. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came "according to the flesh, who is over all, the eternally blessed GOD. Amen" (Romans 9:5). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had reconciled us in the body of HIS flesh through death (Ephesians 2:15-16). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the image of the invisible GOD (Colossians 1:15; II Corinthians 4:4).

In the Holy Bible we see, GOD had prepared a body (a most holy body) for our LORD JESUS CHRIST (Hebrews 10:5). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST partook 'the flesh and blood' to destroy Satan, the devil (Hebrews 2:14). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is 'the brightness of HIS (GOD's) glory and the express image of HIS person' (Hebrews 1:3).

In HIS deity, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was GOD. In HIS humanity, our LORD JESUS CHRIST became MAN. In HIS humility, our LORD JESUS CHRIST humbled HIMSELF even to the death on the cross and now exalted (Philippians 2:5-9).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was 'in the form of GOD' and was 'equal with GOD' and was 'GOD'. But HE emptied HIMSELF and came into this world in the likeness of men and HE even humbled HIMSELF to take up the death on the cross. This is the supreme sacrifice of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST lived on this earth as a MAN, HIS deity was not reduced or abandoned but present fully in HIM. HE exercised the divine functions. But to save mankind, HE emptied HIMSELF of HIS glory (Philippians 2:7; St. John 17:5) and became poor (II Corinthians 8:9).

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world as a MAN, HE acquired Manhood without losing HIS deity. HE began to live a fully human life. HE took on HIMSELF the human body, the holy human body. HIS Manhood was complete (I Timothy 2:5; Galatians 4:4; Hebrews 2:14, 17). HIS divine nature also was complete (Isaiah 9:6; Psalm 45:6). Hence HE is called as GOD-MAN.

By HIS Virgin birth, our LORD JESUS CHRIST slaughtered Satan, the devil (Hebrews 2:14). Hence, Satan, the devil is the defeated foe and so there is no need for believers to be afraid of him. He only needs to be resisted (James 4:7). By HIS Virgin birth, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gives salvation from the fear of death. So, there is no need for believers to be afraid of death (I Corinthians 15:54-55). By HIS Virgin birth, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gives solution to the problem of sin. The Holy Bible says that JESUS CHRIST is the propitiation for our sin by HIS blood (Romans 3:25). By HIS Virgin birth, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is our source of help in temptation. Hence let us not get discouraged when we are tempted. HE is faithful to help us in our temptations (Hebrews 2:18). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the SON of GOD with the true nature of GOD or GOD having no genealogy (St. John 1:1; Exodus 3:14; Revelation 1:8, 11; 22:13; Psalm 90:2) and HE is also the SON of MAN with the true nature of GOD with the true human life and

human nature, having genealogy (St. John 1:14; St. Luke 3:23-38). The family of JESUS through Mary is mentioned in St. Luke 3:23-38. The family of Joseph (foster father of our LORD JESUS during HIS childhood when HE was in this world) is mentioned in St. Matthew 1:1-17. Both of these families were kingly families, the descendants of king David.

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is not only the SON of MAN and the SON of GOD or GOD the SON, but also HE is GOD the FATHER and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. Hence our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the SEED of the WOMAN is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the TRIUNE GOD (Isaiah 9:6; St. John 8:25; 10:30; 14:9; II Corinthians 3:17-18). Glory be to GOD!

## 2.2 THE FIRST COMING

The First Coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD had been foretold by HIS prophets many centuries in advance, the events about HIS sacred birth, about HIS mighty works and wondrous works HE would perform in this world, about HIS sufferings and death, about how HE would be laid in the grave and also about how HE would resurrect HIMSELF on the third day and many other things. Some important prophetic verses about HIM are given below:

*"...There shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre (Scepter) shall rise out of Israel, ..."*

Numbers 24:17

*"...THY throne, O GOD, is for ever and ever: a sceptre (scepter) of righteousness is the sceptre of THY Kingdom. THOU hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore GOD, even THY GOD, hath anointed THEE with the oil of gladness above THY fellows. And, THOU, LORD, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of THINE hands: They shall perish; but THOU remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment; And as a vesture shalt THOU fold them up, and they shall be changed: but THOU art the same, and THY years shall not fail."*

Hebrews 1:8-12

*"And leaving Nazareth, HE came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up."*

St. Matthew 4:13-16

*"But though HE had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on HIM: That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, LORD, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the LORD been revealed?"*

St. John 12:37-38

*"HE was oppressed, and HE was afflicted, yet HE opened not HIS mouth: HE is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so HE openeth not HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:7

*"And with HIM they crucify two thieves; the one on HIS right hand, and the other on HIS left. And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And HE was numbered with the transgressors."*

St. Mark 15:27-28

*"All they that see ME laugh ME to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, HE trusted on the LORD that HE would deliver HIM: let HIM deliver HIM, seeing HE delighted in HIM."*

Psalms 22:7-8

*"For even CHRIST pleased not HIMSELF; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached THEE fell on ME."*

Romans 15:3

*"And he (they) made HIS grave with the wicked, and with the rich in HIS death; because HE had done no violence, neither was any deceit in HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:9

*"...That CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that HE was buried, and that HE rose again the third day*

*according to the Scriptures."*

I Corinthians 15:3-4

The **greatest event in history** had happened! The CHRIST or the MESSIAH had been born! For ages the Jews or the Israelites had waited for this. When it finally happened, the Good News came to humble shepherds first (St. Luke 2:10-14). JESUS came to save or deliver us from sin and its consequences—sicknesses, hardships, hell (the second death), etc. We can't save ourselves and eliminate the sinful nature present in all of us. Only JESUS CHRIST—the infinite, unlimited GOD who took on the limitations of humanity, can do that.

The fall and sinfulness of mankind and the faithfulness, grace, righteousness, and love of GOD necessitated the First Coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Due to the fall and sinfulness of mankind, they cannot save or redeem themselves. One sinful man could not save or redeem the other from his/her sinfulness (Psalm 49:7).

Hence, there arose a need for GOD to save or redeem mankind. Man needs an external and internal and supernatural help for his redemption or salvation. Now, GOD could not redeem man if HE is GOD. But HE can redeem man only when HE becomes man. So, GOD became a sinless MAN by clothing HIMSELF with human flesh. HE did not inherit the fallen sinful nature because of HIS Virgin birth.

Thus, GOD became a sinless GOD as well as a sinless MAN—singly united LORD JESUS CHRIST, to take away our sin (I John 3:5). GOD's faithfulness and love is manifested when HE made sinless JESUS CHRIST to be sin for us (sin offering for us).

*"For HE hath made HIM to be sin (sin offering) for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of GOD in HIM."*

II Corinthians 5:21

JESUS CHRIST is sinless GOD as well as sinless MAN—singly united LORD JESUS CHRIST: 100% Divine as well as 100% Human.

*"For there is One GOD, ... the Man CHRIST JESUS."*

I Timothy 2:5

JESUS CHRIST came according to the flesh who is over all, the eternally blessed GOD (Romans 9:5; St. John 1:14).



*"...GOD was manifest in the flesh, ..."*

I Timothy 3:16

*"In the beginning was the WORD (GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST),  
..."*

St. John 1:1

*"...And the WORD (GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was GOD."*

St. John 1:1

*"And the WORD (GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was made  
flesh, ..."*

St. John 1: 14

Like ourselves, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was born of a woman, though born sinless in a miraculous manner by the Power of the HIGHEST, the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (St. Matthew 1:20; St. Luke 1:35). In order to redeem and save us, the sinners from sins, HE came into the world as the Man CHRIST JESUS (I Timothy 1:15; 2:4-6).

Like ourselves, JESUS CHRIST hungered, thirsted, ate, drank, slept, was wearied, felt pain, wept, rejoiced, marvelled, was moved to anger and compassion.

Like ourselves, JESUS CHRIST grew from infancy to boyhood and from boyhood to man's nature, both in wisdom and in stature (St. Luke 2:52). HE prayed, read the Holy Scriptures, suffered being tempted and submitted HIS human will to the will of GOD the FATHER. GOD the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

And finally, in the same human body, HE really suffered and shed HIS own blood—"the blood of GOD" (Acts 20:28) to purchase HIS church (Acts 20:28), really died, was really buried in a new sepulchre (tomb), **really rose again the third day with a glorious transformed body with all the scars of HIS wounds** (St. Luke 24:39; St. John 20:24-29), was really seen by HIS disciples and by others during 40 days, and really ascended up into heaven. And yet all these times, JESUS CHRIST was singly united GOD as well as MAN! Glory be to GOD!

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST only once appeared as a human being and only in the human form and not in various forms and not in any**

**strangeness or queerness to put away sin—to save us from sin** (Hebrews 9:26). The birth of JESUS CHRIST took place only once in the history. HE came into this world in 4 B.C. in Bethlehem. HE has appeared once for all. HE came to this world to save the wicked and not to destroy them; HE did not come to destroy the wicked but to preserve the righteous.

*“For the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. ...”*

St. Luke 9:56

Now, we think about the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST and thank HIM for the salvation that is made available to us freely, due to HIS birth. The reason behind the First Coming of JESUS CHRIST is the faithfulness and love of GOD. The result of the First Coming of JESUS CHRIST is the availability of eternal life as a gift for the mortal man. The requirement to appropriate the First Coming of JESUS CHRIST is the belief that JESUS saves sinners. St. John 3:16 deals with these facts about the First Coming of JESUS CHRIST.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF had come as a man to rescue and redeem not only the Jews or the Israelites or the Hebrews but the entire mankind. The main emphasis should be on, whoever believes in HIM is delivered from the clutches of sin. HIS terrible death on the cross wipes away completely all the guilt feelings; HIS resurrection offers us strength and eternal life. Thus HIS **First Coming** becomes the most **important event** in the history of the world.

### 2.3 CHRISTMAS

**Christmas brings out the eternal significance of the 'GOD-become-MAN' or 'the sinless GOD as well as the sinless MAN'—singly united LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST was the greatest event that ever happened. GOD's salvation plan revealed in Bethlehem in the Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST. The Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST brought inestimable blessings to the Jews or the Israelites and the Gentiles for ever and ever. Glory be to GOD!**

*“But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall HE come forth unto ME that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of*

*old, from everlasting."*

Micah 5:2

According to the prophecy of Micah, our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST would be born in Bethlehem. The Birthday of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is Christmas. The Christmas or the Christmas Day is celebrated throughout the world as a **very great and special event**. It is a festival of great happiness. No other event in this world is celebrated so sincerely, so specially and so merrily as Christmas is. There is no celebration like this for anyone else. This has been universally accepted.

The true spirit of Christmas is one of great joy and happiness. For Christians it is a special time of worship in the church. Many non-Christians also celebrate Christmas.

Christmas is celebrated on 25 December, the date of CHRIST's birth. Christmas season is the period that includes Christmas Day and several days before and after it. Christmassy means Christmas with a lot of Christmas decorations, etc. Christmas box is a small gift given at Christmas. Christmas cake is a richly decorated fruit cake eaten at Christmas. Christmas card is a greeting card sent to friends and relatives at Christmas. Christmas Eve is the day before Christmas, 24 December, the evening of this day. Christmas pudding is a rich sweet pudding made with dried fruit and eaten at Christmas. Christmas Carol means Christian religious songs sung at Christmas in a very cheerful way in houses, churches and public places. Christmas tree is an evergreen or artificial tree decorated with lights, colour paper, etc., in peoples' home or in churches or in public places at Christmas. But placing a baby doll or mother and child dolls or pictures as part of the decoration is prohibited, as this amounts to idol worship. Christmas is a very happy occasion to all. Christmas is a time for merriment and rejoicing to all. The season from Christmas Eve (December 24) until Epiphany (January 6) is called 'Christmastide' or 'Yuletide'.

It has now been about 2016 years since our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into this world of ours. The different periods of the history of the world are based on the date of HIS holy birth. The history of the world is divided into two as B.C. and A.D. based only on the year of the birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, it is the **greatest event**

**in history.** This fact confirms the birth of JESUS CHRIST in this world. The present year is 2016 A.D. B.C. means Before CHRIST. A.D. means Anno Domini. It means in the year of our LORD.

The Virgin birth of JESUS gives great joy to all people of the world. HIS Virgin birth creates great praise among the angels. HIS Virgin birth gives great glory to GOD in the highest. GOD in the highest is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Due to HIS Virgin birth, GOD's peace and good will are extended to all people of the world. HIS human life that began in a manger signifies HIS despised state and lowest estate and smallness in lowliness and poverty. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And the angel said unto them (the shepherds), Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David (Bethlehem) a Saviour, which is CHRIST the LORD. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising GOD, and saying, Glory to GOD in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men."*

St. Luke 2:10-14

Historically, Christmas (December 25) is considered to be the day of **the Feast of the Dedication** during winter (St. John 10:22), known as Hanukkah or Chanukkah, **the Festival of Lights**—the day on which the altar and the temple at Jerusalem were cleansed and restored by Judas Maccabeus, a strong man of Judah in 165 B.C., after their desecration and defilement by Antiochus Epiphanes, the king of Syria, three years earlier. This sacred feast began on December 25 and lasted eight consecutive days of rejoicing to celebrate the great achievement of the cleansing and restoration of the altar and the temple. Jewish tradition records that the oil lamps that were lit as part of this celebration had only one day's supply of oil, but miraculously burned for eight days. This annual feast was marked by the lighting of candles and the waving of the palm branches and the chanting of the Hallel (Psalms 113-118). Since this feast was intended as a time of great rejoicing, all fasting and public mourning were prohibited. Now, Christmas is also intended as a time of great rejoicing to all

people (St. Luke 2:10-14). Formerly, Christmas was called the Feast of Light.

On the Festival of Lights, **the FATHER of lights** (James 1:17)—our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the Light of the World and our Light of Life (St. John 8:12) was born. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 2.4 WHAT THE LORD JESUS GAVE UP

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up the following things for the benefit of mankind and come into the world to save mankind.

1. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

*"HE that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: ..."*

Psalm 2:4

2. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own throne.

*"...The LORD's throne is in heaven: ..."*

Psalm 11:4

3. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own crowns.

*"HIS eyes were as a flame of fire, and on HIS head were many crowns; and HE had a name written, that no man knew, but HE HIMSELF."*

Revelation 19:12

4. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own dominion over HIS own kingdom.

*"The LORD is King for ever and ever: ..."*

Psalm 10:16

*"THY kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and THY dominion endureth throughout all generations."*

Psalm 145:13

5. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own powers and authorities.

*"And JESUS came and spake unto them, saying, All power is*

*given unto ME in heaven and in earth."*

St. Matthew 28:18

6. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own Majesty on the most high.

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, when HE had by HIMSELF purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high."*

Hebrews 1:3

7. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own reputation.

*"Who, being in the form of GOD, thought it not robbery to be equal with GOD: But made HIMSELF of no reputation, and took upon HIM the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, HE humbled HIMSELF, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross."*

Philippians 2:6-8

8. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own greatness and honour.

*"Bless the LORD, O my soul. O LORD my GOD, THOU art very great; THOU art clothed with honour and majesty."*

Psalms 104:1

9. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own riches and HE was born in a cowshed.

*"For ye know the grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, that, though HE was rich, yet for your sakes HE became poor, that ye through HIS poverty might be rich."*

II Corinthians 8:9

10. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own eternal house, not built by hands but by GOD.

*"For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of GOD, an house not made with*

*hands, eternal in the heavens."*

II Corinthians 5:1

11. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own glorious garment.

*"Who coverest THYSELF with light as with a garment: ..."*

Psalm 104:2

12. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own beauty and comeliness.

*"THOU art fairer than the children of men: ..."*

Psalm 45:2

*"For how great is HIS goodness, and how great is HIS beauty!  
..."*

Zechariah 9:17

*"...HE hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see HIM,  
there is no beauty that we should desire HIM."*

Isaiah 53:2

13. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own comfort and ease.

*"But HE was wounded for our transgressions, HE was bruised  
for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon HIM;  
and with HIS stripes we are healed."*

Isaiah 53:5

14. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own delight and joy.

*"Then I was by HIM, as one brought up with HIM: and I was  
daily HIS delight, rejoicing always before HIM."*

Proverbs 8:30

*"HE is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and  
acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from HIM;  
HE was despised, and we esteemed HIM not. Surely HE hath  
borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem HIM  
stricken, smitten of GOD, and afflicted."*

Isaiah 53:3-4

15. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given up HIS own glorious heavenly body and come with a fleshly body.

*"...GOD was manifest in the flesh, ..."*

I Timothy 3:16

HE came into the world with the name 'EMMANUEL'. 'EMMANUEL' means 'GOD with us'. Thus the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came into the world to be with HIS people.

## 2.5 REASONS FOR COMING INTO THE WORLD

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gave up the above things and came into the world to destroy sin and the sinful works initiated by Satan, the devil (I John 3:8). Through HIS divine birth, we receive the divine life in CHRIST (I John 5:11-12), the divine fellowship in CHRIST (I John 1:3-7), the divine light of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I John 1:5-7), the anointing of the divine HOLY SPIRIT (I John 2:20), the divine abiding in CHRIST (I John 3:24), the divine will of GOD (I John 2:17), the divine righteousness and the divine holiness (Ephesians 4:24), the divine love of GOD (I John 4:8; St. John 3:16-17), the divine living according to the divine truth (I John 1:6) and the divine glory of GOD (Romans 3:23).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came into the world to give the following blessings also to mankind.

1. To give to mankind the kingdom of GOD, prepared for them (St. Matthew 25:34).
2. To give to mankind a share in HIS throne.

*"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with ME in MY throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with MY FATHER in HIS throne."*

Revelation 3:21

3. To give the crown of eternal life to mankind, in the kingdom of GOD. This crown of glory will never fade away; it is the crown of life; it is the crown of righteousness. See I Peter 5:4; James 1:12; II Timothy 4:8.



4. To give the reign and authority to mankind, in the kingdom of GOD.

*"If we suffer, we shall also reign with HIM: if we deny HIM, HE also will deny us."*

II Timothy 2:12

5. To give the dominion over the rest of creation to mankind, that had lost it.

*"THOU madest him to have dominion over the works of THY hands; THOU hast put all things under his feet."*

Psalm 8:6

6. To give the glory to mankind, that had lost it.

*"And the glory which THOU gavest ME I have given them; ..."*

St. John 17:22

7. To give back the richness of GOD to mankind, that had lost it (II Corinthians 8:9).

8. To give the comeliness and beauty of GOD's image to mankind who had lost their comeliness and beauty (Genesis 1:27; Psalm 45:2; Isaiah 53:2).

9. To give back the honour and glory to mankind, that was lost.

*"For THOU hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour."*

Psalm 8:5

10. To give abundant joy to all the people of the world (St. Luke 2:10-11).

11. To give comfort, health and peace to mankind, that had lost their comfort, health and peace (Isaiah 53:5; St. John 14:27). GOD the FATHER is the GOD of All Comfort (II Corinthians 1:3). Our comfort (consolation) also abounds by CHRIST, GOD the SON (II Corinthians 1:5). GOD the HOLY SPIRIT is also our **Comforter and HE always gives us HIS comfort and HE teaches and counsels and brings to mind all that JESUS has said (St. John 14:26).**

12. To give the highest position and authority to mankind, that lost their high position and became wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked (Psalm 82:6; Revelation 3:17).
13. To give us HIS own flesh, the bread of life, the living bread (St. John 6:48-51, 53-58).
14. To worship GOD the FATHER in Spirit and in truth, in all places. GOD the FATHER is our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (St. John 4:21-24).
15. To make us known the things of GOD by the SPIRIT of GOD (I Corinthians 2:11).
16. To humble (subdue) the pride of man (Philippians 2:7-8).
17. To exalt the grace of GOD in redemption through HIS blood, the forgiveness of sins (Ephesians 1:7).
18. To exalt the grace of GOD in salvation from sins (Ephesians 2:7-8).
19. To give HIS holiness in heart and life (St. John 8:46; Leviticus 20:8).
20. To give us HIS own blood, the drink of life, the living drink (St. John 6:53-58).
21. To give us HIS own life (St. Luke 23:46).
22. To give us HIS HOLY SPIRIT, the living water (St. John 7:37-39).
23. To give us HIS living soul (Genesis 2:7; St. Mark 8:36-37).
24. To give a complete revelation of GOD the FATHER (St. John 1:14-18; 10:30; 14:9).
25. To fulfil the Law and prophecies (St. Matthew 5:17; St. Luke 24:44; I Peter 1:10-12).
26. To die for our sins and bring us back to GOD (I Peter 3:18).
27. To reconcile and make peace with GOD (II Corinthians 5:18-21; Ephesians 2:15-16; Colossians 1:19-20).
28. To become our High Priest (Hebrews 7:24-28).

29. To become our example (Philippians 2:4-8; I Peter 2:21-23).
30. To do GOD's will (Hebrews 10:5-9).
31. To redeem us and adopt as sons (Galatians 4:4-5).
32. To make us complete (Colossians 1:9-11).
33. To give HIMSELF as ransom for all (I Timothy 2:5-6).
34. To redeem us from the fear of death (Hebrews 2:14-15).
35. To deliver us from the power of the flesh (Romans 8:1-4).
36. To believe that JESUS is the CHRIST, the SON OF GOD and by believing we may have eternal life through HIS name (I John 5:20; St. John 3:16; 20:31).
37. To show GOD's surpassing love for mankind (St. John 3:16; I John 3:16).
38. To demonstrate GOD's righteousness, holiness and grace (Romans 3:21; Hebrews 7:26; Psalm 86:5).
39. To destroy Satan, the devil (Hebrews 2:14-15).
40. To make propitiation for our sins (Hebrews 2:14, 17; 9:26; Romans 3:25; I John 2:2; 3:5; 4:10).
41. To help us when we are tempted (Hebrews 2:14, 18).
42. To bring into effect the new covenant (St. Matthew 26:26-28; Hebrews 13:20).
43. To enable us to come boldly to the throne of grace to obtain mercy (Hebrews 4:15-16).
44. To become our Mediator (I Timothy 2:5).
45. To become our Advocate (I John 2:1).
46. To die as a substitute for us, the sinners and to pay the penalty of sin (Romans 5:8; I Peter 3:18; Isaiah 53:5).
47. To bring us to, or give us access to GOD, by opening the new and living way to GOD through the veil, that is, HIS flesh (I Peter 3:18; Hebrews 10:19-20).

48. To show GOD's faithfulness and mercies for mankind (Lamentations 3:22-23; I John 1:9; I Peter 4:19; II Timothy 2:13).
49. To be with us to reveal HIS divinity (Isaiah 7:14; St. Matthew 1:23; 3:16-17; 17:1-8; St. John 8:46).
50. To be a GOD-MAN to save us (Isaiah 9:6; St. Matthew 1:21).
51. To reveal HIS ministry (St. Matthew 20:28).
52. To be an example to GOD's ministers (St. Matthew 19:10-12; St. Mark 10:28-30; St. Luke 14:26-27, 33).
53. To preach the Gospel of the kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. That is, to preach the Gospel of GOD's salvation (St. Matthew 4:23; Psalm 96:2).
54. To heal the sick by taking up our infirmities and bearing our sicknesses (St. Matthew 8:1-17).
55. To reveal the terrible dangers of sin (St. Matthew 12:36-37; St. Mark 7:20-23; St. John 5:14; 8:11).
56. To reveal the preciousness of our soul (St. Mark 8:36-37).
57. To reveal the importance of repentance from sins (St. Matthew 4:17; St. Luke 15:7, 10).
58. To reveal the importance of forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins (St. Luke 7:47-50).
59. To teach us to ask for the HOLY SPIRIT and to receive the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Luke 11:9-13).
60. To call us to HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 6:33; St. Mark 1:15).
61. To teach us to do the will of GOD and to teach us to be born-again (converted) as a newborn child, characterized by all spiritual fruits to enter into HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 7:21; 18:3; St. John 3:3, 5).
62. To depict HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 13:43-50; St. Luke 13:28-29).

63. To depict HIS Secret Coming to catch up with HIM, HIS glorious church of the saints (St. Matthew 25:1-13; St. Luke 17:34-36).
58. To depict HIS terrible Second Coming (St. Matthew 16:27; 24:30-31; 25:31).
59. To depict HIS terrible judgment to sinners (St. Matthew 25:31-46).
60. To bring a division between GOD's people and Satan's people. The saved (GOD's people) will be separated from the unsaved (Satan's people) and the unsaved will be separated from the saved (St. Luke 12:51-53).
61. To depict the most horrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur to sinners (St. Matthew 8:12; 22:13; 25:41, 46; St. Mark 9:43-48; St. Luke 16:23-24).
62. To give the blissful **paradise**, the place of rest of the souls of saints in the third heaven (II Corinthians 12:2-4) to HIS Old Testament saints (I Samuel 28:3-20; Daniel 12:2) and New Testament saints (St. Luke 23:43).
63. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to seek and to save what was lost (St. Luke 19:10).
64. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to call sinners to repentance.

*"I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."*

St. Luke 5:32

65. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to save sinners. HE came to the world to redeem sinners (Isaiah 49:26). HE has power (authority) to forgive sins.

*"...CHRIST JESUS came into the world to save sinners; ..."*

I Timothy 1:15

*"But that ye may know that the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath power on earth to forgive sins,"*

St. Mark 2:10

66. **Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to offer us HIS salvation from sins that leads to eternal life. So, everyone should accept this very great offer.** HE came to the world to give full life (eternal life) to all the people of this world.

*"...I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."*

St. John 10:10

67. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to bear witness to the truth. Everyone who is of the truth hears HIS voice (St. John 18:37).

68. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to sanctify us through HIS truth. HE came to the world to make us holy through HIS truth. HE came to the world to set us apart for HIS sacred purposes through HIS truth.

*"Sanctify them through THY truth: THY Word is truth."*

St. John 17:17

69. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST did not come to the world to be served, but to serve, and to give HIS life a ransom for sinners of the world. HE came to the world to set an example for the servants of GOD in word, in conduct, in love, in Spirit, in faith, in purity, in righteousness, in decency, in orderliness, in good works, in truthfulness, in faithfulness, in reproof, etc.

*"Even as the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give HIS life a ransom for many."*

St. Matthew 20:28

70. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to cleanse and wash us from all sin.

*"...The blood of JESUS CHRIST HIS SON cleanseth us from all sin."*

I John 1:7

*"...Ye are washed, ... in the name of the LORD JESUS, and by the Spirit of our GOD."*

I Corinthians 6:11

71. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to purchase (acquire) HIS holy church. This church is the congregation of the saved.

*"...The church of GOD, which HE hath purchased with HIS own blood."*

Acts 20:28

*"...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be saved (those who were being saved)."*

Acts 2:47

72. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to baptize HIS people with the HOLY SPIRIT or the Spirit of Fire. HE came to the world to anoint HIS people with the HOLY SPIRIT or the Spirit of Fire.

*"...HE shall baptize you with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) and with fire."*

St. Luke 3:16

*"But the anointing which ye have received of HIM abideth in you, ..."*

I John 2:27

73. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to the world to send the HOLY SPIRIT or the Spirit of Fire. HE came to the world for the great and wonderful works of the HOLY SPIRIT throughout the world, like a fire burning with great and high flames.

*"I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened (distressed) till it be accomplished!"*

St. Luke 12:49-50

By saying What will I? Our LORD JESUS is exclaiming, 'How I wish it were already kindled!' **'A baptism to be baptized with'** refers to HIS **horrible death on the cross at Calvary.**

74. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to bring peace upon the whole world. HE **came to give HIS own unshakeable peace to us.**

*"Peace I leave with you, MY peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled,*

*neither let it be afraid."*

St. John 14:27

### **3 . SELF REVELATIONS**

#### **3.1 JESUS IS GOD, THE FATHER**

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to the Jews,

*"...Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I AM HE, ye shall die in your sins."*

St. John 8:23-24

Then the Jews asked JESUS,

*"...Who art THOU? (Who are YOU?)"*

St. John 8:25

And JESUS said to the Jews,

*"...Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning."*

St. John 8:25

But, the Jews could not understand HIS reply.

*"They understood not that HE spake (spoke) to them of the FATHER."*

St. John 8:27

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER. But the Jews did not understand that HE is GOD the FATHER; and they did not believe in JESUS, since they were of this world and their spiritual preparation was inadequate.

#### **3.2 GOOD SHEPHERD**

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to the Jews,

*"I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth HIS life for the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth*



*not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know MY sheep, and am known of MINE. As the FATHER knoweth ME, even so know I the FATHER: and I lay down MY life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear MY voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd."*

St. John 10:11-16

'Hireling' means 'hired man'. The other sheep are the Gentiles.

### **The Good Shepherd gives HIS life for the sheep (St. John 10:11).**

A hireling will flee in time of personal danger, since he is working for money. He is not the shepherd who owns the sheep. He loves not the sheep and he cares nothing for the sheep.

"The LORD is my shepherd; ..." Psalm 23:1 reveals that JESUS CHRIST, The Good Shepherd is the LORD GOD. HE laid down HIS most glorious life for us (for the sheep), on the cross at Calvary.

### **3.3 DOOR**

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to the Jews,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. I am the door: by ME if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."*

St. John 10:7, 9-10

'But' means 'except'.

Door is the one who stands in the opening of the fold (fenced-in area). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST stands always in the opening of the fold for the protection of HIS sheep.

### **3.4 BREAD OF LIFE**

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to the Jews,

*"I am the bread of life: he that cometh to ME shall never hunger; and he that believeth on ME shall never thirst. Verily,*

*verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on ME hath everlasting life. I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is MY flesh, which I will give for the life of the world."*

St. John 6:35, 47-51

"I am the bread of life" means the bread that gives eternal life to HIS people.

### 3.5 TRUE VINE

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to the Jews,

*"I am the true vine, and MY FATHER is the husbandman. Every branch in ME that beareth not fruit HE taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, HE purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the Word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in ME, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in ME. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in ME, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without ME ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in ME, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in ME, and MY Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is MY FATHER glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be MY disciples. As the FATHER hath loved ME, so have I loved you: continue ye in MY love."*

St. John 15:1-9

'Husbandman' means 'gardener'. 'Purgeth' means 'prunes'. 'Continue' means 'abide'.

In these verses, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has explained the divine-human relationship by the analogy of a grapevine. HE has used the image of the vine and its branches to describe HIS divine union with HIS believers. JESUS is like the main vine and HIS disciples or HIS believers are compared with branches. The true Christian experience of

the believers of CHRIST comes from their divine union with CHRIST, CHRIST being in HIS believers and HIS believers in CHRIST.

### 3.6 RESURRECTION AND LIFE

A man named Lazarus was sick. He was from Bethany. Mary and Martha were his sisters. His sisters sent word to JESUS,

*“LORD, behold, he whom THOU lovest is sick.”*

St. John 11:3

When JESUS heard that Lazarus was sick, HE stayed where HE was two more days. Then HE went and performed one of HIS greatest miracles—resurrection. Lazarus was raised from the dead after **four** days of his death. Four days sorrow and sadness and grief turned into joy and happiness. The resurrection of Lazarus gave HIM glory and renown. Glory be to GOD!

In Palestine, burial took place on the day of death. The poor were buried in cemeteries (II Kings 23:6). But, Lazarus was buried in a tomb (St. John 11:38). The possession of a private tomb (a private cave) by the family of Lazarus is an indication of wealth.

Now, when we read the Gospel according to St. John, Chapter 11, we very well learn that our LORD JESUS' delay in coming to Lazarus' house is not destitution (verse 4), nor desertion (verse 6) nor denial (verse 7).

#### **DIVINE LOVE SOMETIMES LINGERS AND WE SHOULD WAIT WHEN GOD WAITS.**

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS' divine love towards Lazarus is clearly seen in St. John 11:35-36.

We should deeply and fully understand this **Seventh miracle** in St. John—the occasion (verses 1-16), the approach to it (verses 17-32), performance (verses 33-44) and consequences (verses 45-57).

**This is the last and the greatest 'signs' recorded.** This Gospel is related with photographic minuteness of detail that it is clear that the apostle John was present on this occasion. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, before going to Bethany, JESUS said to HIS disciples plainly,

*"Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him."*

St. John 11:14-15

When JESUS and HIS disciples came to Bethany, they found that Lazarus had already been dead and been in the tomb for four days. Martha, the sister of Lazarus said to JESUS,

*"LORD, if THOU hadst been here, my brother had not (would not have) died. But I know, that even now, whatsoever THOU wilt ask of GOD, GOD will give it THEE."*

St. John 11:21-22

Then JESUS said to Martha,

*"Thy brother shall rise again."*

St. John 11:23

Martha answered,

*"I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day."*

St. John 11:24

JESUS said to Martha,

*"I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in ME, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in ME shall never die. Believest thou this?"*

St. John 11:25-26

**JESUS is the resurrection and the life.** HE conveys HIS eternal life to HIS believers so that death will never triumph over them (I Corinthians 15:54-57).

Martha told HIM,

*"Yea, LORD: I believe that THOU art the CHRIST, the SON OF GOD, which should come into the world."*

St. John 11:27

Then Mary, another sister of Lazarus came to JESUS and fell down at HIS feet and said,

*"LORD, if THOU hadst been here, my brother had not (would not have) died."*

St. John 11:32

Many Jews who had come to comfort Mary and Martha were there. JESUS groaned in the spirit and was troubled and asked,

*"Where have ye laid him?"*

St. John 11:34

They replied,

*"LORD, come and see."*

St. John 11:34

JESUS wept and HE again groaned in HIMSELF and came to the grave (tomb). It was a cave with a stone laid across the entrance.

JESUS said,

*"Take ye away the stone."*

St. John 11:39

Martha said to JESUS,

*"LORD, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days."*

St. John 11:39

'Stink' means 'have a very unpleasant and offensive smell (very bad odour)'.

Then JESUS said to Martha,

*"Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of GOD?"*

St. John 11:40

Then they took away the stone. Then JESUS lifted up HIS eyes and said,

*"FATHER, I thank THEE that THOU hast heard ME. And I knew that THOU hearest ME always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that THOU hast sent ME."*

St. John 11:41-42

And when HE said this, JESUS cried with a loud voice,

*"Lazarus, come forth (come out)."*

St. John 11:43

The dead man came out; his hands and feet were wrapped with grave-clothes and his face was wrapped with a napkin.

JESUS said to them,

*"Loose him, and let him go."*

St. John 11:44

They loosed him and he went with HIM. Then many of the Jews who had seen what JESUS did, put their faith in HIM. See St. John 11:1-45.

### 3.7 THE WAY AND THE TRUTH AND THE LIFE

When HE was in this world, our LORD JESUS CHRIST said,

*"I am the way, the truth, and the life: ..."*

St. John 14:6

HE clearly reveals HIMSELF as the sinless holy GOD who alone can forgive sins; the holy GOD and Saviour who alone can save people from sins; and that no one can go to heaven without HIM. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the only way to go to heaven; HE is the truth to go to heaven; HE is the life to go to heaven. Christianity is also called "the Way" or "the Way of CHRIST" and "the Truth" or "the Truth of CHRIST" and "the Life" or "the eternal Life of CHRIST".

When HE was in the world HE asked with a perfectly pure conscience,

*"Which of you convinceth (convicts) ME of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe ME?"*

St. John 8:46

### 3.8 LIGHT OF THE WORLD

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Light of the world. HE is the ever-bright and ever-glowing Light, shining in the darkness (St. John 1:4-5). HE offers the gift of life.

*"Then spake JESUS again unto them, saying, I am the Light of*

*the world: he that followeth ME shall not walk in darkness (sin), but shall have the light of life."*

St. John 8:12

### 3.9 MASTER FROM HEAVEN

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the only Master. HE is the Master from heaven. HE is our heavenly Master.

*"Neither be ye called masters: for One is your Master, even CHRIST."*

St. Matthew 23:10

*"The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord (master)."*

St. Matthew 10:24

### 3.10 MODEL OF GOD'S SERVANTS

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE also revealed that HE was the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and HE was the omnipotent and omnipresent and omniscient GOD and the all wise and the Most High GOD.

HE suffered hunger and thirst for humanity. HE bore great sufferings in HIS own body for humanity. HE was a GOD of great sacrifice. HE observed fastings and suffered difficulties and afflictions. HE adopted a strict celibate lifestyle. HE lived as a divine sage and hermit. HE grew beard as the symbol of a hermit. HE had twelve disciples. They also were hermits and sages and served the LORD. HE came into this world as the Saviour of sinners and as a model for GOD's servants. HE worked also as a model of GOD's servants. Following HIS model, HIS servants too serve GOD as dedicated hermits.

*"Even as the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give HIS life a ransom for many."*

St. Matthew 20:28

*"I gave MY back to the smiters, and MY cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not MY face from shame and spitting."*

Isaiah 50:6

## 4. GLORIOUS LIFE IN THIS WORLD

### 4.1 DIVINE HUMILITY AT BIRTH

The Jews or the Israelites expected the LORD to be born in their community, in the palace of kings. They expected HIM to be their worldly king. Therefore, many Jews had not understood the Words of the LORD, spoken many centuries in advance, through HIS prophets that the LORD would be born in Bethlehem. See Micah 5:2.

The LORD JESUS CHRIST was born in acute poverty in a cowshed and without a place to lay HIS head. HE was wrapped in rags and laid in the manger.

*“And she brought forth her firstborn SON, and wrapped HIM in swaddling clothes, and laid HIM in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.”*

St. Luke 2:7

HIS birth reveals HIS great and divine humility. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was born in such a great humility to lift up the people who were vulgarly lowered by their sins and to give them the most supreme life in heaven.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE said,

*“Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath not where (nowhere) to lay HIS head.”*

St. Luke 9:58

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE had nothing of HIS own and HE had nowhere to lay HIS head. HE had no land of HIS own; HE had no house or shelter; HE had no dress of HIS own (St. Luke 2:7); HE had no food or water of HIS own (St. John 4:7-8). HE was in acute poverty. For our sake, HE became poor so that we through HIS poverty might become eternally rich (II Corinthians 8:9).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, though eternally in possession of the divine nature of GOD, did not regard HIS own heavenly existence or divine lifestyle as important but HE emptied HIMSELF. HE emptied HIMSELF by veiling HIS glory and taking on HIMSELF a true and



sinless human nature. At all times, CHRIST remained GOD. HE retained always the nature and attributes of GOD, and HE took a human nature. Therefore, HE took a human body, and ministered and served among men, and finally HE gave HIS most glorious life a ransom for sinners of the world.

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST emptying HIMSELF, assumed a servant's or slave's nature and appeared in the likeness of men; and being found in the appearance as a man, HE humbled HIMSELF and became obedient unto death, even death by crucifixion.

Further, before establishing the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, our LORD JESUS CHRIST washed the feet of HIS disciples, and wiped them with the towel that was wrapped round HIM. This shows HIS true humility. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST washed and wiped HIS disciples' feet or HIS servants' feet, like a servant or slave. People are caught by pride, the evil character of Satan, the devil. To save and redeem us from this evil character of Satan, our LORD JESUS CHRIST took this humility.

Moreover, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has eternally possessed the very nature of GOD. To possess the very nature of GOD is to be GOD. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. Again, to possess the very nature of GOD is to be equal with GOD the FATHER and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is equal with GOD the FATHER and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. So, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of TRINITY, and HE is the TRIUNE GOD, and HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

Besides, our LORD JESUS CHRIST decided not to continue enjoying HIS heavenly existence. HE assumed a servant's or slave's position and appeared in the likeness of men. Consequently, due to HIS outward appearance, many people recognized HIM as a mere man. But HE was still the SON OF GOD or GOD the SON, possessing the divine nature of GOD. That is, at all times, HE remained GOD. At all times, HE remained GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. At all times, HE remained GOD, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Furthermore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST willingly gave up HIS divine existence with all its benefits and advantages, for the sinners. HE considered sinners as more important than HIMSELF. HE concerned HIMSELF with their needs and HE gave more importance to their needs than to HIS own affairs.

So, HIS name has been highly exalted by GOD the FATHER. The name that is above all others is 'JESUS'. JESUS' name is more excellent than every other name and JESUS' name is the highest and the greatest of all names. Hence, every being in heaven and on earth and under the earth should submit to HIM. In the most holy name of JESUS, every knee should bow and every tongue should confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD, to the glory of GOD the FATHER. Therefore, all must have a universal submission before our LORD JESUS CHRIST; all must have a universal confession that JESUS CHRIST is LORD, that is, GOD. All must acknowledge HIM LORD, that is, GOD. Thus, the glorification of 'JESUS' is the glorification of GOD the FATHER, for HIS honour; and the glorification of 'JESUS' is the glorification of GOD the SON, for HIS honour; and the glorification of 'JESUS' is the glorification of GOD the HOLY SPIRIT, for HIS honour; and the glorification of 'JESUS' is the glorification of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, for HIS honour. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Who, being in the form of GOD, thought it not robbery to be equal with GOD: But made HIMSELF of no reputation, and took upon HIM the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion (appearance) as a man, HE humbled HIMSELF, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore GOD also hath highly exalted HIM, and given HIM a name which is above every name: That at the name of JESUS every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD, to the glory of GOD the FATHER.”*

Philippians 2:6-11

Here ‘things’ means ‘those’.

## 4.2 VISIT OF THE WISE MEN (VISIT OF THE MAGI)

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD was born in Bethlehem, a wonderfully brilliant star of the LORD and of great significance and glory appeared in the sky. This star, being a star of the first magnitude was clearly visible to the people of India. The star was different from other stars in its size, brightness and clearness. It was very low in the sky, so that everyone could see it. It was a lovely as well as an awe-inspiring sight.

Many scattered Jews or the Israelites were living at that time in India, which is in the east of the country of Israel. The Jews had told the Indians that their only glorious GOD would be born into this world as MESSIAH or MESSIAS. 'MESSIAH' or 'MESSIAS' means 'CHRIST'. They had told them also about many wonders and miracles that would be performed by HIM.

At that time, there lived three wise men in India, which is in the east of Jerusalem in Israel (St. Matthew 2:1-2). They were also astronomers and great men. They had mastered Hindu writings and all other classical and traditional writings and lived as Hindus. But, they had no peace of mind. They heard about the Jews/the Israelites and came to know about their Holy Writings of the LORD, the Old Testament of the Holy Bible. Then, they enquired about this Holy Book and came to know about their MESSIAH or CHRIST and about many wonders and miracles that would be performed by HIM. They staunchly believed these facts. They received the Old Testament Books of the Holy Bible from them and studied them thoroughly, after studying Hebrews, the language of the Jews/the Israelites thoroughly. Then, they were anxiously waiting for the LORD to be born in the world. They had staunchly believed the Virgin birth and the divine coming of MESSIAH or CHRIST; and they were very eager to see and worship the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Mainly the following Verses of the Old Testament of the Holy Bible gave them a staunch belief about MESSIAH or CHRIST:

*“And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; IT (HE) shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise HIS heel.”*

'IT' means 'the seed, the offspring'. IT denotes the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...There shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre (Scepter) shall rise out of Israel, ..."*

Numbers 24:17

*"The LORD thy GOD will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto HIM ye shall hearken."*

Deuteronomy 18:15

*"Therefore the LORD HIMSELF shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a SON, and shall call HIS name IMMANUEL."*

Isaiah 7:14

'IMMANUEL' or 'EMMANUEL' means 'GOD with us'. EMMANUEL implies GOD in the Person of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace."*

Isaiah 9:6

*"But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall HE come forth unto ME that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting."*

Micah 5:2

*"HE is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from HIM; HE was despised, and we esteemed HIM not. Surely HE hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem HIM stricken, smitten of GOD, and afflicted. But HE was wounded for our transgressions, HE was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon HIM; and with HIS stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on HIM the iniquity of us all. HE was oppressed, and HE was afflicted, yet HE opened not HIS mouth: HE is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep*

*before her shearers is dumb, so HE openeth not HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:3-7

*"And after threescore and two weeks shall MESSIAH be cut off, but not for HIMSELF: ..."*

Daniel 9:26

'Be cut off' means 'Suffer the death penalty'.

*"And he (they) made HIS grave with the wicked, and with the rich in HIS death; because HE had done no violence, neither was any deceit in HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:9

The three wise men were astronomers, and they were great teachers or masters of three great kings in India in those days. The teacher of the king had his own throne on the right side of the king's throne. When his teacher takes his seat, the king would rise from his throne and bow to him in respect. The king would sit on his throne only after his teacher had sat on his throne. The king would also worship the feet of his teacher. Thus the wise men who were also astronomers, were men greater than the kings. They were great teachers of kings. They were counsellors to the kings. They were not ordinary men. They were great men of wisdom and knowledge. They were greatly respected and they were such a great people that they even crowned the kings. The kings obeyed their words and did everything according to their advice. But, they had no peace of mind.

When the wise men happened to leave for a distant place, their old footwears would be placed at the foot of their thrones as a means to remember them. In the absence of their teachers, the kings used to bow to their old footwears. This was their custom. These three astronomers were thus great men. They were sages and hermits.

When a teacher of a king was returning from a journey within their country, the king would rise up and shower flowers on his feet and kissed his feet and worshipped him. This was their custom. When a teacher of a king was returning from a long journey to a far country, immediately the security guard of the king would inform the matter to the king. The king would inform it to the queen. When the teacher was coming at a certain distance, the king and the queen would go

and fall on his feet and worship him. This was their custom. Then, the teacher would go before the king and the queen. Thus, the wise men were very great men. But, they had no peace of mind.

The three wise men (astronomers) were also great men and royal in their dignity. As evidence of their royal dignity, they went to Jerusalem, the royal capital of Israel and naturally met the king Herod in his palace and spoke to him. The three royal visitors asked Herod, the king, in the language of the Jews,

*"Where is HE that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen HIS star in the east, and are come to worship HIM."*

St. Matthew 2:2

This event reveals the fact that even Herod, the king had not known the birth of CHRIST because the LORD had hidden it to Herod. Herod, the king came to know of the birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST only after the three wise men had enquired about the birth of our LORD. If these three wise men had been ordinary men and if they had not known the language of the Jews, they would never have dared go to the royal residence or meet the king or speak to him. If they had been ordinary men, they would have gone only to ordinary people to enquire about the birth of CHRIST. It is a common fact that ordinary people would try to know things only from ordinary people. We can very well assume also that the three wise men carried royal letters from their respective kings. Well prepared for their long journey, the three wise men walked in total safety, provided by their wisdom. Therefore, their entry into the palace and gaining an appointment with the king were easy things for them. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

These three wise astronomers used to observe the changes and appearances in the sky everyday. They learned many things from their observations. When they were observing the sky as usual, they saw a wonderful and miraculous new star in the sky, on the very day it appeared. The star was lower in the sky than the other stars. Its brightness was impressive. Its appearance was wonderful and extraordinary. On seeing this wonderful and special star, the wise men understood clearly with their great wisdom that the MESSIAS or CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD was born in the world. At once, the

three wise men informed their respective kings about the birth of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. They informed their kings also about their journey to the country of Israel for worshipping the LORD and they set off for the country of Israel. The LORD was merciful to the wise men for their great desire, eagerness, wish, longing and thirst. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The three wise men set off on their journey to worship the LORD Most High, the Creator of all things. They took with them gold, frankincense, and myrrh as offerings to the LORD. The offerings of these three things reveal their great wisdom. Gold is for kings; frankincense is for GOD and myrrh is for the dead. The offerings made by the wise men are symbols of their faith, hope and belief that JESUS CHRIST, the glorious King and glorious GOD of heaven, the LORD MESSIAS would suffer for the sinners and would be laid in the grave. The three wise men went to Israel on foot from India, to worship the LORD with fear and humility. To reach Israel they walked for about two years. To reach Israel they made a very long and hard trek. To reach Israel they made a very long and difficult journey on foot.

The evidence for the fact that the three wise men (astronomers) walked for two years to reach Jerusalem is found in the sorrowful event given below. The king Herod's vicious plan was to know from the wise men, the place where CHRIST was and to murder HIM. Therefore, he called the wise men secretly and enquired them about the time the star appeared. He sent them to Bethlehem cunningly asking them to go and worship CHRIST, the child and to inform him so as to enable him to go and worship the child. The three wise men went to Bethlehem and worshipped CHRIST. Then GOD warned them in a dream not to return to Herod. Therefore, they took another route to India, their native land. When Herod came to know what the wise men had done to him, his rage was kindled. Calculating the date, the star appeared in the east, Herod sent his men and cruelly slaughtered all male children at Bethlehem and around it who were two years of age and under. This event clearly proves the truth that the wise men had to walk for two years to reach the country of Israel.

They walked such a great distance to worship the LORD because they had the knowledge that their sufferings would bring them

immense blessings from the LORD. Though they were men greater than their kings, their knowledge about the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and their godliness, fear of GOD and their humility were remarkable and appreciable and unparalleled in the history of the world.

When the three wise men were walking towards Israel, the star of the LORD that appeared on the day the LORD was born in the world guided them in great brightness in a low altitude. When they saw the star, they were filled with astonishment, thrill and joy and they journeyed admiring the wonderful way the LORD guided them. The guiding star at last stood above the place where JESUS CHRIST was as a child.

They rejoiced to see the star stand still. They entered the house, where the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, JESUS CHRIST was. They saw the child and Mary. They fell down before the child, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and worshipped HIM. Then they opened their treasures and offered gold, frankincense and myrrh to the child, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They very well honoured our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST by offering their very significance and valuable symbolical gifts to HIM and they very well feared and revered and worshipped HIM by falling their full length to the ground on their stomachs and by placing their two palms of their own hands together above their heads stretchedly, which is one of the Indian ways of worship; and also by presenting themselves as the best and valuable gifts to HIM (St. Matthew 2:11). Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Then they returned to India, their native land in great joy. See St. Matthew 2:1-18.

**Offering** is an expression of our love, gratitude and devotion to GOD. It should be offered with adoration and praises and exultations. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST takes notice of every offering made to HIM. HE will not accept corrupt things, for HE is the great KING of kings and the LORD of lords (Malachi 1:13-14) and GOD of gods. So, everyone should offer his/her offering fearfully and with great reverence, realizing that it is given to the KING of kings and the LORD of lords and GOD of gods. The most valuable offering in the sight of GOD is offering ourselves to HIM a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable unto GOD (Romans 12:1) in love, gratitude, devotion and obedience. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



The spiritual significance of the incident lies on the surface. Strangers from afar knew of the birth of MESSIAH or CHRIST at once and hastened to pay HIM reverence. Whereas Herod and the Jews/the Israelites were ignorant of the birth of MESSIAH or CHRIST among them. And when informed of it by strangers from afar, they got the most malignant hatred against HIM. This incident is thus a prophecy of the history of succeeding centuries in which the chosen people, the Jews/the Israelites persistently rejected the MESSIAH or the CHRIST and the Gentiles have accepted HIM and honoured HIM. Glory be to GOD!

**Epiphany** is a Christian festival held on 6 January in memory of the coming of the Magi (the three wise men) to the baby JESUS at Bethlehem.

#### 4.3 THE DIVINE SECRET

This glorious and wonderful event of the Magi (the three wise men) reveals the fact that there has been a glorious and blessed relationship between India and Israel, by the work of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This is a wonderful matter, a divine secret. This divine secret between India and Israel will certainly reveal the divine relationship between India and Israel. All in an appropriate time will know this divine relationship created by GOD HIMSELF openly. This is a true and certain fact. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 4.4 INDIAN HINDU REVIVALISM

Now from some Indian Hindu prayer songs, we can very well understand that these songs were drawn sometime later from the strong belief of these three wise men (the Magi) about our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. These songs very clearly show the Indian Hindu Revivalism due to the visit of the Magi to Bethlehem in Israel. **From these Indian Hindu prayer songs, anyone can clearly understand that the first century Hindus absolutely accepted and worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone.** The interpreted meanings of some Indian Hindu prayer songs are given as follows:

“We worship YOU for YOU have been born holy from the Virgin!” See St. Matthew 1:23

"We worship YOU for YOU have been born of the HOLY SPIRIT! See St. Matthew 1:18

"We worship YOU for YOU have come in the name of GOD the SON!" See St. Mark 1:1; St. John 6:69

"We worship YOU for YOU have come in acute poverty!" See St. Luke 2:7; 9:58; II Corinthians 8:9

"We worship YOU for YOU have obtained circumcision!" See St. Luke 2:21

"We worship YOU for YOU have died on a three edged spear like tree!" See St. John 19:17-18

[ The three-edged Indian spear resembles the wooden cross.]

"We worship YOU for YOU have borne five great wounds!" See Psalm 22:16; St. John 19:34

[ Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has two great wounds on HIS hands and two great wounds on HIS legs and one great wound on HIS side.]

"We worship YOU for YOU have overcome death!"

See I Corinthians 15:55; Isaiah 25:8

"We worship YOU for YOU have sacrificed YOURSELF!"

See Ephesians 5:2; Hebrews 9:14

"We worship YOU for YOU are the Almighty GOD!"

See Revelation 21:22

"We worship YOU for YOU are the great GOD!"

See Titus 2:13

"We worship YOU for YOU are the everlasting celibate!"

See St. Matthew 19:10-12

#### 4.5 ORIGIN OF ALL LANGUAGES

*"And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this MAN letters, having never learned?"*

St. John 7:15

'Learned' means 'studied'.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has known all the letters of the Jewish language and all the letters of all other languages of the world,

without being taught by anyone. In fact, our LORD GOD is the **originator** of all the languages of the world.

*“And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another’s speech. So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.”*

Genesis 11:1, 5-9

‘Go to’ means ‘come’. ‘Confound’ means ‘confuse’. ‘Upon’ means ‘over’. ‘Let us go down’—the plural does not refer to angels, but is a plural of Majesty.

Again, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST could read all languages; HE could speak all languages; HE could write in all languages; HE could understand all languages, without learning or studying any language. Once in Nazareth, JESUS went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and read a passage from the book of the prophet Isaiah.

*“And HE came to Nazareth, where HE had been brought up: and, as HIS custom was, HE went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto HIM the book of the prophet Esaias (Isaiah). And when HE had opened the book, HE found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the LORD is upon ME, because HE hath anointed ME to preach the gospel to the poor; HE hath sent ME to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the LORD. And HE closed the book, and HE gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on HIM. And HE began to say unto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.”*

St. Luke 4:16-21

'Bruised' means 'oppressed'. 'Minister' means 'attendant'. 'Ears' means 'hearing'.

When the LORD GOD finished speaking to Moses on mount Sinai, HE gave him the two tablets of the testimony (Ten Commandments), the tablets of stone inscribed by the finger of GOD in Jewish language.

*"And HE gave unto Moses, when HE had made an end of communing with him upon mount Sinai, two tables of Testimony, tables of stone, written with the finger of GOD."*

Exodus 31:18

#### 4.6 BAPTISM

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was about thirty, John the Baptist who was a servant of GOD and a sage and a hermit baptized HIM in river Jordan. Thus, our LORD JESUS CHRIST set HIMSELF an example of people who are baptized. JESUS was baptized in river Jordan by total immersion in much water. See St. Luke 3:21-23; St. John 3:23.

*"And JESUS, when HE was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto HIM, and HE saw the Spirit of GOD descending like a dove, and lighting upon HIM: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is MY beloved SON, in whom I am well pleased."*

St. Matthew 3:16-17

The word '**baptize**' (baptizo in Greek) means 'to dip or immerse in water'. The descending of the Spirit of GOD fulfilled the predicted sign to John, the Baptist in order to indicate the true MESSIAH. See St. John 1:33; Isaiah 11:2. The dove was a symbol of innocence and purity. The voice from heaven is that of GOD the FATHER. There can be no doubt that GOD the FATHER spoke, GOD the HOLY SPIRIT descended and GOD the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was baptized. Thus, all three functional Persons of the holy TRINITY of GOD were wonderfully involved here. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONLY GOD of TRINITY and HE is the ONLY TRIUNE GOD.

## 4.7 TEMPTATION

Following HIS public baptism, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was led out by the HOLY SPIRIT into the wilderness of Judaea to be tempted by the devil. There, JESUS had fasted forty days and forty nights. After this fasting, JESUS was hungry. The tempter (Satan) came to JESUS and said,

*"If THOU be the SON OF GOD, command that these stones be made bread."*

St. Matthew 4:3

It proves that JESUS is, in fact, the SON OF GOD!

But JESUS answered and said,

*"It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of GOD."*

St. Matthew 4:4

The second temptation took place on a pinnacle of the temple. The tempter (the devil) again said to JESUS,

*"If THOU be the SON OF GOD, cast THYSELF down: for it is written, HE shall give HIS angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone."*

St. Matthew 4:6

JESUS answered and said,

*"It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt (test) the LORD thy GOD."*

St. Matthew 4:7

The third temptation took place at a peak of a very high mountain. Satan, the usurper, showed the kingdoms of the world to JESUS, the rightful King. Then Satan, the devil said to JESUS,

*"All these things will I give THEE, if THOU wilt fall down and worship me."*

St. Matthew 4:9

JESUS answered him and said,

*"Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the*

*LORD thy GOD, and HIM only shalt thou serve."*

St. Matthew 4:10

'Get thee hence' means 'away with you'.

Then the devil left HIM, and angels came and ministered to HIM.

Since our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was tempted and tested; HIS holy and righteous people are also tempted and tested by HIM.

*"The LORD trieth (tests) the righteous: ..."*

Psalms 11:5

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST delivers HIS people from temptations.

*"The LORD knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, ..."*

II Peter 2:9

*"For in that HE HIMSELF hath suffered being tempted, HE is able to succour (aid) them that are tempted."*

Hebrews 2:18

*"Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried (has been proved), he shall receive the crown of life, which the LORD hath promised to them that love HIM."*

James 1:12

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: ..."*

St. Matthew 26:41

In JESUS' first teaching on prayer, HE asked HIS people to pray,

*"And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil (the evil one): ..."*

St. Matthew 6:13

Lead us not into temptation, is a plea for the great help of GOD in our daily life. Our GOD does not tempt us to do evil. However, our GOD allows testing us in order to give us the opportunity to prove our faithfulness to HIM and to strengthen our faith.

**Temptation:** This is the Greek word **PEIRASMOS** which means **trial**. The root of this word is **PEIRA** which means **experience**. The

meaning of temptation depends on who tempts. If it is GOD, it is for the purpose of proving someone and never for the purpose of causing him to fall. If it is the devil that tempts, then it is for the purpose of causing one to fall. So, the temptations here spoken of are not only the direct assaults of the evil one (Satan), but the trials and sorrows of life by which our souls are purified and refined, as gold and silver are purged from their dross in a furnace.

We pray here that we may not be tempted 'above that we are able', but that with the temptation GOD may also make 'a way to escape', that we may be able to bear it (I Corinthians 10:13). But deliver us from evil (the evil one): This is a prayer that GOD may keep us 'from all the sin and wickedness and from the ghostly enemy and from everlasting death'.

The Word of GOD is the strongest weapon to destroy Satan, the devil's evil plans and activities. When Satan tried to deceive our LORD JESUS, by quoting the Holy Scriptures, the Holy Word of GOD, HE won him utterly (St. Matthew 4:1-11). What a great win and victory it is!

#### **4.8 DIVINE HEALER**

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST displays HIS miraculous power by simplest Words and lightest touches; and by HIS own resurrection from the dead. HE heals spirits, souls and bodies wholly through HIS sanctification (I Thessalonians 5:23). HIS miracles are para-normal and above-natural. Along with HIS sinless and holy life and Gospel preachings, HIS mighty works are an integral and central part of HIS life. By HIS miracles, HE leads people to faith and salvation; and testifies GOD's love for the suffering humanity; and brings glory to GOD (HIMSELF); and reveals HIS glorious reign in HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD (St. Luke 18:35-43; St. John 11:20-27, 32-45). JESUS' miraculous saving and healing power displays GOD's reign in the person of JESUS, the eternal KING. Casting out devils (demons) by JESUS shows that GOD's reign is already present in this world, by overthrowing all evil powers (St. Luke 11:20). GOD is at work in our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST; GOD's power is at work through our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. Glory be to GOD!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST healed all kinds of diseases and illnesses, cast out devils and evil spirits, opened the eyes of the blind, gave sight to people born blind, made the lame walk, healed the handi-capped, made the deaf hear, made the dumb speak, healed the lepers and raised the dead (St. Matthew 4:23-25; 11:4-5).

*"And JESUS went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people."*

St. Matthew 9:35

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the good healer; HE is the great and divine healer; HE is the heavenly healer; HE is the only healer from heaven.

#### 4.9 GREAT MIRACLES

*"To HIM who alone doeth great wonders: for HIS mercy endureth for ever."*

Psalm 136:4

*"Behold, I am the LORD, the GOD of all flesh: is there anything too hard for ME?"*

Jeremiah 32:27

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has performed great miracles and wonders. HE raised Lazarus from his grave after four days of his death (St. John 11:1-45). HE walked on the sea (St. Matthew 14:22-27). HE calmed the wind and sea (St. Mark 4:35-41). HE fed more than 5000 people with five loaves and two fishes, with twelve basketfuls of leftover collected (St. Matthew 14:13-21). HE convinced the people that HE was GOD, by performing great wonders and great signs. JESUS CHRIST is the LORD, the GOD of all mankind. Nothing is too hard for HIM.

#### 4.10 DIVINE SURGEON

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has also the name the divine 'Physician' or 'Surgeon'. HE is the divine surgeon of heaven. HE is the divine physician of heaven. HIS priceless, precious, unblemished, spotless and absolutely holy blood is a glorious medicine of heaven and gives



mankind sound health and healing. HIS holy blood gives sound health and healing to man's mind, soul and body.

*"Is there no balm in Gilead; is there no physician there? why then is not the health of the daughter of MY people recovered?"*

Jeremiah 8:22

*"Go up into Gilead, and take balm, O virgin, the daughter of Egypt: in vain shalt thou use many medicines; for thou shalt not be cured."*

Jeremiah 46:11

The spiritual meaning of the word '**Gilead**' is '**CALVARY**' where the LORD JESUS CHRIST was crucified. The spiritual meaning of the word '**Balm**' is '**the most holy blood of JESUS CHRIST**'.

It is the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the divine surgeon of heaven, who performs surgical operations. HE is the divine doctor of heaven. The LORD JESUS CHRIST does not do anything as the doctors of the world do. It is not necessary for HIM to do what they do. The moment our LORD thinks of any illness, any disease, any problem, any tumour, any wound and any weakness it will be cured. They are miraculously cured.

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the GOD who heals miraculously. HE is the miraculous healer. There is no disease or illness, which the LORD JESUS CHRIST cannot heal or cure. The LORD JESUS CHRIST heals by sending HIS Words, by sending HIS Power, by HIS Touch and by HIS Scars. See St. Matthew 8:1-17; Isaiah 53:5; St. Mark 5:25-34.

#### 4.11 DISCIPLES

JESUS CHRIST, the LORD also heals through HIS servants. The LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded HIS servants and given authority and power to them to heal the sick and those possessed by devils, by anointing them with oil and by prayer.

*"And HE ordained twelve, that they should be with HIM, and that HE might send them forth to preach, And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils."*

St. Mark 3:14-15

*“And they went out, and preached that men should repent. And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.”*

St. Mark 6:12-13

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the same yesterday, today and for ever.

*“JESUS CHRIST the same yesterday, and today, and for ever.”*

Hebrews 13:8

Even today, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is performing miracles, wonders, healing diseases and casting away the devils through HIS servants. Those who live by perfect faith on the LORD will not seek any other cure or medicine. They do not have any need for them.

JESUS called and appointed twelve disciples and HE designated them apostles. HE ordained twelve that they might be with HIM and that HE might send them out to preach. HE gave them the authority to heal sicknesses and to drive out evil spirits and devils or demons. They went out and preached that people should repent and they drove out many devils and anointed many sick people with oil and healed them.

Anyone that wants to be with JESUS must be like HIM. He must be a celibate. Before JESUS called Peter, he was a married man. However, after Peter was called, he left his wife and everything and he adopted a celibate lifestyle.

*“Then Peter began to say unto HIM, Lo, we have left all, and have followed THEE.”*

St. Mark 10:28

#### **4.12 JESUS MAKES HIMSELF INACCESSIBLE**

Once, the Jews picked up stones to stone HIM. But JESUS was hidden from them and was not seen in the temple grounds. While they were preparing to stone HIM, JESUS made HIMSELF inaccessible to them (St. John 8:59).

Again, the Jews drove HIM out of Nazareth, and took HIM to the brow of the hill on which the town (Nazareth) was built, in order to throw HIM down the cliff. While they were preparing to throw HIM

down the cliff, JESUS made HIMSELF inaccessible to them. HE walked away through the crowd (St. Luke 4:29-30).

Further, JESUS fed about five thousand men, besides women and children, with five loaves and two fishes. HIS disciples picked up twelve basketfuls of broken pieces that were leftover. When we include women and children, the number of those who ate will be above ten thousand; since in such gatherings, the number of women will be certainly greater than the number of men. Thus by including women and children, the number of those who ate will be above ten thousand (St. Matthew 14:13-21).

On seeing the above miracle, the Jews attempted to make JESUS a king by force. Hunger was common. Hence most people were ready to follow MESSIAH or CHRIST who could multiply food. While they were preparing to catch HIM to make JESUS a king, JESUS made HIMSELF inaccessible to them. HE went higher into the mountains alone (St. John 6:3-15).

#### 4.13 THE TRANSFIGURATION

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST took with HIM HIS disciples Peter, James and John the brother of James and went up a high mountain to pray. There HE was transfigured before them. As HE prayed, HIS face shone like the sun and HIS clothes became white as the light, as bright as a flash of lightning. Just then, two men, Moses and Elias (Elijah) appeared in glorious splendour, talking with JESUS. They spoke about HIS death, which HE was about to bring to fulfilment at Jerusalem.

As the men were leaving, Peter said to JESUS,

*“LORD, it is good for us to be here: if THOU wilt, let us make here three tabernacles (shelters); one for THEE, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.”*

St. Matthew 17:4

Peter did not know, what he was saying, they were so frightened. While he was speaking, a bright cloud appeared and enveloped them, and a voice came from the cloud, saying,

*"This is MY beloved SON, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye HIM."*

St. Matthew 17:5

When the disciples heard this, they fell facedown to the ground, terrified. But JESUS came and touched them, and said,

*"Arise, and be not afraid."*

St. Matthew 17:7

When they looked up, they saw no one except JESUS. As they were coming down the mountain, JESUS commanded them, saying,

*"Tell the vision to no man, until the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) be risen again from the dead."*

St. Matthew 17:9

See St. Matthew 17:1-9; St. Mark 9:2-9; St. Luke 9:28-36.

The witness of Peter verifies the testimony that this was a real experience (II Peter 1:17-18).

From the glorious appearance of Moses and Elias (Elijah), anyone can clearly understand that they were the most important servants and prophets of the LORD GOD, during the Old Testament period.

No prophet had risen in Israel like Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face. Joshua was filled with the spirit of wisdom because Moses had laid his hands on him. So the Israelites listened to Joshua and did what the LORD had commanded Moses. Lastly, Moses climbed mount Nebo from the plains of Moab to the top of Pisgah, across from Jericho. There the LORD GOD showed him the whole land of Israel, the Promised Land. Then Moses died in the land of Moab and he was buried by the LORD in the land of Moab when he was 120 years old, but to this day, no one knows where his grave is. This shows his great significance and supremacy in the sight of the LORD GOD (Deuteronomy 34:1-12).

The LORD GOD took Elias (Elijah) alive into heaven. This shows the pre-eminent position which Elijah had won by his zeal and devotion in the eyes of the LORD (II Kings 2:1-12). From the glorious appearance of Elias, his future ministry with Enoch, who was also

taken by the LORD GOD into heaven without dying, is confirmed (Genesis 5:24; Hebrews 11:5; Revelation 11:3-13).

## 5. TEACHINGS

### 5.1 THE LORD'S PRAYER

Once our LORD JESUS CHRIST was praying in a certain place. When HE finished, one of HIS disciples said to HIM,

**"LORD, teach us to pray."**

St. Luke 11:1

Then, HE taught HIS disciples the model prayer. This prayer is often called "The LORD's Prayer". But, in reality, this prayer is a disciple's prayer. HE taught, "This is how you should pray".

*"Our FATHER which art in heaven, Hallowed be THY name. THY kingdom come. THY will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For THINE is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen."*

St. Matthew 6:9-13

### "Our FATHER"

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST commands us to address GOD as 'Our FATHER'. Our heavenly FATHER is the giver of every good and perfect gift (James 1:17; I Timothy 6:17). HE provides us all physical benefits and spiritual benefits.

*"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the FATHER of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning."*

James 1:17

*"...The living GOD, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy."*

I Timothy 6:17

The greatest gift of all is the gift of salvation (Hebrews 2:3).

*"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD."*

Ephesians 2:8

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is a FATHER of the fatherless and a defender of widows.

*"A FATHER of the fatherless, and a judge of the widows, is GOD in HIS holy habitation."*

Psalm 68:5

The fatherless is mainly a reference to the spiritually destitute, the unsaved people. We are of GOD our FATHER through creation, but our sins, iniquities and trespasses have alienated us from GOD. But GOD comes to us as a father to the fatherless, the spiritually orphans. GOD will be a FATHER to those who acknowledge their spiritually orphaned condition, the spiritually bankrupt condition.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the everlasting FATHER (Isaiah 9:6). As a father pities his children, so the LORD pities those who fear HIM (Psalm 103:13). GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST cares for those who fear HIM and those who love HIM.

### **"Which art in heaven"**

We should sincerely pray, "Our FATHER who art in heaven". If we sincerely pray for salvation from sins, HE gives us salvation from sins. "Our FATHER who art in heaven" means that our salvation is rooted in heaven. The saved people have become citizens of heaven, and eternally they will be with GOD in heaven.

Our heavenly FATHER is majestic, infinite and great. HE gives us divine life. HE cares for our material need. HE is the source of our strength and supply. Hence we need not be wanting.

### **"Hallowed be THY name"**

Hallowed be THY name addresses the attention of the prayer toward GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and reverence for HIS holy name and HIS holy person.

'Hallowed' means 'holy', which means 'set apart'. GOD's name is Holy (Isaiah 57:15). HIS name is set apart. Each of us has a name to identify us. GOD needs no such identification because HE alone is GOD.

But, GOD does give HIMSELF many names, such as JEHOVAH, JESUS, CHRIST, the LORD of hosts, etc. These names describe HIS attributes or characteristics.

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in all of HIS fullness is set apart (hallowed) as the ONLY GOD, whom we are to fear, revere, obey, serve, glorify and worship. HE alone is supremely holy, righteous and majestic. HE is the Creator of the world and upholds it by the word of HIS supreme power (Hebrews 1:3).

### **"THY kingdom come"**

The kingdom of GOD represents the full and effective reign of GOD. For one to see or to enter into, the kingdom of GOD requires that he/she should be born-again or saved or regenerated. JESUS said unto Nicodemus,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of GOD."*

St. John 3:3

Again, JESUS said unto Nicodemus,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

St. John 3:5

Here 'water' is 'the Word of Truth' (James 1:18).

The kingdom of GOD is prepared from the foundation of the world (St. Matthew 25:34). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF establishes the kingdom of GOD. The kingdom of GOD consists of all who will become saved and live with CHRIST for ever and ever in HIS kingdom.

When we pray, "THY kingdom come", we are saying, "O GOD, we want to be part of YOUR kingdom; we want to be saved. THY kingdom come in our lives". And we are also saying, "O GOD, we want THY kingdom to go out into the whole world and encompass all who are to be saved. We pray that the programme of salvation which YOU designed from before the foundation of the world will come to fruition".

### **"THY will be done"**

If you are unsaved, GOD's will is not part of your life. If you are unsaved, you are going to live with your own will and not according to GOD's will.

"THY will be done" prayed from our hearts means, "O GOD, make us obedient to THEE; help us to abandon ourselves to THEE; bring us the will of us in conformity with the will of THEE; we want THEE to be our Saviour".

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has completely fulfilled the will of GOD.

*"For even CHRIST pleased not HIMSELF; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached THEE fell on ME."*

Romans 15:3

Further, the will of GOD ultimately includes the eternal damnation of the sinners or the unsaved. GOD's justice must be satisfied. When the Judgment day comes, HE will bring vengeance upon the sinners or the unsaved. That is implied in the phrase, "THY will be done".

### **"THY will be done in earth, as it is in heaven"**

GOD's will was fully established in heaven. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in perfect obedience to the FATHER's will. In the garden of Gethsemane, JESUS prayed,

*"Not what I will, but what THOU wilt."*

St. Mark 14:36

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's perfect obedience illustrates the perfect will of GOD. We ought to pray as HE prayed so that in all our life we might be obedient to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. And we ought to pray for the earth, the whole world to come under the perfect will of GOD and HIS will must be fully established in earth.

### **"Give us this day our daily bread"**

Here, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is teaching us to pray for physical sustenance and spiritual sustenance. We are dependent upon GOD for food, clothing, shelter, etc., but in St. Luke, our LORD JESUS said to HIS disciples,



*"Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and GOD feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls?"*

St. Luke 12:22-24

Again, in St. Luke, JESUS said to HIS disciples,

*"For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your FATHER knoweth that ye have need of these things."*

St. Luke 12:30

GOD gives no guarantee that believers in the LORD JESUS CHRIST will always have their stomachs full of food. Whether we have enough to eat or not is immaterial. The important question that GOD wants us to face is: Are we spiritually nourished?

So, we should pray, "O GOD, give us each day the spiritual bread that will sustain us throughout the future".

What is the spiritual bread that the Holy Bible talks about? Our LORD JESUS CHRIST says,

*"I am the bread of life: he that cometh to ME shall never hunger; and he that believeth on ME shall never thirst."*

St. John 6:35

Again HE says,

*"I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is MY flesh, which I will give for the life of the world."*

St. John 6:51

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the spiritual bread. HE is the living bread. HE is the living bread which came down from heaven.

In St. Luke, our LORD JESUS CHRIST taught HIS disciples to pray,

*"Give us day by day our daily bread."*

St. Luke 11:3

From the above mentioned things, when we tie the phrase "day by day" together with the phrase in St. Matthew 6:11, "Give us this

day our daily bread", we get this content: "Give us CHRIST day by day, on a continuing basis, that we might have bread for the morrow, from moment to moment".

So, we should pray, "O GOD, give us the LORD JESUS CHRIST as our spiritual bread for today and tomorrow and forevermore". And when we pray "Give us this day our daily bread", we are saying to GOD, "O GOD give us the LORD JESUS CHRIST that we might be in HIM, spiritually nourished and strengthened, so that we can walk day to day, moment to moment. Whatever the future holds, HE is sufficient for us".

Thus, this prayer, as a pattern, cares first for GOD's name, GOD's kingdom and GOD's will, and second for our physical and spiritual needs.

### **"And forgive us our debts"**

'Debts' refer to 'sins', which are our moral and spiritual debts in GOD's righteousness.

We are debtors to GOD because we have sinned. The wages of sin is death—the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Romans 6:23; Revelation 21:8). There is a penalty that we must pay to GOD for our sins, and that payment is eternal damnation in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

When we pray, "forgive us our debts", we are praying, "O GOD, have mercy on us. We are sinners. Will YOU pay the penalty that we rightly deserve to pay?"

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came to endure hell on our behalf. HE came to ransom us from the wrath of GOD and from the power of the grave and from the Judgment of GOD and from eternal damnation in hell.

### **"As we forgive our debtors"**

The unsaved can be bitter, resentful and angry if they believe they have been wronged by another person's word or deed. This is because mankind by nature is egotistical and proud.

If the saved one has resentment in his/her heart against some individual, then he/she should examine his/her heart. When he/she has resentment, he/she has to ask, "Am I born-again? How can I expect GOD to forgive me if I continue with this unforgiving sin?" Everyone should examine and find what salvation is. Therefore, the phrase, "As we forgive our debtors", is a reminder to examine ourselves to determine whether we are truly saved.

### **"And lead us not into temptation"**

It is a plea for the providential help of GOD in our daily life. The word 'lead' means 'bring'.

Satan, the devil is the tempter. The word tempter and the word temptation are the same in Greek.

Now, does "lead us not into temptation" mean, "O GOD, bring us along so that we will not be tempted by Satan, the devil?"

We read,

*"My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations."*

James 1:2

Further, we read,

*"Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: ..."*

James 1:12

GOD is saying it is a blessing, something to be joyful about, when Satan tempts you.

Again, we read,

*"There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: ..."*

I Corinthians 10:13

GOD is saying it is normative for the believer to walk in the path of temptation.

Therefore, "lead us not into temptation" cannot be understood to mean "bring us not into a situation in which we are tempted of Satan".

Now, the solution to understanding, "lead us not into temptation" is found when we mean the word "temptation" as 'trial'. Truly, in every temptation we are being tried, but there is a trial, which every human being should face because of his/her sins.

Another usage of the word "temptation" is:

*"Because thou hast kept the Word of MY patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth."*

Revelation 3:10

Here, "the hour of temptation" means "the hour of trial". In Greek "PEIRASMOS" means "temptation" and "PEIRAZO" means "try".

In Revelation 3:10, GOD is talking about judgment day. The unsaved are going to be tried, to be tested, at the judgment seat of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Because there is none righteous, they will be found guilty and cast into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. That is the "trial" we desperately wish to avoid as we pray, "bring us not into trial".

The true believers or the saved people do not come into that hour of trial. We, the true believers do not have to stand before the judgment throne of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST because we have already been tried. Since, CHRIST stood before the judgment seat of Pilate, we, the saved are not required to stand before the judgment seat of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had become sin (sin offering) for us (II Corinthians 5:21); HE has already given an account of all the sins of the saved.

When Satan, the devil comes to tempt you through the circumstances around you, he is trying you to discover whether you are going to remain faithful to GOD or whether he can get you to sin.

GOD never comes with that kind of temptation. GOD tempts no man to evil.

*"Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of GOD: for GOD cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth HE any man."*

James 1:13

Sometimes GOD will remove HIS hand of restraint from us, but HE would never cause us to sin.

The unsaved will be brought, not led, into trial. CHRIST is coming as the Judge, and every eye shall see HIM, and everyone of the unsaved is going to give an account of his/her sins (Revelation 1:7; I Peter 4:5).

### **"Deliver us from evil"**

The word 'evil' here can be understood as Satan, the devil, as sin, as the wrath of GOD, as the judgment of GOD and as hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

Before we are saved, we are in bondage to Satan, the devil. If we submit ourselves to GOD and resist Satan, the devil, we are promised that he will flee from us (James 4:7).

Again, before we are saved, we are in bondage to sin (St. John 8:34) and we are in bondage under the rudiments of the world (Galatians 4:3). These are the terrible evils to which every human being is enslaved.

Furthermore, before we are saved, we are under the wrath of GOD and we are under the judgment of GOD and we are under eternal damnation in hell. The judgment of GOD is a terrible evil and hell is also a most terrible evil.

Therefore, the prayer "deliver us from evil" is also a prayer for salvation. The saved are set free from bondage to sin and Satan and are set free from bondage under the rudiments of the world and they are delivered from the wrath of GOD and from the judgment of GOD and from hell.

**"For THINE is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen."**

The LORD's prayer concludes with this wonderful doxology. These words constitute a fitting and climactic affirmation of faith.

The focal point is on GOD: "Our FATHER, who art in heaven. Hallowed be THY name". Then the focal point shifts to GOD's salvation programme in the world through CHRIST.

JESUS tells us how to pray. The LORD's Prayer is a magnificent prayer given to mankind who desperately needs salvation. In this prayer, we see salvation. CHRIST in this beautiful prayer says, come to GOD about salvation. In this sweet little prayer, we see that all of the glory throughout eternity goes to GOD. Praise GOD for HIS wonderful prayer of salvation!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST did not intend this prayer to be merely recited with empty meaninglessness. At this juncture, I wish to remind you a story of a palmyrah climber who meaningfully recited this wonderful prayer.

Once there lived a poor palmyrah climber. He was uneducated. He had a wife and children. He had a staunch belief in the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and he knew the LORD's Prayer by heart. And he did not know any other prayer.

One day, after finishing his palmyrah climbing in the evening, he went to his house. It was night. When he went into his house, his wife and children frighteningly said to him that in their neighbour's house there was a terrible sorcerer to do sorcery against them. But he said to them, "Don't be afraid. Our GOD will see to it".

Then, finishing his usual bath in hot water and taking his supper, he asked them to sleep. But they did not sleep due to terrible fear.

Then he went into his private room and shut the door. He knelt down on the floor and bowed down his head and lifted up his folded hands and recited the LORD's Prayer meaningfully in Tamil with all his heart and with all his soul and with all his might and with tears and with humility and with broken-heart, before the most holy presence of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Our loving GOD heard his heartfelt reciting of the LORD's Prayer.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONLY GOD who hears our prayers (Psalm 65:2).

At that time, the sorcerer was doing his sorcery against the poor palmyrah climber and against his poor family vehemently. Then, the sorcerer's sorcery was suddenly stopped. He was unable to continue his sorcery against the poor palmyrah climber and against his poor

family. He became slow of speech and dull of tongue and he was like a man in the midst of fire.

Then, the sorcerer said to that household, "Someone has tied my sorcery. I can't do anything against them by my sorcery. Now, I am like a man in the midst of terrible fire. I am going back to my house". And he went away at once.

By the meaningful and heartfelt reciting of the LORD's Prayer, our GOD the LORD JESUS CHRIST had completely tied the sorcery of this terrible sorcerer. There is no sorcery against HIS people (Numbers 23:23). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had done a great and wonderful thing to the poor palmyrah climber and to his poor family through this wonderful LORD's Prayer. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Finally, during CHRIST's last preaching before crucifixion, HE asked HIS disciples to ask in HIS name.

*"Hitherto have ye asked nothing in MY name: ask (in MY name), and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full."*

St. John 16:24

So, everyone should finish his/her prayer like this. "We ask all these things in the most holy and wonderful name of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, our Redeemer. Amen". '**Amen**' means '**may it be so**'. It is used at the close of a prayer or hymn.

**Prayer is to be very simple**—trusting our heavenly GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, come to HIM as children come to a loving Father for their needs with eagerness to please HIM and conscious of their failings and confessing of their sins. Thus, prayer is explained more simply.

## 5.2 THE GREAT COMMANDMENT

One of the Pharisees, an expert in the law, tested our LORD JESUS with this question:

*"Master, which is the great commandment in the law?"*

St. Matthew 22:36

JESUS said to him,

*"Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with*

*all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."*

St. Matthew 22:37-40

In this, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST summarized the responsibility of everyone to GOD as "Love the LORD your GOD with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind" and the responsibility of everyone to man as "Love your neighbour as yourself". Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 5.3 THE LORD'S CALL

Our loving LORD lovingly calls the entire humanity. Our loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls the entire humanity. HIS call is impelling and irresistible. It is an urgent and unignorable call. It is a serious and significant call. It is the only call that is glorious and divine. It is the most supreme call as it emanates from the Most High GOD, the GOD of gods and the LORD of lords.

**What is the purpose of this call ?** The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD attributes 20 motives for this call.

1. Call to sinners to repentance, that is, the call to salvation (St. Luke 5:32; Acts 17:30).
2. Call to receive HIS full and final salvation, that is, to change this corruptible earthly body into a most glorious incorruptible body like HIS (II Thessalonians 2:13-14; Philippians 3:21; I Corinthians 15:54).
3. Call to be justified and glorified by HIM (Romans 8:30).
4. Call to come out of darkness into HIS marvellous light (I Peter 2:9).
5. Call to give HIS power and wisdom (I Corinthians 1:24).
6. Call to give the peace of GOD to rule in our hearts (Colossians 3:15).
7. Call to give HIS patience (I Peter 2:20-21).



8. Call to receive the prize of the high calling of GOD in CHRIST JESUS, that is, the kingdom of GOD (Philippians 3:14).
9. Call to the fellowship of JESUS CHRIST our LORD (I Corinthians 1:9).
10. Call to do HIS ministry (Romans 1:1).
11. Call to liberty without any sinful nature (Galatians 5:13).
12. Call to live as saints (I Corinthians 1:2).
13. Call to give HIS holiness (I Thessalonians 4:7).
14. Call to hold HIS eternal life (I Timothy 6:12).
15. Call to receive the eternal inheritance (Hebrews 9:15).
16. Call to live in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Peter 5:10).
17. Call to suffer a little while in HIS name (I Peter 5:10).
18. Call to make us perfect and get established (I Peter 5:10).
19. Call to strengthen and settle us (I Peter 5:10).
20. Call to HIS eternal glory (I Peter 5:10).

Our LORD calls us with the heavenly calling (Hebrews 3:1). HE calls us with a holy calling (II Timothy 1:9). The calling of GOD is irrevocable (Romans 11:29). So, we should walk worthy of the calling we have received by a prayerful life.

*"...Ye walk worthy of the vocation (calling) wherewith ye are called."*

Ephesians 4:1

#### 5.4 ELECTION AND PREDESTINATION

The people of the whole world are GOD's workmanship (creation), created in CHRIST JESUS to do good works, which GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST prepared beforehand for us to walk in them.

*"For we are HIS workmanship, created in CHRIST JESUS unto good works, which GOD hath before ordained (prepared) that we should walk in them."*

Ephesians 2:10

Hence, all people of the world are the called. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls all people of the world. HE lovingly calls,

*"Come unto ME, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest."*

St. Matthew 11:28

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."*

St. Luke 5:32

Here, the righteous refers to the Pharisees, who thought they were righteous. But they were truly self-righteous sinners. So, each and everyone should repent of his/her sins.

Besides, the Holy Bible clearly tells that the gifts and calling of GOD are irrevocable; that is, they cannot be changed or altered.

*"For the gifts and calling of GOD are without repentance (irrevocable)."*

Romans 11:29

Since all have sinned and no one is righteous, our LORD JESUS CHRIST calls all sinners. The following verses prove universal guilt.

*"For all have sinned, and come (fall) short of the glory of GOD."*

Romans 3:23

*"...There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after GOD. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of GOD before their eyes."*

Romans 3:10-18

The people of the whole world are the called and those who believe in our LORD JESUS CHRIST are the predestined people of GOD. Those HE predestined, HE also called.

*"Moreover whom HE did predestinate, them HE also called: ..."*

Romans 8:30

**"Many be called, but few chosen"**. St. Matthew 20:16. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST also predestined the people chosen to be conformed to the image of HIS SON (the most glorious image of HIS own).

*"For whom HE did foreknow, HE also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of HIS SON, ..."*

Romans 8:29

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST predestined us to the praise of HIS glorious grace (Ephesians 1:5-6).

Now, all the regenerated people of the world are the elected or the chosen people of GOD. HE chose us in HIM before the foundation of the world to be holy and blameless before HIM covered with HIS love.

*"According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love."*

Ephesians 1:4

"Before the foundation of the world" and "before the world began" (Ephesians 1:4; II Timothy 1:9) means GOD in HIS sovereign will had, in principle determined and planned to choose, elect and predestinate us with a holy calling so that we may do what is pleasing to HIM and live up to HIS expectation and experience all the spiritual benefits and blessings.

This election is purely the election of grace (Romans 11:5). This call is purely the call of grace (Galatians 1:15). It is the heavenly calling of GOD (Hebrews 3:1); it is a holy calling of GOD (II Timothy 1:9). It is a divine call to salvation (II Thessalonians 2:14). It is a divine call to holiness (I Thessalonians 4:7). It is a divine call to eternal life (I Timothy 6:12).

The doctrine of election and predestination is a very important one to the believer. It is a complex and complicated doctrine to understand. It has been widely discussed in Christian circles. There have been a lot of arguments for and against this vital and crucial

doctrine. Many have tried to explain this, many have questioned it and some have despised it. In the first instance, let us recognize that we are treading into a very sensitive and much debated area and hence we have to proceed very carefully in the exploration of this subject.

May our LORD be with us and enlighten and illuminate to us the truth, Alleluia!

Let us begin by recalling Ephesians 1:4-5.

*“According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by JESUS CHRIST to HIMSELF, according to the good pleasure of HIS will.”*

Ephesians 1:4-5

HE hath chosen (EKLEGOMAI) us. This verb in Greek means "to select or choose out of". From this verb we have the noun 'EKLOGE', which means 'choice or election'. Verse 4, given above means that at one particular time in the past, before the foundation of the world GOD chose us in HIM that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love. This Greek verb also indicates that it was GOD's own decision.

The second verb in verse 5 also relates to the subject of GOD's election of the believer. PROORIZO (PRO—before and Horizo—to determine). This compound verb means to determine or decree beforehand or to predestinate. This is the same verb used in Romans 8:29 and translated 'did predestinate'. So election is contained in predestination.

In the Old Testament, we find:

*“For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy GOD: the LORD thy GOD hath chosen thee to be a special people unto HIMSELF, above all people that are upon the face of the earth.”*

Deuteronomy 7:6

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has also taught the truth of election in St. John 6:44.

*"No man can come to ME, except the FATHER which hath sent ME draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day."*

St. John 6:44

*"I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: ..."*

St. John 13:18

GOD has chosen people out of all the world (Revelation 5:9; 7:9) to belong to HIM and the church is that people.

The truth of election is clearly explained in James 2:5.

*"Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not GOD chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which HE hath promised to them that love HIM?"*

James 2:5

Three Greek words, EKLOGE, EKLEKTOS, and EKLEGO are translated as either election, elect or chosen and used some fifty times in the New Testament. Romans 11:5, "Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election (EKLOGE) of grace" and II Peter 1:10, "Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election (EKLOGE) sure" are some examples.

Also Colossians 3:12, "Put on therefore, as the elect (EKLEKTOS) of GOD, holy and beloved, ..." Titus 1:1, "According to the faith of GOD's elect (EKLEKTOS)". St. Matthew 22:14, "For many are called, but few are chosen (EKLEKTOS)". Ephesians 1:4, "According as HE hath chosen (EKLEGO) us in HIM before the foundation of the world". Our LORD JESUS has repeatedly said that the FATHER gives whomever HE chooses to the SON.

*"All that the FATHER giveth ME shall come to ME; and him that cometh to ME I will in no wise cast out. For I came down from heaven, not to do MINE own will, but the will of HIM that sent ME. And this is the FATHER's will which hath sent ME, that of all which HE hath given ME I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day."*

St. John 6:37-39

Apostle Paul stresses the fact that GOD's election is completely the result of HIS **sovereign purpose and grace**. HE elected Abraham,

Isaac, Jacob, Moses and other prophets for HIS sovereign purpose. HE elected HIS disciples (apostles) and other GOD's ministers for HIS sovereign purpose.

*"Who (the LORD) hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to HIS own purpose and grace, which was given us in CHRIST JESUS before the world began."*

II Timothy 1:9

So, we accept that GOD's choice is based on nothing but HIS own will and that HIS choice proceeds from HIS bountiful and generous grace granted to the unworthy, the undeserving and the unmerited.

No one can resist GOD's will.

*"...Who hath resisted HIS will?"*

Romans 9:19

No one can question GOD and no one can reply against GOD.

*"...O man, who art thou that repliest against GOD?..."*

Romans 9:20

*"...All day long I have stretched forth MY hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying (contrary) people."*

Romans 10:21

Anything that is formed by a man could never say to him who formed it, "Why have you made me like this?"

*"...Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?"*

Romans 9:20

Now, GOD has formed or created mankind. GOD is the Creator of mankind. So, GOD does have power over mankind. Hence, no one should talk back to GOD and no one should question GOD. What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with GOD? Certainly not!

*"What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with GOD? GOD forbid (Certainly not). For HE saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion."*

Romans 9:14-15

In the opening verse of his first epistle, apostle Peter says that he writes to those who are "Elect according to the foreknowledge of GOD the FATHER" (I Peter 1:2). Later he says,

*"But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of HIM who hath called you out of darkness into HIS marvellous light."*

I Peter 2:9

Here the word 'foreknowledge' and its implications need to be clearly understood. It is unfortunate that some commentators have given a faulty interpretation of this term. They say that our GOD is all-knowing, omniscient and so HE knows what would happen in the future. And HE knew who would believe the Gospel and who would not. So, HE predestinated those who would choose to believe to inherit the kingdom of GOD. Though this argument seems to be acceptable, there is scriptural evidence that is definitely to the contrary. Let us analyse further this theory.

First of all, does it not make man's will supreme rather than the sovereign will of the Almighty GOD? Did not our LORD JESUS tell HIS disciples "Ye have not chosen ME, but I have chosen you", St. John 15:16.

Secondly, this theory gives undue credit to man for his own salvation and this is not true.

*"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD: Not of works, lest any man should boast."*

Ephesians 2:8-9

Thirdly, this thought erroneously assumes that man under the bondage of sin can still seek after GOD. According to Romans 3:11, "There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after GOD".

So, it is obvious that GOD's sovereign will alone is the basis of HIS divine purpose and plan that brings salvation to sinners and man's will has no part in it. Thus election and predestination becomes part of GOD's salvation plan and this can be effected in the life of the

believer through salvation. And salvation is absolutely the work of GOD and is carried out by the HOLY SPIRIT through sanctification, conformity to CHRIST's image (Romans 8:29), good works (Ephesians 2:10), inheritance (I Peter 1:2, 4-5) and eternal glory (Romans 9:23).

### **Advantages of Election:**

(i) GOD's children are saved from sins and given the desire to **obey HIM**.

(ii) GOD's **grace** and **peace** will be experienced in the elect.

(iii) The doctrine of election recognizes GOD's **supreme authority**, exalts GOD, enhances worship and all the glory is given to the LORD only. It emphasizes the fact that GOD alone can grant forgiveness to HIS people (Proverbs 20:9; Micah 6:7; Ephesians 1:7; I John 1:7; 3:5).

(iv) It promises **an eternity of spiritual privileges and blessings** as expressed by Paul in Ephesians 1:3-14.

(v) It produces **ultimate joy**. When the elect are convinced of GOD's never-changing love (St. Luke 10:20) from before the foundation of the world and on into eternity, they cannot but exult and rejoice.

(vi) This doctrine of predestination provides a powerful **motivation to holy living**. The thought that the elect are predestinated encourages them to live a life worthy of the election, a life of obedience, holiness, kindness, humility, meekness, longsuffering, forbearance and forgiving (Colossians 3:12-13).

(vii) An important and practical component of election is **divine protection and security**. For the elect's sake, whom HE hath chosen, HE hath shortened the days of affliction and tribulation (St. Mark 13:20). Our LORD has assured them that they will be raised up at the last day (St. John 6:36-40).

Now a question arises. Can a man know if he is one of the elect or predestinated? This is a very difficult and perplexing question to answer; however it is an extremely essential question, worthy to be answered.



The answer will be revealed to us if we carefully and diligently study St. Paul's epistle to the Romans. In this great epistle not a single mention of election or predestination is made until we are halfway through the eighth chapter. What is the reason? Until we are sure that we are children of GOD and free from condemnation (Romans 8:1-17) we are neither in the right direction nor in the mature position to receive the truth of election.

In the early chapters of Romans, we are convinced of the ruined and wretched condition of the guilty sinner. Then comes the justification of the sinner by faith through the finished work of our LORD and SAVIOUR, JESUS CHRIST; now the believer is freed from the mastery of sin and delivered from the clutches of the Law. This leads to the blessed stage of "no condemnation" ensured by the witness of the HOLY SPIRIT as the "children of GOD".

Only after this series of spiritual experiences does the believer learn that he has been predestinated by GOD to adoption of son by JESUS CHRIST to HIMSELF and is one of the elect. Then only he becomes absolutely certain to declare:

*"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love GOD, to them who are the called according to HIS purpose. For whom HE did foreknow, HE also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of HIS SON, that HE might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom HE did predestinate, them HE also called: and whom HE called, them HE also justified: and whom HE justified, them HE also glorified."*

Romans 8:28-30

The man who has sinned and come short of the glory of GOD (Romans 3:23) is not at all concerned about whether he is one of the elect or not. Anyone who desires the peace of GOD will never be refused; nevertheless, to the one who has attained the maturity level of the man described in the eighth chapter of Romans alone dawns the knowledge that he has been predestinated unto salvation.

**The most important point to be kept in mind is: No one who is saved can say that his salvation is primarily due to his own choice of GOD. His salvation is in response to GOD's choice of him. And, on**

**the other hand, no one who is lost can say that he is lost because GOD willed him to be lost.**

For those who have still some doubts about this doctrine let us cite an illustration from family life. But before doing so, one more point has to be stressed. The doctrine of election and predestination is a very difficult one to understand since it involves trying to probe into GOD's character, HIS wisdom, HIS aims and ways which are past finding out. We know that the depth of GOD's mind is unsearchable, inscrutable, unfathomable and mysterious. GOD HIMSELF in HIS infinite wisdom has revealed and declared that,

*"MY thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways MY ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are MY ways higher than your ways, and MY thoughts than your thoughts."*

Isaiah 55:8-9

An analogy derived from family life will indeed be of help to us. A stranger to a family cannot be expected to know or share the little familiarities and secrets of that family. No member of the family will take him into confidence.

Similarly, the unsaved and the unregenerate are excluded from and kept out of the membership of GOD's family; they cannot share the loyalty, love, oneness and other feelings uniting the members of the family of GOD. We know that GOD reveals HIS secrets only to the members of HIS own household.

*"... HIS secret is with the righteous."*

Proverbs 3:32

*"The secret of the LORD is with them that fear HIM; and HE will shew them HIS covenant."*

Psalms 25:14

*"Surely the LORD GOD will do nothing, but HE revealeth HIS secret unto HIS servants the prophets."*

Amos 3:7

Can't we now boldly say that the doctrine of election and predestination is a family secret and only the children of GOD can gain

access to it since GOD is pleased to endow them with the capacity of knowing, grasping and understanding the deep things of HIS!

*"The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."*

I Corinthians 2:14

Everyone should make his/her calling and election sure. If you do these things, you will never fall or stumble and you will enter into the eternal kingdom of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST (II Peter 1:11).

*"Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall."*

II Peter 1:10

To make our calling and election sure, we should accept GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in HIS accepted time and get HIS salvation. The Holy Bible clearly reveals that GOD's accepted time is today.

*"For HE saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation."*

II Corinthians 6:2

Sinners have no assurance whatsoever that they will live to see tomorrow (Proverbs 27:1; St. Luke 12:19-20; James 4:13-15).

Again, to make our calling and election sure, we should be saved and we should be baptized in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT by total immersion in water. Further, we should be baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or we should be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD by speaking in tongues. Furthermore, we should fully grow in our spiritual life, perfecting holiness in the fear of GOD.

*"Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of GOD."*

II Corinthians 7:1

## 5.5 THE GREAT INVITATION

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*“Come unto ME, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take MY yoke upon you, and learn of ME; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For MY yoke is easy, and MY burden is light.”*

St. Matthew 11:28-30

Everyone should obey this great invitation of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE makes HIS people free from the yoke of slavery due to their sins.

Our LORD JESUS invites to HIMSELF all those who feel the burden of sin and who find their lives toil to them. HE will release them from the yoke of mechanical religion, make them humble and meek like HIMSELF and give them pardon and peace.

## 5.6 GREATEST IN THE KINGDOM OF GOD

The disciples were disputing their rank and precedence in the kingdom and they came to JESUS and asked,

*“Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?”*

St. Matthew 18:1

LORD JESUS gave them a sharp rebuke. JESUS called a little child and had him stand in the midst of them. And HE said,

*“Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.”*

St. Matthew 18:3-4

A little child has no pride, knows nothing of worldly status, rank or position. A little child is simple, teachable and loving and humble. A little child does not think high of himself. Similarly, the ministers or servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST must be converted, and live like a little child, to enter into the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD.

## 5.7 CHILDREN BLESSED, NOT BAPTIZED

People were bringing their little children to our LORD JESUS CHRIST to have HIM touch them. But HIS disciples tried to prevent them. When our LORD JESUS saw this, HE was greatly displeased. HE said to them,

*"Suffer (allow) the little children to come unto ME, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of GOD. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of GOD as a little child, he shall not enter therein."*

St. Mark 10:14-15

Moreover, our LORD JESUS CHRIST took the children in HIS holy arms, put HIS holy hands upon them and blessed them.

*"And HE took them up in HIS arms, put HIS hands upon them, and blessed them."*

St. Mark 10:16

Incidentally, it is necessary to mention here that our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST blessed the children, but HE did not baptize children and HE never commanded HIS disciples to baptize children. Therefore, baptism should not be given to infants or little children. Hence, infant baptism is against the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was about thirty, John the Baptist baptized HIM. HE was baptized in river Jordan by total immersion in much water. Thus, our LORD JESUS CHRIST set HIMSELF an example for those who are to be baptized (St. Matthew 3:16-17; St. Luke 3:21-23; St. John 3:23).

## 5.8 ADULTERY

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should*

*be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell."*

St. Matthew 5:27-30

The seriousness of the sin of lusting is clearly illustrated by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Lusting after a woman (except one's own wife) by looking is sin. Lusting after a man (except one's own husband) by looking is sin. Lusting of any kind is adultery. The heart is the main source of adultery. Adulterers and adulteresses will be cast into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

## 5.9 DIVORCE

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery."*

St. Matthew 5:31-32

Adultery or fornication (sexual unfaithfulness) is the only legitimate ground for divorce. Nevertheless, the legitimacy of the divorce does not establish the legitimacy of remarriage. Anyone who divorces his wife without this basis, causes her to commit adultery or causes her to become an adulteress and anyone who marries the divorced woman commits adultery.

However, since our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"They are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore GOD hath joined together, let not man put asunder (separate)" St. Matthew 19:6:* it would be better to consider divorce as an extreme step and not to resort to it. Husband and wife living together without divorcing will have a healthy impact on the children also. We have come across children of divorced parents developing many mental problems such as split personality or schizophrenia. Some of them are subject to fits of hysterical bouts and they have to suffer for no fault of theirs. All these

can be avoided if either of the parents repents of his/her sins and continues to be patient and be steadfast in prayer.

It is obvious that GOD's original intention and mandate was not for divorce (Malachi 2:16) and because of the hardness of man's heart, Moses deviated from GOD's intention and allowed divorce as a concession in case of immorality, infidelity or unfaithfulness. So, divorce can be taken as a supplement to GOD's Law and as a temporary measure. So, it will be pleasing to GOD if divorce is not permitted. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST says that "*HE hateth (hates) putting away (divorce): ...*" Malachi 2:16.

*"They say unto HIM, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? HE (JESUS) saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered (permitted) you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so."*

St. Matthew 19:7-8

**Matrimony** is a holy relationship. Husband and wife should continue in this holy relationship, physically, mentally and spiritually until they are parted by death. Marriage is honourable in all and it should be honoured by everyone (Hebrews 13:4).

## 5.10 ANGER

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast*

*paid the uttermost farthing."*

St. Matthew 5:21-26

'Kill' means 'murder'. 'Raca' means 'vain or worthless fellow' or 'empty head'. 'Fool' means 'stupid'.

Killing is an act of murder. Anger is the revengeful emotion and inner intention that leads to murder. Anger is the strong and fierce feeling of displeasure that anyone has when something has happened that he thinks is bad and unfair. Anger usually leads to a desire to fight against the person or thing that causes such feeling. Anger is something like madness.

Anyone who is angry with his brother without a cause will be in danger of the judgment. Further, anyone who says to his brother Raca (Empty head) will be in danger of the council. The council refers to the supreme Sanhedrin at Jerusalem having cognizance of the most serious offences, such as blasphemy. Again, anyone who says, "Thou fool" will be in danger of the fire of hell.

*"A soft answer turneth away wrath: but grievous words stir up anger."*

Proverbs 15:1

## 5.11 OATHS

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the LORD thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is GOD's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is HIS footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil."*

St. Matthew 5:33-37

'Forswear' means 'swear falsely' or 'perjure oneself'. 'Communication' means 'word'.

Swearing or oath-taking often forms the basis of actual lying or actual falsehood. If one is in the habit of telling the truth, swearing



or oath-taking is unnecessary. Thus, our LORD JESUS CHRIST commanded, "Swear not at all". Everyone should speak the truth in such a way that his/her 'yes' means yes and his/her 'no' means no. When you are saying 'yes', you should make sure that is what you mean. When you are saying 'no', you should make sure that is what you mean. Say what you mean, mean what you say. Anything that is more than these comes of evil. Anything that is more than these comes from the evil one.

This prohibition of swearing or oath-taking does not refer to official oaths, but to private conduct. The Christians, as the saved people should live a pure, holy and honest life, having a good report or testimony of all men.

Taking an oath in court, swearing "to tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth" was not prohibited by our LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE allowed HIMSELF to be placed under swearing by the high priest.

*"But JESUS held HIS peace. And the high priest answered and said unto HIM, I adjure THEE by the living GOD, that THOU tell us whether THOU be the CHRIST, the SON OF GOD. JESUS saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) sitting on the right hand of Power, and coming in the clouds of heaven."*

St. Matthew 26:63-64

## 5.12 LOVE

JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also ... But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your FATHER which is in heaven: for HE maketh HIS sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do*

*not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your FATHER which is in heaven is perfect."*

St. Matthew 5:38-39, 44-48

Failing to heed the divine call of JESUS to love our enemies would end up in destroying our souls along with those we hate. Even when the guiltless JESUS was hooked on the dead tree (the cross) by HIS enemies, HE loved them and prayed for them (St. Luke 23:34). It is a wonder of wonders. So, everyone should follow this wonderful and divine path of JESUS' love, compassion and mercy and save his/her soul along with others.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST commanded, "**Resist not evil (with evil)**". Evil is the action of the evil ones or the malicious ones. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST showed how the Christian believer or the saved one should respond to personal injury. In retaliation to physical violence, he is to "Turn to him the other (cheek) also". Since the Christian or the saved one is not a natural man, he should never behave as a natural man. The natural man has the natural impulse to strike back but the Christian or the saved one is to "**overcome evil with good**" (Romans 12:21). The most glorious life and the terrible death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF is the greatest example of this truth.

*"Who gave HIMSELF for our sins, that HE might deliver us from this present evil world, ..."*

Galatians 1:4

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave five examples of how the Christian believer or the saved one should react to unfair or unreasonable treatment. In all things, the Christian believer or the saved one should be perfect with a sinless perfection. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 5.13 RESURRECTION

Some of the Sadducees, who said there was no resurrection of the dead, came to our LORD JESUS CHRIST with the following question:

*"Then came to HIM certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked HIM, Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his*

*wife, and raise up seed (offspring) unto his brother. There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children, and died. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife."*

St. Luke 20:27-33

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST answered and said to them,

*"The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of GOD, being the children of the resurrection. Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the LORD the GOD of Abraham, and the GOD of Isaac, and the GOD of Jacob. For HE is not a GOD of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto HIM."*

St. Luke 20:34-38

Some of the scribes responded to HIM,

*"...Master, THOU hast well said."*

St. Luke 20:39

The Sadducees say that there is no resurrection and that there are no angels and spirits. The Pharisees acknowledge all these things. In levirate marriage an unmarried brother is to take his brother's widow to be his own wife. Jews practised levirate marriage as per the commandment of Moses. The Sadducees made light of the Holy Scriptures and the power of GOD, that is, HIS glorious and great resurrection power. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST explained that in the resurrection of the dead, men do not marry, but they, the saved people will be like the angels of GOD in heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST said,

*"I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in ME, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and*

*believeth in ME shall never die. ..."*

St. John 11:25-26

#### 5.14 CARE AND ANXIETY

Our LORD JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said unto HIS disciples,

*"Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and GOD feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls? And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then GOD so clothe the grass, which is today in the field, and tomorrow is cast into the oven; how much more will HE clothe you, O ye of little faith? And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your FATHER knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of GOD; and all these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little flock; for it is your FATHER's good pleasure to give you the kingdom."*

St. Luke 12:22-32

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Creator and Sustainer of nature. To set one's heart on material things or to worry about the lack of them will deprive oneself of the spiritual blessings of GOD. Worry and anxiety are related to the length of one's life. By worrying, a man can add nothing to the span of his life. This state of anxiety is related to having little faith. Faith is the essential thing in the provision of GOD. If one seeks first the kingdom of GOD and HIS righteousness, then all material things will be added to him. When one's priority is spiritual, GOD will take care of the material. GOD guides; GOD provides. So, we need not even worry about tomorrow.

*"But seek ye first the kingdom of GOD, and HIS righteousness;*

*and all these things shall be added unto you."*

St. Matthew 6:33

*"And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares."*

St. Luke 21:34

## 5.15 WHOM TO FEAR ?

Our LORD JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to HIS disciples,

*"And I say unto you MY friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear HIM, which after HE hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear HIM. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before GOD? But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows. Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess ME before men, him shall the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) also confess before the angels of GOD: But he that denieth ME before men shall be denied before the angels of GOD."*

St. Luke 12:4-9

One need not fear those that can only kill physical lives but can never prevent the most glorious and blessed resurrection to everlasting life. Therefore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST reminded HIS disciples that it was more important to fear HIM who had authority over the soul as well as the body and who could bring both soul and body to eternal condemnation in hell. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE who has the sole authority to cast men into hell. Here HE reminded HIS disciples of the FATHER's loving care, even for sparrows. Here we are reminded of our LORD GOD's most gracious care over HIS saints. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The body's death is not the end of a person's life. So, do not be afraid of those who kill the body. But, fear GOD who, after the killing of the body, has power to throw you into hell.

Now, how one regards JESUS CHRIST determines how GOD will regard that one.

### 5.16 WARNING OF PERSECUTIONS

Our LORD JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth and said to HIS disciples,

*“Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for MY sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your FATHER which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for MY name’s sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.”*

St. Matthew 10:16-22

*“And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: For the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.”*

St. Luke 12:11-12

Serpent was commonly regarded as the wisest of beasts. The dove was a symbol of innocence and purity. A cautious wisdom, innocence and purity are necessary, in order to deal with the fierce opposition that HIS people would face.

Synagogues and the councils and governors and kings and magistrates and authorities are tribunals, before which HIS followers will have to give account of their loyalty to HIM. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD will tell them what to say in each situation they would face. Those who are fully saved and truly saved will indeed endure to the end. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 5.17 THE BEATITUDES

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD left HIS celestial world, the heaven and HIS divine body, and lived in flesh in this terrestrial world for about 33½ years for the people of the world, the creations of HIS own hands. HE walked to cities and villages, and cured the diseases of people and cast out devils or demons. HE preached the true Gospel for the people to inherit heaven. HE also preached to them heavenly secrets through common parables, according to their ability to understand. HIS glorious teachings are great truths.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has preached with HIS most holy mouth about 'Who are the blessed people? Who will see the LORD? Who will inherit heaven? and Who will be the greatly blessed in heaven?'

*"And HE opened HIS mouth, and taught them, saying, Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see GOD. Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of GOD. Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for MY sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you."*

St. Matthew 5:2-12

### 5.18 THE STRAIT AND WIDE GATES

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is "the strait gate" or "the narrow gate". Only through this "narrow gate", anyone can enter into heaven. See St. Matthew 7:13-14 at pages 772 and 1065.

'The wide gate and the broad way that leads to destruction' means the gate or the way that leads to hell. 'The strait gate and the narrow way, which leads to life' means the gate or the way, which leads to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. 'Strait gate or narrow way'

means the way full of sufferings, difficulties, mocking, criticism, torture and tribulations.

'Wide gate or broad way' means the way where there are no difficulties, no miseries, no sufferings, no tribulations, no mocking and no torture. But this is the way to hell. The way to hell is broad and wide. There is no restriction; no good order; no good manners and no moral ways. This way is full of sins, filth, injustice and lies. It is a wicked way full of evils, adultery, idolatry, sorcery, deceit, malignity, fornication, wickedness, ungodliness, robbery and murder. It is a way of all atrocities and cruelties. It is the way of death. Death means hell. A large number of people walk in this way towards hell (Proverbs 14:12).

The way to heaven is strait and narrow. It is the perfect way. It is the way of the LORD. It is the good and holy way. It is the way of peace. It is the way of truth. It is the way of life. It is the living way. It is the way of righteousness. It is the way of the kingdom of heaven. It is the right way. But it is the way of tribulations. Only very few people find this strait and narrow living way. It is a great fact that only very few of the few complete their journey and reach heaven. To reach heaven, people cannot and should not walk fulfilling the desires of their heart and flesh. **To reach heaven, we should walk according to the will of GOD alone.** GOD's will is just contrary to the will and wishes of man. To reach heaven one cannot live according to his own will and fancies. One should not do so. Thus, the way to heaven is strait and narrow.

*"...And that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 14:22

## **6 . BEFORE CRUCIFIXION**

**Everybody should prayerfully meditate upon the Passion Week Events. Abib or Nisan is the first month of the Jews or the Israelites. Abib 9 (Sunday)—JESUS' Triumphal Entry into Jerusalem. Abib 10—Cursing the Fig Tree to Teach Lessons to the Jews about Their Outward Show and Fruitlessness (Cursedness) in Their Lives and to HIS Disciples about Belief in GOD. Cleansing the Temple. The**



Unblemished LAMB of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST Appeared in the Temple (Exodus 12:2-14). **Abib 11**—Fig Tree Withered. Disciples Astonished. JESUS Replied to the Crafty Questions. End-Time Signs Foretold. **Abib 12**—JESUS Anointed. Conspiracy of Judas. **Abib 13**—JESUS Established the LORD's Supper (Holy Communion). Passion in the Garden of Gethsemane. Betrayal by Judas and Arrest. JESUS faced Annas, Caiphas and the Sanhedrin. Peter Denied JESUS and Wept. **Abib 14 (Passover Friday)**—JESUS faced Pilate. Faced Herod. Greatly Ridiculed and Mocked. Again faced Pilate. Greatly Mocked and Scourged and Sentenced to Death. Died on the Cross at Calvary. Finished All HIS Work. Buried in Joseph's New Sepulchre (Tomb). **Abib 15 (Sabbath Saturday)**—JESUS Rested from All HIS Work (Genesis 2:1-3). Fight Against Death and Grave. **Abib 16 (Easter Sunday)**—JESUS Won the Death and the Grave. Rose From the Dead. Appeared to Mary Magdalene and HIS Two Disciples.

#### 6.1 THE TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM

*“Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: HE is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.”*

Zechariah 9:9

The above prophetic verse about our LORD JESUS CHRIST has been fulfilled as follows.

*“And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, HE sendeth forth two of HIS disciples, And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you: and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring him. And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the LORD hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither. And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without in a place where two ways met; and they loose him. And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt? And they said unto them even as JESUS had commanded: and they let them go. And they brought the colt to JESUS, and cast their garments on him; and HE sat upon him. And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down*

*branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way. And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna; Blessed is HE that cometh in the name of the LORD: And JESUS entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when HE had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, HE went out unto Bethany with the twelve."*

St. Mark 11:1-9, 11

'Hosanna' means 'LORD, save' or 'please save' or 'save now'.

This event is traditionally known as our LORD JESUS CHRIST's triumphal entry into Jerusalem, by riding on a young ass (donkey) or ass's colt or foal. This ass was the first-born (firstling) ass, redeemed with a lamb, as per the commandment of the LORD GOD in Exodus 13:13. This foal or ass's colt was an animal that had never borne a burden. It was young and inexperienced. No king of the earth would ride such an untrained ass when he was on a mission of peace. Riding on the colt of an ass marked, the official entry of Israel's kings. The ass (donkey) was considered as an animal of peace. The prophecy of Zechariah was fulfilled when JESUS made HIS triumphal entry into Jerusalem.

By this triumphal entry, our LORD JESUS officially offered HIMSELF to the world as MESSIAH or CHRIST, the eternal King from heaven. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST arrived in the full declaration of HIS kingship. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, the kings of the earth came to bring destruction or devastation. But our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the eternal King from heaven came to bring peace upon the earth; HE came to bring peace upon the whole world; HE came to give HIS peace (St. John 14:27).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the most glorious heavenly King; HE is the just and the righteous Judge. HE is the Saviour; HE is the lowly or the humble. JESUS' triumphal entry into Jerusalem by riding on an ass shows HIS great humility. The ass (donkey) was an animal of peace. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the most glorious King from heaven came to bring peace to the whole world. To symbolize this also, HE entered into Jerusalem by riding on an ass.

Now, in heaven our LORD JESUS CHRIST who is called Faithful and True has a unique white horse. HE rides on the white horse with a very great speed, greater than the speed of a flash of lightning (Revelation 19:11).

Many people (men, women, babes and sucklings) who followed our LORD JESUS chanted, saying: "Hosanna!" (Psalm 118:25-26; St. Matthew 21:9).

To signify the glorious and great victory of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the heavenly King, the crowds took the branches of palm trees and went out to meet HIM (St. John 12:13). They used both their garments and the palm tree branches to revere and celebrate the humble and lowly King's coming. All the multitude of the disciples rejoiced and praised GOD with a loud voice for all the mighty works which they had seen (St. Luke 19:37-38).

## 6.2 CLEANSING THE TEMPLE

*"And they come to Jerusalem: and JESUS went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves; And would not suffer (allow) that any man should carry any vessel (wares) through the temple. And HE taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, MY house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves."*

St. Mark 11:15-17

The cleansing of the temple indicates our LORD JESUS CHRIST's contempt for the corruption of Jewish religion, which lacked the power of GOD and purity of life.

There were laws against the misuse of the temple precincts and courts, but no one was enforcing them. They made the temple precincts and courts business centres. In addition to normal business traffic, they used the temple courts as a shortcut.

Pilgrims to Jerusalem carried all sorts of currencies, but they brought no animals or birds for sacrifices. Exchanges and purchases were made at the temple. Temple dues could be paid only in sacred

coinage. Therefore, it was necessary to change one's money. This exchange became a source of income for the family of the high priest. The family of the high priest personally controlled all exchanges and business.

The moneychangers had their tables in the court of the Gentiles. It was very close to the inner confines of temple worship, through which only a Gentile could enter. It was wantonly profaned, in spite of GOD's intent for HIS house to be a place of worship for all. The real atmosphere of the temple amounted to a public bazaar. They made the house of GOD or the house of prayer into a den of thieves.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST could not tolerate these profane acts, disrespecting the most holy GOD. So, HE began to drive out those who were selling and buying. HE overturned the tables of the moneychangers and the seats of those selling doves and HE would not allow anyone to carry any articles for sale through the temple. And HE taught them, and said,

*"Is it not written, MY house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves."*

St. Mark 11:17

Now, everyone should be the temple of the living GOD and everyone should be the temple of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. Since the temple of GOD is holy, everyone should be holy and no one should defile the temple of GOD. For these reasons, our LORD JESUS CHRIST cleansed the temple (II Corinthians 6:16).

*"Know ye not that ye are the temple of GOD, and that the Spirit of GOD dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy; for the temple of GOD is holy, which temple ye are."*

I Corinthians 3:16-17

*"What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) which is in you, which ye have of GOD, and ye are not your own?"*

I Corinthians 6:19

After cleansing the temple (St. Matthew 21:13), the blind and the lame, excluded from the house, especially from the house of prayer

(II Samuel 5:8) were welcomed and healed and cleansed by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in the temple — the house of prayer (St. Matthew 21:14). And children recognized what the religious leaders were blind to, as they chanted the earlier tributes of crowds. They recognized JESUS CHRIST as their 'LORD' and 'SAVIOUR', by chanting Hosanna! 'Hosanna' means 'LORD, save' (Psalm 8:2; St. Matthew 21:15-16).

### 6.3 END-TIME SIGNS

When JESUS was sitting on the mount of Olives, HIS disciples came to HIM privately, and asked,

*“Tell us, ... what shall be the sign of THY coming, and of the end of the world?”*

St. Matthew 24:3

JESUS answered and said unto them,

*“Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in MY name, saying, I am CHRIST; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for MY name’s sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day: For*

*then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is CHRIST, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, HE is in the desert; go not forth: behold, HE is in the secret chambers; believe it not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN be."*

St. Matthew 24:4-27

'SON OF MAN' is 'the LORD JESUS CHRIST'.

And HE spoke to them in a parable,

*"Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of GOD is nigh at hand. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but MY Words shall not pass away. And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the SON OF MAN."*

St. Luke 21:29-36

Now, one of the most important signs before the end of the world is that the gospel of the kingdom of GOD (the kingdom of heaven) should be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come. He who stands firm to the end will be saved. He who stands firm to the end in his salvation from sins and in holiness will get the final salvation. That is, he will get an immortal and glorious body, like the immortal and glorious body of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

## 6.4 JESUS ANOINTED

While JESUS was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, a woman named Mary came to HIM with an alabaster flask of very precious and fragrant ointment of spikenard and poured it on HIS most holy head, as HE sat at the table.

She stood behind HIM at HIS most holy feet weeping and she began to wash HIS most holy feet with tears. Then she wiped them with the hair of her head, kissed HIS most holy feet, and anointed them with the fragrant ointment. And the house was filled with the fragrance of the ointment.

But one of HIS disciples, Judas Iscariot, who was later to betray HIM, objected,

*"Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?"*

St. John 12:5

The three hundred pence (in Greek denarri) was almost a year's wages for a labourer.

He did not say this because he cared about the poor, but because he was a thief; as keeper of the moneybag, he used to take himself what was put into it.

Then our LORD JESUS said,

*"Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on ME. For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but ME ye have not always. She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint MY body to the burying. Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her."*

St. Mark 14:6-9

This good work of Mary was appropriate in view of HIS burial, it might be regarded as symbolic of HIS burial, and it must be regarded as prophetic of HIS burial. Wherever this Gospel, the Good News of our LORD's death and resurrection is preached, the good work done by her will also be preached, in memory of her.

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was well known for HIS association with sinners. In order to save them from their sins HE associated HIMSELF with sinners. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Mary was a sinful woman. Mary came to JESUS and repented of her sins; she confessed her sins; she wept for her sins; she prayed for forgiveness of sins; she prayed for salvation from sins.

Moreover, Mary loved our LORD JESUS CHRIST much, and she felt a tremendous sense of gratitude towards HIM. Therefore, she washed HIS most holy feet with her tears. She let down her hair in public, and wiped HIS most holy feet with her hair. Then she kissed HIS most holy feet, and anointed them with the very precious oil. No Jewish woman should let down her hair in public. It was forbidden to them. Due to her great love towards our LORD JESUS CHRIST, she let down her hair in public, and wiped HIS most holy feet. Due to her great love towards our LORD JESUS CHRIST, her sins were forgiven. By her faith, she was saved, and she went to her house in peace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much:"*

St. Luke 7:47

Our LORD JESUS said to Mary,

*"Thy sins are forgiven. ... Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace."*

St. Luke 7:48, 50

Even though our LORD JESUS healed the leprosy of Simon, he did not love HIM much. He had not done what he could. Lovelessness of Simon made him unaware of his sins. Lovelessness of Simon made him unaware of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's forgiveness, and salvation. Simon had not chosen what is good, the good part. Mary had chosen what is good, the good part. Simon had not chosen the good part, the kingdom of heaven. Mary had chosen the good part, the kingdom of heaven. This only one thing is needed for everyone. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part,*



*which shall not be taken away from her."*

St. Luke 10:42

## 6.5 CONSPIRACY OF JUDAS

Satan entered into Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve. He went to the chief priests and asked,

*"What will ye give me, and I will deliver HIM unto you? ..."*

St. Matthew 26:15

*"If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver."*

Zechariah 11:12

So they counted out to him thirty pieces of silver (thirty silver coins). The prophecy of Zechariah was fulfilled. From then on Judas watched for an opportunity to betray (hand over) HIM to them in the absence of the multitude. Due to our LORD JESUS CHRIST's great popularity among the multitude, they feared to arrest HIM in broad daylight, since such an arrest would provoke a riot. See St. Matthew 26:14-16; St. Luke 22:3-6.

Thirty pieces of silver was the price of a common slave. Judas Iscariot, the traitor sold his own Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST as a common slave.

Judas Iscariot was consumed with greed for money; the love of money or greed for money is the root of all kinds of evil.

*"For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows."*

I Timothy 6:10

Now, Satan stood always on the right hand side of Judas Iscariot, due to his greed for money.

*"...Let Satan stand at his right hand."*

Psalms 109:6

The moment Judas Iscariot decided to go to the chief priests and captains to betray our LORD JESUS CHRIST, Satan entered into him.

*"Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray HIM unto them."*

St. Luke 22:3-4

## 6.6 WASHING DISCIPLES' FEET

In Israel, washing the guests' feet was always done by the humblest of the servants or by the slaves. It was considered a menial task.

The LORD, JESUS CHRIST, on the night HE was to be betrayed and before observing the glorious Holy Communion, the LORD's Supper, HE wore a towel on HIS waist, and HE poured water into a basin and washed the feet of HIS disciples with water from that basin and wiped their feet with the towel HE was wearing.

The LORD, JESUS CHRIST thus humbled HIMSELF and served HIS disciples, the creations of HIS own hands, like a servant and a slave. This is divine humility. This is the great humility of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

By kneeling down and washing HIS disciples feet, our LORD JESUS CHRIST showed HIS true love, true lowliness, true meekness and true humility and set an example of HIS divine love, divine lowliness, divine meekness and divine humility. HE also commanded HIS disciples to wash one another's feet to possess these divine qualities (St. John 13:12-15).

In order to deliver people who were enslaved by pride, the quality of devil, the LORD humbled HIMSELF before HIS people in this way. Those who observe the true Holy Communion or the LORD's Supper, wash the feet of one another, wipe their feet with their garments and serve one another in humility, following the model of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. See St. John 13:3-17.

In addition, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded HIS disciples to wash one another's feet.

*"If I then, your LORD and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. If ye know these*

*things, happy are ye if ye do them."*

St. John 13:14-15, 17

The purpose of the action of washing of feet by the LORD JESUS CHRIST was to set an example and to establish an ordinance to HIS disciples or believers. The action of washing of feet symbolizes humility and cleansing. To restore and renew fellowship with one another, this cleansing by the washing of feet is very essential. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was washing HIS disciples' feet, HE washed the feet of Judas Iscariot earlier. At that time, Judas Iscariot was not humble before our LORD JESUS CHRIST; he was stiff-necked and no humility was seen in him, since he had already promised to betray our LORD JESUS CHRIST to the chief priests and captains for thirty silver coins.

But, when our LORD JESUS CHRIST was coming near to Simon Peter to wash his feet, he said to HIM,

*"LORD, dost THOU wash my feet?"*

St. John 13:6

Our LORD JESUS answered and said to him,

*"What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter."*

St. John 13:7

Then Simon Peter said to HIM,

*"THOU shalt never wash my feet. ..."*

St. John 13:8

Our LORD JESUS answered him,

*"If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with ME."*

St. John 13:8

Simon Peter replied to HIM,

*"LORD, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head."*

St. John 13:9

Our LORD JESUS said to him,

*"He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all."*

St. John 13:10

Here, 'washed' means 'bathed' or 'saved'. 'Whit' means 'bit'.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had known who was going to betray HIM, and that was why HE said,

*"Ye are not all clean."*

St. John 13:11

## 6.7 THE LORD'S SUPPER (HOLY COMMUNION) ESTABLISHED

The Old Testament feast of Passover was ended by the LORD JESUS CHRIST with HIS death as the Lamb of GOD.

The LORD JESUS CHRIST established the New Testament feast of Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion on the night HE was betrayed.

*"...That the LORD JESUS the same night in which HE was betrayed took bread: And when HE had given thanks, HE brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is MY body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of ME. After the same manner also HE took the cup, when HE had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in MY blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of ME. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the LORD's death till HE come."*

I Corinthians 11:23-26

As per the ordinance of the Passover, the Old Testament feast of Passover was observed by the Israelites during night-time (Exodus 12:42). Now, the New Testament feast of Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion should also be observed during night-time, as observed by our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion is observed in remembrance of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. It is observed in remembrance of HIS great sufferings and in remembrance of HIS terrible death. It is the most blessed feast of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Luke 22:1-20).

## 6.8 BETRAYAL FORETOLD

When observing the Old Testament feast of Passover, as a prophetic fulfilment, our LORD JESUS CHRIST said to HIS disciples,

*"...He that eateth bread with ME hath lifted up his heel against ME. Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am HE."*

St. John 13:18-19

After HE had said this, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was troubled in spirit and testified and said to HIS disciples,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray ME."*

St. John 13:21

They were very sad and began to say to HIM one after the other,

*"LORD, is it I?"*

St. Matthew 26:22

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST answered and said,

*"He that dippeth his hand with ME in the dish, the same shall betray ME. The SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) goeth as it is written of HIM: but woe unto that man by whom the SON OF MAN is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born."*

St. Matthew 26:23-24

The other disciples did not notice who had dipped his hand with HIM in the dish. So, they could not understand who the betrayer was.

Then Judas Iscariot, the one who would betray HIM said,

*"Master, is it I?..."*

St. Matthew 26:25

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST answered and said to him,

*"Thou hast said."*

St. Matthew 26:25

'Thou hast said' means 'It is as you said'.

Since Judas Iscariot was very near to JESUS and our LORD JESUS replied to him in a very soft and gentle answer with a very low voice, the other disciples could not understand who the betrayer was.

In the meantime, the disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST looked at one another, perplexed about whom HE spoke that **one of you shall betray ME**. John the disciple, whom JESUS loved, was reclining on JESUS' bosom. Simon Peter who sat at a distance beckoned John, and said,

*"...Ask who it should be of whom HE spake."*

St. John 13:24

John lying on JESUS' breast, asked HIM secretly,

*"LORD, who is it?"*

St. John 13:25

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST answered John in a very soft and gentle manner and in a very low voice,

*"He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it..."*

St. John 13:26

'Sop' means 'piece of bread'.

At that time, Judas Iscariot was keenly watching and waiting for an opportunity to betray our LORD JESUS CHRIST to the chief priests and captains. Then our LORD JESUS dipped the piece of bread in the sauce, and HE gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. After Judas Iscariot took the bread, Satan again entered into him (St. John 13:26-27).

Then our LORD JESUS told him,

*"That thou doest, do quickly."*

St. John 13:27

Judas Iscariot felt deeply ashamed, since his conspiracy against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was revealed plainly by HIM. But no one at the table understood why JESUS said so to him. Since Judas Iscariot had the moneybag, some thought JESUS was telling him to buy the things that were needed for the feast, or to give something to the poor.

After receiving the piece of bread, Judas Iscariot went out immediately, and it was night. The Old Testament feast of Passover was observed during night-time.

After fulfilling the Old Testament feast of Passover, our LORD JESUS CHRIST introduced the New Testament feast of Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion. It was night. While observing the New Testament feast of Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, Judas Iscariot was not present.

## 6.9 THE NEW COMMANDMENT

After observing the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are MY disciples, if ye have love one to another."*

St. John 13:34-35

The disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST are HIS believers. The disciples or the believers were called Christians first in Antioch.

*"...And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch."*

Acts 11:26

The term 'Christian' is used in two other verses: Acts 26:28; I Peter 4:16.

This New command of our LORD JESUS must be obeyed by HIS disciples or by HIS believers or by the saved or by the Christians.

## 6.10 GREAT PROMISE

After observing the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, JESUS opened HIS most holy mouth, and said,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on ME, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto MY FATHER. And whatsoever ye shall ask in MY name, that will I do, that the FATHER may be*

*glorified in the SON. If ye shall ask any thing in MY name, I will do it."*

St. John 14:12-14

This **great promise** of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has not yet been fulfilled. **This great promise will be fulfilled by a man who has great faith in JESUS.** This great promise will be fulfilled during the latter rain of the HOLY SPIRIT (Zechariah 10:1). Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will do greater works by the HOLY SPIRIT with new power and strength in action, through that man than what HE has been doing.

For the fulfilment of this great promise of our LORD JESUS, steadfast and fervent and constant prayer is very essential. HIS people, the saved should assemble together with one accord and continue always in continuous prayers along with all kinds of prayers and supplications in the Spirit. The saved should watch and pray in the Spirit. They should wait and pray in the Spirit. They should raise their voices together in prayer to GOD with one accord in the Spirit, for the work of the HOLY SPIRIT with new and strong certainty in prayer.

#### 6.11 PASSION IN THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE

After the LORD's Supper, our LORD JESUS CHRIST went with HIS disciples to the garden of Gethsemane. HE said to them,

**"Pray that ye enter not into temptation."**

St. Luke 22:40

But they slept. So they were drawn into temptation. Particularly JESUS said to Peter,

*"What, could ye not watch with ME one hour? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."*

St. Matthew 26:40-41

But Peter fell into a deep slumber and into great temptation. He denied JESUS, his own Master, and his own GOD three times, as already predicted by JESUS.

*"And JESUS saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt*



*deny ME thrice."*

St. Mark 14:30

Our LORD JESUS desires our sincere love and obedience to HIM (St. John 21:15) and HE also desires our true knowledge of HIM (Hosea 6:6). Peter's incomprehension, disobedience and insincere love, at that time, led him into great temptation.

Judas Iscariot, the traitor was not with them. He had already left to meet the chief priests and elders to betray JESUS.

Our LORD JESUS knelt down, fell with HIS face to the ground, and prayed with great agony and with loud cries and tears for the sinners of the whole world. **HE knelt down (St. Luke 22:41) and fell down with HIS face on the ground on HIS face (St. Matthew 26:39) and prayed to save our souls from cleaving or sticking unto the dust or ground (Psalm 119:25).** At that time, HE was greatly pressed and greatly squeezed; HIS tiny capillaries in the sweat glands had broken and HIS most holy blood mixed with HIS sweat, thus the bloody sweat (Haematidrosis/Hematidrosis). So, HIS sweat was like great drops of blood falling down to the ground. This was the most agonizing prayer of our LORD JESUS. So, our LORD became very weak and very tired.

*"And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and HE saith to HIS disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray. And HE taketh with HIM Peter and James and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy; And saith unto them, MY soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch. And HE went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed ..."*

St. Mark 14:32-35

*"And being in an agony HE prayed more earnestly: and HIS sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground."*

St. Luke 22:44

*"Who in the days of HIS flesh, when HE had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto HIM that was able to save HIM from death, and was heard in that HE feared; Though HE were a SON, yet learned HE obedience by the things which HE suffered; And being made perfect, HE became the*

*author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey HIM."*

Hebrews 5:7-9

During HIS most agonizing prayer in the garden of Gethsemane, all HIS disciples were in great slumber. At that time, an angel from heaven appeared to HIM and strengthened HIM (St. Luke 22:43). This incidence clearly shows that our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST had an earthly body, like our body, and HE was too tired to stand even. What a pitiful thing it is!

We know the first sin entered into mankind through Satan, the devil, in the garden of Eden. The sin that entered the garden of Eden was overcome and killed by the passion of JESUS in the garden of Gethsemane. Satan, the devil was the sole cause for the sin. Therefore, HE caught hold of Satan in the garden of Gethsemane to crush his head on the cross at Calvary.

#### **6.12 BETRAYAL BY JUDAS**

Then Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went to the upper house where our LORD JESUS CHRIST observed the feast of Passover with HIS disciples (St. Mark 14:12-17). But our LORD JESUS CHRIST was not there. So he straightaway arrived in the garden of Gethsemane. 'Gethsemane' means 'olive press'. Garden of Gethsemane was an olive garden. In that garden, there were olive groves and an olive press. The required olive oil for the LORD's temple was pressed from that olive press. There our LORD JESUS CHRIST was HIMSELF pressed for the sinners and HIS most holy blood was shed in great drops. At that time, HIS most holy nerves were broken and HIS most holy blood was poured out for the sinners. Therefore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was too tired to walk. HE was so hungry and thirsty.

Now, Judas Iscariot knew the garden, since our LORD JESUS CHRIST had often retreated there with HIS disciples. So Judas Iscariot came to the garden quite sure of finding JESUS there. With him, did the chief priests and elders of the people send a large crowd, armed with swords, clubs, and other weapons and with lanterns and torches.

Judas Iscariot was the leader of that large multitude, and so he came in front of them. Judas, the betrayer had said to them about

John, one of the twelve, resembled JESUS. Therefore, the betrayer had arranged a signal with them:

*"Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is HE: hold (seize) HIM fast."*

St. Matthew 26:48

That day was a full moon day, and at that time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was standing under the shadow of an olive tree. JESUS, knowing all that was going to happen to HIM, went out of the shadow of the olive tree to meet them. See St. John 18:4. The moonlight was shining on HIM. Judas, the betrayer clearly saw our LORD JESUS CHRIST. But he dared not come near HIM; he was so frightened. Then our LORD JESUS said to him,

*"Friend, wherefore art thou come? ..."*

St. Matthew 26:50

Then Judas, the betrayer came to our LORD JESUS CHRIST, and said,

*"Hail, Master; and kissed HIM."*

St. Matthew 26:49

'Hail, Master' means 'Greetings, Rabbi'.

Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST said to him,

*"Judas, betrayest thou the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) with a kiss?"*

St. Luke 22:48

Judas Iscariot, the traitor betrayed our LORD JESUS CHRIST by a deceitful kiss. Kiss is the symbol of love. But the kiss of Judas, the traitor is the signal to murder, and it is a signal to abuses, insults, scorns, reproaches, spitting, scourging, beatings, shames, mocking, great sufferings, dishonour, etc.

Even though, Judas the traitor revealed our LORD JESUS CHRIST to the multitude by his deceitful kiss, they could not seize HIM. Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST asked them,

*"Whom seek ye?"*

St. John 18:4

They answered HIM,

*"JESUS of Nazareth."*

St. John 18:5

Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST said to them,

*"I am HE."*

St. John 18:5

Judas, the traitor was standing with them. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST said "I AM HE", HIS most holy power had a tremendous impact on them and they all drew back and fell to the ground; Judas, the traitor also drew back and fell to the ground. What a most powerful GOD our LORD JESUS CHRIST is! HE is the great "I AM ". HE is the self-existent Creator.

They were so frightened. They were struck and wounded by their weapons and burned by their lanterns and torches.

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST asked them,

*"Whom seek ye?" And they said, "JESUS of Nazareth."*

St. John 18:7

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST answered,

*"I have told you that I am HE: if therefore ye seek ME, let these go their way."*

St. John 18:8

Thus our LORD JESUS CHRIST delivered HIMSELF into the hands of sinful men by keeping HIS great power in suspense. Then the detachment of soldiers with its commander and the Jewish officials arrested JESUS and bound HIM. Unless HE delivered HIMSELF into the hands of those men, no one could touch HIM. Our LORD JESUS is the most powerful GOD. See St. Matthew 26:47-50; St. John 18:1-9, 12.

They bound HIS exceedingly holy hands behind HIM and put handcuffs on HIS exceedingly holy hands. Two men, one in front and another behind HIM led our LORD by a long iron chain tied to HIS Holy waist. They pulled HIM hither and thither violently. So our LORD fell to the ground.

While JESUS was in Galilee HE said to HIS disciples,

*"The SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again."*

St. Luke 24:7

All these were very accurately predicted by our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

### 6.13 LAST MIRACLE

When JESUS was seized and arrested by those men, Peter, one of HIS disciples reached for his sword, drew it and struck the servant of the high priest, cutting off his right ear. Then our LORD JESUS said to him,

*"Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to MY FATHER, and HE shall presently give ME more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?"*

St. Matthew 26:52-54

At that time our LORD JESUS said to the multitudes,

*"Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take ME? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on ME. But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. ..."*

St. Matthew 26:55-56

Then all HIS disciples deserted HIM, and fled. Our LORD JESUS is the LORD of hosts and the LORD Almighty. Each Roman legion had six thousand soldiers. 'More than twelve legions of angels' means 'more than seventy two thousand fighting angels of the LORD'. During the time of the Jewish king Hezekiah, one fighting angel of the LORD massacred single handed, one hundred and eighty-five thousand Assyrian soldiers. See Isaiah 37:36. From this anyone can understand the mighty power of an angel of the LORD GOD.

JESUS touched the man's ear and healed him. HE healed him by replacing the ear. His name was Malchus. This was the last miracle before HIS crucifixion. See St. Luke 22:50-51; St. John 18:10.

## 6.14 JESUS IN A PIT

They brought JESUS first to Annas, who was the father-in-law of Caiaphas. Caiaphas was the high priest that year and Annas was a retired high priest. Annas lived in the palace of Caiaphas. Caiaphas was the one who had advised the Jews that it would be good if one man died for the people. He prophesied that JESUS would die for the Jewish nation and would reach the Gentiles.

*“And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself; but being high priest that year, he prophesied that JESUS should die for that nation; And not for that nation only, but that also HE should gather together in one the children of GOD that were scattered abroad.”*

St. John 11:49-52

‘Expedient’ means ‘advantageous or good’.

Now near the palace of Caiaphas, there was a deep and dark pit for the criminals. They dropped JESUS, bound, into that pit and shut HIM up there.

*“THOU hast laid ME in the lowest pit, in darkness, in the deeps. THY wrath lieth hard upon ME, and THOU hast afflicted ME with all THY waves. THOU hast put away MINE acquaintance far from ME; THOU hast made ME an abomination unto them: I am shut up, and I cannot come forth.”*

Psalms 88:6-8

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in a most miserable condition inside the deep and dark pit. HE was so tired and weary. HE was so hungry and thirsty. HE was in a very pathetic and pitiable condition.

## 6.15 SEVEN UNJUST TRIALS

Then, they took JESUS out of that deep and dark pit, and brought HIM, bound, before Annas, the retired high priest for the **first unjust trial** against HIM (St. John 18:12-14, 19-23). The retired high priests were also called the high priests. Annas, the retired high priest was a very old man; he was a very venomous old man. Our

LORD JESUS CHRIST, entirely guiltless and pure was standing, bound, before that very venomous old man. What a pitiable thing it is!

Again, Annas the retired high priest had no power to try the accused. The Council or the Sanhedrin, the highest Jewish Judicial Body or the Jewish Supreme Court had the power to try the accused. Hence, Annas' trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was entirely against the law.

Further, during trial, the accused should not be bound, the accused should be given freedom to argue and present his case, and the trial should not be conducted during night-time. But, they did each and everything against the law.

Annas held the first unjust trial against JESUS unjustly and unlawfully during night-time. Annas questioned our LORD JESUS CHRIST about HIS disciples and HIS teaching, to condemn HIM to death. Our LORD JESUS answered him,

*"I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing. Why askest thou ME? ask them which heard ME, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said."*

St. John 18:20-21

When our LORD JESUS had thus spoken, one of the officials or one of the servants of the retired high priest, standing nearby, struck HIM in the face strongly with the palm of his hand, and asked, "Is this the way you answer the high priest?" Our faultless and entirely guiltless holy LORD JESUS had subjected HIMSELF to receiving severe blows for us. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had not been given freedom to argue or explain HIS standpoint and HE had not been given proper opportunity to argue or present HIS case. These were strictly against the law. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had been struck during the trial. It was also contrary to the law. Again, the trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was conducted during night-time. It was also undoubtedly in violation of the law.

Then, our LORD JESUS asked the servant of the retired high priest,

*"If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou ME?"*

St. John 18:23

Now, the servant could not answer the question of our LORD JESUS CHRIST and no one could answer the question of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had not spoken any evil or done any wrong. So, they could not bear witness of any evil or wrong against our LORD JESUS CHRIST. No one can prove HIM guilty of sin. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

HE asked,

*"Which of you convinceth (convicts) ME of sin? ..."*

St. John 8:46

Annas found JESUS not guilty. And no one found HIM guilty. But, Annas unjustly and unlawfully tried our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST during night-time and our LORD JESUS was unjustly struck in the face during the trial. Binding the accused during the trial was strictly against the law; striking the accused during the trial was strictly against the law; conducting the trial during night-time was strictly against the law; and not giving freedom to argue or explain the standpoint of the accused was strictly against the law. Hence, Annas conducted the first unjust trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST fully against the law.

After that, Annas sent our LORD JESUS CHRIST, still bound, to Caiaphas the high priest for the **second unjust trial**, to pronounce death sentence on our LORD JESUS CHRIST by night (St. John 18:24). Annas was the father-in-law of Caiaphas. Caiaphas, the high priest that year, had prophesied that JESUS would die for the Jews and for the Gentiles. He said,

*"Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient (good) for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that JESUS should die for that nation; And not for that nation only, but that also HE should gather together in one the children of GOD that were scattered abroad."*

St. John 11:49-52



Now, Caiaphas was a venomous tricky plotting high priest. He was a venomous tricky plotter. He was plotting with his men, to kill our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, entirely guiltless and pure was standing, bound, before that venomous tricky plotter. What a pitiable thing it is!

Again, Caiaphas, the high priest had no independent power to try the accused; he should not try the accused in his palace; he should not try the accused during night-time; and he should unbind the accused during the trial. But, he tried our LORD JESUS CHRIST independently in his palace, during night-time and he did not unbind our LORD JESUS CHRIST during the trial. Thus, his trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was entirely against the law.

Further, Caiaphas' independent trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was entirely against the law, since he had no independent authority to try the accused. Even though, Caiaphas was the head of the Council or the Sanhedrin or the Jewish Supreme Court, he was empowered neither to pronounce any sentence nor to carry out a death sentence. Furthermore, even the Council or the Sanhedrin or the Jewish Supreme Court had no power to carry out a death sentence. Pontius Pilate, the Roman governor alone had the authority to carry out a death sentence.

Caiaphas, the high priest, held the second unjust trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST, but he also found no guilt in JESUS. And no one found any guilt in JESUS. Hence, the second unjust trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST, conducted by Caiaphas was fully against the law.

In the meantime, Caiaphas, the head of the Council or the Sanhedrin sent his men to call for the elders of the Council or the Sanhedrin. There were seventy-two councillors. Elders of the Council or the Sanhedrin were considered as judges of the Jewish Supreme Court. Only a few elders of the Council or the Sanhedrin, and the chief priests and scribes assembled there.

Then, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was brought before the Council of elders or the Sanhedrin, in the palace of Caiaphas, still bound, for the **third unjust trial** during night-time, to pronounce death sentence on HIM by night. Binding the accused during the trial was strictly against the law.

Now, the Council or the Sanhedrin should not assemble during the night, but they assembled during night. The Sanhedrin should not assemble in the palace of the high priest, but they assembled in the palace of the high priest. The Sanhedrin should always assemble in the public hall specifically designed for their assemblage. But they did not assemble in the public hall intended for their assemblage. The Sanhedrin should not assemble without a minimum number of one-third councillors. That is, there must be present a minimum number of twenty-four councillors. But they assembled without a minimum number of one-third councillors. Of the one-third councillors present, above two thirds must vote for giving a punishment. That is, out of the minimum number of twenty-four councillors, seventeen must vote for giving a punishment. This punishment should not be confirmed on the basis of the initial trial. But, the case should come up for trial once again before confirming the punishment. The Sanhedrin, not at all followed these rules and regulations, in the trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST. What a terrible miscarriage of justice it is!

The third unjust trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was held by the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court, entirely against the law and entirely against the rules and regulations of the Sanhedrin. The Sanhedrin decided that our LORD JESUS CHRIST deserved death. Their decision was against the law. Their decision was against the rules and regulations of the Sanhedrin. They found no guilt in JESUS. And no one found any guilt in JESUS. But, they confirmed that our LORD JESUS CHRIST deserved death. So they pronounced death sentence against our LORD JESUS CHRIST. What an unlawful and unjust act it is!

First of all, the chief priests and the Council of elders or the Sanhedrin sought false witnesses against our LORD JESUS CHRIST, to put HIM to death, but they found none. But at last two false witnesses came forward.

*"Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against JESUS, to put HIM to death; But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, And said, This fellow said, I am*

*able to destroy the temple of GOD, and to build it in three days."*

St. Matthew 26:59-61

Then Caiaphas, the high priest rose up and said to our LORD JESUS CHRIST,

*"Answerest THOU nothing? what is it which these witness against THEE?"*

St. Matthew 26:62

But our LORD JESUS CHRIST kept silent. And the high priest answered and said to our LORD JESUS CHRIST,

*"I adjure THEE by the living GOD, that THOU tell us whether THOU be the CHRIST, the SON OF GOD."*

St. Matthew 26:63

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST said to the high priest,

*"Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) sitting on the right hand of Power, and coming in the clouds of heaven."*

St. Matthew 26:64

'Thou hast said' means 'It is as you said'.

Then the high priest rent (tore) his clothes, and said,

*"HE hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard HIS blasphemy. What think ye?..."*

St. Matthew 26:65-66

And they answered and said,

*"HE is guilty of death."*

St. Matthew 26:66

The third unjust trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST ended with the charge of blasphemy. But our LORD JESUS had not blasphemed. What HE declared was the truth and nothing but the truth. But they had not accepted HIS truth. So, they concluded that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was guilty of blasphemy, which deserved punishment with death. HE deserved no death, but they pronounced death sentence

on our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST by night. What a cruel act it is! What an unlawful and unjust act it is!

Thus, the third unjust trial against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was conducted by the Sanhedrin, fully against the law and fully against the rules and regulations of the Sanhedrin.

The high priest should never tear his clothes because of anything. But Caiaphas, the high priest tore his clothes against the law. This action of Caiaphas, the high priest referred to the end of his ministry and his priesthood. This action of the high priest referred to the end of the Old Testament priesthood, and it referred to the end of the Old Testament ministry.

Then they began to inflict great insults, injuries, and pain on our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They blindfolded HIM. They spat in HIS face. They slapped HIM. They struck HIM with their fists. They struck HIM in the face. They blasphemously spoke against HIM.

*"Then did they spit in HIS face, and buffeted (beat) HIM; and others smote HIM with the palms of their hands, Saying, Prophesy unto us, THOU CHRIST, Who is he that smote THEE?"*

St. Matthew 26:67-68

*"And the men that held JESUS mocked HIM, and smote HIM. And when they had blindfolded HIM, they struck HIM on the face, and asked HIM, saying, Prophesy, who is it that smote (struck) THEE? And many other things blasphemously spake they against HIM."*

St. Luke 22:63-65

By this time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was very weary and tired; HE was extremely thirsty and hungry as well; HE was too tired to walk and was totally exhausted. What a pitiful thing it is!

For the **fourth unjust trial** against our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Sanhedrin assembled in the public hall, noted for their assemblage, to satisfy the Roman governor. Caiaphas, the head of the Sanhedrin and a few councillors were seated there to pronounce a death sentence against our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST again and to confirm HIS death sentence.

Early in the morning, they assembled there to satisfy Pontius Pilate, the Roman governor. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was brought before the Sanhedrin again. At that time, they deceitfully loosened up the knots on our LORD JESUS to mislead the people and to convince them that they were trying HIM honestly and in accordance with the regulations. By this deceitful act, they cheated the people. But, two mighty soldiers stood on both sides of our LORD JESUS and pressed against HIM closely and firmly causing hardship, pain and agony to HIM. By this time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was very tired and weary; HE was extremely hungry and thirsty as well; HE was too tired to walk and was totally exhausted; HE was too tired to stand and was completely exhausted. What a pitiful thing it is!

At daybreak, the elders of the Council or the Sanhedrin asked our LORD JESUS,

*"Art THOU the CHRIST (MESSIAH)? tell us."*

St. Luke 22:67

The elders of the Council were seeking further admission that could be a charge of blasphemy. During the previous unjust trial, Caiaphas had already sought an admission that could be the foundation of a charge of blasphemy. There Caiaphas, the high priest had already adjured HIM by the living GOD.

And our LORD JESUS said to them,

*"If I tell you, ye will not believe: And if I also ask you, ye will not answer ME, nor let ME go. Hereafter shall the SON OF MAN sit on the right hand of the Power of GOD."*

St. Luke 22:67-69

'The SON OF MAN' means 'the LORD JESUS CHRIST'.

Then they all asked HIM,

*"Art THOU then the SON OF GOD?"*

St. Luke 22:70

And our LORD JESUS replied to them,

*"Ye say that I am."*

St. Luke 22:70

This means that you rightly say that I am the SON OF GOD.

Then they said,

*"What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of HIS own mouth."*

St. Luke 22:71

In the fourth unjust trial, the elders of the Council or the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court confirmed their previous unfair decision. There they had already come to the decision to put JESUS to death and pronounced a verdict of guilty to put HIM to death. After confirming a death sentence against our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST, they bound HIM again strongly.

As per the rules and regulations of the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court there should be, present a minimum number of twenty-four councillors. But the required number of councillors were not present. Very few councillors were present. So their decision against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was entirely against the law, and entirely against the rules and regulations of the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court.

Again, on the basis of the first day trial, no one should be punished. To pronounce a verdict against the accused and to give a punishment, the Sanhedrin should try the accused once again on another day. But, they had not tried our LORD JESUS on another day. So, their decision against our LORD JESUS CHRIST was entirely against the law, and entirely against the rules and regulations of the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court. They wanted to kill our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST at once. They were determined to kill our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST at any cost and at all costs.

Now, the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court could pronounce a verdict on a religious offence, but they could not carry out a death sentence. The Roman governor alone could carry out a death sentence.

Further, these four unjust trials against our LORD JESUS CHRIST were held on the basis that JESUS was trying to subvert the Holy Scriptures. But our LORD JESUS had never subverted the Holy Scriptures. And our LORD JESUS was condemned for blasphemy, that was,

for supposedly elevating HIMSELF to the divine status of GOD. But our LORD JESUS had never blasphemed. HE always told the divine truth about HIMSELF. HE is truthful always. Again, the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Supreme Court tried to show that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was guilty of religious crime. But our LORD JESUS CHRIST had not committed any religious crime. HE was entirely guiltless and holy. So HE was not guilty of religious crime.

For the **fifth unjust trial** against our LORD JESUS CHRIST, in the morning, from a sleepless night, the battered and bruised and dehydrated and exhausted JESUS was taken across the Praetorium, the seat of the governor. They brought JESUS, bound, before Pontius Pilate, the Roman governor. Our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST was standing before Pilate. Pilate was a dishonest governor and a cowardly judge.

Since the Jews clearly knew that Pilate would not consider any religious crime and that he would not be impressed by a charge of blasphemy against GOD, they tried to show that our LORD JESUS was guilty of political crime against Rome, viz., the Roman emperor, Caesar.

Now, Pilate's only concern was whether or not JESUS had incited rebellion against Rome. But our LORD JESUS' answers clearly proved to him that HE had not incited any rebellion against Rome. Thus, Pilate found no fault or guilt in JESUS. When Pilate asked for the accusation, he clearly realized that JESUS had been delivered to him because of their jealousy. But Pilate did not acquit our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

When Pilate saw our LORD JESUS CHRIST, HIS divine appearance and HIS divine brilliance had a tremendous impact on him and made Pilate feel that HE was not at all guilty. But the whole multitude brought false accusations against our LORD JESUS. To avoid ceremonial defilement, the Jews did not enter the palace of Pilate, the Gentile. To avoid ceremonial defilement, they stood outside the palace of Pilate; they wanted to be able to eat the Passover. But they were willing to commit murder. They could not understand that the defilement caused by murdering innocent blood would bring hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Then Pilate went out to them and asked,

*"What accusation bring ye against this MAN?"*

St. John 18:29

They answered and said to Pilate,

*"If HE were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered HIM up unto thee."*

St. John 18:30

'Malefactor' means 'evildoer'.

When Pilate asked for the accusation, they admitted that there was none deserving of death by Roman law.

Then Pilate said to them,

*"Take ye HIM, and judge HIM according to your law."*

St. John 18:31

And the Jews said to Pilate,

*"It is not lawful for us to put any man to death."*

St. John 18:31

This is a fulfilment of St. John 12:32, the saying of our LORD JESUS CHRIST about HIS death, signifying by what death HE would die. If the Romans, rather than the Jews, had slain HIM, it would have been by crucifixion.

*"And I, if I be lifted (crucified) up from the earth, will draw all men unto ME."*

St. John 12:32

Now, Pilate clearly realized and was totally convinced that JESUS had been delivered to him because of their utter jealousy and uncontrollable passion and anger. Pilate looked at the guiltless and calm and serene face of our LORD JESUS. But, he could not find anything, blamable, reprobable, or reproachable either in HIS appearance or expression on the most holy and divine face of our LORD JESUS or in HIS statements. Pilate found no guilt in JESUS and no one could ever find any guilt in JESUS. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then the Jews brought three false accusations against our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They were:



(1) HE was subverting the nation. (2) HE was opposing the payment of taxes to Caesar. (3) HE continued to claim that HE HIMSELF was CHRIST, a King.

*"And they began to accuse HIM, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that HE HIMSELF is CHRIST a King."*

St. Luke 23:2

Pilate very well knew that the Jews never liked the rule of a Gentile ruler, like Caesar, the Roman emperor. He also knew that the Jews never liked the payment of taxes to Caesar. Further, he knew that due to these two reasons, the Jews were subverting their nation. Therefore, he concluded that these three accusations against our LORD JESUS CHRIST were false accusations.

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST made no reply to these three false accusations.

*"And when HE was accused of the chief priests and elders, HE answered nothing."*

St. Matthew 27:12

Then Pilate said to our LORD JESUS,

*"Hearest THOU not how many things they witness against THEE?"*

St. Matthew 27:13

But our LORD JESUS CHRIST made no reply, so Pilate was astonished greatly.

*"And HE answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly."*

St. Matthew 27:14

To know the actual truth, Pilate called and enquired our LORD JESUS secretly. He asked our LORD JESUS,

*"Art THOU the King of the Jews?"*

St. John 18:33

Our LORD JESUS answered him,

*"Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of ME?"*

St. John 18:34

Then Pilate answered to HIM proudly,

*"Am I a Jew? THINE own nation and the chief priests have delivered THEE unto me: what hast THOU done?"*

St. John 18:35

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST did not answer his proud and haughty question. But HE talked about HIS great magnificence and about HIS greatly magnificent heavenly kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD.

*"JESUS answered, MY kingdom is not of this world: if MY kingdom were of this world, then would MY servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is MY kingdom not from hence."*

St. John 18:36

Pilate again asked our LORD JESUS,

*"Art THOU a King then?"*

St. John 18:37

Our LORD JESUS answered and said to him,

*"Thou sayest (rightly) that I am a King. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth MY voice."*

St. John 18:37

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the KING of kings. HE is the heavenly King. HE is the Only King from heaven.

Then Pilate asked our LORD JESUS,

*"What is truth?"*

St. John 18:38

But, before hearing the answer to his question, Pilate went out and said to the Jews,

*"I find in HIM no fault at all."*

St. John 18:38

Pilate again said to the chief priests and the multitude,

*"I find no fault in this MAN."*

St. Luke 23:4

Pilate found no fault or guilt in JESUS. But he did not acquit our LORD JESUS. Pilate wanted to please and satisfy the chief priests and the elders and the multitude, since he was a dishonest governor and judge.

When the chief priests and the elders saw that their accusations were quashed away by Pilate, they became desperate. So, they said to Pilate fiercely,

*"HE stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry (Judaea), beginning from Galilee to this place."*

St. Luke 23:5

The enemies falsely insisted that our LORD JESUS stirred up the people all over Judaea by HIS teaching. HE started in Galilee and had come all the way here. On hearing this, Pilate asked if JESUS was a Galilean. When he learned that JESUS was under Herod's jurisdiction, he sent HIM to Herod, who was also in Jerusalem at that time.

Now, John the Baptist challenged the legitimacy of Herod's divorce and incestuous remarriage. So, Herod had arrested John. Then he beheaded John, as the result of a plot by Herodias, a guilty and vindictive woman. Herodias was an illegal wife of Herod, the king.

Again, Herod wanted to kill our LORD JESUS CHRIST also. At that time some Pharisees came to JESUS and said to HIM,

*"Get THEE out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill THEE."*

St. Luke 13:31

And our LORD JESUS said to them,

*"Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures today and tomorrow, and the third day I shall be perfected (resurrected)."*

St. Luke 13:32

Our LORD JESUS called Herod a fox to depict his sly and cunning character. Herod came to know of what our LORD had said and watched for an opportunity to kill JESUS.

For the **sixth unjust trial** against JESUS, they brought our LORD JESUS, before Herod the king, bound. Our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST was standing bound before Herod, the adulterer and murderer. What an abominable sight it is! Herod, the adulterer and the murderer, sitting on his throne, plied JESUS with many questions. But our LORD JESUS gave him no answer. The chief priests and scribes were standing there, vehemently accusing HIM. But, Herod, the king found no fault or guilt in JESUS.

Even though Herod had not found any guilt in JESUS, Herod and his soldiers greatly ridiculed and mocked at JESUS. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had become an object of great ridicule and mockery. Then they dressed our LORD JESUS CHRIST in a gorgeous robe and sent HIM back to Pilate. Mad or severely mentally ill people were dressed in gorgeous robes in those days. That day Herod, the king and Pilate, the governor became friends—until then they had been enemies.

*“Then he questioned with HIM in many words; but HE answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused HIM. And Herod with his men of war set HIM at nought, and mocked HIM, and arrayed HIM in a gorgeous robe, and sent HIM again to Pilate. And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves.”*

St. Luke 23:9-12

For the **seventh or the final unjust trial** against JESUS, our LORD JESUS was again brought before Pilate, bound. Our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST stood, bound, before Pilate, the dishonest and unjust and cowardly governor and judge.

Pilate called together the chief priests, the rulers and the people and said to them that he had examined JESUS in their presence and that JESUS had not incited the people to rebellion and that he had found no basis for their charges against HIM and Herod also had found no basis for their charges against HIM and that HE had done nothing to deserve death. Therefore, he would punish HIM and then

release HIM. Despite the efforts of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's enemies, Pilate found JESUS innocent of any capital political offence. Pilate said to them,

*"Ye have brought this MAN unto me, as one that perverteth (misleads) the people: and, behold, I, having examined HIM before you, have found no fault in this MAN touching those things whereof ye accuse HIM: No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto HIM. I will therefore chastise HIM, and release HIM."*

St. Luke 23:14-16

Even though our LORD JESUS CHRIST was proved entirely guiltless and pure, Pilate did not acquit JESUS and hence JESUS was not set free. Pilate wanted to satisfy the chief priests and the rulers and the people, since he was a dishonest and unjust and cowardly judge.

When the chief priests and the rulers and the people heard the words of Pilate that "he would punish HIM and then release HIM", they realized that Pilate was not a righteous judge and that he was a dishonest and unjust and cowardly judge. So they vehemently opposed the words of Pilate with one voice. Pilate knew it was out of envy that they had handed JESUS over to him.

Now, in the mind of Pilate, a thought rose suddenly. It was the governor's custom, at the feast of Passover, to release a prisoner whom the people requested. By this custom, Pilate wanted to release our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Pilate thought that if he asked, which one did they want him to release to them, they may tell some other name. So he took a plan and asked them,

*"Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or JESUS which is called CHRIST?"*

St. Matthew 27:17

Now, Barabbas was a notorious criminal. He was hated very much by the Jews. He was a robber and a murderer. He had committed murder during an insurrection. He had been thrown into prison for sedition or insurrection (making people oppose the authority of the government) and murder. Again, Barabbas was guilty of high-treasonous acts. So Pilate had hoped to free JESUS by offering the release of one of them. Pilate thought that the people

would never ask to release Barabbas and that they would certainly ask to release JESUS. This question of Pilate was quite an unexpected question to the chief priests and the rulers and the people. So they made counsel with one another.

While Pilate was sitting on the judge's seat in the judgment hall, his wife sent him this message through her messenger:

*"Have thou nothing to do with that just MAN: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of HIM."*

St. Matthew 27:19

Again, from the message of Pilate's wife, Pilate came to know clearly that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was righteous and HE was not guilty. In the meantime, the chief priests and the elders persuaded the people to ask for Barabbas and to have JESUS executed. There was a great shouting and clamour. So Pilate sent his wife's messenger and he did not adhere to the righteous words of his wife.

Again, Pilate asked them,

*"Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you?"*

St. Matthew 27:21

They answered,

*"Barabbas."*

St. Matthew 27:21

Thus, the plan of Pilate was thwarted, he got angry. Since he already knew it was out of envy that they had handed JESUS over to him, he angrily asked them,

*"Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?"*

St. Mark 15:9

The chief priests and the elders continuously persuaded the people to ask for the release of Barabbas. But Pilate was willing to release JESUS and asked them,

*"What shall I do then with JESUS which is called CHRIST?"*

St. Matthew 27:22

They all answered to Pilate,

*"Let HIM be crucified."*

St. Matthew 27:22

This was the first time that they were talking about crucifixion of JESUS. Now Pilate very well understood their plot to kill JESUS by crucifixion. Since he found no guilt in JESUS, he asked them,

*"Why, what evil hath HE done?"*

St. Matthew 27:23

But they shouted all the louder,

*"Let HIM be crucified."*

St. Matthew 27:23

Pilate again said to the chief priests and the rulers and the people,

*"Why, what evil hath HE done? I have found no cause of death in HIM: I will therefore chastise HIM, and let HIM go."*

St. Luke 23:22

Pilate punished our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST very severely. He therefore took JESUS and scourged HIM (whipped HIM with Roman scourges). The governor's soldiers took JESUS into the common hall of the Praetorium or governor's quarters and gathered the whole company of soldiers round HIM. They took off HIS own clothes from HIS most holy body and they tied HIM on a stone pillar with HIS hands above HIS head and scourged HIM across HIS shoulders, back, sides and legs, not wounding or touching HIS most holy heart, with full force again and again. The scourging was a whipping with a short leather whip with sharp pieces of bone and metal embedded in its thongs. Six Roman soldiers scourged HIM. Firstly, two Roman soldiers scourged HIM. When they got tired, another two soldiers scourged HIM. When they also got tired, the remaining two soldiers scourged HIM.

Now, at first, the sharp pieces of bone and metal embedded in the thongs, cut through the skin of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then, as the blows continue, they cut deeper into the subcutaneous tissues of our LORD JESUS, producing first an oozing of blood from the capillaries and veins, and finally spurting arterial bleeding from vessels in the underlying muscles. The sharp pieces of bone and metal embedded

in the thongs, first produced large, deep bruises. Finally, the skin of the back was hanging in long ribbons and the entire area was an unrecognizable mass of torn, bleeding tissue. What a horrible scene it is! When our LORD JESUS was near death, the beating was finally stopped.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy body was plowed and HIS most holy blood was flowing out. So HE felt unconscious. And when they untied HIM from the stone pillar, HE fell on HIS most holy blood. What a terrible scene it is! Then, our LORD JESUS was allowed to slump on the stone pavement, wet with HIS own blood. Pilate scourged JESUS in the hope that a severe beating would appease the Jews, but this very severe beating did not appease the Jews.

*"Then Pilate therefore took JESUS, and scourged HIM."*

St. John 19:1

*"The plowers plowed upon MY back: they made long their furrows."*

Psalm 129:3

*"I gave MY back to the smiters, and MY cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not MY face from shame and spitting."*

Isaiah 50:6

"MY cheeks to them that plucked off the hair" refers to the plucking out of HIS most holy beard. Beard is a symbol of sages and hermits. Beard is a symbol of celibates.

Then, they clothed our LORD JESUS in a scarlet (purple) robe. They mocked HIS claim to be King of the Jews by clothing HIM with a scarlet robe. This scarlet robe clung to the wounds of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. The soldiers also plaited or twisted together a crown of seventy-two iron thorns, and put it on HIS most holy head and struck HIM on HIS most holy head and cheek by a bamboo rod. So this iron crown was pressed on HIS most holy head without any shake. So, HIS most holy blood was flowing out from HIS most holy head. Again there was copious bleeding, as the scalp of the head being one of the most vascular areas of the body. They also struck HIM with their hands. They spat in HIS most holy face. They plucked out HIS most holy beard. So, HIS most holy blood was oozing from HIS most holy face. What a pitiful thing it is!



*"...They shall smite the Judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek."*

Micah 5:1

Thorns are a symbol of the curse due to the sin of mankind (Genesis 3:17-18). HE bore the curse of mankind on HIS most holy head. On the cross our LORD JESUS CHRIST became a curse for us (Galatians 3:13), to deliver us from the curse.

They put a reed (staff) in HIS right hand, and knelt in front of HIM and mocked at HIM. The scarlet robe for a royal apparel, the crown of thorns for a royal crown and the reed for a scepter of righteousness added to their sadistic sport of mockery. They spat on HIM, and took the reed and struck HIM on the head again and again (St. Matthew 27:27-30; St. John 19:2-3). What a pitiful thing it is!

Again, Pilate came out and said to the chief priests and elders and the people,

*"Behold, I bring HIM forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in HIM."*

St. John 19:4

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST came out wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe, Pilate said to them,

*"Behold the MAN!"*

St. John 19:5

When the chief priests and the Jews saw our LORD JESUS CHRIST, they shouted,

*"Crucify HIM, crucify HIM. ..."*

St. John 19:6

Pilate answered and said to them,

*"Take ye HIM, and crucify HIM: for I find no fault in HIM."*

St. John 19:6

Then the Jews answered to him,

*"We have a law, and by our law HE ought to die, because HE made HIMSELF the SON OF GOD."*

St. John 19:7

Here the Jews acknowledged the real reason and reiterated why they demanded our LORD JESUS CHRIST's crucifixion. According to their Old Testament law, the accused should be stoned to death and as per the Roman law, the accused should be crucified on the cross. Against their law, the Jews asked Pilate to crucify our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST.

When Pilate heard this, he was very much frightened and he went again into the judgment hall, and asked our LORD JESUS secretly,

*"Whence art THOU? (Where are YOU from?)"*

St. John 19:9

But our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave him no answer. Firstly, Pilate feared the people. Now he feared our LORD JESUS CHRIST also. When Pilate heard that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was the SON OF GOD, he was very much frightened.

Now, Pilate had lost all his opportunities to institute real justice. He was in a very awful condition. In the earlier trial, Pilate was unable to ask and understand, "What is truth?" Now, he was willing to know the Majesty of our Sovereign GOD.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave Pilate no answer, Pilate said to HIM,

*"Speakest THOU not unto me? knowest THOU not that I have power to crucify THEE, and have power to release THEE?"*

St. John 19:10

And our LORD JESUS CHRIST answered him and said,

*"Thou couldst have no power at all against ME, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered ME unto thee hath the greater sin."*

St. John 19:11

From then on, Pilate tried to set our LORD JESUS CHRIST free, but the Jews kept shouting,

*"If thou let this MAN go, thou art not Caesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar."*

St. John 19:12

When Pilate heard this, he thought about Caesar, the Roman emperor, who had given him the post of governor, and his present post of governor. He wanted to save his post and not justice. He was a coward. He was a cowardly judge and governor. He was a dishonest and unjust judge and governor. So he was unable to establish justice. So he had fallen.

Then Pilate brought our LORD JESUS CHRIST out and sat down in the judgement seat in a place known as the Pavement (which in Hebrew is Gabbatha). It was the day of preparation of the Passover. The day of preparation of the Passover was on Friday.

Then Pilate said to the Jews,

*"Behold your King!"*

St. John 19:14

But they shouted,

*"Away with HIM, away with HIM, crucify HIM. ..."*

St. John 19:15

Then Pilate said to the Jews,

*"Shall I crucify your King? ..."*

St. John 19:15

The chief priests answered and said,

*"We have no king but Caesar."*

St. John 19:15

This was said by the chief priests or Sadducees (politicians). They were atheists. But no Pharisee would make such a blasphemous statement, since they knew that GOD alone was their King.

When Pilate saw that he could no longer prevail on them, and that instead, an uproar was starting, he took water and washed his hands in front of the multitude, and said,

*"I am innocent of the blood of this just Person: see ye to it."*

St. Matthew 27:24

By washing his hands, Pilate thought that he could escape from our LORD JESUS CHRIST's innocent blood. But he had not escaped.

Pilate's washing of hands could never wipe away the guilt of shedding innocent blood of JESUS our LORD. Then he lost his job and he became mad and met a terrible death, by jumping down from the top of a mountain.

Then all the people answered and said to Pilate,

*"HIS blood be on us, and on our children."*

St. Matthew 27:25

This answer of the Jews eventually brought the terrible wrath of GOD upon them and upon their children. Encouraged by their willingness to take responsibility for our LORD JESUS CHRIST's death, Pilate delivered HIM to be crucified. Wanting to satisfy the multitude, Pilate released Barabbas to them and he delivered our LORD JESUS CHRIST to be crucified.

*"And so Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered JESUS, when he had scourged HIM, to be crucified."*

St. Mark 15:15

Pilate, the governor was a coward. He was a cowardly judge. He was an insensitive and dishonest judge. So he delivered an unjust judgment against our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST.

## 6.16 JESUS SENTENCED

*"And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that HE might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed. And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required. And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered JESUS to their will."*

St. Luke 23:23-25

Finally, Pilate delivered our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST to the Jews to be crucified. Then the soldiers took off the clinging scarlet (purple) robe and put HIS own clothes (St. Matthew 27:31). When taking off the clinging robe, HIS most holy body was again torn and HIS most holy blood was again flowing out. And having adhered to the clots of blood and serum in the wounds, the robe's removal caused excruciating pain, almost as though HIS

wounds were again being whipped by them. What a horrible and terrible thing it is! When the soldiers put on HIS own clothes, HIS own clothes clung to the wounds of our LORD JESUS CHRIST again. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST became more and more tired and weary. So, HE was too tired to walk; HE was too tired to stand as well.

Then a heavy rough wooden cross was given to the utterly exhausted and scourged (whipped) JESUS to bear. Evidently, the weight of the cross was more than HE could bear due to HIS very severe scourging, and due to HIS very severe hunger and thirst and sleeplessness. What an awful thing it is! Our LORD JESUS CHRIST bore HIS own cross and went out to the place of the Skull (which in Hebrew is called Golgotha). HE went out to the place of the Skull or Calvary.

*"Then delivered he HIM therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took JESUS, and led HIM away. And HE bearing HIS cross went forth into a place called the place of a Skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha."*

St. John 19:16-17

## 6.17 THE VIA DOLOROSA

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST carried HIS own cross, as was the custom, to the place of a Skull or Golgotha or Calvary. That thorny iron crown was on HIS most holy head. HIS pathway to Golgotha or Calvary through Jerusalem has been called the **Via Dolorosa**, the sorrowful way. It is the most sorrowful way. It is the most heartbreaking way.

This pathway to Calvary was an unrepaired pathway full of very rough stones and with ditches and trenches. To reach Calvary, our LORD JESUS had to walk about half a mile through this worst stony pathway. While HE was walking bare footed through this worst stony pathway with HIS heavy rough wooden cross, HIS most holy blood was flowing from HIS most holy feet and HE was gasping heavily for breath.

Our LORD JESUS accepted HIS heavy cross on HIS most holy shoulders and walked towards Calvary. Unable to bear HIS heavy cross on HIS most holy shoulders, HE stumbled several times along this worst stony pathway. When unable to bear HIS heavy rough

wooden cross on HIS most holy shoulders, HE was bent towards HIS front and HIS heavy cross was on HIS back and one end of HIS cross touched the floor. Very slowly, HE walked towards Calvary. Now, unable to bear HIS heavy cross, **HE stumbled and fell down** on the worst stony pathway with HIS heavy cross on HIS back, and HE was under HIS heavy cross, and **HE felt unconscious**. At once, **the soldiers scourged HIM again**. They showed no mercy upon our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then HE stood up very slowly with HIS heavy cross and started to bear HIS heavy cross again. What a pitiable thing it is! Again, unable to bear HIS heavy cross, **HE stumbled and fell down** on the worst stony pathway for the second time with HIS heavy cross on HIS back and HE was under HIS heavy cross, and **HE felt unconscious**. Now also **the soldiers scourged HIM** without showing any mercy upon our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then HE stood up very slowly with HIS heavy cross and started to bear HIS heavy cross again. What a pathetic thing it is!

Again, unable to bear HIS heavy cross, **HE stumbled and fell down** on the worst stony pathway for the third time with HIS heavy cross on HIS back and HE was under HIS heavy cross, and **HE felt unconscious**. **Even though HE fell down for our sake on the worst stony pathway three times with the heaviest of the heavy crosses, HE never unclashed the cross from HIS hands**. By this time, the soldiers stopped their scourging, since they thought that our LORD JESUS would die if they scourged HIM again. Anyone who had been given a sentence to death by crucifixion must be crucified. So, the soldiers stopped their scourging. Now, JESUS' shocks due to the falling with the heavy cross produced copious blood loss. The rough wood of the heavy cross gouged into the lacerated skin and muscles of HIS shoulders. When HE tried to rise, HIS human muscles had been pushed beyond their endurance. So, HE could not rise. What a pitiable thing it is!

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST fell down on the worst stony pathway for the third time, the soldiers and other people stood around HIM, but no one had touched HIS cross. Touching the cross was a great defilement to the Jews. Touching the cross was a great dishonour to the Romans. But, our LORD JESUS CHRIST wilfully accepted this great defilement and great dishonour for us, the sinners, by bearing HIS cross.

Now, at that time, a black Jew from Cyrene (North Africa) named Simon, was passing by on his way from his country to Jerusalem. Without knowing anything, Simon went and peeped through the crowd. There he saw our LORD JESUS CHRIST with HIS heavy cross on HIS back and HE was under HIS heavy cross. Since Simon was black in colour, they thought that he was a Gentile. So, the soldiers seized him and forced him to carry the cross (St. Mark 15:21).

Unable to escape from the hands of the soldiers, Simon touched the cross, and took up the cross from the back of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then our LORD JESUS stood up very slowly, and Simon placed the cross very lightly touching on one shoulder of our LORD JESUS and he carried the cross behind JESUS, towards Calvary. Firstly, Simon thought that it was a defilement and very dishonourable thing to him. When he was carrying the cross, he came to know very well that it was the most blissful and blessed thing to him.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was on HIS way to Calvary, carrying HIS heavy cross, HE saw a house of a Jew. That Jew stood in front of his house with his child, to show this awful spectacle to his child. Due to our LORD JESUS CHRIST's great weariness and thirst and hunger and sleeplessness, HE touched the house wall of that Jew for taking a little rest. Immediately, that Jew said to our LORD JESUS that HE should not touch his house wall and HE should not take any rest by touching his house wall and he drove our LORD JESUS. What a pathetic thing it is!

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was on HIS way to Calvary, carrying HIS heavy cross, HE saw HIS mother, the Virgin Mary, crying with tears. But HE had not spoken any word to her. A woman named Veronica was with the Virgin Mary and others. She was also crying with tears. Now, Veronica wanted to do some help to our LORD JESUS. Since she was a woman, she was unable to help HIM. No kith and kin would be allowed to go and comfort any criminal. But, suddenly, Veronica went inside the crowd bravely and knelt down before our LORD JESUS CHRIST and wiped off the dust and blood and spit (saliva) from the most holy face of our LORD JESUS gently, with her handkerchief. This was the help done by her. HIS most holy face full of spit, dust and blood was brighter. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was very near to Calvary, a large number of people including women who followed HIM, mourned and wailed and cried and lamented for HIM very loudly, since they knew that our LORD JESUS was going to die soon and that they were going to lose HIM soon. No kith and kin of the criminal would be allowed to cry. But they should laugh before the elders of the Council and salute them. What a heartless and cruel act it is! When our LORD JESUS CHRIST heard the very loud cry of the women, HE turned and said to them,

*“Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for ME, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?”*

St. Luke 23:28-31

Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST came to the top of Calvary with great difficulty, by climbing over it. There, Simon placed the cross down, for the crucifixion of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

**“Where they crucified HIM, ...”**

St. John 19:18

## **7. CRUCIFIXION AND AFTER**

### **7.1 CRUCIFIXION**

They brought our LORD JESUS CHRIST to Calvary or Golgotha or the place of the Skull. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST had reached the place where HE was to be crucified, the cross was laid on the rock. Our LORD JESUS was very hungry and HE was very thirsty as well. So, they offered HIM vinegar (sour wine) mixed with gall (myrrh) to drink. This is a fulfilment of Psalm 69:21.

Vinegar mixed with myrrh would have reduced the feeling of hunger and thirst, but our LORD JESUS did not take it. Vinegar mixed with myrrh would have dulled the pain, but our LORD JESUS did not take it. HE did not want to reduce the feeling of hunger and thirst by any



means. HE did not want to dull HIS pain by any means. HE endured all HIS thirst and hunger wilfully for us, the sinners. HE endured all HIS pains wilfully for us, the sinners. What a loving GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

*“And they bring HIM unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. And they gave HIM to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but HE received it not.”*

St. Mark 15:22-23

Again they took off our LORD JESUS CHRIST's own clinging clothes and they clothed HIM in a piece of waistcloth (Psalm 22:18). When taking off HIS own clinging clothes, HIS most holy body was torn for the third time and HIS most holy blood was again flowing out. And having adhered to the clots of blood and serum in the wounds, the clothes' removal caused excruciating pain again, almost as though HIS wounds were again being whipped by them. What an awful thing it is!

That thorny iron crown was always on HIS most holy head. Then they asked our LORD JESUS CHRIST to lie down on the cross and HE lay down on the cross with a crown of thorns on HIS most holy head and a piece of waistcloth at HIS most holy waist. Then they placed HIS most holy arms on two sides and HIS most holy legs one over another and they strongly tied HIS most holy arms and legs with **three ropes**. Then they nailed HIS most holy hands on the cross with two long iron nails, and they nailed HIS most holy feet on the cross with a long iron nail. Two iron nails pierced HIS most holy hands and one iron nail pierced HIS most holy feet. Thus, they crucified our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross with three iron nails. The most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was gushing out from HIS most holy hands and feet. What an awful thing it is! This awful thing is a fulfilment of Psalm 22:16.

After that, they loosened (unfastened) the ropes from HIS most holy arms and legs. Then they lifted our LORD JESUS with the cross and forcibly dropped the cross into a pit, dug on the rock. Then the cross was planted firmly with planks of wood. Our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST was hanging on the cross, on **three iron**

**nails** with a crown of iron thorns on HIS most holy head and a piece of waistcloth at HIS most holy waist. What an awful thing it is!

When they forcibly dropped the cross into a pit, the exceedingly holy blood of our LORD JESUS poured out like water from HIS wounds. HIS exceedingly holy blood was horribly flowing from HIS exceedingly holy head, face, body, hands and feet. From HIS most holy head to HIS most holy feet, HIS whole body was bathed with HIS most holy blood and it was a most horrible and terrible sight. HE suffered great agony and pain. What a horrible and terrible thing it is!

Further, Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. The writing was: "**JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS**" St. John 19:19. Many of the Jews read this title, for the place where JESUS was crucified was near to the city. The title was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin. "**INRI**" is the abbreviation for "**IESUS NAZARENUS REX IUDAEORUM**" (the inscription in Latin placed over CHRIST's head during the crucifixion). Against this title, the chief priests protested to Pilate (St. John 19:21). But he rejected it (St. John 19:22).

Then the soldiers, when they crucified JESUS, took HIS glorious garments, dividing them into four parts, one for each of them, except HIS glorious coat (tunic). HIS glorious coat was seamless, woven from top to bottom. So they did not tear it. And they cast lots for it (St. John 19:24). This is a fulfilment of Psalm 22:18.

This world crucified our innocent LORD JESUS. Now also this world crucifies our innocent JESUS, by committing sins and wickedness against HIM. What a most sorrowful thing it is!

## **7.2 THE MOST TERRIBLE DEATH OF JESUS WITH GREAT AGONY ON THE CROSS**

Now our LORD JESUS CHRIST was crucified. As our LORD slowly sagged down with more weight on the nails in the hands, excruciating pain shot along the fingers and up the arms to explode in the brain—the nails in the hands were putting great pressure on the median nerves. As our LORD JESUS pushed HIMSELF upward to avoid this stretching torment, HE placed HIS full weight on the nail through HIS feet. Again there was the searing agony of the nail tearing through the nerves between the metatarsal bones of the feet. Now, as the arms fatigue,

great waves of cramps swept over the muscles, knotting them in deep, relentless, throbbing pain. With these cramps came the inability to push HIMSELF upward. What a most horrible and terrible pain it is!

While our LORD JESUS was hanging on the cross, our entirely guiltless LORD was seared with the intense heat (scorching heat) of the sun and this heat gave HIM more and more pain and thirst and hunger. Hanging by HIS arms, the pectoral muscles were paralyzed and the intercostal muscles were unable to act. Air could be inhaled (breathed in) into the lungs, but could not be exhaled (breathed out). Our LORD JESUS fought to raise HIMSELF in order to breathe even one short breath. Finally, carbon dioxide built up in the lungs and in the blood stream and the cramps partially subsided. Spasmodically, our LORD JESUS was able to push HIMSELF upward to exhale (breathe out) and inhale (breathe in) in the life-giving oxygen. What a most horrible and terrible thing it is!

During this excruciating pain, our LORD JESUS spoke Seven Words thunderously, from the cross. Our LORD JESUS was on the cross for about 6 hours and 30 minutes (From 9 A.M. to 3.30 P.M.). Thus, our LORD JESUS experienced hours of limitless pain, cycles of twisting, joint-rending cramps, intermittent partial asphyxiation, searing pain where tissues were torn from HIS lacerated back as HE moved up and down against the rough wood of the cross. What a most horrible and terrible pain it is! What a most awful pain it is!

Then, another agony began—a terrible crushing pain deep in the chest as the pericardium slowly filled with serum and began to compress the heart. It was now almost over. The loss of tissue fluids had reached a critical level; the compressed heart was struggling to pump heavy, thick, sluggish blood into the tissue; the tortured lungs were making a frantic effort to gasp in small gulps of air. The markedly dehydrated tissues sent their flood of stimuli to the brain. What a most horrible and terrible thing it is!

The most holy body of our LORD was in extremes and HE could feel the chill of death creeping through HIS tissues. Finally our LORD JESUS allowed HIS body to die. So, with one last surge of strength, HE once again pressed HIS torn feet against the nail, straightened HIS legs, took (inhaled) a deeper breath with great agony, and spoke HIS

seventh and last Word thunderously, and committed HIS Spirit. What a most pitiable thing it is! What a most pathetic thing it is!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was the TRUE PASSOVER LAMB. So, HIS bones were not broken (St. John 19:36). This is the true testimony of John the disciple of CHRIST (St. John 21:24). The Israelites were strictly forbidden to break the bones of the Passover Lamb (Exodus 12:46). Then, the soldiers came to our LORD JESUS and saw that the breaking of the bones of the legs (curifracture) was not necessary. But a soldier pierced HIS side, upward through the pericardium and into the heart. **"And immediately there came out blood and water"** (St. John 19:34) **and this is regarded as a strange miracle by John** (I John 5:5-6). This water fluid from the sac surrounding the heart is a clear postmortem evidence that our LORD JESUS died due to heart failure due to terrible shock (the complete setback in the nervous system) and constriction of the heart by fluid in the pericardium. What a most awful evidence it is! The usual crucifixion death without curifracture will happen due to asphyxiation, suffocation and cool off body, after one day or after two days or after three days.

### 7.3 THE MOST AWFUL VISION OF JESUS ON THE CROSS

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was most awfully hanging on the cross on three nails with HIS most holy right eye sunk into the socket due to extreme hunger and thirst and weariness and pain and sleeplessness and due to very severe blows upon HIS most holy body; and with HIS most holy left eye came outside the socket due to very heavy blows upon HIS most holy left cheek with a bamboo rod and with hands; and with HIS most depressed and hollow holy cheeks with plucked out beard; and with HIS most depressed and hollow holy stomach due to extreme hunger and thirst and weariness and pain and sleeplessness. HIS most holy blood was gushing out from HIS most holy hands and from HIS most holy feet. HIS most holy body was terribly rent and battered; and HIS most holy body with HIS most holy face was wholly bathed in HIS most holy blood from HIS most holy head to HIS most holy feet. Clothed with a piece of waistcloth on HIS most holy waist and crowned with an iron crown of thorns on HIS most holy head, HE was hanging most awfully on the cross on three nails with a disfigured appearance and marred face. HIS most beautiful

appearance was disfigured and HIS most beautiful face was marred; and HE was most awfully writhing and shivering with great agony and pain on the cross on three nails in the burning heat of the sun. What a great pain and agony it is! What a great pitiable thing it is! This pitiable thing is the fulfilment of Isaiah 50:7; 53:2 and Micah 5:1.

On seeing this most awful vision, no one could survive in this world. What an awful vision it is! What a terrible vision it is!

#### 7.4 PIERCED

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was crucified on the feast of Passover. That day was Friday and the next day (Saturday) was a special Sabbath day. That Sabbath day was a high day because it was the Sabbath day during the passover week. The Jews did not mind putting our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST to death on their feast of Passover, but they were very careful not to break the Sabbath day.

Now, in the Old Testament law, stoning was the approved means of execution, whereas hanging on a tree was imposed as an additional disgrace after death. But the dead body (corpse) should not be left on the tree overnight and the corpse must be taken down from the tree and it should be buried on the same day. The reason was that the corpse of such an executed man was an object under GOD's curse and it would defile the land (Deuteronomy 21:23).

By hanging on the tree (the wooden cross), our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST had become a curse for us; HE had become an accursed for us, the sinners (Galatians 3:13).

The Jews did not want the bodies left on the crosses. So they asked Pilate that their legs might be broken and that their bodies might be taken away. For immediate death, they used to break the legs. The soldiers therefore came and broke the legs of the first criminal who had been crucified with JESUS, and then those of the other. But when they came to our LORD JESUS, they found that HE had already been dead. So they did not break HIS most holy legs, but one of the soldiers pierced JESUS' side with a spear. It brought a sudden flow of blood and water. Hence, our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST shed all HIS most precious blood for us, the sinners. St. John was one of the eyewitnesses for this.

*"But when they came to JESUS, and saw that HE was dead already, they brake not HIS legs: But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced HIS side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe."*

St. John 19:33-35

We can see special significance in the flow of JESUS' blood for sacrifice and cleansing (Hebrews 9:26; I John 1:7); and water for washing by the living water of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD for a new life (I Corinthians 6:11; St. John 7:37-39). JESUS' death gives us forgiveness, sanctification and new life—true Christian life. "A bone of HIM shall not be broken." St. John 19:36 is a fulfilment of Psalm 34:20. "Pierced" is a fulfilment of Zechariah 12:10.

Further, it was also a requirement of the Passover lamb that no bone be broken (Exodus 12:46). Now, our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb of GOD without blemish and without spot is our Passover according to I Corinthians 5:7.

The Lamb of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST takes away the sin of the world (St. John 1:29) by HIS atoning sacrifice. HE is the sacrifice for our sins. HE bore in HIS most holy body the punishment due to us for our sins. HE died vicariously on behalf of mankind (I John 2:2).

## 7.5 JUDAS HANGS HIMSELF

When all the chief priests and the elders of the people came to the decision to put our LORD JESUS CHRIST to death, they bound HIM again, and led HIM away and handed HIM over to Pilate, the governor. When Judas Iscariot, who had betrayed our LORD JESUS CHRIST, saw that our LORD JESUS was condemned to death, he repented himself, and returned the thirty silver coins to the chief priests and the elders. But his repentance was not a repentance to forgiveness of sins (remission of sins) and salvation from sins (deliverance from sins). His sorrow was not a godly sorrow and his sorrow was a worldly sorrow. Only godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins, and is not to be regretted. But worldly sorrow brings death (II Corinthians 7:10).

Then Judas Iscariot went and said to the chief priests and the elders,

*"I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood."*

St. Matthew 27:4

Judas' admission, "I have sinned" is not a true confession of his sins. Hence, he had not received the forgiveness of sins or salvation from sins. Then the chief priests and the elders replied to him,

*"What is that to us? see thou to that (You see to that yourself!)."*

St. Matthew 27:4

Then Judas threw the thirty silver coins into the temple and left. Then he went away and hanged himself (St. Matthew 27:5). When he hanged himself, the rope was broken into two, and he fell headlong into the valley below, his stomach burst open and all his intestines spilled out (Acts 1:18).

Then the chief priests picked up the coins and said,

*"It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood."*

St. Matthew 27:6

So they decided to use the money to purchase the potter's field to bury strangers. Hence, that field was called, the Field of Blood (Acladama in Hebrew). The prophecy of Zechariah was fulfilled.

*"And the LORD said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the LORD."*

Zechariah 11:13

Judas Iscariot got the money for his great wickedness. They purchased potter's field with this money of Judas after his death. Since they purchased this field with the money of Judas, it is said,

*"Now this man (Judas) purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; ..."*

Acts 1:18

Then, in the place of Judas Iscariot, the LORD chose Matthias. The prophecies in Psalm 69:25 and Psalm 109:8 were fulfilled.

*"Let their (his) habitation be desolate; and let none dwell in their (his) tents."*

Psalm 69:25

*"Let his days be few; and let another take his office."*

Psalm 109:8

## 7.6 DEATH ON THE CROSS

Cross was a wooden frame made of a long upright piece of wood (about twelve feet long) with a shorter piece (about six feet long) fixed across it near the top. In Israel, criminals were stoned to death as a punishment. In Rome, criminals were nailed and hung on crosses and left to die as a punishment. The upright piece of wood with the crucified man would be planted vertically and the criminal should hang on his cross until his death. This was the most painful and awful punishment. Since Israel (Jerusalem) was under Caesar, the Roman emperor, this punishment by crucifixion was in force in Jerusalem also.

Now, if a Roman emperor convicted a criminal for crucifixion, then he would be crucified after a month of restful days. If the Roman governor convicted a criminal for crucifixion, then he would be crucified after ten restful days. These were the Roman laws. But, not even a single restful minute was given to our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST before HIS crucifixion. So, the Roman governor, crucified our LORD JESUS CHRIST, against the Roman law.

Again, the criminals should carry their crosses from the place of judgment to the place of execution. So, our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST carried HIS own cross. Further, when the criminals were led out for crucifixion, they should hang placards on their necks, showing their names, native towns and accusations. These placards must be written in Hebrew and Greek and Latin, and after their crucifixion, these placards must be placed (nailed) on the top of their respective crosses.

Since they had no time to write this placard in Hebrew and Greek and Latin in respect of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, this placard had not been hung on the most holy neck of our LORD JESUS. But, after HIS crucifixion, it was placed (nailed) on the top of HIS cross on the long



upright piece of wood, over HIS head. This placard was written as: "JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS". This showed HIS name "JESUS", and this showed HIS native town "Nazareth", and this showed HIS accusation "THE KING OF THE JEWS". Indeed, our LORD JESUS CHRIST (MESSIAH) was the KING of the Jews, but a group of Jews had rejected HIM.

A group of Jews did not accept our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD who came in this world, and lived in this world, doing goodness to the people. So they delivered HIM to Pontius Pilate their governor, to be murdered on the cross. They held seven unjust trials against our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST. In this process, our LORD JESUS was mercilessly taken here and there and severely harassed.

Pilate found no fault or guilt in our LORD JESUS CHRIST. But the Jews were stubborn and pressed Pilate to murder our LORD JESUS on the cross. So Pilate gave an unfair judgment to murder our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross.

Death on the cross was only for murderers, thieves, rebels and such other people. This was the most painful and extremely cruel punishment. The crucified people would not die at once. It might take three or more days for them to die. The burden of the whole body would be on three nails. No one could bear this burden by their hands and feet on three nails. The blood of their bodies would flow out, and their bodies would cool off and then they would die due to suffocation and cool off body. In order to reduce the time of death and to die by suffocation and by cool off body shortly, the criminals would be severely scourged to shed their blood before crucifixion, and their legs would be broken after crucifixion. Now, our LORD JESUS did not die due to suffocation and cool off body, but of heart failure (a broken heart). The water fluid from the sac surrounding the heart (pericardium) came out with HIS blood in HIS heart, when a soldier pierced HIS side after HIS death (St. John 19:34). This is a clear postmortem evidence that our LORD JESUS did not die due to the usual crucifixion death due to suffocation and cool off body, but of heart failure due to terrible shocks and constriction of the heart by fluid in the pericardium. What an awful evidence it is!

Unable to bear their great pain, the criminals used to scold and reproach and curse with ugly words, against those who had delivered them for their crucifixion and against those who had given them judgment for their crucifixion and against those who had crucified them. In order to abandon such ugly words, they used to pin the lips of the criminals.

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST had not scolded or reproached or cursed anyone, they had not pinned the most holy lips of our LORD JESUS (Isaiah 53:7, 9).

*"...CHRIST also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow HIS steps: Who did no sin, neither was guile (deceit) found in HIS mouth: Who, when HE was reviled, reviled not again (in turn); when HE suffered, HE threatened not; ..."*

I Peter 2:21-23

*"For consider HIM that endured such contradiction (hostility) of sinners against HIMSELF, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds."*

Hebrews 12:3

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF is the supreme example of true endurance.

Since the thieves who were crucified with HIM had scolded and reproached our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST with others, they had not pinned the lips of the thieves.

*"...And they that were crucified with HIM reviled HIM."*

St. Mark 15:32

*"Reproach hath broken MY heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none."*

Psalm 69:20

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was on the cross, HE had spoken **SEVEN** most blissful words. The **first blissful word** of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was for the forgiveness of the sinners, especially for the forgiveness of HIS enemies there. That word was:

**"FATHER, FORGIVE THEM; FOR THEY KNOW NOT WHAT THEY DO."**

St. Luke 23:34

"FATHER" means "GOD, the FATHER". GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had said,

*"...He that hath seen ME hath seen the FATHER; ..."*

St. John 14:9

*"I and MY FATHER are one."*

St. John 10:30

After our LORD JESUS CHRIST had spoken HIS first blissful word, the thief on HIS right side stopped his reproaches and scolding against HIM and rebuked the other thief. He asked our LORD JESUS for forgiveness of his sins. Our most merciful LORD JESUS CHRIST had forgiven all his sins and gave him paradise, the place where HIS saints rest. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's death on the cross is a most glorious death. HE accomplished HIS most glorious death at Calvary. HE greatly valued HIS most glorious death on the cross. HIS most glorious death was spontaneous. HE died on the cross, willingly and freely and naturally for us, the sinners. About HIS most glorious death, our LORD JESUS CHRIST said,

*"The hour is come, that the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) should be glorified."*

St. John 12:23

The great power of the cross is the death of CHRIST. By HIS terrible death on the cross, HE draws all people to HIMSELF. HE draws all people to HIMSELF to save them from their sins. HE draws all people to HIMSELF to give them HIS most glorious kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. About HIS great power of death, our LORD JESUS CHRIST said,

*"And I, if I be lifted up (crucified up) from the earth, will draw all men unto ME."*

St. John 12:32

Then, **"Why do people go to hell?"** It is because they do not believe in our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. It is because they do not look to HIM.

*"He that believeth on HIM is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten SON OF GOD."*

St. John 3:18

*"Look unto ME, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am GOD, and there is none else."*

Isaiah 45:22

Now, no one should be a slave of sin, by obeying the evil desires (lusts) of the mortal body. This body of sin should be rendered inoperative. For this, the old man of sin or the old self, the person he was before he was crucified with CHRIST (before he was saved by CHRIST) must be crucified with CHRIST (saved by CHRIST). Then, his body of sin will be destroyed and he will not be a slave of sin. Then, he has the power to serve CHRIST, but not the sin. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with HIM, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof."*

Romans 6:6, 12

Further, no one should offer the parts of his body to sin, as weapons of unrighteousness and wickedness and filthiness. But, everyone should offer the parts of his body to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST as weapons of righteousness and confess his sins without concealing his sins for the forgiveness of sins and for the salvation from sins and for obtaining holiness and holy life and for the anointment of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. After obtaining these spiritual experiences from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, sin will not be his master. Then, sin will not reign over his mortal body, if he continues always on the watch and pray for his spiritual life. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto GOD, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of*

*righteousness unto GOD. For sin shall not have dominion over you: ..."*

Romans 6:13-14

*"Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST)."*

St. Luke 21:36

SON OF MAN is the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Prayer alone will enable one to stand before the returning SON OF MAN, on the day of HIS judgment and prayer alone will enable one to escape all that is about to happen. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, the preaching of the cross means the preaching about CHRIST crucified. See I Corinthians 1:18, 23. But it does not mean the preaching of any wooden cross or any other crosses. There is no power or no virtue or no holiness in any sort of crosses. Thus, the worship of cross and the admiration of cross and the bearing of cross and the act of making the sign of the cross (**signation**) are sins against the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The cross always reminds us of the terrible death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross. Hence, everyone should remember HIS terrible death at all times. In remembrance of HIS terrible death, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has promulgated the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the New Testament feast of Passover. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, everyone should boast only about the cross of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. That is, everyone should boast only about the most glorious death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross. Everyone should take pleasure only in our LORD JESUS CHRIST's vicarious atonement, in which HE died as a substitute for sin. Everyone should take pleasure only in our LORD JESUS CHRIST's vicarious atonement, in which HE died on behalf of sinners.

St. Paul, the apostle took pleasure only in JESUS CHRIST's vicarious atonement, since it brought him all the spiritual blessings. He had renounced the world. That is, he had renounced the world system. He had renounced his old sinful life and all its ways and all its values and all its accomplishments including old religious accomplishments,

in which he used to boast. He lived as a sage and hermit. He lived as a celibate (Galatians 6:14).

## 7.7 THE PASSION

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was greatly reproached from HIS childhood (Psalm 69:11-12). HE was greatly afflicted from HIS youth (Psalm 129:1-2).

The passion is the sufferings and death of our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE horribly suffered and died for our sins. HE horribly suffered from the garden of Gethsemane to Calvary for our sins. HE, the Righteous one died a substitutionary death for us, the sinners.

The garden of Gethsemane was the place of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most agonizing prayer, Judas' betrayal, and HIS arrest. HIS prayer was not due to HIS fear of death. HE never feared about HIS death. The punishment that had to be borne for our sins brought our LORD JESUS CHRIST great anguish.

In the garden of Gethsemane, HE struggled and wrestled against our sins, and HE killed the sin that entered through the garden of Eden and all other sins. The sin of the whole world was poured on our LORD JESUS CHRIST and HE became "sin for us"—"sin offering for us". Now, HE is the sin-bearer for all mankind for all the ages. HE is the Saviour of the whole world for all the ages. HE is the Redeemer of the whole world for all the ages.

*"For HE hath made HIM to be sin (sin offering) for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of GOD in HIM."*

II Corinthians 5:21

In the garden of Gethsemane, our LORD JESUS CHRIST fell on HIS face and prayed; HE fell on the ground and prayed; HE knelt down and prayed; HE prayed with loud cries and tears. HE prayed earnestly and in great anguish; HE was greatly pressed and greatly squeezed. So, HIS sweat became like great drops of blood falling down to the ground. So, our LORD JESUS CHRIST was very tired and HE was very weak as well. HE was too tired to walk about a stone's throw (about a distance of 150 feet) to come near HIS sleeping

disciples (St. Luke 22:39-41; St. Matthew 26:36-45). What a pitiful thing it is! During HIS most agonizing prayer in the garden of Gethsemane, all HIS disciples were in deep slumber.

*"And being in an agony HE prayed more earnestly: and HIS sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground."*

St. Luke 22:44

*"Who in the days of HIS flesh, when HE had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears ..."*

Hebrews 5:7

After the passion in the garden of Gethsemane, Judas Iscariot, the traitor; betrayed our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST and HE was arrested; and HE was put to death on the cross.

Before putting our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST to death, the Jews, soldiers, servants and others beat HIM with hands and sticks mercilessly and severely. What a pitiful thing it is!

The soldiers slapped our LORD JESUS CHRIST on HIS most holy head with a rod. They also slapped HIM on HIS most holy cheek with a rod. What a pitiable thing it is!

This pitiable thing is a fulfilment of Micah 5:1.

*"...They shall smite the Judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek."*

Micah 5:1

*"And they smote HIM on the head with a reed, ..."*

St. Mark 15:19

The soldiers replaced our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy dress with another dress (with a purple robe). They mocked HIS claim to be King by clothing HIM with a purple (scarlet) coloured military robe.

*"...And they put on HIM a purple robe,"*

St. John 19:2

Again, the soldiers after taking off HIS own clothes, they tied our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST to a stone pillar and six Roman soldiers whipped (scourged) HIM with leather whips tipped with sharp pieces of metal and bone, until their hands became

tired. The Roman scourge consisted of a leather whip, split into several strips, tipped with sharp pieces of metal and bone to cut the flesh. Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy back was torn as if it was furrowed with a plough. What an awful thing it is!

This awful thing is a fulfilment of Psalm 129:3.

*"The plowers plowed upon MY back: they made long their furrows."*

Psalm 129:3

*"Then Pilate therefore took JESUS, and scourged HIM."*

St. John 19:1

Our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy body was torn as if it was furrowed with a plough and HIS most holy blood was running out of HIS most holy body. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST fainted and fell on HIS face in the blood. What an awful thing it is!

The soldiers crowned our LORD JESUS CHRIST with a crown of **seventy-two** sharp iron nails (crown of thorns) and beat HIM on HIS most holy head with a bamboo stick. So this iron crown was pressed on HIS most holy head without any shake. Now, HIS most holy blood was bleeding from HIS most holy head. What an awful thing it is!

*"And when they had plaited a crown of thorns, they put it upon HIS head, and a reed in HIS right hand: and they bowed the knee before HIM, and mocked HIM, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!"*

St. Matthew 27:29

*"And began to salute HIM, Hail, King of the Jews! And they smote HIM on the head with a reed, and did spit upon HIM, and bowing their knees worshipped HIM."*

St. Mark 15:18-19

*"And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote HIM with their hands."*

St. John 19:3

They also spat on HIM. They spat on HIS most holy face. They struck HIM with sticks. They also struck HIM with their hands. They ridiculed HIM and mocked at HIM. A scarlet (purple) robe, a crown of thorns and a reed (rod) for a scepter added to their mockery.



They put a rod in HIS right hand and mockingly knelt in front of HIM and mockingly worshipped HIM. They mockingly hailed HIM. They mockingly saluted HIM. What a pitiful thing it is!

It was a heart-rending sight when they extremely insulted HIM, ridiculed HIM and mocked at HIM. They pulled out our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy beard from HIS most holy cheeks and so HIS most holy blood was oozing from HIS most holy face. What a pitiable thing it is!

This pitiable thing is a fulfilment of Isaiah 50:6.

*"I gave MY back to the smiters, and MY cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not MY face from shame and spitting."*

Isaiah 50:6

The king Herod with his men of war extremely ridiculed our extremely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST. They also extremely mocked at HIM. They also dressed HIM in a gorgeous robe to add to their mockery. Insane or mad people were usually dressed in gorgeous robes. The king Herod treated our extremely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST with extreme contempt. What a pathetic thing it is!

*"And Herod with his men of war set HIM at nought (treated HIM with extreme contempt), and mocked HIM, and arrayed (dressed) HIM in a gorgeous robe, and sent HIM again to Pilate."*

St. Luke 23:11

Before that, the men who held our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST severely struck HIM. They placed HIS most holy hands at HIS back and strongly bound HIS most holy hands with ropes and handcuffs. They also strongly bound HIS most holy waist with a long iron chain and two men caught hold of it with one at the front end and the other at the rear end. Then they severely pushed HIM here and there; they severely pulled HIM here and there; they severely pushed HIM to fall to the ground; they severely pushed HIM to fall to a rocky ground. So our LORD JESUS CHRIST fell to a rocky ground. Then they put HIM into a deep and dark pit. What a pitiful thing it is!

Again, they also struck on HIS most holy face. The servants also struck HIM with their fists. They greatly ridiculed HIM. They greatly

mocked at HIM. They spat on HIM. They also spat on HIS most holy face. They blindfolded HIM. They blasphemously spoke against HIM. They greatly insulted HIM. They extremely blasphemed against HIM. What a pitiable thing it is!

*"And the men that held JESUS mocked HIM, and smote HIM. And when they had blindfolded HIM, they struck HIM on the face, and asked HIM, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote THEE? And many other things blasphemously spake they against HIM."*

St. Luke 22:63-65

*"And some began to spit on HIM, and to cover HIS face, and to buffet (beat) HIM, and to say unto HIM, Prophecy: and the servants did strike HIM with the palms of their hands."*

St. Mark 14:65

Our LORD JESUS was completely exhausted and weary. HE was very hungry and HE was very thirsty. HE was very tired and HE was very weak. HE was too tired to walk. HE was too tired to stand as well. What a pitiful thing it is!

When Pilate delivered our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST to the Jews to be crucified, the soldiers took off the clinging purple robe and put on HIS most holy dress. When taking off the clinging robe, HIS most holy body was again torn and HIS most holy blood was again flowing out. What an awful thing it is!

*"...They took off the purple from HIM, and put HIS own clothes on HIM, ..."*

St. Mark 15:20

Our LORD JESUS became more and more tired and weary. HE became more and more hungry and thirsty. HE became more and more weak and exhausted. What a pathetic thing it is!

Then they asked our LORD JESUS CHRIST to carry a heavy wooden cross. Evidently, the weight of the cross was more than HE could bear due to HIS very severe scourging, and due to HIS very severe hunger and thirst, and due to HIS very severe tiredness and weariness and sleeplessness. What a pathetic thing it is!

Then our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST bore HIS own cross on HIS most holy shoulders, with great agony and pain

and went out to the place of the Skull or Golgotha or Calvary. When unable to bear HIS heavy cross on HIS most holy shoulders, HE was bent towards HIS front and HIS heavy cross was on HIS back and one end of HIS cross touched the floor. Very slowly, HE walked towards Calvary. What a pitiful thing it is!

*“And HE bearing HIS cross went forth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha.”*

St. John 19:17

With the heavy rough wooden cross on HIS most holy shoulders, our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST walked falteringly on the rugged and rocky path in barefoot with great agony and pain. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's exceedingly holy feet were bleeding as HE walked on the rugged and rocky path. What a pitiful thing it is!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was utterly exhausted. HIS most holy knees trembled from weakness and **HE fell down** on the rugged and rocky path **three times** with the heavy cross upon HIM, and these **three times HE felt unconscious**. Even then, they beat our LORD JESUS CHRIST two times mercilessly and severely. What an awful thing it is!

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST had fallen the third time, our LORD had no strength to rise and HE lay there under the heavy cross much more exhausted and weary. At that time also HE felt unconscious. The soldiers thought that HE would die before HE was crucified. So, they stopped their severe and merciless beatings, and they forced Simon the Cyrenian to bear the cross. They thought that he was a Gentile, as he was black. But he was a Jew. The Romans and the Jews did never touch the cross.

Simon first lifted the heavy cross under which our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST lay. Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST very slowly rose to HIS feet and the heavy cross was placed very lightly on HIS most holy shoulders. Simon walked behind our LORD JESUS CHRIST supporting the cross. Thus, Simon helped our LORD JESUS CHRIST to walk without falling again. Simon walked behind our LORD JESUS CHRIST up to the top of the hill of Calvary, the place of the Skull or Golgotha, where our LORD JESUS was to be crucified. With very great difficulty our LORD JESUS CHRIST went up the steep

hill of Calvary. With great agony and pain our LORD JESUS CHRIST went up the steep hill of Calvary. What a pitiful thing it is!

Then they crucified our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross with three nails. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's exceedingly holy blood was gushing out of HIS most sacred hands and feet. What an awful thing it is! Then they forcibly dropped the cross into a pit with our LORD JESUS on the cross, on three nails with a crown of iron thorns on HIS most holy head and a piece of waist-cloth at HIS most holy waist. What an awful thing it is!

When they forcibly dropped the cross into a pit, and when our LORD JESUS was hanging on the cross, on three nails, the most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST poured out like water and all HIS most holy bones were out of joint and HIS most holy bones could be counted and HIS most holy heart had turned wax; HIS most holy heart had melted away in the midst of HIS most holy bowels; HIS most holy strength was dried up like a potsherd; and HIS most holy tongue stuck to HIS most holy jaws. What an awful thing it is!

This awful thing is the fulfilment of Psalm 22:14-15, 17.

*"I am poured out like water, and all MY bones are out of joint: MY heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of MY bowels. MY strength is dried up like a potsherd; and MY tongue cleaveth to MY jaws; ..."*

Psalm 22:14-15

*"I may tell (can count) all MY bones: ..."*

Psalm 22:17

Thus our exceedingly guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST was poured out like water. HIS most holy body was greatly shivering and trembling due to great agony and pain. HIS most holy arms, legs, hands and feet were also greatly shivering and trembling due to great agony and pain. What an awful thing it is!

All the enemies who saw HIM mocked at HIM; they laughed at HIM; they shot out their lips; they shook their heads; and they reproached HIM. Their great reproaches had broken HIS most holy heart greatly. What a pitiable thing it is!

This pitiable thing is a fulfilment of Psalm 22:7-8; 69:20; 109:25.

*"All they that see ME laugh ME to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, HE trusted on the LORD that HE would deliver HIM: let HIM deliver HIM, seeing HE delighted in HIM."*

Psalm 22:7-8

*"Reproach hath broken MY heart; and I am full of heaviness: ..."*

Psalm 69:20

*"I became also a reproach unto them: when they looked upon ME they shook their heads."*

Psalm 109:25

Those who passed by hurled insults at HIM and blasphemed against HIM, wagging their heads, and saying,

*"Save THYSELF, and come down from the cross."*

St. Mark 15:30

*"...Save THYSELF. If THOU be the SON OF GOD, come down from the cross."*

St. Matthew 27:40

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is the SON OF GOD, but a group of Jews (Israelites) did not believe and accept HIM.

In the same way, the chief priests and the scribes and elders mocked at HIM among themselves. They said,

*"HE saved others; HIMSELF HE cannot save. Let CHRIST the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe."*

St. Mark 15:31-32

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is the most glorious King of Israel, but a group of Jews (Israelites) did not believe and accept HIM.

They also crucified two thieves (robbers) with HIM, the one on HIS right and the other on HIS left. Even these robbers who were crucified with our LORD JESUS CHRIST reviled HIM in an insulting language. What a pitiable thing it is!

*"The thieves also, which were crucified with HIM, cast the same in HIS teeth (repeated the same taunts to HIM)."*

St. Matthew 27:44

Now, our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST was hanging in the middle of two thieves. What a pitiable thing it is!

This pitiable thing is the fulfilment of Isaiah 53:12.

*"...HE was numbered with the transgressors; ..."*

Isaiah 53:12

There were no trees or shadows in the place of the skull, Golgotha or Calvary. It was 9 A.M. when they crucified our LORD JESUS CHRIST. While HE was hanging on the cross, scorching heat of the sun gave HIM more and more agony and pain; more and more thirst and hunger. HE suffered terribly from the intense heat of the sun. From 9 A.M. to 12 noon, our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST was seared with the intense heat of the sun. What a pitiful thing it is!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered extreme hunger and extreme thirst on the cross. HIS exceedingly holy tongue dried and stuck to HIS most holy palate; HIS most holy stomach stuck to HIS most holy back. HIS most holy bones were out of joint. HIS most holy bones were so shaken loose that they could be counted. HIS most holy heart melted like wax within HIM. HE was poured like water. HIS most holy blood poured out like water. What a pitiful thing it is!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy face was like a very hard grey (gray) stone. HIS exceedingly beautiful golden face, HIS very handsome and pretty face, and HIS extremely merciful face dried and shrank. HIS most holy right eye sunk into the socket due to extreme hunger and thirst and weariness and pain and sleeplessness and due to very severe blows upon HIS most holy body; and HIS most holy left eye came outside the socket due to very heavy blows upon HIS most holy left cheek with a bamboo rod and with hands. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most beautiful appearance was disfigured and HIS most holy face was marred. What a pitiable thing it is! This pitiable thing is the fulfilment of Isaiah 50:7; 52:14; 53:2 and Micah 5:1.

*"...Therefore have I set MY face like a flint, and I know that I*

*shall not be ashamed."*

Isaiah 50:7

*"As many were astonished (astonished) at THEE; HIS visage (appearance) was so marred more than any man, and HIS form more than the sons of men:"*

Isaiah 52:14

*"...HE hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see HIM, there is no beauty that we should desire HIM."*

Isaiah 53:2

Our LORD JESUS was greatly neglected and despised. HE was greatly oppressed and afflicted. HE was filled with extreme sorrow. HE was deeply insulted. With HIS most holy body bruised, our LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered terrible agony and pain on the cross. What a pitiful thing it is! This pitiful thing is the fulfilment of Isaiah 53:3-7.

*"HE is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from HIM; HE was despised, and we esteemed HIM not. Surely HE hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem HIM stricken, smitten of GOD, and afflicted. But HE was wounded for our transgressions, HE was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon HIM; and with HIS stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on HIM the iniquity of us all. HE was oppressed, and HE was afflicted, yet HE opened not HIS mouth: HE is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so HE openeth not HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:3-7

These unbearable sufferings, agonizing pains, worst humiliations, undesirable insults and most cruel persecutions are the result of the filthy rotten sins of mankind. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered extreme agonies, intense pains, vehement insults and public humiliations which mankind deserved for their filthy rotten sins. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST tolerated all these great agonies, pains, insults and humiliations only to give freedom to mankind, to escape from destruction of sin and curse, and to bring peace, good health, strength and consolation, and to give eternal life of heaven at the end. What a loving GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

After doing all these things mercilessly, they killed our entirely guiltless LORD JESUS on the cross very cruelly. This kill is the epitome of terrible wickedness/evil/sin which man has done against the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who came as a MAN to save us. Thus, it is a terrible wickedness/evil/sin against GOD and MAN. What a terrible thing it is! Now, have you moved by what JESUS did for you by HIS great sufferings and death on the cross? Are you received salvation from your sins by HIS own blood? If you neglect so a great salvation, you will not escape hell, the hell-fire (Hebrews 2:3-4).

Many **Samaritans (heathens)** came to our LORD JESUS and believed HIM (St. John 4:39-42), but the so-called GOD's people, the Jews/the Israelites very cruelly killed HIM on the cross. What a brutal thing it is!

## 7.8 CHRIST DIED FOR THE GLORY OF GOD AS WELL

**CHRIST's death on the cross is not only for the salvation of sinners of the whole world, but also for the glory and honour of GOD HIMSELF. CHRIST JESUS died for the glory of GOD. CHRIST JESUS died for the glory and honour of GOD. CHRIST JESUS demonstrated GOD's glory and honour on the cross. The invisible GOD was made visible on the cross. CHRIST JESUS displayed GOD publicly on the cross.**

GOD displayed CHRIST JESUS publicly on the cross. GOD displayed CHRIST JESUS publicly as a satisfaction (propitiation) in HIS blood to demonstrate HIS holy righteousness, because in HIS forbearance and patience and tolerance GOD had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished (Romans 3:25).

GOD is just as well as the justifier of the one who has faith in CHRIST JESUS (Romans 3:26). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has taken the sin on HIMSELF and has imputed HIS holy righteousness to the sinner. On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed the holy justice of GOD.

On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed GOD's longsuffering or unlimited patience (I Timothy 1:16). On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed the holy grace of GOD (St. John 1:14; Galatians 1:6; Ephesians 2:5). On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed the holy love of GOD (I John 4:10). On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed the Law.



Our GOD is absolutely consistent. GOD is absolutely consistent in HIS own laws. On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed GOD's absolute consistency in respect of HIS own laws (Romans 3:27-31).

On the cross, CHRIST JESUS displayed GOD's glorious and true holiness (Exodus 15:11; Ephesians 4:24). All GOD's laws reflect GOD's holiness. On the cross, CHRIST JESUS fulfilled all GOD's laws by sacrificing HIMSELF. On the cross, the holiness of GOD is satisfied and at the cross, sinners are converted and regenerated by the renewing of the HOLY SPIRIT (II Corinthians 5:17; Titus 3:5).

Now, on the cross the holy righteousness of GOD is displayed. On the cross, the holy justice of GOD is displayed. On the cross, the unlimited patience of GOD is displayed. On the cross, the holy grace of GOD is displayed. On the cross, the holy love of GOD is displayed. On the cross, the Law is displayed. On the cross, GOD's absolute consistency in respect of HIS own laws is displayed. On the cross, GOD's glorious and true holiness is displayed. Thus, GOD, GOD the FATHER is fully glorified in the death of HIS SON, GOD the SON—the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 7.9 THE GREAT EVENT BEFORE DEATH

While our LORD JESUS CHRIST was hanging on the cross, the sun was darkened at noon and there was total darkness all over the earth from the twelfth hour at noon until the third hour in the evening. This darkness was evidently supernatural. Darkness reigned the earth from noon until 3 p.m.

*“Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.”*

St. Matthew 27:45

‘From the sixth hour ... unto the ninth hour’ means ‘from 12 noon to 3 p.m.’

The sun set and failed to shine at noon. So no one could do anything. They were still. The prophecy of Amos was fulfilled.

*“And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD GOD, that I will cause the sun to go down at noon, and I will darken the earth in the clear day.”*

Amos 8:9

Again, the feast of Passover and the feast of the Unleavened Bread of the Jews were turned into mourning and their songs were turned into lamentation. It was a bitter day for them. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was crucified on the day of the feast of Passover, which was the first day of the day of the feast of the Unleavened Bread. On the very same day, the sun set and failed to shine at noon and it was a bitter day for the Jews. Wearing sackclothes and shaving heads were the symbols of great grief.

*“And I will turn your feasts into mourning, and all your songs into lamentation; and I will bring up sackcloth upon all loins, and baldness upon every head; and I will make it as the mourning of an only son, and the end thereof as a bitter day.”*

Amos 8:10

The chief priests and the elders and all their people were terrified to think what would happen to them. They were frightfully struck with terror and grief. After the third hour in the evening, the darkness lifted.

During this time of darkness, our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST bore all our sins in HIS most holy body on the cross or on the tree, so that we might die to sins and live for righteousness.

*“Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.”*

I Peter 2:24

## 7.10 THE GREAT POWER TO GIVE UP AND TAKE BACK HIS LIFE

*“Therefore doth MY FATHER love ME, because I lay down MY life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from ME, but I lay it down of MYSELF. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of MY FATHER.”*

St. John 10:17-18

‘FATHER’ is ‘GOD the FATHER’, which is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

Now our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD has the great power and authority to give up HIS most glorious life and to

take it back. So HE gave up HIS most glorious life and took it back. What a powerful GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

After HE had given up HIS most glorious life for sinners, a soldier standing near HIS cross pierced HIS side with his spear. HIS most holy blood and water flowed out of the wound. See St. John 19:34. Thus our LORD JESUS CHRIST shed HIS most holy blood to the last drop for sinners. What a loving GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

### 7.11 SEVEN WORDS ON THE CROSS

The Almighty and All-Powerful LORD JESUS CHRIST spoke **SEVEN WORDS** thunderously, from the cross. HIS Words are full of blessings and divine meanings. While hanging on the cross, people used to speak foul words, and to curse and scold others. But our LORD JESUS CHRIST spoke only glorious and wonderful words for the people to be blessed.

The seven words of JESUS on the cross are very highly significant words. HIS thunderously spoken first word on the cross not only concerns the people who crucified our LORD JESUS, but also concerns the people of the whole world, since all are sinners. HIS thunderously spoken **first word** on the cross is:

**"FATHER, FORGIVE THEM; FOR THEY KNOW NOT WHAT THEY DO."**

St. Luke 23:34

HIS first word on the cross affirms faith, reveals love and declares hope. Now the forgiveness of sins (the remission of sins) for the people of the whole world is obtained only through our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE is also the GOD, the FATHER. HE asked GOD the FATHER (HIMSELF) and obtained forgiveness (remission) of sins for them including us, the people of the whole world.

Philip, one of the twelve disciples of our LORD JESUS said to HIM,

*"LORD, shew us the FATHER, and it sufficeth (will satisfy) us."*

St. John 14:8

JESUS answered and said to him,

*"Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known ME, Philip? he that hath seen ME hath seen the FATHER; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the FATHER?"*

St. John 14:9

Further, our LORD JESUS said,

*"I and MY FATHER are one."*

St. John 10:30

Again, about HIS glorious relationship with GOD, the FATHER, our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF said,

*"That all men should honour the SON (GOD the SON), even as they honour the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). He that honoureth not the SON (GOD the SON) honoureth not the FATHER (GOD the FATHER) ..."*

St. John 5:23

Now, GOD the SON, and GOD the FATHER are the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

From this verse anyone can understand that whoever honours the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, honours the FATHER (GOD the FATHER), and whoever dishonours the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, dishonours the FATHER (GOD the FATHER), and whoever crucifies the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, crucifies the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). So our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF interceded and prayed for sinners—"FATHER, forgive them; for they know not what they do".

Further, when our LORD JESUS CHRIST was hanging on the cross, HE did not desire to show HIM that HE was the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). So HE HIMSELF interceded and prayed for sinners—"FATHER, forgive them; for they know not what they do".

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST's glorious intercessory prayer for sinners, at once worked for the thief on HIS right side. HIS glorious intercessory prayer for sinners then worked for Cornelius, the Roman centurion and for numerous other people. HIS glorious intercessory prayer is now working on numerous people and it will continue to work on numerous people.

Again, HIS glorious intercessory prayer saved all HIS enemies, from their immediate destruction. HIS glorious intercessory prayer provided them a grace period of about forty years, for their repentance and salvation.

Some people have a wrong notion that the intercession of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will bring them salvation from sins. So they are not repenting of their sins, and they are not praying for the forgiveness of sins, and they are not praying for the salvation from sins, with broken-heart and with tears and with humility, by remembering the passion of CHRIST.

If the intercession of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is enough for salvation, why did our LORD JESUS die for sinners? If the intercession of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is enough for salvation, why should the Gospel of our LORD JESUS be preached? If the intercession of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is enough for salvation, what is the use of repentance and believing the Gospel? To enter into the kingdom of GOD, everyone should repent of his sins and everyone should believe the glorious Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Our LORD JESUS said,

*"The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of GOD is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel."*

St. Mark 1:15

'The time is fulfilled' means 'the time of the law is fulfilled' or 'the time of the law has reached its fulfilment'.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's preaching stresses the importance of this present time. All, even the Jews or the Israelites, should believe in JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF, and they should believe in the Gospel of JESUS CHRIST itself, and they should repent of their sins to get salvation from sins. JESUS CHRIST is the end of the law. HE is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone who believes.

*"For CHRIST is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth."*

Romans 10:4

At this point, let us try to understand fully the significance of the statement that 'CHRIST is the end of the law for righteousness'.

In the old system, obedience to law was the motive and inspiration of life. It was also a condition of acceptance with GOD. But the demands of the law are impracticable and beyond human power to give. This is because of man's sinful nature. Hence there is a need for a new system and that system is called the Gospel of JESUS. According to this Gospel, our LORD JESUS has brought within our reach what we require.

Both obedience to and acceptance by GOD are achieved by the faith in CHRIST. What does faith in the Gospel of LORD JESUS ask for? It is a simple thing: 'Acknowledge that JESUS is LORD and really believe in HIS resurrection'. Can't human hearts and human lips do this?

Now, all the sinners must have a desire to have a relationship with the Forgiver of sins and Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and should ask for forgiveness of sins and salvation. Without this desire to approach and beg of LORD JESUS, no one can get forgiveness of sins and salvation. Further, the sinners must have a clear understanding about their sin and its effects before and after their death, and of their total inability to do anything of their own to escape the wrath of GOD. They must have a clear understanding about the Forgiver of sins and Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who HE is and what HE has done for forgiveness of sins and salvation. Without having this understanding, no one can get forgiveness of sins and salvation.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb of GOD came to take away the sins of the world. While HE was hanging on the cross, HE HIMSELF bore the sins of all people, including the sins of those who had crucified HIM and HE HIMSELF made intercession for sinners of the world, including those who had crucified HIM, HE HIMSELF interceded for sinners; HE HIMSELF pleaded for sinners; HE HIMSELF prayed for sinners.

*"...And HE bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors."*

This intercession of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was revealed in the first word of JESUS on the cross. The whole meaning of the cross is clearly revealed in this one act of HIS priestly intercession. HE was interceding on behalf of all sinners. HE was dying to purchase forgiveness for sins for mankind. Even at the very height of HIS agony and pain, HIS heart was filled with great compassion.

**Forgiveness** is one of the divine qualities of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. That was also, HIS preaching. HE preached and said,

*"But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you."*

St. Matthew 5:44

Thus, our LORD JESUS practised HIS preaching in HIS own life. HE HIMSELF interceded and prayed for the sinners, including those who had crucified HIM, by telling the reason—"For they know not what they do".

This glorious intercessory prayer of our LORD JESUS CHRIST immediately penetrated into the heart of the thief on HIS right side and worked for his salvation. At once, he came to know his awful state due to his terrible sins. So, he stopped his reproaches and insults on our LORD JESUS and rebuked the other thief. He rebuked him and said,

*"Dost not thou fear GOD, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this MAN hath done nothing amiss."*

St. Luke 23:40-41

But, the thief on HIS left side did not care for the words of the other thief. He again reproached and insulted our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS. Further, the thief on HIS right side believed that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, and he believed HIS glorious kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. He was very eager to enter into HIS kingdom. He feared about HIS terrible judgment and he was frightened about the most dreadful hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

Again, the thief on HIS right side had a clear understanding about his sin and its effects before and after his death and he had a clear understanding about the Forgiver of sins, and Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. So he desired to depend on our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The thief on HIS right side realized his sins, guilt, faults and transgressions. And he rebuked the other thief. And he started to confess all his sins, guilt, faults, and transgressions before our LORD JESUS, with a broken-heart and with tears and with humility. He had not covered his sins. And he said to JESUS,

*"LORD, remember me when THOU comest into THY kingdom."*

St. Luke 23:42

**What a great faith he had !**

One **secret thing** about the thief on JESUS' right side is that he had received baptism from John the Baptist when he had given baptism; and after that he became a backslider, a great thief. A backslider is also a sinner.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Forgiver of sins and Saviour, is the most merciful and gracious GOD. At once, our LORD JESUS on the cross forgave his sins and saved him from his sins. On the brink of HIS very painful death, our LORD JESUS saved the thief on HIS right side, who prayed to HIM for his salvation. The thief became a blessed one. He was blessed to enter into the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

HIS thunderously spoken second word on the cross is said to the penitent thief on the right side of our LORD JESUS, who asked HIM to remember him when JESUS comes into HIS kingdom. HIS thunderously spoken **second word** on the cross is:

*"VERILY I SAY UNTO THEE, TO DAY SHALT THOU BE WITH ME IN PARADISE."*

St. Luke 23:43

**Paradise is a place of rest for HIS saints. Due to HIS terrible death on the cross, HIS saints receive Paradise, the place of rest of their souls. Till HIS terrible death on the Cross at Calvary, the souls of saints**



of the Old Testament rested in the dust of the earth (I Samuel 28:3-20; Daniel 12:2). After HIS death, they also received the blissful paradise, the place of rest of the souls of saints in the third heaven (II Corinthians 12:2-4). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

HIS second word on the cross reveals that HE is our welcoming LORD. HE welcomed the repented thief (repented sinner) by giving a vision of paradise. HE welcomed the repented thief, the repented backslider by saying 'Today'. What a vision! What a welcome! HE heartily welcomes everyone of the repented sinners to give HIS glorious kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST graciously forgave and saved the penitent thief on HIS right side, it is evident that any wicked sinner can get forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins from HIM through faith (Ephesians 2:8-9).

Now, the dying thief on the right side of our LORD JESUS was free from the terrible burden of his sins. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST was bearing his sins for him. He was now clothed in perfect righteousness of CHRIST. Soon they would be in paradise together. On that day, immediately after his death, he was with HIM in paradise. If there were any purgatory, then this thief would have a long stay there. So, the Roman Catholic doctrine about purgatory is utterly a falsehood. **There is no purgatory.** There is no purgatory at all.

Then, the soldiers and the chief priests and the Sadducees and the Pharisees and the scribes and other people, moved away from HIS cross, and those who loved our LORD JESUS CHRIST came near to HIS cross. John the disciple whom HE loved, Virgin Mary the mother of JESUS, Mary Magdalene to whom our LORD JESUS appeared first after HIS most glorious resurrection, Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome the wife of Zebedee and the mother of James and John the two disciples of JESUS, were among them.

Now, JESUS' mother, the Virgin Mary did not remain perpetually a virgin. After the birth of our LORD JESUS, the Child of the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Matthew 1:18), Mary and Joseph had a marital relationship (St. Matthew 1:25). But, they had no children. Many people, even great Theologians have a wrong and absurd thought that Mary and

Joseph had four sons and three daughters. The actual truth behind this thing is that in the Old Testament days, Moses' sister Miriam's name was a very common feminine name in almost all families of the Jews or the Israelites. At the time of our LORD JESUS, Miriam's name had undergone mutation as Mary. In a very same house/family, there was a number of Marys, such as elder Mary, middle Mary, younger Mary and so on. In the case of Virgin Mary's house/family, there was her own sister namely Mary. This fact is very clearly written in St. John 19:25 as HIS (JESUS') mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas. That Mary the wife of Cleophas had sons and daughters. Her sons' name were James, Joses, Juda (Jude) and Simon (St. Mark 6:3). This fact is very clearly written in St. Matthew 27:56 as Mary the mother of James and Joses. Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST had no own brothers and sisters (no fleshly related brothers and sisters), that Mary the wife of Cleophas' sons and daughters were called as HIS brothers and sisters (St. Mark 6:3). **One important thing to bear in mind is that if Virgin Mary, the mother of JESUS had also four sons and three daughters as told by many people, then our LORD JESUS CHRIST did not have the necessity to choose HIS disciple John whom HE loved as best and to give him as her own son inspite of HIMSELF.** After the death and resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, James and Juda (Jude) became apostles (James 1:1; Jude 1). Glory be to GOD!

When our LORD JESUS was in Galilee, these women except Virgin Mary had followed HIM and ministered to HIM and come up with HIM to Jerusalem. They were all crying aloud with great grief. Holding the most holy feet of our LORD JESUS on the cross, Virgin Mary was crying aloud with great grief. John the disciple whom HE loved was also standing very near to Virgin Mary and he was also crying aloud with great grief.

Our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST was **shivering and trembling** with great agony and pain on the cross. HE was very hungry. HE was very thirsty. HE was too weary to talk. While HE was most painfully hanging on the cross, HE saw HIS grief-stricken mother, the Virgin Mary and HIS grief-stricken disciple John. No other disciple of our LORD JESUS was there. They were all scattered and shattered.

Now, HIS thunderously spoken **third word** on the cross comes while looking at HIS grief-stricken mother, the Virgin Mary and while looking at HIS grief-stricken beloved disciple, John. In the midst of HIS agonizing pain, by shaking HIS most holy head, HE thunderously said to HIS mother,

“WOMAN, BEHOLD THY SON!”

St. John 19:26

And HE thunderously said to HIS disciple by shaking HIS most holy head,

“BEHOLD THY MOTHER!”

St. John 19:27

From that time on, this disciple took her into his own home.

*“...And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home.”*

St. John 19:27

HIS third word on the cross reveals GOD as the Provider. HE provides through HIS SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HE provides through HIS disciple.

On hearing the Word of our LORD JESUS, Virgin Mary turned and looked at John. He resembled our LORD JESUS. There was not a degree of non-resemblance between our LORD JESUS and John. So her great grief about our LORD JESUS was tolerable to her.

And on hearing the Word of our LORD JESUS, John was greatly astonished and he was greatly overcome with emotion about HIS **great love—divine self-sacrificial love** towards him, even at HIS last hours of horrible death. By the Word of JESUS, John was more and more strengthened and he became more and more courageous. This strength and courage would have greatly helped him to do his duties during the burial of our LORD JESUS. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST alone is wise. HE knows everything; HE knows all things. HE knows the past; HE knows the present; HE knows the future. Only GOD really knows the past and the present and the future. Our most gracious and most merciful LORD JESUS CHRIST had pre-planned to console HIS grief-stricken

mother and HIS grief-stricken disciple. What a merciful and gracious LORD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST teaches a very important lesson to all by HIS third word on the cross. No one should despise his/her father when he is old; no one should despise his/her mother when she is old (Proverbs 23:22). No one should evade responsibility to parents by any unfair means (St. Mark 7:11-13). Honouring as well as obeying parents in the LORD ensures a long and a prosperous life upon earth (Ephesians 6:1-3). As HE was dying on the cross, HE made provision for HIS earthly mother through HIS beloved disciple, John. Thus HE fulfilled the fifth commandment as perfectly as HE fulfilled all the other commandments.

Immediately, John took Virgin Mary to Jerusalem and then he came back to Calvary. Except the mother of JESUS, the Virgin Mary, all the women mentioned above were standing there with great grief. Mentioning of these women is very significant, since they serve as eyewitnesses to the death, burial and resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. But, Virgin Mary does not serve as an eyewitness to the death and burial of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, in no circumstance, had our LORD JESUS CHRIST called HIS mother, 'mother'. When a marriage took place at Cana in Galilee, JESUS' mother was there. JESUS and HIS disciples were also invited to the marriage. When the wine was gone, JESUS' mother said to HIM,

*"They have no wine."*

St. John 2:3

JESUS replied to her,

*"Woman, what have I to do with thee? MINE hour is not yet come."*

St. John 2:4

Then our LORD JESUS performed HIS first miracle changing cold water into good wine. Water in six stone water jars filled to the brim was changed into good wine. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Again, why did our LORD JESUS CHRIST call HIS mother, '**woman**'? What were the reasons for such calling?

JESUS' mother, the Virgin Mary had thoroughly known all the prophetic scriptures about our LORD JESUS CHRIST. She had very well known that our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save sinners and HE was the Saviour of the world. She had very well known that HE was the Redeemer of the world. She had also very well known that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD Almighty. Heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain HIM. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Hence, the divine meaning of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's saying '**woman**' is that she had known everything about HIM clearly. So, she should never have the thought or imagined that HE was her son; and that she was HIS mother. Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST had said, "**Woman, Behold thy son**" with the divine inner meaning, that is:

"I am not your son; and you are not MY mother; you know, who I am; you know, from where I came; you know, why I came; you know, where I will be going and what I will be doing."

Further, our LORD JESUS was her Saviour (St. Luke 1:47). HE was the heavenly Master to her and she was an earthly disciple to HIM. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF rebuked those who wanted to elevate Mary to a place of veneration:

*"A certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto HIM, Blessed is the womb that bare THEE, and the paps which THOU hast sucked. But HE said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the Word of GOD, and keep it."*

St. Luke 11:27-28

Mary was blessed because she was obedient to the Word of GOD. Her blessedness was a matter of both hearing and doing GOD's Word. Her position as CHRIST's earthly mother did not carry with it any special titles such as co-mediatrix or co-redemptrix or queen of heaven or any of the other forms of deification. Mary did not remain perpetually a virgin. After the birth of JESUS, Mary and Joseph had a marital relationship (St. Matthew 1:25). It is a form of idolatry to bestow on Mary honour or titles or attributes. No one should give her a co-equal status in the redemptive work of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Giving such status to her is a terrible sin. No one should elevate her

as a special object of veneration or deification. Elevating her as a special object of veneration or deification is a terrible sin.

Again, "**Woman, Behold thy son**" emphasizes that her son John would accept and treat her as his own mother; he would nourish her as his own mother; he would provide all her needs; he would comfort her; and he would be her son. So she should not worry; she should not cry; she should not shed tears; she should not lament; she should not fear; and she should be peaceful and be comforted.

From that hour, John the disciple of our LORD JESUS, took Virgin Mary as his own mother. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is full of pity for HIS people. HE was full of pity for HIS mother, the Virgin Mary. But HE never called her, mother. HE called her, woman. The reason for this calling is that Mary knew everything about our LORD JESUS CHRIST. She knew that our LORD JESUS CHRIST was the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD for ever.

When our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST was shivering and trembling with agonizing pain on the cross, from the sixth hour to the ninth hour (from 12 noon to 3 p.m.), there was complete darkness over all the earth. The state of sin or evil is darkness. Hence, this darkness fell due to the sin of mankind. GOD's most terrible wrath for sin was poured upon our LORD JESUS CHRIST, during this time of darkness; and HE bore GOD's most terrible wrath for sin, during this time of darkness. HE terribly fought against sin (the curse of sin) and Satan, the devil during this time of darkness. During this grave, perilous and terribly agonizing time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST did not want to show HIS face to anyone. HIS most glorious face fell during the time of darkness. During the time of darkness, no one saw HIS face.

The sun covered its face and it set at noon suddenly. There was utter darkness over all the earth. This utter darkness at noon caused great fear. This great fear caused great silence. Then one could hear a pin drop and this silence lasted for about three hours. At that time, our entirely guiltless and pure LORD JESUS CHRIST bore more and more pain, more and more trembling, more and more sorrow and more and more grief. HE had no help from any man; HE had no help

from any angel; HE had no help by any means. HE suffered alone for us, the sinners. What a pathetic and pitiable situation it is!

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world, in the likeness of sinful flesh as a sin offering (Romans 8:3). But HE was sinless and holy. HE was truly human but not a sinner. Further, HE came into the world as the spotless and unblemished Lamb of GOD, to take away the sin of the whole world (St. John 1:29). Furthermore, HE came into the world, to drink the cup of sin of the whole world (St. Matthew 26:42). Again, HE came into the world, to make HIM to be sin (sin offering) for us (II Corinthians 5:21). Besides, HE came into the world, to offer HIM as a propitiation for the sins of the whole world (I John 2:2).

Further, we have no righteousness at all, and HE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) has no sin at all. Hence, we have to be righteous; HE has to come in the likeness of flesh to be a sin offering. Again, we have to be righteous; HE has to take away the sin of ours. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the spotless and unblemished Lamb of GOD, takes away the sin of the world. Further, we have to be righteous; HE has to be sin for us.

*“For HE hath made HIM to be sin (sin offering) for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of GOD in HIM.”*

II Corinthians 5:21

About three hours (from 12 noon to 3 p.m.), our sinless LORD JESUS CHRIST had made HIMSELF fully and completely to be sin for us (sin offering for us), so that we might become the righteousness of GOD in HIM. The LORD GOD imputed (attributed) not iniquity or sin on us, the sinners. Our LORD GOD is GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT and HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Now, GOD the FATHER imputed sin to CHRIST (GOD the SON). HE imputed sin to our LORD JESUS, the spotless and unblemished Lamb of GOD. Our LORD GOD imputed righteousness of CHRIST to the sinners account. CHRIST has taken the sin on HIMSELF and has imputed HIS righteousness to the sinners.

Now, our sins have hidden HIS most glorious face from us.

*"...Your sins have hid HIS face from you, ..."*

Isaiah 59:2

*"THOU art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not (cannot) look on iniquity: ..."*

Habakkuk 1:13

Where there is sin, the most holy face of our most holy GOD will be hidden. The final fight against sin and Satan was fought by our LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross, for about three hours (from 12 noon to 3 p.m.). At that time, our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST, the unblemished and spotless Lamb of GOD, was made to be sin for us; and at that time the most holy face of GOD, the FATHER was lightly hidden to HIM. That time was the most critical time for our LORD JESUS. But, HE fought to the finish and HE gloriously triumphed over sin and Satan. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

When the darkness was slowly lifted, HE fully triumphed over sin and Satan. It was about the ninth hour (3 p.m.). HIS thunderously spoken **fourth word** on the cross is addressed to GOD at about the ninth hour and it comes from Psalm 22:1. This word on the cross is a word of great triumphant victory over sin and Satan, after a dreadful battle of about three hours against sin and Satan. At the time of HIS triumphant victory on the cross, for a little moment, the glorious divine face of GOD the FATHER (HIMSELF) was hidden to HIM due to our sins and at that time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST cried out with a thunderous voice and said,

*"ELI, ELI, LAMA SABACHTHANI ?"*

St. Matthew 27:46

This verse means,

*"MY GOD, MY GOD, why hast THOU forsaken ME?"*

St. Matthew 27:46

HIS fourth word on the cross reveals the suffering Saviour. The cry of the Saviour in the cross is unbearable. HE suffered for us, the sinners as a forsaken servant. HE was accepted as the sinner, since HE accepted all our sins on the cross.

This word on the cross is a word of triumph over sin and Satan. Satan was defeated and ruined and his head was crushed by our



LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross. Sin was defeated and killed by our LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

In the fourth word on the cross, GOD the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) calls GOD the FATHER: "MY GOD, MY GOD". It is rightful, since we see that GOD the FATHER calls GOD the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST): "O GOD".

*"But unto the SON (GOD the SON) HE (GOD the FATHER) saith, THY throne, O GOD, is for ever and ever: a sceptre (scepter) of righteousness is the sceptre of THY kingdom."*

Hebrews 1:8

The hidden thing in this verse is that GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON are the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Thomas, one of the twelve, said to our LORD JESUS CHRIST,

*"My LORD and my GOD."*

St. John 20:28

*"...This (JESUS CHRIST) is the true GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

When our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST was on the cross, HE did not wish to reveal HIMSELF, GOD. In the midst of bearing GOD's most terrible wrath of sin, our LORD JESUS CHRIST did not wish to reveal HIMSELF, GOD. Here, HE was accursed of GOD as our sin-bearer and suffered the great agony of spiritual death for us. Here, HE suffered for our benefit and HE suffered in our place. HE suffered as a substitute for sin and HE suffered as a substitutionary-sufferer. Again, HE hung on the cross as a mediator (peacemaker) between GOD and mankind. HE hung on the cross as a mediator (peacemaker) between GOD the FATHER and mankind. HE hung on the cross by holding HIS right hand with GOD the FATHER and by holding HIS left hand with mankind. Further, HE, the righteous for the unrighteous (us), greatly suffered on the cross for our sins, to bring us to GOD (to make our fellowship with GOD). So HE did not wish to reveal HIMSELF, GOD; but, HE was GOD the SON. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the SON. HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD for ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"For CHRIST also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the*

*unjust, that HE might bring us to GOD, being put to death in the flesh, ..."*

I Peter 3:18

*"For there is **one** GOD, and **one** Mediator between GOD and men, the Man CHRIST JESUS; Who gave HIMSELF a ransom for all, ..."*

I Timothy 2:5-6

Now, there is a great divine secret in the fourth word on the cross. HIS fourth word, "MY GOD, MY GOD, why hast THOU forsaken ME?" reveals that this time was the only forsaken time and this time was the most critical time to our entirely guiltless and holy LORD JESUS CHRIST. During this forsaken time, HIS horrible death occurred for the sin of mankind. During this forsaken time, HIS death occurred to free those who have been held in slavery by the sin and by the fear of death (hell) and by Satan (the devil). At this time, HE crushed the head of Satan, the devil vehemently and destroyed him.

*"...Through death HE might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage."*

Hebrews 2:14-15

For a little moment, HE was forsaken for us, the sinners. At that time, HIS death occurred for us, the sinners.

Further, if anyone calls our LORD JESUS CHRIST by faith, "MY GOD, MY GOD", then he will not be a forsaken one and HE will never forsake him. Thus our LORD JESUS CHRIST was not a forsaken one, since HE called HIMSELF, "MY GOD, MY GOD". But HE was forsaken for us, the sinners for a small moment. What a loving GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is! At this time, HE had poured out HIS soul to death. At this time, HE had tasted death for every man. At this time, HE died for all sinners. At this time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST died for our sins. At this time, HE has paid the price of sin, so we can go free. **The price of sin is death; JESUS CHRIST paid the price.**

*"...HE hath poured out HIS soul unto death: ..."*

Isaiah 53:12

*"...HE ... should taste death for every man."*

Hebrews 2:9

*"...One died for all, ..."*

II Corinthians 5:14

*"...It is CHRIST that died, ..."*

Romans 8:34

*"...CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures."*

I Corinthians 15:3

Then the darkness was completely lifted. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was most agonizingly hanging on the cross. And HE had thunderously spoken the fifth word on the cross. HIS thunderously spoken **fifth word** is:

**"I THIRST."**

St. John 19:28

HIS fifth word on the cross reveals the thirsting GOD. Each and everyone must satiate HIS most agonizing thirst for the souls of people by working as thirsty men to bring the souls of people to the thirsting GOD.

HE had spoken this word, since HE knew that all were now completed. HE had spoken this word for the fulfilment of the Scriptures.

*"...In MY thirst they gave ME vinegar to drink."*

Psalms 69:21

When HE horribly hung on the cross on three nails, the only one thing our LORD JESUS CHRIST spoke indicating HIS most horrible pain or discomfort was **"I thirst."** At this time also HE did not complain. What a patient endurance GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's great thirst is not for water, but for the salvation of the people of the whole world; HIS great thirst is for the repentance of the whole world; HIS great thirst is for the forgiveness of the whole world; HIS great thirst is for the redemption of the whole world; HIS great thirst is for the holiness and holy life of the whole world; HIS great thirst is for the anointment of the whole world by HIS HOLY SPIRIT; HIS great thirst is for the growth of spiritual life of the whole world; HIS great thirst is for the people of the whole world to enter into HIS everlasting kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or

the kingdom of heaven; and HIS great thirst is for HIS most glorious reigning with them for ever and ever.

*“THY kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and THY dominion endureth throughout all generations.”*

Psalm 145:13

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST's great thirst is not for water, but for the souls of all people of the world. HIS great thirst is for the redemption of their souls; HIS great thirst is for the salvation of their souls. Only the redeemed or the saved people will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD, since they have satiated HIS great thirst for their souls. The unredeemed or the unsaved people will be cast into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, since they have not satiated HIS great thirst for their souls. So everyone should satiate HIS great thirst for his/her soul, by getting salvation from sins, redemption from sins, holiness, holy life, etc.

Those who have not satiated HIS great thirst for their souls, will be in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur in great thirst for ever and ever. This will be a sure and certain thing. They will be punished by eternal thirst and eternal fire in hell for ever and ever. Not even a drop of water will be given to them for their great thirst in hell-fire (St. Luke 16:19-31).

But those who have satiated HIS great thirst for their souls, will be in heaven, the kingdom of GOD in great happiness and joy for ever and ever. HE will give to drink the water of life freely to them (Revelation 21:6). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, there was a vessel full of vinegar. So they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put the sponge on a stalk of the hyssop plant, and lifted up to HIS most holy mouth. When HE had received the vinegar, our LORD JESUS CHRIST thunderously said,

**“IT IS FINISHED.”**

St. John 19:30

It is HIS thunderously spoken **sixth word** on the cross. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's understanding has no limit. The divine meaning of this word on the cross is very great. Its length and breadth and height and depth is beyond our understanding.

Feeling of great relief, achievement and triumph is clearly revealed in this sixth word on the cross. This sixth word also reveals that HIS office as great Prophet is finished (St. Luke 7:16); and HIS office as High Priest is also finished (Hebrews 7:26). Thus, HIS intercessions, prayers, requests, cries, groanings, and supplications with strong crying and tears for us in this world are finished.

**"It is finished"** means that HIS days of HIS flesh are finished. That is, HIS fleshly life is finished. All HIS great sufferings in HIS most holy flesh are finished. HIS glorious Gospel work is finished. HIS great suffering ministry is finished. All HIS great thirst and great hunger and great weariness and great painfulness are finished. All HIS great tribulations in the world are finished. The Law of the Old Testament is fulfilled or ended or completed or finished. So, no one should keep the Law of the Old Testament. Hence, all sacrifices and traditions of men and rudiments of the world are finished. Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST sacrificed HIMSELF for the whole world, no other sacrifice is necessary. Doing evil for evil or railing for railing is finished. The principle of retaliation is finished. The principle of retaliation is, eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. All the prophecies about HIM are fulfilled and finished. In the past, our LORD GOD spoke through the prophets at many times and in various ways. The will of the FATHER (GOD the FATHER) in HIMSELF is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF. The work of the FATHER (GOD the FATHER) in HIMSELF is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF. Revealing the FATHER (GOD the FATHER) in HIMSELF is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF. Revealing the ONE GOD, AND THE ONLY GOD, AND THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD in HIMSELF is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF. The human beings are created in the image of GOD. How they are to walk and live in this world is clearly shown by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE lived as a most excellent model man. HE lived as a most excellent model spiritual man. HE lived as a most excellent godly man. Everyone should look upon HIM as their model spiritual man or model man. Thus, HIS most excellent godly living as a most excellent model man or model spiritual man is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF. All HIS work for the salvation of the people of the whole world is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF. And the tremendous scene of HIS

very great sufferings on the cross, revealing HIS very great love towards mankind is fulfilled and finished by HIMSELF.

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is triumphant over all things. HIS atoning work is done and finished. HIS redemptive work for sinners is complete. GOD's justice is satisfied. The ransom for sin is paid in full. The wages of sin are settled forever. The only remaining thing for CHRIST is to die so that HE might rise again.

Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST had thunderously spoken the seventh word on the cross. HIS thunderously spoken **seventh word** on the cross is:

**"FATHER, INTO THY HANDS I COMMEND MY SPIRIT."**

St. Luke 23:46

This is the fulfilment of the prophecy in Psalm 31:5.

*"Into THINE hand I commit MY Spirit: ..."*

Psalm 31:5

This seventh word on the cross reveals the receiving FATHER. HE receives HIS people in HIS most holy hands. This word also reveals the committing SON, the SON OF GOD—the LORD JESUS CHRIST and this word also reveals the departing Spirit.

HE spoke all these seven words thunderously. HE cried with a thunderous voice, as a shout of triumph, and yielded up HIS Ghost (Spirit). That is, HE breathed HIS last. Now, we have already seen that the FATHER (GOD the FATHER) is our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Before 12 noon, the first three words on the cross were spoken by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, one by one with sufficient intervals. At about 3 p.m., the fourth word on the cross was spoken by our LORD JESUS CHRIST. After 3 p.m., the last three words on the cross were spoken by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, one by one continuously.

When HE had spoken the sixth word, **"It is finished"**, we may think that all HIS Words were finished. But HIS Words were not finished with this word. By this sixth word, HE bade farewell to this world. Then HE commended HIS Spirit, by telling this seventh word to the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). By telling this seventh word

thunderously, HE went to HIS FATHER. HE started HIS first word with 'FATHER' and HE ended HIS last word with 'FATHER'.

HE had poured out HIS Soul to death. HE had given up HIS earthly Body in the hands of men. HE had given up HIS Spirit into the hands of the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has the power to lay down HIS life and take it up again. Here our LORD JESUS has predicted HIS crucifixion and resurrection.

*"...I lay down MY life, that I might take it again."*

St. John 10:17

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had spoken all these seven words on the cross, consciously and thunderously. Till the end, HE had spoken all these seven words consciously and thunderously. Even though HE was very hungry and very thirsty and very weary and very painful, HE had spoken all these seven words consciously and thunderously.

Now, there is a great divine secret in the last and the seventh word of JESUS on the cross. When HE had spoken the seventh word, HE gave up HIS most glorious Spirit into the most holy hands of the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). Hence, GOD the SON gave up HIS most glorious Spirit into the most holy hands of GOD the FATHER. But, GOD the SON and GOD the FATHER are the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. HE gave up HIS Spirit or HE yielded up HIS Spirit means that HE had fallen asleep. HE gave up HIS Spirit does not mean HIS death. HE had given up HIS most glorious Spirit into the most holy hands of the FATHER (GOD the FATHER) and HE had fallen asleep, for HIS most glorious resurrection on the third day from the grave. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had given up HIS Spirit willingly. HIS final passage into death was a deliberate act of HIS own sovereign will. HE showed HIS own sovereign will to the very end. HE showed HIS own sovereign control to the very end. St. John says,

*"HE bowed HIS head, and gave up the Ghost (HIS Spirit)."*

St. John 19:30

Quietly, submissively and simply, HE yielded up HIS life.

Further, the people of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are commending their spirit into the most holy hands of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER. Hence, HIS people are commending their spirit into the most holy hands of the FATHER (GOD the FATHER). Stephen, the **first Christian martyr**, calling upon GOD said,

*"LORD JESUS, receive my spirit."*

Acts 7:59

Then he knelt down, and cried aloud with a loud voice,

*"LORD, lay not this sin to their charge."*

Acts 7:60

*"...And when he (Stephen) had said this, he fell asleep."*

Acts 7:60

Stephen had fallen asleep for HIS most glorious resurrection on the day of resurrection of the saints. This is the first resurrection. The first resurrection is a resurrection to life, the life eternal in the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Thus, everyone should clearly understand the secrets of the divine meanings, contained in these seven words of JESUS on the cross.

## 7.12 EVENTS AFTER DEATH

When the LORD JESUS CHRIST had given up HIS glorious life, the thick curtain of the temple of Jerusalem, separating the holy place and the holy of holies, was torn from top to bottom into two and fell on the floor. This symbolizes the permanent opening of GOD's presence to mankind and their direct access to GOD through the terrible death of CHRIST.

There were earthquakes and the rocks split loudly and violently. Many tombs broke open. Particularly, many tombs of the saints (holy people) broke open. After the resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the bodies of these saints who had died were raised to life, they came out of their tombs, and they went into the holy city of Jerusalem and appeared to many people.



*“JESUS, when HE had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the Ghost (the Spirit). And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after HIS resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.”*

St. Matthew 27:50-53

When the Roman centurion, Cornelius and those with him who were guarding JESUS saw the earthquake and all that happened, they were terrified, and exclaimed,

*“Truly this was the SON OF GOD (the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST).”*

St. Matthew 27:54

This was a very strong affirmation of genuine faith based on all they had witnessed. Certainly this incident reveals our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most glorious life and character, even in the face of HIS terrible death on the cross.

### 7.13 TRUE SACRIFICE

The required qualifications of a true sacrifice for sins of mankind are as follows:

1. The true sacrifice should be without spot or fault or blemish and offered to GOD. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST sacrificed or offered HIMSELF to GOD and HE was without spot and without blemish. HE was perfect in all respects. HE gave HIS life as a ransom for all (St. Mark 10:45).

*“And walk in love, as CHRIST also hath loved us, and hath given HIMSELF for us an offering and a sacrifice to GOD for a sweet-smelling savour.”*

Ephesians 5:2

*“How much more shall the blood of CHRIST, who through the eternal Spirit offered HIMSELF without spot to GOD, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living GOD?”*

Hebrews 9:14

2. The true sacrifice should be the Lamb of GOD without blemish and without spot. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Lamb of GOD without blemish and without spot.

*"The next day John seeth JESUS coming unto HIM, and saith, Behold the Lamb of GOD, which taketh away the sin of the world."*

St. John 1:29

*"But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

I Peter 1:19

3. The true sacrifice should be the GOD in the guise of a man; our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came in this world becoming a man. HE declared HIMSELF the SON OF GOD and the SON OF MAN. See St. John 10:36; St. Matthew 20:28.

*"Let this mind be in you, which was also in CHRIST JESUS: Who, being in the form of GOD, thought it not robbery to be equal with GOD: But made HIMSELF of no reputation, and took upon HIM the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, HE humbled HIMSELF, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross."*

Philippians 2:5-8

*"...GOD was manifest in the flesh, ..."*

I Timothy 3:16

4. The true sacrifice should be crowned with a crown of thorns. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was crowned with a twisted crown of iron thorns.

*"And when they had plaited a crown of thorns, they put it upon HIS head, ..."*

St. Matthew 27:29

5. The true sacrifice should be bound. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was bound.

*"Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took JESUS, and bound HIM."*

St. John 18:12

Before crucifixion, the most holy arms and legs of our LORD JESUS CHRIST were strongly bound on the wooden cross by ropes.

6. The true sacrifice should be given bitter vinegar to drink. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was given bitter vinegar to drink.

*"They gave HIM vinegar to drink mingled with gall (myrrh): and when HE had tasted thereof, HE would not drink."*

St. Matthew 27:34

7. The true sacrifice should be nailed on its hands and feet. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy hands and feet were nailed on the cross.

*"...They pierced MY hands and MY feet."*

Psalms 22:16

*"HIM, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of GOD, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain."*

Acts 2:23

8. The garments (clothes) of the true sacrifice should be made four parts, one for each of them. The soldiers divided the most holy garment of our LORD JESUS CHRIST into four shares, one for each of them.

*"Then the soldiers, when they had crucified JESUS, took HIS garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also HIS coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted MY raiment among them, and for MY vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did."*

St. John 19:23-24

9. Any of the bones of the true sacrifice should not be broken. No bone of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was broken.

*"But when they came to JESUS, and saw that HE was dead already, they brake not HIS legs: For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of HIM shall not*

*be broken."*

St. John 19:33, 36

10. The flesh (the body) of the true sacrifice should be eaten. The most holy body of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is eaten during the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, in remembrance of HIM.

*"...That the LORD JESUS the same night in which HE was betrayed took bread: And when HE had given thanks, HE brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is MY body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of ME."*

I Corinthians 11:23-24

11. The blood of the true sacrifice should be drunk. The most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is drunk during the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, in remembrance of HIM. HIS blood purifies us from all sin (I John 1:7).

*"After the same manner also HE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) took the cup, when HE had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in MY blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of ME."*

I Corinthians 11:25

12. The true sacrifice should die and it should resurrect or rise again after death. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST died on the cross and HE rose again the third day.

*"For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that HE was buried, and that HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures."*

I Corinthians 15:3-4

Now, at this stage it is very interesting to note that the Indian Hindu sacrifice also accepts almost all these qualifications of a true sacrifice for sins of mankind.

## 7.14 12 BLESSINGS THROUGH THE BLOOD

The following are the glorious blessings obtained through the most precious and holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

1. The Gentiles who were far away from JESUS have been brought near to HIM through HIS blood.

*"But now in CHRIST JESUS ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of CHRIST."*

Ephesians 2:13

2. The peace of GOD is obtained through the blood of JESUS.

*"And, having made peace through the blood of HIS cross, by HIM to reconcile all things unto HIMSELF; ..."*

Colossians 1:20

3. The forgiveness of sins (the remission of sins) is obtained through the blood of JESUS.

*"For this is MY blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins."*

St. Matthew 26:28

*"...And without shedding of blood is no remission."*

Hebrews 9:22

4. The blood of JESUS delivers (saves) the people from sins.

*"As for thee also, by the blood of thy covenant I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water."*

Zechariah 9:11

5. The blood of JESUS sanctifies the people.

*"Wherefore JESUS also, that HE might sanctify the people with HIS own blood, suffered without the gate."*

Hebrews 13:12

'Without' means 'outside'.

6. The blood of JESUS cleanses all sins.

*"...And the blood of JESUS CHRIST HIS SON cleanseth us from all sin."*

I John 1:7

*"...Unto HIM that loved us, and washed us from our sins in HIS own blood."*

Revelation 1:5

7. The redemption from sins is obtained through the blood of JESUS.

*“Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation (useless conduct) received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.”*

I Peter 1:18-19

8. The blood of JESUS cleanses the conscience from works or acts that lead to death.

*“How much more shall the blood of CHRIST, who through the eternal Spirit offered HIMSELF without spot to GOD, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living GOD?”*

Hebrews 9:14

9. Anyone can be justified by the blood of JESUS.

*“Much more then, being now justified by HIS blood, we shall be saved from wrath through HIM.”*

Romans 5:9

10. Anyone can obtain boldness to enter into the most holy place of GOD by the blood of JESUS.

*“Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of JESUS,”*

Hebrews 10:19

*“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.”*

Hebrews 4:16

11. Anyone can live the new and regenerated life by the blood of JESUS. This new life in CHRIST is the true Christian way of living.

*“Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of JESUS, By a new and living way, which HE hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, HIS flesh;”*

Hebrews 10:19-20

12. The blood of JESUS gives great victory over Satan and over all.

*"And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death."*

Revelation 12:11

Those who overcome will receive the throne in the kingdom of GOD.

*"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with ME in MY throne, ..."*

Revelation 3:21

### 7.15 GOOD FRIDAY

The day of the crucifixion of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is called Good Friday, the Friday before Easter Sunday. On Good Friday, our LORD JESUS CHRIST horribly died for the sins of the world. HE rose from the dead on Easter Sunday. Good Friday occurs on a Friday in March or April. On Good Friday our most holy LORD JESUS CHRIST horribly died on the cross for sinners. So this Friday is the most sorrowful day. So this Friday is also known as 'The Holy Friday' or 'The Friday of Great Sorrow'.

No one else has ever suffered and died for sinners as our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD has done. Therefore, Good Friday is observed as a day of great mourning throughout the world. No other day is observed as a great mourning day like this and this manner of great mourning is observed for no one else.

### 7.16 THE GREAT I AM

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST allowed HIMSELF to be crucified and murdered. No one can otherwise capture HIM, or tie HIS most holy hands behind HIM, or handcuff HIM, or pull HIM hither and thither by chains in HIS most holy waist, or drop HIM to the ground, or drop HIM into a deep and dark pit, or beat HIM, or scourge HIM, or ridicule HIM, or spit on HIS most holy face, or pull out HIS most holy beard, or beat on HIS most holy face, or mock at HIM, or crucify HIM, or murder HIM.

A great multitude of people with a number of soldiers headed by the betrayer Judas went to the garden of Gethsemane, with lanterns, torches and weapons to capture HIM. JESUS had known everything that was going to happen. JESUS went to them and asked, "**WHOM SEEK YE?**" They replied that they were seeking JESUS of Nazareth. JESUS said to them, "**I AM HE**". As soon as HE had said, "**I AM HE**", the great multitude went backward and fell to the ground. See St. John 18:1-6.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the great "**I AM**", such an All-powerful and Almighty GOD. HE came to the world to shed HIS most holy blood and to die on the cross, to be buried and resurrected on the third day for mankind. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST fulfilled all these things. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### **7.17 THE HOLY SEPULCHRE (THE HOLY TOMB)**

After the death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross, Joseph of Arimathaea, a good and just man and a rich and honourable counsellor (member of the Sanhedrin) who was also himself a secret disciple of JESUS, waiting for the kingdom of GOD, went boldly to Pilate and begged for the most holy body of JESUS. Pilate was surprised to hear that HE had already been dead. When he learned from the centurion that it was so, he gave the body to Joseph.

Joseph bought clean and fine linen clothes and came to Calvary and he had started to take down the most holy body of JESUS from the cross. Joseph was accompanied by Nicodemus, the man who earlier had visited JESUS at night. Nicodemus was a man of the Pharisees and he was a just man. He was also a member of the Jewish ruling council (the Sanhedrin) and he was a master of Israel. Nicodemus bought a mixture of fine myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds and came to Calvary. John, the disciple whom JESUS loved was also there. Joseph, Nicodemus, and John took the most holy body of JESUS down from the cross. Then they wiped off the most holy body of JESUS by clean and fine linen clothes and after that, they wrapped the most holy body of JESUS in clean and fine linen clothes, with a mixture of fine myrrh and aloes. This was in accordance with the Jewish burial customs.



Then the most holy body of JESUS was laid in a new sepulchre (a new tomb) hewn in rock, in a garden nearby, in which no one had ever been laid. That tomb belonged to Joseph of Arimathaea, the rich and devout Christian and one of the secret disciples of our LORD JESUS. Thus, it fulfils the prophecy of Isaiah, the prophet. He says:

*"And he (they) made HIS grave with the wicked, and with the rich in HIS death; because HE had done no violence, neither was any deceit in HIS mouth."*

Isaiah 53:9

Our LORD's most holy body was embalmed after the Jewish manner. The myrrh and the aloe wood were reduced to powder and inserted between the bandages, which were wound fold upon fold round the body. The enormous quantity (about 100 pound weight) of spices, though surprising is credible as the offering of two wealthy men. According to Jewish and general eastern custom, the neck and face of the LORD were doubtless left bare.

Now, man consists of three things: spirit, soul and body (I Thessalonians 5:23). Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came into the world as a Man to save and redeem the whole world. HE had a most holy human Body (earthly Body); HE had a most holy human Soul; and HE had a most holy human Spirit. HE had poured out HIS Soul unto death (Isaiah 53:12); HE had given up HIS Spirit into the hands of the FATHER, GOD the FATHER (St. Luke 23:46); and HE had given up HIS earthly Body in the hands of men. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

After they rolled a big stone and shut the entrance of the holy tomb, they went away. While JESUS was yet alive, HE had said:

*"...After three days I will rise again."*

St. Matthew 27:63

Then the chief priests and Pharisees went to Pilate and repeated the above words of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, and asked him to give the order for the tomb to be made secure until the third day. Pilate gave the order. So they went and made the tomb secure by putting **seven** seals on the stone and posting the guard. Roman soldiers and Jewish soldiers guarded the most holy tomb of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*“So they went, and made the sepulchre sure (secure), sealing the stone, and setting a watch (guard).”*

St. Matthew 27:66

## **8. THE GLORIOUS RESURRECTION AND AFTER**

### **8.1 RESURRECTION**

The most glorious rising of our LORD JESUS CHRIST from the grave is called resurrection. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had been laid in the tomb on Friday. The next day was the Sabbath (Saturday), the last day of the week. The first day of the week was Sunday. At the dawn on the first day of the week (Sunday), there was a violent and sudden earthquake and the guards were so afraid that they shook and became like dead men. The seals on the stone were broken into pieces and the big stone was rolled away with a loud bang. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST resurrected HIMSELF and went out of the holy sepulchre. What a wonderful and startling thing it is! Had HIS most holy body been stolen, HIS grave-clothes and head-cloth would not have been left in an orderly manner. No one could steal a body and leave the grave-clothes like that (St. Matthew 27:62-66; 28:11-15; St. John 20:4-8).

As HE had already said, HE resurrected HIMSELF from HIS holy tomb on the third day with a most glorious and divine body (I Corinthians 15:3-4; Acts 1:3). Now the empty tomb of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is seen still today. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“HE is not here: for HE is risen, as HE said. Come, see the place where the LORD lay.”*

St. Matthew 28:6

**The Resurrection of CHRIST included seven accomplishments:**

- (i) the physical renewing of HIS life (I Corinthians 15:44).
- (ii) the reunion of HIS body and HIS Spirit (St. Luke 23:46).
- (iii) the subjugation of death under HIM (I Corinthians 15:54-55; Isaiah 28:18).

- (iv) the subjugation of the grave under HIM (Hosea 13:14).
- (v) the subjugation of all things under HIM (Philippians 3:21).
- (vi) the receiving of HIS glorious transfigured body (St. Luke 24:36-43).
- (vii) the attainment of HIS new exalted position (St. Matthew 28:18).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's glorious resurrection clearly proves that HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and Saviour of the world, with all power and authority in heaven and on earth. It also clearly proves that HE is coming again to receive all believers, the saved people to HIMSELF. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

What is the place of LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection in the Gospel of salvation? How important is resurrection in the LORD's magnificent plan of salvation? These are vitally important questions to ask, but not easy ones to answer. Let us try to answer these questions keeping in mind that LORD JESUS suffered eternal death under the wrath of GOD. The eternal death was what was demanded for the payment of sin. Our LORD JESUS had to undergo continuously eternal death-pangs to complete this work. Our salvation depends on HIS completed work. But, did HE really accomplish it? Yes. No doubt HE did it rightly, properly and perfectly.

It is HIS resurrection that confirms the fact that full payment for the sin of the world was made. The LAMB OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) has taken away the sin of the world (St. John 1:29). The LAMB without blemish and without spot (I Peter 1:19) has poured out HIS soul unto death (Isaiah 53:12).

The very fact that LORD JESUS was raised proves beyond doubt that HE went all the way through the required punishment. Let us remember at this point that LORD JESUS neither took any privileged short cuts nor left us any liability before the law.

What other inferences do we arrive at since LORD JESUS was resurrected? The obvious conclusion is that GOD accepted HIS sacrifice. Not only that, GOD was well satisfied and well pleased with it. **Secondly**, if JESUS was raised it must be that HE is GOD, the only one

who could endure the wrath of GOD for all of HIS people without being destroyed. **Thirdly**, HIS resurrection offers a clear and indisputable evidence of HIS power and authority to keep HIS Word that HE is the Saviour.

Considering all these, we can easily reach the conclusion that LORD JESUS' resurrection verified and confirmed the fulfilment of GOD's work of atonement. HIS resurrection can be called the last step in a series of actions that LORD JESUS took to fulfil HIS work as the Saviour.

If we have understood the significance and impact of our LORD's resurrection, we will never fail to recognize and obey what we are mandated to do. That is, it is absolutely necessary for us to proclaim in detail the finished work of our LORD (St. John 10:17-18, 7:3-4; Acts 2:24), HIS power to lay down HIS life and to take it back again. The LORD's Gospel would be incomplete without the proclamation of the LORD's much awaited return. So, the LIGHT that came into the universe has done the work IT needed to do.

## 8.2 12 THINGS OVERCOME BY JESUS

If we are saved or born of GOD, by believing JESUS is the SON of GOD (GOD the SON), we can overcome the world by our faith or belief (I John 5:4-5). Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST overcame the following things:

1. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame the world. Our LORD JESUS has said,

*"...I have overcome the world."*

St. John 16:33

This means that **our LORD JESUS CHRIST has overcome the following seventeen things of the world, by keeping HIMSELF unspotted from the world (James 1:27)**. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has overcome (i) the world of vanity (Ecclesiastes 1:2); (ii) the world of nature (I Corinthians 2:14); (iii) the world of destruction (Romans 3:16); (iv) the world of evil (Proverbs 12:21); (v) the world of Satan, the devil or the evil one (Job 1:7; Genesis 3:15); (vi) the world of wickedness of Satan, the wicked one (I John 5:18-19); (vii) the world of

the lust of the flesh; (viii) the world of the lust of the eyes; (ix) the world of the pride of life (I John 2:16); (x) the world of pollutions (II Peter 2:20); (xi) the world of spottiness (James 1:27); (xii) the world of the course or common practice (Ephesians 2:2); (xiii) the world of rudiments or worldly principles (Colossians 2:20); (xiv) the world of tradition of men (St. Mark 7:8); (xv) the world of sin (St. John 8:46); (xvi) the world of death (I Corinthians 15:55-56); and (xvii) the world of corruption (I Corinthians 15:50). The LORD who has conquered all these has promised,

*"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with ME in MY throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with MY FATHER in HIS throne."*

Revelation 3:21

2. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame sin.

*"Which of you convinceth (convicts) ME of sin? ..."*

St. John 8:46

3. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame HIS SELF, by not pleasing HIMSELF (Romans 15:3).

4. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame the curse (Galatians 3:13).

5. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame the cross, by giving up HIS Spirit. See St. Matthew 27:50.

6. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame Satan, the devil. See St. Matthew 4:1-11.

*"... That through death HE might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil."*

Hebrews 2:14

The saved young men and women overcome the wicked one, Satan, the devil (I John 2:13), by their faith or belief (St. Matthew 21:22), through their continuing instant in prayer (Romans 12:12).

7. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame the disobedience, the first sin of Adam and Eve, by HIS very great obedience.

*"... HE humbled HIMSELF, and became obedient unto death,*

*even the death of the cross."*

Philippians 2:8

8. Our LORD JESUS overcame the great sufferings (I Peter 2:23).

*"... CHRIST hath suffered for us in the flesh, ..."*

I Peter 4:1

For unto HIS people, it is given on behalf of CHRIST, not only to believe, but also to suffer for HIS sake (Philippians 1:29), by following HIS steps (I Peter 2:19-23; 3:14, 17). If anyone suffers as a Christian, he/she should not be ashamed, but let him/her glorify GOD on this behalf (I Peter 4:16). HIS people are partakers of HIS sufferings, to receive exceedingly great joy when HIS divine glory will be revealed (I Peter 4:13). So, the sufferings of the present time are not worthy to be compared with the divine glory which will be revealed in us (Romans 8:18). If we suffer with HIM, we will also reign with HIM (II Timothy 2:12). To overcome our sufferings, as the sufferings of CHRIST abound in us, so our consolation also abounds by CHRIST, the GOD of all comfort (II Corinthians 1:3, 5).

9. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame death.

*"HE will swallow up death in victory; ..."*

Isaiah 25:8

10. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame the grave (Hosea 13:14). **One of the accomplishments of HIS resurrection is the libertion and deliverance of the souls of HIS Old Testament saints (Ephesians 4:9) from the decay of the perishing earth or from the grave (I Samuel 28:3-20; Daniel 12:2) and led them to the blissful paradise (II Corinthians 12:2-4; St. Luke 23:43), the glorious presence of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Philippians 1:23).**

*"O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?"*

I Corinthians 15:55

11. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame the promises, by fulfilling all the promises about HIM (II Corinthians 1:20). HE overcame the promises about HIS most holy birth (Isaiah 7:14; Micah 5:2); and about HIS horrible sufferings (Isaiah 53:3-5; I Peter 2:24);

and about HIS terrible death (Isaiah 53:10-12; St. Mark 8:29-31); and about HIS burial in a new sepulchre (tomb) of a rich man Joseph (Isaiah 53:9; St. Matthew 27:57-60); and about HIS rest and about HIS fight against death and grave and about HIS glorious resurrection on the third day (St. Matthew 12:38-40; St. Mark 8:29-31; I Corinthians 15:54-55). HE overcame the promise about the children of the promise, the children of GOD, by giving them power to become the children of GOD (Romans 9:8; St. John 1:12-13). **HE overcame the promises about the bruising of Satan's head on the cross (Genesis 3:15) and about the bruising of Satan's tail (serpent's tail) under the feet of HIS church, HIS saved people (Romans 16:20). The LORD's church is the church which stamps or treads Satan, the devil under its feet. Since HE overcame Satan, the wicked one or the devil, HIS people also overcome Satan, the wicked one or the devil (I John 2:13).**

12. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST overcame heaven, by defeating Satan and his angels. See Revelation 12:7-10. HE resurrected HIMSELF from the grave to give victory over all things to HIS people, through HIM who loves HIS people so much (Romans 8:37).

To those who overcome, HE will give the fruit of the tree of life (Revelation 2:7), the water of life (Revelation 21:6), the hidden manna of life (Revelation 2:17) and power over the nations (Revelation 2:26); and HE will make a pillar in the temple of GOD (Revelation 3:12); and HE will clothe in fine bright linen (raiment), clean and white to reveal the righteousness of saints (Revelation 3:5; 19:8); and HE will grant to sit with HIM in HIS throne (Revelation 3:21) and to inherit all things (Revelation 21:7).

### 8.3 10 BLESSINGS OF RESURRECTION

The resurrection of JESUS CHRIST brought to light, life and immortality through the Gospel (II Timothy 1:10), everlasting life for the righteous. It also brought to light, judgment and death, the second death—the hell-fire through the Gospel (Revelation 21:8), everlasting shame and destruction for the sinners (Daniel 12:2). Because of

the resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the following blessings are passed on to us from our LORD.

1. Anyone can live a sinless life and his faith will not become futile (I Corinthians 15:17).
2. Anyone can be fully united with our LORD JESUS CHRIST in HIS glorious resurrection and life, since HE is the resurrection and the life (Romans 6:5; St. John 11:25-26).
3. Anyone can be justified and made righteous if he believes in HIS resurrection (Romans 4:25).
4. The power of our LORD JESUS' resurrection, i.e., the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD is given to HIS people to live a holy life (Philippians 3:10).

By the sanctification of the HOLY SPIRIT (I Peter 1:2) and by the spiritual renewing produced by the HOLY SPIRIT (Titus 3:5), anyone can live a renewed life.

5. According to HIS abundant mercy, anyone can be born-again unto a living hope by the resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST from the dead (I Peter 1:3).
6. Anyone can enter into an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and that does not fade away, reserved in heaven (I Peter 1:4).
7. Anyone can be kept by the power of GOD through faith unto salvation—the totally stable salvation, the redemption of body, that is ready to be revealed in the last time (I Peter 1:5; Philippians 3:21).
8. Anyone can be redeemed and saved from the power of death and from the power of the grave (Hosea 13:14; I Corinthians 15:55) by the resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Peter 3:21).
9. Anyone can take part in the resurrection of the saints—the first resurrection (Revelation 20:6).
10. Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST died and rose again (resurrected), those who slept in JESUS CHRIST (the dead in JESUS



CHRIST) or the saved people who were put to sleep by JESUS CHRIST will also be resurrected first, during HIS glorious coming to gather HIS people, the church. Then the saved people who are alive and remain in this world in JESUS CHRIST will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in the air. Then they will be always with HIM. This is the most important blessing of HIS resurrection. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! See I Thessalonians 4:14-17 at page 517.

#### 8.4 7 CONSEQUENCES OF THE RESURRECTION CONFIRMED

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has lived in this world with an earthly body; but HE resurrected HIMSELF with a glorious and divine heavenly body. Now, by HIS glorious resurrection, the following great and important mysteries are resolved:

##### **Mystery 1**

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST with an earthly body has resurrected HIMSELF after death, it is sure and certain that all people who are living in this world with an earthly body will be resurrected after death and all people who are already dead in their earthly body will also be resurrected. This fact confirms the resurrection of the dead.

##### **Mystery 2**

Since our most holy LORD JESUS CHRIST with an earthly body has resurrected HIMSELF after death with a glorious and divine heavenly body, it is sure and certain that all HIS holy people (saints) who have already died in their earthly body will be resurrected with a glorious and divine heavenly body.

##### **Mystery 3**

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST is going to give a glorious and divine heavenly body to HIS saints who have already died, it is sure and certain that the saints who are living in this world will also be given a glorious and divine heavenly body.

*“Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned (conformed) like unto HIS glorious body, according to the working*

*whereby HE is able even to subdue all things unto HIMSELF."*

Philippians 3:21

### **Mystery 4**

Since all the holy people of our LORD JESUS CHRIST are going to get a glorious and divine heavenly body suited for heaven, the kingdom of GOD, it is sure and certain that the sinners who are already dead and the sinners who are living in this world, are going to get a worthless body suited for hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

### **Mystery 5**

Since all saints and all sinners who have died, are going to be resurrected, it is sure and certain that there is judgment to sinners and saints.

*"...Behold, the LORD cometh with ten thousands of HIS saints,  
To execute judgment upon all, ..."*

Jude 14-15

### **Mystery 6**

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST without blemish and without spot has been accused, judged and killed by sinners unjustly, it is sure and certain that our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be the most righteous Judge who is going to give HIS most righteous judgment to sinners and to HIS saints. Therefore, all people must repent and turn to HIM, since a resurrection and a judgment day are coming.

*"And the times of this ignorance GOD winked at (overlooked);  
but now commandeth all men every where to repent: Because HE  
hath appointed a day, in the which HE will judge the world in  
righteousness by that MAN whom HE hath ordained; whereof HE  
hath given assurance unto all men, in that HE hath raised HIM from  
the dead."*

Acts 17:30-31

### **Mystery 7**

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is the most righteous Judge, it is sure and certain that after HIS most righteous judgment all sinners will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake

of burning sulphur with undying worms and HIS saints will enter into HIS glorious and divine kingdom of heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

There is no partiality with GOD. HE will give to each one according to his deeds or works.

*"Who will render to every man according to his deeds."*

Romans 2:6

## 8.5 EASTER

*"...Why seek ye the living among the dead? HE is not here, but is risen: remember how HE spake unto you when HE was yet in Galilee, Saying, The SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again."*

St. Luke 24:5-7

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST died for our sins and HE was buried and HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures. The day of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection is celebrated throughout the world with reverence as '**The Easter Festival**' or '**The Festival of Resurrection**'. This kind of festival is celebrated for no one else, because no one else has ever resurrected himself. The day of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection was Sunday, the first day of the week. So the first day of the week or Sunday is called '**The LORD's Day**'.

Easter is an annual festival that occurs on a Sunday in March or April. The period about this time is Easter Day or Easter Sunday. Easter week is the week beginning on Easter Sunday. Easter egg is an egg made of chocolate or a hen's egg with a painted shell, given as a present especially to children, at Easter. Easter is a joyous festival. Easter celebrations are joyful celebrations. Glory be to GOD!

## 8.6 FIRST APPEARANCE TO MARY MAGDALENE

When JESUS was risen early on the first day of the week, HE appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom HE had driven away seven devils (demons). HE appeared first to Mary Magdalene because of her great love, reverence, gratitude and remembrance towards HIM. Mary Magdalene stood all alone outside the holy tomb crying for

HIM. So, HE appeared first to Mary Magdalene (St. Mark 16:9; St. John 20:10-18). Glory be to GOD! **Mary Magdalene was a singular eye-witness to the facts about JESUS' ministry, HIS death, HIS burial and HIS resurrection.**

*"Now when JESUS was risen early the first day of the week, HE appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom HE had cast seven devils."*

St. Mark 16:9

## 8.7 FIRST APPEARANCE TO DISCIPLES

*"For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that HE was buried, and that HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures: And that HE was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: After that, HE was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep."*

I Corinthians 15:3-6

On the evening of the first day of the week, when the disciples were together, with the doors locked for fear of the cruel Jews, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came and stood in the midst of them and said,

**"Peace be unto you."**

St. John 20:19

Peace of GOD is one of the main things which every human being longs for. Only GOD can bring real peace, both worldly and spiritual. GOD gives us HIS peace. GOD's peace cannot be experienced by those who are in rebellion against GOD. So, JESUS makes peace (shalom in Hebrew) central to what HE says to HIS disciples.

After HE said this, HE showed them HIS hands and HIS side. HIS disciples were overjoyed when they saw the LORD. Thomas (called Didymus), one of the twelve, was not with the disciples when JESUS came. So the other disciples told him, **"We have seen the LORD."** But Thomas said to them,

*"Except I shall see in HIS hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into*

*HIS side, I will not believe."*

St. John 20:25

And after eight days, HIS disciples were in the house again, and Thomas was with them. Though the doors were locked, JESUS came and stood among them and said,

**"Peace be unto you."**

St. John 20:26

Then JESUS said to Thomas,

*"Reach hither thy finger, and behold MY hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into MY side: and be not faithless (unbelieving), but believing."*

St. John 20:27

And Thomas said to HIM,

*"My LORD and my GOD."*

St. John 20:28

Then JESUS told him,

*"Thomas, because thou hast seen ME, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed."*

St. John 20:29

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST arose and appeared in bodily form. HE had flesh and bones; HE retained HIS scars; HE could be touched; and HE ate. See St. Luke 24:36-43; St. John 20:19-29.

## 8.8 THE SABBATH

The Sabbath or the Sabbath day is the holy day of the week that is used for resting and worshipping GOD. For Jews this day is Saturday (the last day of the week), and for Christians it is Sunday (the first day of the week). In the New Testament, the first day of the week (Sunday), commemorating CHRIST's resurrection and HIS glorious appearance to HIS disciples, replaced the Jewish Sabbath (Saturday), and Sunday became a regular period of Christian worship. Another name for Sunday is the LORD's Day (Revelation 1:10).

The Pharisees had burdened the Sabbath with many observances that were not laid down in the Holy Scriptures. They were in opposition to JESUS' healing on the Sabbath. Therefore, JESUS said to them,

*"...It is lawful to do well (good) on the Sabbath days."*

St. Matthew 12:12

Further HE said to them,

*"The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath: Therefore the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is LORD also of the Sabbath."*

St. Mark 2:27-28

Since the Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath, and our LORD JESUS CHRIST is LORD even of the Sabbath, HE had changed the Sabbath Saturday of the Old Testament into the Sabbath Sunday of the New Testament. So, no one has any right to question about this Sabbath Sunday of Christian worship. But, some Christians are wrongly observing the Sabbath Saturday of the Old Testament from lack of knowledge.

In a number of countries, Friday is observed as the Sabbath day, the day of rest. So, in those countries, observing Friday as the Sabbath day, a regular period of Christian worship, is not a wrong thing; since the Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath. Hence, for the use of man, the Sabbath day may be changed to any day of the week. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 8.9 THE LORD'S MINISTRY CONTINUES

The empty tomb (St. Mark 16:1-7), the missing body of JESUS (St. John 20:6-8), the risen JESUS (St. John 20:15-16, 20) and the transformed disciples (St. John 20:19; Acts 4:33) are the clear evidences for JESUS' resurrection. After JESUS' resurrection, HE walked with HIS disciples (St. Luke 24:15); HE stayed with them (St. Luke 24:29); and HE vanished from their sight (St. Luke 24:31) to reveal them that HE is GOD, the SPIRIT—the HOLY SPIRIT (St. John 4:24). HE became invisible from them. But HE was still with them (Acts 1:3). Again, HE became visible to them with HIS glorious resurrected body (St. Luke 24:39-43; Philippians 3:21) to reveal them that HE is GOD, the SON—the LORD

JESUS CHRIST. Besides, HE is also GOD, the FATHER (St. John 10:30; 14:9). HE is EMMANUEL, GOD with us (St. Matthew 1:23). HE promised that in HIS resurrection HE will be with us always, even to the end of the world (St. Matthew 28:20).

Again, by HIS miraculous breakfast by the sea (St. John 21:1-14), HE showed HIS disciples that HE is the LORD, who calls the things not being as being (Romans 4:17). For HE spoke and it was (Psalm 33:9). HE can create something out of nothing.

After HIS resurrection from the dead, our LORD JESUS CHRIST appeared to HIS disciples for a period of forty days. After HIS resurrection, HE showed HIMSELF to HIS disciples and gave many convincing proofs that HE was alive, and spoke about the kingdom of GOD (Acts 1:3). After HIS resurrection, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST opened the eyes of HIS disciples again, so they could see and know HIM clearly. HE opened their eyes to give true sight to their eyes. And HE opened their understanding (minds) again, so they could understand the Holy Scriptures clearly. HE opened their minds to give true sight to their hearts. See St. Luke 24:31, 45. And HE asked them to preach the people about repentance and forgiveness of sins (remission of sins), from Jerusalem to all nations (St. Luke 24:47). This gospel of the kingdom should be preached in the whole world as a witness to all nations (St. Matthew 24:14). On one occasion, while HE was with HIS disciples, HE commanded them to wait for the Promise of the FATHER (Acts 1:4-5, 8).

### 8.10 THE GREAT COMMISSION

Our LORD JESUS commissioned HIS disciples to go and make disciples of all nations.

*"And JESUS came and spake unto them, saying, All power (authority) is given unto ME in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach (make disciples of) all nations, baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT): Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen."*

St. Matthew 28:18-20

The Gospel, the Good News of JESUS CHRIST spread from Jerusalem to Rome, from the Jewish to the Gentile world.

The church of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is to make disciples of all kinds of people. Only the saved people could be HIS disciples. Hence, those who are saved should then be baptized by total immersion (i.e., putting the whole body under water), in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT. Then, train these disciples to obey everything that JESUS has commanded. The great commission is a command with three steps—make disciples, baptize and educate for eternity.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has also commanded HIS disciples to preach to the people about HIS glorious resurrection from the dead on the third day, and to testify that HE is the ONE who was ordained by GOD to be the Judge of the living and the dead (Acts 10:40-42). With great power they testify about the coming Judge. With great power they gave witness to the resurrection of the LORD JESUS. And great grace was upon them all (Acts 4:33).

HIS disciples went on to tell people all about the person of LORD JESUS CHRIST—the most wonderful and loving person the world had ever seen (Acts 5:42). They went on to call people for repentance and faith, baptism into CHRIST for the true community of Christians and the reception of the HOLY SPIRIT.

### 8.11 THE GLORIOUS ASCENSION

Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST led HIS disciples out to the vicinity of Bethany and they came to the mount of Olives. There HE lifted up HIS most holy hands and blessed them. While JESUS was blessing HIS disciples, HE left them and ascended into heaven. A cloud hid HIM from their sight.

*“And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as HE went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same JESUS, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen HIM go into heaven.”*

Acts 1:10-11



And they worshipped HIM and returned to Jerusalem with great joy (St. Luke 24:52). Then they went upstairs, the room where they were staying. They all joined together constantly in prayer, along with the women and Mary the mother of JESUS (Acts 1:13-14).

**Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST ascended into heaven to give HIS spiritual gifts unto men—unto HIS church** (Ephesians 4:8-10). HE conquered Satan and all his demonic horde, and distributed HIS spiritual gifts to HIS church. Firstly, HE distributed HIS spiritual gifts to HIS church on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2:1-4). Some spiritual gifts are faith, wisdom, knowledge, discernment, healings, miracles, prophecy, speaking in different kinds of tongues and interpretation of tongues (I Corinthians 12:7-11), ministering and teaching (Romans 12:7), exhortation, showing mercy, giving and ruling (Romans 12:8), helping and governing (I Corinthians 12:28), shepherding and evangelizing (Ephesians 4:11), hospitality (I Peter 4:9), celibacy (St. Matthew 19:10-12) and martyrdom (I Corinthians 13:3).

## 8.12 JESUS WILL COME AGAIN

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will come to the world after preparing a place (resting place) for HIS children, who live in this world with the expectation of an eternal life in heaven.

*“...I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto MYSELF; that where I am, there ye may be also.”*

St. John 14:2-3

Therefore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded all people to know, to accept, and to believe HIM as the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and to worship HIM. HE says,

*“Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book.”*

Revelation 22:7

Now, the death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST confirms HIS birth and HIS physical life (existence). Again, the visit of the Magi (the wise men) confirms HIS birth and physical life. Further, HIS preaching, HIS

most holy life, and HIS wonderful works confirm HIS birth and HIS physical life.

Again, HIS burial confirms HIS death. HIS resurrection confirms HIS burial. Moreover, the empty tomb of JESUS confirms HIS burial and HIS resurrection. HIS showing HIMSELF to HIS disciples and others (after HIS resurrection) confirms HIS resurrection. HIS appearance to HIS disciples and others (after HIS resurrection) over a period of forty days, and HIS continued preaching about the kingdom of GOD and the HOLY SPIRIT, confirm HIS appearance. HIS ascension into heaven before the eyes of HIS disciples, confirms HIS appearance.

The coming of the HOLY SPIRIT on the day of Pentecost confirms HIS ascension into heaven. Again, HIS promise about HIS coming back again, confirms HIS ascension into heaven. When HIS ascension into heaven, two angels also confirmed HIS coming back again. HIS promise about HIS coming back again confirms HIS judgment. HIS judgment confirms heaven, the kingdom of GOD and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST also says,

*"He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. And, behold, I come quickly; and MY reward is with ME, to give every man according as his work shall be."*

Revelation 22:11-12

Now, the MESSIAH or the MESSIAS or the CHRIST has come from heaven, and HE has ascended into heaven. HIS return is imminent. Again and again, HE declares the imminence of HIS return.

"He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: ... and he that is holy, let him be holy still:" are not HIS commands. But they are HIS facts, and they are HIS warnings. The deliberate habitual action of each person will determine his/her end. When CHRIST returns, the deliberate habitual action of each person will determine his/her eternal destiny. For the unjust and the filthy people, their eternal destiny will be their eternal destruction in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. For the righteous and the holy people, their eternal destiny will be their

eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Reward is always based on work. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The final promise of CHRIST in the Holy Bible is that HIS return is imminent.

*"HE which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly.  
..."*

Revelation 22:20

As our LORD JESUS CHRIST's disciples had remained with HIM in HIS temptations, after HIS return HE will appoint unto them a **kingdom for thousand years (Millennial kingdom)** and make them to sit on thrones to judge the twelve tribes of Israel (St. Luke 22:28-30). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 9. THREE PARABLES

### 9.1 THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave a parable for the people to understand the life after death and to understand the horror of hell and the way to escape hell. In this parable, JESUS CHRIST has spoken about an unrighteous rich man and a righteous beggar named Lazarus, full of leprosy sores. Lazarus was laid at the gate of the rich man, desiring to be fed with the crumbs, which fell from the rich man's table. Moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. JESUS said,

*"There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is*

*comforted, and thou art tormented. And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead."*

St. Luke 16:19-31

'Fared sumptuously' means 'lived in great luxury'.

Abraham is the father of all believers. Those who are cast into hell cannot get even a single drop of water. They will be tormented for ever in the horribly dreadful flames of hell. So, everyone should escape from the damnation of hell, by believing JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

A number of Jews or Israelites are having a wrong thought that Abraham sits at the gate of hell to prevent any Jew or Israelite from entering into hell. Now, this parable clearly explains that Abraham cannot prevent any Jew or Israelite from entering into hell. So, no help will come from Abraham to the Jews or Israelites.

From this parable, we come to understand the following important things:

Earthly blessedness does not mean GOD's ultimate favour. The spiritual deadness is induced by wealth. After death there is no second chance. Those who do not hear and obey the Word of GOD spoken through HIS servants or those who do not hear and obey the Gospel of GOD would not be convinced by a direct miracle done in their presence, even if someone rises from the dead.

The rich man was punished not for his wealth but for his abuse of it. Lazarus was justified not for his poverty but for his righteousness and faith and patience and humility.

*"In your patience possess ye your souls."*

St. Luke 21:19

*"Now the just (the righteous) shall live by faith: ..."*

Hebrews 10:38

Possession of wealth is not wrong. The rich man had no sympathy for other people's feelings. He showed a total disregard for other people's sufferings. The dogs licked the sores of the poor leper. How horrible it would have been! But the rich man was callous and his callousness was due to his **scepticism/skepticism** (doubt and disbelief in GOD and HIS doctrines). He consumed his wealth in selfish luxury because he did not really believe in GOD or future life. If he had so believed he would have acted differently. This parable should be regarded as a warning against luxury, worldliness, selfishness and unbelief.

Our LORD says such a person would never believe even if someone rose from the dead.

What a wonderful parable our LORD has given us! How true and effective HIS teachings are! Shall we honour and praise HIM with all our heart and soul?

So, everyone should hear and obey the Gospel of GOD. Everyone should do good. Everyone should be rich in good works. No one should put his/her trust in uncertain riches. But we should put our trust in the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who gives all wealth. Now, godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out of it. If we have food and clothing, we must be content with that. Those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. The love of money is the root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have erred from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. **Contentment**, the state of full satisfaction is very essential to the blessings of us, GOD's people (I Timothy 6:6, 8). A little with the fear of the LORD is better than great riches with trouble (Proverbs 15:16). Such attitudes bring contentment.

*"But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows."*

I Timothy 6:6-10

*"Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living GOD, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy; That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ..."*

I Timothy 6:17-18

## 9.2 THE RICH FOOL

When HE was in the world, our LORD JESUS CHRIST spoke in a parable about the vanity of human ideas and about how man is unaware of the hour in which his soul will be taken away from him. HE spoke also that the abundance of man's riches and treasures is not at all profitable to his soul. HE spoke about the unfortunate condition of fools who amass treasures for themselves without being rich in JESUS. JESUS said,

*"The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. But GOD said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward GOD."*

St. Luke 12:16-21

'Bestow' means 'store'. 'Fruits' mean 'crops'.

This parable teaches that, since death and judgment are inevitable, men ought to devote their attention to laying up treasure in

heaven, not on earth. Neither a man's physical nor his spiritual life is dependent upon great possessions. A healthy and happy human life can be lived in a state of comparative poverty, and spiritual life is rather hindered than aided by great possessions. Man's life is more valuable than possessions.

The rich man's wealth was honestly and justly acquired. Then what was his fault? His fault was not injustice but covetousness. He was no doubt a foolish man because he spoke as if earthly wealth could supply the needs of an immortal soul. How foolish and misled he was in his thinking and attitude!

### 9.3 THE LOST SON (THE PRODIGAL SON)

Furthermore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave a parable, which explains that GOD created man to be with HIM, and that it was HIS glorious purpose. It also explains the relationship between man and GOD and how GOD is waiting for the sinner to repent and come to HIM. It also reveals that the relationship between GOD and man is the same as the one between a father and a son. But man has gone away from GOD because of his insensitiveness to sin and wickedness and because of his lack of purpose and senselessness of mind. It exposes also the pitiable and shameful consequences of man's sin and how man incurs great worldly and spiritual losses when he drifts away from GOD, his Maker. When man becomes conscious of his sins, he comes to GOD desirous of giving up his filthy sins. GOD's love and tender mercy are revealed in this parable. With great eagerness, GOD is always expecting man to come back to HIM. When man comes back to GOD with a broken and contrite heart, with true sorrow and tears about his sins, GOD accepts, receives and recognizes him with great joy and love. When GOD accepts man, he receives immense blessings from GOD. JESUS said,

*“A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself*

*to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry."*

St. Luke 15:11-24

'Living' means 'livelihood'. 'Substance' means 'possessions'. 'Riotous' means 'wasteful or prodigal'. 'Fain' means 'gladly'. 'No more' means 'no longer'.

In this parable, 'the Father' stands for GOD and 'the sons' for mankind. 'Best robe' means 'the spiritual garments of Salvation and robe of Righteousness'. It also means unique, great, clean and white, pure and glorious spiritual life. The garment means spiritual life.

*"I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my GOD; for HE hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, HE hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, ..."*

Isaiah 61:10

*"And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints."*

Revelation 19:8

'To her' means 'to the saved people' or 'to the church'. 'She' means 'the saved people' or 'the church'.



The elder son represents those who consider themselves just and are thought by others to be such. These self-righteous people despise others. The younger son represents all the penitent sinners.

'The portion of goods' is the whole of man's powers and faculties, which he ought to exercise and enjoy in his father's house. This means dependence upon GOD and HIS service. But the younger one demands to have everything under his own control, to use according to his own will and pleasure. This demand shows his lack of love and apostasy (relinquishment or rejection of faith).

The ring means the signet ring. The spiritual meaning of the signet ring is the experience of being sealed by the HOLY SPIRIT into JESUS CHRIST. This is an immensely glorious and blessed experience. Only those who are sealed into CHRIST by the HOLY SPIRIT will be resurrected at the first resurrection, the resurrection of the saints. They will inherit heaven with their divine body (Ephesians 1:13; 4:30).

*"...O Zerubbabel, MY servant, the son of Shealtiel, saith the LORD, and will make thee as a signet: for I have chosen thee, saith the LORD of hosts."*

Haggai 2:23

The spiritual meaning of shoes is the readiness according to the gospel of peace. This is the immensely glorious experience of being alert and ready to enter heaven.

*"And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace."*

Ephesians 6:15

This **'lost son'** is also referred by many as **'the Prodigal Son'**. This parable clearly reveals the everlasting love of our heavenly FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **10. SEVEN SIGNIFYING MIRACLES OF JESUS**

What do the miracles of JESUS relating to the blind, the lepers, the lame, the deaf, the dumb, the dead and the poor signify?

*"The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor*

*have the gospel preached to them."*

St. Matthew 11:5

*"... the dumb spake: ..."*

St. Matthew 9:33

**The blind** are the blind people. Blindness is the total loss of vision. Blindness is the lack of sight. By our LORD JESUS CHRIST's one touch, blindness was immediately cured (St. Matthew 9:27-30). Blindness signifies the lack of inward sight, the inability to see GOD and the things related to GOD (II Corinthians 4:4; Revelation 3:18). The opening of the blind men's eyes signifies the recovery of inward sight to see GOD and spiritual things (Ephesians 1:18) and to follow HIM.

**Are you blind?** Satan, the devil's first step towards making Eve away from GOD was making her holy eyes or the eyes of her soul or her spiritual eyes blind, by using his blatant lie and worldly thoughts and logic (Genesis 3:1-7). So, beware of your eyes! Our risen LORD JESUS CHRIST condemned the Church of the Laodiceans for it was blind (Revelation 3:17). The Greek word, Taphios translated as 'blind' means the ineffectiveness of eyes, ears and mind to understand and respond correctly. Eve became such a blind one by Satan, the devil's blatant lie and worldly thoughts and logic. What a pitiable thing it is!

**The lepers** are the leprous people. According to the Law of Moses, lepers were to be isolated from the people because of their uncleanness. No one was allowed to touch them (Leviticus 13:45-46). But our LORD JESUS CHRIST touched the leper. What a mercy and sympathy it is! By HIS one touch, his leprosy was immediately cleansed (St. Matthew 8:1-3). What a wonderful cleansing it is!

All sinners have become leprous in the eyes of GOD. All sinners have become unclean in the eyes of GOD. All sinners have become sinful lepers in the eyes of GOD. All sinners have become sinfully unclean in the eyes of GOD. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST cleanses and saves them from their sinful leprosy that they might become HIS people of HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

**The lame** are the lame people. Lameness is the condition of being lame. Lameness is inability to walk. Lameness signifies men's inability to walk in the way of GOD. The lame men's walking signifies that after being saved, they can walk by a new life (St. Matthew 9:5-7).

**The deaf** are the deaf people. Deafness is the total loss of hearing. Deafness is inability to hear. Deafness signifies men's inability to hear GOD's Word (Isaiah 35:5). The deaf men's hearing signifies that after being saved they can hear GOD's voice (St. John 10:27).

**The dumb** are the dumb people. Dumbness is the condition of being dumb. Dumbness is inability to speak. Dumbness signifies men's inability to speak for GOD (Isaiah 56:10) and praise GOD (Isaiah 35:6). The dumb men's speaking signifies that their speaking and praising ability is recovered by their being filled with the LORD in the Spirit (Ephesians 5:18-19).

**The dead** are the dead people. Deadness is the condition of being not alive. Deadness is inability to contact anything. Deadness signifies men's inability to contact GOD. The dead signify those who are dead in sins and trespasses (Ephesians 2:1, 5), unable to contact GOD. The dead men's raising up signifies that after being raised up or regenerated, they can fellowship with GOD by means of their spirit.

**The poor** are the poor people. Poorness is the condition of being in wants. The poor signify all who are without CHRIST and without GOD. The poor signify all who have no hope in CHRIST (Ephesians 2:12). Poorness is their spiritual plight before salvation. Upon receiving the Gospel of CHRIST, they are saved and made rich in CHRIST (II Corinthians 8:9; Ephesians 3:8).

The **second coming** of CHRIST is being preached, but the poor have never known of the first coming of CHRIST. The purpose of the first coming of CHRIST was to save the world. The purpose of the second coming of CHRIST will be to judge the world. After judgment, all sinners will be cast into hell, the lake of fire and brimstone. What a terrible thing it is! The second coming of CHRIST also means a transformation or destruction of the whole universe by bringing the New heaven and New earth of Revelation 21:1 by CHRIST HIMSELF.

## 1 1. THE LOVING GOD, ALWAYS WITH US

### 11.1 EMMANUEL, GOD WITH US

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world HE was tempted, oppressed, afflicted and persecuted. HE suffered tribulations, insults, humiliations, weaknesses, grief, sorrows, hunger, thirst, wanderings, pains and tears. Our LORD suffered in HIS most holy body of flesh, terrible pains, humiliations, hardships and tortures, which no one has ever suffered. HE redeems HIS children from such distress, because HE has HIMSELF suffered it. HE is a good, mighty and loving GOD. HE is EMMANUEL, the GOD who is always with us. HE is a very good Counsellor. HE is the Wonderful and Mighty GOD. HE is the Prince of Peace (Isaiah 9:6).

*“Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call HIS name EMMANUEL, which being interpreted is, GOD with us.”*

St. Matthew 1:23

### 11.2 JESUS CHRIST IS THE LOVING GOD

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is our own GOD. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST alone is the GOD of mankind. HE alone is our own GOD. HE is a very good Father, very good Saviour, very good Redeemer, very good Shepherd and a most compassionate GOD. HE is all in all for us. HE is a very good teacher, very good friend, very good master, very good benefactor, very good doctor, very good companion, very good king, very good LORD, very good LORD of peace, very good guide and a most beloved GOD. Furthermore, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the propitiation for the sins of the whole world. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls all,

*“Come unto ME, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.”*

St. Matthew 11:28

**It is essential** for everyone to come to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and get delivered from all grief, all heaviness, all sins, all curses, all sicknesses, all diseases, all infirmities, all sorrows, all

troubles, all miseries, and all bondages of devil; and receive glorious comfort and rest from GOD. There is no one to love mankind as our LORD JESUS CHRIST does. JESUS CHRIST is the Loving GOD. HE is the GOD who loves all. Hence, GOD is LOVE. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is LOVE.

*"He that loveth not knoweth not GOD; for GOD is love. In this was manifested the love of GOD toward us, because that GOD sent HIS only begotten SON into the world, that we might live through HIM. Herein is love, not that we loved GOD, but that HE loved us, and sent HIS SON to be the propitiation for our sins."*

I John 4:8-10

**It is essential** for us to be the loving children of this loving GOD and enter HIS kingdom of love. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD; HE is the ONLY ONE GOD; HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD; and there is no other GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

"Let us love HIM wholeheartedly.

Let us live for HIM only.

Let us serve HIM sincerely.

Let us worship and adore HIM only."

*This page has been intentionally left blank*

## WHY SHOULD THE LORD JESUS SUFFER AND DIE FOR SINNERS ?

### 1 . GOD IS MERCIFUL AND JUST

IT IS very essential for us to understand why our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD should suffer, and shed HIS most precious and holy blood, and die for the sinners.

*"For the righteous LORD loveth righteousness; ..."*

Psalm 11:7

"*THY righteousness also, O GOD, is very high, ...*" declares the psalmist (Psalm 71:19). HIS righteousness is absolute and HIS mercy is perfect.

*"To the LORD our GOD belong mercies and forgivenesses, ..."*

Daniel 9:9

GOD's righteousness is absolute in the sense it exists independently of any other cause and completely uncontrolled by other influences. Therefore, nothing can influence HIS righteousness. Nothing can mar or impair it; nothing can have any impact on it. As it is GOD's righteousness, it can never be misused or misapplied. It can never be partial. GOD, the Almighty cannot and will not allow anything to interfere with HIS righteousness; HE will not allow anything that will adversely affect its absoluteness. Also, HE will not let unrighteousness go on unpunished. If the LORD GOD had been only just, it would not have been necessary for the LORD GOD to suffer and sacrifice HIS precious life. The LORD GOD is greatly just and so the justice of the LORD GOD requires the sinners to be punished.

But, the divine mercy of the LORD GOD requires forgiveness of sins to be given to sinners. The sinners should not be punished, since the LORD GOD is immensely merciful. Thus, the justice of the LORD GOD requires the sinners (the convicts) to be punished; but the mercy of the LORD GOD requires the sinners (the convicts) not to be punished.

Further, the LORD GOD is immensely just and faultless in HIS justice. Therefore, HE should punish the sinners (the convicts). The LORD GOD is immensely merciful and HIS mercy is boundless, and therefore the LORD GOD should forgive the sinners (the convicts).

Again, the LORD GOD cannot be a merciful GOD, if HE punishes the sinners (the convicts); and at the same time HE cannot be just, if HE forgives the sinners (the convicts). The LORD GOD would be without absolute godly nature, if HE is only merciful without being just. And the LORD GOD would be without absolute godly nature, if HE is only just without being merciful. The LORD GOD's great justice and great mercy are the divine attributes of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

If the LORD GOD had not manifested HIMSELF in this world as the LORD of peace, if HE had not manifested HIMSELF as the LORD to make peace with divine justice and divine mercy, a blemish would have been caused on HIS divine justice and on HIS divine mercy. Further, HIS divine love would not have been revealed, if the LORD GOD had not fulfilled HIS divine justice by offering HIMSELF as a ransom sacrifice for HIS divine justice. People born in this world deserve punishment according to HIS divine justice; because they are sinners by birth and by their works. The Holy Scripture of the LORD GOD, the Holy Bible reveals clearly that the wages of sin is the second death, the hell, the lake of fire that burns with fire and brimstone. See Romans 6:23; Revelation 21:8.

Again, the LORD GOD would have forgiven the sinners, if HE had been only merciful. But, the LORD GOD is just as well. If the LORD GOD had not granted forgiveness of sins to sinners, HE would have caused a damage and fault to HIS great mercy. In the same way, the LORD GOD might punish the sinners, if HE had been only just, but HE is merciful too. If the LORD GOD had not punished the sinners



for their sins according to HIS divine justice, HE would have inflicted a damage and fault to HIS divine justice. Therefore, to establish HIS great justice and great mercy, the sinless holy LORD HIMSELF had to receive the terrible punishment, the mankind deserved. The sinless and holy GOD had to suffer in HIS holy body the terrible punishment, the sinners had to suffer. The guiltless and most holy GOD, JESUS CHRIST had to suffer the terrible punishment, which mankind had to suffer. The sinless and immensely holy GOD, JESUS CHRIST had to suffer in HIS immensely holy body the horrible punishment, the sinners deserved to suffer.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST who is greatly merciful on sinners, became HIMSELF a ransom, a substitute and a sacrifice for sinners. Thus, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST saved the sinners from punishment and HE HIMSELF stood in the place of the sinners and suffered. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST suffered in HIS extremely holy body the punishment, the sinners deserved. HE shed all HIS extremely holy blood for sinners. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST sacrificed HIMSELF sinless, for sinners. Thus the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, fulfilled and established HIS great and divine justice and mercy by sacrificing HIMSELF and giving HIS most glorious life for sinners. The LORD of Peace thus opened the way of peace by removing completely the contradiction between the divine justice and divine mercy, of the LORD GOD HIMSELF. By totally fulfilling the divine justice and divine mercy, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST granted divine peace to the whole world immensely.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD revealed to the world, the new living way, the way of CHRIST, the immensely holy way by sacrificing HIMSELF and tearing HIS extremely holy flesh and shedding HIS extremely holy blood. And our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST established and revealed to the world HIS immensely holy church. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.1 GOD'S MERCY MOVED THE THIEF

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was crucified, two thieves were also crucified along with HIM. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was hung on the cross, the two thieves were hung on crosses, on either side of

HIM. The two thieves with other wicked people abused, mocked, scorned, blasphemed and humiliated HIM.

At that time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST thunderously spoke,

**"FATHER, FORGIVE THEM; FOR THEY KNOW NOT WHAT THEY DO."**

St. Luke 23:34

This extremely merciful word of forgiveness of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, entered and got embedded into the heart of the thief crucified on the right. When he heard this word of forgiveness, he turned and looked at the LORD's most sacred face. Then he saw with his own eyes, our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Sun of Righteousness, shining remarkably on the cross. When he saw this extremely glorious and divine brightness of the LORD, he was filled with fear of the LORD GOD. At once, he was terrified to think of the terrible hell and judgment, for the sins he had committed. He obtained also the knowledge and wisdom that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY GOD. When the fear of the LORD GOD filled him, he obtained the knowledge and wisdom about HIM.

*"The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: ..."*

Proverbs 1:7

*"The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: ..."*

Proverbs 9:10

*"The fear of the LORD is the instruction of wisdom; ..."*

Proverbs 15:33

Now, this wisdom and knowledge led him to know that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is extremely righteous, extremely holy, extremely guiltless and without any blemish. He also understood that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only good GOD of great righteousness and mercy. He realized that he was being rightly punished for the crimes and sins he had committed. He rightly realized his bad and evil conduct, and all the crimes and sins he had committed without fearing GOD. He clearly understood that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is guiltless and sinless and the LORD had done nothing wrong. Again, he understood that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD of great holiness, great righteousness, great love and great mercy. Moreover, he came to know clearly that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is

the GOD, who forgives the sins, and saves and redeems the sinners from sins. He clearly understood that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour and HE is the Only Redeemer.

But the thief on the LORD's left despised the word of forgiveness spoken by our LORD JESUS CHRIST from the cross. He did not look at HIM; he did not understand HIM; and he did not know HIM. He did not realize the terrible judgment and hell. He had no sense and faith about the terrible judgment. He had no sense and faith about the terrible hell, the wages of sin. He had no fear of the LORD GOD. He had no fear and faith about GOD. Therefore he again abused, mocked, scorned, blasphemed and humiliated HIM.

Then the thief crucified on the right of the LORD rebuked the other thief and said,

*"Dost not thou fear GOD, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath done nothing amiss."*

St. Luke 23:40-41

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST had done nothing wrong; but HE was punished and crucified unjustly.

Even though the thief crucified on the LORD's left was rebuked by the thief crucified on the LORD's right, he felt nothing about his crimes, sins and faults. He had no faith on GOD and he had no fear of GOD. He had no fear about the terrible hell and the judgment. Hence, along with other wicked people, he spoke against our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and thus he was a great sinner adding sins to his sins. He failed to realize his sins and iniquities, and missed the chance given to him by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST even at the last moment. Thus he wasted his life fully, without any realization, wisdom and fear of GOD. He became a man liable to be punished with the terrible judgment by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. He became a man liable to inherit the terrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, by wasting his life. Though GOD's mercy and forgiveness were offered to him, he failed to make use of the opportunity, even at the last moment of his life.

But the thief crucified on the LORD's right side was filled with terror and panic about his death. He was terrified to think about how he was going to be judged after his death by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. He was terrified to think about how he was going to be cast into the fiery lake of burning sulphur, the hell. So, he wanted to escape the terrible judgment and hell.

Terrified about the judgment and hell, he repented of his sins and prayed to GOD for forgiveness of sins, during the last moments given by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He began to confess his sins, crimes, faults, and evil conduct without hiding anything to our LORD JESUS CHRIST and prayed for his salvation and redemption. Realizing the terrible judgment and hell, which are the consequences of sins, he began to pray to our LORD JESUS CHRIST; and he began to shed tears and weep in order to escape the terrible judgment and hell. He understood and believed that our LORD JESUS CHRIST has a glorious kingdom and it is the divine kingdom or heaven. With that faith, he prayed to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST,

*"LORD, remember me when THOU comest into THY kingdom."*

St. Luke 23:42

Then our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST said to him thunderously,

**"VERILY I SAY UNTO THEE, TODAY SHALT THOU BE WITH ME  
IN PARADISE."**

St. Luke 23:43

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST spoke the word of great mercy and kindness and gave him the glorious heavenly promise. Paradise is the wonderful place where the souls of the saints rest.

We can thus realize how great are the great mercy, justice and love of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Can we find such a great mercy, justice and love anywhere else or with anybody else? All should know that there is no one except our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, who is good and endowed with such great mercy, justice and love.

The thief crucified on the left of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was a sinner who had not sought and obtained salvation from sins. He did not make use of his opportunity. But the thief crucified on the right

of our LORD JESUS CHRIST had sought and obtained salvation from sins. The thief crucified on the right of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was also a backslider and sinner. Though the thief crucified on the right of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was a backslider, he had obtained salvation from sins at the last moment of his life, by making use of his opportunity. The thief crucified on the right side of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was a baptized backslider, baptized by John, the Baptist.

A man who has not obtained salvation from sins is a sinner. The backslider is also a sinner. It is true that the backslider will be judged and cast into hell, if he does not repent and obtain forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins again. It is a great truth that the sinner who is not saved and the saved one who is a backslider will receive the same punishment, the hell.

Nowadays, the name 'backsliders' is given to Christians, the saved who have fallen into sin or the saved who have no growth in their spiritual life. So, the backsliders are the worldly people; they are the fleshly people; they are filled with carnal desires and appetites (I Corinthians 3:3); they are not the spiritual people. The backsliders in heart will be filled with their own ways rather than GOD's ways (Proverbs 14:14). So, Christians, the saved should be very careful to follow our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and grow in their spiritual life to enter into HIS kingdom, the kingdom of heaven. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls all backsliders,

*"Return, ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings. ..."*

Jeremiah 3:22

So, all backsliders should return to HIM immediately to inherit HIS most glorious Kingdom. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 1.2 GOD'S MERCY MADE HIM SHED BLOOD

Man's life is in his blood. If he loses his blood, his life leaves him. Man's life is sustained only in his blood.

*"...For the blood is the life; ..."*

Deuteronomy 12:23

*"For the life of the flesh is in the blood: ..."*

Leviticus 17:11

Again, man's blood is the source of all sins. Therefore, there is no forgiveness of sins without shedding of blood. The Holy Bible, the LORD's Holy Scripture says,

*"...And without shedding of blood is no remission (forgiveness of sins)."*

Hebrews 9:22

Therefore, blood should be shed for the forgiveness of man's sins. Blood should be shed for man's salvation from sins. Blood should be shed for man's redemption from sins. Blood should be shed for man's deliverance from sins. Blood should be shed for man to obtain sinless and holy experiences. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD shed all HIS extremely holy and most precious blood on the cross, suffered and sacrificed HIS life and died and became a sacrifice for the redemption of all the sins of the whole world. HE gave HIS most precious life a ransom for mankind.

*"In whom (JESUS CHRIST) we have redemption through HIS blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible GOD, the firstborn of every creature: For by HIM were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by HIM, and for HIM: And HE is before all things, and by HIM all things consist."*

Colossians 1:14-17

*"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation (conduct) received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

I Peter 1:18-19

*"And from JESUS CHRIST, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto HIM that loved us, and washed us from our sins in HIS own blood."*

Revelation 1:5

*"Even as the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give HIS life a*

*ransom for many."*

St. Matthew 20:28

*"And HE is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only,  
but also for the sins of the whole world."*

I John 2:2

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave HIS life a ransom for mankind and since HE is the propitiation for the sins of the whole world, HE has every right to be the Redeemer of the whole world.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST did so for mankind to obtain the immensely glorious and divine experiences, the spiritual experiences and inherit heaven, the divine world of wonders.

Man can obtain the spiritual experiences such as repentance from sins, forgiveness (remission) of sins, salvation from sins, the experience of divine goodness (conversion), the experience of born-again, the experiences of holiness and holy life, the experience of the HOLY SPIRIT, and redemption from sins, by the immensely precious and most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. The experiences of being washed and purified from sins and the experience of sanctification can also be obtained by the most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Man can obtain the spiritual blessings such as righteousness, peace, happiness, health, strength, consolation, faith and confidence by the most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Man can obtain the blessings of living in this world in communion with our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Man can also obtain the blessings of living with our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD in heaven for ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.3 GOD'S MERCY GRANTS SANCTIFICATION

Man's mind or his heart is full of wickedness and deceitfulness.

*"The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked:  
who can know it?"*

Jeremiah 17:9

Further man's heart or mind is full of lawlessness, filthiness, pollution and uncleanness. It is full of repulsive sins and sinful lusts. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE spoke with HIS

sacred mouth about the things that proceed from within and out of the heart of man and out of man's mouth that defile man.

*"And HE said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man."*

St. Mark 7:20-23

Therefore, a defiled, filthy, deceitful and wicked heart cannot remove its own defilement, filthiness, deceitfulness and wickedness to become pure and holy. No man can make his heart pure and holy himself. No man can make his mind pure and holy himself. But, some people say, they can. But it is a blatant lie. Only those who do not understand themselves rightly say so. Only those who do not believe and trust that there is a GOD, who removes the sins by washing with HIS most holy blood, say so. Only those who do not believe that there is JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD who removes the sins by washing with HIS own extremely holy blood say so. When these people try to sanctify themselves and try to live a holy life themselves, they can understand that it is never possible. They can never do it. They will clearly know that they can in no way sanctify themselves and live a holy life themselves. When they attain this wisdom and knowledge, they will understand themselves and realize their sinful and filthy life.

When people attain the above wisdom and knowledge, they will begin to confess their sins with wailing to our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, by making a true and sincere and steadfast treaty with the LORD that they will never sin. They will weep and wail to JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, "We are sinners; we are enemies; we are unclean; we are lascivious; we are abominable; we are wicked; we are unwanted; we are hateful; we are defiled; we are malicious; we are cruel; we are lawless; we are liars; we are deceivers; we are plotters; we are presumptuous; we are fornicators; we are adulterers; we are murderers; we are sorcerers; we are idolaters; we are observers of times; we are enchanters; we are witches; we are charmers; we are consulters with familiar spirits; we



are wizards; we are necromancers; we are magicians; we are conjurers; we are diviners; we are soothsayers; we are foretellers; we are revellers; we are drunkards; we are impious; we are ungodly; we are evil speakers; we are murmurers; we are thieves; we are covetous; we are revilers; we are abusers; we are extortionists; we are effeminate; we are disobedient; we are unholy; we are profane; we are blasphemers; we are whoremongers; we are menstealers; we are perjured persons; and we are false witnesses". Again, they will weep and wail to our LORD JESUS CHRIST that their hearts are corrupted, their thoughts are sinful and filled with iniquities, and their ways are evil and wicked. They will accept fully that even the desire to sin is really a sin. They will continuously confess their sins with tears and weeping to our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. They will cry with tears and weeping to GOD for forgiveness of sins, for salvation from sins, for sanctification, and for all experiences of holy life and for all spiritual blessings, especially for the anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the merciful GOD who suffered and shed HIS most holy blood for sinners, forgives their sins and iniquities and redeems, saves and purifies them. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST washes their sins with HIS most holy blood and sanctifies them. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scripture of the LORD clearly says,

*"...The blood of JESUS CHRIST HIS SON cleanseth us from all sin."*

I John 1:7

*"If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make HIM a liar, and HIS Word is not in us."*

I John 1:8-10

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST washes them also by HIS most holy name and by HIS HOLY SPIRIT.

*"...But ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the LORD JESUS, and by the Spirit of our GOD."*

I Corinthians 6:11

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST sanctifies them by HIS truth.

*"Sanctify them (Set them apart) through THY truth: THY Word is truth."*

St. John 17:17

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST anoints them with the HOLY SPIRIT to live and walk in the Spirit and gives them strength to live holy in this world. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST helps them to live in this world as the blessed and as the children of GOD.

*"But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of GOD dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of CHRIST, he is none of HIS."*

Romans 8:9

#### 1.4 GOD'S MERCY GRANTS THE HOLY SPIRIT

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said with HIS own sacred mouth,

*"I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!"*

St. Luke 12:49-50

'To send fire' means 'to send the HOLY SPIRIT'. 'A baptism to be baptized with' refers to HIS death. 'Straitened' means 'distressed'.

Unless our LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered and died for the world, the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD would not be sent to the world. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD suffered and died for the sinners according to the Scriptures, and HE was buried and HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures. And HE was seen of Cephas (Peter), then of the twelve and after that HE was seen of above five hundred brethren at the same time. See I Corinthians 15:3-6. After HIS great sufferings, HE showed HIMSELF to many people and gave many convincing proofs that HE was alive. HE appeared to them for a period of forty days and spoke about the kingdom of GOD. See Acts 1:3. On the fortieth day of HIS resurrection, HE ascended up on high. HE ascended to heaven, before HIS disciples' very eyes. See Ephesians 4:8-10; Acts 1:9. On the fiftieth day of HIS resurrection, on the day of Pentecost, the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD came into this world from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind and as of cloven tongues of fire. See Acts 2:1-4. To anoint HIS people with HIS HOLY SPIRIT, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into this

world, suffered and died. To bless HIS people through the HOLY SPIRIT, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into this world, suffered and died. To separate us absolutely from false and corrupt and defiled religious systems, worldliness, illicit union and friendship with the world, flirting with the world, adultery, idolatry, apostasy, blasphemy and revolt against CHRIST, the anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT and the leading of the HOLY SPIRIT are very essential. GOD's tender mercy grants us the HOLY SPIRIT for our walking in the SPIRIT (Galatians 5:25). Glory be to GOD!

## **2. TO AVOID HELL-FIRE**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said with HIS own sacred mouth,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin."*

St. John 8:34

Living a servant of sin or living a slave to sin is a wretched life. Living a slave to sin is the worst life and it is a life much worse than the life of an animal or any other creature. A life without redemption from sin is a wretched life. A life without redemption from sin is the worst life. A life without redemption from sin is a life much worse than the life of an animal or any other creature.

Living a slave to sin is not at all a life. A sinful life is a life for hell. A sinful life is a life of hell. A sinful life is a most pitiable life. A sinful life is a life towards the terrible sea, which burns with fire and brimstone. A sinful life is a life towards misery and desolation. A sinful life is a life of want. The end of a sinful life is hell, the abyss. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD alone can redeem sinners from their sins and from hell. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scripture of the LORD says,

*"If the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed."*

St. John 8:36

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came to this world and HE suffered and died to redeem sinners from their sins and from hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 2.1 TO SEPARATE US FROM SIN

Furthermore, the sins and iniquities of men separate them from GOD. The sins and iniquities of men make a division between men and GOD. Sinners' hands and fingers are defiled with blood and with sins and iniquities. A sinner who conceals his sins will not prosper, but whoever confesses and forsakes them will find mercy.

*"But your iniquities have separated between you and your GOD, and your sins have hid HIS face from you, that HE will not hear. For your hands are defiled with blood, and your fingers with iniquity; your lips have spoken lies, your tongue hath muttered perverseness."*

Isaiah 59:2-3

*"He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy."*

Proverbs 28:13

Our sins separate us from our GOD's most holy presence. So, HE will not hear the very prayers of the unrepentant.

*"And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide MINE eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood."*

Isaiah 1:15

Further, those who commit adultery, blood is in their hands. The hands of adulterers are full of blood; and those of adulteresses are full of blood. Adulterers shed blood; and adulteresses shed blood. So, they are the great murderers; they are the great murderers of souls; they are the great murderers of innocent souls; they are the great murderers of unstable souls. Hence, they are liable for judgment and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"That they have committed adultery, and blood is in their hands, and with their idols have they committed adultery, ..."*

Ezekiel 23:37

*"And the righteous men, they shall judge them after the manner of adulteresses, and after the manner of women that shed blood; because they are adulteresses, and blood is in their hands."*

Ezekiel 23:45

Now, these adulterers and adulteresses count it pleasure to riot (carouse) in the daytime. They are spots and blemishes; they are sporting (carousing or revelling) in their own deceptions while they feast; they are sporting (carousing or revelling) in their mean pleasures while they feast. They are having eyes full of adultery. So, their eyes cannot cease from sin and they never stop sinning. They beguile and murder innocent souls. They beguile and murder unstable souls. They are having a heart trained in covetous practices. So, their heart cannot cease from sin and they never stop sinning. They beguile and murder innocent souls. They beguile and murder unstable souls. They are the cursed. So, they will receive the wages of sin, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children."*

II Peter 2:13-14

He who commits adultery with a woman lacks understanding. She who commits adultery with a man lacks understanding. He who commits adultery with a woman destroys his own soul. She who commits adultery with a man destroys her own soul.

*"But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul."*

Proverbs 6:32

He who goes in to his neighbour's (another man's) wife and he who touches her will not go unpunished. She who goes in to her neighbour's (another woman's) husband and she who touches him will not go unpunished.

*"So he that goeth in to his neighbour's wife; whosoever toucheth her shall not be innocent."*

Proverbs 6:29

For by means of a harlot (female prostitute) a man is reduced to a piece of bread. Likewise, for by means of a male prostitute a woman is reduced to a piece of bread.

An adulteress will prey upon his precious life. Likewise, an adulterer will prey upon her precious life. Prostitution is a most detestable sin against GOD. All prostitutes will be cast into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life."*

Proverbs 6:26

The house of a harlot (female prostitute) is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death. Likewise, the house of a male prostitute is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death. The destiny of those who commit adultery is death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"Her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death."*

Proverbs 7:27

Now, do not lust after a seductress's beauty in your heart. Do not let her allure or entice or captivate you with her eyelids. Do not let your heart turn aside to her ways. Do not stray into her paths. Likewise, do not lust after a seducer's beauty in your heart. Do not let him allure or entice or captivate you with his eyelids. Do not let your heart turn aside to his ways. Do not stray into his paths. Everyone should protect his/her heart or mind to escape from this bad temptation. Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation (St. Matthew 26:41). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Lust not after her beauty in thine heart; neither let her take thee with her eyelids."*

Proverbs 6:25

*"Let not thine heart decline to her ways, go not astray in her paths."*

Proverbs 7:25

The real marital relationship is forfeited in the adulterous relationship. The real intimacy intended by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is forfeited in the adulterous relationship. Our LORD GOD's ideal plan for marriage is one man for one woman for one lifetime.

### 3. JESUS SUFFERED TO BECOME OUR MEDIATOR

One who acts as a peacemaker or one who acts as an intermediary between two or more people, as in settling a dispute is called a mediator.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, came to this world to call men into HIS loving fellowship, as a peacemaker and as an intermediary, though men had gone away from GOD because of their sinful ways and sinful life. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, came to this world as a Mediator, to bring men into HIS communion, and to associate and to integrate and to make peace with HIM. GOD is ONE and the Mediator between GOD and men is ONE. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and a Mediator between men and GOD, who came into this world as a Man. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"For there is ONE GOD, and ONE Mediator between GOD and men, the Man CHRIST JESUS; Who gave HIMSELF a ransom for all, ..."*

I Timothy 2:5-6

When GOD created man, HE inscribed the natural knowledge of GOD's Law or GOD's Will (the Moral Law) on his heart. So, this innate knowledge of the Moral Law is sufficient to convict one of his sinfulness and of his guilt before GOD (Romans 1:32). Obedience to the Moral Law is compulsory and this Law is binding on all people, since all people have by nature some knowledge of the Moral Law, according to which their conscience judges their deeds and words (Romans 2:14-15).

Further, on mount Sinai, GOD's Law (the Moral Law) was briefly codified in the Ten Commandments by GOD HIMSELF, and recorded by Moses (Exodus 20:2-17). This Law is also binding on all people. This Law is called the Revealed Law of GOD.

Then our LORD GOD amplified the Revealed Law and gave it to Moses. So, this is called the Law of Moses or the Law. Now, the Law of Moses contains covenants, commandments (judgments), statutes and ordinances (Exodus 19:5; Leviticus 26:46; II Chronicles 33:8).

The whole Law of Moses contains 2713 commands, including 248 things GOD does require of men and 365 things GOD does not require of men. These 613 things are the basic foundation of morality.

The Law reflected the most holy GOD and HIS absolute holiness. It also reflected the great righteous GOD and HIS great righteousness. It instructed the people in GOD's divine discipline. It reminded the people through its priests, sacrifices of GOD and feasts of the LORD. It acted as a teacher to lead the people to CHRIST.

The Law was given to the Israelites (the Jews) through Moses. The Law was a moral guideline of GOD for Israel. By the Law is the knowledge of sin (Romans 3:20). By the Law is the knowledge of death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Deuteronomy 32:22). Moses commanded the Law for the Israelites (the Jews).

Hence, the adoption, the glory, the covenants, the giving of the Law, the service of GOD and the promises belong to the Israelites (the Jews). But they failed and apostle Paul mourns and his heart aches for the salvation of his brethren. How terrible was the fall of the Israelites who had such privileges from GOD! They were descended from the patriarchs and from whom on the human side, has come the MESSIAH, HE who is Almighty and Divine (Romans 9:4-5). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, the Law of Moses contains the principle of retaliation, the judicial penalty of an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. But our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST's command is that we should resist not evil. But whoever slaps us on our right cheek, turn the other to him also (St. Matthew 5:38-39).

Hence, no one is justified by the Law. No one is justified by the Law in the sight of GOD is evident, for 'The just (The righteous) will live by faith' (Galatians 3:11). And no one is justified by the works of the Law but by faith in JESUS CHRIST (Galatians 2:16). The righteousness does not come through the Law (Galatians 2:21). So, no one receives righteousness by keeping the Law and no one receives salvation by keeping the Law. Hence, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has abolished the Law in HIS most holy flesh, being put to death in the flesh (Ephesians 2:15).



Furthermore, the chief purpose of the Law is to convict man of his sinfulness and of his lost condition. To escape from conviction by the Law, he needs a Saviour. So our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD came into the world to save sinners (I Timothy 1:15). HE suffered all the punishment that we deserve for our sins. HE suffered and died on the cross for us, the sinners (Isaiah 53:5; I Peter 2:24). HE gave HIMSELF a ransom for all (I Timothy 2:6).

Christians, the saved know that they cannot get salvation by keeping the Law. So, they put their trust completely in JESUS CHRIST for salvation. However, they use the Law as a guide; they consider the Law as a schoolmaster to bring them to CHRIST (Galatians 3:24). Christians, the saved also know that all who rely on observing the Law are under a curse. Hence, no one is justified before GOD by the Law (Galatians 3:10-11). They also know that only the fully saved people can live a sinless life and those who keep the Law cannot live a sinless life. This fact is written in Ecclesiastes 7:20.

*"For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not."*

Ecclesiastes 7:20

Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. HE is the Triune GOD, One GOD in three functional persons, GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in One GODHEAD. HE is the GOD of Trinity, the unity of GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in One GODHEAD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD came to this world as a Mediator between GOD and mankind. HE came to this world as a Mediator between GOD the FATHER and mankind. HE horribly hung on the cross on three nails, as a Mediator between GOD and mankind. HE horribly hung on the cross, as a Mediator between GOD the FATHER and mankind. While HE was hanging on the cross, HE interceded to GOD the FATHER for us, the sinners. See St. Luke 23:34.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD came to this world, as a Mediator, to bring all people into GOD's loving

fellowship. HE came to this world, as a Mediator, to bring all people into GOD the FATHER's loving fellowship. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD came to this world, as a Mediator, to unite the two antagonistic groups of Gentile and Jew into a single divine group or a single divine family, the Christian church. As a Mediator, HE has gloriously united the two antagonistic groups of Gentile and Jew into a single divine group or a single divine family, the Christian church. HE did this by breaking down (removing) the middle wall of partition, that is, the Law of Moses. HE has made the Law of Moses invalid to unite the two antagonistic groups of Gentile and Jew into a single divine group or a single divine family, the Christian church. HE has made the Law of Moses invalid for HIS glorious church. Now, the Gentile Christians as well as their Jewish counterparts, the Jewish Christians are part of HIS glorious church. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"For HE is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; Having abolished in HIS flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in HIMSELF of twain one new man, so making peace; And that HE might reconcile both unto GOD in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby."*

Ephesians 2:14-16

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls all people to come into HIS loving fellowship.

*"GOD is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of HIS SON JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

I Corinthians 1:9

Here, 'fellowship' includes both union and communion.

So, the Gentiles as well as the Jews should obey the great and glorious call of our loving LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, and they should come into union with our loving LORD JESUS CHRIST, and they should come into communion with one another. A religious fellowship or spiritual fellowship between the Gentiles and the Jews is very essential. To give this most glorious fellowship between the Gentiles and the Jews, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into

the world as a Mediator and HE suffered and HE died. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 3.1 SINNERS TO KNOW GOD

A man who is a sinner does not belong to GOD. His sins make him godless. His sins make him wicked. His sins make him agnostic or atheistic. His sins make him pagan or heathen. The sinner who commits sins does not know or see GOD. A sinner is of the devil and he is a child of the devil or Satan. Thus, all who commit sins are the children of Satan, the devil.

Whoever has been born of GOD does not commit sin, for HIS seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he has been born of GOD. This is how we know who the children of GOD are and who the children of devil are. Again, whoever does not do righteousness is not of GOD, nor is he who does not love his brother. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scripture of the LORD clearly says,

*"Whosoever abideth in HIM sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen HIM, neither known HIM. Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as HE is righteous. He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was manifested, that HE might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of GOD doth not commit sin; for HIS seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of GOD. In this the children of GOD are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of GOD, neither he that loveth not his brother."*

I John 3:6-10

Therefore, though the sinner, the godless possesses abundant riches, high education, degrees, high profession, power, honour, respect, children and all other blessings of the world, he is miserable; because he belongs to the devil or Satan and he belongs to the terrible hell. The sinner spoils all blessings and goodness. The sinner spoils and destroys all the blessings of the kingdom of heaven. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scripture of the LORD says,

*"...But one sinner destroyeth much good."*

Ecclesiastes 9:18

### 3.2 SINNERS TO SEEK GOD

*"And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the LORD, if haply (in the hope that) they might feel after (grope for) HIM, and find HIM, though HE be not far from every one of us."*

Acts 17:26-27

Thus, men must seek our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Men should seek HIM and find HIM. Men should repent to our LORD JESUS CHRIST and obtain forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, and all other spiritual experiences. They should keep the commandments of GOD and live in the fear of the LORD, and in the divine wisdom and in the divine knowledge of the LORD. This is the experience of the wise. This is the wisdom. This is the heavenly wisdom. This is the divine wisdom. This is the knowledge. This is the heavenly knowledge. This is the divine knowledge. Therefore, it is necessary for all to be prudent and to live in divine wisdom and knowledge. The wise man rejects the invitation of sinners or criminals who entice him.

*"MY son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not."*

Proverbs 1:10

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's sovereignty involves itself in the affairs of mankind. HE is near them; HE is very near to those who seek HIM. So, he who seeks finds HIM (St. Luke 11:10). Therefore, all the people of the world must seek HIM; and they must repent and turn to HIM, since HIS day of judgment is coming.

Now, one who seeks means one who seeks GOD and HIS kingdom and HIS righteousness. His/her allegiance to the heavenly King, the LORD JESUS CHRIST must continue, seeking HIS kingdom and HIS righteousness. Everyone should seek first the righteousness of GOD and HIS kingdom, and then all material things will be added to him/her. When his/her priority is spiritual, GOD will take care of the material. So, HIS people need not even worry about tomorrow.

*"But seek ye first the kingdom of GOD, and HIS righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no*

*thought for the morrow: ..."*

St. Matthew 6:33-34

### 3.3 SINNERS TO SEEK GODLINESS

*"If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. Pure religion (pure godliness) and undefiled before GOD and the FATHER is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world."*

James 1:26-27

Here, James does not offer a formal definition of godliness, but he offers three key aspects of godliness: controlled speech, unselfish service for the welfare of others, and separation from the world. So, everyone should protect their tongues. They should not deceive their hearts. They should not be conformed to this world. They should be transformed. They should look after orphans and widows in their distress. They should live a slave to GOD always. They should keep themselves without being stained by the world, without being stained by sins and iniquities; without being stained by their tongues, without being stained by their hearts, without being stained by their flesh, without being stained by their eyes, without being stained by their ears, without being stained by their hands, without being stained by their legs, without being stained by any member of the body, and without any spot or stain in their life. These are the experiences of godliness. This is the godliness. It is necessary for everyone to be godly. It is necessary for everyone to be devout and God-fearing.

The tongue is a world (system) of iniquity. It defiles the whole body. It is a fire. It sets on fire the whole course of life; and it is even set on fire by hell. This means that the source from which the evil activity of the tongue springs is hell. This refers to the anger and violent passions of wrath related to the vile language of the tongue. It also pictures the confusion and misery caused by the tongue, like the misery of hell. The tongue continually excites the circle of human life unless it is kept sanctified.

*"And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell."*

James 3:6

To give a spotless and stainless life to HIS children, our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD presented HIMSELF a holy sacrifice, in propitiation for their sins. To give an undefiled life to HIS children, HE offered HIS own blood and died. Glory be to GOD!

#### **4. DIED FOR A HOLY CHURCH**

*"That HE might present it to HIMSELF a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish."*

Ephesians 5:27

Hence, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD suffered and died for a glorious and holy church without blemish, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing. The saved people, who have received baptism by total immersion in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT, are the members of this church. See Acts 2:47.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's death was HIS falling into the ground, to produce many grains for HIS church, as a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies to produce many grains (I Corinthians 15:36).

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn (grain) of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth (remains) alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit (many grains)."*

St. John 12:24

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST's death was being lifted up on the tree to draw all men to HIMSELF (I Peter 2:24).

*"And I, if I be lifted up (Crucified) from the earth, will draw all men unto ME."*

St. John 12:32

The many grains produced by HIS falling into the ground are the 'all men' drawn by HIS being lifted up on the tree of cross. Through HIS death and resurrection HIS glory was released, producing many grains. The church is the glorious increase produced by the glorious CHRIST through HIS death and resurrection.

Now, the snake-poison caused by snake-bite kills one's body. But the sin-poison caused by the old serpent-bite or Satan-bite kills one's soul. Adam the first man and Eve the first woman were bitten unawares by the vile old serpent, Satan, the devil. So, they died in their souls and their death caught hold of their descendants (Genesis 3; Revelation 12:9). To heal and save mankind from the deaths of both the poisons, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST lovingly came to the world and lifted up and died for us on the cross at Calvary (St. John 3:14; Acts 28:3-6).

Satan, the old serpent, injected his evil nature/sinful nature by his bite into the flesh of mankind. So, we have the serpentine nature of Satan within us. Hence, we need the LORD JESUS CHRIST not only to be the Lamb of GOD to take away our sin (St. John 1:29) but also to be in the form of the serpent that our serpentine nature might be dealt with on the cross and that we might have eternal life (St. John 3:13-14). **This clearly reveals the great love of GOD the FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST towards us, the sinners.** Glory be to GOD!

When the Israelites sinned against GOD, they were bitten by fiery serpents (Numbers 21:4-9). The LORD GOD told Moses to lift up a bronze serpent on their behalf for GOD's judgment, that by looking upon that bronze serpent all might live. The bronze serpent had the form of the serpent but was without the serpent's poison. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in "the likeness of sinful flesh" (Romans 8:3), but HE did not know sin (II Corinthians 5:21). HIS likeness is equal to the form of the bronze serpent without the serpent's poison. When CHRIST was lifted up in the flesh on the cross, by HIS death Satan, the old serpent, was dealt with (St. John 12:32-33). This means that the serpentine nature within mankind has been dealt with. When a man is born-again or born-from-above with the divine life in CHRIST (St. John 3:3), his satanic nature or serpentine nature or evil nature is annulled.

#### 4.1 TO GRANT POWER OF RESURRECTION

People should also receive the HOLY SPIRIT, the Power of GOD and live always a holy life with HIS divine Power. The HOLY SPIRIT is the holy Power or the divine Power of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Therefore, it is necessary that all should live with this Power of GOD. This divine Power or divine Strength is the divine Power or the divine Strength of resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is the

divine Power or the divine Strength that HIS people obtain from HIS glorious resurrection. The Power of CHRIST's resurrection is the HOLY SPIRIT. See Philippians 3:10.

#### 4.2 TO GRANT SPIRITUAL GIFTS AND FRUITS

Further, people should live without sin. They should live always sinless with victory over sins and iniquities, over Satan, the devil and over the world. They should always live with our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. In all their needs, with perfect faith they should live in the LORD. They should firmly accept the LORD JESUS CHRIST as their only healer. People should receive GOD's grace and live in this world with the confidence of JESUS CHRIST. People should live with boldness, by the holy blood of JESUS and by the HOLY SPIRIT of JESUS. Those who live with these experiences are the gifted and the blessed. No man can please GOD, without the spiritual gifts and blessings of GOD. No man can walk in the way of GOD and according to HIS will, without the gifts and blessings of the LORD. Therefore, it is necessary for everyone to live with the spiritual gifts and blessings of GOD.

Now, all people need the spiritual gifts, such as the gift of wisdom, the gift of knowledge, the gift of faith, the gift of righteousness (Romans 5:17) and the gift of speaking in tongues (the gift of speaking in different kinds of tongues). The saved people should possess these spiritual gifts. To the saved, these spiritual gifts are not only most essential but also compulsory.

Again, the ministers who are called by GOD to do HIS ministry should receive the spiritual gifts of healing. Some special spiritual gifts, such as the gift of working of miracles, the gift of prophecy, the gift of discerning of spirits, and the gift of the interpretation of tongues are also needed for GOD's ministers or GOD's servants. But, GOD gives these special spiritual gifts to HIS ministers, according to HIS divine Will.

*“For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; to another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another*



*discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues:"*

I Corinthians 12:8-10

The great healing Power of GOD is revealed through the gifts of healing. And the gifts of healing work through the ministers of GOD or the servants of GOD. So, no medical treatment is needed for HIS people. Our GOD always chooses to heal HIS people. The great healing Power of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is evidenced in a number of instances in the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. Hence, all diseases experienced by people can be prevented and healed by trusting GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. All diseases experienced by people can be prevented and healed by faith in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, people should always live as good children filled with the spiritual fruits, such as love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, righteousness and truth.

*"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law."*

Galatians 5:22-23

*"(For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth.)"*

Ephesians 5:9

Furthermore, people should live as the holy children of the holy GOD, guided by the HOLY SPIRIT, and filled with the happiness of the HOLY SPIRIT and salvation. Only these people will at last inherit heaven, the divine world. Only those who receive godly wisdom and godly knowledge, godliness, GOD's strength and other godly blessings from our LORD JESUS CHRIST will inherit heaven. These people alone will enjoy immense happiness and joy for ever in heaven. Everyone should receive this great blessing of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

All the believers who are the saved must possess the fruits of the HOLY SPIRIT—love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, righteousness and truth. These fruits are not only most essential but also compulsory.

If the fruits are not manifested in any believer, we will have to presume that there is no evidence of salvation in such a person. It is possible that such people may still continue to sin and may remain in their sinful state. What they should do is to realize first their helplessness. Then they should humble themselves before our LORD JESUS CHRIST and totally believe in HIM and submit themselves entirely in HIS hands. It is not enough that they declare their belief in our LORD JESUS CHRIST orally. They should, with a broken-heart and a contrite spirit sincerely, seriously and repeatedly beg and implore the LORD's forgiveness and salvation.

What I have said so far is also applicable to the spiritual gifts. Again, all the believers who are the saved must possess the spiritual gifts of the word of wisdom, the word of knowledge, faith and the gift of speaking in divers kinds of tongues. In the first century Christian church, the gift of speaking in divers kinds of tongues was unlimited among believers (I Corinthians 12:10; 14:23, 39).

The gift of faith and the gift of speaking in divers kinds of tongues are the most essential spiritual gifts to believers. To live in the Spirit and to walk in the Spirit, the believers must be anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT with the symbol of (foreign) tongue, and they must also receive the gift of speaking in divers kinds of tongues.

*"If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."*

Galatians 5:25

Further, by the gift of faith, the believers must live in this world by faith; and they should receive divine healing from sickness through the prayer of faith. Faith without works is dead (James 2:17).

*"Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, MY soul shall have no pleasure in him."*

Hebrews 10:38

*"And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the LORD shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him."*

James 5:15

Again, GOD's spiritual gifts are given to the saved by water baptism (Acts 2:38; St. Matthew 3:16) and by HOLY SPIRIT's baptism (Acts 10:44-48) and by steadfast prayers (Acts 2:42). Besides, those who are

saved are saved by the grace of GOD, the grace of the HOLY SPIRIT (Ephesians 2:8). So, when we are saved, the grace of GOD, the grace of the HOLY SPIRIT is in us.

**GOD's grace** is GOD's unmerited kindness on the cross at Calvary toward sinners for their salvation from sins (Ephesians 2:8-9). The saved should have a solid standing in grace (Romans 5:2). Grace is the riches of CHRIST (Ephesians 3:8), which GOD has given to us in CHRIST, such as light, life, righteousness and holiness. Grace is graciousness (Colossians 4:6). Grace is GOD's great and wonderful help dispensed to HIS people in times of need (Colossians 1:2). CHRIST's gift by grace abounds to the many to live in CHRIST (Romans 5:15). CHRIST's grace not only abounds (Romans 5:17) and superabounds (Romans 5:20) but also reigns (Romans 5:21). Only a living person can reign. Thus, CHRIST's grace is CHRIST HIMSELF. Everyone must be strong in the grace that is CHRIST JESUS (II Timothy 2:1).

One's spiritual fruits reveal one's holiness of GOD. One's spiritual gifts reveal one's power and strength of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 4.3 TO SAVE SINNERS

It is the desire of all people to live in happiness and in joy, without death and want. But when they face evil, sorrow, restlessness, disease, sickness, devils' problems, bonds and difficulties, they desire death. Therefore, some people commit suicide or kill themselves in some other ways. But they do not realize that it is their sins and sinful amusements and wicked acts, which bring them all miseries, difficulties and diseases and at last they die in these sins. They die without a will to repent from their sins and sinful acts. They die in their sins, sinful amusements, and wicked acts, without a will to repent from them. They die without a will to believe our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. They die without a will to be delivered from their sins by GOD. They die without a will to turn away from Satan, the devil and from his evil powers. They die without a will to turn towards our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. They die without a will to live as the holy children of the holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They die without a will to live as GOD's children.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD has no pleasure in the death of the sinner and the wicked. It is not at all HIS will. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has spoken in the Holy Bible, the Holy Scripture of the LORD,

*"Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the LORD GOD: and not that he should return from his ways, and live? ... Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, ... For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the LORD GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye."*

Ezekiel 18:23, 30-32

#### 4.4 TO BE THE ONLY SAVIOUR

Though our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, HE came in this world as man and lived in this world as man. HE came to this world as man and lived in flesh. Therefore our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST knows and pities over men's infirmities, sorrows, troubles, miseries, mental agonies, sufferings, diseases, sickness, devil possession, sins, transgressions, wickedness, reproaches, pains, grief, tears, wailing and all other problems.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST greatly regrets and laments, with pain and unspeakable sigh over the miseries of men. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE lamented; HE regretted; HE grieved; HE was troubled; HE was sorrowful; HE was hungry; HE was thirsty; HE was weary; HE walked through the towns and villages for the people; HE shed tears; and HE wept for mankind.

Further, when HE was in this world, HE was tempted and HE suffered all miseries. Therefore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST can deliver men from all evils, temptations and sufferings. Also our LORD JESUS CHRIST gives men, the power to overcome sins and devils. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is also All-powerful to give men, at last the great blessing of living with HIM in HIS eternal kingdom, the heaven for ever and ever. Besides, our LORD JESUS CHRIST, GOD the FATHER, is the FATHER of mercies, and the GOD of all-comfort.

*“Blessed be GOD, even the FATHER of our LORD JESUS CHRIST,  
the FATHER of mercies, and the GOD of all comfort.”*

II Corinthians 1:3

Therefore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has every right to be the Saviour of mankind and to be the Saviour of the world. You may look, and study, and learn, and weigh, but JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY great Saviour than you think HIM to be when your thoughts are the greatest. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is more ready to pardon than you to sin, more able to forgive than you to transgress. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is more willing to supply your wants than you are to confess them. Never tolerate low thoughts of our LORD JESUS.

Now, let us conclude this chapter focusing our attention on the main points. We are now able to understand why our LORD JESUS had to suffer and die. A child needs a mother. We need GOD. As a child needs a mother, we need GOD. As the suffering of a mother is needed for the child's bodily welfare, our GOD's sufferings are needed for the welfare of our souls as well as the welfare of our bodies. Further, it was because GOD's divine justice could not be detached from HIS divine mercy. GOD's justice demanded shedding of blood and GOD's mercy granted sanctification. HIS mercy provided HIS HOLY SPIRIT to HIS children to equip them to fight temptations and to serve HIM through HIS Gospel. Our LORD JESUS had to go through and endure the agony of hell-fire so that HIS children need not have to face judgment and hell-fire and they be separated from sin and its evil consequences. Finally and most importantly only through suffering and death has our LORD become our Mediator and the ONE and ONLY Saviour freeing us from the clutches of the Law. Oh, what a wonderfully gracious and righteous GOD we have! Blessed are those who will inherit HIS kingdom! Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*This page has been intentionally left blank*

# CHRISTIANS, END-TIME, MILLENNIUM, JUDGMENT, HELL AND KINGDOM OF GOD

## 1. WHO IS A TRUE CHRISTIAN ?

**“...And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.”**

Acts 11:26

The disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST were called Christians first in Antioch of Syria. These disciples were the believers of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They were the saints. Hence the believers or the disciples or the saints of our LORD JESUS CHRIST were called Christians first by the Antiochenes of Syria. The name 'Christians' was at first referred to the people of CHRIST only. As they abided in the teachings of CHRIST correctly, they were called Christians. The name 'Christians' was given to the believers or the disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST by the ordinary people in Antioch and not by the believers. **The saved or the true Christians live a sinless life in a sinful world like the saltwater fishes (not having saltiness) in seawater (salty water).**

Now, if anyone abides in the Word of CHRIST, then he is really HIS disciple. JESUS CHRIST's true disciple is a true Christian. **Almost (very nearly) a Christian is not a true Christian. Altogether (wholly) a Christian is a true Christian (Acts 26:28-29).**

*“Then said JESUS to those Jews which believed on HIM, If ye*

*continue (abide) in MY Word, then are ye MY disciples indeed."*

St. John 8:31

True Christians are engaged in a spiritual fight. The fight is on. We are to fight against Satan, the devil and other powerful forces (Ephesians 6:11-12). Hence, we need spiritual weapons, the **whole armour of GOD**. Like a Roman soldier, we have a belt—truth; a breast plate—righteousness; shoes—the preparation for the Gospel of peace; a shield—faith; a helmet—salvation and a sword—Word of GOD which is the Holy Bible (Ephesians 6:13-17). Most important of all, is the armour of prayer—boldness-giving and victory-giving and life-giving armour (Ephesians 6:18-20). Since we need these **spiritual armours** for our defence and protection, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST fits us with these armours. With these we can firmly establish our stand against all evil forces.

The Christians, GOD's people should be strong in the power of the HOLY SPIRIT to fight against Satan, the devil and against all evil forces or powers (Ephesians 6:12). To defeat Satan and all other evil forces or powers, prayer by obeying every commandment of GOD is the most mighty weapon.

Further, Satan, the devil—the masquerade is always trying to destroy the spiritual life of GOD's people, by misquoting or misinterpreting the Word of GOD and he is always trying to pull GOD's people down into the snares of sin. So, beware of Satan, the devil and his satanic and devilish works!

Besides, when the attention of GOD's people turns away from our LORD JESUS to the distractions of the worldly attractions, spiritual fall begins and they will fall in their spiritual life completely (II Timothy 4:10). So, beware of your spiritual life or Christian life!

**The following are the additional qualifications required of a true Christian:**

1. A true Christian is the one who has obtained repentance from sins, forgiveness (remission) of sins, salvation (deliverance) from sins, the experience of divine goodness, the experience of born-again or born-from-above, redemption from sins, holiness and holy life. A fully saved man is a true Christian.



2. A true Christian is the one who has obtained baptism by total immersion from a GOD's minister with celibate lifestyle like John the Baptist, in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT. See St. Matthew 28:19; St. John 3:23.
3. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Romans 8:9).
4. A true Christian is the one who is in CHRIST. A true Christian is a new creation.

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

5. A true Christian is the righteous one and he lives by faith.

*"Now the just shall live by faith: ..."*

Hebrews 10:38

6. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the holiness of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...That we might be partakers of HIS holiness."*

Hebrews 12:10

7. A true Christian is the one who walks as our LORD JESUS CHRIST walked. A true Christian walks in the way of holiness.

*"He that saith he abideth in HIM ought himself also so to walk, even as HE walked."*

I John 2:6

8. A true Christian is the one who has the life of CHRIST and he lives in CHRIST.

*"For to me to live is CHRIST, and to die is gain."*

Philippians 1:21

9. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the joy and peace of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (St. John 14:27).

*"These things have I spoken unto you, that MY joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full."*

St. John 15:11

10. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the grace of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (II Corinthians 12:9; II Timothy 2:1).

11. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the strength of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"I can do all things through CHRIST which strengtheneth me."*

Philippians 4:13

12. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the divine nature of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust."*

II Peter 1:4

13. A true Christian is the one who has obtained the boldness of CHRIST.

*"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of JESUS,"*

Hebrews 10:19

14. A true Christian is the one who is living in the new and living way of CHRIST.

*"By a new and living way, which HE hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, HIS flesh."*

Hebrews 10:20

15. A true Christian is the one who is having a noble character, which was in CHRIST JESUS.

*"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so."*

Acts 17:11

16. A true Christian is the one who is having a good mind, which was in CHRIST JESUS.

*"Let this mind be in you, which was also in CHRIST JESUS."*

Philippians 2:5

17. A true Christian is the one who is having the perfect love of GOD.

*"But whoso keepeth HIS Word, in him verily is the love of GOD*

*perfected: hereby know we that we are in HIM."*

I John 2:5

18. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD has testified that all our sins have been forgiven by CHRIST's vicarious atonement—substitutionary death on the cross at Calvary (Hebrews 10:15; Romans 8:16). So every true Christian should bear witness to this fact and prove this by his righteous conduct, practising the truth of GOD in his/her life (I Thessalonians 2:10; III John 12).

*"Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we also bear record; and ye know that our record is true."*

III John 12

19. A true Christian is the one who has got the experience to partake in the inheritance of the saints in the light.

*"Giving thanks unto the FATHER, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light."*

Colossians 1:12

20. A true Christian is the one who has been rescued by JESUS CHRIST from the dominion of darkness and brought into the kingdom of the SON or the kingdom of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST or the kingdom of heaven. He will certainly enter into the kingdom of GOD.

*"Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of HIS dear SON."*

Colossians 1:13

21. A true Christian is the one who has overcome the world.

*"...In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world."*

St. John 16:33

22. A true Christian is the one who has overcome Satan, the devil by the blood of the Lamb, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and by the word of his/her testimony; and he/she does not love his/her life to the death.

*"And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death."*

Revelation 12:11

Now, a true Christian fully believes the Gospel and the Word of GOD, the Holy Bible. He steadfastly prays to GOD, the heavenly FATHER with broken-heart and with tears and with humility, in the name of JESUS CHRIST, the Redeemer. He regularly reads the Holy Bible and meditates on it day and night to feed and nurture and grow in his spiritual life. He always remembers the love of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS great sufferings and death on the cross. He always walks in the Light of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He always lives by faith. He casts all his cares upon GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, for HE always cares for him. He shuns evil companions and he makes companions with GOD's people. He always resists sin and Satan, the devil. He seeks GOD for the newness of his life and for the newness of his spirit and for the spiritual fruits and spiritual gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT. He asks GOD for holiness and holy life. He requests GOD for the full anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT with different kinds of tongues. He begs GOD for all the benefits of the promises of GOD. He avoids temptations by the grace of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He always recognizes his own weaknesses, errors, faults, guilts, trespasses, backslidings, iniquities and sins; and confesses them to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for his full strength of salvation and wisdom and knowledge. The fear of the LORD is his treasure. He always keeps his mind upon GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He attends church regularly; and he obeys and submits himself to the ministers of GOD or the servants of GOD, as they keep watch over his soul. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### **The crucified Christian is the true Christian.**

*"I am crucified with CHRIST: ..."*

Galatians 2:20

To participate in the life of CHRIST, we must first be identified with HIM in HIS death.

*"For if we have been planted together in the likeness of HIS death, we shall be also in the likeness of HIS resurrection."*

Romans 6:5

Again, to participate in the life of CHRIST, we must always carry about in our body the death of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, so that the

life of JESUS may also be manifested in our body. This daily dying is for the release of the divine life in resurrection.

*"Always bearing about in the body the dying of the LORD JESUS, that the life also of JESUS might be made manifest in our body."*

II Corinthians 4:10

Those who are saved have eternal life. Those of us who have eternal life have died in the person of our sinless Substitute, JESUS CHRIST. In principle our crucifixion is an accomplished fact, in daily practice, and it constantly means 'death' to the **SELF-LIFE!** (Galatians 2:20) and 'death' to the flesh with its passions and its lusts.

*"And they that are CHRIST's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts."*

Galatians 5:24

"What does it mean as far as this life is concerned to be crucified with CHRIST?" It means **three** things:

- (i) A man on a cross is facing only towards one direction.
- (ii) He is not going back.
- (iii) He has no further plans for his own.

First, a crucified man is facing towards only one direction. Too many Christians are trying to face towards two directions at the same time. They are divided at heart. They want heaven, the kingdom of GOD, but they also are in love with the world for the pleasures of the flesh. They are like Lot's wife; they are running one way but the face turned towards another. If our heart is divided by loving the world, we become adulterers and adulteresses. The friendship of the world is enmity with GOD. A friend of the world is the enemy of GOD. One cannot be both a lover of GOD and a lover of the world.

*"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with GOD? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of GOD."*

James 4:4

Second, a crucified man is not coming back. The cross spells **FINISH** for him; he is not going to return to his old worldly life. Now, the crucified Christian is not going to return to his old sins and sinful

lusts. The cross spells **FINISH** for his sins and sinful lusts. The crucified Christian has died to sins and his true freedom is freedom from sin (Romans 6:8, 10-11, 18; I Peter 2:24).

Third, a crucified man has no plans of his own. He is finished with the vainglory of this worldly life. Its chains are all broken and its charms are all gone. Now, in the case of a crucified Christian, the world has been crucified to him and the crucified Christian to the world. This has taken place through CHRIST, who was crucified for us.

*"But GOD forbid that I should glory (But far be it from me to boast), save (except) in the cross of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world."*

Galatians 6:14

In the light of these three truths, would you say that you are truly "crucified"?

When men come to die with CHRIST on the cross, HE comes to live in them! See Galatians 2:20.

At the foot of the cross, as "one in CHRIST JESUS", we find the meaning of true equality! The poor peasant is as dear to GOD as the mighty prince.

*"...There is neither bond nor free, ... for ye are all one in CHRIST JESUS."*

Galatians 3:28

### 1.1 WHO IS A TRUE MAN ?

A man who has all these qualifications of a true Christian is a true man. A true Christian is a true man. A true Christian is a faithful man. A true man is a faithful man. He will abound with worldly and heavenly blessings of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...But a faithful man who can find?"*

Proverbs 20:6

*"A faithful man shall abound with blessings: ..."*

Proverbs 28:20

Now, a true Christian or a true man has sufferings in the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, but he should not be ashamed. He

should glorify GOD on this account. If he suffers patiently, he will also reign with HIM.

*"Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify GOD on this behalf."*

I Peter 4:16

*"If we suffer, we shall also reign with HIM: if we deny HIM, HE also will deny us."*

II Timothy 2:12

**The following are the additional qualifications required of a true man or a true Christian:**

1. A true man is a man who has been crowned with glory and honour of GOD.

*"What is man, that THOU art mindful of him? and the son of man, that THOU visitest (care for) him? For THOU hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour."*

Psalms 8:4-5

2. A true man is a man of uprightness.

*"Lo, this only have I found, that GOD hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions."*

Ecclesiastes 7:29

3. A true man is a man of godly offspring.

*"And did not HE make one? Yet had HE the residue of the Spirit. And wherefore one? That HE might seek a godly seed. ..."*

Malachi 2:15

4. A true man is a man who knows full well about his marvellous, wonderful and fearful creation by GOD.

*"I will praise THEE; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are THY works; and that my soul knoweth right well."*

Psalms 139:14

5. A true man is a man of understanding.

*"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding."*

Job 38:4

6. A true man is not brutish and foolish.

*"But they are altogether brutish and foolish: ..."*

Jeremiah 10:8

7. A true man is a man of righteousness, born of GOD with sinless perfection.

*"Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as HE is righteous. He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was manifested, that HE might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of GOD doth not commit sin; for HIS seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of GOD."*

I John 3:7-9

8. A true man is a man, holy and blameless in the sight of GOD in love.

*"According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love."*

Ephesians 1:4

9. A true man is a fully saved one through faith by grace of GOD.

*"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD: Not of works, lest any man should boast."*

Ephesians 2:8-9

10. A true man is a man of good works and he is a man, walking in good works.

*"For we are HIS workmanship, created in CHRIST JESUS unto good works, which GOD hath before ordained that we should walk in them."*

Ephesians 2:10

11. A true man is a child of the Most High GOD, to whom the Word of GOD comes. He is a sanctified man through HIS truth, the Word of GOD. A true man is not only a careful hearer of the Word of GOD but also a careful doer according to the Word of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



*"I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the Most High."*

Psalm 82:6

*"JESUS answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If HE called them gods, unto whom the Word of GOD came, and the Scripture cannot be broken."*

St. John 10:34-35

*"Sanctify them through THY truth: THY Word is truth."*

St. John 17:17

*"But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves."*

James 1:22

Now, man is GOD's foremost creature. He was created in the image of GOD with a perfectly happy, holy and righteous nature. He was created to worship, serve and glorify GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. So everyone must know GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and everyone must worship and serve and glorify GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and live a perfectly happy, holy and righteous life in HIM. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **2 . WHO IS JEHOVAH ?**

### **GOD said unto Moses,**

*"I AM THAT I AM: and HE said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. Go, and gather the elders of Israel together, and say unto them, The LORD GOD of your fathers, the GOD of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, appeared unto me, saying, I have surely visited you, and seen that which is done to you in Egypt."*

Exodus 3:14, 16

The '**I AM**' reveals GOD or the LORD GOD as the being who is self-existent, and who in HIMSELF, possesses eternal life and permanent existence. The LORD GOD is the eternal and everliving GOD. HE is the Almighty GOD. HE is **JEHOVAH**.

*"And GOD spake unto Moses, and said unto him, I am the LORD: And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of GOD Almighty, but by MY name JEHOVAH was I not*

*known to them."*

Exodus 6:2-3

*"Sing unto GOD, sing praises to HIS name: extol HIM that rideth upon the heavens by HIS name JAH, and rejoice before HIM."*

Psalm 68:4

*"That men may know that THOU, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art the Most High over all the earth."*

Psalm 83:18

*"But THOU, LORD, art Most High for evermore."*

Psalm 92:8

'YHWH' is the Hebrew word for 'JEHOVAH' or 'YAHWEH'. 'JAH' is a shortened Hebrew form for 'YHWH'.

From these verses, we can very well understand that the LORD is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, the GOD is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, the LORD GOD Almighty is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, and the Most High GOD is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH.

*"Trust ye in the LORD for ever: for in the LORD JEHOVAH is everlasting strength."*

Isaiah 26:4

*"Behold, GOD is my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid: for the LORD JEHOVAH is my strength and my song; HE also is become my salvation."*

Isaiah 12:2

*"Shall a man make gods unto himself, and they are no gods? Therefore, behold, I will this once cause them to know, I will cause them to know MINE hand and MY might; and they shall know that MY name is **The LORD**."*

Jeremiah 16:20-21

From these verses, anyone can understand that the LORD GOD or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH is the Mighty GOD and HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and HE is HIS people's salvation, strength and song.

*"And we know that the SON OF GOD is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know HIM that is true, and we are in HIM that is true, even in HIS SON JESUS CHRIST. This is*

*the true GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

*"And this is life eternal, that they might know THEE the only true GOD, and JESUS CHRIST, whom THOU hast sent."*

St. John 17:3

From these verses, anyone can understand that the SON OF GOD or the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Hence the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH.

*"Thus saith the LORD the Maker thereof, the LORD that formed it, to establish it; the LORD is HIS name."*

Jeremiah 33:2

From this verse, anyone can understand that the LORD or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH has made the earth, formed the earth and established the earth.

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

*"And the LORD GOD formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. And the rib, which the LORD GOD had taken from man, made HE a woman, and brought her unto the man."*

Genesis 2:7, 22

From these verses, anyone can understand that the LORD GOD or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH has created the heaven and the earth and the mankind. The entire history about HIS creations may be read in Genesis Chapters 1 and 2.

*"But to us there is but one GOD, the FATHER, of whom are all things, and we in HIM; and one LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom are all things, and we by HIM."*

I Corinthians 8:6

From this verse, anyone can understand that GOD the FATHER or the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, has created all things including mankind.

Thus the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH and the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

Hence, JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

Again, from the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures, we clearly understand that JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD who delivered and saved Israel by HIS great power, from the hands of the Egyptians by dividing the waters of the Red sea, through HIS servant Moses. Israelites went through the Red sea on dry ground, with a wall of water on their right and on their left. But, the water flowed back and covered the entire Egyptian army of Pharaoh that had followed the Israelites into the Red sea. The Israel saw the Egyptians lying dead on the shore. The people of Israel feared the LORD and put their trust in HIM and in Moses HIS servant. See Exodus Chapter 14. In the name of JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has done this great and terrible act to redeem and save HIS people. This fact is very clearly asserted in the following verses.

*"Moreover, brethren, I would not (do not want) that ye should be ignorant (unaware), how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 10:1-4

Hence, all Jews (Israelites) and others should believe that JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**Now, some related words of JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH and their meanings are furnished below:**

JEHOVAH-ELOHIM

= The Self-existent Creator (Genesis 1:1).

JEHOVAH-JIREH	=	The LORD will provide or see (Genesis 22:14).
JEHOVAH-ADONAI	=	The LORD our Sovereign Master (Exodus 15:17).
JEHOVAH-EL SHADDAY	=	The LORD Almighty (Genesis 17:1).
JEHOVAH-RAPHA	=	The LORD is the Healer (Exodus 15:26).
JEHOVAH-MEKADDISHKEM	=	The LORD our Sanctifier (Exodus 31:13).
JEHOVAH-NISSI	=	The LORD is my Banner (Exodus 17:15).
JEHOVAH-SABAOOTH	=	The LORD of Hosts (I Samuel 1:3).
JEHOVAH-SHALOM	=	The LORD is Peace (Judges 6:24).
JEHOVAH-ELYOWN	=	The LORD Most High (Psalm 83:18).
JEHOVAH-TSIDKENU	=	The LORD our Righteousness (Jeremiah 23:6).
JEHOVAH-HOSEENU	=	The LORD our Maker (Psalm 95:6).
JEHOVAH-SHAMMAH	=	The LORD is There (Ezekiel 48:35).
JEHOVAH-RAAH OR ROHI	=	The LORD my Shepherd (Psalm 23:1).
JEHOVAH-ELOHEENU	=	The LORD our GOD (Psalm 99:5, 8, 9).
JEHOVAH-ELOHEKA	=	The LORD thy GOD (Exodus 20:2).
JEHOVAH-ELOHAY	=	The LORD my GOD (Zechariah 14:5).

JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, the LORD is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and HE is the fulfilment of the covenant and redemptive names. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 2.1 WHO IS MESSIAH ?

*“He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the MESSIAS (the MESSIAH), which is, being interpreted, the CHRIST.”*

St. John 1:41

*“The woman saith unto HIM, I know that MESSIAS (MESSIAH) cometh, which is called CHRIST: when HE is come, HE will tell us all things. JESUS saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am HE. And many more believed because of HIS own word; And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for*

*we have heard HIM ourselves, and know that this is indeed the CHRIST, the Saviour of the world."*

St. John 4:25-26, 41-42

'The MESSIAH or MESSIAS' means 'the CHRIST'. 'The MESSIAH' or 'the CHRIST' means 'the Anointed One'. MESSIAH is the Hebrew word. CHRISTOS is the Greek word. CHRIST is derived from the Greek word CHRISTOS. Another name for CHRIST is JESUS. JESUS CHRIST is the title most often used of the Saviour.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST openly said to a Samaritan woman that HE who spoke to her was MESSIAH, the CHRIST. Because of HIS Words, many more believed HIM. They believed that HE really is the Saviour of the world.

Daniel explained the crucifixion of MESSIAH, the CHRIST. HE was crucified not for HIMSELF but for others, the sinners of the whole world.

*"And after threescore and two weeks shall MESSIAH be cut off, but not for HIMSELF: ..."*

Daniel 9:26

'Be cut off' means 'Suffer the death penalty'.

Now, Moses explained MESSIAH as a Prophet. He said to the Israelites,

*"The LORD thy GOD will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto HIM ye shall hearken."*

Deuteronomy 18:15

Therefore, everyone should heed what our LORD GOD says as a Prophet in the Scriptures. The LORD has said unto Moses,

*"I will raise them up a PROPHET from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put MY Words in HIS mouth; and HE shall speak unto them all that I shall command HIM. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto MY Words which HE shall speak in MY name, I will require it of him."*

Deuteronomy 18:18-19

'Like unto thee' means 'like unto Moses'. How was Moses? Moses was faithful in all HIS house (Hebrews 3:2). He was full of

compassion and love for his people, the Israelites (Numbers 27:15-17). He was a revealer of GOD's commandments, statutes and ordinances (Leviticus 26:46; II Chronicles 33:8). He was a mediator of the old covenant (Deuteronomy 29:1). He was a leader and commander for the people of Israel (Exodus 14:13-16). He was a powerful intercessor for his people (Deuteronomy 9:18-20). He knew GOD face to face (Deuteronomy 34:10). GOD's divine glory reflected on his face (Exodus 34:29-30). He was a mediator between GOD and men, the Israelites (Deuteronomy 18:16). He was a mighty prophet in word and deed before the Israelites (Deuteronomy 18:15). The Law was given to Israelites through Moses (St. John 1:17).

**Now, how was our LORD JESUS CHRIST ?** HE was also faithful in all HIS house (Hebrews 3:2). HE was full of compassion and love for all people (St. Matthew 9:36). HE was the great revealer of GOD's Will and purpose (St. Matthew 7:21-23). HE was the Mediator of the new covenant (Hebrews 8:6-8). HE was the great leader and commander for the people (Isaiah 55:4). HE was also the King (St. John 18:37). HE was the most powerful intercessor for the people (St. Luke 22:44; 23:34). HE (GOD the SON) spoke with GOD the FATHER face to face (St. Luke 23:34). Now, GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON are the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. GOD's divine glory reflected on HIS divine face (St. Matthew 17:1-8). HE was the divine Mediator between GOD and mankind (I Timothy 2:5). HE was the Mighty Prophet in word and deed before all the people (St. Luke 24:19). Grace and truth came to all people by HIM (St. John 1:17).

Hence, all Jews (Israelites) and others (the Gentiles) should believe that the promised Prophet, the MESSIAH is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

As a Prophet, our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the MESSIAH declared the most complete revelation of GOD, the FATHER.

*"No man hath seen GOD at any time; the only begotten SON, which is in the bosom of the FATHER, HE hath declared HIM."*

St. John 1:18

Again, our LORD JESUS, the MESSIAH or the CHRIST is our anointed Prophet, our anointed High Priest and our anointed King.

*"But CHRIST being come an High Priest of good things to come, ..."*

Hebrews 9:11

*"Pilate therefore said unto HIM, Art THOU a king then? JESUS answered, Thou sayest that I am a King. ..."*

St. John 18:37

As an anointed High Priest, our LORD JESUS CHRIST offered the ultimate sacrifice, the sacrifice of HIMSELF. See Hebrews 9:14. So everyone should come in prayer to HIM with great humility. As an anointed King, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is not only in ultimate control now, but HE will also reign a thousand years in HIS own Kingdom on earth. See St. Matthew 28:18; Revelation 20:1-6. So everyone should serve HIM with fear and trembling, as HE is the King for ever and ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"The LORD is King for ever and ever: ..."*

Psalms 10:16

## 2.2 THE HOLY TRINITY

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is called by three names, viz., GOD the FATHER; GOD the SON; and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. GOD the FATHER came into this world as Saviour with the name JESUS CHRIST to save sinners of the world.

*"...THOU art the CHRIST, the SON of the living GOD."*

St. Matthew 16:16

Thus, GOD the FATHER came into this world as the SON. HE HIMSELF is the GOD the SON. HE suffered terribly for sinners and died on the cross and was buried. JESUS CHRIST resurrected HIMSELF on the third day and appeared alive to many for forty days. On the 40th day after HIS resurrection, JESUS CHRIST went up to heaven before the eyes of HIS disciples.

After our LORD JESUS CHRIST had gone up to heaven, HE sent the HOLY SPIRIT, the holy power or the holy strength to live a holy life, into the world on the day of Pentecost, the 50th day of HIS resurrection, as HE had promised HIS disciples. Thus, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF came into this world as the HOLY SPIRIT. HE HIMSELF is the GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT. Thus the FATHER, the SON, and the HOLY



SPIRIT are together and ONE. So the LORD JESUS CHRIST is called the '**GOD of the Holy Trinity**'. Therefore, it is a great truth that the GOD who is called by the names the FATHER, the SON and the HOLY SPIRIT is ONE GOD only.

It is said in the Holy Bible,

*"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace."*

Isaiah 9:6

From the above verse, anyone can understand that the mighty and wonderful GOD, the SON is the everlasting FATHER; and the GOD, the everlasting FATHER is the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who came into this world as a child to save and redeem sinners from their sins.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in the world, HE said with HIS most holy mouth,

*"...He that hath seen ME hath seen the FATHER; ..."*

St. John 14:9

*"I and MY FATHER are one."*

St. John 10:30

It is also said in the Holy Bible,

*"But to us there is but one GOD, the FATHER, of whom are all things, and we in HIM; and one LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom are all things, and we by HIM."*

I Corinthians 8:6

*"Now the LORD is that (the) Spirit: and where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is liberty."*

II Corinthians 3:17

Moreover GOD, the FATHER, the ONLY TRUE GOD is the HOLY SPIRIT. HE is without form and is invisible. GOD, the SON or the LORD JESUS CHRIST took the human form; GOD, the SON or the LORD JESUS CHRIST was visible. GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT has no form and is invisible. The ONLY TRUE GOD, the FATHER who is the HOLY SPIRIT HIMSELF is GOD, the SON who is with form; and GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT who is without form. GOD the FATHER, the ONLY TRUE GOD works as Saviour to save sinners from their sins, with the name GOD,

the SON and SAVIOUR; and with the name the HOLY SPIRIT, HE works to strengthen people to live a holy life. The two immensely glorious works of GOD, the FATHER are the work of salvation and the work of strengthening to live a holy life. These two functions are performed by the ONLY TRUE GOD, GOD the FATHER HIMSELF. Therefore, there is no reason to have any doubt over the fact that GOD is the ONE and the ONLY ONE who involves HIMSELF in various activities.

We know that the one and only sun gives warmth and light. Like the one and the same sun that gives warmth and light, the ONE AND ONLY GOD, the FATHER performs the work of salvation and the work of strengthening people to live a holy life. The work of salvation is being done in the most holy name of JESUS CHRIST and the work of strengthening is being done in the most holy name of the HOLY SPIRIT. The ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, GOD the FATHER HIMSELF is doing these two activities.

Therefore, there is no reason for anyone to have a doubt over the fact that GOD is ONLY ONE and salvation and strengthening people to live a holy life are HIS two glorious works. Salvation means saving of people's souls from sins and their consequences.

The Christian GOD is **the Holy Trinity GOD**—the unity of GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT as ONE GOD. The Christian GOD is **the Holy Triune GOD**—three functional Persons, GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in one GODHEAD (I John 5:7). Mathematically saying, **one into one into one = one** ( $1 \times 1 \times 1 = 1$ ). There is no change in the ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. In LORD JESUS CHRIST resides GOD the FATHER and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT.

The facts given above are divine secrets. None but the true servants of GOD can understand them. Anyone who reads the Holy Bible literally cannot understand the divine secrets. Though the Holy Scripture of the LORD has been written literally, it contains spiritual meanings and divine meanings. Only the true spiritual men can understand its exact meaning. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 2.3 THE WAY OF CHRIST

*"For even CHRIST pleased not HIMSELF; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached THEE fell on ME."*

Romans 15:3

*"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of JESUS, By a new and living way, which HE hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, HIS flesh."*

Hebrews 10:19-20

The way of CHRIST is the only way of the ONLY GOD, which shows the way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The way of CHRIST is the exceedingly glorious way prepared by JESUS CHRIST, by tearing HIS own exceedingly holy flesh, by shedding HIS exceedingly holy blood and by sacrificing HIS exceedingly glorious life on the cross. 'Way' means 'route'. Only the way of CHRIST is the way of the TRUE GOD. This is the way of truth; this is the way of justice; this is the way of wisdom; this is the way of knowledge; this is the way of holiness; this is the way of righteousness; this is the new way of life; this is the living way; this is the way to heaven; this is the good way or good route. This is the only reliable way. The end of this way is the kingdom of heaven or the heavenly world or the kingdom of GOD.

In the way of CHRIST, there are many tribulations, many sufferings, many hardships, many troubles, etc. To enter into the kingdom of GOD, every Christian should go through such tribulations, sufferings, hardships, troubles, etc.

*"Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 14:22

Only the people who obtain true salvation by GOD, and keep the teachings of JESUS CHRIST and live as HIS disciples and those who obtain the HOLY SPIRIT and who are guided by the HOLY SPIRIT are the people of the way of CHRIST. Those who walk in the way of CHRIST are the true Christians. The disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST are the true Christians. They have the Spirit of CHRIST, the HOLY SPIRIT.

These people are the saints. They are the holy and righteous people. They are worthy of inheriting the kingdom of GOD, the kingdom of justice. They are the only people who enter into heaven. They are the only people who enter into the heavenly world.

### 3 . END-TIME

#### 3.1 THE SECRET COMING

The holy children of JESUS CHRIST, the saved ones or the saints who are the believers, are waiting for the Secret Coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. The living saints are gladly waiting in the world for the secret coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*“For our conversation (citizenship) is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto HIS glorious body, according to the working whereby HE is able even to subdue all things unto HIMSELF.”*

Philippians 3:20-21

The saints who are dead, are waiting in paradise, the third heaven, where their souls rest, for the secret coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The martyred saints are also waiting in paradise for the secret coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. But, the martyrs or the martyred saints are crying out for the coming of the LORD with a loud voice (Revelation 6:9-11).

There are **two things**, which are beyond human thinking and expectation. (i) No man knows when he will meet his death. (ii) No man knows when JESUS CHRIST will come. So, all the people of the world should keep themselves ready for the **secret coming** of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

In HIS Secret Coming, the souls of all saints or the souls of the saved who slept in CHRIST and rest in paradise will be given glorious immortal bodies and they will be caught up by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST secretly. Immediately after this most glorious event, the living saints or the holy church of saints or the saved will also be given glorious immortal bodies and they will also be caught up to meet our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST secretly. No other people in this

world will know or see this most glorious act of GOD. No unsaved or unrighteous or backslider or sinner in this world will know or see this most glorious act of GOD. And this will be a pitiful day for the unsaved and for the unrighteous and for all backsliders.

### 3.2 TWO RESURRECTIONS

No one knows when our LORD JESUS CHRIST will come to gather HIS holy church of saints. Our LORD will come secretly and suddenly on an unexpected day and at an unexpected time, and at an unexpected hour, and at an unexpected minute, and at an unexpected second in the mid-sky (St. Matthew 25:13). At that moment, the last trumpet of GOD will be blown (I Corinthians 15:52).

Now, at that moment, the infinite power of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST that enables HIM to subdue all things to HIMSELF (Philippians 3:21), will instantaneously reach the spots on the earth where the bodies of the saints were buried and consumed by earth or cremated and consumed by earth. At once the tombs (graves) of all the saints who slept in CHRIST and rest in Paradise will be opened (Ezekiel 37:13) by HIS infinite power and HIS infinite power will immediately enter into their tombs and their vile and earthly bodies would be redeemed (Romans 8:23) and changed into divine and incorruptible bodies like that of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 15:51-53). And at that moment, the infinite power of HIS resurrection (Philippians 3:10), the resurrected Life of the LORD or the SPIRIT of the LORD will mightily enter into their divine and incorruptible redeemed bodies (Ezekiel 37:14) and they will be with HIS ever living and eternal life. And at that moment, the souls of all saints who slept in CHRIST and rest in Paradise will enter into their divine and incorruptible bodies and immediately, the LORD will bring them up from their tombs or graves (Ezekiel 37:13). And at that moment, the vile and earthly bodies of all saints in earth would also be changed and transformed and redeemed into divine and incorruptible and immortal bodies by the infinite power of GOD (Philippians 3:21; I Corinthians 15:51-53). This is the **first resurrection** of saints who are in CHRIST. Those who have part in the first resurrection are the blessed and the holy and the righteous (Revelation 20:6). No sinner will rise at this first

resurrection. No unsaved or unrighteous will rise at this first resurrection. No backslider will rise at this first resurrection.

*“And ye shall know that I am the LORD, when I have opened your graves, O MY people, and brought you up out of your graves, And shall put MY SPIRIT in you, and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the LORD have spoken it, and performed it, saith the LORD.”*

Ezekiel 37:13-14

And at that moment, all the redeemed saints (the resurrected saints and the transformed saints) will be caught up into the clouds to meet the LORD in the air (mid-sky) by the infinite power of GOD (I Thessalonians 4:14-17). This exceedingly glorious thing will happen in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet of GOD (I Corinthians 15:51-53). This redemption of the bodies of all saints is called the **first resurrection** (Revelation 20:6). **This is one of the greatest mysteries of GOD.** The glorious day of the **Secret Coming** of CHRIST will be the glorious **day of redemption** of the souls of all saints (Ephesians 4:30).

The **second resurrection** will be of the unsaved and of the unrighteous and of the backsliders and of the sinners. The righteous or the saved will resurrect to everlasting life and everlasting joy; and the unrighteous or the unsaved or the backsliders or the sinners will resurrect to shame and everlasting contempt. The second resurrection is a resurrection to death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. These two resurrections will be separated by the one-thousand-year blessed reign of CHRIST, the Millennium.

*“Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, ...”*

Revelation 20:6

*“And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, ...”*

Daniel 12:2

Immediately after the resurrection of the bodies of the saints who died in CHRIST, the bodies of the living saints will also be changed into exceedingly glorious bodies like that of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. **The living saints will not experience death and the grave.** At once, they will be caught up in the clouds by the power of the LORD

together with the saints already resurrected to meet the LORD in the air. And thus they will always be with the LORD. The sinners living in the world at that time will not see or know this glorious act of GOD. They will be left forsaken in the world.

*“For if we believe that JESUS died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in JESUS will GOD bring with HIM. For this we say unto you by the Word of the LORD, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the LORD shall not prevent (precede) them which are asleep (dead). For the LORD HIMSELF shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump (trumpet) of GOD: and the dead in CHRIST shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the LORD in the air: and so shall we ever (always) be with the LORD.”*

I Thessalonians 4:14-17

*“Who (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned (made) like unto HIS glorious body, according to the working whereby HE is able even to subdue all things unto HIMSELF.”*

Philippians 3:21

These are the exceedingly glorious, never-changing, and true events going to happen in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet of GOD. The living sinners or the unsaved or the unrighteous or the backsliders will not see the LORD in the mid-sky; they will not hear the great shout of GOD; they will not hear the voice of HIS archangel; and they will not hear the great sound of GOD's trumpet. Only the saints in **Paradise** will hear the great shout of GOD, the voice of HIS archangel and the great sound of GOD's trumpet, but the saints in earth will hear only the great sound of GOD's trumpet. **This is one of the greatest mysteries of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.”*

I Corinthians 15:51-53

Then the saints, the children of GOD will be with our LORD JESUS CHRIST for seven years in a heavenly place, specially prepared by the LORD for them to rest before the Millennium. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has already gone to prepare that place. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE has said,

*"...I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto MYSELF; that where I am, there ye may be also."*

St. John 14:2-3

From the following verses of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, anyone can clearly understand, during HIS coming, one part of the world will be day and another part of the world will be night. Usually, we are working in the field during daytime and we are going to bed during nighttime. Now, the sudden and secret coming of our LORD will separate HIS people and the sinners.

*"But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN be. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your LORD doth come. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the SON OF MAN cometh."*

St. Matthew 24:37-42, 44

*"I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left."*

St. Luke 17:34

When the holy church of the LORD is caught up in the clouds by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, a large number of HIS people will disappear all over the world suddenly in a day, in a minute and in a second. Some of HIS people may be sleeping after working, or still working; whatever they have been doing, they will disappear suddenly. Many people belonging to different classes of society and many other people will suddenly disappear. The world will sense a great shock and there will be a great bustle and excitement throughout the world. The world will not understand this event at once. But the bitter truth



that they have been miserably left behind will dawn upon them and they will find themselves drowned in great wretchedness and misery.

## 4 . THE GREAT TRIBULATION

While the saints of the glorious and holy church of GOD stay with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST safe and happy, in the place prepared by the LORD for HIS saints; the sinners left behind in the world will be exposed for seven years to a Great Tribulation, never known to man since the creation of the world. These years will be filled with wrath, judgment, trouble, suffering, desolation, indignation and sorrow. During the Great Tribulation, GOD will pour out HIS terrible wrath on mankind. **The church will not go through the Great Tribulation, the terrible time of GOD's wrath** (St. John 14:18; I Thessalonians 5:9; 4:13-18; Romans 5:9; Revelation 3:10; Titus 2:13; Philipians 3:20-21). The Great Tribulation of seven years will be divided into two halves; the first half will be of the two prophets, Enoch and Elias; and the second half will be of the antichrist or false messiah.

*“For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.”*

St. Matthew 24:21

### 4.1 TWO WITNESSES

During the first half of the seven-year Great Tribulation period, GOD's two witnesses, viz., Enoch and Elias (Elijah), the two prophets will prophecy and preach in Israel for 1,260 days (three-and-a-half years, based on prophetic years of 360 days each), clothed in sackcloth. Enoch was the seventh from Adam. He was a prophet of GOD. He walked with GOD and HE took him alive. He went to heaven without dying (Genesis 5:24). He prophesied about our LORD's coming with HIS saints to execute judgment on all and to convict all ungodly sinners (Jude 14, 15). Elias (Elijah) was a mighty prophet of GOD. GOD took him alive. He also went to heaven without dying (II Kings 2:11). His prophecies emphasized the great loyalty to GOD required of GOD's people (I Kings 17:22; II Kings 1-2). Along with Moses, he appeared with JESUS on the Mount of Transfiguration (St. Matthew 17:3).

These two witnesses of GOD will perform great and terrible miracles. They will be protected from harm for three-and-a-half years. Their message will reveal that JESUS is the Lamb of GOD or SAVIOUR and JESUS is the Only King or the Only Ruler. Their miracles will show that our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Only King is coming again to set up HIS kingdom. Therefore, all people must mourn, cry, confess and repent to our LORD JESUS CHRIST to set up HIS kingdom. Now, their miraculous powers will be:

*"And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will. "*

Revelation 11:5-6

At the end of the three-and-a-half years of their prophecy and preaching, the two witnesses will finally be killed in the great city, Jerusalem. People will not allow their dead bodies to be buried, because they (the unbelievers) had hated the plagues and the message of the two prophets. Their dead bodies will be seen in the street of the great city for three-and-a-half days. After three-and-a-half days, the spirit of life from GOD or the breath of life from GOD will enter into them, and they will stand on their feet. Their enemies will react in great fear and terror, since the resurrection of these two witnesses will be incontrovertible proof that their message was true and that JESUS is GOD and MESSIAH. Then they will hear a loud voice from heaven saying to them, "COME UP HITHER". And they will go up to heaven in a cloud, while their enemies will be looking on. At that very hour, there will be a great earthquake, and a tenth of the city will collapse. Seven thousand people will be killed in the earthquake. The rest will be terrified and they will give glory to the GOD of heaven. See Revelation 11:1-13.

#### 4.2 ANTICHRIST

Of these seven years of Great Tribulation, the last half of three-and-a-half years will be a period of terrible tyranny of the antichrist or false messiah or beast who will rule with the power of Satan, the devil. He will show utter disregard for any god or the desire of the

Jewish women for the MESSIAH or the CHRIST, but will exalt and magnify himself above them all and speak against the GOD of gods, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Daniel 11:36-37). He will be a cruel sinner filled with all evils and all uncleanness. He will exalt himself in every way and sit in the temple like GOD. He will show and declare himself GOD. He will perform false wonders and false signs with the evil power and works of Satan. See Revelation 13.

*"...And that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called GOD, or that is worshipped; so that he as GOD sitteth in the temple of GOD, shewing himself that he is GOD. Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved."*

II Thessalonians 2:3-4, 9-10

The man of sin is the antichrist or false messiah. The son of perdition is also the antichrist or false messiah. He is described as the beast or the first beast (Revelation 13:1-10).

The tyranny of antichrist will be so terrible that only those who received the mark of antichrist or the number of his name on their forehead or on their right hand will be able to buy or sell. But the wise people of GOD, certain Jews or Israelites won't submit themselves to antichrist and they won't receive the mark of his name or the number of his name. They will not be afraid of him. They will not obey and worship him. They will die as martyrs for JESUS CHRIST, in the most holy name of JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. And immediately after their death, the vile and earthly bodies of the wise will be changed by the infinite power of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST into divine and incorruptible bodies like that of JESUS CHRIST and they will be caught up in the place prepared by the LORD for HIS saints to rest, for the period of Great Tribulation.

*"And he (the false prophet) had power to give life unto the image of the beast (antichrist), that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or*

*sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his (antichrist's) name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his (antichrist's) number is Six hundred threescore and six (666)."*

Revelation 13:15-18

The false prophet is described as another beast or the second beast (Revelation 13:11-17). The second beast is also a man. He is also a man of sin. He is the spirit of perdition.

The beast is the antichrist, the false messiah. The power and authority of the beast and the false prophet will come from Satan, the devil himself. Satan, the devil has his own 'false trinity'. Satan, the devil acts as the father of all evils and lies, the antichrist will act as his own son, and the false prophet will act as his own evil spirit.

Satan, the devil will send his son, antichrist to accomplish his evil purpose and he will also send his evil spirit, the false prophet to carry out the programme of the antichrist.

The number of the beast is **666**, the number of a man or the number of the antichrist. This number of the man or the beast or the antichrist will be arrived at only by calculation. A mind with wisdom will be very essential to calculate this number, **666**. Knowing Roman Numerals will be very useful in the calculation of **666**, the number of the beast or the number of the man or the number of the antichrist. This number **666** of the antichrist or the beast must be calculated by adding up of numbers (by addition). Some Roman Numerals and their Arabic Numerals are given below:

I = 1; II = 2; III = 3; IV = 4; V = 5; IX = 9; X = 10; L = 50; C = 100; D = 500; M = 1000. In Roman Numerals, A, B, E, F, G, H, J, K, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, W, Y and Z have no numerical value, i.e., they have zero value.

Those who live in their sins, evils, uncleanness and abominations will not strengthen themselves. All hands will be exhausted and all knees would falter like water. Great affliction will engulf them. All faces will be ashamed. All heads will be shaven. People will give up the works of beautifying themselves. They will wear the dress of

sorrow. They will find themselves in great distress. Because of their great distress, they would seek death, but death would elude them. In their misery, they would cast their silver into streets. Their gold would be their dislike. They will cast their jewels, precious things and costly dresses and money into streets. They would seek peace by doing these things, but they will not obtain peace. They will suffer distress after distress, misery after misery, grief after grief, trouble after trouble, languishing after languishing and pains after pains. The hearts of people will melt and be exhausted. People will receive terror after terror, panic after panic and grievous message after grievous message.

*“And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.”*

Revelation 9:6

*“All hands shall be feeble, and all knees shall be weak as water. They shall also gird themselves with sackcloth, and horror shall cover them; and shame shall be upon all faces, and baldness upon all their heads. They shall cast their silver in the streets, and their gold shall be removed: their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them in the day of the wrath of the LORD: they shall not satisfy their souls, neither fill their bowels (stomachs): because it is the stumblingblock of their iniquity. Destruction cometh; and they shall seek peace, and there shall be none. Mischief (disaster) shall come upon mischief, and rumour shall be upon rumour; then shall they seek a vision of the prophet; but the law shall perish from the priest, and counsel from the ancients (elders). The king shall mourn, and the prince shall be clothed with desolation, and the hands of the people of the land shall be troubled: I will do unto them after their way (according to their way), and according to their deserts (what they desire) will I judge them; and they shall know that I am the LORD.”*

Ezekiel 7:17-19, 25-27

Neither gold and silver nor pearls and precious metals and money can save anyone but our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone can save in crisis. So, our GOD severely warns everyone who puts his/her trust and desire in accumulating gold and silver and money, pearls and precious metals, jewels and costly dresses and in decorating anyone's body with such precious things.

*“Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them*

*in the day of the LORD's wrath; but the whole land shall be devoured by the fire of HIS jealousy: for HE shall make even a speedy riddance of all them that dwell in the land."*

Zephaniah 1:18

The people who once despised the glorious Words of GOD and GOD's servants will now anxiously seek them. There will be no true servants of GOD, because they would have been gathered by the LORD to be with HIM in HIS secret coming. GOD's Words, GOD's counsel, GOD's doctrines and GOD's teachings won't be available to them.

*"Behold, the days come, saith the LORD GOD, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the Words of the LORD: And they shall wander from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east, they shall run to and fro to seek the Word of the LORD, and shall not find it."*

Amos 8:11-12

The rulers will be in great grief. The ministers will be in great grief. The great men will be in panic. The hands of all people will become weary. Panic, terror and distress will go on increasing. At last, the nature of men will totally change. People will become brutally violent and they will murder each other in terrible rage. Love and affection will totally disappear from the world. People will become cruel murderers and roam around in terrible rage, mindless of what they do. Terrible events, great misery, distress, agony, trouble and afflictions never known in the world will fall upon them all over the world. Great massacre, great dangers, great destructions, terrible earthquakes, terrible volcanic eruptions, great agonies, great famines and pestilences will occur all over the world. People will rise against people. Nation will rise against nation. There will be devastating wars. This is the period of great tribulation, a period of great horror. It is GOD's will that no one should suffer the great tribulation and great horror, and so the LORD warns the world by revealing all these facts and secrets in advance. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD warns the people of the world clearly and certainly through this precious book, to escape this great misery.

Finally, the antichrist and the false prophet will be cast alive into eternal hell-fire and they will become the first inhabitants of hell

(Revelation 19:20). The antichrist's henchmen and followers will also be thrown into eternal hell-fire.

## 5 . MILLENNIUM (1000 YEARS) RULE

When the seven years of great tribulation have passed, the angel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will capture Satan. Satan, the devil will be bound with a great chain and cast into the bottomless pit or abyss, for a thousand years so that he cannot fool the nations any more. A thousand years is long enough to show GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's complete authority over Satan, the devil (St. Matthew 28:18).

*“And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: ...”*

Revelation 20:2-3

During the **Millennial reign** of CHRIST, HIS holy temple (Habakkuk 2:20) or HIS capital building, which is the Millennial temple will be established in Jerusalem or Zion. The establishment of the literal, earthly, visible and civil kingdom of heaven on earth will be on the top of the mountains and it will be exalted above the hills and all nations will flow unto it (Isaiah 2:2; Micah 4:1). The temple will be glorified and the supremacy of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will have been acknowledged (Psalm 48:2; 50:2) and established.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the very brightly burning and the very brightly shining Sun of Righteousness (Malachi 4:2; St. Luke 1:78; St. Matthew 4:16; St. John 8:12). HIS divine gracious presence of HIS divine face (Numbers 6:25), is always shining as the shining sun from HIS heavenly Zion, the New Jerusalem; and in principle, HIS divine gracious presence of HIS divine face has also been shining from the earthly Zion or Jerusalem before the creation of the world. The shining forth of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the great KING out of Zion or Jerusalem always gives us great joy and happiness. Glory be to GOD!

*“Out of Zion, the perfection of beauty, GOD hath shined.”*

Psalm 50:2

*"Beautiful for situation, the joy of the whole earth, is mount Zion, on the sides of the north, the city of the great KING."*

Psalm 48:2

Now, the earthly Zion or Jerusalem is the centre of the whole world. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has selected this earthly Jerusalem as HIS head-quarters of HIS Millennial reign, where HE had very beautifully walked on HIS own feet and preached the Gospel of HIS salvation and peace and done many wonders among the people (Isaiah 52:7). During this reign, the earthly Jerusalem would be the capital city of the whole world. Further, during this reign, the New Jerusalem in heaven would be HIS heavenly home.

Our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—the GOD of gods, the ONE Who has All-Power, would be sitting upon a very magnificent throne, high and honoured and lifted up (Isaiah 6:1) and HE would be showing HIS divine shining to the whole world that HE is the blessed and Only Potentate (Only Ruler), the KING of kings and LORD of lords (I Timothy 6:15); and HE would be reigning the whole world for a period of thousand years sacredly, righteously, peacefully, healthily, prosperously, joyously and gloriously. There would be no war or no riot or no unruliness or no rebellion or no revolt or no mutiny in anywhere. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The eyes of HIS people can see HIM, as HE is sitting very near to them. All the spiritual and worldly blessings required for us are coming from HIM from HIS heavenly Jerusalem, the New Jerusalem through the worldly Jerusalem. But, they would be continuously given from HIM abundantly. During HIS 1000 years rule, there would be no famine or no scarcity or no shortage of anything. Glory be to GOD!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the MESSIAH will come to this world from heaven with HIS glorious and holy church of saints. The saints, the children of GOD will rule the earth with CHRIST as HIS priests for a thousand years. This Millennial reign will be an earthly reign for all believers or saints. The Old Testament saints (Isaiah 26:19; Daniel 12:2), the apostles and the church (St. Matthew 19:27-28; I Thessalonians 4:16-17) and the Tribulation saints (Revelation 20:4) will rule the earth with CHRIST for a thousand years. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will provide the world through HIS saints with a reign of exceeding peace, exceeding righteousness, exceeding justice and



exceeding love. Jerusalem will be the headquarters of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's **Millennial kingdom**. The **glorious palace** of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the blessed and Only Ruler, the KING of kings and LORD of lords would have been established in Jerusalem. Sitting on HIS exceedingly glorious throne in Jerusalem, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will rule over the world as the blessed Ruler, KING of kings, LORD of lords and the Almighty GOD. The saints, HIS children will rule over the world gloriously with the LORD. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the MESSIAH will be immensely pleased to see HIS children, rule and judge the entire world.

*"Then answered Peter and said unto HIM, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed THEE; what shall we have therefore? And JESUS said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed ME, in the regeneration when the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall sit in the throne of HIS glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."*

St. Matthew 19:27-28

*"Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?"*

I Corinthians 6:2

*"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of JESUS, and for the Word of GOD, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with CHRIST a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of GOD and of CHRIST, and shall reign with HIM a thousand years."*

Revelation 20:4-6

'The second death' means 'Hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur'.

During the thousand years rule, the sinners who live in this world will serve the saints as keepers of flocks and farm workers and ploughmen. During that period, the wolf and the lamb will live

together. The leopard will lie down with the young goat. The calf and the young lion and the yearling will be together. A little child will lead them. The cow will graze with the bear. Their young ones will lie down together. The lion will eat straw and grass like the bullocks. Dust will be the food for the snake. Snakes will do no harm to man. Nothing will hurt or destroy. The nursing child will play on the hole of the cobra and the weaned child will put his hand in the viper's den. They will neither hurt nor destroy on all HIS holy mountain. The earth will be filled with the knowledge of the glory of our LORD as the waters cover the sea.

*"The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' (viper's) den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all MY holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea."*

Isaiah 11:6-9

'Feed' means 'graze'. 'Asp' means 'cobra'.

*"And in that day will I make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground: and I will break the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and will make them to lie down safely."*

Hosea 2:18

*"And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vinedressers. But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: men shall call you the Ministers of our GOD: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves. For your shame ye shall have double; and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be unto them."*

Isaiah 61:5-7

'Ministers' means 'Servants'. 'Double' means 'double honour'.

*"The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all MY holy mountain, saith the LORD."*

Isaiah 65:25

'Bullock' means 'ox'. 'Meat' means 'food'.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the MESSIAH will rule the entire world in righteousness and peace. HIS peace will extend even to the animal kingdom. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most peaceful and righteous Millennial kingdom will extend to the whole world for a thousand years. HE will abolish war and battle from the earth; and HE will break all weapons of war from the earth during HIS Millennial kingdom.

Like the angels of heaven, the people of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will fly with the power of their glorious bodies to any place they like. Their glorious eyes will see our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the LORD of lords, and the KING of kings, sitting in Jerusalem from any corner of the earth. Nobody can do any harm to them. They are the most blessed people. No other people in the world can be like the people of the LORD. They are the real children of GOD, since they are children of the resurrection. They can no longer die, since they are like the angels.

*"Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of GOD, being the children of the resurrection."*

St. Luke 20:36

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gives this thousand years of joy and peace in the world to HIS children, just to fulfil the purpose for which our LORD created man. The thousand years rule is also a fitting reward by our LORD for the hardships, hungers, thirsts, beatings, scourgings, scoldings, reproaches, mockings, blasphemies, afflictions and tortures to death, suffered by HIS saints for the sake of the LORD. The thousand years rule is to be given for the saints by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, to enjoy and rule the world in the way that pleases GOD. The thousand years rule is to be given to the children of GOD by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. The thousand years rule of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is also called the Millennium of CHRIST. When the thousand years rule has passed, our

LORD JESUS CHRIST will prepare and give a **wonderful feast** in this world for HIS children. It will be a feast beyond all imagination and it will be a feast of great joy, great happiness, great rejoicing and great jubilation. It will be a great and immensely glorious feast. No feast in this world can be compared to this great feast. No one in this world can prepare and give a feast like this. See Isaiah 25:6. See also pages 1297-1300 for further details about Millennium (1000 years) Rule.

## 6. JUDGMENT

### 6.1 JUDGMENT TO SATAN, THE DEVIL

When the thousand years rule has passed, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will ascend to heaven with HIS holy church of HIS saints. After that, our LORD will send HIS angel and release Satan for a short time from his prison, the bottomless pit. Then, Satan and his whole host of demons will start revolts against CHRIST. And the remaining men will prefer evil to good and turn their hearts toward Satan, as Adam and Eve did (Genesis 3:1-8). All will be ruined by mankind. Satan, the devil will make his last and final attempt to defeat CHRIST, the Almighty GOD. He will go out to deceive the nations, which are in the four corners of the earth into rebellion against our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Almighty GOD. He will deceive the nations of the four corners of the earth and gather all the armies of the whole world together to the final battle, to fight against CHRIST, the Almighty GOD. Their number will be as the sand of the sea. **Gog and Magog** will be Satan, the devil's special allies.

*"And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea."*

Revelation 20:8

They will surround the camp of the saints and the beloved city, the earthly Jerusalem. Then our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will quickly devour Satan and his henchmen with his heavenly fire and cast them into hell, the lake of eternal fire where fire and brimstone burn together. The fire in hell is never quenched and worms in hell never die. In hell, their worms will not die and the fire will not quench. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will cast Satan, the devil and his angels

(St. Matthew 25:41) into hell to be tormented day and night for ever and ever. Their torment will be eternal. Their sufferings will be eternal. Their cries will be eternal. Their tears will be eternal. See Revelation 20:7-10.

*“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast (antichrist) and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”*

Revelation 20:10

Thus, satanic rebellion will be completely crushed by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Almighty GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 6.2 THE GLORIOUS OPEN COMING OF CHRIST

When the days of great tribulation and thousand years rule have passed, the sun will be darkened; the moon will not give its light; the stars of heaven will fall and the powers that are in heaven will be shaken. The sun will become black as sackcloth of hair and the moon will become as blood, so the nature of the earth will change. The sea and the waves will be roaring. There will be great distress, afflictions and weariness of heart, as people keep waiting for the horrors to occur.

*“Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.”*

St. Matthew 24:29

*“And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.”*

St. Luke 21:25-26

The terrible sign of JESUS CHRIST, the LORD of lords and our GOD Almighty will appear in the sky. The sign will make any man tremble with fear and it will foretell the appearing of the LORD in the sky, as a great judge to judge the sinners. Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST will come in the clouds of heaven with HIS saints, mighty angels and with flaming fire. HE will come with great power and glory.

When our LORD openly appears in the sky, the mourning souls of dead sinners and the sinners who live in this world will be given hellish bodies. Hence the eyes of all people will openly see HIM and they will wail in great terror. The eyes of all sinners will see HIM. Those who scourged HIM, who pierced HIM, who beat HIM, who rejected HIM, who wanted HIM to die, who humiliated HIM, who mocked at HIM, who blasphemed against HIM, who judged against HIM and who murdered HIM will see HIM. Those who persecuted, who murdered, who scourged, who mocked, who humiliated and who blasphemed against HIS servants, witnesses and believers of the LORD will also see HIM. When they see the LORD, the sinners of the world will wail and lament in great terror. No one can escape from the hands of the LORD. No one can escape from the eyes of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. No sinner can escape from the hands or from the eyes of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And then shall appear the sign of the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the SON OF MAN coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN be."*

St. Matthew 24:30, 27

*"Seeing it is a righteous thing with GOD to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you: And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the LORD JESUS shall be revealed from heaven with HIS mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not GOD, and that obey not the gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the LORD, and from the glory of HIS power; When HE shall come to be glorified in HIS saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day."*

II Thessalonians 1:6-10

*"And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the LORD cometh with ten thousands of HIS saints, To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which*

*ungodly sinners have spoken against HIM."*

Jude 14-15

*"Behold, HE cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see HIM, and they also which pierced HIM: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of HIM. Even so, Amen."*

Revelation 1:7

During HIS open coming, HIS most holy and beautiful feet will stand on the mount of Olives. And the mount of Olives will be split in two, from east to west (Zechariah 14:4).

The open coming of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be the most terrible and **tremendous event**. During HIS coming, HE will righteously repay trouble to the sinners or the wicked. The open coming of CHRIST is also called the **Second Coming** of CHRIST.

### 6.3 FINAL JUDGMENT

Men's iniquities or transgressions or trespasses are bound up; their sins are stored up for their final judgment (Hosea 13:12). When our LORD JESUS CHRIST openly appears in the sky before the eyes of all people, to judge the sinners, the mourning souls of dead sinners that roam the world causing great troubles to people, and the sinners who live in this world will be given hellish bodies. They will cry and lament, when they see the LORD coming as the righteous Judge with a terrible look in the clouds of heaven.

Now, this present universe is reserved for fire, until the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly people (II Peter 3:7). The judgment will take place in this earth, since the present unclean heavens with all things viz., sun, moon, stars and planets (Job 15:15; 25:5; Revelation 6:12-14), except the third heaven—the holy **Paradise** (II Corinthians 12:2-4) will be dissolved and all the sinners of the earth will be devoured by the fire of HIS jealousy (Zephaniah 1:18; 3:8), just before HIS judgment; and the present unclean earth with all other things viz., mountains, oceans, seas, islands, etc., will be dissolved by the fire of HIS jealousy, just after HIS judgment (II Peter 3:10-12; Revelation 20:11-13; 21:1). **This is one of the divine secrets of GOD**. Thus the judgment day will be a day without daytime or night-time (Zechariah 14:7). And it will be a day of darkness and gloominess (Zephaniah 1:15).

Then, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be sitting as the righteous Judge on the great white throne in great wrath and with an exceedingly terrible look. The great white throne reveals HIS divine dominion and power, government and judgment. The white colour of HIS throne signifies HIS righteousness, holiness, glory, majesty and purity.

Then the sinners who were kings, great men, chief captains, and all men, great and small, slave and free, mighty and wicked, blasphemers, the ungodly who lived forgetting GOD or without knowing GOD, the unbelievers, the abominable people, the murderers, adulterers, sorcerers, idolaters, liars, deceivers, thieves, unclean people, unrighteous people and those who did not obey the Gospel of GOD will hide themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains and ask the mountains and the rocks to fall on them and hide them from the face of the LORD who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of HIS wrath is come and say, "Who shall be able to stand, who shall survive HIS anger". Thus, the condition of the sinners is one of exceeding terror and distress. See Revelation 6:15-17.

When our LORD is sitting on HIS exceedingly glorious white throne of judgment, all people would be gathered before HIM. The LORD will set HIS saints, the sheep on HIS right side; but the sinners, the goats on the left as a shepherd separates his sheep from his goats. Then the LORD will say to HIS saints on HIS right, "**COME, YE BLESSED OF MY FATHER, INHERIT THE KINGDOM PREPARED FOR YOU FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD**". The LORD will say to the sinners on HIS left, "**DEPART FROM ME, YE CURSED, INTO EVERLASTING FIRE, PREPARED FOR THE DEVIL AND HIS ANGELS**". Everyone will be rewarded according to his works (St. Matthew 25:31-46).

*"Then shall the King say unto them on HIS right hand, Come, ye blessed of MY FATHER, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: Then shall HE say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from ME, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal."*

St. Matthew 25:34, 41, 46



<b>Sl.No.</b>	<b>Who are the blessed?</b>	<b>Who are the cursed?</b>	<b>Verse/Verses of Reference.</b>
1.	The saved.	The unsaved.	Hebrews 2:3-4
2.	The born-again/the re-generated/the converted.	Those who are not born-again/the un-regenerated/those who are not converted.	St. John 3:3-5 Acts 3:19
3.	The redeemed.	The unredeemed.	Isaiah 35:10
4.	The holy.	The unholy.	Hebrews 12:14; Leviticus 20:26
5.	The righteous.	The unrighteous.	St. Matthew 13:43; 25:46
6.	Believers of the church.	Unbelievers.	Acts 2:47; 5:14
7.	The sinless and those who do not forget GOD.	The sinful or the wicked and those who forget GOD.	Psalms 9:17
8.	Those who know GOD and those who obey the Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.	Those who do not know GOD and those who disobey the Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.	II Thessalonians 1:8-9
9.	Those who do not commit sins. Those who love the LORD JESUS CHRIST.	Sinners. Those who do not love the LORD JESUS CHRIST.	Romans 1:18-32; I Corinthians 6:9-11; 16:22
10.	The separated.	Those who are not separated.	Leviticus 20:26
11.	The LORD's own People and HIS riches/wealth.	Those who are not the LORD's own people and HIS riches/wealth.	Malachi 3:17
12.	Those who serve the LORD, by preaching CHRIST's Gospel	Those who do not serve the LORD.	Malachi 3:18 Galatians 1:6-9

When the LORD, JESUS CHRIST pronounces HIS judgment, the sea, the earth and the abyss will deliver up the dead who were in them. **Two books** of heaven will be opened before the LORD. One of them is the **Book of Life**. In this book, all the names of the saints, and their good works would have been recorded by themselves. In another book, all the names of the sinners would have been written, and all their sinful acts would have been recorded by themselves. The sinful works, the filthy works, lies, deceptions, theft, murder, adultery, sorcery, and all other abominable and sinful works of the sinners recorded by themselves in the book, with the minute details of day, hour, minute, second and the place, will be shown to the sinners by the LORD. Without any objection, any sinner will accept that he is a guilty sinner, liable to judgment and eternal punishment in hell. The LORD's judgment would be so righteous that the sinner would accept without any objection that hell is the righteous punishment for his sins. All sinners will be cast into the terrible hell. The saints whose names have been written in the Book of Life will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The sinners whose names are not found in the Book of Life will be cast into hell, the lake of eternal fire and they will be tormented for ever and ever.

*"And I saw a great white throne, and HIM that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before GOD; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."*

Revelation 20:11-15

The judgment day or the last judgment or the day of judgment will be the day at the end of the world when the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will judge everyone who has ever lived.

Everyone should be doers of the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and not hearers. Otherwise the Word of GOD will judge him/her (St. John 12:48).

#### 6.4 WHO WILL BE PUNISHED ?

The following verses in the Holy Scriptures, the Holy Bible clearly reveal, who will be punished by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST on the day of judgment. HE will punish those who do not do the will of GOD. So, all people must be saved; all people must come to the knowledge of truth about the LORD JESUS CHRIST; all people must obtain holiness and holy life; all people should abstain from all sins; and all ministers of GOD should always do their ministry in obedience to the will of GOD.

*“Not every one that saith unto ME, LORD, LORD, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of MY FATHER which is in heaven. Many will say to ME in that day, LORD, LORD, have we not prophesied in THY name? and in THY name have cast out devils? and in THY name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from ME, ye that work iniquity.”*

St. Matthew 7:21-23

*“Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.”*

I Timothy 2:4

*“For this is the will of GOD, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication.”*

I Thessalonians 4:3

*“Follow (pursue) peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the LORD.”*

Hebrews 12:14

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who have spoken vain words. Our LORD JESUS said,

*“But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.”*

St. Matthew 12:36

On the day of judgment GOD will punish those who have not known GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and those who have not obeyed the Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"...When the LORD JESUS shall be revealed from heaven with HIS mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not GOD, and that obey not the Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the LORD, and from the glory of HIS power."*

II Thessalonians 1:7-9

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish all the ungodly and the sinners. HE will punish all atheists, polytheists, pantheists, polygamists and polyandrists.

*"For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of GOD: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospel of GOD? And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?"*

I Peter 4:17-18

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish all the wicked and all the nations that forget GOD.

*"The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget GOD."*

Psalms 9:17

*"Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of GOD, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of GOD, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them."*

Romans 1:29-32

'Death' means 'second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur'.

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who are having stubborn and unrepentant heart.

*"But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous"*

*judgment of GOD; Who will render to every man according to his deeds."*

Romans 2:5-6

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish fornicators, idolaters, adulterers, coveters, homosexuals (lesbians and gays), thieves, drunkards, sadists, onanists, masturbators, etc. **Sadism**, **onanism** (Genesis 38:9-10), and **masturbation** are sins.

*"Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of GOD? Be not deceived: neither fornicators (the sexually immoral), nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind (sodomites or homosexuals), Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of GOD."*

I Corinthians 6:9-10

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish the dead (Revelation 20:12). The dead are those who are dead in sins and trespasses (Ephesians 2:1, 5).

**Lesbian** (L) — homosexual woman, **Gay** (G) — homosexual man, **Bisexual** (B) — a person who is having a sexual attraction to both men and women and **Transsexual** (T) — a person who emotionally feels herself/himself to be a member of the other sex or a person who has had her/his external sexual organs removed or altered in order to resemble the opposite sex are sinners. **LGBT communities** are sinners. **Heterosexual** — a person who is having a sexual attraction to people of the opposite sex is also a sinner. On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who are having the works of the sinful flesh; revellers, adulterers, adulteresses, lesbians, gays, bisexuals, transsexuals, heterosexuals, sodomites, drunkards, idolaters, murderers, fornicators, sorcerers, coveters, thieves, extortioners, the unjust people, the unholy or unclean people who indulge in the works of the sinful flesh (Galatians 5:19-21).

**Revellings** are sins. **Entertainments** of films/movies, music, songs, radio, television, drama, dance, circus, farce (a funny play or performance or writing for the theatre based on ridiculous and unlikely situations and events), plays, sports, games, tournaments, etc., are revellings. Revellings include the seeing of erotic art/pictures. Revellings include the reading of erotic books/poetry. Revellings include the

hearing of erotic music/songs. Revellings include the playing of erotic music. Revellings include the singing of erotic songs, etc. Revellings include orgies, revelries, etc.

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish the impure, immoral and greedy people.

*"For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of CHRIST and of GOD. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of GOD upon the children of disobedience."*

Ephesians 5:5-6

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish liars, murderers, perjurers, etc.

*"Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine."*

I Timothy 1:9-10

'Whoremongers' means 'fornicators'. 'Menstealers' means 'kidnappers'.

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who have broken their first faith.

*"Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith."*

I Timothy 5:12

'Damnation' means 'condemnation'.

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish blasphemers, traitors, etc.

*"This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of GOD;*

*Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth."*

II Timothy 3:1-7

'Incontinent' means 'without self-control'.

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who are not merciful.

*"For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment."*

James 2:13

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who grumble against each other.

*"Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judgment standeth before the door."*

James 5:9

On the day of judgment, GOD will severely punish the false prophets, false teachers, etc.

*"My brethren, be not many masters (teachers), knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation."*

James 3:1

*"But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the LORD that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not."*

II Peter 2:1-3

False teachers are described as cursed children (accursed children). They are also described as wells without water, unable to satisfy the spiritual thirst of people. Further, they are described as clouds without water (Jude 12). Again, they are described as clouds

that are carried about by a tempest (of various kinds of strange teachings). See Hebrews 13:9.

*“The LORD knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the LORD. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man’s voice forbad the madness of the prophet. These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.”*

II Peter 2:9-17

**Balaam** the prophet had forsaken the right way of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and gone astray by loving the wages of unrighteousness (II Peter 2:15) and ran greedily for a good-for-nothing reward (Jude 11) and was killed with the sword (Numbers 31:8). The dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of Balaam the prophet (II Peter 2:16). But, he did not hearken (listen) it.

False teachers are further called servants of corruption, since they have not escaped the pollutions of the world. They are again entangled in them and overcome by them. Therefore their latter end is worse than their beginning. Their deeds deny their profession of salvation. Their deeds deny their profession of CHRIST. The illustrations of the dog and the sow clearly portray their sheer folly.

*“For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those*



*that were clean escaped from them who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire."*

II Peter 2:18-22

'The servants of corruption' are the false teachers, since they have become entangled in the world and overcome by it. Therefore, their end will be destruction. They will be destroyed in hell.

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish those who walk after their own lusts, murmurers, etc.

*"And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the LORD cometh with ten thousands of HIS saints, To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against HIM. These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our LORD JESUS CHRIST; How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit. But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), Keep yourselves in the love of GOD, looking for the mercy of our LORD JESUS CHRIST unto eternal life."*

Jude 14-21

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish anyone who knows the good he ought to do and does not do it.

*"Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin."*

James 4:17

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish the unholy.

*"Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the LORD."*

Hebrews 12:14

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish the unsaved.

*"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the LORD, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard HIM; GOD also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), according to HIS own will?"*

Hebrews 2:3-4

On the day of judgment, GOD will punish the cowardly, the unbelieving, the abominable, sorcerers, idolaters, murderers, the sexually immoral and all liars (Revelation 21:8).

The SON OF MAN, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will execute judgment. HIS judgment will be true and righteous. HE will give HIS righteous and true judgment on the righteous and the evil. Those who have done good will rise to eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD, and those who have done evil will rise to eternal destruction in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. This is the eternal and never changing truth. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And hath given HIM authority to execute judgment also, because HE is the SON OF MAN. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear HIS voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation."*

St. John 5:27-29

*"And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt."*

Daniel 12:2

Everyone should be afraid of HIS judgments (Psalm 119:120). The fear of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is very essential (Proverbs 1:7). Godliness is very essential (I Timothy 4:8). Each and everything must be done for the glory of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 10:31). Hard and impenitent heart must be removed (Romans 2:5). Everyone should obey his/her parents in the LORD (Ephesians 6:1). No one should be secret sinners (Romans 2:16).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST declares the imminence of HIS return to give HIS reward. Reward is always based on work.

*"And, behold, I come quickly; and MY reward is with ME, to give every man according as his work shall be."*

Revelation 22:12

## 6.5 HORRIBLE HELL

There is a place called hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8). The existence of hell is real and undoubted. So, the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD warns of hell. The New Testament of the Holy Bible alone warns of hell over 160 times. And our LORD JESUS CHRIST warns of hell many times. In St. Luke 16:19-31, HE gives a very frightening picture of hell.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST announces HIS judgment to sinners, the great flaming fire of hell, the fiery waves of the fiery sea with a terrible frightening noise will be appearing before them and coming towards them like the sea waves. The sinners will be greatly frightened and will try to save themselves from the frightful presence of hell-fire. But they will not be able to.

**Hell is a place of horrible fire.** Sinners will be tormented in this hell-fire for ever and ever. Hell is a place of very furious flames of fire (St. Luke 16:24). Hell is a very furious furnace of fire and there will be wailing and gnashing of teeth (St. Matthew 13:42). Hell is the lake of fire (Revelation 20:15). Hell cannot be compared with anything else on earth. In St. Mark 9:44, JESUS says about hell,

*"Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched."*

St. Mark 9:44

Their worm—not a worm or the worm—but their worm. The scientists discover the strange ocean creatures, the giant tube worms,

measuring up to 8 feet in length. Certainly their worm in hell-fire will be much greater in size than these ocean worms and they will be more terrible than these worms. So, their worm in hell-fire will be terribly tormenting and torturing sinners continuously.

Hell is the place of the wicked and those who do not know GOD (Job 18:21). Brimstone (sulphur) will be scattered on their dwelling in hell (Job 18:15). Sulphur will be set fire in hell (Revelation 21:8). The worm (the maggot) will be spread under them and worms will cover them (Isaiah 14:11). Terrors will frighten them on every side and terrors will drive them to their feet (Job 18:11). Their strength will be starved and destruction will be ready at their side (Job 18:12). Hell-fire will devour the strength of their skin; hell-fire will devour the strength of their bodies (Job 18:13). They will be tormented with fire and brimstone (Revelation 14:10).

**The smoke of their torment** will ascend up for ever and ever, and they will have no rest day or night (Revelation 14:11). The sinners will experience a very great difficulty in breathing because of furious flames of fire—suffocating heat, and because of horrible sulphur smoke inhalation—suffocating sulphur smoke, and because of very severe thirst—suffocating thirst, and because of very severe hunger—suffocating hunger. Their nostrils will be filled with the awful stench of suffocating sulphur smoke and with the awful stench of burning souls.

The sinners will experience complete sleeplessness and they will be greatly puzzled about what to do or where to go or how to escape. Their brain will be completely puzzled and collapsed and will become nonfunctional. They will be in a state of terrible physical, mental and nervous collapse and breakdown.

Their faces will start burning by the hell-fire. Horrible flames of fire will be blazing from their eyes, nostrils, ears, mouth and from every opening of their bodies. Their bodies will be sizzling and crackling by the horrible flames of fire. Their bodies will be shaken violently and moved wildly.

The darkness in hell will be very terrifying and it will engulf the sinners. They will be in great fear and trembling. They will be feeling something moving in the darkness and something horrible will be

happening. Their worm will be emerging terribly to bore holes in their hellish bodies and to eat their bodies. The flames of hell-fire will enter into their bones also. At that time they will remember their preachers pleading with them to receive JESUS CHRIST and HIS great salvation (Acts 16:31; Hebrews 2:3). But they could not be saved.

Sinners will see hell for ever and ever. Sinners will breathe hell for ever and ever. Sinners will hear hell for ever and ever. Sinners will feel hell for ever and ever. Hell will be beyond anything imaginable!

The Holy Bible describes hell as a place of weeping (St. Matthew 8:12), wailing (St. Matthew 13:50), gnashing of teeth (St. Matthew 13:42), outer darkness (St. Matthew 25:30), blackest darkness (Jude 13), torments (St. Luke 16:23), flames (St. Luke 16:24), everlasting burnings (Isaiah 33:14), devouring fire (Isaiah 33:14), everlasting fire (St. Matthew 25:41), everlasting punishment (St. Matthew 25:46), etc. Hell is for ever and ever. There is no hope in hell. The great horror of hell is unbearable even for one second.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST very severely warns about hell in St. Mark 8:36.

*“For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?”*

St. Mark 8:36

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST talks about hell very seriously and solemnly. So, HE says in St. Mark 9:43-48:

*“And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of GOD with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.”*

St. Mark 9:43-48

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST spoke more on hell than on any other subject. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST declares hell as the fire (St. Matthew 7:19; 13:40), everlasting fire (St. Matthew 18:8; 25:41), the fire that shall never be quenched (St. Mark 9:43, 45), the fire is not quenched (St. Mark 9:44, 46, 48), hell fire (St. Matthew 5:22; 18:9; St. Mark 9:47), the furnace of fire (St. Matthew 13:42, 50), eternal damnation (St. Mark 3:29), damnation (St. Matthew 23:14; St. Mark 12:40; St. Luke 20:47), the damnation of hell (St. Matthew 23:33), where their worm dieth not (St. Mark 9:44, 46, 48), wailing and gnashing of teeth (St. Matthew 13:42, 50), weeping and gnashing of teeth (St. Matthew 8:12; 22:13; 25:30), torments (St. Luke 16:23), tormented in the flame (St. Luke 16:24), place of torment (St. Luke 16:28), outer darkness (St. Matthew 8:12; 22:13) and everlasting punishment (St. Matthew 25:46).

Our loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST does not want anyone to be cast into hell. But, if anyone rejects JESUS CHRIST, then he/she chooses hell. If anyone rejects our LORD JESUS CHRIST's gift of eternal life, then he/she deserves to be in hell and will be in hell. So, don't wait. Tomorrow may be too late! Proverbs 27:1 says,

*"Boast not thyself of to morrow; for thou knowest not what a day may bring forth."*

Proverbs 27:1

So, don't put it off another second to get salvation from sins. Realize you are a great sinner (Romans 3:10, 23). Realize you cannot save yourself (Isaiah 64:6; Titus 3:5). Salvation is the gift of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 2:8). So, confess your sins to JESUS with broken-heart and with tears and with cries and with humility to get salvation from sins (Psalm 34:18). **No one can escape hell, if we neglect so great a salvation** (Hebrews 2:3).

**Three things are certain to all sinners**—"It is appointed unto men once to die" (Hebrews 9:27). As a consequence of sin, you will die (Ezekiel 18:20)—today or tomorrow or in a week or in a month or in a year or in 50 years or in 100 years. You will die by an accident or by a heart attack or by a stroke or by a disease or by some other means. "But after this the judgment" (Hebrews 9:27) and hell, the everlasting hell-fire (Psalm 9:17) are certain to come.

*"And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."*

Revelation 20:15

The names of the saved people will be written in the Book of Life. The names of the unsaved people or the sinners or the backsliders will not be written in the Book of Life.

In the Old Testament of the Holy Bible, the prophet Daniel tells us,

*"And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt."*

Daniel 12:2

Psalms 9:17 tells us,

*"The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget GOD."*

Psalms 9:17

In the New Testament of the Holy Bible, our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST speaks of hell, the eternal fire, to those on HIS left on the Day of Judgment,

*"Depart from ME, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels."*

St. Matthew 25:41

There is no escape from hell. There is no end to their suffering, for it is an everlasting punishment in an unquenchable fire (St. Mark 9:43-48). All sinners deserve everlasting punishment in hell.

Many people commonly talk about hell without much concern or thought, because they do not know what and how terrible hell is. Many people do not believe that the wages of sin is hell. Hell is a lake of eternal fire and undying worms. It is a terrible lake of fire where fire and brimstone burn for ever. No pain or agony in the world can be compared with that of hell. Hell is such a painful place.

Sinners will be burnt in hell like lime and thorns cut up. The undying worms found in hell will go on piercing the hellish bodies of sinners. The sinners will be there for ever. The fire of hell is never quenched and the worms of hell never die. Not even a single drop

of water can be had there for thirst. All sinners will be tormented in great pain day and night and for ever and ever in hell. There will be endless wailing and gnashing of teeth in hell. Hell is known also as second death, outer darkness and everlasting fire. False prophets and false servants or false teachers will be bound hand and foot and thrown into hell. This will be the most severe punishment to the false prophets and false servants or false teachers.

*"And the people shall be as the burnings of lime: as thorns cut up shall they be burned in the fire. The sinners in Zion are afraid; fearfulness hath surprised the hypocrites. Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings?"*

Isaiah 33:12, 14

*"And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

St. Matthew 25:30

*"Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

St. Matthew 22:13

*"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death."*

Revelation 21:8

A number of Jews or Israelites are having a wrong thought that Abraham sits at the gate of hell to prevent any Jew or Israelite from entering into hell. Abraham is the father of all believers. Now, the parable of the rich man and Lazarus, the beggar explains clearly that Abraham cannot prevent any Jew or Israelite from entering into hell. So, no help will come from Abraham to the Jews or the Israelites. See St. Luke 16:19-26.

Further, the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures clearly explains how and why GOD will judge both Jew and Gentile, and how and why GOD can judge both Jew and Gentile.

*"For there is no respect of persons (no partiality) with GOD."*

Romans 2:11



*"...Who without respect of persons (without partiality) judgeth according to every man's work, ..."*

I Peter 1:17

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will righteously judge both Jew and Gentile according to their deeds or works. The saved Jews or the saved Gentiles will get their glorious reward in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The unsaved Jews or the unsaved Gentiles will get their great condemnation in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

Again, for the saved, the judgment will result in eternal life in heaven. For the unsaved, the judgment will result in eternal damnation in hell.

*"Who will render to every man according to his deeds."*

Romans 2:6

## 6.6 WHO WILL NOT ESCAPE HELL ?

The worldly or earthly blessedness does not necessarily mean GOD's ultimate favour. The rich men are often induced and influenced by worldly wealth.

*"But they that will be rich (desire to be rich) fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition."*

I Timothy 6:9

GOD's servants or GOD's ministers or the prophets have an important role in bringing such people out of their eternal ruin and destruction. Those who do not obey the Word of GOD, preached by GOD's ministers, will not escape from hell, the place of great torment. They will go to hell and suffer the torments of burning flame and the torments of undying worms, separation, loneliness, hopelessness, and conviction by the memories of their previous sinful lives, thirst, hunger, smoke, sleeplessness, and stench. In hell, there will be no repentance or no forgiveness or no salvation.

Now, everyone should trust the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST and obey the glorious Gospel of the LORD JESUS CHRIST preached by HIS servants, in order to escape the great torments in hell, the most extreme forms of human torture and suffering in hell. To describe the great torments in hell and to escape the great torments in hell, our

LORD JESUS CHRIST narrated the parable of an unrighteous rich man and a righteous beggar named Lazarus, full of sores. Even a drop of water is denied the rich man in hell. See St. Luke 16:19-26. Not even a single drop of water will be given to anyone in hell. Not even a very small fragment of bread will be given to anyone in hell (Job 18:12).

The wages of sin is eternal death or the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Romans 6:23; Revelation 21:8). There will be no end to their suffering. The sinners in hell will be rejected and banished from the blissful and wonderful presence of GOD for ever and ever. The sinners in hell will be utterly forsaken by GOD.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST did not appoint us to suffer wrath, the great torments in hell. But HE has appointed us to receive salvation through JESUS CHRIST. HE shed HIS most holy and precious blood for us and died for us on the cross at Calvary, for our salvation from sins. This salvation from sins is obtained through the substitutionary sacrificial death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"For GOD hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:9

The names of the saved people will be found written in the Book of Life in heaven. They are the church of the first-born. Sinners' names will not be found written in the Book of Life. Hence, everyone must be saved to go to heaven and to escape hell. If anyone's name is not found written in the Book of Life, he/she will not escape hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, ..."*

Hebrews 12:23

*"...Whose names are in the Book of Life."*

Philippians 4:3

*"And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."*

Revelation 20:15

Again, the names of 'Born-Again Christians' or 'Real Christians' or 'True Christians' having perfect holiness of GOD will be found

written in the Book of Life. They are the righteous and they will live by faith. A growing and intimate relationship with GOD will be found only in these people. The salvation and spiritual growth will be found only in these people. The backsliders' names will be blotted out of the Book of Life and their names will not be found written in the Book of Life.

*"Let them be blotted out of the Book of the Living, and not be written with the righteous."*

Psalms 69:28

*"Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, MY soul shall have no pleasure in him."*

Hebrews 10:38

Thus from these facts anyone can understand that the so-called Christians will not escape hell. But, most of the so-called Christians are with the false assumption that they are the true Christians and they are on the way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD, when in fact they are going to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, with other sinners. They are going to hell most pathetically with other sinners.

There is no hope in hell. There is no escape from hell.

## 6.7 HELL FOR SATAN, FALLEN ANGELS

*"Then shall HE say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from ME, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels."*

St. Matthew 25:41

From this verse, anyone can clearly understand that hell, the everlasting fire was originally prepared by GOD for Satan, the devil and his angels and not for mankind.

Hell was prepared by GOD for Satan, since Satan, the devil is the originator and chief practitioner of all sins (I John 3:8); he is the wicked one (I John 5:18); he is a thief and destroyer (St. John 10:10); he is a murderer and liar (St. John 8:44); he is the deceiver of the whole world and the accuser of the brethren (Revelation 12:9-10). He is always against the will and work of GOD. He is our adversary (I Peter 5:8).

He who commits sin is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. Hence, those who commit sin are the children of the devil.

*"He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was manifested, that HE might destroy the works of the devil."*

I John 3:8

## 6.8 HELL FOR MANKIND

Hell was originally prepared for Satan, the devil and his angels. Thus, hell wholly belongs to the devil and his angels. After that, the sinners become the children of the devil by their sinful acts. Hence, the sinners wholly belong to the devil. Hell which belongs to the devil and his angels, belongs to the children of the devil, the sinners also; hell which GOD originally prepared for the devil and his angels, belongs to mankind.

*"Whosoever is born of GOD doth not commit sin; for HIS seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of GOD. In this the children of GOD are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of GOD, neither he that loveth not his brother."*

I John 3:9-10

The born-again people or the saved people or the redeemed or the regenerated people are born of GOD. They are the righteous and the holy. They are of GOD. They are born anew by the grace of GOD. They are renewed spiritually by the grace of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. GOD changes the heart and affection from natural enmity to the love of GOD. Then, there will be no enmity between man and GOD.

Those who are born of GOD are the children of GOD. Those who are not born of GOD are the children of Satan, the devil. The children of GOD will enter into eternal heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The children of the devil will enter into eternal hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

## 6.9 THE ETERNAL DESTRUCTION IN HELL

Hell is a place of great torments. The word torment means great physical and mental suffering caused as a punishment. Sinners will be tormented in hell by the most furious flames of fire and by severe thirst and by suffocating sulphur smoke and sleeplessness and stench. They will beg for mercy, but no mercy will be shown to them. See St. Luke 16:19-26.

Hell is the great furnace of fire and there will be wailing and gnashing of teeth (St. Matthew 13:41-42). The sinners will be tormented with burning sulphur in hell. The smoke of their torment will ascend or rise up for ever and ever. There will be no rest day or night for them (Revelation 14:10-11). The sinners will be burned like lime and like cut thorn-bushes in hell (Isaiah 33:12).

Hell is the place of blackest darkness (Jude 13). Hell is the great pit in the lowest depths (Isaiah 14:15). Hell is a place of the prostitutes and their guests. They will be put into the depths of hell (Proverbs 9:18). Hell is a place of the worthless or the unprofitable servants of GOD (St. Matthew 25:30). Hell is a place of the wicked of all the nations that forget GOD (Psalm 9:17). Hell is a place of the angels that sinned (II Peter 2:4).

Hell is a place with unquenchable fire. The sinners will be burned up in hell like the chaff (St. Matthew 3:12). Hell is a place with the devouring (consuming) fire and with everlasting burnings. No one can dwell in hell (Isaiah 33:14). Satan, the devil, the antichrist, and the false prophet will be thrown alive into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 20:10). If anyone's name is not found written in the Book of Life, he will be thrown into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:15).

In hell, the maggots will be spread out beneath the sinners and the worms will cover them. These undying maggots and worms will go on piercing the hellish bodies of the sinners (Isaiah 14:11). The sinners will be punished with everlasting destruction in hell (II Thesalonians 1:9).

The scorching and suffocating heat in hell will be very awful (Isaiah 33:14). The suffocating sulphur smoke in hell will be very

awful (Revelation 14:11; 21:8). The suffocation caused by the earthly disease, asthma cannot be compared with that in hell. The suffocating thirst in hell will be very awful (St. Luke 16:23-26). The blackest darkness in hell will be very awful (Jude 13). The undying worms in hell will be very awful (St. Mark 9:46).

Anyone who says to his brother, "THOU FOOL!" will be in danger of the fire of hell (St. Matthew 5:22). If your eye or hand or leg or ear or any other member of your body causes you to sin, it is better for you to cut one part of your body off than for your whole body to go into hell (St. Matthew 5:27-30).

Always everyone should be afraid of the ONE, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who can destroy both soul and body in hell.

*"And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear HIM which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell."*

St. Matthew 10:28

## **7. HEAVEN, THE KINGDOM OF GOD**

The existing heavens (skies), the earth, the sun, the moon, the stars and the planets are not holy in the sight of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...Yea, the heavens are not clean in HIS sight."*

Job 15:15

*"Behold even to the moon, and it shineth not; yea, the stars are not pure in HIS sight."*

Job 25:5

Therefore, the existing heavens, the earth, the sun, the moon, the stars, and the planets will be devoured by the fire of the LORD GOD's jealousy and they will disappear. There will appear new heavens and new earth, where righteousness will dwell.

*"...For all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of MY jealousy."*

Zephaniah 3:8

*"But the day of the LORD will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the*

*elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of GOD, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to HIS promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of HIM in peace, without spot, and blameless."*

II Peter 3:10-14

'Conversation' means 'conduct'. 'Hasting' means 'hastening'.

Then the holy city, New Jerusalem will descend from GOD out of heaven and be established in the new earth. This is the kingdom of heaven, the divine world, or the celestial world or the kingdom of GOD, filled with good and with GOD's glorious presence.

*"And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from GOD, Having the glory of GOD: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal."*

Revelation 21:10-11

*"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from GOD out of heaven, ... And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of GOD is with men, and HE will dwell with them, and they shall be HIS people, and GOD HIMSELF shall be with them, and be their GOD. And GOD shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And HE that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And HE said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful."*

Revelation 21:1-5

Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has promised to Peter, the keys of the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD (St. Matthew 16:19). By his glorious sermon on the day of Pentecost

(Acts 2:14-40), Peter opened the door of the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Those who believe and accept his preachings of the gospel and those who live according to his preachings of the gospel, will enter into the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Others will not enter into it. Others will not see it.

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said to Peter, whatever he binds on earth will be bound in heaven and whatever he looses on earth will be loosed in heaven (St. Matthew 16:19). 'Bind' means 'to declare forbidden'. 'Loose' means 'to declare allowed'. These two declarations are the declarations of GOD's will and these are not the declarations of man's will. So, Peter cannot declare anything according to his own will and he cannot bind or loose anything according to his own will.

But, most of the Roman Catholics are having a wrong thought that Peter sits at the gate of heaven to allow them to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Peter is not sitting at the gate of heaven. The kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD has twelve gates and at those gates there are twelve angels (Revelation 21:12). So, no help will come from Peter to the Roman Catholics or to any of the unsaved.

The kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven is the most glorious dwelling place for the saved. This is the most wonderful spiritual kingdom of GOD. This is the most wonderful spiritual kingdom of HIS church. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT, is the KING of this spiritual kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 7.1 THE MOST WONDERFUL HEAVEN

No man can describe with his tongue the great lustre, great glory and immense beauty of heaven. It is a glorious kingdom of GOD with twelve gates of twelve pearls of exceeding lustre and value. The walls of heaven are of precious jasper of immense lustre and great value. The foundations of its walls are decorated with twelve kinds of precious stones of great lustre and value. The street of the city is pure gold, like clear glass of great lustre and value. There is a



wonderful river of life with the water of life. On either side of the river is the tree of life, which bears twelve manners of fruits, yielding fruit every month. There is no sun or moon. Heaven is filled with the light of GOD's glory. The Divine Lamb, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the light in heaven. There is no night in heaven, it is always day there.

*"And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of GOD did lighten it, and the Lamb (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is the light thereof."*

Revelation 21:23

The children of GOD who are saved by our LORD JESUS CHRIST alone will enter into heaven and walk with HIM. In heaven, there is no hunger, no thirst, no heat, no cold, no sorrow, no tears, no death, no weeping, no wailing, no distress, no toiling and no fear. Heaven or the divine world is a kingdom of immense joy and happiness.

The saints who enter the kingdom of heaven will get thrones and crowns. The saints will be kings and priests before JESUS CHRIST, the LORD of lords and reign for ever and ever and worship HIM. The saints are the blessed, the immensely blessed. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the KING of kings will dwell with them for ever and ever, and be their GOD. See Revelation 1:6; 7:15-17; 21:1-27; 22:1-6.

## **7.2 THE MOST GLORIOUS LIFE IN HEAVEN**

The kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven is a very beautiful city. It is the most beautiful city where the saved and the redeemed people of GOD, JESUS CHRIST will live with HIM for ever and ever; the true Christians will live with HIM for ever and ever. Their glorious, holy, imperishable and powerful eternal body (spiritual body) suited to their eternal life, will never become dishonourable or sinful or perishable or weak, will never get sick, and will never die. The activities in heaven include singing (Revelation 15:3), rejoicing (Ecclesiastes 3:4), fellowship with others (St. Matthew 17:3), serving (Revelation 22:3), worship (Revelation 5:8), ruling (II Timothy 2:12; Revelation 22:5), eating of the hidden manna of life and eating of the fruits of the tree of life (Revelation 2:17; 22:2), and drinking of the pure water of the pure river of life (Revelation 22:1, 17).

The most glorious life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD is a life of most glorious dwelling with GOD Almighty for ever and ever (Revelation 21:3); and a life of most glorious fellowship with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever (Revelation 22:4). It is a new life of most glorious comfort for ever and ever (Revelation 21:4-5). It is a life of rest for ever and ever (Revelation 7:16-17; Hebrews 4:9-10); it is a life of service for ever and ever (Revelation 7:15; 22:3); it is a life of perfect health for ever and ever (Revelation 22:2); it is a life of worship for ever and ever (Revelation 19:1-5); and it is a life of ruling for ever and ever (Revelation 1:6). Hence, **GOD's people have a superior life later and not now.**

Salvation is free. It is the gift of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 2:8). All spiritual experiences are free, the gifts of GOD. **Likewise, heaven, the kingdom of GOD/the divine world of wonders is free, the gift of GOD.** Glory be to GOD!

The people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST or the Christians will spend their eternity with all their Christian friends and with all their Christian families in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever. **Behold the Christians' glorious end! really there is no end at all.** How glorious is our LORD GOD!

### 7.3 GOD'S KINGDOM FOR MANKIND

*"Then shall the King say unto them on HIS right hand, Come, ye blessed of MY FATHER, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world."*

St. Matthew 25:34

The kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD was originally prepared by GOD for mankind, from the foundation of the world. The blessed and holy people, the saints will inherit heaven. The kingdom of GOD is of righteousness, peace and joy in the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"For the kingdom of GOD is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Romans 14:17

## 7.4 RESURRECTION EXPLAINED

Many people ask and many people think, 'How are the dead raised up?' and 'With what body do they come?' Many people are sceptical about how these things are going to come true. Now let us see what example has been given for the resurrection in the truthful Law of the LORD, the Holy Bible.

*"But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: But GOD giveth it a body as it hath pleased HIM, and to every seed his own body. So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption (perishable state); it is raised in incorruption (imperishable state): It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body."*

I Corinthians 15:35-38, 42, 44

A man sows paddy or wheat or some other grain. The seed he sows dies and from the dead seed grows the sprout and comes to life-cycle again. **"THAT WHICH THOU SOWEST IS NOT QUICKENED EXCEPT IT DIE"**. The bud does not grow from the seed and come to life, unless the seed that was sown dies. The seed not only dies but also disintegrates and disappears. In the same way after death, man's body of flesh is buried in earth. This body of flesh or the natural body of man is buried or sown as a seed in earth. On the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the natural body of man, which was sown or buried as a seed to disintegrate and disappear in earth, will rise as a glorious and incorruptible body (I Corinthians 15:52-53), like the seed of paddy or some other grain that sprouts after death. This is to be done by the mighty work of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Almighty GOD who has the power to subdue all things to HIM.

*"Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned (made) like unto HIS glorious body, according to the working whereby HE is able even to subdue all things unto HIMSELF."*

Philippians 3:21

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection is the guarantee that HIS followers, the saved will also be raised from death. But what kind of body will they have? The new resurrected body will be far different from and far better than the physical body which had been buried. It will be a spiritual and immortal one like the beautiful and glorious body of JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. It will far outshine the old earthly body, as a full-grown plant with flowers/fruits far outshines the shrivelled seed from which it has grown (I Corinthians 15:35-49).

Again, if a man's body of flesh is cremated in earth, his cremated ashes will act as a seed sown in earth. Therefore, no one should think that there is no resurrection of the dead. It is therefore a great truth, a great fact and a greatly certain fact that there is resurrection of the dead and that there is hell; there is judgment and there is heaven or divine world. Besides, our LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered, died, and was buried and HE resurrected HIMSELF on the third day. Thus, the LORD became the first to rise from the dead. Thus, it is a great truth and certainty that there is resurrection of the dead. Since there is resurrection of the dead, there is judgment and hell for the sinners and there is heaven, the divine world for the saints.

Therefore the most important thing man should know is that there is no profit for any man by his birth, if he makes his soul inherit hell by living a sinner. There is no profit for him by his birth, but everything ends in a great loss. Even if he has earned the whole world for him and even if he happens to be a great man in this world, there is no profit for him by his birth; all things are a great loss. There is no doubt about it. The ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, JESUS CHRIST asks,

**“For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?”**

St. Mark 8:36-37

How does a man benefit if he gains the whole world and loses his soul in the process?

## 7.5 SEVEN PARABLES DESCRIBING THE COURSE OF THIS AGE

In the first century, on the day of Pentecost, the church of the LORD was born (Acts 2:1-4, 47). When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this

world, HE has wonderfully described in St. Matthew 13 the **course of this age**, through HIS seven parables.

The **first parable of the sower** describes a period of sowing the Gospel of CHRIST throughout the world (St. Matthew 13:1-23). The **second parable of the wheat and the tares** describes a counter-sowing by Satan, the devil (St. Matthew 13:24-30, 36-43).

The **third parable of the mustard seed** describes an outward growth of **Christendom/Christian world**, not the true church but the **apostate church** (St. Matthew 13:31-32). During the first part of the fourth century, the Roman emperor, Constantine the Great proclaimed Christianity as the state religion. Through his encouragement and political influence, he mixed the church with the world and brought thousands of false believers or false converts into Christianity, making it Christendom, no longer the church. Many evil persons and things are lodged in this organization or enterprise of Christendom. Now, in this 21st century, in this Christendom there are so many denominations and churches, denying CHRIST. The 'mustard' is an annual herb. However, in this parable, its nature and function were changed, so that it became a 'tree', a lodging place for birds. They lodge in the branches of the great tree, that is, in the various enterprises of Christendom. The birds signify the evil ones, Satan and his henchmen.

*"...And is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit and a cage of every unclean and hateful (hated) bird."*

Revelation 18:2

The **fourth parable of the leaven** describes evil things (I Corinthians 5:6, 8) and evil doctrines (St. Matthew 16:6, 11-12) sown by a corrupt church in an unconverted world (St. Matthew 13:33-35). The apostate **Roman Catholic Church was fully and officially formed in the sixth century**, took in many false doctrines including doctrines of devils, idolatry, immorality, pagan practices, heretical doctrines and evil and impure matters and mixed them with the true and pure doctrines concerning CHRIST, corrupting (leavening) the whole divine content of Christianity. The leaven signifies evil things and evil doctrines. The 'woman' mentioned in this parable signifies the apostate 'Roman Catholic Church'. The woman added or mixed leaven (evil,

abominable, heretical and pagan things) into the fine flour (the divine things of Christianity). The apostate Roman Catholic Church is the worst corrupt church. Catholic means Universal.

The **fifth parable of the hidden treasure in the field** describes CHRIST seeking the lost in the entire world, to redeem them to HIMSELF (St. Matthew 13:44). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST went in joy to the cross at Calvary and gave HIMSELF as a ransom for all people to redeem them.

The **sixth parable of the pearl of great price** describes CHRIST finding HIS glorious church for HIS kingdom of heaven, the kingdom of GOD (St. Matthew 13:45-46). The pearl is produced by a living oyster in the death waters. When an oyster is wounded by a grain of sand, it secretes its life-juice around the grain of sand and makes it into a precious pearl. As such the glorious church is produced by the living CHRIST coming into the world filled with dead souls. The living CHRIST is wounded by us, the sinners, on the cross; HE sheds HIS glorious life-blood over us to make us into precious pearls, HIS glorious church.

The **seventh parable of the net** describes how GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will end the age in judgment by gathering the good or the saved into heaven, the kingdom of GOD and by casting the bad or the sinners into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (St. Matthew 13:47-51).

# THE HOLY BIBLE AND TRUE WORSHIP

## 1. THE HOLY BIBLE

**“Open THOU mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things  
out of THY Law (the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures).”**

**Psalm 119:18**

**THE HOLY BIBLE** is a book of life, and this life is the ever-living **CHRIST**. The wonderful centre of the Holy Bible is **CHRIST**. The Holy Bible is the holiest book of the Christians. This is the only book given to mankind by **GOD**. The Holy Bible is the only book that can undoubtedly be called the holiest of all books. As our **LORD** is the **LORD**, Most High (Psalm 83:18), **HIS** book, the Holy Bible is also the most Holy Book, to denote its absolute holiness. It consists of two parts—the **Old Testament** and the **New Testament**. Of these two testaments of the Holy Bible, the Old Testament is the most holy book of the Jews or the Israelites. The whole of the Old Testament comprises the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms, concerning the **LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST**. Our **LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST** has opened **HIS** most holy mouth and said to **HIS** disciples,

*“These are the Words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning ME.”*

St. Luke 24:44

So, all Jews or Israelites and others should believe and accept **JESUS CHRIST** as their own **GOD**.

The entire body of the Jewish Law is called the Torah. Pentateuch (Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy) is the first five books of the Holy Bible, written by Moses with the exception of the record of his death in Deuteronomy 34. Hence, Pentateuch is also the first five books of the Torah.

In the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD is written by holy men of GOD inspired by the HOLY SPIRIT (II Peter 1:21). It has been written over a period of 1600 years, from about 1500 B.C. to 100 A.D. Both the Testaments have been written by the inspiration of GOD. The Old Testament consists of **39** books and the New Testament **27** books. Totally there are **66** books in the Holy Bible. The Old Testament was written before the birth of CHRIST and the New Testament after the death and resurrection of CHRIST. The first book of the Holy Bible is Genesis. It begins with the **first verse**,

**"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."**

Genesis 1:1

This first verse itself reveals the great Might of GOD. It itself reveals the Almighty GOD. HE created the heavens and the earth from nothing. HE is the Creator of all things. The Book of Genesis is an appropriate introduction to the entire Bible. **The kernels of all truth are found in Genesis.** It begins with the words: "**In the beginning GOD created**" (Genesis 1:1) and ends with "**in a coffin in Egypt**" (Genesis 50:26). Thus Genesis discloses the whole wretched condition of man, who was created in GOD's image to live forever, but became destined to the grave because of sin. It reveals the promised Saviour, the CHRIST and HIS salvation to sinners (Genesis 3:15).

**In the beginning:** This phrase refers to a point in the dateless past. That was the point at which the physical universe came into being. But, does the Holy Bible say anything about the future of this universe?

Let us turn to Psalm 102:25-27 for insight and understanding.

*"Of old hast THOU laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the work of THY hands. They shall perish, but THOU shalt endure: yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt THOU change them, and they shall be*



*changed: But THOU art the same, and THY years shall have no end."*

Psalm 102:25-27

The second epistle of St. Peter 3:10 confirms this.

*"But the day of the LORD will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up."*

II Peter 3:10

So, this universe will have an end; it is not eternal. But according to I Corinthians 15:44-50; II Peter 3:12-13 and Revelation 21:1, this present universe will be replaced by a greater spiritual one. GOD is from everlasting to everlasting and HIS people also live for ever. Let us not forget that even those who are not saved have also eternal existence. This is confirmed in St. Matthew 25:46.

*"And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal."*

St. Matthew 25:46

Now, let us compare Genesis 1:1 with St. John 1:1. In both these verses we find the phrase '**In the beginning**'. From St. John 1:1 we learn that '**In the beginning was the WORD**'. That WORD was LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is GOD's holy WORD. HE is the WORD and manifest truth. HE expresses and communicates and explains and reveals to the world what GOD is. It was HE who created the world (Genesis 1:1). HE was there in the beginning because HE is the great I AM, the eternal ONE (Exodus 3:14). Hence, CHRIST is the great I AM, the eternal ONE. HE is the WORD (St. John 1:1). In the Old Testament, creation was by the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (II Peter 3:5).

*"And GOD said, Let there be light: and there was light."*

Genesis 1:3

The Scriptures are also called the Word of GOD (Acts 8:14).

Before the creation of the universe, GOD had planned to create mankind. Before the creation of the universe, GOD had planned to create the world for mankind. So, before the foundation of the world, man was in HIS most holy heart. So, GOD asked Job,

*"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare,*

*if thou hast understanding."*

Job 38:4

Again, before the creation of mankind, GOD had fully known about the fall of mankind. So, eternally, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was foreordained HIMSELF as Saviour for mankind. **CHRIST'S foreordination as Saviour for mankind was GOD'S plan from eternity past.** CHRIST's redemptive death for mankind was part of GOD's plan from eternity past. Further, sacrificially, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came to the world as the Lamb of GOD without blemish and without spot and shed HIS most precious blood for the redemption of the world; and historically, HE was manifest in the flesh, in these last times for mankind.

*"But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,"*

I Peter 1:19-20

*"...The Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."*

Revelation 13:8

Now let us refer to Ephesians 1:4.

*"According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love:"*

Ephesians 1:4

**Before the foundation of the world:** This phrase is confirmed in II Timothy 1:9 and Titus 1:2. The hope of eternal life was promised; we were called according to HIS purpose and grace before the world began. The Holy Bible is GOD's way of getting people come to know HIS will and HIS plan for mankind.

**Further, what was there in GOD'S mind before HE created the world? It was the Gospel plan; it was the preaching of the Gospel of GOD'S salvation; it was the LORD'S magnificent plan of salvation. GOD'S magnificent plan was to send HIS SON into the world to be the Saviour (St. John 3:16-17; I Timothy 1:15) and to send HIS HOLY SPIRIT later after the ascension of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.**

*"Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go*

*away: for if I go not away, the Comforter (the HOLY SPIRIT) will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send HIM unto you."*

St. John 16:7

Now, GOD could not do according to this magnificent plan if there were no world in which to enter. So, GOD had a plan, HE had a job to do and Genesis 1:1 refers to the first step in the salvation plan. A sequence of events will follow in the fulfilment of HIS specific purpose. Isaiah 45:18 says,

*"...GOD HIMSELF that formed the earth and made it; HE hath established it, HE created it not in vain, HE formed it to be inhabited: ..."*

Isaiah 45:18

So, GOD did not create the universe without purpose. The magnificent plan of GOD was set in motion '**In the beginning**' and would not stop until it was completed. At the point of completion, the physical universe will have served its purpose and will cease to exist.

Now, do we realize how great the value of a soul is? Do we realize the absolute necessity for such a precious soul to be delivered from the eternal wrath of GOD? How great and enormous is the worth and value of a soul if the Almighty Creator HIMSELF had to make a great sacrifice by coming to earth in order to redeem it!

From all these things, we come to understand that the Holy Bible is an **Invaluable Compendium** of GOD's **Wisdom**.

**Genesis**, the first book of the Holy Bible gives an account of the creation of the universe. It also depicts the creation of the first man and woman, created in the image of GOD and in true holiness and righteousness of GOD. It also tells about their fall into sin and about the promised Saviour of mankind.

In the Old Testament, there are also many prophecies concerning the promised Saviour. The New Testament clearly affirms that the promised Saviour is the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Hence, the New Testament of the Holy Bible is the exact fulfilment of the Old Testament of the Holy Bible or the Torah. Thus, all Jews or Israelites should believe and accept the New Testament of the Holy Bible as their holy book. They should also believe and accept the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST as their own GOD and Saviour.

They should also believe and accept the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST as their ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. They should also believe and accept the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST as their own GOD, JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH. They should also believe and accept the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST as their own GOD, the MESSIAH or the MESSIAS. Not only the Jews, but everyone of us should also believe and accept the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST as our own GOD and as our ONLY GOD. Everyone should also believe and accept the Holy Bible as his or her only holy book given by his or her own GOD and by his or her ONLY GOD, the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

The New Testament of the Holy Bible deals in a detailed manner, with the fulfilment of the prophecies in the Old Testament of the Holy Bible about our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. HE left HIS glory and splendour and HIS glorious heavenly home and came into the world to save sinners, the mankind through HIS great sufferings and death on the cross. It also tells us how HE conquered death for us. It also portrays HIS glorious resurrection from the dead and HIS glorious ascension into heaven. It also affirms HIS promised return after preparing a place for HIS people. In HIS glorious return HIS people, the saved will enter into heaven and the unsaved will have to enter into hell.

The Holy Bible confirms that there is GOD; it confirms that there is ONE GOD and ONLY ONE GOD and ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST (I John 5:20). It says about man; it says about sin; it says about faith; it says about life; it says about judgment; it says about heaven; it says about hell; and it says about itself.

*"...The Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in CHRIST JESUS. All Scripture is given by inspiration of GOD, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness."*

II Timothy 3:15-16

**St. John 3:16** is a verse in the Holy Bible which has been **translated** into more than **1100** languages. It tells of ONE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) who loved us with an everlasting love.

**“For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON, that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life.”**

St. John 3:16

The Holy Bible is without error because the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the author of the Holy Bible is without fault. The Holy Bible is the most Holy Book of the LORD. It is the most Holy Book of the heavenly GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. It is the most Holy Book of heaven. So, everyone must seek and read it.

*“Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: ...”*

Isaiah 34:16

**The Holy Bible** is likened to a terrible fire that judges sin, and a hammer that judges sin (Jeremiah 23:29). **It is the divine Mirror** that reveals sin (James 1:23), a very sharp sword that defeats Satan, the devil (Ephesians 6:16-17), a very sharp two-edged sword that pierces to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, a very sharp two-edged sword that discerns thoughts and intents of the heart (Hebrews 4:12), a lamp that guides the believers and a light that guides the believers (Psalm 119:105). The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD is living and powerful (Hebrews 4:12). It is deep and profound. **It is the divine Microscope** to view and understand very minute spiritual things in spiritual life. **It is the divine Telescope** to view and understand very distant spiritual things—the kingdom of GOD or kingdom of heaven, judgment, hell, etc. with farsightedness.

The Holy Bible clearly shows that the Saviour of the world is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (St. John 4:42). It also clearly shows that the Redeemer of the world is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (Ephesians 1:7). It also clearly shows how to live a holy life to HIS glory to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

Saint John says that his Gospel (Good News about JESUS CHRIST) is written that you might "believe that JESUS is the CHRIST, the SON OF GOD; and that believing ye might have life (everlasting life) through (in) HIS name". See St. John 20:31. The Holy Bible is also called the Scripture of Truth (Daniel 10:21). It is also called the Good Book. **It is the only Good Book with Good News for all. It is the only Good Book with Good News for all time. It is the only Truthful Book for all. It is the only Truthful Book for all time.** So,

we must love GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS Word, the Holy Bible very much.

The last book of the Holy Bible is Revelation. In Revelation CHRIST and HIS eternal programme are fully revealed by our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. The Holy Bible ends with a benediction of grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Its ending itself reveals that the Almighty GOD is the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

**“The grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.”**

Revelation 22:21

The Holy Bible is uniquely inspired and revealed by the HOLY SPIRIT. It clearly gives the evidence of apostolicity. The proper teaching of the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures is called "the apostles' doctrine (Acts 2:42)". It means that which the apostles taught to the church during the first century. The Holy Bible is the final authority on all matters of Christian life (faith and practice).

The Holy Bible is the only Holy Book for all. The Holy Bible is the only Holy Book for all time. The Holy Bible is a timeless treasure. The Biblical truths are timeless. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

We call the Holy Bible, the Word of GOD. GOD revealed HIS Word through men. These men were moved by GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT. Every Word is GOD-breathed. Every Word is inspired by GOD.

We call the Holy Bible, the Word of GOD. In Exodus 20:1 Moses wrote, "And GOD spake (spoke) all these words, saying ...". It was GOD who did the speaking and Moses wrote what HE said.

Augustine who lived in the fifth century wrote: "Let us therefore yield ourselves and bow to the authority of the Holy Scriptures which can neither err nor deceive".

Sir Walter Scott, one of the greatest novelists was on his deathbed. Then he asked Lockhart to read to him. He was puzzled as he scanned the bookshelf of Sir Walter Scott and asked him, "What book shall I read?" And Sir Walter replied, "Why do you ask that question? There is but one Book; bring the Holy Bible". Yes! There

is only one Book for any man who is **dying**, but it is also the Book for any man who is **living**. A great many people do not get interested in the Holy Bible until they go to the end of their lives or until they get in a great deal of difficulty.

Gladstone, statesman, Prime Minister, one of the greatest legal minds of Britain said, "Talk about the questions of the day! There is but one question and that is the Gospel. That can and will correct everything. I am glad to say that about all the men at the top in Great Britain are Christians". That was way back in the 1800's. Gladstone continues: "I have been in public position fifty-eight years all but eleven of them in the Cabinet of the British Government and during those forty-seven years have been associated with sixty of the master minds of the century and all but five of the sixty were Christians".

Michael Faraday, perhaps the greatest experimenter said: "But, why will people go astray, when they have this Blessed Book of GOD to guide them?"

President Thomas Jefferson said this about the Holy Bible: "I have always said, and always will I say that the studious perusal of the Sacred Volume will make better citizens, better husbands, and better fathers".

What does Daniel Webster say about the Holy Bible? "If there be anything in my style or thoughts to be commended, the credit is due to my kind parents for instilling into my mind an early love of the Scriptures". He also made this statement: "I have read the Bible through many times. I now make a practice of going through it once a year. It is the Book of all others, for lawyers as well as divines. I pity the man who cannot find in it a rich supply of thought and rules for conduct".

Is it not wonderful that GOD has given us a Book in which we can find comfort and consolation in times of stress and trials? This Holy Book's greatness does not stop with that. It is the only Book for us to advise and guide us to live; to live a life pleasing to our Creator. **Young or old, it should be our most powerful guidebook for effective living, for successful living and for blameless living. It is the book as current as everyday news for everyday life.** It is the Book to face life today; it is the only Book that furnishes the way to meet the

emergencies of modern life as well as to withstand or cushion the shocks that come to us in this stress-filled life. It is the only Book that provides the sure way, the safe way and the unfailing way through this world and on into the next world. It is the only Book that leads us from here to eternity. It is the only book, that is the true Word of GOD which is from everlasting-to-everlasting. All glory and honour to our LORD, the AUTHOR, PRESERVER, CUSTODIAN and CONSERVATOR of this Book! It is, indeed, the Book of books!

### 1.1 FIVE BOOKS OF HEAVEN

There are **five** books in heaven. They are:

(1) **The Book about the history of creation of all human beings.** This book has been written even before the creation of mankind or even before the creation of the world. In this book, the history of the creation of each of the human beings has been recorded individually.

*"THINE eyes did see my substance (frame), yet being unperfect (unformed); and in THY book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned (the days fashioned for me), when as yet there was none of them."*

Psalm 139:16

(2) **The Book about the accounts of sins committed by all human beings.** In this book, the sins committed by each of the human beings will be recorded individually. If anyone sins, his sin will be immediately and automatically recorded in this book with all minute details of place, year, month, day, date, time, hour, minute, second, etc. This book is being written automatically and continuously or continually. This book will be opened before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST on the day of judgment. The sinners will be judged according to what they had done as recorded in this book.

*"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before GOD; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."*

Revelation 20:12, 15



(3) **The Book of Life or The Lamb's Book of Life.** The Lamb is the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Almighty GOD. The names of the redeemed people or the saved people or the regenerated people or the born-again people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be written in this book. They are the saints. On the day of judgment, this book will also be opened. The saints of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be judged according to their good works as recorded in this book. The saints are the church of the first-born, whose names will be written in the Book of Life in heaven automatically.

*"To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, ..."*

Hebrews 12:23

*"And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh (causes an) abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's Book of Life."*

Revelation 21:27

Only those whose names are written and seen in the Book of Life will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The LORD will blot out the names of the backsliders from the Book of Life.

*"And the LORD said unto Moses, Whosoever hath sinned against ME, him will I blot out of MY book (Book of Life)."*

Exodus 32:33

(4) **The Book of Remembrance.** This book is being written before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in heaven, for those who fear the LORD and those who love to meditate upon HIS most holy name.

*"Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before HIM for them that feared the LORD, and that thought (meditated) upon HIS name."*

Malachi 3:16

(5) **The Book of the LORD or the Book of the Law of the LORD or the Holy Bible.** It tells us of GOD. It tells us of man. It is about every individual. The Holy Bible is the Book of the LORD. This book is the most holy book of the most holy LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the LORD GOD of heaven. Hence, the Holy Bible is the most holy book of heaven. The Holy Bible, the

most holy book of heaven is the only book given to mankind by GOD. So, everyone must seek and read this most holy book of the most holy GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The Holy Bible is written by inspiration of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT. The Holy Bible is written by holy men of GOD inspired by the HOLY SPIRIT.

*“Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for MY mouth it hath commanded, and HIS Spirit it hath gathered them.”*

Isaiah 34:16

Our LORD GOD has given us the great things of HIS Law. Therefore, no one should regard these great things of the Law of the LORD as something alien.

*“I have written to him the great things of MY law, but they were counted as a strange thing.”*

Hosea 8:12

To find out the essence of the Holy Bible, look at its wonderful beginning (origin) and look at its merciful and gracious ending. Its beginning itself reveals that GOD is the Creator of the heavens and the earth, and HE created the heavens and the earth from nothing and HE is the Almighty GOD. The **first verse** in the Holy Bible is:

**“In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth.”**

Genesis 1:1

Its **beginning** itself reveals its unchangeable truth. Its beginning itself reveals its unchanging truth. Its beginning itself reveals the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

Its **ending** itself is a benediction of grace. Its ending itself reveals that the Almighty GOD is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF, and HE is the Creator of the heavens and the earth, and HE is the most merciful and gracious GOD, and HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is very merciful and gracious towards all. The **last verse** in the Holy Bible is:

**“The grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.”**

Revelation 22:21

Further, to find out the essence of the Holy Bible, read it prayerfully from beginning to end.

Everyone should give a deep reverence to this most Holy Book of GOD, the Holy Bible. So, we reverentially kiss it; we reverentially touch it by our eyelids and hands; we reverentially read it; we reverentially place it; we reverentially carry it by our hands. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.2 WHAT DOES THE HOLY BIBLE SHOW ?

The Holy Bible is the only book of the ONLY GOD, which shows the only true way or the only good way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The most holy book of Christians, the truthful Law of GOD, or the Holy Bible tells about the ONLY GOD and HIS only true way and HIS only good way. This is the immensely holy book. This is the most holy book of the GOD of heaven. The Holy Bible is the only book, which shows the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD to mankind. This is the most holy book of the most holy GOD, given by the most holy GOD HIMSELF.

*“Thus saith the LORD, Stand ye in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk therein, and ye shall find rest for your souls. ...”*

Jeremiah 6:16

### 1.3 THE SECRETS OR MYSTERIES IN THE HOLY BIBLE

The Holy Bible, the most holy book of the LORD GOD or the most holy Law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST means GOD's mysteries or GOD's secrets. Thus, the Holy Bible is the most holy book that contains the secrets or mysteries of GOD. The mystery of GOD is CHRIST, the Head (Colossians 2:2; Ephesians 5:23). The mystery of CHRIST is the church (Ephesians 3:4; 5:32).

Secret means not known or not seen. So, GOD HIMSELF is secret. CHRIST HIMSELF is secret. GOD the FATHER HIMSELF is secret. GOD the SON HIMSELF is secret. GOD the HOLY SPIRIT HIMSELF is secret. Now, CHRIST is the GOD; CHRIST is GOD the FATHER; CHRIST is GOD the SON; and CHRIST is GOD the HOLY SPIRIT.

The Word of GOD or the Gospel of JESUS CHRIST is secret. Godliness is secret. Every experience of spiritual life or a life of faith is secret. The kingdom of heaven or kingdom of GOD is secret. Thus, the holy Law of the LORD or the Holy Bible is the immensely glorious book of the GOD of heaven, which contains all divine secrets.

*"...The mystery of GOD, and of the FATHER, and of CHRIST; In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge."*

Colossians 2:2-3

*"And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel."*

Ephesians 6:19

*"Withal praying also for us, that GOD would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of CHRIST, for which I am also in bonds."*

Colossians 4:3

*"Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: GOD was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory."*

I Timothy 3:9, 16

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"All things are delivered to ME of MY FATHER: and no man knoweth who the SON is, but the FATHER; and who the FATHER is, but the SON, and he to whom the SON will (wills to) reveal HIM."*

St. Luke 10:22

A knowledge of GOD the FATHER is bestowed on whomever GOD the SON wills to reveal it. Hence, it is also a secret. GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT are the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

What are the mysteries of GOD? CHRIST, the GOD is the mystery. GOD, the FATHER is the mystery; GOD is the mystery (Colossians 2:2; 4:3 and Ephesians 3:4). The Word of GOD is the mystery, which has been kept hidden for ages and generations (Colossians 1:25-26). The glorious and the everlasting Gospel of the blessed GOD is the mystery (Romans 16:25-26; I Timothy 1:11; Revelation 14:6 and

Ephesians 6:19). Godliness is the mystery (I Timothy 3:16). The faith is the mystery, i.e., the life by faith is the mystery (I Timothy 3:9). The kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD is the mystery (St. Matthew 13:11).

The mystery of CHRIST, the GOD and HIS Church is great (Ephesians 5:32). The mystery of CHRIST, the GOD is CHRIST HIMSELF. The saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the believers or the true Christians of HIS Church, the spiritual Church or the true Christian Church are the Body of CHRIST and members of HIS Body individually (I Corinthians 12:27). GOD's minister or GOD's servant, the one who has been bound to speak the mystery of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS Church and HIS Gospel, the Word of GOD and all other spiritual things is also a mystery (Colossians 4:3-4; Ephesians 6:18-20). GOD's minister or GOD's servant, the one who has been bound to write the mystery of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS Church and HIS Gospel, the Word of GOD and all other spiritual things is also a mystery or secret. **Thus the one who has written this precious and blessed and rare and challenging Book, "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" — "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!" is also a mystery or secret and hence this precious and blessed and challenging Book is also a mystery or secret.** Glory be to GOD!

The Holy Bible of the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST contains all the mysteries of the LORD GOD. It contains all the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. All the mysteries are contained in the Holy Scripture of the most holy LORD. The minister of the LORD GOD is the steward of all these mysteries. This steward should not be a liar. He must be found faithful always (I Corinthians 4:1-2).

#### 1.4 CONTENTS OF THE HOLY BIBLE

**This is not a book written through the imagination of man. The Holy Bible is the most holy book written by holy men of GOD inspired and guided by the HOLY SPIRIT. It is a Book of History; It is a Book of Science; It is a Book of Geography; It is a Book of Astronomy; It is**

a **Book of Revelations of GOD; and it is a Book of Prophecies of GOD.**

**The Holy Bible is an Invaluable Compendium of GOD's Infinite Wisdom.** It contains revelations written by GOD with HIS most holy fingers, and spoken through HIS saints, testimonies of what the saints had seen with their eyes and heard with their ears, witnesses of their experiences and attainments, historical accounts from creation to the present. GOD gave this most holy book to inspire and illuminate humanity so that it may be "profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness" (II Timothy 3:16-17).

It contains the mind of GOD; it contains the state of man; it contains the way of salvation; it contains the doom of sinners; and it contains the joy of believers. Its doctrines are holy, its precepts are binding, its histories are true, and its decisions are immutable.

We also find eschatological references relating to death, resurrection, the end of the world and the day of final judgment. Through this most holy book of our most holy GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST mandates us to be holy and blameless, faultless and guiltless, spotless and without blemish, unreprouvable and irreproachable.

The sky and the earth shall pass away, but even a single Word of GOD or a part of GOD's Word or a letter or a part of a letter of GOD's Word or even a dot and curve of GOD's Word will not go unfulfilled. GOD's Words are everlasting Words (St. Matthew 5:18).

*"Heaven and earth shall pass away, but MY Words shall not pass away."*

St. Matthew 24:35

The Holy Bible has **six key parts:** (1) The Creation (2) The Fall of mankind (3) The Israel nation (4) The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (5) CHRIST's followers—The acts of the risen CHRIST by the HOLY SPIRIT through HIS followers (apostles) and (6) The end-time.

## 1.5 HOW DOES GOD REVEAL THROUGH THE HOLY BIBLE ?

GOD reveals HIMSELF through the Holy Bible by various means. The LORD GOD reveals HIMSELF through visions, dreams, poetry (Psalms), history, biography (especially the Gospels), sermons,

face-to-face conversations, tablets of stone, miracles, parables and angels. The ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is clearly revealed through the person of CHRIST. HIS means of self-revelation is the Holy Bible.

*"And the WORD was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld HIS glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the FATHER,) full of grace and truth."*

St. John 1:14

'Was made flesh' means 'became flesh'.

*"And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it."*

Isaiah 40:5

## 1.6 WHAT DOES THE HOLY BIBLE REVEAL ?

The Holy Bible is the divine revelation of GOD. The Holy Bible of GOD is the only Book, which reveals the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is the only Book, which reveals the only true way of the ONLY TRUE GOD. This Book reveals the divine way or the way of life or the good and everlasting way or the way to heaven. This is the Book, which reveals man's mind or heart. The key to the whole man is mind or heart. Whatever captures the mind or heart captures the man. A man with a redeemed mind or heart can live in GOD and others cannot live in GOD.

*"The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?"*

Jeremiah 17:9

Again, the Holy Bible reveals who a sinner is and what he is.

*"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of GOD."*

Romans 3:23

Further, the Holy Bible reveals also, who a man of GOD is and what he is.

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

Again, the Holy Bible reveals the true church of GOD. This is the Book, which reveals who the people of GOD's church are.

*"...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be saved."*

Acts 2:47

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given us the Holy Bible, which is the only Word of GOD. In HIS Book, GOD reveals to us that the reason for our calamities, disasters, adversities and hardships is not because of the economy, politics, or circumstances. The main reason is: our sins. Our sins are the source of our calamities, adversities, etc., and our sins have made us GOD's enemies. Our sins and iniquities separate us from HIS most glorious presence.

*"But your iniquities have separated between you and your GOD, and your sins have hid HIS face from you, that HE will not hear."*

Isaiah 59:2

**GOD reveals HIS love to the whole world, through the following Biblical verses:**

*"For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON, that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life."*

St. John 3:16

*"Herein is love, not that we loved GOD, but that HE loved us, and sent HIS SON to be the propitiation for our sins."*

I John 4:10

'SON' refers to 'the LORD JESUS CHRIST'.

However, GOD's love is qualified. The Holy Bible says,

*"The way of the wicked is an abomination unto the LORD: but HE loveth him that followeth after righteousness."*

Proverbs 15:9

*"For the LORD knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish."*

Psalm 1:6

Our sins are the source of our **calamities** and our sins have made us GOD's enemies.



## 1.7 THE UNIQUE BOOK

Through the Holy Bible GOD talks to us. Through the Holy Bible GOD reveals HIS divine mind to us. Through the Holy Bible GOD reveals HIMSELF fully to us. The Holy Bible reveals HIS divine plan for our future. Without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing of GOD; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing of ourselves; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing about repentance from sins, or forgiveness (remission) of sins, or salvation from sins, or any spiritual experiences; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing of HIS great love and mercy towards us; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing of HIS kingdom of heaven; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing of HIS joy and hope; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing of HIS terrible judgment; without the Holy Bible, we would know nothing about the horrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

The LORD GOD reveals HIMSELF through the written Word, the Holy Bible or the Divine Book. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book. The Holy Bible is the LORD GOD's Book. The Holy Bible is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's Book. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Author of the Holy Bible. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Originator of the Holy Bible. The Holy Bible is the one and the only book authored by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Holy Bible alone is the authoritative Book of GOD. No book is equal to the Holy Bible in revelation, in authority or in power. The Holy Bible has the authority and power to change sinners' lives. **It is a life-changing book.** It is set apart and above all other books. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Holy Bible is given by inspiration of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Holy Bible is all-inspired of GOD. HE inspired every word of the Scripture equally. Literally, inspiration of GOD means, "GOD-breathed". Hence, the Holy Bible was "breathed out of the most holy mouth of GOD". GOD breathed out the Holy Bible to men.

*"All Scripture is given by inspiration of GOD, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of GOD may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works."*

Inspiration refers to the supernatural guidance of the writers of the Scripture by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.

Further, the Holy Bible is inerrant and infallible. It is filled with spiritual truths found nowhere else. Only the spiritually perfect people can understand spiritual truths. Since natural men (sinners) are blinded by satanic blindness, they cannot understand the Holy Bible.

*"But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."*

I Corinthians 2:14

The Holy Bible was recorded by the original writers without error, totally free of mistakes or inaccuracies or omissions. The original manuscripts of the Holy Scripture (the autographs of the Holy Scripture) are inerrant.

The Holy Bible is inerrant (without error) and it is infallible (incapable of error). There just cannot be any mistake in GOD's Word. The Holy Bible is infallible, incapable of containing anything that is not correct. Only the Holy Bible is totally free from error, since it is given by GOD. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST cannot lie (Titus 1:2). So HE cannot permit anything that is not true. Hence HIS Word is totally accurate. The Holy Bible is set apart from all other books and different from all other writings, since it is the Book of GOD and it is the most accurate Book of GOD.

Again, GOD is eternal. Since our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is eternal, HIS Word is also eternal. GOD is without beginning or end. Hence, GOD is above time. GOD's divine mind contained HIS divine Word eternally. The truth in HIS Word is eternal truth. Hence, the Word of GOD itself is without time and HIS Word is eternal. Thus, the Holy Bible contains the Word of GOD who is eternal. The Holy Bible is eternal and it will never die or pass away.

*"For ever, O LORD, THY Word is settled in heaven."*

Psalms 119:89

*"Heaven and earth shall pass away: but MY Words shall not pass away."*

St. Luke 21:33

Furthermore, the Holy Bible is the complete revelation of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Holy Bible is complete, since it contains all the required spiritual matters as well as all the required temporal matters. To live spiritually as well as materially, everyone needs to know the Holy Bible. The Holy Bible contains the complete revelation of GOD concerning HIMSELF, HIS divine love, HIS divine purposes, HIS divine promises, HIS divine prophecies, HIS divine works, etc. The Holy Bible is a divine revelation of the divine mind of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to us.

Thus, the Holy Bible is absolutely and totally unique. The Holy Bible alone is GOD's Book. The Holy Bible alone is GOD's authoritative book. The Holy Bible alone is inspired of GOD, breathed out of HIS most holy mouth. The Holy Bible alone is different from all other books. The Holy Bible alone is inerrant, totally free from error. The Holy Bible alone is infallible, totally incapable of error. The Holy Bible is the only book that is eternal and its author and the originator is the Only Being who is eternal. The Holy Bible is the only complete book. It shows the way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD and it warns the sinners about judgment and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Hence, everyone should seek and read the Holy Bible, the Book of the LORD. If you read the Holy Bible, the Book of GOD, then you can very well understand that you will never find another book like it.

*"Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for MY mouth it hath commanded, and HIS Spirit it hath gathered them."*

Isaiah 34:16

During the reign of Her Majesty Queen Victoria, an African prince came to England; he was presented to the queen. This prince asked a very significant question, "What's the secret of England's greatness?" Immediately, the queen got a beautifully bound copy of the Holy Bible and presented it to the prince; she said, "This is the secret of England's greatness".

There are so many books in this world. But, the only book that is absolutely and totally unique is the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. It is the one and only book of GOD that speaks to mankind today. It

is the one and only book of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST that can turn sinners into saints. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.8 WHICH IS THE BEST VERSION OF THE HOLY BIBLE ?

Only in the Authorized King James Version (1611) or the Authorized Version (1611) of the Holy Bible in English, we can find complete safety and security. In this Bible only we can find GOD's perfectly preserved prescription—inerrant, infallible and authoritative. This Bible is like the good tree, which brings forth a good fruit. In this Bible, every vital doctrine is perfectly preserved and its theology is good. This Bible is the most accurate and faithful of all translations. The Authorized (King James) Version (1611) is the best version of the Holy Bible in English.

The "Good Tree" comprises "Good Translators", godly men whose thinking was not corrupted by modern thought and godless "isms". These men adopted a "Good Text", namely "Textus Receptus", and employed a "Good Technique", the faithful "Word for Word Technique" or "Formal or Verbal Equivalence Technique". GOD's inspired word for the end time is seen in this translation. These translators were filled with awe while reading GOD's Word and held the Word of GOD in great respect, combined with fear and wonder and they loved GOD's Law and they treasured every word. They neither added to nor diminished anything from the text of the Scripture as commanded by GOD.

*"...My heart standeth in awe of THY Word."*

Psalm 119:161

*"O how love I THY law! it is my meditation all the day."*

Psalm 119:97

*"Ye shall not add unto the Word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish aught from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your GOD which I command you."*

Deuteronomy 4:2

The Authorized (King James) Version honours GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. It honours the person and redemptive work of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in all of its parts. Christian faith and doctrine are preserved whole and complete in this

version. There is no diminution or dilution or undermining or distortion or deletion or manipulation in this version.

The Authorized (King James) Version upholds that GOD exists in three co-equal and co-eternal persons—the FATHER, the SON and the HOLY SPIRIT. It also upholds that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the eternal SON OF GOD, who was conceived by the HOLY SPIRIT and born of the Virgin Mary and HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. It also upholds that sinners are

*"...Justified freely by HIS grace through the redemption that is in CHRIST JESUS: Whom GOD hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in HIS blood, ..."*

Romans 3:24-25

The offering of the most holy blood of JESUS CHRIST was a sufficient propitiation for the sins of the whole world. The blessings of HIS propitiation (sacrifice) are given only to those who by faith accept HIM.

*"And HE is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world."*

I John 2:2

Further, the Authorized (King James) Version upholds that "CHRIST died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and that HE was buried, and that HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures" (I Corinthians 15:3-4), and having ascended into heaven is now exalted at the right hand of GOD, the FATHER, interceding for those who truly trust HIM as their Saviour. See Ephesians 1:20; Hebrews 7:25.

Furthermore, the Authorized (King James) Version upholds the return of our LORD JESUS CHRIST for HIS own people (I Thessalonians 4:16-18), and the personal and visible return of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST to earth as KING of kings and LORD of lords (I Timothy 6:15), and HIS glorious reigning on the earth a thousand years (Revelation 20:6).

Again, the Authorized (King James) Version upholds that at death, the true believers will be "absent from the body" and they will be "present with the LORD". See II Corinthians 5:8.

The Authorized (King James) Version also upholds that the real spiritual unity of true believers is only in CHRIST. Those who are redeemed by HIS most precious blood are HIS true believers. See I Peter 1:18-19; I Corinthians 12:12. It also upholds that true believers are holy unto GOD and they must not join with unbelievers in any sort of prayer or worship or any Ecumenical linkage or any Charismatic linkage or any Oikoumenical linkage or any Roman Catholic's linkage or any New Ager's linkage or any liberal's linkage.

*"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath CHRIST with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of GOD with idols? for ye are the temple of the living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be MY people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a FATHER unto you, and ye shall be MY sons and daughters, saith the LORD Almighty."*

II Corinthians 6:14-18

*"What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it."*

Deuteronomy 12:32

*"...If any man shall add unto these things, GOD shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, GOD shall take away his part out of the Book of Life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book."*

Revelation 22:18-19

Now, "readability" and "understandable language" are in the modern Bible versions. Do not look at these things. Do not look at these modern Bible versions. They are like a poisoned chalice. They are like a corrupt tree that brings forth evil fruit. Now, go into the heart of the matter, and test the version. See whether the Christian faith is preserved whole. See whether the Christian doctrine is preserved whole. Therein lies the proof of goodness or corruption. This is a

spiritual thing; spiritual things must be "...SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED".  
I Corinthians 2:14.

For nearly four hundred years, one Bible, the Authorized (King James) Bible (1611), stood alone, universally received and rightfully acknowledged as **THE WORD OF GOD** in English. Its translation is authoritative and most accurate.

Now, other Bible versions, being counterfeit and corrupt are paving the way for the counterfeit kingdom of GOD-OIKOUMENE, the coming one world material church. But our GOD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST says:

*"Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you."*

II Corinthians 6:17

Now, Paul the apostle warns:

*"For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them."*

Acts 20:29-30

Further, Jude the apostle warns:

*"For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our GOD into lasciviousness, and denying the only LORD GOD, and our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

Jude 4

Furthermore, Paul the apostle warns:

*"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron."*

I Timothy 4:1-2

Two of the worst corrupted texts are Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus, the Minority Manuscripts. The evil character of these minority manuscripts is described by Oxford University Dean, John William Burgon as:

“most scandalously corrupt...most shamefully mutilated ... depositories of the largest amount of fabricated readings, ancient blunders, and intentional perversions of truth—which are discoverable in any known copies of the Word of GOD.”

In modern Bible versions, vital doctrines are attacked and corrupt theology preserved. Godless ideologies, viz., Ecumenism, Romanism, Evolutionism, Higher criticism, Rationalism and Liberalism are introduced in these texts by heretics, liberals, apostates and unbelievers, the enemies of GOD's Word. A corrupt technique, namely dynamic equivalence or complete equivalence is adopted in the translation of these texts. Authority of GOD's Word is undermined and men's thoughts in place of GOD's Word are poisonously injected in these modern English versions. These modern versions bear false doctrines, deadly destructive to the soul.

It is the Authorized (King James) Version versus all other corrupt modern versions. It is GOD's Word versus Satan's or devil's word. It is Truth versus falsehood. It is the Believing church versus the ecumenical church. It is GOD's servants versus all other false servants or false prophets or false teachers.

*“But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the LORD that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.”*

II Peter 2:1-3

All must read the Holy Bible, since it is GOD's Book from heaven. It is the Only Book, which can open the way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book of truth. The truth about GOD, human beings, and all other things is clearly explained in the Holy Bible. The truth about life and death is also clearly explained in the Holy Bible. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book of love. GOD's love for mankind is amazing and matchless. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book



of secrets. GOD's heavenly secrets are contained in this book. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book of wisdom. This book can make one wise unto eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book of power. This book transforms miserable sinners into sons of GOD. True Salvation is freedom from sin. Freedom from sin makes one, a son of GOD. Freedom from sin makes one, a servant to GOD. The Holy Bible is GOD's Book of eternal life. Everlasting life will enter into the saved one and he will receive holiness, the spiritual fruit. Finally, the gift of eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD will be given to the saved one, through our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"But now being made free from sin, and become servants to GOD, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of GOD is eternal life through JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

Romans 6:22-23

Not a word of the Holy Bible must be tampered with. Not even a letter or a dot in the Holy Bible must be tampered with. Moving just a dot makes a very great difference. The difference between life and death is seen by moving just a dot. "SAVE. NOT KILL./SAVE NOT. KILL." Removal of one space results in a contradictory message. "GOD IS NOW HERE./GOD IS NOWHERE."

The Holy Bible, the Authorized (King James) Version 1611, has been prayerfully presented by *rightly dividing the Word of Truth* (II Timothy 2:15) to bring a simple and clear understanding of GOD's Word or the Word of Truth. So it has been deeply revered among English-speaking peoples of the world.

Now, think about this carefully, the enormous and incalculable damage inflicted on GOD's Word by modern translators and linguists. Using modern methods of communication, both translators and readers (consumers) fell into the snare and into the trap of Satan, the devil; Satan has taken them captive to do his will. The modern scholars, in their defiance of GOD's commandment, took GOD's Word to pieces, chopping or changing, adding or deleting, twisting or mutilating, etc. They and their followers contribute to these demonic deceptions.

*"Every Word of GOD is pure: HE is a shield unto them that put*

*their trust in HIM. Add thou not unto HIS Words, lest HE reprove thee, and thou be found a liar."*

Proverbs 30:5-6

Seminary professors and ministers of many churches today are readily consenting to the wanton mutilation and doctoring of GOD's Word in the corrupt modern English Versions of the Bible. Since no man knows the day of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's coming, everyone must be ready to meet HIM.

*"But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN be. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the SON OF MAN cometh."*

St. Matthew 24:37-39, 44

"SON OF MAN" is the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Since we must all appear before the judgment seat of CHRIST, to receive good (heaven) or bad (hell), according to our deeds, everyone must always be on the watch and pray to receive good (heaven).

*"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of CHRIST; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad."*

II Corinthians 5:10

*"Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the SON OF MAN."*

St. Luke 21:36

Now, Ecumenism is the one church movement that is not at all spiritual. It is a material church movement. It advances towards its final goal: OIKOUMENE, one world (new world order), one world material church. Those who are not firmly anchored to JESUS CHRIST, the Rock of our Salvation will be swept into the ecumenical current. Those who are not firmly anchored to JESUS CHRIST will be swept into Charismaticism. This is a movement within Evangelicalism. The Evangelicals were once against the evil forces of liberalism, evolutionism, Ecumenism and Romanism. Later the Evangelicals

began to publicly acknowledge and confirm that they and the Catholics are together. They have fallen into the devilish path of collaboration, compromise and capitulation. Charismatics are telling about the HOLY SPIRIT renewal, to bring together Christians of all beliefs and persuasions. This devilish movement infects Protestants, Pentecostals, etc. Now, Roman Catholics have a very close relationship with this devilish movement. Also the para-church groups known as Promise Keepers are on the ecumenical approach of eliminating GOD's doctrines.

Now, almost all Christian denominations are on the move to join with ONE WORLD, OIKOUMENE. Soon the other religious groups (viz., Buddhists, Hindus, Muslims, Taoists, Confucians, Bahais, Jains, Sikhs, Jews, etc.,) and Marxists, Socialists, Atheists, Agnostics, Pagans, etc., will be on the move to join with ONE WORLD, OIKOUMENE. Hence, almost the whole world will be on the fateful move to join with Rome through the broad way. But a few people will be treading through the narrow way. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*“Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. ...”*

St. Matthew 7:13-16

## 1.9 TO SPEAK ILL OF THE HOLY BIBLE IS SIN

The devils and evil spirits tremble when they see the Holy Bible, which contains GOD's Words of life. Further, the devils and evil spirits tremble when the holy name of JESUS CHRIST is uttered and when the words, 'victory by the holy blood of JESUS' are uttered. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONLY TRUE GOD who came from heaven, to redeem and save men from sins and to take them to heaven. HE is the GOD who is now pleading for mankind in heaven. It is a terrible sin to speak ill of or to mock at or to blaspheme against JESUS CHRIST, the exceedingly holy GOD and HIS immensely holy book, the Holy Bible. These sins are liable to terrible judgment and hell.

Another name of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the GOD OF WORD.

*"In the beginning was the WORD, and the WORD was with GOD, and the WORD was GOD."*

St. John 1:1

If anyone speaks ill of or mocks at or blasphemes against or criticizes the Book of GOD, the Holy Bible, he is actually speaking ill of or mocking at or blaspheming against or reproaching GOD HIMSELF. No one should forget the fact that these are terrible sins against the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. These are sins liable to terrible judgment and hell.

### 1.10 DOCTRINAL TRUTHS

In the Holy Bible, the doctrinal truths about the Holy Trinity GOD: the unity of GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON, and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in One GODHEAD are written; the doctrinal truths about the Holy Triune GOD: One GOD in three functional Persons, GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON, GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in One GODHEAD are written; the doctrinal truths about the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST are written; the doctrinal truths about man, sin, salvation, angels, devils (demons) are written; the doctrinal truths about the church of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are written; the doctrinal truths about last days (the Coming of CHRIST, the Millennium rule of CHRIST, the wrath of GOD, judgment, heaven, hell, etc.) are written; and the doctrinal truths about the Word of GOD, the Holy Bible itself are written.

The Holy Bible, the Law of GOD is the truth (Psalm 119:142). The Holy Bible is perfect. The Holy Bible, the testimony of GOD is sure (trustworthy). The Holy Bible, the statutes of GOD is right and rejoicing. The Holy Bible, the commandment of GOD is pure (Psalm 19:7-8). The Holy Bible gives us great delight and great peace (Psalm 119:92, 165). The Holy Bible is a glorious light to our path and a glorious lamp to our feet. The Holy Bible, the Word of GOD is the divine food to us.

*"THY Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path."*

Psalm 119:105

*"...Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of GOD."*

St. Matthew 4:4

Understanding the Holy Bible is a matter of life and death. So, top priority must be given to understanding the Holy Bible for our survival and success. The Holy Bible divides the whole world into two groups, the righteous and the wicked (the sinners). As readers, we are being challenged to understand whether we belong to the first group, as recipients of the promise, the kingdom of heaven (the kingdom of GOD) or the second group, under terrible judgment of GOD and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. We must get hold of GOD's divine promises and take heed of severe warnings and threats. In the Holy Bible, we learn of GOD's case against us and that our sins are going to bring terrible judgment of GOD and hell-fire, the eternal punishment of GOD on us. Thus, GOD wants a whole change of life-style, purity of life and justice in us to enter into HIS kingdom.

The Holy Bible challenges '**scientism**'. Scientism does not give an answer to why the universe exists, and to when it will be transformed or destroyed. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE who holds the universe in existence (Colossians 1:17). During the Second Coming of CHRIST, a transformation or destruction of the universe will occur by bringing the New heaven and New earth of Revelation 21:1 by CHRIST HIMSELF.

From the Holy Bible, we can obtain devotional teachings, divine inspirations, corrective instructions and provision, protection and peace of GOD.

*"For whatsoever things were written aforetime (beforehand) were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope."*

Romans 15:4

The Word of GOD is the Holy Bible. The Holy Bible is the Word of GOD. The Word of GOD is living. GOD's Word is not old or out-of-date. It is very powerful and very active. It is sharper than any

double-edged sword. It pierces even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow. It discerns the thoughts and intentions of the heart, the inner secrets of man's mind. Nothing in all creation is hidden from GOD's sight. Everything is naked and everything is laid bare before the eyes of GOD to whom we must give account.

*"For the Word of GOD is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in HIS sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of HIM with whom we have to do."*

Hebrews 4:12-13

GOD reveals HIMSELF to men by HIS Word. HIS Word will not return to HIM in vain. HIS Word will accomplish HIS divine purpose.

*"For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall MY Word be that goeth forth out of MY mouth: it shall not return unto ME void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it."*

Isaiah 55:10-11

The great theme of the Holy Bible is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and HIS great work of redemption for mankind.

*"But these are written, that ye might believe that JESUS is the CHRIST, the SON OF GOD; and that believing ye might have life through HIS name."*

St. John 20:31

The great purpose of the Holy Bible, the Word of GOD is to reveal the living Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. See St. John 1:1-18.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has given us the Holy Bible in order that we might know the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and that we might do HIS will in this life on earth.

*“Open THOU mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of THY law (the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures).”*

Psalm 119:18

As the psalmist entreats, everyone should recognize the great need for illumination and inspiration by the HOLY SPIRIT in understanding the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures and everyone should pray for his/her eyes to be opened.

*“For what man knoweth the things of a man, save (except) the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of GOD knoweth no man, but the Spirit of GOD. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of GOD; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of GOD. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man’s wisdom teacheth, but which the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.”*

I Corinthians 2:11-13

**GOD has magnified HIS Word above all HIS name** (Psalm 138:2). GOD's Word is settled in heaven (Psalm 119:89). Everyone should seek and search GOD's Word as one seeks and searches for silver and hidden treasures (Proverbs 2:4). No doubt, obedience to GOD's Word brings immense blessings (Genesis 22:17-18).

Except the HOLY BIBLE, no other book will stand the test of time. Only the HOLY BIBLE, the Word of GOD will stand for ever (Isaiah 40:8). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Holy Bible is the most significant Book ever. The Holy Bible is a message of a loving GOD. The Holy Bible is a message for a sinning people. Where there is a sinning person, a loving GOD provides a redeeming Saviour. HE is found in every book of the Holy Bible. HIS message is seen throughout the Holy Bible.

*“For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON, that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life. For GOD sent not HIS SON into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through HIM might be saved.”*

St. John 3:16-17

Further, the Holy Bible is a message of a heavenly home, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD to HIS people. It is an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and that does not fade away.

*"Blessed be the GOD and FATHER of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, which according to HIS abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST from the dead, To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you."*

I Peter 1:3-4

*"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of GOD is with men, and HE will dwell with them, and they shall be HIS people, and GOD HIMSELF shall be with them, and be their GOD."*

Revelation 21:3

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures do not reveal everything. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures do reveal all we need to know. The secret things belong to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. But the things, which are revealed belong to us.

*"The secret things belong unto the LORD our GOD: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law."*

Deuteronomy 29:29

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD clearly warns the people of the whole world,

*"Time no longer (There will be no more delay!)."*

Revelation 10:6

The Holy Bible is telling the truth. This alone is the holy and truthful Book. This is the Book of GOD. The Holy Bible explains many historical events. The life of CHRIST divides the history of the whole world into two as Before CHRIST (B.C.) and Anno Domini (A.D.). Anno Domini means in the year of our LORD.

The Holy Bible is a unique Book. It is a most unusual Book. It is different from any other book. It is the only Book for any man who is **dying**; it is the only one Book for any man who is **living**.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the author of the Holy Bible. It has the most marvellous continuity and an undetachable unity which



any book that has ever been written does not contain or possess within its structure and content. And it is without error. It is infallible. It is a GOD-Book. In it, GOD says 2500 times "GOD said ... the LORD has said ... thus saith the LORD." It has been made indisputably clear that GOD is speaking through this Book. It is a Book that communicates life to you. It is GOD's communication to man.

An atmosphere of godliness and holiness pervades the whole Book. Divinity permeates all through.

The divine element is discernible in the

- (i) prophecies of the Old and New Testaments
- (ii) laws and worship of the Holy Bible
- (iii) historic events of the Holy Bible

The Holy Bible tells us how the world can be regenerated and how everyone can escape the wrath of GOD.

We need forgiveness : Where can we find language better than the LORD's Prayer (St. Matthew 6:9-13) and Psalm 51?

We need blessings : What can we do better than ponder the words of the sermon on the Mount (St. Matthew 5:1-12)?

We need protection : Where can we find a better promise than "*Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy GOD is with thee whithersoever thou goest.*" (Joshua 1:9)?

We need courage : What words are better than "*The LORD is my shepherd*" (Psalm 23)?

We need comfort : Where can we find it better than in the life of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST who bore our griefs (Isaiah 53:4)?

We need peace : LORD JESUS is the Prince of Peace; HE is the only ONE to give us peace, power, protection and provision (Isaiah 9:6; 53:5).

Each and everyone should read and believe the Holy Bible and live according to the Holy Bible to escape the terrible wrath of GOD and HIS terrible judgment and hell. Each and everyone should live according to the Holy Bible to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

### 1.11 GOD SPEAKS TO US

The words of the Holy Bible are not only words consisting of letters but spirit. The words of the Holy Bible are not only words consisting of letters but life. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"...The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life."*

St. John 6:63

The very nature of the Holy Bible is Spirit. So, it must be read with the Spirit—the Spirit of GOD. The Holy Bible contains the things of GOD. No one knows the things of GOD except the Spirit of GOD (the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD).

*"...The things of GOD knoweth no man, but the Spirit of GOD."*

I Corinthians 2:11

The Holy Bible is not understood by talent, research, or intelligence. The very root, and the very nature of the Holy Bible is spiritual. Only spiritual people can understand the Holy Bible. Only consecrated ones can understand the Holy Bible.

No one can find out GOD by research or wisdom or intelligence. In the same way, no one can understand the Holy Bible by research or knowledge. In order to understand the Holy Bible, we must be spiritual, and we must walk in the Spirit and live in the Spirit (Galatians 5:25). From the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Bible, we come to know that the spiritual things can only be discerned by spiritual men (I Corinthians 2:14). So, spiritual men or GOD's ministers are very essential to reveal the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Bible. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Since our LORD's Words are Spirit, we have to read them in Spirit (St. Luke 4:16-20); we have to meditate on them in Spirit (Psalm 1:2; Joshua 1:8); we have to memorize them in Spirit (Acts 20:35; Colossians 3:16); we have to search them in Spirit (St. John 5:39; Acts 17:11); and we have to compare them in Spirit (I Corinthians 2:13). Spiritual things must be compared with spiritual things. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual."*

I Corinthians 2:13

When we read the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, our hearts must be opened to GOD and our hearts must be single before GOD with obedience and submission. We must read the Holy Bible objectively, accurately, and non-inquisitively. In the Holy Bible, every incident has its characteristics. Without understanding these characteristics, no one can understand GOD's Word.

Everyone should set aside a certain amount of time everyday to study the Holy Bible—the most holy book of the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. When we pray to GOD, we speak with the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. When we read or study the Holy Bible, the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST speaks with us. What a blissful thing it is! What a blessed thing it is!

*"Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand."*

Revelation 1:3

Those who read the Holy Bible are the blessed. Those who hear the words of the Holy Bible are the blessed. Those who keep the facts of the Holy Bible are the blessed, the immensely blessed.

*"...Blessed are they that hear the Word of GOD, and keep it."*

St. Luke 11:28

*"So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of GOD."*

Romans 10:17

*"Let the Word of CHRIST dwell in you richly in all wisdom; ..."*

Colossians 3:16

GOD's Word is the pure spiritual food. GOD's Word is the sincere spiritual food for our spiritual growth.

*"As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the Word, that ye may grow thereby."*

I Peter 2:2

Our GOD is a faithful GOD, and we can feed on HIS faithfulness. Hence, GOD's faithfulness is our spiritual food.

*"Trust in the LORD, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed."*

Psalm 37:3

If we do not eat our spiritual food, we will become hungry, weary, and weak. If we do eat it, we will become strong, to overcome all trials behind us. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Holy Bible contains all topics, including: the beginning to the end, and the first to the last. Also, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the beginning and the end; HE is the first and the last. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."*

Revelation 22:13

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD is eternal (St. Matthew 24:35), powerful (Hebrews 4:12), light (Psalm 119:105), life (St. John 6:63) and hope (Romans 15:13). The Word of GOD gives eternal life to the lifeless (St. John 5:24), eternal power to the powerless (Romans 1:16), eternal help to the helpless (Psalm 119:147), eternal hope to the hopeless (Romans 15:13), eternal purpose or plan to the perplexed (St. John 6:68) and eternal light to those who are in sinful darkness (St. Matthew 4:16).

The Word of GOD is JESUS CHRIST, the GOD HIMSELF (Revelation 19:13). In HIS first coming, HE revealed the holiness, righteousness, love and grace of GOD. But in HIS second coming, HE will reveal the justice and judgment of GOD. **The greatest theme of all Bible prophecy is the Second Coming of CHRIST.** The theme of mankind's first prophecy

(Jude 14-15) is the second coming of CHRIST and the last message of the Holy Bible (Revelation 22:20) is the second coming of CHRIST. So, everyone should live soberly, holily, righteously and godly, in anticipation of the second coming of CHRIST.

## **2. USELESS WORSHIP AND TRUE WORSHIP**

The act of showing great reverence, honour, respect, humility, etc., to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST by offering prayers, praises and thanksgivings, singing songs, reading the Holy Bible, attending holy services and making confession of sins before GOD, is called the true worship of GOD. Other worships are useless worships.

*"O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the LORD our Maker."*

Psalm 95:6

Worshipping GOD in the Spirit is the true worship. Other worships are useless worships. Those who worship GOD in the Spirit are the true worshippers. They are the real Christians; they are the true Christians. They rejoice in CHRIST JESUS. They have no confidence in the flesh, the earthly things. They are the circumcised.

*"For we are the circumcision (the circumcised), which worship GOD in the Spirit, and rejoice in CHRIST JESUS, and have no confidence in the flesh."*

Philippians 3:3

Worshipping of angels, paying homage to angelic beings is a useless worship. Worshipping of saints is a useless worship. Worshipping of the sacred things of the saints is a useless worship. The act of making the sign of the cross (signation) is a useless worship. The act of making the sign of the cross to protect oneself against evil is a useless worship. Devil worship is a useless worship. Ancestor worship is a useless worship. Worshipping of human beings is a useless worship. These useless worships will certainly disqualify you for the prize, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

*"Let no man beguile (defraud) you of your reward in a voluntary humility (by delighting in false humility) and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly*

*puffed up by his fleshly mind,"*

Colossians 2:18

The **heretics** are falsely saying that they have witnessed numerous revelations and visions by their unspiritual and fleshly mind.

Angels are only servants of GOD. John, the apostle made the mistake of worshipping the angel of GOD rather than GOD HIMSELF.

*"...I (John) fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship GOD."*

Revelation 22:8-9

Only GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is to be worshipped (Acts 10:25-26). No one should worship or serve the weak and beggarly elements which by nature are no gods and no one should be in bondage to them (Galatians 4:8-9). No one should worship new false gods recently appeared, which are not GOD. They are the devils or demons (Deuteronomy 32:17).

*"Thou shalt have none other gods before ME (besides ME)."*

Deuteronomy 5:7

**Self-willed worship** with **false humility** is a useless worship (Colossians 2:23). Worshipping GOD according to one's own will and pleasure is a useless worship. Worshipping GOD according to GOD's will is true worship.

Now, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has given HIS Sabbath Day worship, the day of rest and worship and all other worships of HIM to be a sign between us and HIM.

*"Moreover also I gave them MY sabbaths, to be a sign between ME and them, that they might know that I am the LORD that sanctify them."*

Ezekiel 20:12

Now let us once again meditate on the exceedingly glorious things pertaining to the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. GOD is both visible and invisible. GOD is with form and without form. GOD has immensely glorious heavenly body. GOD is also the HOLY SPIRIT. The heaven is

HIS throne and the earth is HIS footstool. The LORD GOD esteems the one who is humble and contrite in spirit and the one who trembles at HIS Word.

*"Thus saith the LORD, The heaven is MY throne, and the earth is MY footstool: where is the house that ye build unto ME? and where is the place of MY rest? For all those things hath MINE hand made, and all those things have been, saith the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at MY Word."*

Isaiah 66:1-2

'Have been' means 'exist'. 'Contrite' means 'filled with deep regret for having done wrong'.

## 2.1 GOD CANNOT BE CONTAINED

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST upholds all things by HIS powerful word. HE regulates the whole universe by the mighty power of HIS command. HE is the Most High GOD.

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, when HE had by HIMSELF purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high."*

Hebrews 1:3

Will GOD really live upon the earth with men? Yes, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will really live upon the earth with men. HE came into the world with the name **EMMANUEL**, meaning '**GOD with us**'. HE came to dwell among HIS own people.

*"...And they shall call HIS name EMMANUEL, which being interpreted is, GOD with us."*

St. Matthew 1:23

Heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain HIM. There is no GOD like HIM in all of heaven and earth.

*"But will GOD in very deed dwell with men on the earth? behold, heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain THEE; how much less this house which I have built!"*

II Chronicles 6:18

## 2.2 WHOM TO WORSHIP ?

**Worship:** Only GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is to be worshipped (Revelation 19:10; 22:8-9; Acts 10:25-26). Everyone should worship and serve HIM only. HE is the LORD our GOD (Deuteronomy 5:6). HE is very near to us whenever we call upon or worship HIM (Deuteronomy 4:7) and we are also very near to HIM (Psalm 148:14).

*"...Thou shalt worship the LORD thy GOD, and HIM only shalt thou serve."*

St. Matthew 4:10

*"...The LORD our GOD is one LORD: And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."*

Deuteronomy 6:4-5

*"For THOU art great, and doest wondrous things; THOU art GOD alone."*

Psalm 86:10

The name that is above all other names is "JESUS". JESUS is the most exalted ONE. JESUS' name is the most exalted name. Hence, everyone should acknowledge HIM to be LORD, that is, GOD; every knee in heaven and on earth and under the earth should bow at the name of JESUS; every being in the universe should submit to HIM and confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD; everyone should confess his/her sins to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, etc. The glorification of JESUS is to the glory of GOD, the FATHER, for HIS honour. This clearly reveals that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD, the FATHER; the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Thus, everyone should worship and serve the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST only. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Wherefore GOD also hath highly exalted HIM, and given HIM a name which is above every name: That at the name of JESUS every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD, to the glory of GOD the FATHER."*

Philippians 2:9-11

'Things' means 'those'.



### 2.3 NO IDOLS

No one should make gods for himself, which are not gods.

*“Shall a man make gods unto himself, and they are no gods?”*

Jeremiah 16:20

Everyone should consider the impotence of false gods and the emptiness of false religion; and everyone **should worship** the All-powerful and the all-knowing GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*“Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people are vain: for one cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not. They are upright as the palm tree, but speak not: they must needs be borne, because they cannot go. Be not afraid of them; for they cannot do evil, neither also is it in them to do good.”*

Jeremiah 10:2-5

No one can be likened to our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. No one can be considered equal to our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE alone knows the future with complete accuracy. HE alone knows all with complete accuracy.

*“To whom will ye liken ME, and make ME equal, and compare ME, that we may be like? Remember the former things of old: for I am GOD, and there is none else; I am GOD, and there is none like ME.”*

Isaiah 46:5, 9

The **oneness** of GOD is clearly revealed in the following verse:

*“...I am the First, and I am the Last; and beside ME there is no GOD.”*

Isaiah 44:6

All worshippers of graven images or images or idols or photos are out to shame (Psalm 97:7). The graven image (carved idol) or any other idol is vanity (nothing). They see not; they know not; and they understand not. These inanimate idols are profitable for nothing. Those who worship the idols themselves are their own witnesses for this.

*"Who hath formed a god, or molten (molded) a graven image that is profitable for nothing?"*

Isaiah 44:10

When the LORD GOD spoke unto HIS people in Horeb out of the midst of the fire: they heard the voice of the words, but they did not see the form of GOD, they saw no similitude (likeness of anything); they heard only a voice. So any manner of similitude or likeness of anything should not be made to worship or to serve GOD. Again, no one should worship the sun or the moon or any other heavenly bodies created by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

*"Take ye therefore good heed unto yourselves; for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the LORD spake unto you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire: Lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure, the likeness of male or female, The likeness of any beast that is on the earth, the likeness of any winged fowl that flieth in the air, The likeness of any thing that creepeth on the ground, the likeness of any fish that is in the waters beneath the earth: And lest thou lift up thine eyes unto heaven, and when thou seest the sun, and the moon, and the stars, even all the host of heaven, shouldst be driven to worship them, and serve them, which the LORD thy GOD hath divided unto all nations under the whole heaven."*

Deuteronomy 4:15-19

'Corrupt' means 'act corruptly'. 'Similitude' means 'form'.

*"Thou shalt have none other gods before (besides) ME. Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the waters beneath the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy GOD am a jealous GOD, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate ME, And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love ME and keep MY commandments. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy GOD in vain: for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh HIS name in vain."*

Deuteronomy 5:7-11

‘Bow down’ means ‘worship’. ‘Visiting’ means ‘punishing’. ‘Guiltless’ means ‘innocent’.

No one should make use of the name of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in vain. HE will not hold anyone guiltless who misuses HIS most holy name.

## 2.4 USELESS WORSHIP

Therefore, no man should make an idol or a form or a figure or a picture or a photo for such a great GOD. It is a terrible sin against the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD to make a form, an idol or a statue, etc., and worship them. It is a useless worship, if a man worships anything or anyone, other than JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD, and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. If a man worships anyone, other than JESUS CHRIST, it is an act liable for terrible judgment and hell.

Idolatry is a useless worship. So, everyone should make it his/her habit to flee from idolatry. The Holy Bible says:

*“Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.”*

I Corinthians 10:14

Now, covetousness is also idolatry (Colossians 3:5). Setting one's desire more on anything else or anybody else than on our LORD JESUS CHRIST is called covetousness. So, everyone should set his complete desire on our LORD JESUS CHRIST and flee from idolatry.

*“...And covetousness, which is idolatry.”*

Colossians 3:5

Honouring GOD with their mouth and lips but not with their heart is a useless worship. Their fear or reverence toward GOD is taught by the precept of men. Their worship of GOD is made up only of commandments (rules) taught by men. So, they worship GOD in vain.

*“This people draweth nigh unto ME with their mouth, and honoureth ME with their lips; but their heart is far from ME. But in vain they do worship ME, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.”*

St. Matthew 15:8-9

This sort of worshippers are the hypocrites (St. Matthew 15:7). This sort of worship (praying) seen by others is a useless worship (St. Matthew 6:5).

## 2.5 GOD, SELF-EXISTENT CREATOR AND RULER

GOD is immensely holy and immensely divine. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is a self-existent being. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is eternal in relationship to time.

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the LORD, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty."*

Revelation 1:8

*"...And they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, LORD GOD Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come."*

Revelation 4:8

Only GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is sovereign in all HIS acts and deeds. HIS sovereignty is seen in HIS life, death and resurrection. Our GOD is the sovereign Ruler of the universe, at all times and in all places. No matter how powerful the opposing forces, at HIS own will and in HIS own time, GOD will utterly defeat them all. So, we must be in total loyalty to GOD always. Again, our GOD is the sovereign Ruler of all history. GOD's Old Testament prophets and New Testament writers (Gospel writers and Apostles) depict GOD's sovereign historical Rule of their days, as invaluable tools in the mighty hand of GOD.

The LORD GOD is unlimited in relationship to the immensity of space. GOD is immutable in HIS nature. GOD is consistent in HIS being.

*"For I am the LORD, I change not; ..."*

Malachi 3:6

The LORD GOD is immaculate in all HIS performances.

*"...For the LORD our GOD is righteous in all HIS works which HE doeth: ..."*

Daniel 9:14

The LORD GOD calls things that are not as though they were (Romans 4:17). The LORD GOD created the heaven and the earth

from nothing. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST brought the universe into existence by HIS instantaneous and miraculous act.

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

The LORD GOD's creation, except the creation of mankind, was fulfilled by HIS most powerful Word (Genesis 1:3, 11, 14-16, 20-21, 24-25; 2:7).

*"And GOD said, Let there be light: and there was light. And GOD said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. And GOD said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so."*

Genesis 1:3, 20, 24

Our GOD is the GOD of all ages. HE is the GOD of all history. The Holy Bible is a true historical record with true creation history. HIS purposes are being and will be carried out, until history itself is wound up. So, Christian faith depends on true historical facts and events, things which actually happened. Now, we are living in a world which cares less for truth. Through the Holy Bible, GOD speaks. Moreover, GOD is at work for the sake of all nations. For this, HE has started HIS glorious work from Israel nation. GOD's Word is very effective. **GOD speaks, things happen.** At GOD's Word the whole universe except mankind has been created. Further, the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Bible makes the Christian and it acts like a compass to guide us in the right direction, in the direction of true Christian life. So, we should not go in the wrong direction of modern life, sinful life. For this, we should be saved and we should become followers of JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD and respond to GOD in a Christ-like way of life.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's creation completely disproves **atheism** (the belief that GOD does not exist), **pantheism** (the belief that GOD can be identified with all the forces of nature and with all natural things), **polytheism** (the belief in or worship of two gods or many gods) and **evolution** (the gradual development of the characteristics of animals and plants over many generations).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is a very great GOD. HE is the sole Creator of all things.

*"Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of GOD, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear."*

Hebrews 11:3

## 2.6 TRUE WORSHIPPERS

*"But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the FATHER in spirit and in truth: for the FATHER seeketh such to worship HIM. GOD is a Spirit (GOD is Spirit): and they that worship HIM must worship HIM in spirit and in truth."*

St. John 4:23-24

How should we worship? Is our worship spiritual and real? Do we have the HOLY SPIRIT's guidance and help? Only those who are saved by the LORD JESUS CHRIST and those who are anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST would be able to worship GOD in Spirit and in truth. Those who are worshipping GOD in Spirit and in truth are the true worshippers of GOD. They are the true spiritual worshippers of GOD. Their worship is the true worship. Their worship is the true spiritual worship. The ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST seeks only such spiritual worshippers. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 2.7 WITH WHOM TO WORSHIP ?

*"Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the LORD out of a pure heart."*

II Timothy 2:22

*"Truly GOD is good to Israel, even to such as are of a clean heart."*

Psalms 73:1

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is good to those who are pure in heart. So, we should worship GOD out of a pure heart and we should worship GOD along with those who call on or worship the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST out of a pure heart.

To worship GOD out of a pure heart, we must flee youthful lusts, the evil desires; and we should pursue righteousness, the divine character of GOD, faith, the belief in GOD's Word, charity, the divine love of GOD, and peace, the peace of GOD. The **peace of GOD** gives peacefulness of mind, freeing HIS people from fear, and anxieties and worries. The peace of GOD will guard our hearts and our minds in CHRIST JESUS. Then we can worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST out of a pure heart along with those who worship GOD out of a pure heart. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And the peace of GOD, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through CHRIST JESUS."*

Philippians 4:7

*"Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the LORD."*

Hebrews 12:14

We should worship GOD along with the righteous and the holy. The righteous and the holy are the saved; they are the regenerated; they are the born-again people; they are the spiritual people; they are the true Christians. Their life consists in true righteousness and holiness (Ephesians 4:24). They live in the image of CHRIST (Romans 8:29). They are the pure in heart. They will see GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see GOD."*

St. Matthew 5:8

## 2.8 HOW TO WORSHIP ?

**We must worship GOD in Spirit and in truth (St. John 4:23-24). Thus we can worship GOD everywhere.** We must bow down and kneel before GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST with great reverence, humility and godliness and worship HIM. We must bow our heads and worship the LORD with our faces to the ground.

*"O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the LORD our Maker."*

Psalms 95:6

*"...And they bowed their heads, and worshipped the LORD with their faces to the ground."*

Nehemiah 8:6

We must worship GOD with a true confession of sin and with a true commitment to keep GOD's commandments and with weeping and with fasting, etc. See Ezra 10:1.

*"...They confessed, and worshipped the LORD their GOD."*

Nehemiah 9:3

*"...The children of Israel were assembled with fasting, and with sackclothes, and earth upon them."*

Nehemiah 9:1

The **essence of true worship** is honouring and worshipping GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for who HE is and being willing to present HIM what is valuable to us. The wise men (the Magi) brought gifts and fell down and worshipped JESUS for who was (St. Matthew 2:11). HE is holy, perfect, just and Almighty Creator of all things, worthy of the best and valuable we have to present. We are of great worth to GOD (St. Matthew 10:29-31). So, we must present our bodies with our spirit and soul (I Thessalonians 5:23) a living sacrifice, holy and well pleasing to GOD, which is our **wise spiritual worship** (Romans 12:1).

We must worship or serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling (Psalm 2:11). We must worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness (Psalm 96:9). We must worship GOD by singing loudly with a joyful shout (Psalm 98:4). We must worship GOD acceptably with great reverence and godly fear (Hebrews 12:28). We must worship GOD in Spirit and in truth (St. John 4:23-24). We must worship and serve GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, in the model of what is in heaven (Hebrews 8:5). In heaven, all the angels and the twenty-four elders and the four beasts (living creatures) fall down before GOD on their faces and worship HIM (Revelation 4:10-11; 5:7-10; 7:10-12).

Only holy men (not holy women) are commanded to worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST by lifting up their holy hands. No woman should lift up her hands and worship GOD. Women are not allowed to lift up their hands and worship GOD.

*"I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting (disputes)."*

I Timothy 2:8



If women lift up their hands and worship GOD, then it is not done decently and in order and it is not done for edification. But the Holy Bible, the Holy Scripture says:

*"Let all things be done decently and in order."*

I Corinthians 14:40

*"...Let all things be done unto edifying."*

I Corinthians 14:26

If we worship GOD by heaping our hands and kneeling down before HIM, then it is done decently and in order, and it is done for edification (Acts 21:5).

If we worship GOD by dancing and singing with men or ladies, then it is not done decently and in order, and it is not done for edification. If we worship GOD by dancing and singing with men or ladies, then it will be an entertainment but not a worship. **Entertainments** are sins. **Entertainers** are sinners. GOD has created us not to indulge in entertainments or to become involved in whatever our deceitful heart desires, but to live as HIS godly children (Malachi 2:15), always abiding by HIS heavenly will (St. Matthew 7:21).

Now, dead flies putrefy the precious ointment of the perfumer (Ecclesiastes 10:1). Similarly our **sins of dead flies** putrefy the priceless (invaluable) ointment of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the anointing oil (Psalm 23:5) or the fresh oil (Psalm 92:10). This oil makes our faces shine (Psalm 104:15) and gives us strength and power (Acts 1:8) to lead a good spiritual life. Our sins of dead flies putrefy our whole spiritual life. The lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, the pride of life (I John 2:16), seeing unwanted and ugly TV/Computer/Internet programmes, carousings, orgies, debaucheries, lies, thieveries, idolatry, adultery, witchcraft, wizardry, covetousness, murders, sexual immorality, entertainments, etc., putrefy our spiritual life. These sins of dead flies are sins that lead to death (I John 5:16), the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8)

Nowadays **cell phones and the media** also putrefy and kill many innocent lives. From morning till night and from night till morning, many people waste their precious time in front of the TV/Computer/Internet/Website/cell phones and they become the evil worshippers of these evil devices. These have become their idols. The evil deeds

seen through these evil devices ensnare and entrap the wicked sinners and they are caught in the cords of their sins and they die in their sins and finally, they will be condemned for ever in hell (Proverbs 5:22-23). Our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST does not want anyone to perish in hell. HE desires the repentance and salvation of all (Ezekiel 33:11). So, no one should worship these evil devices by seeing/hearing evil and ugly and unwanted things. No one should be the worshippers of these evil devices.

# REVELATION ABOUT ETERNAL LIGHT AND ETERNAL KINGDOM

## 1. QURAN ON LORD JESUS

### 1.1 QURAN INSTRUCTS NOT TO DOUBT JESUS

**THE QURAN** is the religious book of the Muslims. The Quran says that the Truth comes from thy LORD alone; so be not of those who doubt about JESUS. From the Quran we come to know that GOD chose and purified Mary and HE gave her glad tidings (glad news) of a WORD from HIM: HIS name will be CHRIST JESUS.

The Holy Bible says,

*"In the beginning was the WORD, and the WORD was with GOD, and the WORD was GOD. And the WORD was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld HIS glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the FATHER,) full of grace and truth."*

St. John 1:1, 14

'Was made flesh' means 'became flesh'.

*"...GOD was manifest in the flesh, ..."*

I Timothy 3:16

*"All things were made by HIM; and without HIM was not any thing made that was made."*

St. John 1:3

*"Who is the image of the invisible GOD, the firstborn of every creature: For by HIM were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by HIM, and for HIM: And HE is before all things, and by HIM all things consist."*

Colossians 1:15-17

'Firstborn of' means 'First in rank over'.

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, ..."*

Hebrews 1:3

From these facts, anyone can understand that the GOD, the WORD is the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE came into this world, as a seed of a woman, by the word of HIS power.

## 1.2 QURAN CONFIRMS THE HOLY BIRTH OF JESUS

Again, the Quran of Islam tells about the most holy and wonderful birth of JESUS CHRIST our LORD. HE was born from the womb of the blessed Virgin (the Virgin Mary), a woman, pure and chaste. HE was born of a special miracle. The Virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST was a special miracle. The most holy child JESUS led a most holy life. HE had not married. HE had no wife and children. HE lived as a sage and hermit. HIS life was a very pure life. HIS life was a wonderful life. HIS life was a sinless life. HE had committed no sin. HE was fully strengthened with the HOLY SPIRIT. HE was filled with holiness.

*"...Ye shall be holy: for I the LORD your GOD am holy."*

Leviticus 19:2

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST asks,

*"Which of you convinceth (convicts) ME of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe ME?"*

St. John 8:46

## 1.3 QURAN TELLS ABOUT THE MIRACLES OF JESUS

Also the Quran tells about the great miracles done by JESUS CHRIST. HE made the dead rise to life; HE healed the lepers and those born blind.

*"The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them."*

St. Matthew 11:5

#### 1.4 QURAN TELLS ABOUT THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS

Again, the Quran tells about the Second Coming of JESUS CHRIST to give judgment. HE is the ONE who went to heaven after performing great miracles. HE is the ONE who is to come to the world from heaven. Anyone who is against HIM is a cursed one. Anyone who is against HIM will get a humiliating punishment in hell. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the most righteous Judge and HE will be coming to give HIS righteous judgment to all sinners. On the day of HIS judgment, all sinners will be cast into the terrible hell.

*"Behold, HE cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see HIM, and they also which pierced HIM: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of HIM. Even so, Amen."*

Revelation 1:7

## 2. GOD IS LIGHT AND SALVATION

The Holy Bible says,

*"...GOD is light, and in HIM is no darkness at all."*

I John 1:5

This verse clearly signifies that GOD is perfect and good; and there is no sin or evil in HIM. Thus, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is perfect and good; and there is no sin or evil in HIM. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"The LORD is my light and my salvation; ..."*

Psalms 27:1

In this verse, David, the king of Israel expressed his confident trust about GOD. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is our light and salvation.

## 2.1 JESUS CHRIST IS THE TRUE LIGHT

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the true Light.

*"That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world."*

St. John 1:9

JESUS CHRIST came as a light to shine in this dark world.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on ME should not abide in darkness."*

St. John 12:46

The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the true Light came into the world to give light to every man. Everyone who does evil hates the light because of the fear that his deeds will be exposed. Men loved darkness instead of light, because their deeds were evil.

*"For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON, that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life. For GOD sent not HIS SON into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through HIM might be saved. He that believeth on HIM is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten SON OF GOD. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in GOD."*

St. John 3:16-21

From these facts, everyone can understand that the GOD, the true Light is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. That is, the true Light is the TRUE GOD; the true Light is the ONE GOD; the true Light is the ONLY ONE GOD; the true Light is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

In this connection, it is necessary for everyone, to know the facts about the true Light, with reference to the Holy Bible.

## 2.2 LIGHT OF GOD

The light of GOD is the light of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. In HIM is life; and the life is the light of men. Light shines in darkness; and the darkness has not understood it. Darkness represents those who are living in darkness or sin and those who live in the shadow of second death or hell.

*"In HIM was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not."*

St. John 1:4-5

Hence, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has shown us light.

*"GOD is the LORD, which hath shewed us light: ..."*

Psalm 118:27

In our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's light we see light.

*"...In THY light shall we see light."*

Psalm 36:9

The light of the LORD JESUS CHRIST's most holy face shines upon us.

*"GOD be merciful unto us, and bless us; and cause HIS face to shine upon us."*

Psalm 67:1

## 2.3 GOD'S WORD GIVES LIGHT

Also, the Word of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gives light. HIS Word is a lamp unto our feet and a light unto our path.

*"THY Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path. The entrance of THY Words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple. Order my steps in THY Word: and let not any iniquity have dominion over me."*

Psalm 119:105, 130, 133

## 2.4 LORD JESUS IS LIGHT AND SALVATION

Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the light and salvation.

*"The LORD is my light and my salvation; whom shall I*

*fear? the LORD is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?"*

Psalm 27:1

So, let us walk in the light of the LORD and in HIS salvation.

## 2.5 JOHN, THE BAPTIST BEARS WITNESS

There was a man sent from GOD, whose name was John the Baptist. Arabic name for 'John' is 'Yahya'. The same came for a witness, to bear witness about the true Light. He was not that Light, but he was sent from GOD to bear witness of the Light, to bear witness about the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the true Light, to bear witness about the TRUE GOD, the true Light.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the true Light gives light to every man. HE was in the world and the world did not recognize HIM. HE came unto HIS own, and HIS own people did not accept HIM. Only a few would welcome HIM. But to all who receive HIM, and believe in HIS name, HE gives the right to become children of GOD. They are reborn, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, not a physical rebirth from human passion or plan but from the will of GOD.

*"There was a man sent from GOD, whose name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. HE (the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST) was in the world, and the world was made by HIM, and the world knew HIM not. HE came unto HIS own, and HIS own received HIM not. But as many as received HIM, to them gave HE power to become the sons of GOD, even to them that believe on HIS name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of GOD."*

St. John 1:6-13

## 2.6 GLORY OF LORD JESUS IS GLORY OF TRUE GOD

The glory of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the same as the glory of the ONLY TRUE GOD, full of grace and truth.

*"...(And we beheld HIS glory, the glory as of the only begotten of*



*the FATHER,) full of grace and truth."*

St. John 1:14

So, all of you must arise and shine; let your light shine for all the nations to see and the glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is streaming from you.

*"Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon thee."*

Isaiah 60:1

## 2.7 JESUS, THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Light of the world. HE offers the gift of life. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"I am the Light of the world: he that followeth ME shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life."*

St. John 8:12

'Walk in darkness' means 'walking in sin'. So, if you follow HIM, you will not walk in darkness.

## 2.8 LIGHT OF LIFE

Again, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Light of the world. So, if you follow HIM, you will never stumble through the darkness, for the light of life will flood your path. See St. John 8:12.

## 2.9 FINAL JUDGE

One who rejects the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and does not accept HIS Words: that very Word, which HE spoke, will judge him in the last day. HIS commandment is life everlasting. HIS commandment will lead to everlasting life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"JESUS cried and said, He that believeth on ME, believeth not on ME, but on HIM that sent ME. And he that seeth ME seeth HIM that sent ME. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on ME should not abide in darkness. And if any man hear MY Words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejecteth ME, and receiveth not MY Words, hath one that judgeth him: the Word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in*

*the last day. For I have not spoken of MYSELF; but the FATHER which sent ME, HE gave ME a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that HIS commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak there-fore, even as the FATHER said unto ME, so I speak."*

St. John 12:44-50

## 2.10 WHO WILL NOT PERISH ?

Whosoever believes in JESUS CHRIST will not perish, but have eternal or everlasting life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"That whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have eternal life. For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON, that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life."*

St. John 3:15-16

## 2.11 JESUS CAME TO SAVE

The LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save sinners, but HE never came to condemn the world.

Whoever does right comes to the Light, and has everlasting life. And whoever does evil hates the Light, and meets eternal doom.

*"This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that CHRIST JESUS came into the world to save sinners; ..."*

I Timothy 1:15

## 2.12 JESUS IS ETERNAL LIFE

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and eternal life. HE gives eternal life to HIS people.

*"And we know that the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know HIM that is true, and we are in HIM that is true, even in HIS SON JESUS CHRIST. This (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is the true GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

## 2.13 THE LIGHT OF THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST

The light of the glorious Gospel of CHRIST, who is the exact image of GOD, is shining in the hearts of the believers. GOD who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, made HIS light shine in our hearts, to give us the light of the knowledge of the glory of GOD in the face of JESUS CHRIST.

*“But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious Gospel of CHRIST, who is the image of GOD, should shine unto them. For we preach not ourselves, but CHRIST JESUS the LORD; and ourselves your servants for JESUS’ sake. For GOD, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of GOD in the face of JESUS CHRIST. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of GOD, and not of us.”*

II Corinthians 4:3-7

## 2.14 JESUS, THE PRECIOUS LIGHT

Now, to those who believe JESUS CHRIST, the true Light, HE is very precious. HE is more precious than anything else.

*“Unto you therefore which believe (Therefore, to you who believe) HE is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the Stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the Head of the corner.”*

I Peter 2:7

*“Therefore thus saith the LORD GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a Foundation a Stone, a Tried Stone, a Precious Corner Stone, a Sure Foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.”*

Isaiah 28:16

Stone refers to JESUS CHRIST.

## 2.15 JESUS, THE MARVELLOUS LIGHT

Those who believe in JESUS CHRIST are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people, a people belonging to GOD; a people changed by the mercy of GOD; that they should

declare the praises of HIM who has called them out of darkness into HIS marvellous and wonderful light.

*"But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of HIM who hath called you out of darkness into HIS marvellous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of GOD: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy."*

I Peter 2:9-10

## 2.16 JESUS, THE GREAT LIGHT

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is not the derived light. HE is the absolute light. HE is the great light.

*"The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up (has dawned)."*

St. Matthew 4:16

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's ministry for the kingdom of heaven began not with earthly power but with divine heavenly power and with divine heavenly light. As HE is the Light of life (St. John 1:4), HE HIMSELF is shining upon those sitting in sinful darkness and in the shadow of death, the second death or the hell-fire and they begin to see that light dawning upon them.

Again, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Sun of righteousness (Malachi 4:2). HE is the rising Sun or the Dayspring from on high to shine upon those sitting in sinful darkness and in the shadow of second death, to guide our feet into the way of peace (St. Luke 1:78-79). HE is our divine heavenly Guide to guide us to HIS kingdom, the kingdom of heaven.

## 2.17 JESUS, THE WORD OF GOD IS THE LAMP AND THE LIGHT

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Word of GOD is the Lamp and the Light (St. John 1:1; Psalm 119:105). HE is the lamp to HIS believers' feet and the light to HIS believers' pathway of life.

*"THY Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path."*

Psalm 119:105

## 2.18 JESUS, THE REVIVING LIGHT

The LORD GOD says, Awake, O sleeper and arise from the dead, and CHRIST will give you light and HE will shine on you. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the reviving light to HIS people.

*"Wherefore HE saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and CHRIST shall give thee light."*

Ephesians 5:14

## 2.19 THE LIGHT IN THE LAND OF THE LIVING

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the light of GOD. HE is the light of the living GOD. HE is the light in the land of the living.

*"In GOD will I praise HIS Word: in the LORD will I praise HIS Word. In GOD have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me. THY vows are upon me, O GOD: I will render praises unto THEE. For THOU hast delivered my soul from death: wilt not THOU deliver my feet from falling, that I may walk before GOD in the light of the living?"*

Psalms 56:10-13

## 2.20 JESUS, THE ETERNAL LIGHT

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the eternal light; HE is the everlasting light. The everlasting light has the everlasting glory. Hence, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the everlasting light and everlasting glory to HIS people. No longer will they need the sun or moon to give them light.

*"The sun shall be no more thy light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give light unto thee: but the LORD shall be unto thee an everlasting light, and thy GOD thy glory."*

Isaiah 60:19

The eternity of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is described as from everlasting to everlasting.

*"...Even from everlasting to everlasting, THOU art GOD."*

Psalms 90:2

## 2.21 JESUS, GOD OF THE LIVING

Our GOD is not the GOD of the dead, but the GOD of the living. The dead are those who were dead in their transgressions and sins.

*"For HE is not a GOD of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto HIM."*

St. Luke 20:38

*"And you hath HE quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins."*

Ephesians 2:1

'Quickened' means 'made alive'.

## 2.22 JESUS, THE ONLY DELIVERER

The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the living GOD is the ONLY ONE who delivers our soul from eternal death (hell), our eyes from eternal tears, and our feet from eternal falling. HE is the Only Deliverer. All the goodness of the LORD will be given to HIS people and they will walk before the LORD in the land of the living.

*"For THOU hast delivered my soul from death, mine eyes from tears, and my feet from falling. I will walk before the LORD in the land of the living."*

Psalms 116:8-9

## 2.23 JESUS, THE ONLY SAVIOUR

Now, everyone should know that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour of mankind. HE is the Only Saviour of the whole world. Salvation is found only in our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. There is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved. Salvation for Jews and Gentiles alike is only through the name of JESUS CHRIST.

*"Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

## 2.24 JESUS, THE ONLY REDEEMER

Now, everyone must know that JESUS CHRIST is the Only Redeemer of mankind. HE is the Only Redeemer of the whole world. No one can be redeemed by perishable and corruptible things, from the empty way of life received by tradition. And no one can be redeemed by any corrupted person. But, everyone can be redeemed only by the precious lifeblood of JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb without blemish and without spot. Truly, HE was foreordained and chosen long before the creation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for our sake. The price of redemption is the precious lifeblood of JESUS CHRIST. The price of redemption is the most holy blood of JESUS CHRIST.

*“Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation (conduct) received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you, Who by HIM do believe in GOD, that raised HIM up from the dead, and gave HIM glory; that your faith and hope might be in GOD.”*

I Peter 1:18-21

## 2.25 JESUS, THE PROPITIATION

It is not our love for GOD, but HIS love for us when HE sent HIS SON as propitiation for our sins. Thus, GOD showed HIS great love towards us. Whoever, does not love GOD does not know GOD, because GOD is love (I John 4:8-10).

Propitiation is an atoning sacrifice. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is an atoning sacrifice for our sins. Thus HE is the propitiation for our sins; and HE is the propitiation for the sins of the whole world.

*“And HE is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.”*

I John 2:2

Forgiveness (remission of sins) through CHRIST's propitiation is not limited to one particular group or race or community. It has worldwide application (St. John 1:29). It must be received by faith

(Acts 10:43). Thus I John 2:2 does not teach **Universalism**—that all people ultimately will be saved, but that GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is an impartial GOD. Universalism is the doctrine of the devil. It is anti-Scriptural. It is fully against GOD's Holy Word. So, no one should follow Universalism and their mind should never be seduced.

### **3 . OUR LIFE IN THIS WORLD**

#### **3.1 HOW SHOULD WE WALK ?**

*“Blessed is the people that know the joyful sound: they shall walk, O LORD, in the light of THY countenance.”*

Psalms 89:15

Therefore, everyone should live and walk in the light of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's most holy presence. They will be the blessed. In HIS most holy presence they will rejoice all day long. If we walk always in the light of GOD, as HE is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of JESUS CHRIST purifies us from all sin. If we say that we have fellowship with HIM, but go on living in evil darkness and sin, we lie, and do not live by the truth. If we say that we have no sin, and continue to commit sins, we are only fooling ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we accept the truth and confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. This is because our LORD JESUS died to wash away our sins.

*“This then is the message which we have heard of HIM, and declare unto you, that GOD is light, and in HIM is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with HIM, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: But if we walk in the light, as HE is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of JESUS CHRIST HIS SON cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”*

I John 1:5-9

Don't be fooled by those who try to deceive you with vain words, for because of such things comes the terrible wrath of GOD upon the children of disobedience. Therefore do not be partners with them.



Don't associate yourselves with such people. Walk as children of light. Have no part in the worthless and fruitless pleasures of evil and darkness, but rather rebuke and reprove and reject them; and walk in light.

*"Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of GOD upon the children of disobedience. Be not ye therefore partakers with them. For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the LORD: walk as children of light: (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) Proving what is acceptable unto the LORD. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them."*

Ephesians 5:6-11

Everyone should be followers of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST as dear children and they should walk in love.

*"Be ye therefore followers of GOD, as dear children; And walk in love, ..."*

Ephesians 5:1-2

Everyone should walk in wisdom by understanding the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the LORD is."*

Ephesians 5:15-17

Everyone should live in the Spirit; and everyone should walk in the Spirit; and everyone should build up himself/herself on his/her most holy faith in GOD; and everyone should pray in the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."*

Galatians 5:25

*"But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Jude 20

No one should separate himself/herself from GOD. No one should separate himself/herself from HIS true servants of GOD. No one should separate himself/herself from HIS apostles' doctrine. No one

should walk after his/her own ungodly lusts. No one should be sensual, having not the Spirit.

*“But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of (by) the apostles of our LORD JESUS CHRIST; How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.”*

Jude 17-19

## **4. HEAVEN, THE ETERNAL KINGDOM**

Heaven is the eternal kingdom. Heaven is the everlasting kingdom. Heaven, the eternal kingdom is the kingdom prepared by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST from the foundation of the world for HIS people, the blessed.

*“...Come, ye blessed of MY FATHER, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.”*

St. Matthew 25:34

Heaven is the most glorious kingdom of GOD. Heaven is the most beautiful kingdom of GOD. Heaven is the most wonderful kingdom of GOD. Heaven is the most joyful kingdom of GOD. Heaven is the divine world of GOD. Heaven is the celestial world of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### **4.1 REVELATION TO JOHN**

The most glorious revelation of JESUS CHRIST to HIS beloved disciple John, the apostle reveals the eternal or everlasting state. John saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the present heaven and the present earth were melted away; and there was no more sea. And he saw the holy city the New Jerusalem, coming down from GOD out of heaven. It shone with the glory of GOD and its light was like that of a very precious jewel, like a jasper stone, clear as crystal. The holy city the New Jerusalem is otherwise called the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

*“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from*

*GOD out of heaven, ... Having the glory of GOD: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal."*

Revelation 21:1-2, 11

And John saw the holy city, the New Jerusalem. The holy city had a great and high wall with twelve gates and with twelve angels at the gates. On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel. There were three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south and three on the west. The wall of the holy city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb. The holy city was laid out like a square, as long as it was wide. The wall was made of jasper, and the holy city of pure gold, as pure as glass. The foundation of the holy city walls was adorned with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper, the second sapphire, the third chalcidony, the fourth emerald, the fifth sardonyx, the sixth sardius, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chryso-prasus, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst. The twelve gates were twelve pearls, each gate made of a single pearl. The great street of the holy city was of pure gold, like transparent glass. See Revelation 21:12-21.

And John heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the dwelling of GOD is with men, and HE will dwell with them, and they will be HIS people, and GOD HIMSELF will be with them, and be their GOD. And GOD will wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there will be no more death nor mourning nor crying nor pain, for the former things are passed away and gone for ever.

*"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of GOD is with men, and HE will dwell with them, and they shall be HIS people, and GOD HIMSELF shall be with them, and be their GOD. And GOD shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."*

Revelation 21:3-4

And John saw the throne of the LORD; and HE that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And HE said unto John,

"Write: for these words are true and faithful". Then HE said unto John: "It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. To him who is thirsty, I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely. He who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his GOD and he will be MY son. But the cowards, and the unbelievers, and the abominable, and the murderers, and the whoremongers (the sexually immoral), and the sorcerers (those who practise magic arts), and the idolaters and all liars, will be doomed in the fiery lake of burning sulphur. This is the second death".

*"And HE said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his GOD, and he shall be MY son. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death."*

Revelation 21:6-8

John did not see any temple in the holy city, since the LORD GOD Almighty and the Lamb are worshipped everywhere. The LORD GOD Almighty and the Lamb means the LORD JESUS CHRIST the Almighty GOD. The holy city does not need the sun or the moon to shine in it, for the glory of the LORD GOD Almighty, gives it light. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb gives it light. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb is the light thereof. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Almighty GOD is the light thereof. And the nations of them who are saved will walk in the light of it, and the kings of the earth will bring their glory and honour into it. And on no day will the gates of it be shut at all, for there will be no night there. The glory and honour of the nations will be brought into it. There shall by no means enter into it anything that defiles, or causes an abomination, or makes a lie: but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

*"And I saw no temple therein: for the LORD GOD Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of GOD did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. And the*

*gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life."*

Revelation 21:22-27

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the brightness of GOD's glory, and the exact image of HIS being.

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, when HE had by HIMSELF purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high."*

Hebrews 1:3

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the exact image of the invisible and immortal GOD and HE lives in unapproachable light, whom no man has seen or can see. HE is the blessed and Only Ruler, the KING of kings and LORD of lords, to whom be honour and everlasting power.

*"Which in HIS times HE shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the KING of kings, and LORD of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."*

I Timothy 6:15-16

The LORD JESUS CHRIST lives for ever. Therefore HE is able to save completely for ever, all those who come to HIM. HE ever lives to make intercession for them since HE has paid for their sins with HIS precious blood.

*"Wherefore HE is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto GOD by HIM, seeing HE ever liveth to make intercession for them."*

Hebrews 7:25

Thus the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD is the way, the truth, and the life. Eternal or everlasting life is obtained only from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, to reach the kingdom of heaven.

*"JESUS saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the FATHER, but by ME."*

St. John 14:6

‘ The FATHER ’ means ‘ GOD the FATHER ’ or ‘ the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF ’.

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Light unto all. HE is the Life unto all. HE is the eternal Light unto all. HE is the eternal Life unto all.

And John saw a river of pure water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of GOD and the Lamb. GOD and the Lamb mean the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—the Almighty GOD. In the middle of the street of the holy city, and on either side of the river of water of life, there was the tree of life, bearing twelve manner of fruits, yielding its fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree of life were for the healing of the nations. There will be no more evil or curse. The throne of GOD and the Lamb will be in the holy city; and HIS servants will serve HIM. They will see HIS face and HIS name will be on their foreheads; and they will reign for ever and ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“And HE shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of GOD and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of GOD and of the Lamb shall be in it; and HIS servants shall serve HIM: And they shall see HIS face; and HIS name shall be in their foreheads. And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the LORD GOD giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.”*

Revelation 22:1-5

And the LORD JESUS CHRIST said unto John:

*“Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book. And, behold, I come quickly; and MY reward is with ME, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.”*

Revelation 22:7, 12-13

The coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is very soon. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST declares:

**“Surely I come quickly.”**

Revelation 22:20

For this declaration of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, John said,

*“Amen. Even so, come, LORD JESUS.”*

Revelation 22:20

Our GOD's revelations will surely come to pass. All HIS promises will be fulfilled at HIS appointed time.

*“For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry (tarries), wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry (delay).”*

Habakkuk 2:3

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is never early or late. HE is always on time.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **5 . AGASTHIYAR, THE HINDU SAGE'S REVELATION**

### **5.1 ON TRUE WORSHIP**

Many Tamilian sages and mystics have sung about JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. Agasthiyar was the greatest literary genius of the Tamil literature and a saint who lived as a sage in the first century A.D. He was one of the first to devise a grammar for the Tamil language. It was he who gave the first ever definition of the word, grammar in Tamil. He defined grammar of a language as the essence of the literary works of that language, just as gingly oil is the essence that is pressed out and extracted out of the sesame seeds. Many of his works have been destroyed by the swell of the ocean in the early centuries in the greater Tamil continent. Many have been untraceable and only very few have been passed on to posterity. In the 23rd song of his book '**Agasthiyar Gnanam 30**' (Agasthiyar's Wisdom Thirty) in Tamil, Agasthiyar, the Tamilian sage after attaining divinity and gaining knowledge about JESUS CHRIST, says,

“Worship The ONE who is the Light of the world

The ONE who created the world in a second

The ONE who created the virtuous people in the world





The LORD JESUS CHRIST has taught how to worship GOD and how to pray to GOD and how to meditate on GOD. HE suffered and died for sinners. HE resurrected HIMSELF on the third day. After HIS resurrection, HE was in this world for forty days. Then HE ascended into heaven, leaving HIS loving sages (disciples) in this world. Thus, Agasthiyar clearly explains whom we should worship and whom we should take refuge in.

There can be no doubt over the fact that JESUS CHRIST who is revealed in the Holy Bible as the ONLY TRUE GOD, is the GOD revealed by Agasthiyar. Agasthiyar lived during the first century, i.e., A.D. 1-100. Therefore, it is unfair to say that Christianity is the religion of white men (the English men) and despise it. Christianity is the only true way to heaven and it is the only way of the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

## 5.2 ON THE WAY TO HEAVEN

Agasthiyar says that the LORD of heaven or GOD is the only ONE. Man should worship the ONLY GOD and walk only on HIS divine way. He must keep the Ten Commandments, told in the Holy Bible. He also says that man should seek and follow GOD's servants who are modest in what they eat, who live without pride by oppressing all their lusts and ambitions, who reveal GOD and HIS divine love and who preach GOD. Man must follow the holy servants of GOD, and live a holy life obtaining deliverance from all impurities of the soul.

No one has any doubt about the fact that the Ten Commandments advocated by Agasthiyar are the Ten Commandments given in the Holy Bible, the truthful book of the LORD. See Exodus 20:2-17. Those commandments are:

1. I am the LORD thy GOD. Thou shalt have no other gods before (besides) ME.
2. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them.

3. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy GOD in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh HIS name in vain.
4. Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.
5. Honour thy father and thy mother: that the days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy GOD giveth thee.
6. Thou shalt not kill.
7. Thou shalt not commit adultery.
8. Thou shalt not steal.
9. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.
10. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maid servant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor anything that is thy neighbour's.

Furthermore, Agasthiyar says that for receiving the favour and grace of GOD, one should always pray to GOD and keep HIS Ten Commandments. He should live free from the sins of coveting woman and of filthy lusts. Again, Agasthiyar says that we can reach the holy feet of the heavenly GOD only by praying to GOD and by weeping to GOD. He says that only when a man confesses his sins with tears, he is freed from all inner impurities of his heart and attains holiness. Agasthiyar says about many people who became the devils of hell without obtaining such a sinless and holy experience in life. He also says about many people who are getting ready to inherit hell by keeping many false religious doctrines.

For reaching heaven, says Agasthiyar, one need not have a bath or take a bath, in a river or lake or sea or in some other places; one need not stand on his head; one need not offer flowers; one need not make a fire and jump into it; one need not give useless alms and one need not keep useless rituals. Agasthiyar says also that man should not be a slave to devils by worshipping devils. He should be wise to understand that Satan or the devil, who is the enemy of GOD, deceives people and brings great misery to them. To reach heaven and live joyfully there, says Agasthiyar, we should confess our sins with

tears and weeping and pray to GOD and attain holiness in soul. We should be resolute and steadfast in godliness. We should pray to GOD always for inheriting heaven. He says that we should worship the ONLY TRUE GOD who is the source of all good things. We should always praise, honour and glorify GOD. He concludes his book of wisdom saying,

"I have contained everything into thirty songs,  
I have sung according to what my Master of Heaven said."

Without any doubt the **heavenly Master** of Agasthiyar is the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. Further, the sage Pohan, one of the eighteen disciples of Agasthiyar and the Tamil poetess and sage Avvaiair and some others also have sung about JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the **Eternal Master**; HE is the **Good Master**. In Hinduism, **Guru** means Master; **Sanatana-Guru** means the Eternal Master; **Sad-Guru** means the Good Master; **Sanatana-Jagad-Guru** means the Eternal Guru of the world. Now, Sanatana-Guru is the ONE who is the Creator, the Controller, and the Withdrawer of the universe, and is the ONE who gives the divine knowledge and destroys the weeds of ignorance. HIS presence is everywhere and HE guides and teaches us. The perfect and unique description of the One and Only Eternal Guru is depicted in Colossians 1:15-17.

Again, the Hindu **Gayatri Mantra** (prayer) states: "Oh GOD, you are the giver of life, remover of pain and sorrow, the bestower of happiness. Oh! Creator of the universe, may we receive your supreme **sin-destroying light**, may you guide our intellect in the right direction." **The One and Only Eternal Guru or Eternal Master JESUS CHRIST is the sin-destroying Light and the real giver of Life** (St. John 8:12).

*This page has been intentionally left blank*

## BESTOWAL OF DIVINE EXPERIENCE

### 1. SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

IN INDIAN English '**Sadhu**' refers to a holy man or a sage-priest or an ascetic monk. 'Sadhu' means the one who has abandoned and detested the world and worldly pleasures. In Tamil '**Devanesan**' means 'Beloved of GOD' or 'Theophilus' (St. Luke 1:3) and '**Aiya**' means 'Father' or 'Sir', a term of great respect, reverence and almost all people were in the habit of fondly calling him 'AIYA'. The people also affectionately called him 'AIYA', 'ABBA' and 'SADHU AIYA'. Abba is an Aramaic domestic term by which the father was called in the most affectionate intimacy of the family. Aramaic is a form of Hebrew language that was spoken during the time of JESUS CHRIST. The word 'Abba' is used in India especially in Tamil Nadu and accepted throughout India.

Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) was our most beloved **spiritual father** and lived as our most beloved spiritual father, the one who had been ordained and appointed by CHRIST in the place of CHRIST. He was the First apostle (the head of all other apostles) of the twentieth century. After Peter the apostle and Paul the apostle, he had been in the place of CHRIST. Peter and Paul were the First apostles (the head of all other apostles) of the first century. Peter was ordained and appointed by CHRIST in the place of CHRIST for the Jews/the Israelites and Paul was ordained and appointed by CHRIST in the place of CHRIST for the Gentiles. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Through Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST raised and established HIS glorious church for the benefit of

the whole world, for these last days, at Malavilai, in India, Tamil Nadu, Kanniyakumari District. Kanniyakumari is Cape Comorin, the southernmost point, a headland, a piece, long, narrow area of high land (promontory) sticking out from the coast into the ocean of India. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST glorified HIS most holy name by performing through him great wonders, healing the sickness and illness of many people and casting out devils/demons from many people. He was an apostle, a prophet, a mentor, a guide, a spiritual father, a preacher of CHRIST's Gospel, a composer of hymns for worshipping GOD and a singer. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.1 WITNESS OF SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

**SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)** was born in a Hindu family at Malavilai, Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India and he was brought up by Hindu parents belovedly. His father was a Hindu priest of that locality and his family worshipped Hindu gods. He was very staunch in Hindu religion or Hinduism. He had one elder sister. She loved him very much and he also loved her very much. Then, she was given to marriage. But, without seeing her, he could not stay in his house. So, one day he stayed in his house and the next day he stayed in her house. He came from his sister's house with tears. Further, without seeing him, his parents could not stay in their house. So, he came to his house in alternate days. Suddenly, his elder sister died. His parents feared that the demise of his sister's anxiety may cause him disease. So, they stopped his studies. He desired very much to study. But his parents never allowed him to go to school. So he stopped his studies. He had studied upto third standard. Since his parents did not allow him to study, he refused to do his household duties. But, he was careful to keep his body in a healthy condition. "His was a healthy mind in a healthy body."

He studied many Hindu writings and worshipped many Hindu gods and he was very eager to live a godly life. But he could not live a godly life. He had no peace of mind. Then he thought of wandering wearing torn or split clothes and carrying satchels to obtain a godly life. Since people might take him to be a lunatic, he did not do like that. Then he tried to obtain a godly life in many other ways. But he could not obtain a godly life. The effect of no peace of mind was

increasing day by day. Distress and helplessness were also on the increase. Then, he compared his life with that of the Hindu gods whom he worshipped. He found no speciality in their lives. But, he continuously worshipped Hindu gods and studied Hindu writings. The absence of peace of mind aggravated and made him unpleasant more and more. He staunchly believed that there was ONE TRUE GOD who had created all things. A question arose in his heart. Who was that GOD, the Creator of all things? He wanted to see HIM. At that time, he worked as a government servant, as a Mastery (an expert) in the National Malaria Eradication Programme. When a headmaster of a Lower Primary School received Rs. 7/- as his monthly salary, he received Rs. 37/- as his monthly salary.

At this juncture, he came to a firm decision. Within 41 days, he would see the TRUE GOD, otherwise he would commit suicide. So, his anxiety increased day by day. But, he could not see HIM till the 40<sup>th</sup> day. His anxiety increased abundantly, day by day, more and more. His main thought of anxiety was, "My GOD has abandoned me. I am unable to see my GOD."

On the 41st day morning, he thought, "My life would end on this day itself. So, what are the things I require?" He desired to wear a new dress and he desired to eat snacks. So, he bought a new dress from a textile shop and stitched it by his tailor and washed it himself and wore it. Then he went to a tea shop and tried to eat snacks and to drink coffee. But, he could not. At that time, one of his office peon (attendant), his co-worker came to him and asked, "What?" He bought and gave snacks and coffee to him also. When his co-worker, on seeing his facial expression came to know that something untoward was going to happen to him and he told, "Today you should not go to your house. Come to my house." But, he obstinately refused to go with him. Then he returned to his house. On the way to his house, he thought painfully, "Without any reason I am going to die. There would be my Creator GOD. HE has also abandoned me." Then he cried. But, his hardness in his heart had not changed. It was night-time. In the daytime, he had selected a jack tree to commit suicide by hanging himself.

Then, that night, he climbed the tree and put the rope and tried—just moved his body to hang himself, to die. At once, the TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST met him. But, he could not understand that it was GOD's meet. So, he thought to see GOD within one week or two weeks. If he could not see GOD within this time, he would die. Then, he untied the rope from the tree and climbed down.

**When he climbed down, he saw that the sky (heaven) was kept opened. And he experienced that the water from a great river from the sky flowed into him completely, without going anything outside. At that time, he thought that CHRIST was the TRUE GOD. Before that he disliked Christianity very much. The great river from the sky was flowing continuously into him immensely. Then, he thought that JESUS CHRIST was changing him into a warrior to fight against all the devils/demons. And he had experienced a boldness that made him think, all the devils/demons were equal to a little finger. At once, the flow of the river stopped.**

Then he went to his house with a decision to fight against the devils/demons. He went to his house and said aloud, **"Do not give anything to the devils/demons. I am going to fight out the devils/demons."** Hearing this, the whole of his household and his neighbours were confused very much. They thought that drinking opium mixed toddy would cause it like this. Then he said the Name of JESUS and questioned Kali, an angry-looking ferocious Hindu goddess. Then he went to the grove where they worshipped their Hindu gods. He called the names of the Hindu gods and warned them. People of that locality gathered in the grove. They could not decide what to do next. Then he knelt down to pray.

At that time, the TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had spoken a prophecy through him. The prophecy spoken by the LORD was, *"From today onwards the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD is going to work here. HE will abolish and eradicate all the devils/demons."* Then he asked the people to give up their sins and to love their enemies. And he firmly and clearly told them, **"JESUS is the TRUE GOD."** Then the people said that he was an insane man.

From the next day onwards, he continuously asked the people, **"Do not do any sin. If anyone smites (slaps) you on your one cheek,**



**turn to him the other also. JESUS CHRIST is the TRUE GOD. Everyone should worship HIM only.**" Then his family firmly thought that he was mentally ill. So, they promised to their Hindu gods that they would sacrifice two he-goats at a time for his good health. Then they called a physician (village doctor). He came and told them that this was an insanity due to enlightenment. All other insanities could be cured. But it could not be cured. Then as per the physician's advice, they coated his head with a herbal medicine—a semi-liquid preparation from herbs, layer upon layer. He opposed them. But they persisted. Then he thought that if he opposed further, they would put handcuffs and fetters. So, he sat quietly. Then they took him to take bath. They poured on his head pots and pots of water. It was suffocating for him. By pouring water on his head, they troubled him much. How horrible, cruel and dreadful they were!

Then they heard about a Pentecostal Church namely Kirubasanam at Kanchiracode, and brought him to that Church. There he had got awareness/consciousness about his sins which he had committed against the LORD. He thought, **"Have I had done these sins against GOD in this manner?"** Then he had got awareness/consciousness about his sins more and more. He again thought, **"Why had GOD left this traitor in this world? Is there any reason for leaving me to live in this world even a minute?"** Then he repeatedly thought about the love of GOD and cried. Then he thought, **"Have these sins been forgiven to this traitor? How can I get forgiveness of sins?"** He feared and trembled greatly at the very thought whether his sins would be forgiven or not.

## 1.2 A HORRIBLE VISION

At that time, suddenly, the sky rent into two. Immediately, he saw the most horrible vision of CHRIST on the cross on three nails. On seeing this most terrible vision, no one could survive in this world. What an awful vision it was! The LORD JESUS CHRIST was most awfully hanging on the cross on three nails with HIS most holy right eye sunk into the socket due to extreme hunger and thirst and weariness and pain and sleeplessness and due to very severe blows upon HIS most holy body; and with HIS most holy left eye came outside the socket due to very heavy blows upon HIS most holy left cheek

with a bamboo rod and with hands; and with HIS most depressed and hollow holy cheeks with plucked out beard; and with HIS most depressed and hollow holy stomach due to extreme hunger and thirst and weariness and pain and sleeplessness. HIS most holy blood was gushing out from HIS most holy hands and feet. HIS most holy body was terribly rent and battered; and HIS most holy body with HIS most holy face was wholly bathed in HIS most holy blood from HIS most holy head to HIS most holy feet. Clothed with a piece of waistcloth on HIS most holy waist and crowned with an iron crown of thorns on HIS most holy head, HE was hanging most awfully on the cross on three nails with a disfigured appearance and marred face. HIS most beautiful appearance was disfigured and HIS most beautiful face was marred; and HE was most awfully writhing and shivering with great agony and pain on the cross on three nails. When he saw this most awful vision of the LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross on three nails, he longed terribly and was in a lifeless state; and he staringly looked at the cross continuously and cried with tears and weeping continuously. At that time, his relatives came to see him. They asked his father, "How is he?" He said to them, "Very serious!"

When he was crying like this, the TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST started to speak with him from the cross. The LORD spoke, ***"MY son, your sins were forgiven. I am your GOD and there is no other. For you and for your sin, I was smitten and bruised."*** When these Words of GOD came into his mouth, he again came to life. Then the vision also disappeared. What a most horrible vision it is!

### 1.3 HE WAS SAVED

Immediately, he got a spiritual experience of a very light life, being dead to sins and might alive unto righteousness. Then he started to speak with others. And he cried again and again with tears by remembering his past treacherous and sinful life. But he got much happiness and joy in his heart, the joy and happiness of GOD's salvation in spirit, soul and body. Then he returned to his house. All his bodily diseases were also miraculously cured by the LORD. He was saved on 26.1.1948. Glory be to GOD!

#### 1.4 AFTER HIS SALVATION

After he received salvation from sins, his family members had only half love with him. Before he received this glorious spiritual experience, he was married to a protestant Christian lady and had a male child. Afterwards his wife also was saved and did the ministry of GOD with him as apostle Peter's wife did the ministry of GOD with apostle Peter (Cephas) as a sister (I Corinthians 9:5). But, within some years, she slept in CHRIST.

When he was saved, he thought of living as a beloved and glorious child of GOD till the end of his life-time, not like the others or other servants of GOD and he also wished to live as a glorious witness of GOD.

*"THY testimonies have I taken as an heritage for ever: for they are the rejoicing of my heart."*

Psalm 119:111

He started telling his witness by telling about his sins. Then he wished to tell his witness through out the whole world. He thought that, to complete this witness, it may take 10 to 15 years; and after that he would start from the initial place.

#### 1.5 THE LORD COMMANDED HIM TO DO THE LORD'S MINISTRY

When he was with such a thought, he heard an astral voice from heaven. That voice was, *"Son, do MY ministry."* Then he replied to HIM, **"O GOD, I do not know how to do the ministry."** At once, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST said to him, *"Son, do MY will. Obey ME."* Then he said to HIM, **"O GOD, I will do YOUR will. I will obey YOU."** Thus he entrusted and surrendered himself to GOD fully. Now, we understand what essential qualities are needed to the servant/minister of GOD: (1) Total Obedience (2) Good Desire to Do the Will of GOD (3) Good Desire to Suffer for GOD (4) Divine Love from a Pure Heart and from a Good Conscience and from Unfeigned Faith (5) Total Commitment (6) Total Dedication (7) Sheer Determination. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 1.6 THE LORD'S MINISTRY STARTED

**After some days, suddenly, the LORD asked him to start HIS ministry in his house.** Unexpectedly, two ministers came from Kirubasanam. GOD's ministry started at Malavilai in his house which is situated on the other bank of the Paraliar River, a place just opposite to the present place at Malavilai. Weekly one service was conducted. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had started to do miracles and signs and various powerful works and great things. The devils/demons/evil spirits cried aloud and said, "**We are going out; JESUS is the TRUE GOD. This is YOUR servant. We will obey YOUR servant.**" Like this the devils/demons/evil spirits witnessed about the LORD JESUS CHRIST and went out.

**Then the LORD asked him to put up a shed and start HIS ministry.** Accordingly, he put up a shed and started HIS ministry. No ministers from Kirubasanam came to him. He prayed with tears; the LORD gave him special messages to preach. At that time, a man helped him. Then he started fasting by the command of the LORD to do HIS ministry obeying HIS will.

## 1.7 A MOST GLORIOUS VISION OF JESUS CHRIST

On the second day, when he was kneeling down and praying, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came to him with a very great form and with great beauty and great splendour. HIS great lustre and great grandeur, and great radiance and strongly shining brightness were unexplainable. HE was shining very gloriously. On seeing HIM, no word came out of his mouth to pray. So, he said, "**Praise, Praise, Praise, ...**" He was very much frightened and he thought of running away. But, he sat there as the one who was tied up and held. **The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to his right side and joined with him on his right side. At that time, he came to know that he and the LORD JESUS CHRIST had become one. Then onwards the LORD led him specially in HIS divine way in all things he undertook.** Glory be to GOD!

## 1.8 CONTINUED HIS GOVERNMENT JOB

From the day of his salvation, he used to take rice meal (his usual meal) in small amounts, since he could not take much food. At that

time, he worked as a government servant as a Mastery (an expert) in the National Malaria Eradication Programme. After he was saved, the LORD had saved his mouth and stomach also. Then, in the morning, he took a glass of black-tea and went to his work. It would take 1 P.M. to 2 P.M. to finish his work. After he was saved, he did his work very correctly. So, it was very hard for him. At that time, a headmaster of a Lower Primary School received Rs. 7/- as monthly salary; but, he received Rs. 37/- as monthly salary. After he had been saved, he entrusted the whole salary at the hands of his mother. She asked him to take Rs. 15/- . But due to her insistence he took Rs 2/- .

Everyday he read 30 to 40 Chapters from the Holy Bible. After reading 1 or 2 chapters, he prayed for a short while. In this way, he read the whole of the Holy Bible many times. Every Saturday, he fasted. Sometimes, by the guidance of the LORD, he fasted for 11 days. **In that time, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gave the following promise to him, as HE gave it to Jeremiah:**

*“Call unto ME, and I will answer thee, and shew thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.”*

Jeremiah 33:3

Then, suddenly, he was caught up by a deep sleep or deep slumber. While he was walking on the road, he slept. He woke up from sleep when his feet fell into a ditch or at the side of a road. The LORD had safely protected him from all dangers. One day, while he was walking on the road, he dashed against a potter's son, a small boy who had with him an earthen pot and an earthen pan. His earthen pan fell on the road and broke into pieces. That small boy cried. At once, he consoled him that he would give him the price tomorrow. They refused to receive the price on the next day. But he compulsorily gave it to them. Due to his deep slumber, he could not preach. With great agony, he thought of absenting himself from attending the meeting and preaching. And he further thought that the people who came to attend the meeting would sing songs and go. Then he thought that it was the most blessed thing of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; although HE had given to him. Then he went and conducted the meeting. Then he started fastings. Within some days, he had no such slumber. Glory be to GOD! After his fasting, he used to

take tapioca and fruits and some other things. Since he had often fasted, he had got a hatred for rice meal.

### 1.9 THE LORD COMMANDED HIM TO RESIGN HIS JOB

Then the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST had commanded him to resign his government job. So he resigned it. Due to this, his family members began to dislike him much and hate him much and they had no love towards him. But, he had not taken it as a great thing. He had started to take chillies, salt and water as food. Before getting salvation, he thought that he could not live even without one time food. But the LORD led him very specially. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.10 THE LORD'S MINISTRY STARTED IN THIS PLACE AT MALAVILAI

Then he determined to start GOD's ministry in a new place at Malavilai, a place just opposite to the former place—a place just on the other bank of the Paraliar River. The people also liked it. That was also the will of GOD. Then, he had visited some sites. Then the LORD had shown to him this present site to construct a shed. Then he cut down 100 bamboo rods to construct a shed. In that 100 rods, a man from that locality had stolen one rod. So, his house became a garbage ground due to the wrath of GOD. The one who had helped him also left from him.

The work of the construction of the new shed was completed. That new shed was dedicated by the head-preacher of Kirubasanam and the LORD's ministry was started in this present place at Malavilai during 1949 by the will of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then, another one who had helped him also left him. He had experienced great difficulties without food. So, he continuously took chillies, salt and water as food. So, his body became pale. Also he had experienced difficulties without soap and oil. At that time he had got only one shirt to wear with a number of layers of seams. All alone he did GOD's ministry at Malavilai after fellowship with Kirubasanam. Sometimes, he heard the sound of Songs of Praise and Thanks to the LORD. At that time, the LORD said to him, ***"Nothing; that is the shouts of the angels."*** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.11 ANOINTED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD

Further, he was not anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. But, the people who heard his preaching were anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. He walked according to the leading of GOD. Then, he determined to fast for 40 days to obtain the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD and fasted. Each and everyday, he expected and awaited to receive the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. But, he was not anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.

He prayed to GOD, **"In those time, miracles and signs were done by YOUR apostles. Give me that HOLY SPIRIT which YOU had given to the apostles of the Beginning Church."** On the 40th day evening at about 5 P.M., he suffered much in his body. Then he thought that due to his fasting, his body also suffered much; although the blessing which he asked was not given to him. So, this was a great loss to him. Then he lay down on his bed. At that time, he heard an astral voice, **"Rise up and pray."** At once, he got up from his bed and prayed. Immediately, he was anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. When he was anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD said to him to clear his doubt, **"I have given to you the HOLY SPIRIT which I had given to the apostles of the Beginning Church."** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Then he heard an astral voice, **"Be not afraid."** And he had spoken continuously in various tongues. On the next day also, he could not speak in his own mother tongue properly. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.12 THE LORD COMMANDED HIM TO GIVE BAPTISM TO THE SAVED

Then, many times he fasted for 40 days. The LORD JESUS CHRIST had taught him many things. HE said to him to do the ministry which was done by the servants of the Beginning Church and HE commanded him to give baptism to the saved and to give the LORD's Supper (the Holy Communion). At that time he had got fellowship with the ministry of Kirubasanam. So, he went to the head-preacher of Kirubasanam and informed the LORD's command. At once, he said that at about 5 or 6 years back the LORD had said to him also.

So, about giving baptism to the saved, he compelled the head-preacher painfully. But he did not accept his request. The head-preacher said that if he had conducted baptism service, marriage

service and burial service, he would be killed otherwise he would go to jail. At once, he, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) said, **"I will go. You pray."** Then the head-preacher said to him to bring Rupees to go to Madras to see the church at Madras (Chennai).

### 1.13 LEFT FROM THE HEAD-PREACHER OF KIRUBASANAM

The spiritual life of the head-preacher of Kirubasanam was different and he had fallen down and down due to his disobedience. It was not well known to others. So, he brought money and gave it to the head-preacher. The head-preacher asked him to pray. So, he went upstairs and prayed. At that time the LORD had spoken to him, **"He will not obey. You do MY will. I will bless you."** Then he thought why the LORD had spoken in this manner. Then the head-preacher bought coffee and gave it to him. Again he prayed. After a little time, the LORD had spoken to him thunderously, **"Put away the wicked servant. Come off and go from the servant who has not obeyed ME. At once, set off and go."** Immediately, he left that place, taking his Holy Bible.

On the way, near the door, the head-preacher stood. He asked him, **"Younger brother, what had GOD said?"** Then he said to him, **"I am departing from you separately. To go to heaven, I have worn this form of godliness. I will not betray GOD. I will hear the Word of the LORD. I will not obey you. I am leaving you separately. I do not know how to do the ministry. I will join the church which GOD asks me to join."** Thus, he had separated and left from the head-preacher of Kirubasanam.

Then he prayed to the LORD, **"I am a small boy. I do not know how to do the ministry."** Then the LORD said to him, **"I am with you. Do MY will. I will lead you. Be patient."** Then, the head-preacher and other preachers of Kirubasanam tried again and again, to unite him with them, in various ways. But they could not unite him with them. Lastly he said to them, **"Let him (the head-preacher of Kirubasanam) do the will of GOD. In that case, if the LORD wills, I will unite."**

Then, at last, the head-preacher of Kirubasanam also came to him at Malavilai. On the previous day of his arrival, the LORD said to him, **"He will come on tomorrow in such time. He will tell you, "I will construct a House of Prayer to you with tiled roof." Be careful! I will be**



*with you.*" In the same manner, at the same time, he came and said the same thing. But he did not accept his offer. Then he asked, **"What is the obstacle to unite together?"** Then he openly said to him, about his sin of his life. But he spoke on the contrary, not agreeing his sin; and putting the blame on other side. However, the head-preacher of Kirubasanam lastly asked, **"Let you take care of the northern ministry and let me take care of the southern ministry."** Then he did not give any reply to him. And he called him to the House of Prayer to satisfy his hunger. But he did not go there. At once, the head-preacher left from him.

Then he was much worried about his fall and asked the LORD to send him to the mountain. At that time, the LORD said, **"Do not worry about the fallen."** When he prayed to GOD to unite him with a church which GOD willed, the LORD said, **"Be patient. Do MY will."**

After he left from the fellowship of Kirubasanam, he had fellowship with another Pentecostal Church namely JEHOVAH Salvation Church at Alenkottai. As their activities were also against the LORD, he left from them also.

Besides, he prayed to GOD to unite him with some other church. But HE did not unite him with any other church. And the LORD said to him, **"I am willing to give you many promises to reveal MY church through you. There is no other suitable church in this world to unite you."**

Jeremiah 33:3 had already been given to him as a promise, when he was doing HIS ministry on the other bank of the Paraliar river.

***"Call unto ME, and I will answer thee, and shew (show) thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest (know) not."***

Jeremiah 33:3

To GOD, our FATHER be praise, thanks, honour and glory both now and for ever. Amen. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 1.14 BIBLE STUDY OR THEOLOGICAL STUDY

As he had studied only upto third standard, he could not preach well. So he went to learn the Bible study or the theological study. Now, he had no desire to sit in that class room and he had also no peace of mind. As he had always a thought to leave from that place, he

returned from that place. Then, on the next day he went to study the Bible class. But he could not sit there, since the works done by them in that place were utterly hated by the LORD. So, he returned from that Bible study and he did not go to any Bible study further.

### 1.15 THE LORD JESUS CHRIST STARTED TO TEACH HIM DIRECTLY

Then he was very much worried and painful in his heart. He thought that if he was in that state, he could not do the ministry; he had not gained knowledge through formal education and he had no such wisdom, knowledge and efficiency to preach. With this thought, he prayed to GOD with weeping. At that time, the LORD said to him, **"Son, these are not the things which you have to study; and you ought to study, not from these people. I will teach you. You hear MY Word."** At once, he said to the LORD, **"I will hear YOUR Word and I will obey you."** From that day onwards, the LORD had started to teach him. In days and nights, HE taught him. When HE was teaching him, he had passed in all the examinations/tests. The LORD gave him ministers. The LORD brought a mother and an elder sister from Kirubasanam with him unexpectedly. Glory be to GOD!

Many times, he had fasted for 40 days. While he was praying to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST with hard fasting, HE taught him about the different ministers of GOD and their different ministries and their ranks and their spiritual gifts and fruits and their works. Further, during his hard fastings, HE taught him about the following services: The Dedication of Children to GOD, the Marriage Service, the Burial Service, the Dedication of House of Prayer Service, the Baptism Service and the LORD's Supper Service (the Holy Communion Service). Through the fasting prayer of his, GOD taught him all these things. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.16 A HORRIBLE VISION OF DEVOURING FIRE OF THE LORD'S JEALOUSY ON THE WHOLE WORLD

*"And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD: and their blood shall be poured out as dust, and their flesh as the dung. Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the LORD's wrath; but the whole land shall be devoured*

*by the fire of HIS jealousy: for HE shall make even a speedy riddance of all them that dwell in the land."*

Zephaniah 1:17-18

*"Therefore wait ye upon ME, saith the LORD, until the day that I rise up to the prey: for MY determination is to gather the nations, that I may assemble the kingdoms, to pour upon them MINE indignation, even all MY fierce anger: for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of MY jealousy."*

Zephaniah 3:8

**Once during the time of his hard fasting, the LORD showed to him, the terrible destruction of the souls (the people) of the whole world by the terrible fire; the whole world was devoured by the fire of the LORD's jealousy. HE had shown this terrible destruction, village by village, town by town, city by city and country by country to him. When the people saw the terrible destruction from the four directions of the world by the horrible fire, from the four directions, crowds and crowds of people in large gatherings and gatherings with heart-rending cries, were very frightfully running towards the middle place or the centre place for refuge. Then, suddenly, in the middle of them also, terrible fire broke out against the people to destroy them utterly. There was no way for them to escape from that terrible fire.**

Then the LORD said to him, *"In the last days, these things will happen. For the escape of the people from this terrible fire, you ought to suffer by hating your own life."* Again the LORD said to him, *"I have raised up three workers for these last days. Of the three, two of them have not obeyed ME. They have no desire or liking to suffer for the people. You are the only one who is doing the will of ME. So, you must do the ministry of the three."* From that day onwards, he has hated his own life and suffered for the people. When he saw the terrible destruction of the people, he cried on days and nights.

### 1.17 A PROPHECY IN KIRUBASANAM AT KANCHIRACODE

At that time, there was a prophecy in Kirubasanam at Kanchiracode. In that prophecy the LORD said, *"I have put away the Sanniyasi of Kanchiracode—the head-preacher of Kanchiracode as well as the Sanniyasi of Kunmathoor—the preacher of Kunmathoor from MY presence. In how much I have spoken to you, you have not obeyed ME. MY son is at Malavilai. He is*

*a small boy. Whatever I say, he will hear ME. He always gives joy to ME. Through him, I have raised up MY church. Still further, I will do glorious and majestic things through him."* Further, the LORD had said in that prophecy about the promise he had given to him in Jeremiah 1:5 also.

*"Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations."*

Jeremiah 1:5

Then, some people from Kirubasanam at Kanchiracode came to Malavilai to see the church. They clearly saw the church at Malavilai was functioning as the LORD's church. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Since the preacher of Kunnathoor had promised to the LORD, one day the preacher of Kunnathoor also came to Malavilai with a decision to do the ministry at Malavilai. But, after that day, he did not come to Malavilai.

Then, one day when Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) was riding on a bicycle to Thuckalay, an astral voice heard, ***"Go and see the Sanniyasi of Kunnathoor—the preacher of Kunnathoor."*** At once, he went to see him. The LORD spoke various things to him. He said, "I will obey." But he did not obey the Word of the LORD.

### 1.18 150 DAYS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING

Now, he used to observe long and very hard, firm and determined fastings. During these fastings, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST taught him doctrines and secrets. His fastings were long and continuous. Once, while he was observing 150 days continuous and hard fasting, the LORD taught him about HIS church—the various promises about HIS church, the truth about HIS church, the spiritual experiences of HIS church, the preaching of HIS church, the leading of HIS church by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the gifts and fruits of HIS church and the authorities of HIS church. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.19 6 MONTHS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING

Then he used to observe 6 months continuous and hard fasting with great anxiety, without applying oil to his head and without taking bath; there was no foul smell in his body and nobody could tell that

he had been without taking bath for 6 months. He had possessed such a holy and special body. He was filled with holiness, righteousness, love, life, power, and glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. During that time, every week he used to conduct two or three services also. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.20 10 MONTHS AND 1 WEEK CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING

And then, he used to observe 10 months and 1 week continuous and hard fasting. During this time also, he used to conduct meetings and give sermons. During his continuous and hard fastings, he used to take black-coffee and water. So, he became very lean and thin and his bones became soft and flexible. During this fasting time, he greatly suffered due to extreme hunger. So, he ate a piece of the skinny part of a lemon fruit. Then he cried much unto the LORD for this disobedience.

**Then the LORD strengthened him very much and protected him very safely. During this hard fasting, the LORD JESUS CHRIST consoled him and comforted him by lifting him up by HIS most holy hands and by patting him and by hugging him. Then he got good strength and vigour. He had touched the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; he had leaned on the bosom of the LORD; and he had kissed the LORD!** Glory be to GOD!

### 1.21 HE WAS STABBED—HIS WITNESS

A girl from a nominal Christian family (C.S.I. family) was met by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, when she was doing her S.S.L.C. course. So, she wanted to live as a true Christian. But she could not. Her family was giving much trouble to her. She heard about Malavilai and wanted to come to Malavilai to hear the preaching. But her family did not allow her to come to Malavilai. So, she sent letters to him about her severe obstacle to come to Malavilai. Then, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) replied to her, **"Be patient. Hear what your household says."** In the meantime, one day when he was in the ministry of Kotticode, she suddenly came to see him. Till that day, she did not see him and he also did not see her. Then he gave her necessary advice. Then, on the same day, she went back to her house.

After that, one day all her family members met together and said to her, "If you want to go to Malavilai, then you should not come back to this house for ever. Otherwise, you hear as we say." And again they troubled her much. At last, she said to them, "I will go to the service at Malavilai and come to the house." Then they troubled her much and asked her, "You tell us, either you go there or stay here." Then she said to them, "If you are not willing to allow my coming back, I will go as you say." Then they troubled her much by terribly scolding her and without giving food. On the next day, she came to Malavilai to tell the matter to Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya). Till then, she did not hear his preaching. She said to him about the matter. He pacified her and said to her to go to her house. But due to fear, she did not go to her house. So, he thought that some one from her house would come. At that time, after pacifying that person, he would send her also with that person.

On the third day, when he was standing near his door, the upper half of the door being kept open and he was leaning with his hands on the upper edge of the half-opened door and talking with his co-workers, her elder sister's husband with a hidden knife and with great fury came to him and asked, "Is the woman with the name Thankavadivoo here? Her mother is dead corpse (body). I come to bring her with me." His talking, "Her mother is dead corpse" was an utter lie. Then, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) said to him from his door side, "She will come. Bring her with you." Immediately he said, "I have not come to bring her; I come to stab and kill her." At once, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) said to him from his door side, "You cannot kill her. After you stab and kill me, you can kill anyone in this place." Then he said, "In that case, I will stab you." After that Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) said to him from his door side, "That I had already said." Then, he said again and again, "I will not stab you. I will not stab you."

As he was saying like this again and again that he will not stab him, suddenly he stabbed him. He terribly stabbed him at the back of his neck by a six inches long knife to kill him. That knife went inside upto the node of his liver horribly. Then that man tried to kill him by cutting off his head with that knife through that wound by his knife. So, he digged his neck with that knife through that wound

terribly. Hence, that wound became a great wound, a deadly wound. But he could not cut off his head as he thought. Then he took out his knife from that wound and stabbed him near the left ear terribly. This wound was also a deadly wound. Then, he stabbed him with his knife three times again and again. The nerves of Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) were terribly cutopened. Blood was terribly coming out from his wounds. Totally he had five wounds by five stabs. What a pitiable thing it is!

Firstly, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) did not know how that man had stabbed him. When he stabbed him, his co-workers came down before him with a loud crying. At that time, he thought that due to the fear that he would stab him, they were coming down before him crying. So, he caught them behind him. After that he realized a hot sensation near his left ear. When he placed his hand on that place, it was the heat of the blood. At once, he came to know that he had been stabbed by him. So, these people were crying aloud. Then he realized a hot sensation on the back of his neck. When he placed his hand on that place, one of his fingers went inside that wound. After that, he came to know about the deadly wound on the back of his neck. Then he came to know about the other three wounds.

At that time, the man who stabbed him said, "I will go to my house and kill my wife and children and I will also die." So, he asked his co-workers to catch him. They caught him and bound his hands with a rope made from coconut husk. Before that they took the knife from him. But no one had given any trouble or hindrance to him.

Immediately, on hearing this great sensational news, the people from that locality and also from various places came to gather together with great fury and uproar. But Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) pacified them and calmed them. Then the people asked him to go inside his room. In order to save that man from the great fury of the crowd and to pacify and calm those people, he went here and there; and he did not go inside his room. Due to that, his blood was again coming out from his wounds. Then he asked them to bring milk-coffee. They brought it. Firstly, he poured a cup of that coffee and gave it to that man and he drank. He grieved again and again about his wicked act and he was very much frightened that the people would

kill him. Then Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) said to that man, **"We will not do like that."** And he also said to him about the true Christian life, not taking any revenge against anyone and about the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Again he said to that man, **"Younger brother, you must be saved. Do not worship the devils or the demons. Go to your house and demolish your devils' temples. JESUS CHRIST is the TRUE GOD. I am the child of HIS. Do not do such thing against anyone, as you have done to me."** And he did not take any revenge against that man who stabbed him and he had not given any criminal case against him. For his wounds, he had not taken any medicine or any medical treatment. Glory be to GOD!

Besides, by pacifying that man and by pacifying the furious crowd by going here and there, the whole blood of his body came out through his wounds and lastly, a foam like liquid came out from his wounds. Then the colour of his body became blue-black. When he was speaking with that man, his vomit came as water; then he felt that his life was diminishing from his big toes; and he also felt a severe pain in his intestines, as they were rolled up together from the bottom to upward; and he felt unconscious. Immediately, his life left from his body. After about three minutes, his life again came into his body; and he felt conscious. All of them were crying aloud with weeping. Then, after sometime, again he felt the same thing; and again he felt unconscious. Further, his life again left from his body for three minutes; and again his life came into his body; and he felt conscious. Then, after sometime, again he felt the same thing; and again his life left from his body for one minute; and again his life came into his body; and he felt conscious. Lastly, he felt unconscious and at once, his life left from him; but immediately his life came into him. Then he never felt any such thing, due to these terrible wounds. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then he made necessary arrangements and took all necessary steps to send that man to his house safely. In the mean time, he sent some people to the Police Station to tell that he would not take any medicine for his wounds; and he would not give any criminal case or complaint against that man who stabbed him; would they able to give Police protection to that man? Then they said that without giving any case against that man, they could not do anything. Further, they said,



"We will hear what the Sami (Sanniyasi or the one who abandoned and detested the world or worldly pleasures)—Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) says and we will see to the further things." Then he sent that man by a pleasure car to his house safely. In this also, the LORD saved him gloriously. Besides, all his five wounds including two deadly wounds were miraculously healed by our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the divine Healer without any medicine or any medical treatment. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.22 13 MONTHS AND 4 DAYS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING

Now, within two months after the 10 months and 1 week continuous and hard fasting, the above incident occurred to him. Then, his stabbed body became healthy and chubby. After that, he used to observe 13 months and 4 days continuous and hard fasting. During this fasting, he was caught by a terrible disease with terrible fever and terrible back pain. Even a minute, he could not lie down or sit. Day by day, his disease was increasing with terrible fever and terrible back pain. On hearing this, many people from that locality and from many places came to see him. After seeing him, they returned to their houses with great grief. Due to various distress, he put his cot on the outside open space of his room and lay down there. Day by day, many people came to enquire about his illness. He said to them, "Very serious."

In the beginning, when he was ill, he used to take tapioca, salt and chillies. Then he used to take tender unripened mango. Then he disliked to use them. So, he stopped eating them; and he could not eat anything; and his illness was very very serious. The people who came to see him thought that before the dawn of the next day, he would die. So, the people who came to see him returned to their houses, with a decision to come back in the evening to stay here. But, when the evening was nearing and nearing, his very serious illness began to decrease gradually and he was receiving good health gradually. Then he started to speak with the people. The people who returned to their houses, came with great grief, thinking about his very serious condition. But, when they saw him, they exclaimed about him and asked, "Ah! Aiya! How are you?" He said to them, "**My disease has been decreased and I am feeling healthy.**" Then, they very happily

returned to their houses. Without taking any medicine or taking any medical treatment, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had healed his deadly disease miraculously. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then also, he used to observe a number of 40 days continuous and hard fastings. In a number of 40 days continuous and hard fastings, he fasted without speaking to anyone. But he used to conduct, general meetings on every Sundays' and workers' meeting on the last fridays' of every month. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.23 THE LORD SENT MICHAEL, THE ARCHANGEL TO HELP HIM IN A 40 DAYS CONTINUOUS LONG HARD FASTING

During one of his last 40 days continuous and hard fasting without speaking to anyone, he became very very weak. At that time, during those 40 days, the LORD sent Michael, the archangel to help him in all those 40 days. When he wanted to rise up from his bed, the archangel standing at a distance, lightly raised up his own hands towards him, without touching him. At once, the power and strength from the archangel came out from his hands and caused him to rise up from his bed and to walk and to perform his daily duties. And when he faltered or leaned/inclined from his vertical position during walking, the archangel suitably showed his own hands towards him to save him from faltering or falling. When he wanted to kneel down to pray or to lie down or to go to bed or to take anything or to place anything, the archangel standing at a distance, lightly showed his own hands, in accordance with that particular work. What a powerful and miraculous thing it is! After this fasting, the LORD said in HIS prophecy, *"The angels of heaven are also trembling to see him."* Glory be to GOD!

Besides, **one day, the LORD said to him to take food.** Then he asked HIM, **"O GOD, are YOU telling to me due to YOUR love? or are YOU telling to me due to YOUR will?"** Then the LORD said, ***"I said this due to MY love, and it is not MY will. Your fastings are not yet over."*** So, he continuously fasted according to HIS will. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Due to his terrible weakness in his body, because of his continuous and hard fastings, when he was coughing, very often his phlegm came out from his mouth with blood; and at times his urine and

excrement also came out with blood. He patiently bore all these hardships in his body.

At many times, during his continuous and hard fastings and at other times, he felt unconscious. During that times, his hands fell on any-wise and his feet fell on any-wise and his head fell on any-wise. Without knowing anything, his hands and feet and head and body went to and fro and back and forth and up and down. In his last days, every week, he continuously said to me, **"As time goes by, I am getting weak."** Then also, I intensely thought about my pitiable state and about the pitiable state of the church and about the pitiable state of the ministry.

#### 1.24 HE FELT UNCONSCIOUS

One day, in an evening time, he sat on a long double chair; in which, at a time, one handle could be used by a person to lean or rest over it. At that time, I was sitting on the floor in front of him, very near to his legs; and we two were talking about some matters privately. During that time, suddenly, he felt unconscious and fell over one handle of the chair and leaned over it. At once, I was very much alarmed and cried aloud, **"Enakka Abbo! Enakka Abbo!"** which means **"My Abba! My Abba!"** and 'Abba' means 'Father'. And immediately, I hugged him and lifted him up by my hands very safely without giving him any distress. At that time, I was in a most awful situation. Any how, my LORD and my GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST very piteously looked upon us. In two minutes, he felt conscious and the LORD gave him a renewed life. TO GOD, OUR FATHER BE PRAISE, THANKS, HONOUR AND GLORY BOTH NOW AND FOR EVER. AMEN. Then he asked me about the happening there. And I said to him about the fainting of his heart and about his spirit's revival. What a great pity of GOD it is! Then also, I intensely thought about my pitiable state and about the pitiable state of the church and about the pitiable state of the ministry.

#### 1.25 THE LORD GAVE HIS HEAVENLY FOOD THREE TIMES TO KEEP HIM ALIVE

Besides, whatever the LORD said to him, doing according to the Word of the LORD was his work. Always he said to the LORD, **"O LORD,**

**whatever is YOUR will, it is the blessed thing to me."** And he had no worry about his life. Once, he used to observe 15 days continuous and hard fasting without taking any water or any other liquid or any food. At that time, his lips were cleaved by clefts. Then he suffered very much due to extreme thirst. Once he prayed continuously by shutting his eyes for 17<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> hours and some minutes; and another time he prayed continuously by shutting his eyes 21 hours and 11 minutes. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**Several times, during his continuous and hard fastings, and due to his continuous and hard fastings, he was very near to his death. During the sufferings of his continuous and hard fastings, due to his extreme hunger and extreme weakness, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gave HIS heavenly food to him, three times, to keep him alive.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Thus, he filled the remaining portion of afflictions and sufferings of CHRIST, in his flesh for HIS Body's sake, which is the church.

*"Who (I) now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind, of the afflictions of CHRIST in my flesh for HIS Body's sake, which is the church."*

Colossians 1:24

## 1.26 WENT INTO A VERY DENSELY FOREST AREA, FAR NORTH FROM PECHIPARAI DAM TO PRAY

Once, all alone he wished to go into a very interior place, into a very densely forest area (Ada Kadu), far north from Pechiparai dam to pray. There were very poisonous serpents, very ferocious wild animals, very poisonous (toxic) plants, very dangerous fog or dense mist, etc. It was a very dangerous place. He went to Pechiparai dam site and asked some tribespeople to show him that particular place. He said to them that he would give them money and then he gave them money. Firstly, they said to him that they would show the place. Then they went to their houses, but not returned for a long time. At that time, he was praying to GOD, in a place. As they did not return for a long time, he went and called them. They said to him, "**Sami (the one who abandoned and detested the world and worldly pleasures), there are karunchathi (the most poisonous serpent in that forest area), bear, elephant, tiger, etc. Sami, you should not go there.**

**We will show you another place.**" But, he said to them, **"Do not be afraid. They will not do any harm against you. You show me that place."** They asked him to wait for them and went away. But, they did not return again.

Then, on the next day, he again went to call them. They said to him, **"You have come to our place; we will give you much help."** Then the wife of a tribesman called her husband and said, **"Take him to that place."** Then three tribesmen came with two loaded guns and with a large knife with a large handle used to cut trees. Then he went with them with hunger, as he had not eaten on the previous day. On the way, they barked the trees to find out the way easily when they were going back to their houses. And due to their horrible fear about the most venomous creeping things and about the very cruel animals, they looked to and fro, and back and forth, and up and down. Then, they came to that particular place and left him at that place. Further, they said to him, **"Sami, there are karunchathi, tiger, etc. Are you coming with us?"** He said, to them, **"I am not coming with you; I am going to stay here. They will not do anything against me."** Then they said to him, **"When you are coming back, see the trees which we barked and come by that way."** Due to the dense of the forest trees, there was no sunshine and there was darkness. To find out the trees which they barked, they must be groped.

Now, very near to the place where he sat, there was a rock. From that rock, a little water was springing. That water was in rottenness, as the leaves of the trees fell into the brook continuously. He took that water and drank. In that place, there was well-grown grass. He picked up and removed the grass. Then he spread that place with leaves and prayed. Very near to that place, there was a high rock. He climbed up on that rock and looked around. There was noise and bustle and darkness and no sunshine. Then he stood there and cried aloud as **"ABBA, ABBA; JESUS, JESUS; my FATHER, my FATHER; my GOD, my GOD"** and prayed to the LORD.

When he returned from Malavilai to that place, his co-workers importunately begged the LORD to send him back to Malavilai immediately, without taking food and without taking bath and without applying oil to their heads. Then, the LORD gave him a pinch on

his back and said to him, **"Go from this place immediately."** At once, he returned from that place very hastily, due to the severe pain of the LORD's pinch.

But, he could not find out the way, as the trees they barked were under darkness. Then he found out two or three trees. But he could not find out the way correctly. So, he stood there and prayed to the LORD, **"O GOD, my wandering in this forest is YOUR will, as YOU will or my returning to Malavilai is YOUR will, as YOU will."** Then a power and strength of GOD came into him. Immediately, he started his walk very fastly. At that time, he had no thought about the piercing of thorns in his legs or in his other parts of the body or about the obstruction of the creeping things or about the obstruction of the forest plants/trees or about the obstruction of any other thing. And then he was very hungry. When he was coming near to the house of a tribesman, a tribeswoman was putting some cooked unripe jack fruit. He saw it and thought that it was tapioca. So, he went very near to her house and asked her, **"Have you got anything to eat? Give me a little. I give you money."** She said, **"Nothing is here."** Unable to bear his hunger, he again asked her. Then, she said about that cooked unripe jack fruit and brought some to him in a dirty basket with some chilli powder. He took it from her and ate. And she gave him some cold water also, to drink. He drank that water. Then he gave her money. But, she bluntly refused to accept it. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then, he started to come to Malavilai from that place. In his whole journey, he did not see any venomous creeping thing or any cruel wild animal. Nothing had done any harm to him. Then he reached Malavilai very happily. With the intention to stay there for long days, he went there to pray. But within some days, the LORD was going to send him back to Malavilai. He came to Malavilai safely. In all things, the LORD specially saved him. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.27 WENT TWO TIMES TO VELIMALAI; A MOUNTAINOUS PLACE TO PRAY

He went two times to Velimalai, a mountainous place to pray. For the first time, he went all alone and for the second time he went with a co-worker. For the first time, when he was going to Velimalai, he

bought some sugar, green gram, tea and some vessels for cooking from Nagercoil; and brought them with him. The great weariness due to the climbing up of the mountain and due to hunger, he thought of drinking some tea, before he started to pray. So, he took some water and picked some firewood. When he was picking firewood, he cried, thinking that he was picking firewood. Without knowing the quantity of tea to be added in water, he put some tea into the water. It gave a severe bitter taste to the tea. Then, he added some sugar to change its bitterness. But, it did not change its bitterness and that made the taste of it so bad. At all costs, he drank that tea and went to pray.

He spread his bedspread and knelt down on that and prayed about five minutes. *When he was praying to GOD with crying, a so bright light shined. At that time, in that place, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST manifested HIMSELF to him and showed HIMSELF to him. The LORD lifted him up with HIS most holy hands and embraced him with HIS most holy chest and put him up on HIS most holy shoulder and groped his back with HIS most holy hands; and consoled him and said, "Son, do not be afraid; I am with you; do not be dismayed and do not be perturbed."* HE further gave him a good many promises. When he was on HIS most holy shoulder, he was just upto HIS most holy stomach. HE was so much big in form. Glory be to GOD! Then he cried with happiness by remembering the scene of HIS love and happiness. At that time, he alone was there. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

During that time, he wished to pray at a certain place, and spread his bedspread. But that place was the pathway of a serpent, as a road to the extent of that serpent, for its daily passing for its daily prey. Then he closed that pathway of the serpent with grass and a stone. Then he spread his bedspread and started to pray, thinking that if it came, the grass would fall and by hearing that sound he would come to know that the serpent was coming. But, on that day, the serpent did not come by that way. On the next day, by that way, a kind of curling leech which lives on the land in dirty places, came. Thinking that it was going to come up on his bedspread, he thought that if it came up on the bedspread, there was not enough of pure water to wash it, since nearby there was some dirty water; and if he killed it by a twig, then he must wash his hand. As he sat there with such a

thinking, before reaching that bedspread, that leech returned and went away. Immediately, the LORD began to speak to him, *"Son, as the leech returned and went away, the serpent also returned and went away. I have sent the serpent by another way. That went to take its prey and returned to its abode. For giving no disturbance to you, I have done this. Till you leave this place, it will never come by this way."* What a loving concern of our GOD it is!

In the second time, when he went to Velimalai, he went with one co-worker. They went there and started to pray. When they were praying, there came three persons. They looked at their things and went away. They had only got their Holy Bibles, one pocket-watch and seven rupees. During the day time, two robbers came and looked there and went away. During the night time, six or seven robbers came. At that time, they were singing a song from their song book. Then the robbers came near to them and asked, **"Who are you here? Why have you come here?"** He said to them, **"We have come to pray."** Then they asked so many questions. But, he thought, **"Why do I speak with them when I am singing?"** So, he again started that song and both of them sang. **When they started singing, the robbers ran away from that place very swiftly, as they experienced the feeling of a terrible heat by fire. In this place also, the LORD did HIS great miraculous work.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! The robbers came there with the intention that they had got a very huge amount to rob. In that place also, the LORD saved both of them miraculously. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.28 THE MOST GLORIOUS VISION ABOUT HEAVEN, THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND THE MOST TREMENDOUS VISION ABOUT JUDGMENT AND HELL, THE FIERY LAKE OF BURNING SULPHUR

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST showed him how joyous and blissful and glorious, heaven, the kingdom of GOD is! Then, once the LORD said to him to draw the diagram of heaven, the kingdom of GOD; he drew it and got full marks. Glory be to GOD!

Besides, the LORD GOD showed him how terrible, the judgment to sinners and hell, the hell fire, the fiery lake of burning sulphur will be! The LORD GOD showed him also the most miserable condition of sinners who are going to be cast into the horrible hell.



During the judgment time, the sinners will be with severe and unbearable heart-rending cries and with writhing of fear and trembling, before the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then on seeing hell, their severe and unbearable heart-rending cries and writhing of fear and trembling will be increased much more. Then on going towards hell, their severe and unbearable heart-rending cries and writhing of fear and trembling will be increased more and more, since the horrible hell-fire will come towards them to devour them terribly with very high and strong and steady flames. What a pitiable thing it will be!

**The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST showed him heaven, hell and the judgment to sinners, in order to testify to the people of the whole world.** Glory be to GOD!

### 1.29 A GLORIOUS VISION ABOUT PARADISE

Once, the LORD JESUS CHRIST showed him the blissful holy **Paradise**, the place of rest of the souls of the saved/the redeemed/the regenerated/the saints/the believers, when he was in much grief about the death of a believer of our church. Then the LORD said to him, "**Look at the Paradise.**" **Immediately he looked at. He saw that believer was very happily and very joyfully laughing and laughing and continuously laughing, uncontrollably. What a happy and joyous laugh it is! If the happiness and joy in Paradise is like this, what a happy and joy in heaven, the kingdom of GOD will be! What a happy and joyous place it will be!**

### 1.30 THE SEMINARY OF HIS STUDY

Sadhu G. Devanesan (Aiya) was a student of the seminary of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Only Teacher or Master who taught him about HIS church and about HIS ministry and about HIS various ministers and about their spiritual gifts and about the various services and about the conducting of the various services and about writing hymns and psalms in praise of HIM and about the secrets/mysteries of the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures—the Holy Word of GOD. The Holy Word of GOD is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST Only. During his continuous and hard fastings, the LORD taught him all these things and he studied from HIM very carefully.

The class-room of his study was spilled/scattered and filled with the blood of former students. He also studied in that class-room by spilling his blood. He studied all things from HIM like Paul the apostle (Galatians 1:11-12) and passed all the examinations/tests conducted by HIM and obtained full marks/cent per cent marks in all the examinations/tests. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.31 RECEIVED THE CERTIFICATE FROM THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

After passing all the examinations/tests, conducted by the LORD JESUS CHRIST, he went to receive his certificate from HIM, from his heavenly MASTER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. When he was going to receive his certificate, he jumped and jumped perseveringly to overcome the obstructions and obstacles and went almost very near to the final place. There was a very steep place. There were no handles to hold and there were no steps to set the feet down. There also he jumped and jumped perseveringly. Suddenly, the Power From On High came into him and took him up without any hardship. Glory be to GOD!

When he went up, he saw a number of guard posts and a number of guard keepers. Then he went through those guard posts. Finally, there he saw two guard posts to enter into the glorious place where his heavenly MASTER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST sat gloriously. At that time, one said to him, **"This is the guard post for the other apostles. That is the guard post for the First apostles (the head of all other apostles). You go through that guard post."** Then he went towards the guard post of the First apostle and went into the glorious place where his heavenly MASTER very gloriously sat. Then, with a joyous smile, his heavenly MASTER, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST gave his certificate to him saying, **"You have to do the work of three persons."** With great humility and fear, he received his certificate from the most holy hands of his heavenly MASTER—the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to do his GOD-given GOD's ministry. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.32 WHO IS GOING TO SIT ON THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S RIGHT HAND IN HIS KINGDOM?

*"Then came to HIM the mother of Zebedee's children (Salome the*

*mother of James and John) with her sons, worshipping HIM, and desiring a certain thing of HIM. And HE said unto her, What wilt thou? (What do you wish?). She saith unto HIM, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on THY right hand, and the other on the left, in THY kingdom. But JESUS answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto HIM, We are able. And HE saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of MY cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on MY right hand, and on MY left, is not MINE to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of MY FATHER."*

St. Matthew 20:20-23

The one who drank the LORD JESUS CHRIST's cup of the cross, the one who suffered the cup of HIS suffering very next to HIM will sit on HIS right hand side of HIS throne in HIS kingdom and the one who suffered the cup of HIS suffering very next to that person will sit on HIS left hand side of HIS throne in HIS kingdom. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! To sit on the throne in HIS kingdom, we must be prepared to suffer the cup of HIS suffering. Here, our LORD JESUS CHRIST clearly revealed the way to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"... And that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 14:22

The one who drank the LORD JESUS CHRIST's cup of the cross, the one who suffered the cup of HIS suffering very next to HIM was Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) and the one who suffered the cup of HIS suffering very next to Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) was Paul the apostle of the first century. So, the one who is going to sit on HIS right hand side of HIS throne in HIS kingdom will be Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) and the one who is going to sit on HIS left hand side of HIS throne in HIS kingdom will be Paul the apostle. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has also revealed this secret/mystery to him. Glory be to GOD!

Once, Paul the apostle met Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) in a vision and said with great grief, **"I did not suffer to this extent of your suffering."**

Once, our LORD prophesied about him and said, *"MY son is advancing on, still suffering, still suffering and still suffering."*

**1.33 OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST HAS GIVEN TO SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA) THE FOLLOWING PROMISES**

*"Call unto ME, and I will answer thee, and shew (show) thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest (know) not."*

Jeremiah 33:3

*"Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations."*

Jeremiah 1:5

*"WHO raised up the righteous man from the east, called him to HIS foot, gave the nations before him, and made him rule over kings? HE gave them as the dust to his sword, and as driven stubble to his bow."*

Isaiah 41:2

*"Calling a ravenous bird from the east, the man that executeth MY counsel from a far country: Yea, I have spoken it, I will also bring it to pass; I have purposed it, I will also do it."*

Isaiah 46:11

*"No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of ME, saith the LORD."*

Isaiah 54:17

*"ARISE, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon thee. For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and HIS glory shall be seen upon thee. And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising. Lift up thine eyes round about, and see: all they gather themselves together, they come to thee: thy sons shall come from far, and thy daughters shall be nursed at thy side. Then thou shalt see, and flow together, and thine heart shall fear, and be enlarged; because the abundance of the sea shall be converted unto thee, the forces of the Gentiles shall come unto thee."*

Isaiah 60:1-5.

1.34 SOME IMPORTANT PROPHECIES ABOUT THE LORD'S CHURCH AND ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

*"The church of the LORD; the church of the LORD; this is the church of the LORD."*

*"I know MY church. I know the necessities of the church. I am always ready to give them willingly."*

*"Know that this is MY church; this is MY church, MY holy Body of the church."*

*"He (Sadhu. G. Devanesan) has been appointed as the light to the world, the light to the whole world."*

*"He has been raised up for these last days. He has been raised up for the blessings of the whole world."*

*"Who is he? The one who has been appointed in the place of CHRIST."*

*"One guide, here is the one guide. Where does he guide? To heaven: he guides to go to heaven."*

*"Behold, the world is going to tremble. Behold, the world is going to see and know that he is MINE; MY son, MY upright, MY beloved son and loved son. The world is going to see the LORD; the world is going to see the fright of the LORD; the world is going to see the wonder of the LORD; and the world is going to see the miraculous things of the LORD. Behold, the world is going to see the might of the LORD. Behold, the world is going to know the Judge who is going to give judgment to the world. Behold, the world is going to know who has created the world. Behold, who has come to deliver the world from destruction; and who has suffered (to deliver the world). All these things are to happen through MY son; the world is going to see and know all these things."*

*"He has been raised up for the world; MY servant; MY loving servant; MY upright servant; MY truthful servant. In this world, none is like him; no, no, no one is like him. Who is he? MY Paul. He has been raised up specially than the first century*

*Paul. To redeem and save the souls of the people from destruction and to proclaim MY Gospel to the world, he has been raised up by ME in this last time. I am revealing MY servant in many parts of the world. He is living by loving ME; he is coming immediately after MY foot-steps; he is only doing MY will; and he reveals and proclaims MY things. O deliverance, O redemption, O holiness, know that they are the essence of MY Word. MY son proclaims those words. Who is believing ME? Who is obeying ME? Who is fearing about the testimony of MY witness? Who is thirsting and fond about blessings? Abundantly blessed."*

*"I searched one man to be obedient to ME; to be doing the will of ME; to be giving fondness to ME; to be following ME; to be bearing sufferings and troubles for ME; to be suffering by hating his life for ME; to be having the quality of bringing blessings to the world by sufferings; to be working to felicitate all the promises of MINE; to be standing before the breach by requesting with tears; to be lamenting for ME and for MY souls day and night; to be lamenting with moving tears; to be lamenting with unbearable agony and sigh; and to be lamenting by seeing the destruction of the souls; I sought in the whole world; From heaven I looked upon/contemplated the world; I looked upon/contemplated all the people; I looked at all the people of the whole world; tried/tested and searched the hearts and reins; in these last days, I saw a single man; I saw MY son. He works to comfort ME; seeing the destruction of the souls, beseeches with agony and with tears and sigh; by hating his life, suffers with shedding tears and lamenting; those who have seen MY son, will see ME; you know your experience about which eyes are opened to you. Did you see the one son who does MY will like this? Did you look? Did you know the one who talks in the midst of you and in have you and with you? Did you believe the one who suffers with shedding tears and lamenting? Did you know the one who loves above your father? Did you know and believe the one who loves and devotes and suffers for you above whom of*

*you and all of you? Till now, many of you did not know; the LORD says, many of you did not know. Hence, they themselves are preventing their blessings. As the LORD has come to bless them with HIS stretched blessing hand, they themselves are found as the stumbling blocks. Only one thing, the only one thing is the unbelief about MY son's word; seemed with unbelief about MY son's counsel; not believing and not knowing MY son yet. For so many years, I am continuously talking to receive blessings. Those who do believe those things will receive blessings; those who do not believe will not receive blessings." The LORD says, "If you would believe, you would receive blessing."*

### 1.35 VISIT OF THE HOLY LAND

**He had visited the LORD's holy place, Jerusalem in Israel and some other Biblically important places in Israel to testify them to people.** He had visited Bethlehem, where JESUS CHRIST was born; the garden of Gethsemane, where HE suffered by shedding sweat of blood; the mount of Golgotha or the Calvary, where the LORD shed HIS most holy blood and died on the cross; the pit on the rock of Calvary into which the cross had been planted; the empty tomb of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, which remains empty and open since the day of the LORD's resurrection; the spot on the mount of Olives from where JESUS CHRIST ascended to heaven on the 40th day; the place where the HOLY SPIRIT descended on the 50th day of HIS resurrection (the day known as the day of Pentecost in Greek); the open tomb of Lazarus from where the LORD JESUS CHRIST raised him 4 days after his death; the place where the LORD fed more than 5000 with five loaves and two fishes and twelve baskets of leftover gathered; the place where the scrolls of the Holy Bible are safely kept; the western wall or the wailing wall of the temple of Jerusalem which had been built on mount Zion and other important places and testified them to people. Glory be to GOD!

He had visited also the city of Rome where Peter and Paul, the apostles of the LORD died as martyrs.

1.36 AFTER RETURNING FROM JERUSALEM, HE HAD SPOKEN THE FOLLOWING PROPHECY

*"Nothing is hidden to you. You were selected for that. You were appointed for the whole world. Now, you are painfully shedding tears about the destruction of the souls. MY son, the time is nearing for the shedding of joyous tears when seeing the redemption and salvation of the souls from destruction. I have given to you plenty of promises. I am recollecting and reminding those to you. I rise up to reveal that you are MY upright son. The Jews had hated ME; the Jews had disregarded ME. The Jews had fully hated ME to fulfil the Scriptures. Before you went there, what did I speak about them? Did you see their friendship with you? I revealed you to them. The exact love about you had entered in them. I saw that you wept for them; you wept for MY people; sighed for them from Jerusalem, from MY holy place. You know that the reward of this tear, they will by no means lose. It became a blessing to MY people, the Israelites. Is it not, through you the promises will have to be fulfilled. Are you a Gentile? No, no. You are MY dear son; perfect son; perfect son; true and perfect servant, the servant who has been appointed in the place of MINE; the one who has been elected by ME for the last days, for the fulfilment of the promises. Have you known the things which are you going to see? For so many times, I had spoken to you and shown to you. You are the true Israelite. You are the perfect and true Jew. Is it not, I had given witness through MY people, through the Jewish people who were in Jerusalem. You know that they were also one of MY works. What was the reason for the love of all other people with you? What was the reason for their awareness when they were seeing you? What was the reason for their submissiveness when they were seeing you? What was the reason for their submissive mindedness when they were talking with you? What was the reason for their love towards you? You know that this is the work of the fulfilment of the promises. You were raised up for the whole world."*



### 1.37 ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA), OUR GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST HAS WRITTEN IN HIS BOOK, THE HOLY BIBLE

Once our LORD JESUS CHRIST prophesied about Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) as:

*"About you, I have written in MY Book."*

The following Verses in St. John 14:12-14 are written about Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) in HIS Book, the Holy Bible. Glory be to GOD!

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on ME, the works that I do shall (will) he do also; and greater works than these shall (will) he do; because I go unto MY FATHER. And whatsoever ye shall ask in MY name, that will I do, that the FATHER may be glorified in the SON. If ye shall ask any thing in MY name, I will do it."

St. John 14:12-14

The above Verses of the Holy Bible are not yet fulfilled. But, yet to be fulfilled. **This is also one of the most important secrets/mysteries of GOD.** During the fulfilling of this secret/prophecy, the whole world would be reversed; the whole world would become upside down; the whole world would be terribly shaken; the whole world would be greatly trembling; the whole world would be taken aback; the whole world would be greatly astonished. What an astonishing and a surprising and an amazing thing it will be! For the fulfilment of these Verses, everyone should pray without ceasing with strong and unshakable faith/belief. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 1.38 THE LAST PROPHECY THROUGH SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

On 20th March 1983, in the general meeting of our church, just ten days before his sleep (death) in CHRIST, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has spoken the last prophecy through him, clearly about his sleep (death) in CHRIST and about the coming terrible situation of HIS ministers and believers of HIS church as below:

*"You are going to be scattered as the sheep without the shepherd (without Sadhu. G. Devanesan); going to wander as the sheep without the shepherd. If you would not obtain the experience of the workers, behold, you are in danger; you would be destroyed."*

Each and every word of the above prophecy is happening in HIS church without any change. Again, in the above prophecy, the LORD has spoken about Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) as below:

*"Is not of MY son and is not except of MY son and without MY son, there is no one in the world to fulfil the promises."*

Hence it is strongly believed by HIS faithful ministers and believers and some others that our LORD JESUS CHRIST will certainly fulfil all HIS promises through him by raising/resurrecting him from the dead. Glory be to GOD!

No miraculous and wonderful deeds are impossible for our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"Behold, I am the LORD, the GOD of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for ME?"*

Jeremiah 32:27

Besides, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"Heaven and earth shall pass away, but MY Words shall not pass away."*

St. Matthew 24:35

Moreover, the Holy Bible says,

*"But the Word of the LORD endureth for ever. ..."*

I Peter 1:25

### 1.39 SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA) SLEPT IN CHRIST

Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) slept in CHRIST on 30th March 1983 at the age of 68. **He was a glorious witness of the 20th century, who had seen JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD with his own eyes. He was the glorious witness of GOD who proclaimed the power and authority and sacred coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST to people as apostle Peter proclaimed to people (II Peter 1:16).** Glory be to GOD!

*"For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, but were eyewitnesses of HIS majesty."*

II Peter 1:16

#### 1.40 MY MOST HOLY FAITH (BELIEF) AND LIVING HOPE ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's revelations will surely come to pass. All HIS promises will be fulfilled appropriately at HIS appointed time (Habakkuk 2:3). **Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is never early or never late. HE is always on time.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and HIS glorious and miraculous works will be revealed to the whole world by great labours, pains, tribulations, sufferings, afflictions, trials, striving and efforts of HIS ministers/servants only. Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) had already filled up the LORD-given things in his flesh for HIS Body's sake, which is the church (Galatians 4:11, 19; Colossians 1:24-25, 29).

The raising up of the righteous man Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) from the east (Isaiah 41:2)—from India, from the east of Jerusalem in Israel, that is, from Malavilai in India, Tamil Nadu, Kanniyakumari District—Kanniyakumari is Cape Comorin, the southernmost point, a headland of India, by our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and the great wonders and miraculous things to happen through him in the world are great mysteries/secrets, which were kept secret by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST from generations and before the world began for our glory; but now the mysteries/secrets are made manifest by the Scriptures and by the Gospel preaching, according to the commandment of the everlasting GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, to make it known to all nations. These secrets/mysteries of GOD are revealed and manifested by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD for all people in the world to know and believe. And these are all written by me in the most wonderful name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST by my most holy faith (belief) which is spreading throughout the whole world unto all in every place and by my living hope by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST from the dead (Romans 16:25-26; I Corinthians 2:6-16; Ephesians 3:5; Colossians 1:26-28; Romans 1:8; I Thessalonians 1:8; Jude 20; I Peter 1:3). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The above miraculous thing is "*the mystery (secret) of HIS (the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's) will, according to HIS good pleasure which HE hath (has) purposed in HIMSELF*" (Ephesians 1:9). "*In whom also we (GOD's*

*ministers) have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated (predestined) according to the purpose of HIM who worketh (works) all things after (according to) the counsel of HIS own will" (Ephesians 1:11). Glory be to GOD!*

In the 20th Century, when Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) was alive, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has prophesied in America, Mumbai (India) and in various parts of the world about the glorious works of the former and latter spiritual rains (Joel 2:23; Zechariah 10:1). After he slept in CHRIST, in the 21st century also, the LORD has prophesied in India and in various parts of the world about the glorious works of the former and latter spiritual rains. **The LORD has prophesied in India and in various parts of the world that these spiritual rains will start from the southernmost point of India, in the headland of India. In the southernmost point of India, in the headland of India lies Kanniyakumari (Cape Comorin) which is in Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu. Thus, from Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's glorious works of the former and latter spiritual rains will start. In Kanniyakumari District lies Malavilai. In Malavilai, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has raised HIS Church, Adhi Pentecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) as the continuing church of the first century Christian church by Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), for these last days, for HIS glorious spiritual works. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!**

**Once our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has revealed in a vision to Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) about the raining of the former spiritual rain and about the latter spiritual rain. The Word of GOD or the seeds are selected and prepared and made ready for sowing; darkness and gloominess and clouds and thick clouds and flashing clouds are seen; thunderings and voices are heard for raining. Hereafter, the rain has to be rained (Joel 2:23; Zechariah 10:1). Glory be to GOD!**

Peace be with you all. The grace of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.

## 2. SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (APPA)

I, SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (APPA), author of this rare and precious book "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" – "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!" with the immense grace of the LORD GOD, was born at Palliady, Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India, in a Christian family which was Christian in name alone and brought up by my parents belovedly. I too was living as a nominal Christian, C.S.I Christian—a Protestant Christian. I was a great sinner and I had no qualities and spiritual experiences of a true Christian. In Tamil 'Selva Raj' means 'Kingdom of heaven' (St. Matthew 4:17).

### 2.1 MY MOTHER GAVE ME A STAUNCH FAITH (BELIEF) ABOUT THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

My parents were school teachers. When I was a very small boy, **my mother namely C. Muthammal, taught me that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.** This gave me a staunch faith (belief) from my very early childhood, in the divine existence of GOD and that the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the greatest and the most holy and the most powerful GOD to be worshipped truly by everyone as HE is having a name which is above every name (Philippians 2:9-11). Hence, I totally neglected all other false gods and I never worshipped any other false god. Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be praise, thanks, honour and glory both now and for ever. Amen.

### 2.2 MY FAMILY BROTHER GAVE ME A STAUNCH FAITH (BELIEF) ABOUT THE LORD'S CHURCH AND ABOUT SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

When I was doing my Secondary School studies, **one brother of my family as well as my classmate, namely C. Ezra, who then became a Preacher of this glorious church,** regularly said about the church and about the church services and about Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) and about his fastings and about his preachings and about all important matters of the church and about the wonders, miracles, signs and very great things to happen throughout the whole world through this church, through **Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya).**

By our regular conversations about the church and about Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), I very well came to know about the speciality, importance, significance and dignity of the church and about the honour, nobleness, distinction, high rank of office and dignity of Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya); and hence my heart also was fully attracted towards this glorious GOD's church and towards GOD's glorious servant Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya). This was one of the great doings of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for HIS divine glory. Glory be to GOD!

### **2.3 MY LORD AND MY GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST TOUCHED ME AND MET ME**

When I was in the second year of my MSc. Degree course in 1972 at Madras (Chennai) Christian College, Thambaram, I lost peace of mind and it was terrible and unbearable to me. Then I was touched and met by my GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. My loving GOD touched me and met me unexpectedly, to give HIS so great a salvation from sins and forgiveness of sins to me freely. What a loving GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

My LORD and my GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST lovingly gave me a terrible consciousness about my sins and to repent and confess my sins to the LORD to get forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins. At that time, I prayed some days by repenting and confessing my sins with tears and weeping. One of my college-mates also encouraged me to pray by confessing my sins to get perfect salvation from sins. But, due to my lack of eagerness and seriousness, I had not received forgiveness of sins and salvation (deliverance) from sins. Thus, I forgot the love of my LORD and my GOD. What a despiser of my LORD and my GOD, I am! What a stupid person, I am!

### **2.4 USED TO GO TO THE LORD'S CHURCH, ADHI PENTECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI (BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH) AT MALAVILAI AND SAVED**

When I had completed my college studies, I used to go to the LORD's church at Malavilai and listen to the preaching of Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), I was again touched and met by the LORD. On hearing his preaching, I repented and wept for the sins I had

committed, and I prayed for forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins. I confessed my sins to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and prayed to GOD day and night and for many days, with tears and weeping and humility. The LORD mercifully blessed me with forgiveness of sins and with salvation from sins, the deliverance from sins and with sanctification and experiences of holy life. I was totally freed from all sorrows, troubles, heaviness, grief and all pains, physical and mental. When I used to come to Malavilai, my tonsils problem was also miraculously cured by my LORD. **I was filled with divine peace, happiness and consolation. I was totally converted and saved and redeemed by JESUS CHRIST.** Glory be to GOD! **As I lacked eagerness and seriousness, I had not received the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT.** What a fool I am!

## 2.5 I SOUGHT THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AND RECEIVED HIS BLESSINGS

As our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST says, "*Seek ye first the kingdom of GOD, and HIS righteousness; and all these things (worldly blessings) shall be added unto you*" (St. Matthew 6:33), I began to seek the kingdom of GOD and HIS righteousness. GOD blessed me both worldly and spiritually. The LORD gave me forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins. The LORD granted me success in my MSc. Degree course. The LORD miraculously healed my tonsils problem, without any medical treatment or operation. Before that I took medical treatment for tonsils from two MBBS doctors. One of the doctors gave some medicines and advised me to operate it and another doctor gave me various kind of pills which affected my whole bodily health very much. So, I stopped taking pills. My LORD blessed me with health of spirit, soul, body and mind; and my LORD gave me a life of immense peace, immense consolation, and good health. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

And I wished to work as a government servant. Knowing my desire, before I took baptism, the LORD according to HIS will gave me a government job in the Tamil Nadu Revenue Department through Public Service Commission. I worked in the Collector's office and some other offices in Kanniyakumari District. I worked in the Revenue Department from 1.9.1973 to 1.11.1976, with honesty and straightforwardness and truth. For this, my co-workers are witnesses. Glory be to GOD!

## 2.6 RECEIVED BAPTISM AND BECAME A BELIEVER OF ADHI PENTHECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI (BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH)

When I was working as a government servant, I became a believer of the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) having its head-quarters at Malavilai, receiving the baptism by total immersion in water in the Paraliar River (St. Matthew 3:6, 13-17; St. John 3:23), by a Pastor of our Church (Ephesians 4:11), in the Name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the Holy Spirit (St. Matthew 28:19), on 21.10.1973. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 2.7 GOD'S DIVINE CALL REVEALED

Firstly, I did not like to serve as a GOD's minister or GOD's servant and I did not like to enter into HIS ministry. But, I liked to live as a believer and worked as a government servant. When I was thus working as a government servant, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) told me about GOD's calling for me to serve GOD. Later I too understood by HIS grace that it was GOD's eternal, immensely glorious will for me to serve GOD. But to serve GOD the LORD JESUS CHRIST, a man should renounce all things and abhor them. And he must live as a sage or hermit or monk. Glory be to GOD!

## 2.8 RESIGNED MY GOVERNMENT JOB TO DO THE LORD'S MINISTRY

With a perfect knowledge of these things, I resigned my government job on 1.11.1976, even though I had at that time passed all the seven tests required for promotion. I believed that the job of serving JESUS CHRIST is greater than all other jobs in the world. It is a job of heavenly government, offered to man by the GOD of heaven. It is a job no man can obtain by himself. It is a job greatly glorious and blessed. A man cannot inherit heaven, if he does not perform this duty according to the will of GOD. ***"Not every one that saith unto ME, LORD, LORD, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of MY FATHER which is in heaven."*** St. Matthew 7:21.

Again and again and continuously, my loving LORD gave me a good awareness to resign my government job and to join in HIS



ministry. Then I also understood and believed this great fact and resigned my worldly government job, for inheriting the life in heaven. I understood that heaven is the extremely precious thing for man, it is the precious pearl, a great wealth and a great treasure. I had a perfect knowledge about great glories and blessings of heaven. Therefore I found nothing great in the worldly government job. Heaven seemed great and precious to me. Hence, I resigned my government job. Then, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) told me that to do GOD's ministry, you must be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD is the absolutely necessary advice for anyone to do the LORD's ministry. Without anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD or without getting the LORD's divine power and divine strength and divine grace, no one can do the LORD's ministry. Glory be to GOD!

## **2.9 ANOINTED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD AND JOINED IN HIS MINISTRY**

Then, I began to pray and wait on the LORD to receive the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD and to attain the worthiness to serve the LORD; I prayed also for the grace of the LORD. No man can serve the LORD without receiving HIS divine power and divine strength and divine grace. I offered myself totally to the LORD at HIS most holy feet. I dedicated myself totally to the LORD and I prayed to the LORD; I begged the LORD importunately; I beseeched the LORD; I humbly requested the LORD; I made supplications with the LORD; I pleaded with the LORD in great grief and sorrow and with a heavy heart; I wept and shed tears with humility for obtaining HIS mercy and HIS HOLY SPIRIT. My loving LORD heard my prayers and granted HIS mercy. The LORD filled me with HIS HOLY SPIRIT with the sign of other tongues. The LORD anointed me with HIS HOLY SPIRIT. The LORD baptized me with HIS HOLY SPIRIT and blessed me immensely by HIS grace. I was filled with great joy and happiness greater than before. Then, by the will of GOD, I joined HIS church on 1.3.1977 to do HIS ministry and began to serve GOD as GOD's minister. Glory be to GOD!

## 2.10 ORDAINED AS A MINISTER OF GOD

According to the will of GOD, Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) ordained me on 25.3.1977, to perform the very important affairs of our church. After Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) slept in CHRIST, the LORD according to HIS merciful will has appointed me as the principal minister of our church. The LORD has given me many glorious promises. According to HIS glorious promises, the LORD is performing glorious works in HIS glorious church, by healing the sickness and illness of many people and casting out devils from many people. Glory be to GOD!

## 2.11 GLORIOUS PROMISES OF THE LORD ABOUT ME

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST spoke many things about me and gave many **glorious promises** to me by prophecy through Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) on 24.5.1977. **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST said,**

*“Who is he? Who is he? Who is he? He is the one, chosen before the foundation of the world. I knew him before I formed him in the womb. I called him even when he was in his mother's womb. I separated him while he was still in his mother's womb. Do you think you are a little one? You are not a little one. You are great, great to the world. Go in this might of yours. Have I not sent you? (Am I not sending you?) I shall give you extraordinary wisdom; I shall give you extraordinary mind; I shall give you extraordinary knowledge. I shall perform great things by you and I am with you. In all things, remember MY servant [Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya)].”*

In this prophecy about me, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST said to me to remember HIS servant in all things (I Corinthians 11:2). And in this prophecy, HE said to me as HE said to Gideon, and by this prophecy, HE sent me as HE sent Gideon. The call of Gideon is

mentioned in Judges 6:11-16. The LORD GOD looked upon Gideon and said,

*"Go in this thy might (might of yours), and thou shalt save Israel from the hand of the Midianites: have not I sent thee? (Am I not sending you?)"*

Judges 6:14

When I was a small boy, doing my Lower Primary School studies in Muthalar, L.P.S., my father went to give his vote in a polling station at Chenkody, U.P.S., in an evening time. Holding the hands of my father, I also went with him. After giving my father's vote, we were in the polling station. At that time, the election candidate of our constituency Dr. N.A. Noor Mohammad came there to oversee the polling station. My father and the candidate had good acquaintance with each other. So, they met and talked with each other.

When Dr. N.A. Noor Mohammad saw me, he asked about me; and my father told about me. At once, he caught one of my ears very nicely and said, **"He will be a great man."** Then, he took one of his garlands of flowers and lemon fruits (the ordinary garland used for ordinary worldly reception, wholehearted reception, in our locality), from his pleasure car and put it around my neck. Then we got into his car and went upto Verkilambi for our shopping. He got a grand victory in that election. At that time, by the grace and guidance of my loving GOD and my loving LORD JESUS CHRIST, he could understand about me. What a miraculous work of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST it is!

Dr. N.A. Noor Mohammad of Kanniyakumari District, was a brilliant alumnus of Yale University, U.S.A., Ex. Somalia Supreme Court Judge, Member of the Union Public Service Commission of India and the Vice Chancellor of the University of Calicut, etc.

## 2.12 AGAIN ORDAINED ME AND HANDED OVER TO ME THE RECORDS AND SEALS OF THE CHURCH

On the same day, that was on 24.5.1977, after the above prophecy about me, I have received the second time ordination by my prophet, mentor, guide and spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), by laying on of his hands, like the laying on of apostle Paul's hands on

Timothy (II Timothy 1:6) and like the laying on of Moses' hands on Joshua (Numbers 27:15-23). And on the same day, he handed over to me the records and seals of our Church, Adhi Pentecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) having its headquarters at Malavilai. My prophet's and mentor's and guide's and spiritual father's blessings by my GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST have been the greatest treasure and reward for doing the divine ministry of GOD by the filling up of GOD's extraordinary wisdom, GOD's extraordinary mind and GOD's extraordinary knowledge to perform great things of GOD. ***"And without all contradiction (fear of doubt) the less (lesser or inferior) is blessed of the better (greater or superior)."*** Hebrews 7:7. Glory be to GOD!

## 2.13 A GLORIOUS VISION ABOUT MY WRITINGS REVEALED TO SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)

Again, in a vision, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has revealed to Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) about my writings, viz., "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!!". This precious and rare Book "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!!" has been written by me according to this divine revelation. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**As our most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's prophecy through Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) on 24.5.1977, the LORD has given me extraordinary wisdom, extraordinary mind and extraordinary knowledge to perform one of HIS great things, the writing of the LORD's divine Book "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!!" – the precious and rare and divine Book "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!!" Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.**

## 2.14 THE SCHEMER SATAN, THE DEVIL SCHEMED TO KILL ME MANY TIMES

*"And HE shewed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him."*

Zechariah 3:1

The LORD's ministers/servants are predestined by our most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 1:4-6); they are specially

formed by the LORD in their mothers' wombs to be HIS ministers/servants (Isaiah 49:5); and their names are made mention by the LORD before their birth (Isaiah 49:1). Hence, Satan the devil also knew about the LORD's ministers/servants before their birth. So, from before their birth, the evil one, Satan the devil, the terrible schemer schemed to kill the LORD's ministers/servants. What an evil one, Satan the devil guilty of heinous crimes is! In all such very dangerous and terrible circumstances, our most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saves HIS servants/ministers indirectly and secretly through HIS heavenly angels. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

When I was born, the terrible schemer, Satan the devil schemed to kill me by the negligence of the midwife. So, after my mother gave birth to me, the midwife who cut my umbilical cord, was very negligent. Hence, almost all my blood was shed and I was about to die. In that time, when I was born, my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saved me from death by HIS divine grace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

Then, when I was a small child, a lady loved me very much and took care of me very affectionately and comforted me very much. In her mind, Satan the devil, the terrible Schemer brought an evil and harsh thought to murder me. That evil and harsh thought was: "**He will be a great man; so I must kill him.**" In this terrible scheme through the terrible schemer, Satan the devil also, my most beloved GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saved me from death by HIS divine grace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

Then, during my childhood and boyhood days, by the divine grace of GOD, I was loved almost by everyone. My most loving LORD and my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was always with me and saved me from all evil by HIS divine grace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

Then also, the terrible schemer, Satan the devil brought such evil and harmful thoughts in the hearts of his people, to destroy my life. In all these things, my most beloved GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saved me from death by HIS divine grace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

Once, the terrible schemer, Satan the devil schemed to kill me in a car accident from Chennai, Egmore by a rash and careless driving of a driver. In that also, my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saved me from death by HIS divine grace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

In 2011 also, Satan the devil, the terrible schemer sent his hired assassins—goons (goondas) through his wicked persons, by paying blood money to assassinate me, without any pity. In that also, my most beloved and loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saved me from death by assassination. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

**2.15 FROM THE HANDS OF ROBBERS, FROM KANNIYAKUMARI—CAPE COMORIN, THE SOUTHERNMOST POINT, A HEADLAND OF INDIA, OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST SAVED US THROUGH SADHU. G. DEVANESAN (AIYA)**

*“Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of GOD.”*

I Corinthians 6:10

Once in an evening time, after completing our spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya)'s special programme, we went to Kanniyakumari with him in a pleasure car for the sea breeze. There we saw the starting of the beautiful sunset. At that time, on the western side of the seashore, there were some sand hills and the road also ended near a sand hill. We went and sat on the sand, in that road-ending sand hill, at a little distance away from the end of that road, facing the sea and looking at the very beautiful sea waves, and every now and then looking at the very beautiful sunset by our right hand side. At that time, in our back side, there was a long and continuous thicket of thorns. After the sunset also we were there for the sea breeze.

At first, there were a number of tourists. Then, after the sunset, they began to go from that place and at last, no one was there, except us. After the sunset also, we were sitting there for the sea breeze.

At that time, we were only specially having an AKAI Cassette Player-Cum-Recorder. During that time, in our place, this AKAI was considered to be a rare and precious thing. The robbers saw this in the evening. So, they wished to rob this AKAI; and also thinking that we were having a large sum of money to rob, they came there.

Some robbers came in a vehicle, by showing themselves as ordinary wage earners (coolies) and stopped their vehicle on the end of the road and started to load some sand from the seashore. After sometime, some robbers came from the backside of us through the above thicket of thorns, by giving signals to their co-robbers who were showing themselves as ordinary wage earners (coolies), by loading sand from the seashore in their vehicle.

Now, our spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) clearly came to know that they were robbers who came to rob us. So, he said to us, **"Rise up, let us go."** Immediately, we rose up and went with him. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

On our front side, there was the sea; and on our back side, there was a long and continuous thicket of thorns; and on our right hand side, there were sand hills and there were no clear ways; and only on our left hand side, we could go towards that road-end to get on to the pleasure car. But, on that way, some robbers were showing themselves as ordinary wage earners (coolies) by loading sand on their vehicle. There was a very little way to get near to the pleasure car to get into it.

Our spiritual father went in front of us and we followed him very closely. When our spiritual father went and reached near those robbers, suddenly and snappily, they moved aside with bleak and paled faces and stood there as they lost a very precious and valuable thing. By the divine grace of the LORD, they could do no harm or injury or damage to us. Our most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST saved us from the hands of the robbers from that place by our spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya). Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

**Now, this is an important lesson to learn by every tourist who is going to Kanniyakumari (Cape Comorin)—the southernmost point,**

a headland of India. Every tourist should clearly understand about Kanniyakumari, one of the famous tourist centres and be careful in all things and in all places. Further, every tourist should be very careful in bathing in the sea and in going near the seashore because tossing with waves by the wind would occur anytime. Furthermore, no tourist should take bath in Kanniyakumari other than the safety bathing centres. It is better for every tourist if he/she sets aside his/her bathing in the sea in Kanniyakumari. Otherwise, no tourist would escape from terrible dangers. Nowadays, thieves, robbers, goons and cheats are everywhere. So, be careful and be prayerful always for our GOD'S guidance and security. These are all the warnings of our most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

## 2.16 A SMALL AND HOLY AND FAITHFUL WITNESS

*"Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, ..."*

Ephesians 3:8

Now, I am a small witness among all the witnesses of GOD and I am a holy witness and a faithful witness of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is leading me in this world as HIS holy witness and as HIS faithful witness. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

I have not yet seen my LORD and my GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. But I have a staunch faith (belief) about the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; and about HIS Holy Word, the Holy Bible. And I have a staunch faith (belief) about the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) having its headquarters at Malavilai; and about the LORD's ministry at Malavilai; and about the LORD's servant Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) who slept in CHRIST; and about the LORD's promises to the LORD's church and to the LORD's servant Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) in St. John 14:12-14.

And I have a staunch faith (belief) about the LORD's glorious works of the former spiritual rain and of the latter spiritual rain (Joel 2:23; Zechariah 10:1); and about the starting of these two spiritual



rains from the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) at Malavilai. **Malavilai lies in Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India—Kanniyakumari (Cape Comorin) lies in the southernmost point of India which is in the southernmost headland of India.** And I have a staunch faith (belief) about all other things which I have written in this precious Book, **“ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!” – “THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD’S SECRET !!”** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

As it has been said by our LORD JESUS CHRIST:

**“...Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.”**

St. John 20:29

The LORD has blessed me and continues to bless me greatly. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has made me a **spiritual father** for HIS children and people affectionately call me 'ABBA' and 'AIYA'. 'Abba' is an Aramaic domestic term by which the father was called in the most affectionate intimacy of the family. Aramaic is a form of Hebrew language that was spoken during the time of JESUS CHRIST. The word 'Abba' is used in India also.

Now, I am a faithful (truthful) witness of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Once, when I was with other ministers of GOD, our spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) witnessed about me as,

**“I know, Selva Raj is faithful; but I do not know that he is this much faithful.”**

For this, as apostle Paul thanked and praised our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, I also thank and praise our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

**“And I thank CHRIST JESUS our LORD, who hath (has) enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry.”**

I Timothy 1:12

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST witnesses about HIS faithful witness Antipas.

**“...Antipas was MY faithful martyr, ...**

Revelation 2:13

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD tells,

*"A faithful man shall abound with blessings: ..."*

Proverbs 28:20

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD asks,

*"...But a faithful man who can find?"*

Proverbs 20:6

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is immensely blessing and leading HIS church, in HIS glorious ways. GOD has chosen me the foolish (the mad), the weak, the base, the despised and the nought (I am as if I have no existence), for the riches of HIS divine glory (I Corinthians 1:26-31; Romans 9:23). Glory be to GOD!

*"I have inclined mine heart to perform THY statutes alway, even unto the end."*

Psalms 119:112

## 2.17 MY STRIVING, LABOURS, PAINS AND TRIBULATIONS FOR THE LORD'S CHURCH AND FOR THE LORD'S MINISTRY

*"We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; Always bearing about in the body the dying of the LORD JESUS, that the life also of JESUS might be made manifest in our body."*

II Corinthians 4:8-10

After Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) slept in CHRIST, all things which he had lastly spoken through prophecy began to be fulfilled in the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) having its headquarters at Malavilai and its ministry. Many false ministers/servants and false believers were scattered and began to wander from the church and from its ministry like the sheep without the shepherd.

Some scattered false ministers/servants with the help and support of the scattered false believers and their relatives and friends and others began to seize (capture) some branch churches and began to conduct church services independently. False Civil Suits were filed in Courts and false Civil Complaints were given in many places against me. False Civil Suits were filed by the scattered false

ministers/servants to bring the church under the full administration of the Court. What a terrible thing it is!

Before that, the scattered false ministers/servants caused unruliness and turmoil, inside and outside the church, with the help and support of their relatives and friends and other outsiders; and with the help and support of the scattered false believers' and their relatives and friends and other outsiders. Sadhu G. Devanesan (Aiya)'s son, a terrible enemy of Aiya also gave some false Criminal complaints against me; and gave his full help and support to the scattered false ministers/servants. Then, he also filed a false Civil Suit in the Court for the church properties against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry.

Lastly, some false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient ministers/servants stayed inside the quarters of the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church), Malavilai and began to give a number of false Criminal Cases and false Criminal Complaints against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry with an evil intention to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry; and with a terrible conspiracy for my death sentence or for my life sentence and made much evil and harm to me and to the LORD's church and its ministry. And they also made much unruliness and turmoil inside and outside the churchquarters with the help and support of one of the above false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient servants'/ministers' (the leaders') relatives and friends and with the help and support of some outsiders, especially the enemies of our church who are always having an evil intention for the utter ruin of the LORD's church. What an awful thing it is!

In the above false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient ministers/servants, one of them (the false and deceitful leader) began to give false Civil Suits also against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry with an evil intention to seize (capture) the administration of the church from me very cunningly; and he made more and more evil and harm against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry, with a terrible conspiracy for my multiple death sentence or/and for my multiple life sentence. He

daringly made more and more evil and harm and unruliness and turmoil inside and outside the churchquarters with the help and support of some false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient ministers/servants and with the help and support of his relatives and friends and with the help and support of so many people. He daringly gave again and again, so many false Criminal Cases and false Criminal Complaints directly and indirectly to so many government higher authorities and to so many government departments with an evil intention to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry utterly, and with a device to seize (capture) the administration of the church from me very cunningly, by staying inside the churchquarters at Malavilai.

Then, another false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient minister/servant also joined hands with him and started to give false Criminal Complaints against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry with an evil intention to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry with the inducement and help and support of his false and deceitful leader and by staying inside the churchquarters at Malavilai. What a false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient minister/servant he was!

Further, another false and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient and cruel and deceitful and wicked and dangerous minister/servant who has already joined with them began to give false Criminal cases and false Criminal complaints against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry, with an evil intention to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry utterly, by staying inside the churchquarters at Malavilai. He gave so many false Criminal Cases and so many false Criminal Complaints to so many government higher authorities and to so many government departments upto the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court. He made much unruliness and turmoil inside and outside the churchquarters, by speaking false and evil things unhesitatingly and by sending so many false and evil Criminal Cases and Criminal Complaints unhesitatingly, with an evil intention to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry utterly, with the inducement and help and support of his false and deceitful leader. Before this, he

severely attacked some of his co-ministers/co-servants unhesitatingly with severe internal wounds. And when he came to attack me severely with his cruel and wicked hands with great fury, my most loving LORD and my most loving GOD gracefully saved me from him and from his wicked and cruel hands, **by the timely prevention of our LORD JESUS CHRIST through HIS minister/servant, namely G. Rajian Preacher.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Such a dangerous and cruel and venomous and wicked minister/servant he was!

Before this, one scattered female servant/minister also daringly gave false and evil Criminal Complaints to various government authorities and to various government departments, with the inducement of this false and deceitful leader and with the inducement of his supporters, against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry, to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry wholly.

Some of this false and deceitful leader's relatives and friends, neighbouring people, outsiders and other enemies also daringly gave a number of false Criminal Complaints to various higher authorities and to various government departments, with the inducement of this false and deceitful leader and his supporters, against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry, to tarnish my reputation and of the LORD's church and its ministry completely.

Furthermore, one enemy of the LORD's church with the inducement and help and support of this false and deceitful leader, filed a false and harmful and deceitful Criminal Original Petition, with a terrible conspiracy for my death sentence or for my life sentence, before the High Court of Madras; and another one gave a Criminal Complaint against me to humiliate and to give shame to me before the public and before the government officials, before the High Court of Madras.

Then, again and again, this false and deceitful leader and another dangerous and cruel and venomous and wicked minister/servant, by continuously staying inside the quarters of the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church), Malavilai and by doing unruly acts, gave a number of false Criminal Cases against me, before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court;

and one of them (this false and deceitful leader) gave a false Civil Suit as an appeal against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry, before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court. Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya)'s son, a terrible enemy of Aiya also joined with this false and deceitful leader secretly, and began to give necessary help and support to this false and deceitful leader indirectly through this false and deceitful leader's brother.

This false and deceitful leader filed a false CRL.O.P. before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court, particularly against me for Criminal Intimidation. **In this also, my most loving LORD and my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST miraculously saved me and HIS church and HIS ministry by a tremendous victory, on 25-02-2008, by THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K.N. BASHA by his disposed-of-Order.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

**Unless THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K.N. BASHA gave the above disposed-of-Order, the conditions of the LORD's church and the LORD's ministry would be under irreparable loss and my condition will be awful.** What a miraculous work of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST it is!

Then, with the inducement and direction of the false and deceitful leader, his most intimate friend filed a false Writ Petition before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court, and obtained an utterly false order on 21.02.2012, holding that "**according to the learned counsel, he (Sadhu. C. Selva Raj) is no more the trustee and the Church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai having its headquarters at Malavilai is now administered by a different set of trustees.**" What an utterly false order it is! What an utter falsehood it is!

After that, I filed a Review Application before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court to obtain a truthful and correct order. **In this also, my most loving LORD and my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST miraculously saved me and the LORD's church and the LORD's ministry by a tremendous victory, on 18.07.2012, by THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. VENKATARAMAN by a truthful and correct Review Order.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

**Unless THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. VENKATARAMAN gave the truthful and correct Review Order, on 18.07.2012, the conditions of the LORD's church and LORD's ministry would be under irreparable loss and under total chaos and my condition will be most awful.** What a miraculous work of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST it is! What a wonderful work of our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST it is!

Thousands and thousands of false bit notices were printed with false addresses against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry; and freely distributed to various persons at various places and to various government departments directly and by post; and these false bit notices were falsely used by him (this false and deceitful leader) in his false Civil Suits and in his false Criminal Complaints against me and against the LORD's church and its ministry. His most intimate friend, the venomous and cruel and dangerous and wicked minister/servant also falsely used these false bit notices freely for his false Criminal Cases and for his false Criminal Complaints.

**In all the above things, our most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is always with me and with HIS church and with HIS ministry.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

Furthermore, in the mean time, this false and deceitful and uncontrollable and unruly and disobedient and wicked minister and leader, started to reside at Thiruvananthapuram, Kerala State. And in due course, he became a permanent resident of Thiruvananthapuram, Kerala State, with an own used car in that residential address.

And on his own accord and wisdom, he has voluntarily left the LORD's church and the LORD's ministry of Malavilai Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C), Malavilai and from its Workers' Group (Workers' Assemblage) or Oozhiyer Thokuthi at Malavilai; and on his own accord and wisdom he has voluntarily joined and become an elected and appointed PRESIDENT of another church namely, "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA", Koodarapally, bearing Registration No. T 1092/80, Carmel Mandapam, Aramada Post, Thiruvananthapuram-695032, Kerala State, as against Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai Workers' Advices and Regulations, which he has subscribed and agreed and signed on 08.01.1990 as a solemn agreement before the

divine presence of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. As per this solemn agreement, he should never leave the LORD's church and its Oozhiyer Thokuthi (Workers' Group or Workers' Assemblage) at Malavilai, and one who leaves the LORD's church and the Oozhiyer Thokuthi (Workers' Assemblage) at Malavilai, loses all his rights and benefits in the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C.), Malavilai.

After becoming the PRESIDENT of the "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA," and after permanently residing at Thiruvananthapuram, Kerala State; this false and deceitful and wicked minister and leader continuously sent false Criminal Complaints and false Civil Notices, and continuously filed false Criminal Cases and false Civil Suits in various Courts. And he filed, one false execution petition E.P. and another false execution Application E.A. together in the Principal District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram on 26.06.2013 and got one erroneous Judgment as the common order and two erroneous Decretal Orders on 03.03.2014—one erroneous Decretal Order to detain me in Civil Prison for one month, alleging that I have willfully failed to obey the Decree passed by the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court, in S.A. 114/2008, on 08.02.2012, and another erroneous Decretal Order for police protection to enforce the above Decretal Order of the High Court, as if he is being prevented from entering into the churchquarters to reside in the portion in which he is residing and to take part in prayer along with the other workers, subject to Rules and Conditions of the Sabha, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C.), Malavilai. But, he got the two erroneous Decretal Orders with an evil intention to create turmoil and confusion and riot and unruliness in the smooth and peaceful administration and management and function of the LORD's church and of the LORD's ministry at Malavilai in my absence, that is during my detention in Civil Prison for one month. What a false and wicked minister he was!

The truth behind it is, during the pendency of the above S.A. 114/2008, that is, before the pronouncement of the Decree in the above S.A. on 08.02.2012, he has voluntarily joined in the above mentioned "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA", and has become an elected and appointed PRESIDENT of the "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA" from 30.01.2011 and he has been conducting the above "ARAMADA DEIVA



SABA" authoritatively from 30.01.2011, in violation of Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C.) Workers' Advices and Regulations. This fact has been willfully suppressed by him before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court on 08.02.2012. What a false and cunning minister he was! Then, another reason for getting those two erroneous Decrees is, he has been dismissed from the LORD's church and from LORD's ministry, from Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai, (B.P.T.C.), Malavilai and from its ministry on 17.02.2013, as he has voluntarily left from the LORD's church and from the LORD's ministry, Malavilai and its ministry on his own accord and wisdom, and has voluntarily joined on his own accord and wisdom, and had become an elected and appointed PRESIDENT of another church namely, "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA", in Thiruvananthapuram, Kerala State, as against the Workers' Rules and Regulations of our Church.

In the mean time, he filed two false Civil Suits in the Additional District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram against me, one false Civil Suit to grant a Decree declaring that the above mentioned "Church Rules and Regulations and Workers' Rules and Regulations" which he has subscribed and accepted and agreed and signed both the "Church Rules and Regulations and Workers' Rules and Regulations" and undertook to obey the above said Rules and Regulations, way back on 08.01.1990, before the divine presence of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, as null and void. And another false Civil Suit against me, seeking for the relief of declaration that I am an incompetent person to administer the LORD's church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C.), having its headquarters at Malavilai, and for declaration that he is the competent person to administer the LORD's church at Malavilai. **Subsequently, the above two false Civil Suits were rejected by the Additional District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram, as per the rejection of plaint, by the HONOURABLE ADDITIONAL DISTRICT MUNSIF Thiru S. JEEVA PANDIAN on 07.08.2015.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

May the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST bless this HONOURABLE ADDITIONAL DISTRICT MUNSIF Thiru. S. JEEVA PANDIAN for his honesty and straightforwardness and uprightness and justness, and also his family abundantly with the worldly and

heavenly blessings, and finally to obtain heavenly bliss, the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever!

Now, aggrieved by the two erroneous Decrees passed by the Principal District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram, on 03.03.2014, I filed two Civil Revision Petitions before the Madurai Bench of Madras High Court, on 07.03.2014, praying that in the circumstances stated therein and in the affidavits filed therewith the High Court will be pleased to (i) To pass an order to dispense with the production of the Decreeal Order dated 03.03.2014 passed in E.A. on the file of the Principal District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram (ii) To pass and order to dispense with the production of the Decreeal Order dated 03.03.2014 passed in E.P. on the file of the Principal District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram.

By the divine work and grace of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, these two petitions were coming on for orders on the same date, that is, on 07.03.2014, before THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. KALYANASUNDARAM. **Upon perusing the petitions and the affidavits filed in support thereof and upon hearing the arguments on both sides, THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. KALYANASUNDARAM dispense with the Decreeal Orders, ordered on 07.03.2014 that the orders of the Principal District Munsif Court, Padmanabhapuram will not be executed till 11.03.2014 and directed the office of the High Court to number the Revision Petitions and post for admission on 10.03.2014.** Then, this order was extended upto 01.04.2015 till the disposal of the Revision Petitions. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

**Unless THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. KALYANASUNDARAM gave the above Order on the same date, that is on 07.03.2014, my condition will be most pitiable in Prison (Jail); and the conditions of the LORD's church and the LORD's ministry at Malavilai, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C.) at Malavilai and its ministry will be most awful, in the smooth and peaceful administration and management and function due to my absence, and due to the presence of the enemies of the church. What an awful condition of the LORD's church and its ministry it will be!**

In this also, my most loving LORD and my most loving GOD, the

**LORD JESUS CHRIST miraculously saved me and HIS church and HIS ministry by a tremendous victory, through THE HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. KALYANASUNDARAM.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

**Then, my most loving LORD and my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST gave me and the LORD's church and its ministry at Malavilai, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C), Malavilai and its ministry, a tremendous victory, firstly from THE MADURAI BENCH OF MADRAS HIGH COURT, on 01.04.2015, by THE HONOURABLE Mrs. JUSTICE PUSHPA SATHYANARAYANA,** holding that there is no disobedience committed by the plaintiff, me; and it is only the defendant, he who had disobeyed the Decree of the High Court and disentitled him by himself the right of exercise of right of participation in the prayers. Further, the worker (minister) of the Malavilai Church should be obedient to the Rules and Regulations of the Sabha (Church); and if the worker (minister) either goes on his own violation or has been expelled by the Church, he cannot claim any right. Once the worker (minister) goes on his own, he loses all the rights in the Malavilai Sabha (Church). Therefore, it was contended that the defendant (he) in the year 2010-2011 had joined a new Sabha (Church) by name "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA" and he was appointed as the PRESIDENT of the same and on 14.12.2011, the defendant (he) had convened a Executive Committee Meeting on behalf of the above "ARAMADA DEIVA SABA" in the capacity of the PRESIDENT and he has been conducting prayers and meetings in that Sabha (Church) in the capacity of the PRESIDENT and he has been residing in Thiruvananthapuram, Kerala at least from the year 2010, as he has purchased a car in the year 2010 in his name which bears Kerala Registration Number. If a person (minister/servant) voluntarily leaves the Sabha, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C), Malavilai, he would loses all the rights in the Sabha and he cannot claim to come back. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

**In the result, the two Civil Revision Petitions filed by me are allowed and the two Decretal Orders passed by the Principal District Munsif, Padmanabhapuram in E.P. and E.A. are set aside, and consequently, the connected Miscellaneous Petitions are also dis-**

**missed, from THE MADURAI BENCH OF MADRAS HIGH COURT, by THE HONOURABLE Mrs. JUSTICE PUSHPA SATHYANARAYANA, on 01.04.2015.**

Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

Then also, the false and deceitful and wicked minister has filed Special Leave Petitions in SUPREME COURT OF INDIA.

**And finally, these Special Leave Petitions are dismissed from SUPREME COURT OF INDIA, by HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE FAKKIR MOHAMED IBRAHIM KALIFULLA and by HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE UDAY UMESH LALIT, as the two HONOURABLE JUSTICES are not inclined to entertain these Special Leave Petitions, which are dismissed, on 27.07.2015. My most loving LORD and my most loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST gave me and the LORD's church and its ministry, ADHI PENTHECOSTHE SATHYA SABHAI (BEGINNING PENTECOSTAL TRUTH CHURCH) having its headquarters at MALAVILAI and its ministry a tremendous victory, finally from SUPREME COURT OF INDIA, on 27.07.2015, by HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE FAKKIR MOHAMED IBRAHIM KALIFULLA and by HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE UDAY UMESH LALIT. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.**

**FINALLY, BY REJECTION OF SUIT ALREADY FILED BY ME, THE WHOLE SUIT MATTER WAS IMMEDIATELY TERMINATED, ON 07.08.2015, BY ADDITIONAL DISTRICT MUNSIF MR. S. JEEVA PANDIAN. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD! To GOD, our FATHER be Praise, Thanks, Honour and Glory both now and for ever. Amen.**

**May the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST bless these six HONOURABLE JUSTICES, HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE FAKKIR MOHAMED IBRAHIM KALIFULLA, HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE UDAY UMESH LALIT, HONOURABLE Mrs. JUSTICE PUSHPA SATHYANARAYANA, HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. VENKATARAMAN, HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K.N. BASHA and HONOURABLE MR. JUSTICE K. KALYANASUNDARAM and one HONOURABLE ADDITIONAL DISTRICT MUNSIF MR. S. JEEVA PANDIAN for their honesty and straightforwardness and uprightness and justice, and also their families abundantly with the worldly and heavenly blessings, and finally to obtain heavenly bliss, the eternal bliss**

in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever!

What a wonderful and terrible work of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for the glory of HIS most holy NAME and for me and for HIS church and for HIS ministry and for HIS people and for the whole world through these six HONOURABLE JUSTICES and by one ADDITIONAL DISTRICT MUNSIF it is! In this, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gloriously revealed HIM and HIS church and HIS ministry and me to the whole of India and to the whole world; and confirmed the divine existence of HIM and the existence of me and of HIS church and of HIS ministry to the whole of India and to the whole world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Glory be to GOD!

May the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST bless the one who spent his whole time and energy whole-heartedly, from the time when he heard about the LORD and about the LORD's church and about HIS ministry and about me, for the LORD and for the LORD's church and for HIS ministry and for me till the end, and also his families and also the families of his associates abundantly with the worldly and heavenly blessings, and finally to obtain heavenly bliss, the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever!

May the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST bless all HONOURABLE JUSTICES AND JUDGES, **Senior Counsel Mr. R. Gandhi**, all Advocates and all others who were for the LORD and for the LORD's church and for HIS ministry and for me honestly and straightforwardly and uprightly and justly, and also their families abundantly with the worldly and heavenly blessings, and finally to obtain heavenly bliss, the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever!

In my family, I am the only son to my parents. Two or three times, when I and Kurian the LORD's minister were with our spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), he said to me, "**Kurian is your younger brother.**" And once when we two were with our spiritual father, he said to me, "**Kurian is your younger brother; and if he is alive, he will be very helpful to you.**" This is a faithful saying of my spiritual father. As my spiritual father said, he is very helpful to me in all matters, after my spiritual father slept in CHRIST. So, everyone should pray for his long life with a strong body. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

May the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST bless my younger brother and the LORD's minister, Pastor. Thomas M. Kurian who spent his whole time and energy whole-heartedly for the LORD and for the LORD's church and for HIS ministry and for me from the beginning to the end, abundantly with the bodily and heavenly blessings, and finally to obtain heavenly bliss, the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever!

May the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST bless all the LORD's ministers of our church, and all believers of our church and all the others who helped me and prayed for me and for the LORD's church and for HIS ministry, and their families abundantly with the worldly and heavenly blessings, and finally to obtain heavenly bliss, the eternal bliss in heaven, the kingdom of GOD for ever and ever!

TO GOD, OUR FATHER BE PRAISE, THANKS, HONOUR AND GLORY BOTH NOW AND FOR EVER. AMEN.

## 2.18 MY MOST HOLY FAITH (BELIEF) AND LIVING HOPE AND MY WISH

I have written particularly about '**My most holy faith (belief) and living hope about Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya)**' under the sub-heading 1.40 of this main-heading '**Bestowal of Divine Experience**' of this precious Book; and generally about '**My most holy faith (belief) and living hope**' under the last sub-heading of this precious Book.

**Further, my wish is to see my spiritual father Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) and to hand over the charge of the church to him, which he had given to me to look after and conduct, at the time in a state of not having him. At that time, I thought that he has his ministry in America and in other parts of the world; particularly when he goes to do his ministry in America, he is asking me to look after and conduct the church. But this thing is a mystery/secret thing of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for the lasting of my spiritual life in HIS church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (B.P.T.C.) of the LORD and in HIS ministry of the LORD. What a loving concern of my GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST about me it is!**

Furthermore, my another wish is to see the terrible works and the

frightful works and the strong works and the wonderful works and the miraculous works and the greater works than the works of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST did when HE was in this world (St. John 14:12-14), during the future raining of the former spiritual rain and the latter spiritual rain by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Joel 2:23; Zechariah 10:1). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Peace be with you all. The grace of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.

### **3 . DIVINE EXPERIENCE THROUGH WHOM ?**

#### **3.1 DIVINE EXPERIENCE**

Divinity is the divine experience obtained from the divine GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. It is a life without sins; it is a sinless life; it is a guiltless life; it is a spotless life; it is a holy life; it is a righteous life; it is a peaceful life; it is a glorious life; it is a life of joy in the HOLY SPIRIT; it is the true life. So, everyone should obtain divinity, the divine experience from the divine GOD.

*“For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to GOD, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of GOD is eternal life through JESUS CHRIST our LORD.”*

Romans 6:20, 22-23

*“For as many as are led by the Spirit of GOD, they are the sons of GOD.”*

Romans 8:14

*“Happy is that people, that is in such a case: yea, happy is that people, whose GOD is the LORD.”*

Psalm 144:15

#### **3.2 STUMBLING-BLOCKS**

If one seeks the devil, he will obtain devilishness. If one seeks the flesh, he will obtain sensuousness. If one seeks the world, he will

obtain worldliness. Devilishness, sensuousness and worldliness are the stumbling-blocks that cause problems, obstacles and hindrances, and prevent us from achieving divinity, the divine experience. So, everyone should flee from these stumbling-blocks.

Devilishness, sensuousness, and worldliness are great evils and great sins against the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are always strongly against divinity and they are always strongly against the divine GOD. Devilishness, sensuousness, and worldliness will pass away. The world and its desires will pass away. But those who do the will of GOD will abide for ever (I John 2:15-17).

*"Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it."*

St. John 8:44

*"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in CHRIST JESUS, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against GOD: for it is not subject to the law of GOD, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please GOD. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of GOD dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of CHRIST, he is none of HIS. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live."*

Romans 8:1, 5-9, 13

*"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with GOD? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of GOD."*

James 4:4

The fools (morally dull) never flee from these stumbling-blocks. The fools are those who hate knowledge (Proverbs 1:22) and correction of any kind (Proverbs 12:1), who are ready to meddle or argue



(Proverbs 20:3) and make no effort to restrain their anger (Proverbs 29:11), who trust in themselves (Proverbs 28:26) rather than in GOD (Psalm 14:1), who despise wisdom and instruction (Proverbs 1:7; 5:12) and who are destroyed by their own complacency and carelessness (Proverbs 1:32).

### 3.3 DIVINITY THROUGH THE HOLY BIBLE

The Holy Bible, the most holy book of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the only book, which reveals divinity, the divine experience. It also reveals devilishness, sensuousness, and worldliness and ways to escape from these great evils and to attain the kingdom of heaven. So, the Holy Bible is the Holy Book of Salvation. By the grace of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST anyone can obtain salvation through the Holy Bible; anyone can obtain divinity, the divine experience through the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD.

*“Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for MY mouth it hath commanded, and HIS Spirit it hath gathered them.”*

Isaiah 34:16

### 3.4 DIVINITY THROUGH WHOM ?

Divinity, the divine experience of the divine GOD can be got only from the divine GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Divinity can be got only from the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Divinity can be got also from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, through HIS divine and holy servants, by holding on to the teachings of HIS divine and holy servants. This is the easiest way to get divinity, the divine experience from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*“Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample.”*

Philippians 3:17

*“For yourselves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you.”*

II Thessalonians 3:7

### 3.5 DIVINITY REVEALED BY LORD'S SERVANTS

The divine and holy servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are revealing the divinity of GOD. The true servants of GOD are revealing the divinity of GOD. They are the pure people of GOD; they are the holy and righteous people of GOD; they are the holy witnesses of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"Ye are witnesses, and GOD also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe."*

I Thessalonians 2:10

### 3.6 THE WAY TO DIVINITY

If you believe the LORD JESUS CHRIST as the Only Saviour and the Only Redeemer of the world, you can get divinity. If you confess your sins to the LORD JESUS CHRIST with a broken-heart and with tears and with humility and with a contrite spirit to get forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, etc., by repenting from sins, you can get divinity.

*"The LORD is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart; and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit."*

Psalms 34:18

If you pray to the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for holiness and to obtain the HOLY SPIRIT, after getting salvation from sins, you can get divinity. By any other means, no one can get divinity of GOD, the divine experience.

*"For this is the will of GOD, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not GOD: That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the LORD is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. For GOD hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but GOD, who hath also given unto us HIS HOLY SPIRIT."*

I Thessalonians 4:3-8

Everyone should hear and obey the words of the true servants of GOD. No one should reject the words of the true servants of GOD. No one should reject the true servants of GOD. He who hears the words of the true servants of GOD hears the Words of GOD. He who rejects the words of the true servants of GOD rejects the Words of GOD. He who rejects the true servant of GOD rejects GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said to HIS disciples,

*“He that heareth you heareth ME; and he that despiseth (rejects) you despiseth ME; and he that despiseth ME despiseth HIM that sent ME.”*

St. Luke 10:16

### 3.7 WHO WILL ENTER THE DIVINE WORLD ?

Only those who obtain divinity, the divine experience of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will enter into the divine world or the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD or the celestial world. So, it is absolutely essential for everyone to obtain divinity, the divine experience of GOD. And it is absolutely essential for everyone to look beyond this present world to the divine world of new heavens and a new earth.

*“Nevertheless we, according to HIS promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of HIM in peace, without spot, and blameless.”*

II Peter 3:13-14

## 4. FOLLOWING LORD JESUS

It is the intense wish and deep desire of the apostles that every believer should emulate them in following our LORD JESUS CHRIST who is the **supreme example** of suffering evil for doing good (I Peter 2:21). Every disciple of the LORD should follow in HIS footsteps to voluntarily and willingly expect evil as a reward for doing good (I Corinthians 11:1; Philippians 4:9). The suffering is all part of GOD's plan and the work or the duty HE has assigned to everyone of us (Romans 1:1; II Timothy 2:8-9; II Corinthians 6:4-10). Paul, the apostle has said,

*"Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of CHRIST. Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you."*

I Corinthians 11:1-2

*"For though ye have ten thousand instructors in CHRIST, yet have ye not many fathers: for in CHRIST JESUS I have begotten you through the Gospel. Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me."*

I Corinthians 4:15-16

Followers are the disciples. Following Paul means living according to the preachings of Paul. Paul's followers followed his example, as he followed the example of CHRIST. Paul has praised his followers for remembering him in everything and for holding on to the teachings, just as he passed them on to them.

Paul has asked his followers to follow JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, through their spiritual father. Only through their spiritual father, anyone can follow the LORD JESUS CHRIST correctly and faithfully and truthfully. This is the true way to follow JESUS CHRIST, the divine GOD. This is the only true way to follow JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD.

Remembering the holy spiritual life of their GOD-given spiritual father in everything and holding on to the teachings of their GOD-given spiritual father are very essential to follow JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD correctly and faithfully and truthfully.

The believers must follow the example of their GOD-given spiritual father. They should always keep the ordinances, teachings, and doctrines of their GOD-given spiritual father. They should put into practice whatever they have learned or heard or received from their GOD-given spiritual father or seen in their GOD-given spiritual father. They should always devote themselves to the doctrines of their GOD-given spiritual father and to the fellowship, and to the breaking of bread and to prayers. They should also consider the outcome of their instructors' ways of life, whether they will go to heaven or not. If their ways of life will lead them to heaven, the kingdom of GOD, then follow their faith. If their ways of life will lead them to hell, the burning lake of sulphur, then follow not their faith.

*“Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the Word of GOD: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation (conduct).”*

Hebrews 13:7

The believers should obey their instructors, and submit to their authority, if their ways of life will lead them to heaven.

*“Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.”*

Hebrews 13:17

Paul has warned as follows about the false ministers or servants.

*“Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of CHRIST: Whose end is destruction, whose GOD is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)”*

Philippians 3:17-19

*“Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our LORD JESUS CHRIST, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.”*

Romans 16:17-18

Therefore be followers of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST as dear and obedient children, by holding on to the teachings of your GOD-given spiritual father.

*“Be ye therefore followers of GOD, as dear children;”*

Ephesians 5:1

*“As obedient children, not fashioning (conforming) yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance.”*

I Peter 1:14

GOD's people must be HIS **true disciples** or true followers (Ephesians 5:1). The true disciples of GOD must have staunch belief in HIM (St. John 8:30). They must be obedient to HIS Word (St. John 8:31). They should be freed and liberated from sin by the truth

(St. John 8:32) and they should be freed and liberated from sin by the SON OF GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 8:36). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF is the Truth (St. John 14:6).

Further, a true disciple of GOD must do good works that glorify GOD (St. John 15:8). A true disciple must be merciful (St. Luke 6:36). A true disciple must be holy in all his manner of life (I Peter 1:14-16). The world we live in is full of deception, cruelty, indifference, deceit, debauchery, greed, corruption and sin. A true disciple must be perfect in HIS love (St. Matthew 5:48) and he/she should show his/her good and perfect discipline, flawless conduct and peaceful compassionate nature. Christians are CHRIST's true disciples (Acts 11:26).

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE was the glorious visible presence of the glorious invisible GOD. Today a true disciple of GOD has to be the glorious visible presence of the glorious invisible GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, by projecting the true image of CHRIST to the world.

Now, real discipleship needs good and perfect godly discipline. Without good and perfect godly discipline we are not disciples. Thus real discipleship is in our good and perfect godly discipline. Again, real discipleship is in devoting ourselves to CHRIST. Real discipleship needs full devotion and loyalty to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Real discipleship is in becoming ourselves true disciples of CHRIST.

Further, money, the love of money or wealth is the root of all kinds of evil (I Timothy 6:10-11). A true disciple of GOD cannot serve GOD and **mammon** (St. Matthew 6:24). In Aramaic, 'mammon' means 'wealth or riches.' Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is personifying mammon as a false god or rival god or false deity or rival deity. Mammon stands in opposition to GOD, indicating that wealth or riches, is the opponent of GOD. The rejection of the false god mammon is an important pre-condition to becoming a true disciple of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Loving material possessions above GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST causes one to sorrow (St. Matthew 19:22), but those who love GOD above all things accept with joy the loss of their possessions (Hebrews 10:34). To follow CHRIST is to love HIM above all things (St. Matthew 10:37-38). This is the supreme requirement for entering into the

kingdom of GOD, the kingdom of heaven. The passage in St. Matthew 19:16-22 clearly teaches us the significance of true discipleship, but it does not in any way teach the average people that they must sell their possessions in order to be Christians. Further, in this passage JESUS shows the rich young man that he had not kept the commandments of GOD at all. He loved himself more than he loved his neighbour ("the poor"), and he loved his possessions more than he loved GOD ("ME").

*"JESUS said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow ME."*

St. Matthew 19:21

Again, the passage in St. Matthew 19:23-26 clearly explains the human difficulty for the rich to be converted. The rich may be converted with extreme difficulty, though not hopeless. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST commissioned HIS disciples to go and make disciples of all nations (St. Matthew 28:19).

To make ourselves the LORD's true disciples, we must completely surrender ourselves to our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's will. CHRIST's purpose of coming into the world defines a true disciple's life on earth. So, after finishing our work as true disciples, we will be shifted to our heavenly abode, just as CHRIST was shifted to HIS heavenly abode. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*This page has been intentionally left blank*



## GOD'S MINISTERS OR SERVANTS

### 1. THE FIRST CHRISTIAN CHURCH

THE FIRST Christian church was the PENTECOSTAL CHURCH. The first century Christian church was the **Pentecostal Church**. This first Christian church was born on the Pentecostal Day, the 50th day of the LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection from the tomb. See Acts Chapter 2. On the day of Pentecost, the **spiritual church** of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was born. About three thousand people became members of the church, on that day (Acts 2:41). Hence, the day of Pentecost is the birthday of the Christian church. There is no doubt about this fact.

In the first century Christian church, there were five kinds of GOD's ministers or GOD's servants, who were called and separated by GOD to do HIS ministry, viz., **apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers.**

*“And HE gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of CHRIST: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the SON OF GOD, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of CHRIST.”*

Ephesians 4:11-13

‘The body of CHRIST’ means ‘the church of CHRIST’.

These were GOD's ministers, called and separated (Galatians 1:15) and laid hold of by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Philippians 3:12)

to do HIS ministry as sages. They ruled the church; they governed the church. They were rulers of the church of the living GOD.

*“And GOD hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.”*

I Corinthians 12:28

Steadfastness in doing the ministry of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will bring abundant blessings. Irresponsibility or deceitfulness in doing HIS ministry will bring curse (Jeremiah 48:10).

Our LORD JESUS values our attitude and care towards HIS disciples or GOD's ministers or GOD's servants. HE said,

*“For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in MY name, because ye belong to CHRIST, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.”*

St. Mark 9:41

In those days, a cup of cold water (St. Matthew 10:42) cost nothing. From this we can very well understand that our LORD JESUS looks upon HIS disciples or GOD's ministers or GOD's servants very carefully in all their ways and needs. Glory be to GOD!

### 1.1 BISHOPS OR ELDERS AND DEACONS

Further, there were two kinds of GOD's ministers, viz., bishops or elders and deacons. They were family men with wife and children. They were selected from the believers by the apostles or by other called-workers of the church.

*“This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work. A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of GOD?) Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil. Likewise must the deacons be grave, not*

*doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless. Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in CHRIST JESUS."*

I Timothy 3:1-13

*"For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee: If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of riot or unruly. For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of GOD; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers."*

Titus 1:5-9

In the first century Christian church, the bishops took care of the church pertaining to this life (worldly life), as mentioned in I Timothy 3:5 and in I Corinthians 6:4. The bishops ruled their own houses, but not the church.

*"If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church."*

I Corinthians 6:4

In the first century Christian church, the apostles called themselves elders. See II John 1, III John 1 and I Peter 5:1. But there is no similarity between this apostle class of elders and the bishop class of elders.

Further, in the first century Christian church, the deacons took care of the widows in the daily ministrations or in the daily distribution of food.

*"And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the*

*Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration. Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the Word of GOD, and serve tables. Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the HOLY GHOST, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them."*

Acts 6:1-6

*"Let not a widow be taken into the number under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man, Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work."*

I Timothy 5:9-10

The Epistle of Paul the apostle to the Philippians has been formally addressed to all the saints in CHRIST JESUS at Philippi, together with the bishops and deacons. Here Paul and Timotheus have been mentioned specifically as servants of JESUS CHRIST.

*"Paul and Timotheus, the servants of JESUS CHRIST, to all the saints in CHRIST JESUS which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons."*

Philippians 1:1

Now, GOD's ministers are GOD's servants. GOD's servants are GOD's slaves (I Peter 2:16). **GOD's ministers are the slaves of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST** (Romans 1:1) and they are not the slaves of men (I Corinthians 7:23).

A slave, according to ancient custom and law was one who was bought by his master and over whom his master had absolute rights, even to the extent of bringing his life to an end.

A GOD's servant is such a slave of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. GOD's servants are purchased by their heavenly Master, the LORD

JESUS CHRIST to serve HIM and minister to HIS people in the regenerated life. They are purchased by the most precious blood of CHRIST (Acts 20:28; I Peter 1:18-19; Revelation 5:9). For a regenerated spiritual life, they must present their bodies a living sacrifice, holy and well pleasing to GOD (Romans 12:1) and they must obtain a transformed soul by the renewing of the mind (Romans 12:2) and they must obtain a burning spirit, the spirit of man (Romans 12:11; I Corinthians 2:11) and they must also receive the power of the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 1:8) by anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT (I John 2:27), to preach the gospel of the kingdom in all the world as a witness to all the nations and to be witnesses to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Matthew 24:14; Acts 1:8).

Further, GOD's ministers should not practise hypocrisy in relation to the truth of the Gospel and they should walk uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel, not fearing men (Galatians 2:11-14). They should not have any doubt about the Word of GOD and they should be strong in faith, fearing GOD and not frightened by circumstances (St. Matthew 14:28-32).

Again, GOD's ministers should not seek and argue for worldly promotion and fame and they should not be contentious (St. Luke 22:24). They should not be proud or over confident (St. Matthew 26:33; Proverbs 16:18). Furthermore, GOD's ministers should not have any brutal boldness (St. John 18:10). They should not set their mind on the things of men, but on the things of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Matthew 16:23). They should not be self-righteous people (St. Matthew 16:21-22; Isaiah 64:6). GOD's ministers should not have such character flaws and they should be flawless. If they have such character flaws, then Satan, the devil, will certainly deceive them. So, GOD's ministers should be very serious and watchful in their prayers (I Peter 4:7). They should be the redeemed (Isaiah 35:10). They should be the **sowers of the Word of GOD**, the incorruptible seed which lives and abides for ever (I Peter 1:23). They should be the **fishers of men** (St. Matthew 4:19).

Again, **GOD's ministers or GOD's servants are the salt of the earth.**

*"Ye are the salt of the earth: ..."*

St. Matthew 5:13

Salt gives good taste, sweetness, and pleasantness. It is used for flavouring and preserving foods. It preserves food from corruption and seasons it and makes it wholesome, acceptable and palatable. The basic character of GOD's ministers should be like the salt of the earth. They should give a good taste and a sweet taste and a pleasant taste to the people of the world and they should act as a good preservative to preserve the people of the corrupted earth.

Further, salt, by nature, has a healing power (II Kings 2:19-22). GOD's ministers in CHRIST have also got a divine healing power of GOD to heal the sick and to cast out devils (St. Mark 3:14-15) and they are the divine healers of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Again, salt, by nature, is a substance that kills and eliminates the germs of corruption. To the corrupted earth, GOD's ministers in CHRIST should act as an antidote to keep the earth from becoming fully corrupted. GOD's ministers in CHRIST who are the salt of the earth, are used by GOD to kill and eliminate the earth's corruption. Hence, in nature, GOD's ministers in CHRIST are the healing salt to the people of the whole world.

Regarding the offerings for priests and Levites, the LORD GOD set aside a portion from the holy offerings to them as their regular share and GOD called this promise as an everlasting covenant of salt for them (Numbers 18:19).

Now, every sacrifice to GOD was offered with salt as a symbol of preservation and flavouring and as a symbol of good taste and sweet taste and pleasant taste (Leviticus 2:13). So, GOD's ministers should offer themselves to GOD a living sacrifice, holy, and well pleasing to GOD (Romans 12:1).

Every sinner will be salted with hell-fire, the fire of hell, like every sacrifice was salted with salt (St. Mark 9:49). What a terrible thing it is!

So, GOD's ministers should have salt in themselves (St. Mark 9:50) and they must be purified not only from sin and sinful lusts but also from any self-exaltation, the worst divisive thing. Sins, sinful lusts and self-exaltations will destroy unity and peace among brethren. GOD's

ministers should have always peace with one another (St. Mark 9:50).

Now, salt makes food good and sweet and pleasant to the taste. Speech seasoned with salt will keep GOD's ministers at peace with one another (Colossians 4:6). So, let GOD's ministers speech be always seasoned with answers that will oppose sin and preserve from the corruption thereof and let their speech be always holy, righteous and Christian.

Further, the good and sweet and pleasant taste of GOD's ministers in CHRIST, depends on their renouncing of all earthly things of the present life and on their totally committed life for CHRIST and on their fastings, trials and tribulations (St. Luke 14:26-27, 33; Psalm 37:5; II Corinthians 6:4-5). The more they renounce all the things of earth of the present life, the more good and sweet and pleasant and powerful will be their taste. The more they commit their lives totally for CHRIST, the more good and sweet and pleasant and powerful will be their taste. The more they spend their lives in fastings, trials and tribulations, the more good and sweet and pleasant and powerful will be their taste. If they are not willing to renounce all earthly things of the present life and if they have not totally committed their lives for CHRIST and if they are not willing to spend their life in fastings, trials and tribulations, then they will fully lose their taste. If this happens, they will be fit neither for the land (St. Luke 14:34-35), signifying the church as GOD's farm (I Corinthians 3:9), nor for the dunghill (fertilizer). They will be fit only for corruption and condemnation in hell. They will be thrown out from the kingdom of GOD, the kingdom of heaven (St. Luke 14:35; Revelation 22:15).

Further, GOD's ministers in CHRIST are like the salt that dissolves in water. They should be willing and be prepared to dissolve in the Living Waters of the Word of GOD, for the spiritual and bodily welfare of the people of the whole world, by their renouncing of all earthly things and by their totally committed life and by their fastings and by their rejoicings in trials and tribulations.

Now, in the Holy Bible, there is a solemn warning to the world-loving GOD's ministers as well as to the world-loving believers (Genesis 19:15-26; St. Luke 17:32). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST says,

*"Remember Lot's wife."*

St. Luke 17:32

Lot's wife loved and treasured the evil and ugly world that GOD was going to judge and utterly destroy. She became a pillar of salt because she took a lingering look backward at Sodom, the evil and ugly world, against the commandment of GOD. GOD has commanded,

*"Escape for thy life; look not behind thee, neither stay thou in all the plain; escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed."*

Genesis 19:17

Like the tasteless salt (St. Luke 14:34-35), Lot's wife was left in a place of shame. Every world-loving GOD's minister and believer should remember Lot's wife.

Besides, **GOD's ministers or GOD's servants are the light of the world.**

*"Ye are the light of the world. ..."*

St. Matthew 5:14

Light is the shining of a lamp to enlighten those in darkness. GOD's ministers are like the shining light to enlighten those who are in the darkened world, darkened with sin and sinful lusts.

Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Light of the world and HE is the Light of life (St. John 8:12). The Light of life (St. John 1:4) shines within men to deliver or save them from sin and sinful lusts. Those who are delivered or saved from sin and sinful lusts are shining like a shining light by the Light of the world, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and they will also become the light of the world. Further, this light is the light of the glorious Gospel of CHRIST (II Corinthians 4:4). By this light of the glorious Gospel of CHRIST, GOD's ministers should enlighten the darkened world, darkened with sin and sinful lusts. Glory be to GOD!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is not the derived light. HE is the absolute Light. HE is the great Light (St. Matthew 4:16). The Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Lamp and the Light (St. John 1:1; Psalm 119:105). HIS believers are lamps of divinity. The Word



of GOD is a lamp to their feet and a light to their pathway of life (Psalm 119:105).

Now, lamps were bowls made of clay or brass or silver or gold, into which the oil and a flax wick were put to make light. Oil was made of olives.

GOD's ministers are like oil lamps. As the oil lamps give brightness and shine till the availability of oil, they give their divine brightness and shine till the end of their lives. The more they renounce all the things of the present earthly life, the more glorious and powerful will be their divine brightness and shine. The more they commit their lives for CHRIST, the more glorious and powerful will be their divine brightness and shine. The more they bear fastings, trials and tribulations in the name of CHRIST, the more glorious and powerful will be their divine brightness and shine.

Now, let us know in detail about the called ministers or servants of GOD of the first century Christian church. Let us find out more about the called ministers or servants of GOD of the first century Christian church.

## **2. 66 CHARACTERISTICS OF GOD'S MINISTERS**

### **1. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE PREDESTINED**

GOD's ministers or GOD's servants are predestined by GOD to do HIS most honourable ministry and the most high ministry, before the foundation of the world (before the world began). GOD's ministers should be holy without blame before HIM in love, to do HIS ministry.

*"According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by JESUS CHRIST to HIMSELF, according to the good pleasure of HIS will, To the praise of the glory of HIS grace, wherein HE hath made us accepted in the Beloved."*

Ephesians 1:4-6

## 2. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE SPECIALLY FORMED BY GOD

GOD's ministers are specially formed by GOD in their mothers' wombs to be HIS servants.

*"And now, saith the LORD that formed me from the womb to be HIS servant, ..."*

Isaiah 49:5

## 3. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE APPOINTED BY AND THROUGH THE WILL OF GOD

GOD's ministers are appointed by and through the will of GOD, according to the promise of life which is in CHRIST JESUS (Colossians 1:1; I Corinthians 1:1).

*"Paul, an apostle of JESUS CHRIST by the will of GOD, according to the promise of life which is in CHRIST JESUS,"*

II Timothy 1:1

Now, **Elisha** was appointed by the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. His main goal was not to be better or more powerful than the prophet Elijah (Elias), his prophet and spiritual father and master and mentor but to accomplish GOD's ministry after the departure of his master. For fulfilling his GOD's ministry, he required a double portion of Elijah's spirit. So, his motives were pure. Elisha was aware that Elijah's ministry was almost over and that his departure was very near. He was determined to accompany him until the moment the LORD took him. So, he kept diligent vigil over his master. His total commitment to Elijah and to Elijah's ministry was unflinching. Elisha became Elijah's spiritual successor, GOD-empowered successor. See II Kings 2:1-15.

Elisha did powerful works of GOD. He healed the bad water of Jericho (II Kings 2:19-22). He called the things not being as being, by multiplying a pot of oil into many number of vessels full (II Kings 4:1-7) and by multiplying twenty loaves of barley and fresh ears of corn in a bag to hundred people to eat and there was some left, according to the Word of the LORD GOD (II Kings 4:42-44; Romans 4:17). He raised up the Shunammite's dead son (II Kings 4:18-37).

He nullified the poison of the wild gourds with flour (II Kings 4:38-41). He healed the leprosy of Naaman, the captain of the army of the king of Syria (II Kings 5:1-27). When Naaman went down and dipped seven times in the Jordan River, according to the word of Elisha, "... *his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean*" (II Kings 5:14). He caused the axe head to float by means of a wooden stick (II Kings 6:1-7).

By the prayer of Elisha, the LORD GOD opened the eyes of Elisha's servant and he saw. He saw that the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha (II Kings 6:8-17). When a massive Syrian army with horses and chariots came against him, Elisha prayed to the LORD GOD to smite (strike) the people with blindness. At once, the LORD GOD smote (stroke) them with blindness, according to Elisha's prayer. Then, Elisha brought them to Samaria. When they came to Samaria, by the prayer of Elisha, the LORD GOD opened the eyes of those people and they saw that they were in the midst of Samaria. When the king of Israel saw them, he said to Elisha, "*My father, shall I smite them? Shall I smite them?*" Elisha said to the king, "*Thou shalt not smite them: wouldest thou smite those whom thou hast taken captive with thy sword and with thy bow? set bread and water before them, that they may eat and drink, and go to their master.*" Then he prepared a great feast for them and when they had eaten and drunk, he sent them away. So the bands of Syria came no more into the land of Israel for a long period (II Kings 6:18-23).

When the Syrian army besieged Samaria, there was a great famine. Then the LORD GOD had made the Syrian army hear the sound of chariots and the sound of horses, even the sound of a great army and each man said to another, "*Lo, the king of Israel hath (has) hired against us the kings of Hittites, and the kings of the Egyptians, to come upon us.*" Therefore, they rose up and fled in the twilight, and they abandoned their tents and their horses and their asses, even the whole camp as it was, and fled for their life. It happened as the man of GOD, Elisha had said to the king, saying, "*To morrow about this time shall a measure of fine flour be sold for a shekel, and two measures of barley for a shekel, in the gate of Samaria*", according to the Word of the LORD GOD. The captain on whose arm the king leaned answered Elisha and said, Even if the LORD made windows in heaven, could this thing

happen? And Elisha said, You will see it with your own eyes. But you will not eat from it. So it happened to him; for the people trampled him in the gate, and he died. According to the Word of the LORD GOD, said by Elisha, Two measures of barley was sold for a shekel, and a measure of fine flour for a shekel (II Kings 6:24-33; 7). Glory be to GOD! Then, Elisha told of a seven years famine ordered by GOD and it also happened (II Kings 8:1-6).

Every GOD's minister should receive the blessings of his prophet and spiritual father and mentor and master, given by GOD. The blessings of his prophet and spiritual father and mentor and master are the greatest treasure and reward for doing the divine ministry of GOD. Hebrews 7:7 tells, "*And without all contradiction (fear of doubt) the less (lesser or inferior) is blessed of the better (greater or superior).*" Elisha received the double portion of his prophet's and mentor's and master's and spiritual father's spirit, Elijah's spirit by GOD, the greatest treasure and reward for doing his divine ministry of GOD. Glory be to GOD!

**4. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE APPOINTED NOT OF MEN AND NEITHER BY MAN, BUT BY GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**

*"Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by JESUS CHRIST, and GOD the FATHER, who raised HIM from the dead;)"*

Galatians 1:1

GOD's ministers are appointed by the express command of GOD our Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Timothy 1:1).

**5. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE CALLED BY GOD**

Our LORD JESUS saw Matthew (Levi) and said,

*"Follow ME."*

St. Matthew 9:9

Immediately, "*he arose, and followed HIM*" (St. Matthew 9:9). He gave up everything and followed HIM. Our LORD JESUS will use only those who respond instantly like Matthew. Glory be to GOD!

GOD's ministers are called by GOD to do HIS honourable ministry. They are called when they are in their mother's womb. They are called

with a holy calling in CHRIST JESUS before the world began. They are called with the high calling (Philippians 3:14; Romans 1:1).

*"...The LORD hath called me from the womb; ..."*

Isaiah 49:1

*"And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of GOD, as was Aaron."*

Hebrews 5:4

*"Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to HIS own purpose and grace, which was given us in CHRIST JESUS before the world began."*

II Timothy 1:9

So, we should obey GOD's call. If we reject HIS call, HE will also reject us.

#### **6. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE SEPARATED BY GOD**

GOD's ministers are called and separated by GOD for HIS most honourable ministry, when they are in their mother's womb. HE calls and separates HIS ministers by HIS grace.

*"But when it pleased GOD, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by HIS grace."*

Galatians 1:15

#### **7. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE SANCTIFIED BY GOD**

GOD's ministers are sanctified and set apart by GOD for HIS most honourable ministry, before they come out of the womb.

*"Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations."*

Jeremiah 1:5

#### **8. THE NAMES OF THE GOD'S MINISTERS ARE MADE MENTION BY GOD BEFORE THEIR BIRTH**

The names of the GOD's ministers are made mention by GOD before the angels in heaven, even when they are in the womb. Their names are revealed among the angels in heaven. Hence, they get a special protection by the angels in heaven.

*"Listen, O isles, unto me; and hearken, ye people, from far; The LORD hath called me from the womb; from the bowels of my mother hath HE made mention of my name."*

Isaiah 49:1

#### **9. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE ELECTED BY GOD AND NOT BY MEN**

GOD's ministers are elected by GOD and they are not elected by people. Some GOD's ministers are elected and made known to others, after getting salvation from GOD. Some GOD's ministers are elected and made known to others, after getting salvation and after getting the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD. But, some GOD's ministers are elected and made known to others, before getting salvation and before getting the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall."*

II Peter 1:10

When GOD calls and elects and ordains, it is to humbleness of mind (Colossians 3:12), obedience and holiness (I Peter 1:2; Ephesians 1:3-6) and these spiritual fruits confirm their divine origin of their Christian life. Further, they should add to their faith—the root of the Christian life, virtue, knowledge, temperance, patience, godliness, brotherly kindness and love (II Peter 1:5-7) one after another. These Christian virtues will produce a well-rounded and lifelong and fruitful Christian life and a living union with CHRIST.

#### **10. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE ORDAINED BY GOD**

GOD's ministers are ordained as per the command of the LORD GOD, by laying hands upon them. Moses ordained Joshua over the congregation of the children of GOD, by laying his hands upon him.

*"And Moses spake unto the LORD, saying, Let the LORD, the GOD of the spirits of all flesh, set a man over the congregation, Which may go out before them, and which may go in before them, and which may lead them out, and which may bring them in; that the congregation of the LORD be not as sheep which have no shepherd. And the LORD said unto Moses, Take thee Joshua the son of Nun, a man in whom is the Spirit, and lay thine hand*

*upon him; And set him before Eleazar the priest, and before all the congregation; and give him a charge in their sight. And thou shalt put some of thine honour upon him, that all the congregation of the children of Israel may be obedient. And he shall stand before Eleazar the priest, who shall ask counsel for him after the judgment of Urim before the LORD: at his word shall they go out, and at his word they shall come in, both he, and all the children of Israel with him, even all the congregation. And Moses did as the LORD commanded him: and he took Joshua, and set him before Eleazar the priest, and before all the congregation: And he laid his hands upon him, and gave him a charge, as the LORD commanded by the hand of Moses."*

Numbers 27:15-23

The ordination of Barnabas and Saul (Paul) is mentioned in Acts 13:2-3.

*"As they ministered to the LORD, and fasted, the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) said, Separate ME (to ME) Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away."*

Acts 13:2-3

The ordination of Timothy (Timotheus) is mentioned in I Timothy 4:14.

*"Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery."*

I Timothy 4:14

Again, Paul ordained Timothy (Timotheus). When Paul ordained Timothy, he got the gift of GOD. Timothy got the spiritual gift of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of GOD, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands."*

II Timothy 1:6

During their ordination, the ministers of GOD receive spiritual gifts of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The word of wisdom, the word of knowledge, faith, the gifts of healing, the working of miracles, prophecy, discerning of spirits, speaking in different kinds of tongues and the interpretation of tongues are given as spiritual gifts to the

ministers of GOD during their ordination. These spiritual gifts are very essential for the ministers of GOD to do the LORD's ministry.

The ordained ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should always live in faith and verity. They should always show their true faith and verity in all matters.

*"Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in CHRIST, and lie not;) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity."*

I Timothy 2:7

#### 11. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE SENT BY GOD

GOD's ministers are sent by GOD to do HIS most honourable and holy ministry. Unless they are sent by GOD to do HIS ministry, they will not be able to do HIS ministry according to the will and wish of GOD.

*"And how shall they preach, except (unless) they be sent? ..."*

Romans 10:15

Gideon was sent by the LORD GOD to save Israel from the hands of the Midianites.

*"And the LORD looked upon him, and said, Go in this thy might, and thou shalt save Israel from the hand of the Midianites: have not I sent thee?"*

Judges 6:14

#### 12. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO FOLLOW THE EXAMPLE OF JESUS CHRIST

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST set HIMSELF an example of the servant of GOD, by living as a sage with beard and by living as a sage without wife and children. HE adopted a celibate lifestyle. Only those who serve the LORD GOD in the way shown by JESUS CHRIST are the true ministers of GOD. Only those who follow the example of JESUS CHRIST are the true ministers of GOD.

*"Even as the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give HIS life a ransom for many."*

St. Matthew 20:28



*"I gave MY back to the smiters, and MY cheeks to them that plucked off the hair (beard): I hid not MY face from shame and spitting."*

Isaiah 50:6

The true ministers of GOD renounce the world and its desires and lusts. They are dead to them. They are sages with beard as the symbol of their life as sages. They are living like little children who cannot even think about marriage. They are without wife and without marriage. They give up everything and abhor everything. They live as bachelors obtaining spiritual gifts and grace from GOD. They are righteous and great people. They are the faithful and undefiled people. They are the most honourable people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### **13. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO CONSIDER THEMSELVES EUNUCHS**

GOD's ministers live like eunuchs. They are sages. They are unmarried. They adopt a celibate lifestyle. They are having an everlasting name. They are like green trees. They are like good trees. They bear good fruits, as the good trees bear good fruits. They bear spiritual fruits. They are not infertile dry trees.

*"...Neither let the eunuch say, Behold, I am a dry tree. For thus saith the LORD unto the eunuchs that keep MY sabbaths, and choose the things that please ME, and take hold of MY covenant; Even unto them will I give in MINE house and within MY walls a place and a name better than of sons and of daughters: I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off."*

Isaiah 56:3-5

### **14. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO LIVE LIKE LITTLE CHILDREN**

GOD's ministers should be converted and they should live like little children, and humble themselves as little children who cannot even think about marriage. Total dependence on GOD, unpretentious behaviour, full trust, frank openness, complete sincerity, great receptivity and good relationship with GOD are always seen in them. When the LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE said to HIS disciples who were also HIS servants,

*"Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."*

St. Matthew 18:3

Any GOD's minister who has not been converted and who does not live as little children will not be able to enter into the kingdom of GOD.

#### 15. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT SEEK A WIFE

*"Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife."*

I Corinthians 7:27

The first part of this verse is given for the believers of the LORD GOD. The second part of this verse is given for the benefit of the ministers or servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. So the servants or the workers of the LORD GOD should not seek a wife.

Before joining and serving in the ministry of the LORD GOD, Cephas (Peter), the disciple of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, was a married man. But, when he started doing the LORD's ministry, he left his wife and everything and he became a sage. Then he considered his wife, as his sister and treated her likewise. Peter's wife became Peter's sister.

*"Then Peter began to say unto HIM, Lo, we have left all, and have followed THEE."*

St. Mark 10:28

*"Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the LORD, and Cephas?"*

I Corinthians 9:5

These verses clearly tell about the life of Peter, the servant of GOD and about the other apostles of the LORD. After knowing the call of the LORD, Peter's wife went with Peter to do the ministry of the LORD GOD, as his sister.

Hence, the ministers of the LORD GOD should not seek a wife. They should have no wife. They should never think of entering into a matrimonial alliance with anyone.

## 16. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE UNMARRIED

The disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST said unto JESUS,

*"...It is not good to marry."*

St. Matthew 19:10

Paul, the apostle of the LORD JESUS CHRIST wrote unto Corinthians,

*"...It is good for a man not to touch a woman."*

I Corinthians 7:1

This verse clearly means that it is good for a man not to marry a woman.

Paul, the servant of the LORD JESUS CHRIST was an unmarried man. What did Paul tell about his desire?

*"For I would that all men were even as I myself. ..."*

I Corinthians 7:7

What did Paul want to do for an unworried life or for a life without care or anxiety?

*"But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the LORD, how he may please the LORD: But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife. There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the LORD, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband."*

I Corinthians 7:32-34

'Carefulness' in this passage means 'anxiety'.

For an unworried life, one should not marry. An unmarried man is concerned about the LORD's affairs—how he can please the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. His aim is to be devoted to the LORD in both body and spirit. But a married man is concerned about the affairs of this world—how he can please his wife. An unmarried woman or virgin is concerned about the LORD's affairs—how she can please the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Her aim is to be devoted to the LORD in both body and spirit. But a married woman is concerned about the affairs of this world—how she can please her husband.

If the servant of the LORD GOD is an unmarried man, his whole spirit, soul and body will be kept blameless and holy. If the servant of the LORD GOD is an unmarried woman, her whole spirit, soul and body will be kept blameless and holy.

*"And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

A married man's body is not completely holy and a married woman's body is not completely holy. Fullness in holiness is very essential for the GOD's ministers to do the most honourable and most holy ministry of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. For the fullness in holiness, the ministers of the LORD GOD should not marry. Hence, the ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST have no marriage.

**17. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT SERVE TWO MASTERS; GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT SERVE BOTH GOD AND MAMMON (WORLDLY THINGS)**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve GOD and mammon."*

St. Luke 16:13

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Master from heaven. HE is the only heavenly Master. HE is the ONLY GOD of heaven. HE is the only heavenly GOD. Hence, the ministers of the heavenly GOD should serve the LORD GOD only. They should not serve any other master; they should not serve their wives or husbands; they should not serve their children; they should not serve any worldly thing. They should serve the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, since they are the servants of the LORD GOD. For the GOD's ministers, wives or husbands, children, etc., are also worldly things. Hence, they should not serve both GOD and worldly things (mammon). In order to serve their only heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the servants of GOD should not marry.

**18. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE LEFT ALL**

In the first century Christian church, the ministers of the LORD GOD had left all; they had left everything to follow JESUS CHRIST; they had left everything to serve JESUS CHRIST.

Once Peter, the servant of the LORD JESUS CHRIST said unto JESUS,

*"...Lo, we have left all, and have followed THEE."*

St. Mark 10:28

JESUS answered and said,

*"Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for MY sake, and the Gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life."*

St. Mark 10:29-30

Anyone who has left all or given up everything for the sake of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and for the sake of the Gospel of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, will get all and everything except his wife. In this world, he will get spiritual father, spiritual brothers, spiritual sisters, spiritual mothers and spiritual children. Lastly, he will get eternal life in heaven, in the world to come. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

A woman, who has left all or given up everything for the sake of CHRIST and for the sake of the Gospel of CHRIST will get all and everything except her husband.

**19. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE GIVEN UP AND HATED ALL**

The ministers of the LORD GOD should leave all and give up all and they should be detached from everything. Every bond with this world should be broken off.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"If any man come to ME, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own*

*life also, he cannot be MY disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after ME, cannot be MY disciple. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be MY disciple."*

St. Luke 14:26-27, 33

The disciple or the servant of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should bear his cross. The cross means the sufferings, the persecutions, the mockings, the revilings, etc., he has to encounter while trying to glorify the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The ministers of the LORD GOD should forsake and give up and be detached from everything and follow the LORD JESUS CHRIST, their heavenly Master, by bearing their crosses. They should hate their own lives by hating all the luxuries and comforts of the present day world. They are the true servants of the LORD GOD. They are the true disciples of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

**20. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO FORGET THEIR PEOPLE AND THEIR FATHERS' HOUSES**

*"Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house."*

Psalms 45:10

The ministers of the LORD GOD should forget their people and their fathers' houses and do the ministry of the LORD JESUS CHRIST wholeheartedly for the people of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, without even a tinge of selfishness or self-enhancement.

**21. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO RENOUNCE THEIR SECRET AND SHAMEFUL WAYS**

*"Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the Word of GOD deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of GOD."*

II Corinthians 4:1-2

*"Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the LORD, but also in the sight of men."*

II Corinthians 8:21

The ministers of the LORD GOD should renounce their secret and shameful ways; they should not use deception; they should not distort the Word of GOD; they should set forth the truth of the LORD JESUS CHRIST plainly; and they should commend themselves to every man's conscience in the sight of GOD. They should always take pains to be honest and to do what is right, not only in the sight of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST but also in the sight of men.

**22. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR ANYTHING IN THE WORLD**

*"For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; ..."*

II Timothy 4:10

GOD's ministers should love GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST first and foremost or Christians should love GOD first and foremost. GOD's ministers should not love this present world. They should not love anything in the present world. If anyone loves the world, the love of GOD, the FATHER is not in him. For everything in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life is not of GOD, the FATHER, but of the world. The world and its lusts pass away, but he who does the will of GOD abides for ever.

*"Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the FATHER is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the FATHER, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of GOD abideth for ever."*

I John 2:15-17

**23. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO FLEE FROM YOUTHFUL LUSTS**

*"Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the LORD out of a pure heart."*

II Timothy 2:22

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should flee from the evil desires of youth. They should pursue righteousness, faith,

love and peace along with those who worship the LORD JESUS CHRIST out of a pure heart.

**24. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT QUARREL**

*"But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes. And the servant of the LORD must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if GOD peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will."*

II Timothy 2:23-26

Foolish and stupid arguments will produce quarrels. The ministers of the LORD GOD should not quarrel. They must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose them they must gently instruct, in the hope that GOD will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will. Further, the ministers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST must depart from wickedness, iniquity and from all other sins.

**25. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT PUT ANY STUMBLING-BLOCK**

*"Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed."*

II Corinthians 6:3

The ministers of the LORD GOD should not give any offence in anything or put any stumbling-block in anyone's path, so that the ministry of the LORD JESUS CHRIST should not be discredited. The glorious ministry of the LORD GOD should never be discredited by anyone. Discrediting or blaming the ministry of the LORD GOD is a great offence. Discrediting or blaming the ministry of the LORD GOD will give eternal punishment in hell.

Once, in a particular place, the head of a Christian Mission went for preaching with a moustache. After the end of his preaching, one hearer of his preaching very politely said to him, "If you have preached your preaching without a moustache, it will be very good."



At once, the preacher cut off his saying by his unnecessary justification and made him feel shameful. Strictly speaking, he had nothing to speak of. But, the preacher could not realize his fault and offence and discontentment in his spiritual life. The preacher did not realize anything about his offence in his unuseful justification. What a pitiful thing it is!

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD warns,

*"Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of GOD."*

I Corinthians 10:32

**26. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE PLEASING TO GOD AND APPROVED BY MEN AND WHO SHOULD NOT DESTROY THE WORK OF GOD FOR THE SAKE OF FOOD OR DRINK**

*"For he that in these things serveth CHRIST is acceptable to GOD, and approved of men. Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another. For meat destroy not the work of GOD. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak."*

Romans 14:18-21

The ministers of the LORD GOD who serve CHRIST should be pleasing to GOD and approved by men. They should make every effort to do what leads to peace and to mutual edification. They should not destroy the work of GOD for the sake of food or drink. It is better not to eat meat (flesh) or drink wine or to do anything else that will cause anyone to fall. Eating meat (flesh) and drinking wine are not at all good for the servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. These acts will offend and hurt the feelings of others; these acts will insult the feelings of others; these acts will make others stumble; these acts will make others weak. Hence, they will lead them to eternal punishment in hell.

*"Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging; and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise."*

Proverbs 20:1

*"Be not among winebibbers; among riotous eaters of flesh."*

Proverbs 23:20

*"And put a knife to thy throat, if thou be a man given to appetite (gluttony)."*

Proverbs 23:2

The ministers of the LORD GOD should be abstemious in their food habits. They should not be drunkards or gluttons. Drinking will lead them to debauchery. Instead, they should be filled with the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD.

*"And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess (which leads to debauchery); but be filled with the Spirit."*

Ephesians 5:18

*"But meat commendeth us not to GOD: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse. But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling-block to them that are weak. For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols; And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom CHRIST died? But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against CHRIST. Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend."*

I Corinthians 8:8-13

Therefore, if your eating or your drinking causes anyone to fall into sin, you should never eat flesh or drink any alcoholic drink. You should not cause anyone to fall. The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should not cause anyone to fall in anyway or by any means.

**27. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO CONDUCT THEMSELVES AS MODELS OF GOOD WORKS**

*"Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded. In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you."*

Titus 2:6-8

*"Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the*

*believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity."*

I Timothy 4:12

In everything the ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST must show themselves as examples of good works. They must be self-controlled. In their teaching, they must show integrity, seriousness, and soundness of speech that cannot be condemned, so that those who oppose them may be ashamed because they have nothing bad to say about them. The ministers of the LORD GOD should set examples for the believers in speech, in life, in love, in spirit, in faith and in purity.

**28. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE A STRONG FAITH AND A GOOD CONSCIENCE**

*"Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck."*

I Timothy 1:19

The ministers of the LORD GOD should have a very strong faith in the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD and a very good conscience. Without these two things, no one can stand as a servant of GOD. Those who have rejected these, have shipwrecked their faith in CHRIST.

**29. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO FLEE FROM LOVE OF MONEY**

*"For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But thou, O man of GOD, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness."*

I Timothy 6:10-11

The love of money is the root cause of all kinds of evil. Judas, who betrayed our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, was a lover of money. Judas, the traitor betrayed our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for thirty silver coins. So no one should be a lover of money. The minister of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should not be a lover of money in anyway.

**Balaam**, the prophet had forsaken the right way and had gone the evil way. He became greedy and covetous. His greed for money and

worldly honour, the wages of unrighteousness, made his utter spiritual fall and terrible death. A dumb and lowly donkey or an ass rebuked him in man's voice and forbade the madness of the prophet (II Peter 2:15-16; Jude 11). But he did not hearken (listen) to its voice.

If a GOD's minister surrenders himself completely to the will of GOD, HE will use him much more than a dumb and lowly animal like a donkey or an ass.

**30. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO AVOID PROFANE AND VAIN BABBLINGS**

*"O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen."*

I Timothy 6:20-21

The ministers of the LORD GOD should guard what has been entrusted to their care. They should turn away from godless chatter and the opposing ideas of what is falsely called knowledge or falsely called science. Some ministers of GOD have professed the above and in so doing have wandered from the faith. The servants of GOD should never wander from the faith by professing false sciences.

**31. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO EXHORT, REBUKE AND REPROVE THE SINNERS**

Right doctrine produces right conduct. Right doctrine consists of instruction, encouragement, correction and discipline.

*"Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear."*

I Timothy 5:20

*"These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee."*

Titus 2:15

*"...The Cretians are alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies. This witness is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith; Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth."*

Titus 1:12-14

*“Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.”*

II Timothy 4:2-4

Those who sin are to be rebuked and reprovved publicly by the ministers of the LORD GOD, so that others may take warning. Exhortations (strong advices) should also be given to the sinners by the ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

### 32. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE NOT TO BE ASHAMED

*“Study to shew thyself approved unto GOD, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth.”*

II Timothy 2:15

*“Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our LORD, nor of me HIS prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of GOD.”*

II Timothy 1:8

The Holy Scripture of the LORD, the Holy Bible says,

*“Whosoever believeth on HIM shall not be ashamed.”*

Romans 10:11

If any man happens to suffer as a Christian, he should not be ashamed, but he should glorify the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST on this account.

*“Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify GOD on this behalf.”*

I Peter 4:16

### 33. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE WATCHFUL IN ALL THINGS

*“But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.”*

II Timothy 4:5

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should be watchful in all things. They should be very careful in all things. They should endure afflictions; and they should fulfil their ministry.

#### 34. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE THE WATCHMEN FOR THE PEOPLE OF GOD

The ministers of GOD are the watchmen for the people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They should hear the Word of GOD and warn the people to dissuade them from their evil ways and from their sins.

*"And it came to pass at the end of seven days, that the Word of the LORD came unto me, saying, son of man, I have made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the Word at MY mouth, and give them warning from ME. When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. Yet if thou warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but thou hast delivered thy soul. Again, When a righteous man doth turn from his righteousness, and commit iniquity, and I lay a stumblingblock before him, he shall die: because thou hast not given him warning, he shall die in his sin, and his righteousness which he hath done shall not be remembered; but his blood will I require at thine hand. Nevertheless if thou warn the righteous man, that the righteous sin not, and he doth not sin, he shall surely live, because he is warned; also thou hast delivered thy soul."*

Ezekiel 3:16-21

Further, **the ministers of GOD are the rulers over the believers and watchmen for their souls.** Hence, the believers should obey them and they must be submissive to them, for they watch for their souls, as those who must give account. So, obey them so that they will do the ministry of GOD with joy and not with grief, for that would be unprofitable for the believers. The ministers of GOD watch in behalf of the souls of the believers like sleepless shepherds who feel their responsibility to GOD for their flock. They watch with joy feeling their duty to be a delight, and not a burden.

*"Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves:*

*for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you."*

Hebrews 13:17

In olden days, during the time of war, the trumpet of warning will be sounded by the trumpeter to warn and save the soldiers from death and danger. At that time, the soldiers should be warned and they should save themselves, by hearkening (listening) the sound of the trumpet very carefully and do according to the sound of the trumpet.

Now, GOD's ministers are watchmen of GOD. They blow the trumpet of warning—preach the Word of GOD, the Gospel of GOD's salvation to the people about the terrible judgment (Revelation 20:11-15) and about the death and danger, particularly the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8) to the souls of sinners. They warn them by the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. So, everyone should be very careful about this warning by GOD's ministers and save his/her soul from terrible judgment and second death and danger (Ezekiel 33:4-11).

### **35. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE THE SHEPHERDS FOR THE PEOPLE OF GOD**

The ministers of GOD are the shepherds or pastors for the people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They should feed the people with knowledge and understanding of GOD.

*"And I will give you pastors (shepherds) according to MINE heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding."*

Jeremiah 3:15

*"The heart of him that hath understanding seeketh knowledge: but the mouth of fools feedeth on foolishness."*

Proverbs 15:14

### **36. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO STAND IN THE GAP BEFORE THE LORD GOD ON BEHALF OF THE LAND**

The ministers of GOD are those who stand in the gap before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST on behalf of HIS people of the land, to stem the tide of destruction.

*"And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before ME for the land, that I should not destroy it: ..."*

Ezekiel 22:30

**37. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE THE GOOD SOLDIERS OF JESUS CHRIST**

*"Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of JESUS CHRIST."*

II Timothy 2:3

The ministers of the LORD GOD are the good soldiers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They endure afflictions and hardships in the most holy name of JESUS CHRIST. They are the faithful servants of JESUS CHRIST. They are the faithful soldiers of JESUS CHRIST. They fight the good fight of faith for eternal life.

*"Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses."*

I Timothy 6:12

One serving as a good soldier of JESUS CHRIST should not get himself entangled with the affairs of this life—he should always please the LORD JESUS CHRIST who has chosen him to be a good soldier.

*"No man that warreth (engaged in warfare) entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier."*

II Timothy 2:4

**38. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO STRIVE LAWFULLY FOR MASTERIES**

GOD's minister is the one who strives as a good wrestler, who wrestles according to the rules and regulations of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, to receive the victor's crown. The crown of life, the crown of glory that fades not away will be the victor's crown of the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully."*

II Timothy 2:5



### 39. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE THE HARD-WORKING HUSBANDMEN (FARMERS) OF JESUS CHRIST

GOD's ministers are the hard-working farmers of JESUS CHRIST. GOD's ministers, the hard-working farmers of JESUS CHRIST will be the first partakers of the fruits.

*"The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits."*

II Timothy 2:6

*"Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour. For we are labourers together with GOD: ye are GOD's husbandry, ..."*

I Corinthians 3:8-9

### 40. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE THE WISE BUILDERS FOR JESUS CHRIST

GOD's ministers are the wise builders for JESUS CHRIST. A wise master builder, approved and appointed by the LORD JESUS CHRIST will be the head of these wise builders. They build upon the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Chief Corner Stone and the Chief Foundation. The apostles and the prophets are the other two foundations.

*"According to the grace of GOD which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is JESUS CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 3:10-11

*"Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of GOD; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF being the Chief Corner Stone; In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the LORD: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of GOD through the Spirit."*

Ephesians 2:19-22

#### 41. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE THE GOOD FIGHTERS OF JESUS CHRIST

Paul, the servant of GOD has said,

*"I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith."*

II Timothy 4:7

The good fight of the ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is clearly explained by Paul, the apostle.

*"Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway."*

I Corinthians 9:24-27

*"Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto JESUS the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before HIM endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of GOD. For consider HIM that endured such contradiction of sinners against HIMSELF, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds."*

Hebrews 12:1-3

*"Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of GOD in CHRIST JESUS."*

Philippians 3:13-14

After their good fight, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will give the prize. The prize is the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

Further, the good fighters of JESUS CHRIST are the good fighters on their knees in praying. They pray always with all prayer and

supplication in the HOLY SPIRIT, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints. See Ephesians 6:18.

#### 42. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE CONTAINED THEMSELVES

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST have contained themselves and are self-controlled people.

*"But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn."*

I Corinthians 7:9

In this verse, Paul, the apostle's advice is to the believers and not to the ministers of GOD. The believers may not contain. They may burn with sexual passions and lusts of the flesh. So, it is better for a believer to marry than to burn with passions and lusts of the flesh.

If any minister of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is not able to contain himself, he is not at all a minister of GOD. If any minister of the LORD GOD is burnt with sexual passions and lusts of the flesh, he is not at all a minister of GOD; he is not at all a servant of GOD; he is not at all a worker of GOD.

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST can contain themselves by the gift of the LORD. The ministers of the LORD GOD are not burnt with sexual passions by the grace of the LORD. A contained person is a person whose worst stinking disease of lasciviousness (licentiousness) is cured well by the gift and grace of the LORD. A contained person is a person whose worst burning disease of sexual passions is cured well by the gift and grace of the LORD. The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are concerned about absolute containment.

#### 43. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE RECEIVED THE POWER AND GRACE OF GOD

*"But we have this treasure (the Gospel) in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of GOD, and not of us."*

II Corinthians 4:7

From GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, GOD's ministers receive HIS all-surpassing power (GOD's incomparably great power) in their

earthly bodies, to preach HIS Gospel, the supremely valuable message of salvation — the great treasure, among all (II Corinthians 4:7; Ephesians 3:7-8). If we give place (yield) to HIS great power to work in us, HIS great power will enter into our hearts through the Gospel preachings of HIS ministers and make us new men and women, the saved.

*"But by the grace of GOD I am what I am: and HIS grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of GOD which was with me."*

I Corinthians 15:10

*"Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in CHRIST JESUS."*

II Timothy 2:1

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST must be strong in the grace that is in CHRIST JESUS. They must be the servants of the glorious Gospel of the LORD JESUS CHRIST by the gift of HIS grace. They must do the LORD's ministry by the grace of the LORD.

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST have taken up the LORD's ministry by the grace and guidance of the LORD. They are not doing their LORD's ministry by the grace and guidance of their wives or husbands. Some people think that the gift of GOD's grace to a minister of GOD is a wife or husband. This is absurd. The servants of GOD are those who do not seek a wife or husband.

The ministers of the LORD GOD are living by the grace of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The grace of the LORD is always with them. As they humble themselves by fasting and continue to wait upon the LORD in fervent prayers and worship, day and night, without ceasing, GOD's irresistible grace abounds in them. No one should frustrate (set aside) the grace of GOD. Paul, the apostle says,

*"I do not frustrate the grace of GOD: ..."*

Galatians 2:21

GOD's ministers should not be ungodly people and should not turn the grace of GOD into lasciviousness and should not deny the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Jude 4).

**44. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO FOLLOW JESUS CHRIST**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"If any man serve ME, let him follow ME; and where I am, there shall also MY servant be: if any man serve ME, him will MY FATHER honour."*

St. John 12:26

'MY FATHER' refers to the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

*"Then said JESUS unto HIS disciples, If any man will come after ME, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow ME."*

St. Matthew 16:24

*"And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after ME, cannot be MY disciple."*

St. Luke 14:27

'His cross' means one's sufferings for the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST or the disciples of the LORD are those who refuse their own claims upon themselves, those who suffer for the LORD JESUS CHRIST and those who follow the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The followers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST or the disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST or the ministers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST or the servants of the LORD JESUS CHRIST abide in their Master's Words always.

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"If ye continue (abide) in MY Word, then are ye MY disciples indeed."*

St. John 8:31

**45. GOD'S MINISTERS PLEASE GOD AND ARE HONOURED BY GOD, THE FATHER**

The ministry of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is honourable. Hence, the ministers of the LORD GOD are honoured by GOD, the FATHER. GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. See St. John 12:26; Hebrews 5:4. They always please GOD (Galatians 1:10).

The ministers of the LORD GOD are sacred and holy. They live a sacrificial life. They dedicate and sacrifice their lives to the LORD GOD. Hence, they are honoured by GOD, the FATHER.

**46. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE HIS FIRST-BORN, HIGHER THAN THE KINGS OF THE EARTH**

*"He shall cry unto ME, THOU art my FATHER, my GOD, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him MY firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth."*

Psalm 89:26-27

*"Call unto ME, and I will answer thee, and shew thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not."*

Jeremiah 33:3

The ministers of the LORD GOD continuously call out to the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, HE makes them HIS first-born, the most exalted of the kings of the earth. HE shows them great and unsearchable things they do not know.

**47. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE VERY GREAT BY FAITH**

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are very great by faith. Moses, the servant of the LORD GOD was very great by faith.

*"By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of GOD, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; Esteeming the reproach of CHRIST greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward. By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing HIM who is invisible. Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. By faith they passed through the Red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned."*

Hebrews 11:24-29

*"...Moreover the man Moses was very great in the land of Egypt, in the sight of Pharaoh's servants, and in the sight of the people."*

Exodus 11:3

#### 48. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE FAITHFUL

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are faithful in words and deeds. They are also truthful in words and deeds. They are faithful in their dedicated life as sages; they are faithful in their prayer life; they are faithful in their holy life; they are faithful in their humility; they are faithful in their obedience; they are faithful in their sufferings; they are faithful in love; they are faithful in fellowship; they are faithful in doing the will of GOD; they are faithful in faith; and they are faithful in all other things relating to the LORD GOD. The faithful people are appointed by the LORD GOD for HIS ministry.

*"And I thank CHRIST JESUS our LORD, who hath enabled me, for that HE counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry."*

I Timothy 1:12

The faithful ministers of the LORD GOD are richly blessed by HIM. The LORD GOD delights in people who are truthful.

*"A faithful man shall abound with blessings: ..."*

Proverbs 28:20

*"Lying lips are abomination to the LORD: but they that deal truly are HIS delight."*

Proverbs 12:22

**"...But a faithful man who can find?"**

Proverbs 20:6

It is the **most important duty** of everyone to seek and find a faithful man to follow the LORD JESUS CHRIST, viz., a faithful servant of GOD to follow the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

#### 49. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE HOLY, RIGHTEOUS AND BLAMELESS

*"Ye are witnesses, and GOD also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe."*

I Thessalonians 2:10

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should be holy, just and blameless. They must be witnessed by GOD; they must be witnessed by the truth; and they must be witnessed by all.

*"Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself:*

*yea, and we also bear record; and ye know that our record is true."*

III John 12

**50. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE ENTRUSTED WITH THE GOSPEL AND ARE APPROVED BY GOD TO SPEAK THE GOSPEL**

*"For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile: But as we were allowed of GOD to be put in trust with the Gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but GOD, which trieth our hearts. For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness; GOD is witness."*

I Thessalonians 2:3-5

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are entrusted with the gospel. They are approved by GOD to speak the gospel. They are strictly honest in everything. They are the upright people. Their ways are undefiled. They walk according to the law of the LORD. They are the blessed.

*"Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the LORD."*

Psalms 119:1

The wicked or the unsaved or the sinners should not preach the Gospel, the Word of GOD, since they are not entrusted with the gospel and they are not approved by GOD to speak the gospel. They are dishonest in everything. They are not the upright people. Their ways are defiled. They do not walk according to the law of the LORD. They are the cursed.

*"But unto the wicked GOD saith, What hast thou to do to declare MY statutes, or that thou shouldst take MY covenant in thy mouth? Seeing thou hatest instruction, and castest MY Words behind thee. When thou sawest a thief, then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers. Thou givest thy mouth to evil, and thy tongue frameth deceit. Thou sittest and speakest against thy brother; thou slanderest thine own mother's son. These things hast thou done, and I kept silence; thou thoughtest that I was altogether such an one as thyself: but I will reprove thee, and set them in order before thine eyes. Now consider this, ye that forget GOD, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver."*

Psalms 50:16-22



## 51. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE HAVING PRAYER LIFE

In prayer, there is life. Life is in prayer. The LORD JESUS CHRIST, who came into the world as an example to the ministers of the LORD GOD, led a prayer life. HE went up on a mountain and prayed.

*"And when HE had sent the multitudes away, HE went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, HE was there alone."*

St. Matthew 14:23

Further, the LORD JESUS CHRIST fell on the ground and prayed. HE fell on HIS face and prayed. HE knelt down and prayed.

*"And HE went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed ..."*

St. Mark 14:35

*"And HE went a little farther, and fell on HIS face, and prayed, ..."*

St. Matthew 26:39

*"And HE was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed."*

St. Luke 22:41

*"And being in an agony HE prayed more earnestly: and HIS sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground."*

St. Luke 22:44

*"Who in the days of HIS flesh, when HE had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto HIM that was able to save HIM from death, and was heard in that HE feared."*

Hebrews 5:7

The ministers of the LORD GOD should offer this kind of prayers and supplications to GOD. Then only they can be steadfast in CHRIST. Prayer purifies and sanctifies and strengthens their whole spirit and soul and body. Prayer preserves them blameless unto the coming of CHRIST (I Thessalonians 5:23). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST)."*

St. Luke 21:36

To stand before the LORD JESUS CHRIST and to escape all that is about to happen, prayer life is very essential. In the first century Christian church, the believers and the ministers of the LORD GOD devoted themselves to prayer. They prayed in the Spirit. They prayed in the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers."*

Acts 2:42

*"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."*

Ephesians 6:18

*"But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Jude 20

## 52. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE RECEIVED THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD

*"But ye shall receive power, after that the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come upon you: ..."*

Acts 1:8

The HOLY SPIRIT is the holy power or the holy strength of the LORD. Any minister of GOD, who does not possess the HOLY SPIRIT, cannot be a true minister of GOD; he cannot reveal himself a true minister of GOD; he cannot pray in the HOLY SPIRIT as mentioned in the Holy Bible.

Further, any minister of the LORD GOD who does not have the Spirit of CHRIST (the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD), does not belong to CHRIST. Hence, he is not at all a Christian; he is not at all a spiritual man; he is not at all a man of CHRIST, the GOD.

*"But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of GOD dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of CHRIST, he is none of HIS."*

Romans 8:9

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should receive the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, to do the ministry of GOD. Except by the HOLY SPIRIT, no one can say or preach, "JESUS is the LORD".

Those who have not received the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD should not preach that JESUS is the LORD. Those who have not received the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, should not call GOD, "ABBA, FATHER".

*"...No man can say that JESUS is the LORD, but by the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

I Corinthians 12:3

*"And because ye are sons, GOD hath sent forth the Spirit of HIS SON into your hearts, crying, ABBA, FATHER."*

Galatians 4:6

### 53. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE DEAD TO TEN THINGS

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are dead to **ten** things. They are:

1. They are dead to sins. They live for righteousness.

*"Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed."*

I Peter 2:24

2. They are dead to their own will. See I Corinthians 7:37. They always do the will of GOD.
3. They are dead to their pride. They are dead to the world of pride, viz., ' I '.

*"I am crucified with CHRIST: nevertheless I live: yet not I, but CHRIST liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the SON OF GOD, who loved me, and gave HIMSELF for me."*

Galatians 2:20

4. They are dead to the world.

*"But GOD forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world."*

Galatians 6:14

5. They are dead to their flesh.

*"And they that are CHRIST's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts."*

Galatians 5:24

6. They are dead to their flesh with its affections and lusts (passions and desires). See Galatians 5:24.
7. They are dead with CHRIST to the rudiments of the world (the worldly principles).

*"Wherefore if ye be dead with CHRIST from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances."*

Colossians 2:20

8. They are dead to the natural man.

*"But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."*

I Corinthians 2:14

9. They are dead to the Law (of the Old Testament).

*"For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto GOD."*

Galatians 2:19

In the Old Testament it has been said,

*"And if any mischief follow, then thou shalt give life for life, Eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, Burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe."*

Exodus 21:23-25

In the New Testament it has been said,

*"Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, ..."*

Romans 12:19

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also."*

St. Matthew 5:38-39

10. They are dead to unbelief. See Galatians 2:20. They should live by faith.

*"Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, MY*

*soul shall have no pleasure in him."*

Hebrews 10:38

They should believe the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST with all their heart. See Acts 8:37. They should also believe that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the healer and HE heals every disease and sickness, and nothing is too hard for HIM.

*"...If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the LORD thy GOD, and wilt do that which is right in HIS sight, and wilt give ear to HIS commandments, and keep all HIS statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the LORD that healeth thee."*

Exodus 15:26

*"Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases."*

Psalms 103:3

*"When the even was come, they brought unto HIM many that were possessed with devils: and HE cast out the spirits with HIS Word, and healed all that were sick: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, HIMSELF took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses."*

St. Matthew 8:16-17

*"Behold, I am the LORD, the GOD of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for ME?"*

Jeremiah 32:27

Only those who are dead to these ten things can be the ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, and not others.

#### **54. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE INNOCENT OF THE BLOOD OF ALL MEN**

The ministers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the pure people. They keep themselves pure from the blood of all men. They should not be held responsible for the blood of any man.

The ministers of the LORD GOD should warn the wicked to turn from his wickedness or from his evil ways or from his sins. Again, they should also warn the righteous when he turns from his righteousness and does evil to turn from his unrighteousness or from his evil doings or from his sins. See Ezekiel 3:16-21. To escape from the blood of all men, the ministers of the LORD GOD should warn the

people. They should not hesitate to proclaim to the people all the counsel of GOD.

*"Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men. For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of GOD."*

Acts 20:26-27

To be pure from the blood of all men, GOD's ministers should not be blind watchmen; they should not lack knowledge, they should not be mute dogs, that cannot bark; they should not love to lie down and dream; they should not love to sleep; they should not be greedy dogs, they never have enough; they should not be shepherds who lack understanding; they should not look to their own way, for their own gain; and they should not be drunkards or gluttons.

*"His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter. Come ye, say they, I will fetch wine, and we will fill ourselves with strong drink; and to morrow shall be as this day, and much more abundant."*

Isaiah 56:10-12

## 55. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THE STEWARDS OF THE MYSTERIES OR SECRETS OF GOD

*"Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of CHRIST, and stewards of the mysteries of GOD. Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful."*

I Corinthians 4:1-2

Steward is a person employed to manage another's property. Who are these stewards? These stewards are the ministers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. These stewards are the stewards of the mysteries of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. These stewards are the stewards of the mysteries of heaven, the kingdom of GOD. These stewards are the employees of the LORD GOD to safeguard the mysteries of the LORD GOD. These stewards are the employees of the LORD GOD to safeguard the mysteries of heaven, the kingdom of heaven.

What are the mysteries of GOD? CHRIST, the GOD is the mystery. GOD, the FATHER is the mystery; GOD is the mystery (Colossians 2:2; 4:3 and Ephesians 3:4). The Word of GOD is the mystery, which has been kept hidden for ages and generations (Colossians 1:25-26). The glorious and the everlasting Gospel of the blessed GOD is the mystery (Romans 16:25-26; I Timothy 1:11; Revelation 14:6 and Ephesians 6:19). Godliness is the mystery (I Timothy 3:16). The faith is the mystery, i.e., the life by faith is the mystery (I Timothy 3:9). The kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD is the mystery (St. Matthew 13:11).

The mystery of CHRIST, the GOD and HIS Church is great (Ephesians 5:32). The mystery of CHRIST, the GOD is CHRIST HIMSELF. The saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the believers or the true Christians of HIS Church, the spiritual Church or the true Christian Church are the Body of CHRIST and members of HIS Body individually (I Corinthians 12:27). GOD's minister or GOD's servant, the one who has been bound to speak the mystery of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS Church and HIS Gospel, the Word of GOD and all other spiritual things is also a mystery (Colossians 4:3-4; Ephesians 6:18-20). GOD's minister or GOD's servant, the one who has been bound to write the mystery of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS Church and HIS Gospel, the Word of GOD and all other spiritual things is also a mystery or secret. **Thus the one who has written this precious and blessed and rare and challenging Book, "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" – "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!" is also a mystery or secret and hence this precious and blessed and challenging Book is also a mystery or secret.** Glory be to GOD!

The Holy Bible of the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST contains all the mysteries of the LORD GOD. It contains all the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. All the mysteries are contained in the Holy Scripture of the most holy LORD. The minister of the LORD GOD is the steward of all these mysteries. This steward should not be a liar. He must be found faithful always (I Corinthians 4:1-2).

## 56. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THE OFFICIALS OF THE LORD GOD

*"Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of GOD which is given to me for you, to fulfil the Word of GOD; Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to HIS saints."*

Colossians 1:25-26

The ministers of the LORD GOD are appointed by the LORD JESUS CHRIST, as HIS officials. They are the officials of the LORD GOD in heaven. They are the officials of heaven, the kingdom of GOD. They are the officials of the LORD of lords. They are the officials of the KING of kings. They are the honourable officials of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are the honourable officials of heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Their government is in heaven. They are governed by the heavenly government. They are working under the heavenly government. They are doing the heavenly work of the heavenly GOD. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Only Potentate or Only Ruler of the heavenly government.

The profession of the ministers of the LORD GOD is the heavenly profession. It is not a worldly profession. It is a uniquely high profession. No worldly profession is higher than this heavenly profession. Any worldly profession is not equivalent to this heavenly profession.

In order to be engaged in a worldly profession, certain worldly qualification, training and experience are essential. But, in order to fulfil the needs of this heavenly profession, the ministers of the LORD GOD should possess the gift of the grace of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Without the gift of the grace of the LORD, no one can serve in the ministry of the LORD GOD. The gift of the grace of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the most essential qualification for the ministers of GOD, to function and perform effectively in the ministry of GOD. They should be strong in the grace that is in CHRIST JESUS.

*"Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of GOD given unto me by the effectual working of HIS power. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of CHRIST."*

Ephesians 3:7-8



*"Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in CHRIST JESUS."*

II Timothy 2:1

Living as a sage without any encumbrances, without wife and living as a sage without marriage and living as a sage like a little child are the most essential trainings for the ministers of GOD, to continue in the ministry of GOD.

Continuing steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship and in Breaking of Bread and in prayers; and growing in grace and in the knowledge of the LORD JESUS CHRIST are the most essential experiences for the ministers of GOD, to do the ministry of GOD. 'Breaking of Bread' means 'the LORD's Supper' or 'the Holy Communion'.

*"And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers."*

Acts 2:42

*"But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. To HIM be glory both now and for ever. Amen."*

II Peter 3:18

Further, the fitness for office is essential for a worldly worker for his worldly profession. If he is unfit to do his profession, his profession will be taken away from him and he will be ousted or removed from his service. Like that, if any minister of the LORD GOD is unfit to be HIS minister, his ministership will be taken away from him. Since he is a worthless or unprofitable servant, he will be thrown into outer darkness, the hell.

*"And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

St. Matthew 25:30

## 57. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO DO THE WILL OF GOD, THE FATHER

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"Not every one that saith unto ME, LORD, LORD, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of MY FATHER which is in heaven. Many will say to ME in that day, LORD, LORD, have we not prophesied in THY name? and in THY*

*name have cast out devils? and in THY name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from ME, ye that work iniquity."*

St. Matthew 7:21-23

Only a genuinely saved person can do the will of GOD. The will of GOD, the FATHER towards HIS servants is that they should obey HIS glorious call and they should continually live as pure Christian monks and nuns. GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. Those who do the will of GOD, the FATHER who is in heaven, will enter into the kingdom of heaven. Those who do not do the will of GOD will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

**Elijah or Elias** always did the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He warned Ahab, the king of Israel and told the Word of GOD about the severe drought. He prayed that it might not rain. It did not rain for three years and six months (James 5:17). He went and hid himself by the brook Cherith, which was before the Jordan. The ravens brought him bread and meat in the morning; and bread and meat in the evening; and he drank from the brook. He went to Zarephat, which belongs to Zidon and dwelt there in a widow's house. Our LORD GOD miraculously provided meal (flour) and oil for the widow and her son through Elijah, instead of being fed by her. **'The barrel of meal (flour) did not give out, nor did the jar of oil fail,'** according to the Word of GOD, which HE had spoken through Elijah, until the day that the LORD GOD sent rain upon the earth (I Kings 17).

Elijah again presented himself to Ahab as our LORD GOD commanded and made the contest on mount Carmel against 450 prophets of Baal, a false god (I Kings 18:1-39). See also at pages 1236-1238. He prayed again that it would rain. Our LORD GOD gave abundance of rain and the fields of the earth gave fruit (James 5:18; I Kings 19:41-46).

When an angel of the LORD GOD touched and said to Elijah, *'Arise and eat,'* he got up and ate and drank. Again, the second time, when the angel touched and said to him, *'Arise and eat; because the journey is too great for thee,'* he got up and ate and drank. And he went in the

strength of that food forty days and forty nights unto Horeb the mount of GOD (I Kings 19:5-8).

In his discouragement also Elijah did the will of the LORD GOD, according to HIS commission. He anointed Hazael as the king of Syria. He anointed Jehu the son of Nimshi as the king of Israel. He found **Elisha** the son of Shaphat of Abel-meholah and gained him and replaced him. Elisha got up and followed Elijah and ministered him with diligent vigil, until Elijah was taken up to heaven. *"Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, which poured water on the hands of Elijah"* (II Kings 3:11) reveals Elisha's love, humility and service he had done to his prophet and master and mentor and spiritual father Elijah. Elisha whole-heartedly embraced the discipleship of Elijah. He was with Elijah always, right until the very end to attain a double portion of Elijah's spirit (II Kings 2:9-15) to do his ministry. For fulfilling his GOD's ministry, he required a double portion of Elijah's spirit. So, his motives were pure. Glory be to GOD!

**58. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO TURN AWAY FROM WICKEDNESS**

*"Nevertheless the foundation of GOD standeth sure, having this seal, The LORD knoweth them that are HIS. And, Let every one that nameth the name of CHRIST depart from iniquity."*

II Timothy 2:19

GOD's ministers who pronounce and declare the most holy name of CHRIST, the Most High GOD must turn away from wickedness. They must depart from iniquity. GOD's ministers who announce the most holy name of CHRIST, the Most High GOD must turn away from wickedness. GOD's ministers who preach the most holy name of CHRIST, the Most High GOD must turn away from wickedness. GOD's ministers who preach in the most holy name of CHRIST, the Most High GOD must turn away from wickedness.

*"But unto the wicked GOD saith, What hast thou to do to declare MY statutes, or that thou shouldest take MY covenant in thy mouth? Thou givest thy mouth to evil, and thy tongue frameth deceit."*

Psalm 50:16, 19

The wicked people or the unsaved people or the sinners have no right to declare GOD's laws or statutes and they have no right to take HIS covenant in their mouth. The wicked people use their mouth for evil and they frame their tongue to deceit.

Those who preach or teach others, must preach or teach themselves first. Those who preach against stealing, should not steal. Those who preach that people should not commit adultery, should not commit adultery. Those who abhor idols, should not rob temples. Those who brag about the law, should not dishonour GOD by breaking the law. GOD's most holy name should not be blasphemed among the Gentiles because of the preachers or GOD's ministers who do not honour the Word of GOD in their deeds and actions.

*"Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal? Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege? Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou GOD? For the name of GOD is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written."*

Romans 2:21-24

#### 59. **GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THE HEAVENLY SERVANTS OF THE MOST HIGH GOD**

*"The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the Most High GOD, which shew unto us the way of salvation."*

Acts 16:17

The true ministers of GOD are the servants of the Most High GOD. They are the glorious servants of the heavenly GOD. They are the heavenly servants of the heavenly GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **The true GOD's ministers are the true spiritual guides who are showing the true way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD (Romans 2:19).**

#### 60. **GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE SHOWING THE WAY OF SALVATION**

Only the true ministers of GOD can show the way of salvation to people, by the grace and guidance of GOD. In the first century

Christian church, the true GOD's ministers showed the way of salvation to people, by the grace and guidance of GOD; they proclaimed the way of salvation to people, by the grace and guidance of GOD.

Salvation or salvation from sins is very precious, and it belongs to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Salvation is found in our LORD JESUS CHRIST only.

*"Salvation belongeth unto the LORD: THY blessing is upon THY people."*

Psalm 3:8

*"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the LORD, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard HIM; GOD also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), according to HIS own will?"*

Hebrews 2:3-4

*"Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

The Most High GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is showing the way of salvation, by HIS Word of truth, the Gospel of salvation, through HIS true servants or officials. HE is proclaiming the way of salvation, by HIS Word of truth, the Gospel of salvation, through HIS true ministers or officials.

*"In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the Word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that HOLY SPIRIT of promise."*

Ephesians 1:13

Now, the true ministers of GOD are the servants of the Most High GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. But, false ministers are the servants of Satan, the devil. The true ministers of GOD will not pretend. But, false ministers are pretenders. The true ministers of GOD are the servants of holiness and righteousness, and they are not deceitful workers. But, false ministers are the servants of unholiness and unrighteousness, and they are deceitful workers.

*"For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of CHRIST. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works."*

II Corinthians 11:13-15

'Transform' means 'pretend'.

Further, the true ministers of GOD are showing the way of salvation and heaven. But, false ministers are not showing the way of salvation, and they are showing the way to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. The true ministers of GOD are proclaiming the way of salvation. But, false ministers are not proclaiming the way of salvation. The true ministers of GOD are showing the good way (the strait and narrow way) to heaven, the life eternal. But, false ministers are showing the bad way (the broad and wide way) to hell, the eternal destruction.

*"Enter ye in at the strait gate (narrow gate): for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth (leads) to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat (by it): Because strait (narrow) is the gate, and narrow (difficult) is the way, which leadeth (leads) unto life, and few there be that find it."*

St. Matthew 7:13-14

Again, the true ministers of GOD are wise men and wise women, and they are always doing the will of GOD. But, false ministers are foolish men and foolish women, and they are not doing the will of GOD. Furthermore, those who keep watch are wise men and wise women, and they are called wise virgins. But, those who do not keep watch are foolish men and foolish women, and they are called foolish virgins. Wise virgins are anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT, the fresh oil. Foolish virgins are not anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT. Wise virgins will enter into heaven. Foolish virgins will not enter into heaven. They will be abandoned by the SON OF MAN, the LORD JESUS CHRIST during HIS coming. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will come to take up HIS glorious church as a heavenly bridegroom. This heavenly bridegroom refers to the great love of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST towards HIS church, the saved people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said about the **wise and foolish builders,**

*"Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of MINE, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a (the) rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a (the) rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of MINE, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it."*

St. Matthew 7:24-27

Everyone should both hear and do what our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said. Hearing HIS sayings alone will not bring about any change in one's life. Only those who both hear and do according to HIS sayings will be saved. Everyone who hears the Words of JESUS and puts them into practice is like a wise man who has built his house on the rock. Everyone should build on the Rock, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the proper foundation (I Corinthians 10:4). The Christian church's main foundation is JESUS CHRIST. No one can lay any foundation for the Christian church other than the one already laid, which is JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 3:11). Satan and his people (evil people) are striving hard to destroy this glorious foundation. GOD's ministers should work hard and pray steadfastly to strengthen this glorious foundation. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said about the **wise and foolish virgins,**

*"Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be*

*not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) cometh."*

St. Matthew 25:1-13

The **parable of the ten virgins** emphasizes personal preparation for the coming of CHRIST. These virgins are the attendants at the wedding, not multiple brides. The virgins include both men and women. The lamps refer to their lives. The oil refers to the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT. GOD's ministers must be anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

In addition, the true ministers of GOD need to render spontaneously faithful service to their heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The unfaithful and the unprofitable and the wicked and the slothful (lazy) ministers of GOD will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth for ever. See St. Matthew 25:26-30.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and narrated the **parable of the talents**,

*"For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things:*



*enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

St. Matthew 25:14-30

The talents represent large units of money. Talents are distributed to HIS servants according to their own ability. The three servants are typical of three types. They are entrusted with different tasks in accordance with their own ability. They are not expected to produce the same profits. But they are expected to be faithful with what has been entrusted to them. The first two doubled their money, but the last one hid the money in the earth. The great mistake of this unfaithful servant is in misjudging the divine character of his heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He could not understand his heavenly Master. He could not understand the real generosity of his heavenly Master. He could not realize the great joys of HIS service. He could not realize the great joys in doing HIS service. Now, 'far country' indicates heaven, the kingdom of GOD. 'After a long time' indicates the length of CHRIST's session in heaven during this present age. The parable of the talents emphasizes the importance of faithful service to our heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST during HIS present absence. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Besides, the servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should be profitable servants. They should not be wicked and lazy. They should prepare themselves for the glorious coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, as per the will of the LORD. Those who have not prepared themselves will be severely punished in hell.

*“And that servant, which knew his LORD’s will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to HIS will, shall be beaten with many stripes.”*

St. Luke 12:47

Further, the true ministers of GOD are those who come to the LORD JESUS CHRIST and hear HIS Words, and put HIS Words into practice. They are like men building a house on the rock. This rock is the Rock of Salvation, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. But, false servants are those who hear HIS Words but do not put them into practice. They are like men building a house on the ground without a foundation. They are like men building a house with no thought for its foundation.

*“And why call ye ME, LORD, LORD, and do not the things which I say? Whosoever cometh to ME, and heareth MY sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.”*

St. Luke 6:46-49

Furthermore, the true ministers of GOD are like a good tree, which bears good fruit. But, false ministers are like a corrupt (bad) tree, which bears evil (bad) fruit. 'Good fruit' refers to good works and good doctrines. 'Evil fruit' refers to evil works and evil doctrines. A good tree cannot bear evil fruit, and a corrupt tree cannot bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and cast into the fire. By their fruit anyone can clearly recognize them. The fruitful life of the true ministers of GOD or the saved is that of GOD, and they will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The

unfruitful life of the unsaved or false ministers is not that of GOD, and they will be cast into the fire, the lake of eternal fire.

*“Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.”*

St. Matthew 7:17-20

The works of the flesh are evil works and they are deadly against good fruit (good works), the fruit of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23; Ephesians 5:9). The works of the flesh are evil doctrines and they are deadly against our LORD JESUS CHRIST's good doctrines. The true ministers of GOD are showing the way of salvation by their good works and good doctrines. They hate all wrong and evil-doings—dancing, card-playing, theatre-going, debaucheries, orgies, revelry, etc., (I John 2:15-17; St. John 17:14-19; I Peter 4:2-5).

#### 61. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO SHOW THE WAY OF SALVATION THROUGH REPENTANCE AND FAITH

St. Peter, the apostle of JESUS CHRIST filled with the HOLY SPIRIT declared to the rulers, elders, and scribes and Annas the retired high priest and Caiaphas the high priest and others in Jerusalem the way of salvation.

*“Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.”*

Acts 4:12

Salvation or salvation from sins is obtained only through our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. Salvation for Jews (Israelites) as well as Gentiles is only through the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Those who receive HIM and those who believe in HIS name, or those who live by faith are the children of GOD.

*“But as many as received HIM, to them gave HE power to become the sons of GOD, even to them that believe on HIS name.”*

St. John 1:12

Now, the jailer at Philippi asked St. Paul and St. Silas,

*"Sirs, what must I do to be saved?"*

Acts 16:30

They replied,

*"Believe on the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house (household)."*

Acts 16:31

To obtain salvation, everyone should repent and everyone should be converted.

*"Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, ..."*

Acts 3:19

To obtain salvation, everyone should obtain remission (forgiveness) of sins.

*"To HIM give all the prophets witness, that through HIS name whosoever believeth in HIM shall receive remission of sins."*

Acts 10:43

To obtain salvation, everyone should call upon (worship) the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST by confessing his/her sins with humility and with broken-heart and with contrite spirit (Romans 10:13; Psalm 34:18).

When we call upon GOD in our troubles, HE rescues or saves us from them all. Psalm 107 spells out four pictures of people: the wandering travellers, 4-9; the captives, 10-16; the sick people, 17-22; the sailors, 23-32. Verses 33-43 describe GOD's unchanging love towards us. 'The wise' will understand GOD's lovingkindness and ponder HIS loving deeds. Circumstances may differ for each one, as we cry out to GOD in need, HE hears and answers.

To obtain salvation, everyone should hear the Word of GOD of GOD-sent preachers. A GOD-sent preacher preaches the Gospel of peace and he brings glad news or good news of good things.

*"How then shall they call on HIM in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in HIM of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and*

*bring glad tidings of good things!"*

Romans 10:14-15

To obtain salvation, everyone should receive the spiritual experience of born-again or born-from-above.

*"JESUS answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

St. John 3:5

'Water' means 'Word of truth'.

*"Of HIS own will begat HE us with the Word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of HIS creatures."*

James 1:18

Salvation is obtained not by works but by GOD's grace through faith. Salvation is the gift of GOD.

*"Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with CHRIST, (by grace ye are saved;) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD: Not of works, lest any man should boast."*

Ephesians 2:5, 8-9

The saved people are the children of GOD. They live by faith in the SON OF GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They are crucified with CHRIST. This means that the saved people have been freed from the ruling power of sin and Satan, the devil. Salvation from sins means deliverance from sins. Salvation from sins gives security, safety, protection, love, preservation, healing, soundness, peace, goodness, joy, happiness, meekness, self-control, gentleness, patience, humility, kindness, compassion, faithfulness, holiness, righteousness and truth.

*"I am crucified with CHRIST: nevertheless I live: yet not I, but CHRIST liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the SON OF GOD, who loved me, and gave HIMSELF for me."*

Galatians 2:20

The saved people cannot be both a lover of GOD and a lover of the world. The saved people hate sins. They have a great hatred over sins. They have no friendship with the world. Friendship with the world means friendship with world's sinful lusts or sinful pleasures.

Friendship with the world is hatred towards GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Any man who has friendship with world's sinful lusts is an adulterer. Any woman who has friendship with world's sinful lusts is an adulteress. Adulterers and adulteresses are the enemies of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Thus, sinners are the enemies of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The enemies of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with GOD? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of GOD."*

James 4:4

The first century GOD's ministers showed the way of salvation according to the will of GOD. St. Peter and St. Paul of the first century Christian church proclaimed and showed the way of salvation according to the will of GOD. They also proclaimed and showed the way to repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, holiness, holy life and all other spiritual experiences according to the will of GOD.

*"In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of HIM who worketh all things after the counsel of HIS own will: That we should be to the praise of HIS glory, who first trusted in CHRIST."*

Ephesians 1:11-12

## 62. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO SHOW BOTH THE STRAIT GATE AND THE NARROW WAY TO HEAVEN

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves."*

St. Matthew 7:13-15

The strait gate as well as the narrow way refers to the way of holiness and righteousness. This way leads to eternal life (heaven). Only the righteous and holy people will walk in this way. Only a few

people are being led in this good way. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST enables men to find this gate or this way, through HIS ministers.

The wide gate as well as the broad way refers to the sinful and filthy way. This way leads to eternal destruction (hell). All sinners are being led in this way. Many people are being led in this wrong way or bad way.

Now, beware of false prophets is a warning given by our LORD JESUS CHRIST. These prophets or preachers are those who have denied or twisted the truth of the glorious Gospel of GOD. They appear in sheep's clothing; they look like lambs. But in reality they act like ravenous wolves; they act like savage wolves. These savage wolves will not spare the people; they will not spare the souls.

GOD's ministers are those who show both the strait gate and the narrow way. This gate leads to eternal life. This way leads to eternal life, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

False preachers should not be taken into houses, and they should not be greeted or welcomed. Anyone who welcomes or greets any false preacher shares in his wicked or evil deeds.

*"If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him GOD speed: For he that biddeth him GOD speed is partaker of his evil deeds."*

II John 10-11

### **63. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE ELIGIBLE TO BE WITH THE LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST**

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONLY GOD and the most holy GOD. GOD's ministers should be with HIM always. Hence, they should be wholly holy in their whole spirit and soul and body. To preach and show the glad tidings of the kingdom of GOD, the servants of GOD should be holy in all their words and deeds.

*"And HE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) ordained twelve, that they should be with HIM, and that HE might send them forth to preach."*

St. Mark 3:14

**64. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO RECEIVE THE POWER AND AUTHORITY OF THE LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST TO CAST OUT DEVILS AND TO CURE DISEASES**

The LORD JESUS CHRIST gave HIS disciples (HIS servants) power and authority over all devils and to cure all diseases. Hence, HIS power and authority are very essential for the ministers of GOD to do HIS ministry.

*"Then HE called HIS twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases. And HE sent them to preach the kingdom of GOD, and to heal the sick."*

St. Luke 9:1-2

*"And when HE had called unto HIM HIS twelve disciples, HE gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease."*

St. Matthew 10:1

*"And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give."*

St. Matthew 10:7-8

**65. GOD'S MINISTERS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT (NEW COVENANT) AND GOD'S MINISTERS OF THE OLD TESTAMENT (OLD COVENANT)**

GOD's ministers of the New Testament are new in quality, having better spiritual blessings. The New Testament ministry is of the Spirit. The Old Testament ministry was of the letter. 'The letter' means 'the law of Moses'. The letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.

The Old Testament ministry was of death, written and engraven in stones; it was of condemnation; it was of less glory; and it was for a specific time only. The New Testament ministry is of life; it is not of condemnation; it is of righteousness; it is of exceeding glory; and it is a lasting one. Thus, the ministers of GOD of the New Testament are more glorious than the ministers of GOD of the Old Testament (II Corinthians 3:6-12).

**GOD's ministers are HIS witnesses, witnessing both to small and great (Acts 26:16, 22).** They should preach the glorious New Testament



Gospel of JESUS CHRIST as a witness (testimony) to all the nations (St. Matthew 24:14). By the glorious Gospel of GOD, they close the sinful eyes of the sinners and open their holy eyes to see the divine spiritual things. This glorious Gospel of GOD is a key to open the holy eyes and to close the sinful eyes. By the glorious Gospel of GOD, they turn the sinners from sinful darkness (death) to divine light (righteousness and life) and from the evil power of Satan, the devil to the holy power of GOD. By the glorious Gospel of GOD, they guide the sinners to receive repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins and all other spiritual experiences and to receive the divine inheritance, the kingdom of heaven (Acts 26:17-18).

**66. GOD'S MINISTERS ARE THOSE WHO ARE PROMOTING THE MINISTRY OF RECONCILIATION**

Sin caused hostility between GOD and mankind. Our LORD GOD JESUS CHRIST eliminated this hostility by the cross at Calvary.

To reconcile means to make peace between GOD and mankind. Reconciliation is the act whereby GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has eliminated the hostility between HIMSELF and mankind.

Now, GOD's ministers who have been reconciled to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST have been given the ministry of reconciliation (II Corinthians 5:18). And they have also been given the word of reconciliation. So, GOD's ministers must implore the people of the world on behalf of CHRIST: Be reconciled to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"To wit (That is), that GOD was in CHRIST, reconciling the world unto HIMSELF, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation ... We pray (implore) you in CHRIST's stead (behalf), be ye reconciled to GOD."*

II Corinthians 5:19-20

To reconcile mankind to HIM, GOD made HIM who knew no sin to be sin (sin offering) for us, so that in HIM we might become the righteousness of GOD.

*"For HE hath made HIM to be sin (sin offering) for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of GOD in HIM."*

II Corinthians 5:21

GOD's ministers those who are promoting the ministry of reconciliation should teach the people with the Holy Bible and according to the Holy Bible, the Book of the Law of the LORD (II Chronicles 17:9).

**To a GOD's minister or GOD's servant, the following qualifications are also very essential:**

He should be obedient to the Word of GOD; he should not be a sluggard; he should not be slothful (I Kings 13:1); he should be brave and courageous (I Kings 13:2-5); he should make intercessions on behalf of his enemies and others (I Kings 13:4-6); he should not be covetous (I Kings 13:7-10); he should not be worldly; he should not be a liar; he should not be envious; he should not be a deceiver; he should not gainsay against GOD's Word; he should not be crooked and perverse; he should be blameless and harmless (Philippians 2:15; I Kings 13:11-18); he should be a patient listener of GOD's Word; he should not forget GOD's warning; he should not forget the Word of GOD or promise of GOD, by believing falsehood; he should not abandon the command of GOD; he should not be deceived by anyone (I Kings 13:14-23) and he should be fruitful with good fruit and not with any evil (bad) fruit (Jeremiah 11:16; 24:8; St. Luke 13:6-9). Glory be to GOD!

### **3 . SEVERE WARNINGS**

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will judge the worthless and unprofitable ministers of GOD very strictly. They will receive greater condemnation or greater punishment. The greater punishment is that they will be tied hand and foot and they will be thrown into hell, the lake of eternal fire; there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. In the **parable of the marriage feast**, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said as follows:

*“Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”*

St. Matthew 22:13

‘Outer darkness’ refers to ‘hell’.

James, the apostle by the HOLY SPIRIT has warned that not many of them should presume to be masters or teachers or GOD's ministers or GOD's servants, since they will receive the greater condemnation, the greater punishment in hell.

*"My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation."*

James 3:1

The apostle Paul has also warned by the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) hath made you overseers, to feed the church of GOD, which HE hath purchased with HIS own blood. For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock."*

Acts 20:28-29

See also the severe warnings in Psalm 50:16-22 in point 50 under the Characteristics of GOD's Ministers.

So, everyone or every servant of GOD should think about the following things and live a holy life, according to the will of GOD.

*"Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things."*

Philippians 4:8

### 3.1 FALSE PROPHETS

Nowadays, false prophets are prevalent, whereas GOD's true prophets are in the minority. False prophets appear in sheep's clothing but are in reality ravenous wolves. They look like lambs but act like wolves. They are deceivers. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has warned as follows:

*"Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil*

*fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. Not every one that saith unto ME, LORD, LORD, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of MY FATHER which is in heaven. Many will say to ME in that day, LORD, LORD, have we not prophesied in THY name? and in THY name have cast out devils? and in THY name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from ME, ye that work iniquity."*

St. Matthew 7:15-23

St. Matthew 7:21 serves a warning: the kingdom of heaven is not for any preacher or teacher or pastor or evangelist or prophet or apostle, or self-professed Christian, or deacon or bishop, or for any other, but "HE THAT DOETH THE WILL OF MY FATHER WHICH IS IN HEAVEN" only will enter into the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. 'MY FATHER' refers to the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

### 3.2 WOMEN AND MINISTRY

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in Galilee, many women followed HIM and ministered unto HIM. Hence, women could do the work of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; women could do the ministry of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; women could be the servants of GOD.

*"And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed JESUS from Galilee, ministering unto HIM: Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children."*

St. Matthew 27:55-56

The apostle Paul has told about sister Phebe, a servant of the church at Cenchrea.

*"I commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea: That ye receive her in the LORD, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of myself also."*

Romans 16:1-2

The women servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should be wholly holy in their whole spirit and soul and body. They should always care about the things of the LORD to please the LORD. Hence, they should be unmarried; they should be virgins. These women servants of the LORD JESUS CHRIST are not prohibited to teach or speak in the churches to an audience consisting of women. Since all things should be done in a fitting and orderly way, the women servants of GOD should not stand and preach on pulpits in churches.

*"Let all things be done decently and in order."*

I Corinthians 14:40

*"Let all things be done unto edifying (for edification)."*

I Corinthians 14:26

*"For GOD is not the author of confusion (disorder), but of peace, as in all churches of the saints."*

I Corinthians 14:33

There is a vast difference between a wife (married woman) and a virgin (unmarried woman). Their interests are vastly divided. An unmarried woman or virgin is concerned about the things of the LORD. Her aim is to be devoted to the LORD in both body and spirit. But a married woman is concerned about the things of the world—how she can please her husband. The women workers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST should be wholly holy in their whole spirit and soul and body.

*"There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the LORD, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband."*

I Corinthians 7:34

*"And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

Now, the married women's primary ministry is that of child-bearing and that of nourishing and bringing up of children who will become godly adults. They should be spiritually saved from sin, by persevering in faith and love and holiness with chastity.

*"Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety."*

I Timothy 2:15

The apostle Paul has asked the married women to keep silence in the churches (congregations) of the saints. They are not permitted to speak in the churches; they are not permitted to preach in the churches; but they must be under obedience, as the law says. If they want to learn anything, they should ask their own husbands at home; for it is shameful for a married woman to speak or preach in the church. Wives or married women should submit themselves to their own husbands in the LORD in everything.

*"Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law. And if they will learn anything, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church."*

I Corinthians 14:34-35

*"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the LORD."*

Ephesians 5:22

Thus, the married women are strictly prohibited from preaching or speaking in the churches (congregations) of the saints.

The apostle Paul has again asked the married women to learn in silence with all submission in public worship services and they should not preach or teach in the churches or in the public worship services.

*"Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence."*

I Timothy 2:11-12

The prohibition against the married women teaching in the churches is restricted in Titus 2:3-5.

*"The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things; That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the Word of GOD be not blasphemed."*

Titus 2:3-5

### 3.3 THEOLOGICAL INSTITUTIONS

In the first century Christian church, there were no theological institutions or colleges or schools; there were no advanced Christian studies; there were no theological research centres; there were no theological educational courses; there were no seminaries; there were no theological training colleges; there were no degree or diploma or doctorate or philosophy holders in theology. **Philosophy** cannot be helpful to anyone. Philosophy has its origin in the basic principles of the world system. Philosophy is from the tradition of men. Philosophy is not of CHRIST. The Holy Bible warns,

*"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after CHRIST."*

Colossians 2:8

'After' means 'according to'.

This verse is a serious and severe warning to you and me. Let no one lead you away into evil as his prey by any sham or deception that he may recommend as philosophy drawn from elemental spirits of the world and not CHRIST for its content.

Now, **heresy** is a belief or opinion that is against the teachings of the church. A person who is guilty of heresy or heresies is a **heretic**. The heretics will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign LORD, JESUS CHRIST. The **heretics' philosophy** is in accord with the traditions of men. This philosophy is setting aside the commands of GOD. This philosophy is nullifying the Word of GOD.

*"For laying aside the commandment of GOD, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And HE said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of GOD, that ye may keep your own tradition. Making the Word of GOD of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye."*

St. Mark 7:8-9, 13

Again, the heretics' philosophy is a hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world rather than on CHRIST. This false philosophy is coming from the world system. Besides, this philosophy is not coming from

CHRIST. This false philosophy consists of many legalistic ordinances. This false philosophy consists of the commandments and doctrines of men. This false philosophy has an appearance of wisdom, with its self-imposed worship, its false humility, and its harsh treatment of the body. But it lacks any value in restraining sensual indulgence.

*"Wherefore if ye be dead with CHRIST from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh."*

Colossians 2:20-23

Further, the heretics' philosophy with destructive heresies is seen in almost all the theological studies. What a pitiable thing it is! What a sorrowful thing it is!

*"But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the LORD that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not."*

II Peter 2:1-3

The message of false prophets and false teachers is the opposite of true revelation of GOD. They teach destructive heresies. They deceive GOD's people by these heresies; they themselves are deceived by these heresies; they themselves are deceived by their own teaching or preaching. They secretly introduce destructive heresies. These heresies (unorthodox teachings) will make an open denial of CHRIST HIMSELF. These false prophets and false teachers will reject CHRIST and HIS vicarious atonement. They will reject the way of truth. Therefore, they will experience destruction in hell; they themselves will be punished by their own teaching or preaching.



Further, a heretic is a subverted and sinful person; he is a self-condemned person. Warn a heretic once and then warn him a second time. After that, have nothing to do with him.

*"A man that is an heretick after the first and second admonition reject; Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself."*

Titus 3:10-11

Again, in the first century Christian church, the apostles Peter and John were uneducated (unlettered) and untrained men (commoners). They were ordinary fishermen. They preached the gospel by the grace of GOD. They preached the gospel by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. They did many signs and wonders by the grace of GOD. They did many signs and wonders by the power of the HOLY SPIRIT. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people; ..."*

Acts 5:12

One day Peter miraculously healed a lame man from birth. The man who was miraculously healed was a beggar and was over forty years old. After this miraculous healing, Peter and John were teaching and preaching the resurrection of the dead. While they were speaking to the people, the priests, the captain of the temple and the Sadducees came up to Peter and John. They seized Peter and John and put them in jail until the next day.

Then, Peter and John were brought before the high priest and others. When they saw the courageous and powerful speech of Peter and John, they realized that they were uneducated and untrained men. They were greatly astonished, and they took note of the fact that these men had been with JESUS. See Acts 3; 4:1-33; and 5:12-16.

*"Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with JESUS."*

Acts 4:13

Further, in the first century Christian church, GOD's ministers did their ministry by the gift of GOD's grace; they did their ministry by

the power of the HOLY SPIRIT. They were filled with the HOLY SPIRIT; they were baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT; they were anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT; they were led by the HOLY SPIRIT. They were strong in the grace of GOD; they lived in the grace of GOD; they breathed in the grace of GOD; they moved in the grace of GOD; they had their being in the grace of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. See I Corinthians 15:10; Ephesians 3:7-8; and II Timothy 2:1 in Point No. 43 under the Characteristics of GOD's Ministers.

Furthermore, they preached by the grace of GOD; they preached by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. They did many signs and wonders; they cleansed the lepers, healed the sick, raised the dead, and drove out devils by GOD's grace and by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. Our LORD JESUS commanded HIS apostles,

*"And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give."*

St. Matthew 10:7-8

Again, GOD's ministers should be filled with the HOLY SPIRIT; they should be baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT; they should be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT. GOD's irresistible grace must abound in them. For this irresistible grace, they should humble themselves by fasting and continue to wait upon the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in fervent prayers and worship, day and night without ceasing. In addition, they must adopt a strict celibate lifestyle to please the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the LORD, how he may please the LORD."*

I Corinthians 7:32

The apostle Paul tells about his fastings (sufferings).

*"In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness."*

II Corinthians 11:27

Further, the cause of man's problem is lack of knowledge. Now, hear the warning words of our most merciful and most gracious LORD to HIS priests or servants,

*"MY people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to ME: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy GOD, I will also forget thy children."*

Hosea 4:6

But, why should you be destroyed? Why should you die? Why should you go to hell? Take heed of GOD's warning and live alive. The Words of truth can certainly make you free. Our LORD JESUS says,

*"And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."*

St. John 8:32

The priests who lived during the time of Hosea were bad. But, the priests of today are worse, and far worse. They have forsaken the truth of GOD. Thus they refuse to accept the authority, the established first century Christian church and are against it.

**Apostasy** is the abandoning of Christian religious beliefs and principles. An **apostate** is a person who abandons Christian religious beliefs and principles. Now, the apostate Christendom grows more rapidly to make a newly appearing pseudo-Christianized world. This sinful Christendom is fully against the established first century Christian church.

*"As they were increased, so they sinned against ME: therefore will I change their glory into shame. And there shall be, like people, like priest: and I will punish them for their ways, and reward them their doings."*

Hosea 4:7, 9

Besides, many priests of today are leading the poor masses in **Mariolatry** (Mary worship), saints' worship, angels' worship, and other worships. Mary worship or saints' worship or angels' worship is idolatry. This is a great sin against the first commandment of our LORD GOD.

*"Thou shalt have no other gods before (besides) ME. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: ..."*

Exodus 20:3-5

*"For Israel slideth back as a backsliding heifer: ... Ephraim is joined to idols: let him alone."*

Hosea 4:16-17

'Israel' and 'Ephraim' refer to the people of GOD.

Further, in these last days, there are so many deceptions. Therefore, our LORD JESUS again warns,

*"...For the time is at hand. He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. And, behold, I come quickly; and MY reward is with ME, to give every man according as his work shall be."*

Revelation 22:10-12

Now, **Masons or Freemasons or 33 degree Freemasons** are a secret cult of devil worshippers or Satanists. They pass through a Luciferian initiation. Most of them are members of Christian churches, and many clergymen belong to this group. Like Satan (Lucifer), these clergymen deceive with lies and cover-up. They praise worldly rulers; they promote and honour the non-spiritual authorities; they compromise (weaken) Christian beliefs and principles; they endorse false Bibles; they teach and preach blasphemous doctrines; they teach and preach the doctrines of devils; they tell hypocritical lies; they proclaim and publish blasphemous prayers; they publish blasphemous books, pamphlets, etc.; they do counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders; they approve and support blasphemous movies, songs, activities, etc.; they keep silence on crucial issues of abortion, homosexuality, Lesbianism (Lesbian act/relationship), Mariolatry, etc.

*"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron."*

I Timothy 4:1-2

*"Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved."*

II Thessalonians 2:9-10

**Theology is not of the Spirit, but of the letter. The letter kills, but the Spirit gives life (II Corinthians 3:6). Thus, theology kills the souls of men.** Now, in these last days, every church has its own doctrine, not the doctrine of GOD. Almost all churches are neglecting the first century Christian doctrine, the doctrine of GOD. Therefore, their theological educational institutions are also neglecting the first century Christian doctrine, the doctrine of GOD—the apostles' doctrine (Acts 2:42). Nowadays, these theological educational institutions are producing heretics, apostates, heathens (persons who do not acknowledge the GOD of the Holy Bible, the LORD JESUS CHRIST), pagans (irreligious persons who worship many gods or no GOD at all, rather than the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST), and atheists (persons who believe that there is no GOD).

*"...The things which the Gentiles (Pagans) sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to GOD: ..."*

I Corinthians 10:20

*"Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against HIS anointed (CHRIST), ..."*

Psalms 2:1-2

*"The fool hath said in his heart, There is no GOD. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good."*

Psalms 14:1

Further, in various theological studies, they wrongly teach that there are four eternal dwelling-places for the people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They wrongly teach that according to their rank or grade, some will dwell in Zion, the highest place (the place of honour); some will dwell in new Jerusalem, the second high place; some will dwell in new heaven, the third high place; and some will dwell in new earth, the lowest place (the least important place like the outer court). By this wrong teaching, they are fully neglecting our LORD JESUS CHRIST's teaching about the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven. HE taught,

*"Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand."*

St. Matthew 4:17

*"But seek ye first the kingdom of GOD, and HIS righteousness;  
..."*

St. Matthew 6:33

*"Not every one that saith unto ME, LORD, LORD, shall enter  
into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of MY  
FATHER which is in heaven."*

St. Matthew 7:21

Now, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven is the only eternal dwelling-place for the people of the LORD JESUS CHRIST or the righteous or the saints. There our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will dwell with HIS people for ever and ever. There HIS people will dwell together in great peace and happiness for ever and ever. However, according to the sufferings and good works of the righteous or the saints in the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the glory of GOD in one saint will differ from another saint. More and more sufferings in the name of our LORD will bring more and more glory in heaven. More and more good works in the name of our LORD will bring more and more glory in heaven. More and more sufferings in the name of our LORD will bring more and more treasures in heaven. More and more good works will bring more and more treasures in heaven. The righteous or the saints will shine like the sun in the kingdom of GOD, their FATHER. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom  
of their FATHER. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."*

St. Matthew 13:43

*"But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither  
moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through  
nor steal."*

St. Matthew 6:20

Now, in this world, there are a number of **false sciences**. Many people say, "**We believe science.**" They have no belief in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and they are going towards hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. What a pitiable thing it is! In theological studies also, they teach false sciences. The Holy Bible warns us about being deceived by false sciences. St. Paul warns to avoid

*"...oppositions of science falsely so called."*

I Timothy 6:20

He also warns to avoid

*"...profane and vain babblings, ..."*

I Timothy 6:20

By false sciences and by profane and vain babblings, the preachers will go astray from the faith and from the truth and from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Furthermore, in the first century Christian church, there were no theological educational institutions; there were no theological studies. GOD's ministers of the first century Christian church did their ministry by the grace of GOD and by the guidance of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. In order to do HIS ministry, they had occupied their minds with the right things; they hurried themselves with the right activities—whatever they had learned or received or heard from the apostle or seen in him. These are sufficient for the ministers of GOD to do the ministry of GOD. Thus, no theological educational institutions are needed to do the ministry. No theological studies are needed to do the ministry of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things. Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the GOD of peace shall be with you."*

Philippians 4:8-9

Now, anyone who breaks one of the least of the commandments of GOD and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever practises and teaches the commandments of GOD will be called great in the kingdom of heaven. Unless his/her righteousness exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees, he/she will certainly not enter into heaven. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the*

*righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven."*

St. Matthew 5:19-20

### 3.4 FALLIBILITY OF THE PRESENT BIBLICAL EDUCATION SYSTEM

Now-a-days, almost all churches are man-made churches with man-made doctrines; almost all ministries are man-made ministries; almost all ministers are man-made ministers. Ministers are elected by or appointed by men. They are not commissioned by the will of GOD. We underscore this point because they are not committed to the truth of GOD.

Everything in this world is all topsy-turvy. This world is in conflict with whatever the Holy Bible says. The Word of GOD says, "***the wisdom of this world is foolishness with GOD***" (I Corinthians 3:19). The thoughts of the wise people are in accordance with this world standard and they are futile and vain (I Corinthians 3:20). Regenerated wisdom is very different from worldly wisdom.

Most of the people in this world will say that man is innately good. But according to the Holy Bible no one is good. The world tells us to rely on our own self. But the Holy Bible is against this. The world says that the world is getting better. But the Holy Bible says that the world is doomed and there is a day of Judgment. So, do not love the world or anything in the world. For everything in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of the life—comes not from GOD, the FATHER but from the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the FATHER is not in him (I John 2:15-16).

With these points in mind, let us try to evaluate the condition of the seminaries in these last days.

Bible study and prayer have grown dry. Invaluable doctrines of the Word of GOD have become only academic and have no real impact on the Bible School trainees. They have become detached from our precious and glorious LORD HIMSELF.

Worship sessions and services have become routine and dull formality. Calvary's impact on would-be-pastors and preachers has been waning day by day. Passion and emotion rather than reverence and



honour are being emphasized. The purpose of Christian life is being forgotten and clutter and revelry are gaining ground on simplicity of the Christian life.

Having been convinced of this kind of situation, we thank our LORD JESUS CHRIST for guiding us along the same principles and doctrines of the LORD's church of the first century. So, we believe that our church is the continuation of the church originated by our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

For our ministry we have not established any seminary or Bible School, as such, since we are convinced of the futility of such organizations. We do not go in for theoretical instruction without any practical implication or involvement in the ministry. The curriculum of a seminary can benefit would-be-pastors and preachers only very minimally. Nowadays many people become pastors for various reasons. They choose the career of a minister in the church because they have been unable to get a job elsewhere. So as a last resort they decide to become a member of the clergy and become pastors and preachers after a course of studies on various aspects of religion. But in reality, not only are they very shallow in their knowledge of the Word of GOD but they don't bother to become a model to the believers. Their main aim is to become prosperous and lead a comfortable and luxurious life. No wonder, such people preach not the real gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST but various other gospels such as prosperity gospel, works gospel, social-uplift gospel, political-power gospel and so on. In the words of apostle Paul, they are the cursed (Galatians 1:8-9). They do not adapt the real way that leads to the kingdom of GOD nor can they help others to be saved. Isn't it shameful? That's why it is asked in the Holy Bible if the LORD will find real faith in this world at HIS coming (St. Luke 18:8).

We in our church depend only on our ONE AND ONLY LORD JESUS CHRIST for every need of ours. We desire to follow our LORD JESUS in whatever we do and we try to do whatever is pleasing to HIM and whatever will glorify HIS name.

First of all, we are convinced that we have to adopt a celibate lifestyle just as our LORD set a model to us so that we will not be encumbered by any family bonds in serving the LORD only. Those

who believe in the truth of the Word of GOD, when they decide to serve the LORD as propagator of HIS Gospel they detach themselves free from their families and live on the church campus, never to return to their family or kith and kin, together with the other brothers who have already offered their bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable unto GOD and who are not conformed to the pattern of the world (Romans 12:1-2).

They eat simple food, dress in simple cloth and lead a very simple life as sadhus or hermits, having done away with all the vanities of life. They have known that GOD resists the proud but gives grace to the humble (James 4:6). So, they humble themselves so that GOD could lift them up. Their humility cures all kinds of worldliness. They never grumble against one another but are patient with everyone. They encourage and implore one another. They always feel that they are a part of a greater whole which is the eternal church.

They are patient in tribulation, rejoice in hope and continue steadfastly in prayer. The LORD hears their prayers and guides them.

The LORD gives them a leader. The leader trusts totally in the power of our LORD JESUS CHRIST because

1. the leader is commissioned by the will of GOD.
2. the leader is fully committed to the truth of GOD.

The LORD gives him power to govern the church, the power to exercise discipline in it, the power to decide who shall be admitted into it and on what condition. The LORD provides food for all the household, the ministry of the word and sacraments.

The life of the leader is an example and a model of labour and hardship. All the coworkers feel that their leader provides the same kind of spiritual care as provided by our LORD to HIS disciples. He is a model to them by his zeal, tenacity in faith, integrity, accountability, humility, preaching, disciplining, protecting, overseeing, care and family affection and above all praying.

The inmates and coworkers of our church pray without ceasing for the following:

1. Trust and Faithfulness: In accordance with the glorious Gospel of the blessed GOD, which has been mandated to the apostles (I Timothy 1:11-12).
2. Courage in sufferings: The workers in the ministry should remember the Passion of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (the suffering and death of CHRIST) and they should also remember the sufferings of apostle Paul (Acts 16:16-40) and have conviction and courage to withstand trials and tribulations.
3. Honesty and Purity: They should renounce the hidden things of dishonesty not only in the eyes of the LORD but also in their fellowship with others (II Corinthians 4:1-2). They should be an example to the believers in word, in behaviour, in charity, in spirit, in faith and in purity (I Timothy 4:12).
4. Gentleness and Love: They desire to be gentle unto all men, apt to teach patiently with unfeigned love (II Timothy 2:24) and to possess the fruit of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23).
5. Blemishless conduct: Giving no offence in anything so that the ministry may not be blamed (II Corinthians 6:3) they should be blameless, upright and alert in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation (Philippians 2:15).
6. Simplicity of speech and unselfishness: They are careful to speak not with enticing words of man's wisdom but demonstrating the wisdom and power of the HOLY SPIRIT (I Corinthians 2:1-5). They shun covetousness (I Timothy 6:10).
7. Humility and consideration for others: They are humble and not want to be a burden for others (Acts 20:33-35).
8. Self-sacrificing: They make themselves examples to others (II Thessalonians 3:9) in their self-sacrificing life.
9. The power of the gospel becomes effectual in all the believers of the fellowship (Ephesians 3:14-19).
10. Victory in the conflict with Satan and wicked people who oppose truth (Philippians 1:28-30).

11. The fulfilment of the promises of the LORD, particularly for the **great promise** mentioned in St. John 14:12-14.
12. The will of the LORD must be done (Acts 21:14) in the lives of the ministers. The will of the LORD must be done in earth, as it is in heaven (St. Matthew 6:10). Prayer is the only means that enables GOD's ministers not only to understand HIS will, purpose and ways but also to act in conformity with them.
13. The parental care and authority of the leader or the principal minister in training others.

### 3.5 HOW IS THE SEMINARY EMBEDDED IN OUR CHURCH ?

Our church ministry is to establish the Full Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST in all its entirety and to train those who are called by GOD to serve and to establish Houses of Prayer and Centres of Worship and to print and publish Gospel Literature and to propagate the True Gospel in its entirety all over the world in obedience to the commandment of our LORD JESUS CHRIST without being entangled in or subjugated under the yoke of the doctrines of other denominations (St. Matthew 28:19-20; St. Mark 16:15-20).

The basic doctrines of our church consist of repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, divine conversion, regeneration, holiness, holy life, spiritual growth, baptism by full immersion in water in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT, sanctification, divine healing, the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, dedication of children to GOD, marriage according to the law of the Holy Bible, the LORD's ministry, etc.

GOD, the FATHER revealed to this world, the great glory that was with HIM through our LORD JESUS CHRIST and therefore the ministers have to serve our LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS church. Their ministry is revealed in preaching the Gospel, healing the sick and in expelling the devils or demons and evil spirits. They are also concerned about the welfare of the others; helping those that have believed the gospel and saved, to be blessed with the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT. They are very particular that they depend completely on GOD and live by faith. They lead them to holiness through the Full Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They are further guided in their walk

towards perfect holiness so that they may make themselves ready for the Second Coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. To achieve this, the ministers continue to advise, intercede, make supplications and offer prayers.

The work given to each minister by GOD is different and specific (I Corinthians 12:5). There are apostolic ministry, prophetic ministry, evangelizing ministry, pastoral ministry and preaching ministry. And our LORD JESUS CHRIST becomes the focal point of the combination of all these aspects of the total ministry. HE is the sole guiding Spirit.

The ministers should be called and anointed by GOD to serve GOD. They should have given up all their assets and properties and whatever they had they should have disowned (St. Luke 14:26-27, 33; 16:13; St. Mark 10:28-30). GOD alone is their inheritance (Deuteronomy 18:1-2).

After entering into the ministry, the ministers will be tested and examined in the Rules and Regulations and Faith Advice of the church. While being tested they will be taught the Regulations of the church and the Workers' Advice and Regulations and the church Regulations and Faith Advice and Doctrines of the church and the Rules of Conduct and the discipline needed to a worker to serve in the ministry. Those, tested and found to be successful will have to live as bachelors and spinsters adopting a celibate lifestyle and leading an austere and simple life. The ministers should be able to do all that they can to uphold and strengthen all Rules and Regulations of the church.

Having given up and rejected all the lusts of the flesh and material attractions of the world, they should seek CHRIST and the welfare of HIS church and HIS ministry, until their death and in their death, whether or not they face trouble or tribulations, famine or nakedness, peril or persecutions, poverty or riches, hunger or abundance, comfort or distress, disease or prosperity and should never be separated or alienated from the church and the ministry and the fellowship of the workers and the workers' group (workers' assemblage) but should stand firm, well-established in the church.

The ministers should live for others and not for themselves. They should live for the church and for the ministry and for the welfare of

the workers in the church. Most importantly, they should live by faith. They should believe that GOD provides all the needs of the church. They should have faith in all these approved doctrines and should endeavour and strive to uphold and strengthen them. Every minister should fulfil his/her duties in respect of other ministers also, in accordance with the abundant grace of GOD.

All the men workers should consider all the women workers as morally upright sisters and all the women workers should in the same way consider the men workers as morally upright brothers and behave accordingly with absolute purity.

All the women workers will be under the charge and care of the mother (sister). They should inform the mother of their needs and have them supplied. The mother should find out the needs of the women workers and meet them. She should very carefully see that the women workers should not mingle with any man.

Unmarried and called to serve the LORD JESUS CHRIST, they should never seek to marry but remain unmarried until death. They are not entitled to marry. Those who have been married, if they have been called by the LORD JESUS CHRIST should live as bachelors and spinsters adopting a celibate lifestyle and leading an austere and simple life.

The gospel of the kingdom will be preached by the ministers as a witness to all the nations (St. Matthew 24:14). So, to preach the gospel, the ministers should have a practical life and not a theoretical life. First of all, they should turn themselves as witnesses of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. For that, they should repent of their sins and they should get forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins and all other spiritual experiences. They should also have a steadfast prayer life.

Again, to do this ministry, they should obtain spiritual gifts including gifts of healing (I Corinthians 12:9) and spiritual fruits and they should always bear spiritual fruits to the people by their good deeds and actions. They should never become stumbling-blocks to others. Their preachings and teachings should be confirmed by their practical lives. Their preachings and teachings should not be theoretical, but practical.

No one can show his/her faith without his/her works (James 2:18). Faith without works is dead (James 2:26). The ministers should have faith that works. Without faith no one can do this ministry. Without faith it is impossible to please GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Hebrews 11:6). So, the ministers should live by faith (Hebrews 10:38). This faith is the practical faith and not the theoretical or the dead faith.

If any minister preaches or teaches that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the divine healer (Exodus 15:26; Psalm 103:3), then he must witness about HIM that he/she has been healed by HIM without using any medicine or without taking any medical treatment. He/she must also witness about HIM that HE is the Only divine Healer from heaven or the Only divine Surgeon or Doctor from heaven.

Further, the ministers should live a holy and sanctified life. Without holiness no man can see the LORD (Hebrews 12:14). If any minister wants to preach or teach about holiness or holy life, then he/she should be a holy one. Without obtaining HIS holiness, he/she should not preach or teach about holiness or holy life. The ministers should have practical holiness and holy life and not theoretical holiness or holy life.

Besides, the ministers should be filled with the love of GOD. Without love, any minister of the LORD is nothing (I Corinthians 13:2). Since our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is LOVE, HIS ministers also should live in the love of GOD (I John 4:8) and preach or teach HIS Gospel.

Again, the ministers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST should be with HIM always. They should always feel HIS presence. Without HIM the ministers can do nothing (St. John 15:5). Without HIM anyone can do nothing. The ministers should always be in the LORD JESUS CHRIST and preach or teach the gospel.

Further, the ministers should understand the need for total submission of heart and soul. They should reach a stage where they do not care for worldly things; they should renounce every worldly comfort for the sake of serving the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

As their fellowship begins with the workers of the ministry, they begin to receive scriptural lessons from the leader or the principal

minister of the church and are dominated by a desire towards knowing the truth. The leader or the principal minister, as a witness, gives the message of GOD, according to the will of GOD. When they begin to understand what the truth is, they begin to apply the truth in their life. This means they aim at total obedience to the LORD JESUS through the guidance of the Word.

Most of those who are called to this ministry do not at the first instance know that they have been called. But by the grace of GOD, they are led by circumstances to enter this ministry. This is GOD's divine doing. Before entering this ministry, some of them have been torn by worldly cares and worries, some others have been experiencing mental agony and still others have lost their peace of mind. They have been compelled to seek guidance from the LORD. When they turn to LORD JESUS, the LORD JESUS takes over. Finally, they will receive the glorious crown of righteousness (II Timothy 4:8) and eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD (I Timothy 6:19).

#### **4. THE MINISTRY OF OUR CHURCH**

The ministers of GOD are the entourage in a triumphal procession for the celebration of CHRIST's victory (II Corinthians 2:14). They are the incense-bearers to diffuse the fragrance of CHRIST (II Corinthians 2:14-15). They are the epistles (letters) written with CHRIST as the content (II Corinthians 3:1-3). They are the mirrors beholding and reflecting the glory of CHRIST in order to be transformed into HIS glorious image from glory to glory (II Corinthians 3:18). They are the earthen vessels containing the CHRIST of glory as the excellent treasure (II Corinthians 4:7). They are always carrying about in their body the dying of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, that the life of JESUS CHRIST also may be manifested in their mortal flesh (II Corinthians 4:10). They walk by faith, not by sight or appearance (II Corinthians 5:7).

**“Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the LORD.”**

Romans 12:11

The ministry of our church is the continuing ministry of the LORD's church of the first century. The experiences of the ministers



of GOD of our church are the same as those of the ministers of the Christian church of the first century. Like the ministers of the first century Christian church, the ministers of our church too are sages. They have given up and abhorred everything. They live as bachelors obtaining spiritual gifts and grace from GOD. They adopt a celibate lifestyle. They are the righteous people; they are the faithful people; they are the truthful people; they are the undefiled people; they are the honourable people; and they are the great people. The ministers of GOD or the servants of GOD of our church have renounced the world and its desires and lusts. They are dead to them. They are like little children. They are without wife and without marriage.

The ministers of GOD of our church follow the example of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who came to the world to set an example of the minister of GOD. As the LORD JESUS CHRIST was a sage with beard, the ministers of our church are also sages with beard (Isaiah 50:6). As the LORD JESUS CHRIST was a bachelor, they are also bachelors. As the LORD JESUS CHRIST has adopted a celibate lifestyle, they are also adopting a celibate lifestyle. Our church ministry of the LORD has been raised as the continuing ministry of the first century Christian church ministry, for these last days, for the glorious works of the LORD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**“Even as the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give HIS life a ransom for many.”**

St. Matthew 20:28

## **5. A PERILOUS MINISTRY—THE EMERGING CHURCH MOVEMENT**

The Emerging Church Movement is a very dangerous and perilous church movement of this present century. It is a bogus church movement. It is one of the worst cults. It is the enemy of truth. It denies the divine authorship of the Holy Bible and it denies the divine claim of the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. It is filled with human reasons, human philosophies and human errors. This movement has no belief in GOD's revelation. But, it has belief in supernatural sources. Homosexuals (gays), lesbians and feminists are in this movement. This

movement does not give any meaning to virtue and humility. This movement celebrates mystery, ignorance, scepticism, atheism, legalism and liberalism. It has no Christian thinking or discernment.

Accepting the Holy Bible as the inspired and inerrant Word of GOD is a fundamental of the Christian faith. But, this movement has no faith at all. So, it has nothing to do with the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD; it has nothing to do with the truth church; it has nothing to do with the real Christianity; it has nothing to do with the HOLY SPIRIT; therefore it has nothing to do with the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **"Live any way you want"** is the fundamental doctrine of the Emerging Church Movement. What a dangerous movement it is!

The Holy Bible confronts every human culture. Every human culture is ungodly. Every human culture is apart from GOD and GOD's Gospel and GOD's salvation. This movement does not confront the ungodly human cultures.

Further, this movement advocates human reasons. But it does not understand the dangers of human reasons. In the name of human reason, millions of people were massacred by communists and by others.

The Emerging Church Movement hates the divine light and it loves the sinful darkness, because its deeds are evil. The divine light is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

*"And this is the condemnation, the light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved."*

St. John 3:19-20

No one should follow this perilous movement. No one should follow this perilous cult. No one should follow this perilous ministry. No one should follow this perilous church movement.

## FOODS, GREETINGS AND FESTIVALS

### 1 . CLEAN AND UNCLEAN FOODS

*“YE SHALL therefore put difference between clean beasts and unclean, and between unclean fowls and clean: and ye shall not make your souls abominable by beast, or by fowl, or by any manner of living thing that creepeth on the ground, which I have separated from you as unclean. And ye shall be holy unto ME: for I the LORD am holy, and have severed (separated) you from other people, that ye should be MINE.”*

Leviticus 20:25-26

As the LORD GOD is holy, HIS people must be holy. They should be holy in their body and in their spirit and in their soul. They should not defile themselves with any manner of unclean creatures. If they eat any unclean creature, then their body will not be holy. If their body is not holy, then their spirit and their soul will not be holy. If they eat any unclean creature, then their body will be defiled. If their body is defiled, then their spirit and their soul will be defiled. Hence, they should not eat any abominable thing. They should avoid every kind of evil. They should test everything, and hold on to the good.

*“Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. Abstain from all appearance of evil.”*

I Thessalonians 5:21-22

*“For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy GOD, and the LORD hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto HIMSELF, above all the nations that are upon the earth. Thou shalt not eat*

*any abominable thing. These are the beasts which ye shall eat: the ox, the sheep, and the goat, the hart, and the roebuck, and the fallow deer, and the wild goat, and the pygarg, and the wild ox, and the chamois."*

Deuteronomy 14:2-5

*"...Your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

## 1.1 9 RESTRICTIONS

There are nine restrictions in the eating of foods. So, everyone should know about these restrictions.

### 1. THE BEASTS, THE CREEPING THINGS, THE BIRDS AND THE FISHES IN THE WATERS THAT ANYONE MAY EAT AND THAT ANYONE MAY NOT EAT

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures clearly says about the foods permitted and forbidden by GOD.

*"...These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. Whatsoever parteth the hoof, and is clovenfooted, and cheweth the cud, among the beasts, that shall ye eat. Nevertheless these shall ye not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the hoof: as the camel, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the coney, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the hare, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be clovenfooted, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you. Of their flesh shall ye not eat, and their carcase shall ye not touch; they are unclean to you. These shall ye eat of all that are in the waters: whatsoever hath fins and scales in the waters, in the seas, and in the rivers, them shall ye eat. And all that have not fins and scales in the seas, and in the rivers, of all that move in the waters, and of any living thing which is in the waters, they shall be an abomination unto you: They shall be even an abomination unto you; ye shall not eat of their flesh, but ye shall have their carcases in abomination. Whatsoever hath no fins nor scales in the waters, that shall be an*

*abomination unto you. And these are they which ye shall have in abomination among the fowls; they shall not be eaten, they are an abomination: the eagle, and the ossifrage, and the ospray, And the vulture, and the kite after his kind; Every raven after his kind; And the owl, and the night hawk, and the cuckow, and the hawk after his kind, And the little owl, and the cormorant, and the great owl, And the swan, and the pelican, and the gier eagle, And the stork, the heron after her kind, and the lapwing, and the bat. All fowls that creep, going upon all four, shall be an abomination unto you. Yet these may ye eat of every flying creeping thing that goeth upon all four, which have legs above their feet, to leap withal upon the earth; Even these of them ye may eat; the locust after his kind, and the bald locust after his kind, and the beetle after his kind, and the grasshopper after his kind. But all other flying creeping things, which have four feet, shall be an abomination unto you. And for these ye shall be unclean: whosoever toucheth the carcase of them shall be unclean until the even. And whosoever beareth aught of the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even. The carcasses of every beast which divideth the hoof, and is not clovenfooted, nor cheweth the cud, are unclean unto you: every one that toucheth them shall be unclean. And whatsoever goeth upon his paws, among all manner of beasts that go on all four, those are unclean unto you: whoso toucheth their carcase shall be unclean until the even. And he that beareth the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even: they are unclean unto you. These also shall be unclean unto you among the creeping things that creep upon the earth; the weasel, and the mouse, and the tortoise after his kind, And the ferret, and the chameleon, and the lizard, and the snail, and the mole. These are unclean to you among all that creep: whosoever doth touch them, when they be dead, shall be unclean until the even."*

Leviticus 11:2-31

*"And every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth shall be an abomination; it shall not be eaten. Whatsoever goeth upon the belly, and whatsoever goeth upon all four, or whatsoever hath more feet among all creeping things that creep upon the earth, them ye shall not eat; for they are an abomination. Ye shall not make yourselves abominable with any creeping thing that creepeth, neither shall ye make yourselves unclean with them, that ye should be defiled thereby. For I am the LORD your GOD:*

*ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth."*

Leviticus 11:41-44

*"This is the law of the beasts, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moveth in the waters, and of every creature that creepeth upon the earth: To make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten."*

Leviticus 11:46-47

Everyone should eat the permitted foods. No one should eat the forbidden foods. Now, the spiritual food (the Word of GOD) is more essential than these permitted foods. The permitted foods will perish. But the spiritual food will endure to everlasting life.

*"Labour not for the meat (food) which perisheth, but for that meat (food) which endureth unto everlasting life, which the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall give unto you: for HIM hath GOD the FATHER sealed."*

St. John 6:27

'GOD the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF'.

It is good for our hearts to be established by grace, not by foods, which are of no profit to those who eat them.

*"...For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with meats (foods), which have not profited them that have been occupied therein."*

Hebrews 13:9

## 2. NO ONE SHOULD EAT THE BLOOD OF ANY MANNER OF FLESH

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures clearly forbids the eating of blood.

*"And whatsoever man there be of the house of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, that eateth any manner of blood; I will even set MY face against that soul that eateth blood, and will cut him off from among his people. For the life of the flesh is in the blood: ... No soul of you shall eat blood, neither shall any stranger that sojourneth among you eat blood. And whatsoever man there be of the children of Israel, or of the strangers*

*that sojourn among you, which hunteth and catcheth any beast or fowl that may be eaten; he shall even pour out the blood thereof, and cover it with dust. For it is the life of all flesh; the blood of it is for the life thereof: therefore I said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the life of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoever eateth it shall be cut off."*

Leviticus 17:10-14

The life of the flesh is in the blood. The blood is the life of all flesh. Its blood sustains its life. One who hunts and catches any animal or bird that may be eaten, he should pour out its blood and cover it with dust. Anyone who eats the blood of any animal or bird will be cut off. Anyone who eats the blood of any beast will be cut off. Hence, all are forbidden to eat the blood of any manner of flesh.

### **3. NO ONE SHOULD EAT ANYTHING THAT DIES OF ITSELF, OR IS TORN BY BEASTS**

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures clearly forbids the eating of anything that dies of itself, or is torn by beasts.

*"That which dieth of itself, or is torn with beasts, he shall not eat to defile himself therewith: I am the LORD."*

Leviticus 22:8

*"And ye shall be holy men unto ME: neither shall ye eat any flesh that is torn of beasts in the field; ye shall cast it to the dogs."*

Exodus 22:31

### **4. THOSE WHO EAT THE FLESH OF PIGS (SWINE), RATS (MICE), ABORTED CHILDREN, AND OTHER ABOMINABLE THINGS WILL BE CONSUMED TOGETHER**

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures clearly forbids the eating of swine, rats and other abominable things.

*"...Eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, saith the LORD."*

Isaiah 66:17

'Be consumed together' means 'come to an end together'.

*"...Which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels; Which say, Stand by thyself, come not near to ME;*

*for I am holier than thou. These are a smoke in MY nose, a fire that burneth all the day. Behold, it is written before ME: I will not keep silence, but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom."*

Isaiah 65:4-6

**Abortion**—the act of causing a pregnancy to end early, in order to prevent the baby from developing and being born alive, is a sin.

**Miscarriage**—the act of giving birth to a baby before it is fully developed and able to survive, is a sin. The intentional ending of another's life is a sin against GOD's commandment.

*"Thou shalt not kill."*

Exodus 20:13

Eating the flesh of the aborted babies is an abominable thing. Eating the flesh of human beings is an abominable thing. Hence no one should eat the flesh of the aborted children. No one should eat the flesh of human beings. Those who eat the flesh of aborted children, and other human beings will be consumed together. Those who eat the flesh of pigs (swine), rats (mice), and other abominable things will be consumed together. The flesh of serpents, lizards, tortoises, turtles, terrapins, crocodiles, crabs, snails, clams, mussels, oysters, etc., are abominable things. Those who eat the flesh of these abominable things will be consumed together.

## 5. GOD'S NAME SHOULD BE HALLOWED BY HIS PEOPLE

The LORD GOD's most holy name should not be dishonoured by the eating of any manner of flesh.

Do not cook a young goat in its mother's milk.

*"...Thou shalt not seethe a kid in his mother's milk."*

Deuteronomy 14:21

Do not kill a cow or a female sheep with her young on the same day for ordinary food consumption (Leviticus 22:28). Do not take the mother bird with her young (or eggs) from the nest (Deuteronomy 22:6-7). In all these things, the main purpose is that our LORD GOD's most holy name should be hallowed by HIS people.



*"...Our FATHER which art in heaven, Hallowed be THY name."*

St. Matthew 6:9

## 6. THE VISION OF PETER—NOT TO CHANGE THE DIETARY LAWS

Cornelius was a Roman centurion. He was in Caesarea. He and all his family were devout and GOD-fearing. He gave generously to those who were in need and prayed to GOD always.

One day at about the ninth hour (the ninth hour is 3 p.m.), he saw a vision. He clearly saw an angel of GOD, who came to him and said,

*"Cornelius."*

Acts 10:3

When he looked at him, he was afraid, and said,

*"What is it, LORD?"*

Acts 10:4

And the angel said to him,

*"Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before GOD. And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter: He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do."*

Acts 10:4-6

When the angel had departed, Cornelius called two of his household servants and one of his devout soldiers who waited on him continually. He told them everything that had happened and sent them to Joppa.

The next day, they were on their journey and while approaching the city it was about the sixth hour (the sixth hour is 12 noon). So, Peter went up upon the housetop to pray. Then he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but as they were preparing the meal, he fell into a trance. And he saw the following vision:

*"And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: Wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat."*

*But Peter said, Not so, LORD; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean. And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What GOD hath cleansed, that call not thou common. This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven."*

Acts 10:11-16

Spiritual meaning of **'kill'** is 'to offer or sacrifice—to present people a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to GOD' (Romans 12:1). Spiritual meaning of **'eat'** is 'to associate with and make fellowship with people' (Acts 10:28).

Now while Peter was thinking about what this vision, which he had seen should mean, the men who were sent by Cornelius had enquired about Simon's house, and stood before the gate. They called out; asking whether Simon who was surnamed Peter was staying there.

*"While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee. Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them. Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come? And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth GOD, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from GOD by an holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee."*

Acts 10:19-22

Then Peter invited them into the house to be his guests. And the next day Peter went away with them, and six brethren from Joppa accompanied him. And the next day they entered into Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them and had called together his kinsmen and close friends.

As Peter entered into the house, Cornelius met him, fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter took him up and said,

*"Stand up; I myself also am a man."*

Acts 10:26

Talking with him, Peter went in, and found a large gathering of people. And Peter said to them,

*"Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but GOD hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean. Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me?"*

Acts 10:28-29

Hence, anyone can clearly understand that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has never shown this vision to Peter to change the Old Testament dietary laws. So, no one should change the Old Testament dietary laws.

#### **7. WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THE VISION OF PETER?—GOD HAS NEVER CHANGED THE DIETARY LAWS**

In the vision of Peter, there came a voice to him, "Rise, Peter; kill and eat". But Peter said, "Not so, LORD; for I have never eaten anything that is common or unclean". And the voice spoke to him again the second time, "What GOD hath cleansed, that call not thou common". Now, Peter himself has explained the meaning of this vision to Cornelius and his kinsmen and his close friends as follows:

*"Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but GOD hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean."*

Acts 10:28

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF has shown this vision to Peter that he should not call any man impure or unclean; that he should not call particularly the Gentiles impure or unclean. And HE has not shown this vision to Peter that he should kill and eat all kinds of four-footed animals, and wild animals, and creeping things of the earth, and all kinds of birds of the air, both clean and unclean.

No one should eat all kinds of unclean four-footed animals and wild animals, and all kinds of creeping things of the earth, and all kinds of unclean birds of the air. The LORD GOD has clearly differentiated the clean and unclean food. The LORD GOD has clearly differentiated the clean and unclean creatures. The LORD GOD has

clearly commanded not to eat the unclean creatures. The LORD GOD has not cleansed all creatures for food.

By the vision of Peter, the LORD GOD has never changed the Old Testament dietary laws. This vision of Peter clearly shows that all people in the world are fit for salvation. See Acts 10:28. **The vision of Peter clearly reveals that GOD welcomes all the nations of the world and extends HIS magnificent salvation plan to them.**

#### 8. WHAT IS MEANT BY ABSTAINING FROM FOODS ?

*"...And commanding to abstain from meats, which GOD hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. For every creature of GOD is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving; For it is sanctified by the Word of GOD and prayer."*

I Timothy 4:3-5

'Abstain from meats' means 'abstain from clean foods'. 'For every creature of GOD is good, and nothing to be refused' means 'For every clean creature of GOD is good for eating'.

In this connection, everyone should clearly understand that Paul, the minister of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, has not commanded anything against the commandments of our LORD GOD and he has never commanded anything against the commandments of our LORD GOD and he has never commanded anything against the will of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Now, anyone can clearly understand that everyone should abstain from all abominable foods; everyone should abstain from all abominable creatures, abominable to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; everyone should abstain from all creatures that may not be eaten, as commanded by our LORD GOD.

Hence, all abominable foods, abominable to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are not fit for men. All abominable foods, abominable to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are not sanctified by the Word of GOD; they are not sanctified by prayer; they are not sanctified by giving of thanks (thanksgiving). This means that all abominable foods are not reserved for consumption by anyone; all abominable creatures are not reserved for consumption by anyone.

No one should be evil spoken of for the food over which he/she gives thanks. Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of GOD. Give no offence, either to the Jews or the Gentiles or the church of GOD.

*"For if I by grace (with thanks) be a partaker (partake), why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of GOD. Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of GOD."*

I Corinthians 10:30-32

All abominable foods, abominable to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are not sanctified by thanksgiving. For example:

*"And every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth shall be an abomination; it shall not be eaten. Whatsoever goeth upon the belly, and whatsoever goeth upon all four, or whatsoever hath more feet among all creeping things that creep upon the earth, them ye shall not eat; for they are an abomination."*

Leviticus 11:41-42

Since the serpent or the snake or the viper moves on its belly, it should not be eaten, according to the commandment of our LORD GOD. Again, the serpent is the cursed above all the cattle and above all the beasts of the field. Hence, the serpent, the most cursed one should not be eaten by anyone.

*"And the LORD GOD said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life."*

Genesis 3:14

Further, it is not wise for anyone to eat the flesh of the serpent; the most cursed one by thanksgiving, or to eat the venom of the serpent by thanksgiving, as against the commandment of our LORD GOD. It is not wise for anyone to think that the flesh of the serpent or the venom of the serpent will be sanctified by thanksgiving, as against the commandment of our LORD GOD. If anyone eats the venom of the serpent by thanksgiving, as against the commandment of the LORD GOD wantonly, he will certainly die.

No one should defile his body or his spirit or his soul, by eating abominable creatures, abominable to our most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

**9. DO NOT DESTROY THE WORKS OF GOD FOR THE SAKE OF FOOD AND DRINK**

Do not destroy your brother by your eating or by your drinking, for whom CHRIST died.

*"...Destroy not him with thy meat (food), for whom CHRIST died."*

Romans 14:15

*"It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak."*

Romans 14:21

*"Wherefore, if meat (food) make my brother to offend (stumble), I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend."*

I Corinthians 8:13

Do not destroy the great and wonderful works of GOD for the sake of food and drink.

*"For meat (food) destroy not the work of GOD. ..."*

Romans 14:20

Do not be a stumbling-block to your brother by your eating in the idol's temple. By wounding your brother's weak conscience, you sin against CHRIST.

*"But meat (food) commendeth us not (does not commend us) to GOD: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse. But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak. For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit (eating) at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols; And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom CHRIST died? But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 8:8-12

No one should eat the flesh of a pig (pork) or porkpie or bacon or gammon or ham. No one should eat the flesh of a rat or mouse and other abominable things. No one should eat the flesh of any unclean creature.

Appetite for drinking wine (an alcoholic drink made from grapes or other fruit) or any other alcoholic drink leads many people to disobey the dietary laws of the LORD GOD.

*"Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise."*

Proverbs 20:1

*"Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart."*

Hosea 4:11

*"And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess (which leads to debauchery); but be filled with the Spirit."*

Ephesians 5:18

Appetite for riotous flesh eating leads many people to disobey the dietary laws of the LORD GOD (Proverbs 23:2, 20).

Strict Jewish households still observe all food rules (Kashrut) mentioned in Leviticus 11. Among those banned by GOD, carnivorous animals transmit infection rapidly; swines or porks or pigs are hosts to various parasites; vermin (rats, foxes, moles and rabbits) and predatory birds are disease-carriers; and shell-fish causes food-poisoning and enteritis. What a dangerous thing it is!

## **2. GREETINGS OR PRAISING**

*"... GIVE GOD THE PRAISE: ..."*

St. John 9:24

Now, from this very verse itself, anyone can clearly understand the following secret:

*"DO NOT GIVE MEN THE PRAISE."*

Thus, giving praise (Praise the LORD) to men is sin. Now, there is no evidence in the Holy Bible, to give praise (Praise the LORD) to any man.

*"I will praise the name of GOD with a song, and will magnify*

*HIM with thanksgiving."*

Psalm 69:30

*"Praise ye the LORD. Praise GOD in HIS sanctuary; praise HIM in the firmament of HIS power. Praise HIM for HIS mighty acts: praise HIM according to HIS excellent greatness. Praise HIM with the sound of the trumpet: praise HIM with the psaltery and harp. Praise HIM with the timbrel and dance: praise HIM with stringed instruments and organs. Praise HIM upon the loud cymbals: praise HIM upon the high sounding cymbals. Let every thing that hath breath praise the LORD. Praise ye the LORD."*

Psalm 150

## 2.1 13 POINTS ABOUT PRAISES

### 1. PRAISE IS A SACRIFICIAL THANK-OFFERING OR THANKSGIVING

***"Whoso offereth praise glorifieth ME: ..."***

Psalm 50:23

*"I will offer to THEE the sacrifice of thanksgiving, and will call upon the name of the LORD."*

Psalm 116:17

Praise is a glorious thank-offering to be given to the LORD GOD only. Praise is a sacrificial offering to be given to the LORD GOD only. Praise is a sacrificial thank-offering or a sacrificial thanksgiving to be given to the LORD GOD only. He who sacrifices thank-offerings glorifies GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He who sacrifices thanksgivings glorifies GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Now, the praise, the sacrificial thank-offering or the sacrificial thanksgiving to be given to the LORD GOD, should not be given to any man. Thus, giving praise, the sacrificial thank-offering or the sacrificial thanksgiving to men is sin. Giving praise, the sacrificial thank-offering or the sacrificial thanksgiving to men is a great sin.

If anyone gives this sacrificial thank-offering or this sacrificial thanksgiving, which is to be given to the LORD GOD to any man, he makes GOD and man equal. Making GOD and man equal is a great sin; making GOD and man equal is a terrible sin, liable for judgment and hell.



*"To whom then will ye liken ME, or shall I be equal? saith the Holy One."*

Isaiah 40:25

Thus, praise, the sacrificial thank-offering or the sacrificial thanksgiving should not be given to any man. Again, Praise the LORD, the sacrificial thank-offering to the LORD GOD or the sacrificial thanksgiving to the LORD GOD should not be given to any man.

**2. THE LORD GOD WILL NOT GIVE HIS MOST HOLY NAME AND HIS PERFECT GLORY TO ANOTHER**

The LORD GOD's most holy name and HIS perfect glory should not be polluted or defamed. If praise, the sacrificial thank-offering which is to be given to the LORD GOD, is given to any man, then the LORD GOD's most holy name and HIS perfect glory will be polluted or defamed. But, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will not give HIS most holy name and HIS perfect glory to another, to be polluted or defamed.

*"...For how should MY name be polluted? and I will not give MY glory unto another."*

Isaiah 48:11

*"I am the LORD: that is MY name: and MY glory will I not give to another, neither MY praise to graven images."*

Isaiah 42:8

**3. PRAISES, THE SACRIFICES OF PRAISES TO THE LORD GOD, ARE THE CALVES OF OUR LIPS**

*"...So will we render the calves of our lips."*

Hosea 14:2

The lips produce praises to the LORD GOD. Everyone should use his lips to give praises to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

In the Old Testament period, the young calves without blemish or the young bulls without blemish were sacrificed to the LORD GOD. Now, the praises are the calves of the lips without blemish; the praises are the sacrifices of the calves of the lips without blemish; the praises are the glorious sacrifices of the calves of our lips without blemish.

The praises, the glorious sacrifices of the calves of our lips, to be given to the LORD GOD, should not be given to men. Thus, giving

praise, the glorious sacrifice of the calf of our lips to men is a great sin. Giving praise (Praise the LORD) to men by our lips, the glorious sacrifice of the calf of our lips is a great sin against GOD. The sacrifices of praises to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the calves of our lips without blemish. The glorious sacrifices of praises to be given to LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should not be given to any man. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**4. PRAISES, THE SACRIFICES OF PRAISES TO THE LORD GOD, ARE THE FIRST-FRUITS OF OUR LIPS**

*"By HIM therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to GOD continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to HIS name."*

Hebrews 13:15

The praises, the glorious sacrifices of the first-fruits of the lips, to be given to the LORD GOD, should not be given to men. Giving praise, the glorious sacrifice of the first-fruit of the lips to men is a great sin; giving praise (Praise the LORD) to men by the lips, the glorious sacrifice of the first-fruit of the lips is a great sin against GOD. The sacrifices of praises to the LORD GOD are the first-fruits of our lips. These glorious sacrifices to be given to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should not be given to any man. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**5. PRAISE IS A NEW SONG OF OUR MOUTH, TO PRAISE OUR LORD GOD ONLY**

*"And HE hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our GOD: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the LORD."*

Psalms 40:3

Praise (Praise the LORD) is a new song of our mouth. Praise (Praise the LORD) is a new song, put by the LORD GOD in our mouth, to praise our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Many will see this new song of praise; many will fear to hear this new song of praise; and many will put their trust in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST by this new song of praise.

Those who are saved from their sins by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the new men. Those who receive salvation from sins are the new men. These new men are renewed in the spirit of their mind

and are created in true righteousness and holiness by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The new man is a man in CHRIST and he is a new creature. All old things or all sins are passed away from him. All new things or all goodness and righteousness and truth, the fruit of the Spirit are in him.

*“And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after GOD is created in righteousness and true holiness.”*

Ephesians 4:23-24

*“Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.”*

II Corinthians 5:17

Praise is a new song of the new men in CHRIST. Praise is a new song of the saved people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise is a new song in the mouth of the new men in CHRIST. Praise is a new song of our mouth, to praise the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST only.

#### 6. PRAISE IS A GLORIOUS WORD OF THANKSGIVING TO OUR LORD GOD ONLY

*“Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless HIS holy name. Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all HIS benefits.”*

Psalms 103:1-2

‘Bless the LORD’ means ‘Praise the LORD’.

*“Thanks be unto GOD for HIS unspeakable gift.”*

II Corinthians 9:15

Everyone should praise and thank the LORD GOD, not only with his mouth, but also with his whole heart and soul. Everyone should praise and thank the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in everything and for all things. Giving praises (thanks) to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in everything with continued prayers is the will of GOD concerning us. Praise is a glorious word of thanksgiving to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST only.

*“Pray without ceasing. In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of GOD in CHRIST JESUS concerning you.”*

I Thessalonians 5:17-18

*"Giving thanks always for all things unto GOD and the FATHER in the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

Ephesians 5:20

**7. IT IS A GREAT SIN, IF PRAISE WHICH IS OF THE LORD GOD, IS GIVEN TO MEN**

*"...Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and unto GOD the things which be GOD's."*

St. Luke 20:25

The praise is the thing, which is of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Hence, it should not be given to any man. If praise, the thing which is of the LORD GOD is given to men, then it is a great sin against GOD; it is a great sin liable for terrible judgment and hell.

Before his fall, Lucifer (Satan), the devil was an angel in the kingdom of GOD. He wished in his heart, for the things which are of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. He wished in his heart, for the praises which are of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Therefore, he was cast out into the earth, and his angels (his followers) were cast out with him. Hence, Satan and his angels became cursed and they were hurled to the earth.

*"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of GOD: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit."*

Isaiah 14:12-15

Thus, giving praises to men and writing praises to men are the things, which are against our LORD GOD. These are great sins against our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST liable for terrible judgment and hell.

**8. THERE IS NO EVIDENCE IN THE HOLY BIBLE ABOUT GIVING PRAISE (PRAISE THE LORD) TO MEN**

There is no evidence in the Holy Bible to support giving praise (Praise the LORD) to any man. No one in the Holy Bible has given praise (Praise the LORD) to any man. No one in the Holy Bible has

accepted praise (Praise the LORD) from anybody else. No saint in the Holy Bible has given praise (Praise the LORD) to any man. No saint in the Holy Bible has accepted praise (Praise the LORD) from anybody else. No king in the Holy Bible has given praise (Praise the LORD) to any man. No king in the Holy Bible has accepted praise (Praise the LORD) from anybody else. No prophet of the LORD GOD or no servant of the LORD GOD in the Holy Bible has given praise (Praise the LORD) to any man. No prophet of the LORD GOD or no servant of the LORD GOD in the Holy Bible has accepted praise (Praise the LORD) from anybody else.

Abraham, the father of all believers, stood up and bowed himself to the people of the land. He did not say praise or he did not say Praise the LORD to the people of the land. He did not accept praise or he did not accept Praise the LORD from anybody else.

*"And Abraham stood up, and bowed himself to the people of the land, even to the children of Heth."*

Genesis 23:7

Saul, the king of the Israelites went out to meet Samuel, the prophet of the LORD GOD and saluted (greeted) him. Saul, the king did not say praise or did not say Praise the LORD to Samuel, the prophet; and Samuel, the prophet did not say praise or did not say Praise the LORD to Saul, the king. Saul, the king did not accept praise (Praise the LORD) from anybody else; and Samuel, the prophet did not accept praise (Praise the LORD) from anybody else.

*"...Behold, Samuel came; and Saul went out to meet him, that he might salute him."*

I Samuel 13:10

## 9. THOSE WHO THOUGHT JESUS CHRIST WAS JOHN THE BAPTIST OR ELIAS (ELIJAH) OR ONE OF THE PROPHETS SALUTED HIM

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save sinners. Those who believed JESUS CHRIST was the LORD GOD, had given praise and thanks to HIM. But those who thought JESUS CHRIST as John the Baptist or as Elias (Elijah) or as one of the prophets, saluted or greeted HIM.

*"And JESUS went out, and HIS disciples, into the towns of Caesarea*

*Philippi: and by the way HE asked HIS disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am? And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias; and others, One of the prophets. And HE saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto HIM, THOU art the CHRIST."*

St. Mark 8:27-29

*"And straightway all the people, when they beheld HIM, were greatly amazed, and running to HIM saluted HIM."*

St. Mark 9:15

*"And when HE was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise GOD with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen."*

St. Luke 19:37

*"And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified GOD, And fell down on his face at HIS feet, giving HIM thanks: and he was a Samaritan."*

St. Luke 17:15-16

#### **10. WRONG INTERPRETATION BY SOME PEOPLE, ABOUT GIVING PRAISE (PRAISE THE LORD) TO MEN**

Some people say that when they say praise (Praise the LORD) to a person or persons and when they give praise (Praise the LORD) to a person or persons, their word of praise will go up straightaway to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in heaven and their action of praise will go straightaway to the respective person or persons. This is a completely wrong, absurd and false statement.

For example: when a man goes to a court to present before a judge, he says the word of salute by his mouth and gives his action of salute by his hands and head. Then, his word of salute and his action of salute will not go in two directions or in two ways. But his word of salute and his action of salute will go in only one direction and in only one way, to only one person. A number of people do not understand this very simple fact. What a pitiable thing it is! What a sorrowful thing it is!

Now, when a man while saying Praise the LORD to another man, he admits that another man is "the LORD". The LORD is the LORD

GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The LORD is the Most High GOD. Declaring a man as "the LORD" is a great sin, liable for terrible judgment and hell.

Again, when two persons while saying Praise the LORD to each other, they regard each other as "the LORD". The LORD is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Hence, declaring each other as "the LORD" is a great sin, liable for terrible judgment and hell. Many people do not have any idea about this great sin. What a painful thing it is!

When two persons while saying Praise the LORD to each other or giving Praise the LORD to each other, they declare themselves as 'two LORDS'. What an absurd thing it is! Now, there is ONLY ONE LORD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and we have ONLY ONE LORD, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 4:5-6). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, Genesis 14:18-20 clearly reveals the fact that Melchizedek, the priest of the Most High GOD blessed Abraham and he did not give praise (Praise the LORD) to Abraham. But some untaught and unstable preachers (heretics) twist these verses to their own destruction (II Peter 3:16).

**11. THE CHRISTIANS OF THE FIRST CENTURY CHRISTIAN CHURCH DID NOT SAY OR GIVE OR WRITE PRAISE (PRAISE THE LORD) TO ONE ANOTHER, BUT THEY SALUTED OR GREETED ONE ANOTHER**

GOD's ministers or the servants of GOD and the believers of the first century Christian church, did not say praise (Praise the LORD), or did not give praise (Praise the LORD), or did not write praise (Praise the LORD) to one another. They saluted one another; they said "I salute you" to one another; they gave salutation to one another; they wrote salutation to one another; they greeted one another; they said greetings to one another; they gave greetings to one another; and they wrote greetings to one another. Salutation means greeting (Colossians 4:18). **I greet (salute) someone with my palms joined together in front of the chest. This is the Indian greeting (salutation). This is the best devotional and edifying greeting (salutation).**

*"Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints.*

*They of Italy salute you."*

Hebrews 13:24

*"Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in CHRIST JESUS: Likewise greet the church that is in their house. ..."*

Romans 16:3, 5

*"Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are in the LORD. Salute Rufus chosen in the LORD, and his mother and mine."*

Romans 16:11, 13

*"...The churches of CHRIST salute you."*

Romans 16:16

*"The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand."*

I Corinthians 16:21

*"All the saints salute you."*

II Corinthians 13:13

## 12. WHAT IS MEANT BY AN HOLY KISS OR A KISS OF CHARITY ?

*"Salute one another with an holy kiss. ..."*

Romans 16:16

*"Greet one another with an holy kiss."*

II Corinthians 13:12

*"Greet all the brethren with an holy kiss."*

I Thessalonians 5:26

*"Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. ..."*

I Peter 5:14

'Charity' means 'godly love and godly friendship and godly holiness'. 'A kiss of charity' means 'a kiss of godly love and godly friendship and godly holiness'. Now, kiss is a symbol of friendship, love and affection. 'Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity' means 'salute you one another with godly friendship and godly love and godly holiness'. 'Salute one another with an holy kiss' means 'salute one another with godly friendship and godly love and godly holiness'.

Now, everyone should be holy and without blame before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in love (Ephesians 1:4). Without holiness, no man will see the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Hebrews 12:14).



An unholy love and an unholy friendship and an unholy salutation and an unholy greeting will lead anyone towards the wrath of GOD and towards the terrible judgment and towards the horrible hell.

These holy salutations or holy greetings were written and sent from some far off countries to some far off countries and from some far off places to some far off places. These godly salutations or godly greetings were written and sent from some far off countries to some far off countries and from some far off places to some far off places.

Now, these holy and godly salutations or greetings are changed into unholy and ungodly salutations or greetings; these spiritual salutations or spiritual greetings are changed into fleshly salutations or fleshly greetings. Spiritual things are changed into fleshly things; holy things are changed into unholy things; godly things are changed into ungodly things; holy and godly friendship is changed into unholy and ungodly friendship; and holy and godly love is changed into unholy and ungodly love. What a dangerous thing it is!

*"Kiss the SON, lest HE be angry, and ye perish from the way, when HIS wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in HIM."*

Psalm 2:12

'Kiss the SON' means 'Kiss the SON OF GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST'.

How will you meet the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to kiss HIM? Where will you meet the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to kiss HIM? 'Kiss the LORD' means 'Love the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST'. 'Kiss the LORD' means 'Being in friendship with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST'. 'Kiss the LORD' means 'Be affectionate with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST'. Now, in keeping HIS commandments, the love of GOD is revealed.

*"For this is the love of GOD, that we keep HIS commandments: and HIS commandments are not grievous."*

I John 5:3

*"He that loveth not knoweth not GOD; for GOD is love."*

I John 4:8

### 13. WHO SHOULD NOT BE SALUTED OR GREETED ?

*" Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of CHRIST, hath not GOD. He that abideth in the doctrine of CHRIST, he hath both the FATHER and the SON. If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid (greet) him GOD speed: For he that biddeth (greet) him GOD speed is partaker of his evil deeds."*

II John 9-11

If anyone comes to you and does not bring this glorious doctrine of GOD, you should not receive him into your house or greet him. Anyone who greets or salutes him is a partaker of his evil deeds; anyone who greets him is a partaker of his sins and transgressions; anyone who greets him shares in his evil deeds; anyone who greets him shares in his sins and transgressions. By greeting such a sinful man, no one should sin against GOD. Salute or greet the man who brings this glorious doctrine of GOD and receive the man into the house who brings this glorious doctrine of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 2.2 THE REVELATION REGARDING PRAISE (PRAISE THE LORD)

"Praise (Praise the LORD) does not belong to man, but belongs to GOD" is the glorious revelation to Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) of our church. This revelation is correctly established by the Word of GOD, the Word of truth. This revelation is correctly established by the Holy Bible of the LORD.

Thus, we never say praise or Praise the LORD to any man; we say salutations or greetings to every man. We never give praise or Praise the LORD to any man; we give salutations or greetings to every man. We never give praise or Praise the LORD to any man by writing; we write salutations or greetings in the name of LORD JESUS CHRIST to every man. We praise, thank, honour, exalt, and glorify the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. We continue in prayer and watch in prayer with praise and thanksgiving, for the abundant grace of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving."*

Colossians 4:2

*“For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound (abound) to the glory of GOD.”*

II Corinthians 4:15

Hence, everyone should clearly know the truth about this praise or Praise the LORD, the glorious sacrificial thank-offering or the glorious sacrificial thanksgiving and accept the truth and receive the abundant blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**“I will praise THEE, O LORD, with my whole heart; I will shew forth all THY marvellous works.”**

Psalm 9:1

### **3 . CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS**

*“... WE MUST HOLD A FEAST UNTO THE LORD.”*

Exodus 10:9

Now, this verse itself reveals that everyone should hold a feast (festival) unto the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; everyone should celebrate Christian religious festivals to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*“Let no man therefore judge (accuse) you ... in respect of an holyday (Christian festival day), ...”*

Colossians 2:16

Therefore do not let anyone judge you with regard to a Christian religious festival. Do not let anyone accuse you with regard to the Christian religious festivals. No one has any power or right to find fault with these Christian religious festival celebrations of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Some people have been wrongly thinking that the celebration of Christian religious festivals is against the law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They do not know which is godly and which is ungodly; they do not know which is godliness and which is ungodliness; they do not know which is holy and which is unholy; they do not know which is good and which is bad; they do not know which will glorify GOD and which will not glorify GOD; they do not know which things the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST likes and which things HE dislikes; they do not know which is magnificent to GOD and which is not magnificent

to GOD; they do not know which will give honour to GOD and which will give dishonour to GOD; they do not know which is useful to the soul and which is not useful to the soul; they do not know which will get the blessings of GOD and which will not get the blessings of GOD; they do not know which is the blessed and which is the cursed; they do not know which will be helpful to enter into the kingdom of GOD and which will not be helpful to enter into the kingdom of GOD; they do not know which will save them from judgment and hell and which will not save them from judgment and hell; they do not know which will give happiness to the soul and which will not give happiness to the soul; and they do not know which will cause eternal happiness in heaven and which will not cause eternal happiness in heaven.

Further, they do not understand the importance of the glorious Christian religious festivals and the blessings of the glorious Christian religious festival celebrations; and they do not understand the curses in despising the glorious Christian religious festivals and the glorious Christian religious festival celebrations. What a pitiable thing it is!

### 3.1 19 POINTS ABOUT FESTIVALS

#### 1. OUTWARD ADORNING OR DECORATING AND INWARD ADORNING

Whatever be the adorning or decorating or beautifying it should be to the glory of GOD.

*“Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in GOD, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.”*

I Peter 3:3-5

*“In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.”*

I Timothy 2:9-10

Adorning our outward man or adorning our body of dust outwardly by ornaments of gold, silver, pearls, etc., and by costly dresses, fine dresses, fine robes, dresses of a prostitute and by make-ups, cosmetics is the outward adorning or corruptible adorning or useless adorning. This outward adorning is of no value in the sight of GOD.

Adorning our inward man or the soul with a meek and quiet spirit and with love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, temperance, righteousness, holiness and truth is the inward adorning or incorruptible adorning or useful adorning. This inward adorning is of great importance in the sight of our LORD. This is the best adorning in the sight of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST hates the outward adorning by ornaments. The great wrath of GOD will come upon those who are adorned with ornaments. Our LORD GOD has warned the people of Israel through Moses, to put off their ornaments. So, they stripped off their ornaments at mount Horeb.

*“For the LORD had said unto Moses, Say unto the children of Israel, Ye are a stiffnecked people: I will come up into the midst of thee in a moment, and consume thee: therefore now put off thy ornaments from thee, that I may know what to do unto thee. And the children of Israel stripped themselves of their ornaments by the mount Horeb.”*

Exodus 33:5-6

## 2. THE DECORATION OF THE HOUSE OF THE LORD (THE HOUSE OF PRAYER) IS THE GLORY TO GOD IN THE HIGHEST

*“Even them will I bring to MY holy mountain, and make them joyful in MY house of prayer: ... for MINE house shall be called an house of prayer for all people.”*

Isaiah 56:7

The house of prayer is the house of the LORD. The house of prayer is the house of GOD. The house of prayer is the house of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is HIS holy house. The house of prayer is the palace of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is HIS chosen and sanctified house. The house of prayer is HIS holy dwelling place and HIS holy mountain. The

house of prayer is the house bearing HIS most holy name. The house of prayer is the house of the LORD filled with the glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is the house where HIS eyes and HIS heart will be perpetually, to hear the prayers of HIS people and to forgive and heal HIS people. The house of prayer is the house of joy to HIS people. See I Chronicles 29:1; II Chronicles 7:14-16; Habakkuk 2:20.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONLY TRUE GOD is in heaven, the kingdom of heaven. The kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD is the eternal house of GOD, not made with hands. It is most beautifully decorated with gold, pearls, costly stones, etc. What a wonderful and beautiful heaven it is! Heaven is the most beautifully and most wonderfully decorated house of GOD. It is prepared for HIS people from the foundation of the world.

*"...We have a building of GOD, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."*

II Corinthians 5:1

Now, the house of prayer is also HIS holy dwelling house. Since, the eternal house of GOD (the kingdom of GOD) is most beautifully and most wonderfully decorated, HIS house of prayer should also be beautifully and wonderfully decorated. Then it will honour the name of the LORD GOD; and it will glorify the name of the LORD GOD. It will be very useful to our whole spirit and soul and body; and it will be a great blessing to our whole spirit and soul and body. It will give happiness to the soul; it will give happiness to the spirit; and it will give happiness to the body. It will be very helpful for all to know the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; particularly it will be very helpful for the Gentiles to know the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD, the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Thus, decorating the house of prayer, the house of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is a blessing to all.

Again, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST desires the decoration of HIS house of prayer. The most reliable evidence for this is that HE has constructed HIS first holy house at Jerusalem by the king Solomon. The house of the LORD or the house of GOD has been

most beautifully and most wonderfully constructed and decorated by Solomon. No other building in the world has been constructed or decorated like this by anyone. No other building in the world has been constructed or decorated like this in any country or in any place. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! See I Kings 6; I Chronicles 29:1-17; II Chronicles 1:15; 2; 3; 4; 5:1.

Further, in the last days the house of the LORD, the house of prayer will be constructed and decorated most beautifully and most wonderfully on the top of the mountain at Jerusalem to the glory of GOD in the highest; it will be raised above the hills, and people will flow into it; and many nations will go there. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the LORD shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the GOD of Jacob; and HE will teach us of HIS ways, and we will walk in HIS paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the Word of the LORD from Jerusalem.”*

Micah 4:1-2

Thus, the decoration of the house of the LORD or the house of GOD is not a sin; the decoration of the house of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is not a sin; the decoration of HIS house of prayer is not a sin. The decoration of the house of the LORD brings more and more glory, more and more honour, more and more majesty, more and more magnificence, more and more thanks and more and more praises to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Hence, the decoration of the house of the LORD or the house of GOD or the house of prayer is the glory to GOD in the highest. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**3. EVERYONE MUST CELEBRATE THE FESTIVALS OF THE LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (THE CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS) TO THE GLORY OF THE LORD**

**“...We must hold a feast unto the LORD.”**

Exodus 10:9

From this anyone can understand that everyone must celebrate festivals to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Everyone must celebrate

the Christian religious festivals to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; and everyone must celebrate the festivals of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Christian religious festivals to the LORD JESUS CHRIST. No one should celebrate any non-Christian festival and everyone should celebrate every Christian festival to the glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"...Ye shall have an holy convocation (a sacred assembly); ye shall do no servile (regular) work, and ye shall keep a feast unto the LORD ..."*

Numbers 29:12

When celebrating our LORD's festivals, we must hold holy convocations or sacred assemblies with the people of the LORD and we should not do our regular work.

*"And thou shalt keep the feast of weeks unto the LORD thy GOD with a tribute of a freewill offering of thine hand, which thou shalt give unto the LORD thy GOD, according as the LORD thy GOD hath blessed thee: And thou shalt rejoice before the LORD thy GOD, thou, and thy son, and thy daughter, and thy manservant, and thy maidservant, and the Levite that is within thy gates, and the stranger, and the fatherless, and the widow, that are among you, in the place which the LORD thy GOD hath chosen to place HIS name there. ... and thou shalt observe and do these statutes. Seven days shalt thou keep a solemn feast unto the LORD thy GOD in the place which the LORD shall choose: because the LORD thy GOD shall bless thee in all thine increase, and in all the works of thine hands, therefore thou shalt surely rejoice. Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the LORD thy GOD which HE hath given thee."*

Deuteronomy 16:10-12, 15, 17

And when celebrating our LORD's festivals, we should rejoice before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST with our fathers and mothers, with our grandfathers and grandmothers, with our sons and daughters, with our brothers and sisters, with our men-servants and maidservants, with our GOD's servants or GOD's ministers, and with the aliens (the strangers), the fatherless, the motherless, the orphans and the widows living among us.



Everyone should follow carefully these statutes regarding festivals of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. We must keep solemn feasts or festivals to the LORD our GOD. We must be joyful at these feasts or festivals of our LORD GOD. We should rejoice in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for all HIS blessings in all the work of our hands; and we should give the offerings to the LORD our GOD, in proportion to the way the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has blessed us.

*“Sing unto the LORD, O ye saints of HIS, and give thanks at the remembrance of HIS holiness.”*

Psalm 30:4

Again, when celebrating our LORD's festivals we must worship the LORD; we must pray to the LORD; we must hear the Words of the LORD; we must sing to the LORD; and we must give praises and thanks to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in remembrance of HIS holiness, HIS righteousness, etc.

Now, festivals are celebrated to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for revealing HIS great glory, HIS great blessings, HIS great honour, HIS great highness, HIS great praise, HIS great might, HIS great majesty, HIS great authority, HIS great reign, HIS great strength, HIS great holiness, HIS great righteousness, HIS great wisdom, HIS great knowledge, HIS great understanding, HIS great power, HIS great salvation, HIS great redemption, HIS great wonderfulness, HIS great infinitude, HIS great oneness, HIS great self-existence, HIS great immortality, HIS great immutability, HIS great consistency, HIS great omnipotence, HIS great omniscience, HIS everlasting nature, HIS perfect intellect, HIS perfect will, etc.

Festivals of the LORD are celebrated to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to rejoice in the LORD greatly, to be joyful and happy in the LORD greatly, and to be cheerful, merry and lively in the LORD greatly. Festivals of the LORD, the Christian festivals are celebrated to the LORD to the glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Let no man therefore judge you ... in respect of an holyday (Christian festival day), ...”*

Colossians 2:16

From this anyone can understand that no man has the right to judge anyone in respect of the Christian festival days. No one has the right to accuse anyone in respect of the Christian festival days. No man has the right to judge anyone regarding Christian religious calendar observations. No one has the right to accuse anyone regarding Christian religious calendar observations. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 4. IMPORTANT CHRISTIAN RELIGIOUS FESTIVALS

The important Christian religious festivals are the **Christmas** festival, the **Easter** festival, the **Pentecostal** festival, the **New Year Day** festival, the festival of **Dedication** of the **House** of the **LORD** or the **House of Prayer**, and The **LORD's Supper** festival (the New Testament feast of **Passover**) or the **Holy Communion**.

#### 5. THE CHRISTMAS FESTIVAL BLESSINGS

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save sinners. The most glorious birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the most important and most significant event in the implementation of our LORD's magnificent plan of salvation since it confirms and reassures the hope that anyone who believes in HIM can obtain forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, redemption from sins, holiness, etc., and enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

The **Christmas festival is celebrated to remember the most glorious birth of the LORD JESUS CHRIST**. As a seed of a woman (namely Virgin Mary), HE was born in this world. HE is the Only Saviour of the world; HE is the Only Redeemer of the world; HE is the Forgiver of all sins; HE is the ONE GOD; HE is the ONLY GOD; HE is the ONLY TRUE GOD; HE is the most holy GOD; HE is the Most High GOD; HE is the Beginning and HE is the End; HE is the Almighty GOD; before HIM all the nations are as nothing, and they are regarded by HIM as less than nothing and vanity.

*"All nations before HIM are as nothing; and they are counted to HIM less than nothing, and vanity."*

HE is the Creator of all things; HE has created the mankind and everything; HE is the wonderful GOD; HE is the divine healer of all diseases; HE casts out all devils and evil spirits; HE opens the eyes of the blind and the born-blind to see; HE opens the mouth of the dumb to speak; HE opens the ears of the deaf to hear; HE makes the cripple, the disabled, and the lame walk and jump; HE cleanses the lepers; HE raises the dead.

HE is the Prince of Peace; HE is the great Comforter; HE is the great Counsellor; HE is the GOD of great wisdom and great knowledge and great understanding; HE is the sinless GOD; HE is the guiltless GOD; no one ever spoke the way the LORD JESUS CHRIST does.

HE is the Living GOD; HE is the Everliving GOD; HE is the GOD of gods; HE is the LORD of lords; HE is the KING of kings; HE is the Immortal GOD; HE is dwelling in the light, which no man can approach; HE is the Only Potentate; HE is the blessed.

HE is the GOD of absolute justice; HE is the GOD of great love; HE is the GOD of great compassion; HE is the most merciful GOD; HE is the most gracious GOD; HE is the GOD of great longsuffering; HE is plenteous in mercy and truth.

HE is the most righteous Judge; HE is the most terrible Judge; HE is angry with the wicked and angry with the sinners every day; after HIS judgment, HE will give hell, the everlasting fire to the wicked and the sinners; and HE will give heaven, the kingdom of GOD to HIS saints.

By celebrating the Christmas festival as per the will of the LORD GOD, anyone can understand these most glorious things about GOD. By celebrating this festival, people can understand the way of getting forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, redemption from sins, holiness, etc. But by not celebrating this festival, no one can understand these most glorious things in the correct manner. Thus, the celebration of Christmas festival is a very essential celebration. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Again, by celebrating the Christmas festival, anyone can understand: Who is CHRIST? Who is MESSIAH? Who is JESUS? Who is JESUS CHRIST? Who is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH? Who is the LORD

GOD? Who is the ONE GOD? Who is the ONLY GOD? Who is the ONLY TRUE GOD? Which is HIS permanent residential place? Which is HIS permanent residential house? Which is HIS permanent kingdom? etc.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST abandoned HIS own wonderful kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven (Psalm 2:4); HE abandoned HIS most wonderful throne in heaven (Psalm 11:4; Daniel 7:9); HE abandoned HIS most wonderful crowns in heaven (Revelation 19:12); HE abandoned HIS most wonderful reign in heaven (Psalm 10:16; 95:3; I Timothy 6:15; II Timothy 2:12); HE abandoned HIS great power in heaven (St. Matthew 28:18); HE abandoned HIS great authority in heaven (St. Matthew 21:23); HE abandoned HIS perfect glory in heaven (Psalm 8:1; 24:8); HE abandoned HIS great highness in heaven (St. Luke 2:14); HE abandoned HIS great greatness in heaven (Psalm 104:1); HE abandoned HIS great riches in heaven (II Corinthians 8:9; St. Matthew 8:20); HE abandoned HIS own glorious garment in heaven (Psalm 104:2; Daniel 7:9); HE abandoned HIS own upper chambers in heaven (Psalm 104:3; II Corinthians 5:1; St. Luke 2:7, 12); HE abandoned HIS own comfort and ease in heaven (Isaiah 53:5); HE abandoned HIS own delight and joy in heaven (Proverbs 8:30-31; Isaiah 53:3-4); HE abandoned HIS own glorious heavenly body in heaven (Hebrews 2:14; I Timothy 3:16); HE abandoned HIS great beauty and comeliness in heaven (Psalm 45:2; Zechariah 9:17; Isaiah 53:2); HE abandoned HIS great honour and majesty in heaven (Psalm 104:1); HE abandoned HIS own reputation in heaven (Philippians 2:7; Psalm 89:6-8; St. Matthew 27:27-31); and HE abandoned HIS highest place and HIS highest position on the highest place (Psalm 91:1; Hebrews 1:3) and came in this world on the Christmas day. HE came in this world in the form of a servant and in the likeness of a man with a fleshly body; and HE humbled HIMSELF being found in appearance as a man (Philippians 2:6-11; I Timothy 3:16). HE came in this world on the Christmas day to save those who can by no means save themselves (I Timothy 1:15). And HE came to live with HIS people in the name of EMMANUEL (St. Matthew 1:23). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Besides, all mankind lost all the glorious blessings of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They lost their eternal kingdom, the kingdom of

GOD or the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 25:34). They lost their throne in heaven (Revelation 3:21). They lost their crown in heaven (I Peter 5:4; James 1:12; II Timothy 4:8). They lost their reign in heaven (II Timothy 2:12). They lost their glory (Romans 3:23). They lost their power and authority (Psalm 8:5-8). They lost their highness and greatness (Psalm 136:23). They lost their riches (Revelation 3:17-18; II Corinthians 8:9). They lost their comfort and ease (Psalm 31:10; 107:17; Isaiah 53:4-5). They lost their delight and joy (Joel 1:12). They lost their beauty and comeliness (Genesis 1:26-27; Psalm 45:2). They lost their reputation (Lamentations 4:2). And they lost their majesty and honour (Psalm 8:5). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came in this world on the Christmas day to give all the blessings which are lost by mankind. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"For the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is come to seek and to save that which was lost."*

St. Luke 19:10

Again, by celebrating the Christmas festival, anyone can understand all these glorious things. But, by not celebrating the Christmas festival, no one can understand these glorious things in the correct manner. If we do not celebrate the Christmas festival, all these glorious things will remain covered and unrevealed and unknown; all these glorious things will not be revealed and seen.

Thus, the celebration of Christmas festival is the most essential occasion to magnify and glorify GOD. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST wishes the celebration of Christmas festival and other Christian festivals for HIS glory. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, many people in the world do not know about their own GOD and their Creator, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. By celebrating the Christmas festival in a very grand manner, such people can very easily know about their own GOD and their Creator, and they can very easily get forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, redemption from sins, holiness, etc., to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Hence, the celebrations of Christian festivals should not be neglected in any way. Thus, the Christmas festival celebrations and all other Christian festival celebrations are the most essential celebrations. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 6. THE EASTER FESTIVAL BLESSINGS

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST died for our sins and HE was buried, and HE rose again the third day according to the Scriptures. **The Easter festival is the festival of Resurrection of the LORD JESUS CHRIST.**

Due to the glorious resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, we obtain victory over the world, victory over sin, victory over our selves, victory over the curse, victory over Satan (the devil), victory over the disobedience, victory over great sufferings, victory over death and victory over the grave.

Again, due to the glorious resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, anyone can live a sinless life, and his faith will not be futile, anyone can be justified and made righteous, and anyone can obtain the Power of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's Resurrection, i.e., the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

If we do not celebrate the Easter festival, all these glorious blessings will be covered and unrevealed and we cannot obtain these glorious blessings of the LORD. Hence, everyone must celebrate the Easter festival and other Christian festivals.

From the glorious festival of the Resurrection of the LORD JESUS CHRIST or the Easter festival, anyone can understand that the resurrection of the dead is sure and certain. Since the resurrection of the dead is sure and certain, anyone can understand that there will be judgment to sinners and saints. Since the judgment to sinners and saints is sure and certain, anyone can understand that all sinners will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur and HIS saints will enter into HIS glorious and divine kingdom of heaven; and this glorious and righteous judgment will be given to them by the most righteous Judge, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Easter festival reveals all these glorious secrets of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. If we do not celebrate the Easter festival, all these glorious secrets of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be covered and unrevealed. Thus, the Easter festival celebration is one of the most essential celebrations. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

For further details, please see page 432 to 441 (8.1 RESURRECTION to 8.5 EASTER).

## 7. THE PENTECOSTAL FESTIVAL BLESSINGS OR BLESSINGS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT OR THE SPIRIT OF PENTECOST

In the Old Testament days, the day of Pentecost (the Pentecostal festival) was celebrated by the Israelites as the festival of harvest (the feast of harvest) or the feast of weeks, of the first-fruits of wheat harvest or the day of the first-fruits. This festival was celebrated after the feast of Passover. This festival day was calculated in the following way:

From the first Sunday (the first day of the week) after the feast of Passover, they counted seven full weeks (49 days). Seven full weeks will end on a Sabbath day or on a Saturday (the last day of the week). Then on the next day, the fiftieth day they celebrated the festival of harvest on Sunday (the first day of the week). See Exodus 23:16; 34:22; Numbers 28:26; Deuteronomy 16:10; and Leviticus 23:10-11, 14-17.

Since this festival of harvest was celebrated on the fiftieth day, it was called the day of Pentecost. In Greek, the day of Pentecost means the fiftieth day. Now in the New Testament period, the festival of harvest is celebrated as the festival of Pentecost or the Pentecostal festival. **This festival is celebrated on the fiftieth day of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection.**

Now, at the festival of harvest, i.e., on the day of Pentecost, the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD descended upon about a hundred and twenty persons, including Virgin Mary and all the disciples of our LORD JESUS. Virgin Mary, the mother of the LORD JESUS had fully known the fact that the HOLY SPIRIT is the holy power of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and without anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD, she could not live a holy life in this world. So, she continued with them in one accord in prayer to receive the baptizing, the anointing, and the filling up by the HOLY SPIRIT. **The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD gave them new power in action and new certainty in prayer.**

*“And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the FATHER, which, saith HE, ye have heard of ME. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) not many days hence. But ye shall*

*receive power, after that the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of JESUS, and with HIS brethren."*

Acts 1:4-5, 8, 14

*"And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."*

Acts 2:1-4

On the day of Pentecost, the LORD GOD provided two symbols of the HOLY SPIRIT's presence: the wind and the fiery tongues. The wind symbolizes the eternal life in the HOLY SPIRIT. The fiery tongues sat upon each one to show the HOLY SPIRIT's baptism, the baptism of fire (St. Matthew 3:11). GOD the HOLY SPIRIT is doing this most wonderful work. Anyone who is filled with the HOLY SPIRIT will speak with other tongues (languages), as the HOLY SPIRIT gives them utterance.

Those who are baptized, anointed and filled with the HOLY SPIRIT, attain the eternal life of the HOLY SPIRIT. Their dross of sin will be purely and thoroughly purged away from them and their tin (alloy) of sin will also be taken away from them (Isaiah 1:25) by the HOLY SPIRIT's baptism of fire and it brightens, enlightens and refines them to pure gold.

Many people wrongly think and say that speaking in tongues should be in understandable languages. Now, if anyone speaks in tongues in the tongues (languages) of men, then those languages may be understandable (Acts 2:1-12). But if anyone speaks in tongues in the tongues (languages) of angels, then those languages cannot be understandable (I Corinthians 13:1). Further, there is a very fine and beautiful and wonderful tongue (language) of GOD. So, if anyone speaks in the tongue of GOD, then that language cannot be



understandable. Thus, the speaking in tongues must not always be in understandable languages. In paradise also, the saints of the LORD speak inexpressible words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter (II Corinthians 12:1-4).

In Greek, PLEEROO (Acts 2:2) means the filling of a vessel within, as the wind filled the whole house inwardly; and PLETHO (Acts 4:8, 31; 9:17; 13:9) means the filling outwardly, as the wind surrounded the whole house outwardly. While being anointed or baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT, we speak in tongues and we are filled with the HOLY SPIRIT inwardly as well as outwardly. Everyone in CHRIST should experience both aspects of the HOLY SPIRIT. For our Christian living and Christian ministry, we should be filled with the HOLY SPIRIT inwardly as well as outwardly. Filling with the HOLY SPIRIT inwardly and outwardly means baptizing with the HOLY SPIRIT by immersion into the HOLY SPIRIT.

**While being anointed or baptized with the HOLY SPIRIT, we speak with new and different kinds of tongues (St. Mark 16:17; I Corinthians 12:10), and we are filled with the HOLY SPIRIT. At that time, our human spirits, souls and bodies are completely under the control of the SPIRIT of GOD or the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD and our words are HIS words in new and different kinds of tongues, since our human spirits are completely under the control of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.**

Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**The speaking in tongues symbolizes that our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the speaking Spirit as well as the living Spirit.**

The festival of harvest or the festival of Pentecost signifies the enjoyment of the very rich produce, the bountiful living Spirit, brought in by our resurrected CHRIST after the glory of Easter. On the day of Pentecost, the spiritual church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was born. About three thousand people became members of the church, on that day.

*"...And the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls."*

Acts 2:41

**Thus the day of Pentecost or the festival of Pentecost or the Pentecostal festival is celebrated as the birthday of the spiritual**

**church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Again, on the day of Pentecost, GOD the HOLY SPIRIT has come into the world to do HIS most wonderful and most terrible works. Hence, the day of Pentecost is also celebrated as the festival of the HOLY SPIRIT.**

Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Since the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD has been poured on the day of Pentecost, the HOLY SPIRIT is also called as the Spirit of Pentecost. The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is given or poured by GOD to those who are saved. The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD is poured upon the saved people, those who continue in one accord in prayer as the disciples of the LORD did. To receive the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, one should pray to GOD as he prayed for his salvation from sins with tears and broken-heart and humility and in faith and in one mind and without wavering. Sanctification or purification of body, spirit and soul is very essential to receive the HOLY SPIRIT. GOD will give the HOLY SPIRIT to those who ask HIM (St. Luke 11:10, 13).

Everyone should be baptized by one Spirit, the HOLY SPIRIT into one body, the body of CHRIST; and everyone should drink into one Spirit, the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit."*

I Corinthians 12:13

The believers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST should receive the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"He said unto them, Have ye received the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) since ye believed?..."*

Acts 19:2

Everyone should be filled with the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"...Be filled with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Acts 9:17

Everyone should be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT, to know all the spiritual things.

*"But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things."*

I John 2:20

Everyone should be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT, to be strengthened in CHRIST.

*"Now HE which stablisheth us with you in CHRIST, and hath anointed us, is GOD."*

II Corinthians 1:21

No one should grieve the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD and everyone should be sealed with the HOLY SPIRIT of promise to the day of redemption.

*"And grieve not the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption."*

Ephesians 4:30

*"...Ye were sealed with that HOLY SPIRIT of promise."*

Ephesians 1:13

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the earnest of the Spirit to obtain all blessings of GOD.

*"...Who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit."*

II Corinthians 5:5

'Earnest' means 'down payment'.

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of those who are GOD's possession.

*"Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of HIS glory."*

Ephesians 1:14

The wonderful experience of speaking in the Spirit in various other unknown languages is very essential for the people of this twenty-first century. Many people wrongly think that this spiritual experience is not for the twenty-first century people, but for the first century people. Now, everyone should know that this wonderful spiritual experience is very essential for all people of all ages. Again, everyone should clearly understand the following promise. The promise is for all people of all ages.

*"For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our GOD shall call."*

Acts 2:39

*"And GOD, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), even as HE did unto us; And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith."*

Acts 15:8-9

One who speaks in an unknown tongue (language) in the HOLY SPIRIT, speaks not unto men but unto GOD; in the HOLY SPIRIT he speaks mysteries of GOD and wonderful works of GOD (I Corinthians 14:2; Acts 2:11). So he should pray that he may interpret what he says (I Corinthians 14:13). One who speaks in an unknown tongue in the HOLY SPIRIT edifies himself (I Corinthians 14:4).

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is our divine **Comforter**. HE comforts us by HIS divine love (Romans 5:5). HE comforts us by HIS divine active help (Romans 8:26). HE comforts us by HIS divine interceding (Romans 8:27). HE comforts us by HIS divine faith (belief) and hope (Romans 15:13). HE comforts us by HIS deep and hidden things (I Corinthians 2:10). HE comforts us by HIS divine wisdom (I Corinthians 2:13). HE comforts us by HIS ever-abiding with us (St. John 14:16). HE comforts us by HIS divine teachings through HIS Gospel (St. John 14:26). HE comforts us by giving remembrance about HIS divine sayings (St. John 14:26).

GOD speaks with unbelievers in unknown tongues and unknown lips (I Corinthians 14:21). Speaking in unknown tongues is not a sign for believers, but a sign for unbelievers.

*"Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe."*

I Corinthians 14:22

No one should forbid anyone to speak with tongues.

*"...Forbid not to speak with tongues."*

I Corinthians 14:39

Speaking with tongues and all other things should be done decently and in order (I Corinthians 14:40).

The love of GOD is poured in our hearts by the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of GOD is shed abroad in our hearts by the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) which is given unto us."*

Romans 5:5

We receive great joy and happiness by the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"And ye became followers of us, and of the LORD, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

I Thessalonians 1:6

We will abound in hope, through the power of the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"Now the GOD of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Romans 15:13

The HOLY SPIRIT teaches us. Spiritual truth is clearly taught by HIM.

*"Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual."*

I Corinthians 2:13

The body of the saved people is the temple of the HOLY SPIRIT and they are not their own; but they are of GOD. **The HOLY SPIRIT dwells with them and HE will be with them always and everywhere.**

*"What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) which is in you, which ye have of GOD, and ye are not your own?"*

I Corinthians 6:19

By the HOLY SPIRIT only anyone can say, "JESUS IS THE LORD".

*"Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of GOD calleth JESUS accursed: and that no man can say that JESUS is the LORD, but by the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

I Corinthians 12:3

By the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD only anyone can say, "GOD is ABBA and GOD is FATHER". And those who are led by the HOLY SPIRIT of

GOD are the sons of GOD. The HOLY SPIRIT is the Spirit of adoption. The HOLY SPIRIT places the believers as sons in GOD's family. Also, the HOLY SPIRIT is the Spirit of GOD, the SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST).

*"For as many as are led by the Spirit of GOD, they are the sons of GOD. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, ABBA, FATHER."*

Romans 8:14-15

*"And because ye are sons, GOD hath sent forth the Spirit of HIS SON into your hearts, crying, ABBA, FATHER."*

Galatians 4:6

The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD is neither a spirit of fear nor a spirit of bondage (Romans 8:15); but of power and of love and of a sound mind.

*"For GOD hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind."*

II Timothy 1:7

The glorious Gospel of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is preached with the HOLY SPIRIT sent down from heaven; even angels desire to look into these things.

*"For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), and in much assurance; ..."*

I Thessalonians 1:5

*"Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into."*

I Peter 1:12

Everyone should guard the sound Words of GOD by the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in CHRIST JESUS. That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the HOLY GHOST (the*

*HOLY SPIRIT) which dwelleth in us."*

II Timothy 1:13-14

Everyone should be renewed by the renewing of the HOLY SPIRIT. By the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT only, this glorious renewal is obtained.

*"Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to HIS mercy HE saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Titus 3:5

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST testifies HIS great salvation by gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the LORD, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard HIM; GOD also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), according to HIS own will?"*

Hebrews 2:3-4

The gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT are given by GOD to HIS believers, the saved people.

*"Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of JESUS CHRIST for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Acts 2:38

Nine gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT are as follows:

*"But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal (all). For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as HE will."*

I Corinthians 12:7-11

The HOLY SPIRIT of our GOD washes and sanctifies people.

*"And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the LORD JESUS, and by the Spirit of our GOD."*

I Corinthians 6:11

The HOLY SPIRIT of our GOD is the Spirit of judgment and the Spirit of burning or the holy fire that burns away all the dirty and filthy sins and cleanses the people.

*"When the LORD shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the Spirit of judgment, and by the Spirit of burning."*

Isaiah 4:4

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD refreshes the people and gives the weary rest, by speaking with stammering lips and another tongue. But the people would not hear and listen. So, they will be condemned.

*"For with stammering lips and another tongue will HE speak to this people. To whom HE said, this is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing; yet they would not hear. ... that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken."*

Isaiah 28:11-13

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the oil of gladness or the oil of joy and the fresh oil.

*"THOU lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore GOD, THY GOD, hath anointed THEE with the oil of gladness above THY fellows."*

Psalms 45:7

*"...I shall be anointed with fresh oil."*

Psalms 92:10

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the garment of praise.

*"...The oil of joy for (instead of) mourning, the garment of praise for (instead of) the spirit of heaviness; ..."*

Isaiah 61:3

The HOLY SPIRIT of our LORD GOD is the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might and the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD.



*“And the Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon HIM, the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD.”*

Isaiah 11:2

The HOLY SPIRIT of our LORD GOD is the Spirit of GOD, the FATHER. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is the Comforter and the Spirit of truth. GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

*“But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the FATHER, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the FATHER, HE shall testify of ME.”*

St. John 15:26

The HOLY SPIRIT of our LORD GOD is the Spirit of CHRIST. One having the Spirit of CHRIST is a Christian. Anyone having the Spirit of CHRIST is HIS.

*“...Now if any man have not the Spirit of CHRIST, he is none of HIS.”*

Romans 8:9

The HOLY SPIRIT or the Spirit of truth will guide us into all truth. HE will show us what is yet to come.

*“Howbeit when HE, the Spirit of truth, is come, HE will guide you into all truth: ... and HE will shew you things to come.”*

St. John 16:13

The HOLY SPIRIT of our GOD is the Spirit of faith.

*“We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak.”*

II Corinthians 4:13

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD reproves the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.

*“And when HE is come, HE will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.”*

St. John 16:8

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is a witness to us.

*“Whereof the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) also is a witness to us: ...”*

Hebrews 10:15

*"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of GOD."*

Romans 8:16

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD helps us in our weakness and the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD intercedes for us.

*"Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And HE that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because HE maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of GOD."*

Romans 8:26-27

The fruit of the HOLY SPIRIT is as follows:

*"(For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth.)"*

Ephesians 5:9

*"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law."*

Galatians 5:22-23

There is no condemnation for those who are in CHRIST JESUS and walk after the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in CHRIST JESUS, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live."*

Romans 8:1, 13

Everyone should be spiritually minded and no one should be carnally minded. We can live a spiritual life, if the Spirit of GOD or the HOLY SPIRIT dwells in us.

*"For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against GOD: for it is not subject to the law of GOD, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please GOD. But ye are not in the*

*flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of GOD dwell in you. ..."*

Romans 8:5-9

If the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD dwells in us, then GOD will resurrect our mortal bodies by HIS Spirit that dwells in us.

*"But if the Spirit of HIM that raised up JESUS from the dead dwell in you, HE that raised up CHRIST from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by HIS Spirit that dwelleth in you."*

Romans 8:11

Thus, everyone should be born of the Spirit of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT to enter into the kingdom of GOD.

*"JESUS answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

St. John 3:5

Further, everyone should live and walk in the Spirit of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT to enter into the kingdom of GOD.

*"If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."*

Galatians 5:25

Again, everyone should worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in the Spirit, the HOLY SPIRIT and in truth to enter into the kingdom of GOD.

*"...Worship GOD in the Spirit, and rejoice in CHRIST JESUS, ..."*

Philippians 3:3

*"...They that worship HIM must worship HIM in Spirit and in truth."*

St. John 4:24

And everyone should pray to GOD in the Spirit, the HOLY SPIRIT to enter into the kingdom of GOD.

*"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, ..."*

Ephesians 6:18

*"But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Jude 20

And GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT bears witness in heaven.

*“For there are three that bear record in heaven, the FATHER, the WORD (the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST), and the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT): and these three are one.”*

I John 5:7

There is ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **HE is the Triune (three-in-one) GOD**—ONE GOD in three functional Persons, GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON, and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. All are equal in power. All are equal in glory. All are equal in majesty. All are equal in every way. All are equally worthy of our praise. All are equally worthy of our worship. All are eternal, without beginning and without end. All took part in the creation of heaven and earth and all things. Again, there is ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **HE is the GOD of Trinity**—the unity of GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON, and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT in one GODHEAD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Holy Bible is the Word of GOD, inspired by GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT. It is GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT who inspired holy men of GOD to write the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures (II Timothy 3:16). The HOLY SPIRIT is the holy power of GOD. This holy power of GOD enables us to live a holy life to the glory of GOD (Acts 1:8).

Now, the Pentecostal experience is the true Christian experience to enter into the kingdom of GOD. It is the true spiritual experience. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to reveal and give the Pentecostal experience, the true Christian experience. Therefore, everyone must obtain the Pentecostal experience, the true Christian experience and enter into the kingdom of GOD.

The Pentecostal festival reveals all these glorious things and all these glorious blessings of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. If we do not celebrate this festival, all these glorious things, and all these glorious blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be covered and unrevealed. Thus, the Pentecostal festival celebration is one of the most essential celebrations. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 8. THE NEW YEAR DAY FESTIVAL BLESSINGS

New Year brings new blessings. The dawn of the New Year is a GOD-given opportunity for us to renew our **new covenant** (Testament) with our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. HE had already promised to make a new covenant (Jeremiah 31:31) before HIS first coming and now HE has fulfilled HIS promise. Also HE has made us worthy to receive **new blessings** through HIS precious blood (St. Matthew 26:28).

We get access to HIS recurring blessings by believing HIS new doctrine, the **new doctrine** of JESUS CHRIST (St. Mark 1:27)—the apostles' doctrine (Acts 2:42) or the pure doctrine (Job 11:4) or the good and sound doctrine (Proverbs 4:2; I Timothy 4:6; Titus 1:9). HE gives us HIS **new joy of salvation** (Psalm 51:12), **new joy in the HOLY SPIRIT** (Romans 14:17), **new spirit—new strength** (Isaiah 40:31), **new mouth** (Isaiah 6:1-7) and **new tongues—new languages** (St. Mark 16:17), for our **newness of life** by HIS **new mercies** (Lamentations 3:22-23).

*“THOU crownest the year with THY goodness; and THY paths drop fatness.”*

Psalm 65:11

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST crowns the whole year with HIS goodness; HE crowns every month with HIS goodness; HE crowns every week with HIS goodness; HE crowns every day with HIS goodness; HE crowns every hour with HIS goodness; HE crowns every minute with HIS goodness; and HE crowns every second with HIS goodness. Every good gift of GOD is from above; every perfect gift of GOD is from above; and every gift comes down from GOD, the FATHER. GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (James 1:17).

But HIS goodness, good gifts and perfect gifts are not obtained by people due to their sins and iniquities. Their days are passed away in the wrath of GOD.

*“For we are consumed by THINE anger, and by THY wrath are we troubled. THOU hast set our iniquities before THEE, our secret sins in the light of THY countenance. For all our days are passed away in THY wrath: we spend our years as a tale that is told.”*

Psalm 90:7-9

Spiritually the people are wretched, miserable, poor, blind and naked (Revelation 3:17) and unprofitable.

*"They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one."*

Romans 3:12

The LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save such people.

*"For the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is come to save that which was lost."*

St. Matthew 18:11

Now, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has created the people to do good works. GOD has prepared these good works in advance for us to do.

*"For we are HIS workmanship, created in CHRIST JESUS unto good works, which GOD hath before ordained that we should walk in them."*

Ephesians 2:10

To do good works, everyone should be in CHRIST; and everyone should be a **new creature**; all old things or all sins must be passed away from them; and all **new things** or all holy things must be possessed by them and they must be **new in their works** or holy in their works. Unless one changes all his/her old sinful ways completely, he/she cannot become a new creature (new creation) in CHRIST.

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

To possess such a **new life** or spiritual life, everyone should make a **new covenant** with GOD. This covenant must be true and perfect. After making this covenant with GOD, they should confess their sins and iniquities with tears and with broken-heart and with humility for the forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, etc., to obtain a sinless life in CHRIST. One who obtains a sinless life in CHRIST is a **new creature**; the old things of the flesh (II Corinthians 5:16-17) have passed away through the death of CHRIST and all things have become new in CHRIST's resurrection (Romans 4:25). The holy blood of JESUS CHRIST, the **New Testament blood** of JESUS CHRIST which was shed for many for the forgiveness of sins forgives us (St. Matthew 26:28)

and cleanses us from every sin (I John 1:7) and HIS HOLY SPIRIT washes and renews us to make us a **new creature** by **renewing of the HOLY SPIRIT** (Titus 3:5). A new creature is a **new man**. The new man is a man of true righteousness and true holiness with a **renewed mind** (Romans 12:2).

*"And that ye put on the new man, which after GOD is created in righteousness and true holiness."*

Ephesians 4:24

This new man will be called by a **new name**. The mouth of the LORD will name his or her new name by 'MY son' or 'MY daughter'.

*"And the Gentiles shall see thy righteousness, and all kings thy glory: and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name."*

Isaiah 62:2

The new man will get a glorious **new life** or perfectly **sinless life** or the **true Christian life** and he will **walk in this newness of life** hereafter with a **renewed mind in the Spirit** (Ephesians 4:23-24).

*"...We also should walk in newness of life."*

Romans 6:4

Also, the new man will get a **new heart** and a **new spirit** or **new strength** with the **inner man (soul) being renewed day by day** (II Corinthians 4:16).

*"Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel?"*

Ezekiel 18:31

Further, the new man will be anointed with **fresh oil** or **new oil**, **the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD**, to make his face shine (Psalm 104:15).

*"...I shall be anointed with fresh oil."*

Psalms 92:10

Again, in the mouth of the new man, the LORD GOD will put a **new song**, a song of praise to the LORD GOD. The new song will be 'Praise the LORD' or 'Praise to GOD'. Many will see it and fear and put their trust in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"And HE hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our*

*GOD: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the LORD."*

Psalm 40:3

Furthermore, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will give a **new commandment** to this new man and he should walk according to this new commandment. 'You love one another' is the new commandment. If you love one another, all men will know that you are HIS disciples.

*"A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are MY disciples, if ye have love one to another."*

St. John 13:34-35

Thus, a man having these new experiences can walk in a new and living way. This **new and living way** is the **true Christian way with a renewed right spirit** (Psalm 51:10). The end of this true Christian way is the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven.

*"By a new and living way, which HE hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, HIS flesh."*

Hebrews 10:20

One who walks in this new and living way will rule the earth with CHRIST in the **new millennial reign** for 1000 years (Revelation 20:6) and see the righteousness pervading the **new heavens** and the **new earth** created by the LORD JESUS CHRIST and he will enter into the holy city, the **New Jerusalem**. The New Jerusalem is also called the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven or the eternal Zion. Now, this new man will be in eternal joy and in eternal happiness with the eternal GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in the eternal world, the kingdom of GOD.

*"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in MY people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying."*

Isaiah 65:17-19

*"Nevertheless we, according to HIS promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. Wherefore,*



*beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of HIM in peace, without spot, and blameless."*

II Peter 3:13-14

*"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from GOD out of heaven, ..."*

Revelation 21:1-2

The New Year Day festival is a festival full of new blessings of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The new blessings of the LORD are poured upon HIS people to live a new life and to enter into HIS kingdom of heaven. HE shows **new things and hidden things** (Isaiah 48:6) and HE makes **all things new** (Revelation 21:5). Nothing is ever impossible for HIM (Jeremiah 32:27).

Again, the New Year Day festival is a glorious festival of thanksgiving to GOD. The New Year Day is a glorious thanksgiving day to GOD. It is a glorious day for giving thanks to GOD for HIS previous year blessings. Everyone should be thankful to GOD in everything. Everyone should be thankful to GOD for all his previous years, for all his previous months, for all his previous weeks, for all his previous days, for all his previous hours, for all his previous minutes and for all his previous seconds in his life. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Unless we celebrate this New Year Day festival, we cannot understand these glorious blessings and these glorious things and we will not receive the New Year Day blessings. Thus, the New Year Day celebration is one of the most essential celebrations. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 9. BLESSINGS OF THE FESTIVAL OF DEDICATION OF THE HOUSE OF THE LORD OR THE HOUSE OF PRAYER

The house of prayer is the house of the LORD or the house of GOD. The house of prayer is the palace of the LORD or the palace of GOD.

*"Even them will I bring to MY holy mountain, and make them joyful in MY house of prayer: ... MINE house shall be called an house of prayer for all people."*

Isaiah 56:7

Neglecting our responsibility in doing GOD's work is putting our wages in a bag with holes. When the Israelites/the Jews neglected their responsibility in re-building the holy temple, the house of GOD or the house of prayer, after their exile in Babylon and built their ceiled (paneled-up) houses, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST disliked their efforts (Haggai 1:2-8) and HE told them,

*"Ye have sown much, and bring in little; ye eat, but ye have not enough; ye drink, but ye are not filled with drink; ye clothe you, but there is none warm; and he that earneth wages earneth wages to put it into a bag with holes."*

Haggai 1:6

Our LORD JESUS taught the people and said,

*"...Is it not written, MY house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? ..."*

St. Mark 11:17

The house of prayer is the palace of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is the house of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is the holy dwelling house of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is the holy mountain of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The house of prayer is a joyful house to HIS people. The house of prayer is a holy gathering place for HIS people. The house of prayer is a holy assembling place for HIS people. The house of prayer is the holy worshipping place for HIS people. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is in HIS holy temple (house of prayer). HE will not dwell in any unholy place.

*"The LORD is in HIS holy temple, ... HIS eyes behold, HIS eyelids try, the children of men."*

Psalms 11:4

*"But the LORD is in HIS holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before HIM."*

Habakkuk 2:20

*"...Holiness becometh THINE house, O LORD, for ever."*

Psalms 93:5

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST answers the call of HIS own people when they seek HIM with all their heart, in HIS house of prayer.

*"Then shall ye call upon ME, and ye shall go and pray unto ME, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek ME, and find ME, when ye shall search for ME with all your heart."*

Jeremiah 29:12-13

Everyone should call on the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, along with those who call on HIM out of a pure heart, in HIS house of prayer.

*"Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the LORD out of a pure heart."*

II Timothy 2:22

Our LORD GOD's eyes will be open and HIS ears attentive to the prayers made in HIS house of prayer.

*"Now MINE eyes shall be open, and MINE ears attent unto the prayer that is made in this place."*

II Chronicles 7:15

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has chosen and sanctified HIS house, and HIS most holy name will be there for ever; and HIS eyes and HIS heart will always be there.

*"For now have I chosen and sanctified this house, that MY name may be there for ever: and MINE eyes and MINE heart shall be there perpetually."*

II Chronicles 7:16

When our LORD GOD shuts up the heavens so that there is no rain, or commands locusts to devour the land, or sends a plague (an epidemic disease) among HIS people because of their wickedness, HIS people, who are called by HIS name, will have to come to HIS house of prayer and humble themselves and pray and seek HIS face and turn from their wicked ways. Then HE will hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin and will heal their land.

*"If I shut up heaven that there be no rain, or if I command the locusts to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among MY people; If MY people, which are called by MY name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek MY face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land."*

II Chronicles 7:13-14

Ezra's prayer of confession, is a heart-melting prayer. He threw himself down before the house of GOD (the house of prayer) with men, women and children.

*"And at the evening sacrifice I arose up from my heaviness; and having rent my garment and my mantle, I fell upon my knees, and spread out my hands unto the LORD my GOD, And said, O my GOD, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to THEE, my GOD: for our iniquities are increased over our head, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens. And now, O our GOD, what shall we say after this? for we have forsaken THY commandments. O LORD GOD of Israel, THOU art righteous: for we remain yet escaped, as it is this day: behold, we are before THEE in our trespasses: for we cannot stand before THEE because of this."*

Ezra 9:5-6, 10, 15

*"Now when Ezra had prayed, and when he had confessed, weeping and casting himself down before the house of GOD, there assembled unto him out of Israel a very great congregation of men and women and children: for the people wept very sore."*

Ezra 10:1

Hezekiah, the king of Judah was horrified by the demand of Sennacherib, the king of Assyria. Through his messengers, he had reproached and blasphemed the name of the LORD GOD. He had raised his voice against the LORD GOD. He had lifted his eyes in pride against the LORD, the Holy One of Israel. So, Hezekiah tore his clothes (as a sign of mourning), and went into the house of the LORD (house of prayer). He sent for Isaiah the prophet and asked him to pray. Isaiah arrived and spoke with great confidence about a miraculous deliverance by the LORD. On that day of trouble, Hezekiah received a letter from Sennacherib. He read it and then he took it into the house of the LORD and spread it before the LORD as an act of his utter dependence upon GOD. In the house of the LORD, Hezekiah prayed to the LORD GOD:

*"O LORD of hosts, GOD of Israel, that dwellest between the cherubims, THOU art the GOD, even THOU alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: THOU hast made heaven and earth. Incline THINE ear, O LORD, and hear; open THINE eyes, O LORD, and see: and hear all the words of Sennacherib, which hath sent to reproach the*

*living GOD. Of a truth, LORD, the kings of Assyria have laid waste all the nations, and their countries, And have cast their gods into the fire: for they were no gods, but the work of men's hands, wood and stone: therefore they have destroyed them. Now therefore, O LORD our GOD, save us from his hand, that all the kingdoms of the earth may know that THOU art the LORD, even THOU only."*

Isaiah 37:16-20

Our LORD GOD heard his prayer of faith. And on that night, the angel of the LORD went out and killed 185,000 Assyrians—they were all dead.

*"And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the LORD went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses."*

II Kings 19:35

By assembling together, everyone should worship or serve GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in HIS house of prayer that is a copy and shadow of heavenly worship or service. In HIS house of prayer, one GOD's minister is needed to conduct HIS service. But in heaven, no one is needed to conduct HIS service. In heaven, our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST will sit on HIS most glorious throne, and HIS people will serve HIM with everlasting joy. Gladness and joy will overtake them, and everlasting joy will crown their heads. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! To reveal this most important spiritual thing, the festival of Dedication of the house of prayer is very essential.

*"Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things,  
..."*

Hebrews 8:5

By assembling together, everyone should worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in the Spirit, and rejoice in HIM. In order to worship GOD in the Spirit and to rejoice in HIM, the house of prayer is very essential. To reveal this important spiritual thing, the festival of Dedication of the house of prayer is very essential.

*"...Worship GOD in the Spirit, and rejoice in CHRIST JESUS,  
..."*

Philippians 3:3

By assembling together, everyone should worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in spirit and in truth. **In order to worship GOD in spirit and in truth, the house of prayer is very essential.** To reveal this important spiritual thing, the festival of Dedication of the house of prayer is very essential.

*"...They that worship HIM must worship HIM in spirit and in truth."*

St. John 4:24

By assembling together, everyone should worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST with gladness and with joyful singing. To reveal this important spiritual thing, the festival of Dedication of the house of prayer is very essential.

*"Serve the LORD with gladness: come before HIS presence with singing."*

Psalms 100:2

In HIS house of prayer, GOD's ministers will be given an everlasting name that will not be cut off, and HE will also give them within HIS house of prayer a place and a name better than of sons and of daughters. To reveal this glorious spiritual thing, the festival of Dedication of the house of prayer is very essential.

*"For thus saith the LORD unto the eunuchs that keep MY sabbaths, and choose the things that please ME, and take hold of MY covenant; Even unto them will I give in MINE house and within MY walls a place and a name better than of sons and of daughters: I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off. Also the sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the LORD, to serve HIM, and to love the name of the LORD, to be HIS servants, every one that keepeth the sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of MY covenant; Even them will I bring to MY holy mountain, and make them joyful in MY house of prayer: ... for MINE house shall be called an house of prayer for all people."*

Isaiah 56:4-7

The festival of Dedication of the house of the LORD or the house of prayer is one of the most essential festivals for HIS people and for others. Others or the Gentiles can also understand all these things and receive all these blessings from the LORD GOD. If this festival is not celebrated, then the Gentiles cannot know about these blessings

and they cannot receive these glorious blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*“Blessed is the man whom THOU choosest, and causest to approach unto THEE, that he may dwell in THY courts: we shall be satisfied with the goodness of THY house, even of THY holy temple.”*

Psalm 65:4

Again, everyone must become the temple or the house of the living GOD; the temple or the house of the living GOD must be holy; hence everyone must be holy and the HOLY SPIRIT of the living GOD must dwell in him. If anyone defiles the house of GOD, GOD will destroy him; if anyone defiles himself, GOD will destroy him.

*“Know ye not that ye are the temple of GOD, and that the Spirit of GOD dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy; for the temple of GOD is holy, which temple ye are.”*

I Corinthians 3:16-17

*“And what agreement hath the temple of GOD with idols? for ye are the temple of the living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be MY people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a FATHER unto you, and ye shall be MY sons and daughters, saith the LORD Almighty.”*

II Corinthians 6:16-18

There is no agreement between the temple of GOD or the house of GOD and idols. Thus, idols should not be placed in the temple of GOD or the house of GOD; and idols should not be placed in any place, and idols should not be worshipped by anyone. Idolatry is a great sin against GOD.

*“Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.”*

I Corinthians 10:14

To anyone to be the temple of GOD or the house of GOD, the house of the LORD Dedication festival or the house of GOD Dedication festival or the house of prayer Dedication festival is very essential. The house of prayer Dedication festival celebration is one of the

most essential celebrations to obtain the glorious blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 10. THE LORD'S SUPPER FESTIVAL BLESSINGS OR THE HOLY COMMUNION FESTIVAL BLESSINGS

The LORD's Supper festival or the Holy Communion festival is most solemnly and awesomely celebrated in remembrance of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's horrible death on the cross. HIS most holy body has been broken for us; and HIS most holy blood has been shed for us. This festival should be celebrated during night-time and it should not be celebrated during daytime.

*"For I have received of the LORD that which also I delivered unto you, That the LORD JESUS the same night in which HE was betrayed took bread: And when HE had given thanks, HE brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is MY body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of ME. After the same manner also HE took the cup, when HE had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in MY blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of ME. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the LORD's death till HE come."*

I Corinthians 11:23-26

This festival should not be celebrated with malice or wickedness in the heart and it should be celebrated with sincerity and truth. Thus, unbelievers should not celebrate this festival.

*"Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth."*

I Corinthians 5:8

The LORD's Supper festival celebration gives the eternal life and the full life; and the LORD JESUS CHRIST will raise him up the last day (in the first resurrection); the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will dwell in him and he will dwell in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; and he will live with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever in HIS kingdom of heaven.

*"Then JESUS said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), and drink HIS blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso*



*eateth MY flesh, and drinketh MY blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. He that eateth MY flesh, and drinketh MY blood, dwelleth in ME, and I in him. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever."*

St. John 6:53-54, 56, 58

The LORD's Supper festival celebration is the most essential celebration to obtain the glorious heavenly blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This festival brings abundant blessings from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This festival is the most joyful festival of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This festival should be celebrated with great solemnity by the believers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 11. THE CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS ARE A SHADOW OF THINGS TO COME

*"Let no man therefore judge (accuse) you ... in respect of an holyday (Christian festival days), ... Which are a shadow of things to come; ..."*

Colossians 2:16-17

The Christian religious festivals, the Christian religious festival celebrations, the Christian religious festival decorations and adornments, the Christian religious festival services and worships, the Christian religious festival prayers, the Christian religious festival singings are a shadow of things to come.

Thus, the Christian festivals are a shadow of the glorious coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the glorious redemption of the body of the saints during the secret coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the glorious body of the saints which they are going to attain during the secret coming of the LORD JESUS CHRIST; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the first resurrection of the saints (the blessed and the holy) to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the thousand years rule (the Millennium Rule) over this world by the saints with CHRIST to come; this Millennium Rule of the saints with CHRIST will be the most righteous and the most peaceful and

the most honest rule; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the most glorious feast at mount Zion to come;

The Christian festivals are a shadow of the new earth and the new heavens characterized by righteousness to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the most glorious adornments in the kingdom of heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of a building of GOD, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens to come;

The Christian festivals are a shadow of the great happiness and the great joy of the saints in the kingdom of GOD to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the great glory of the LORD GOD Almighty in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the great comeliness and the great beauty of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to come;

The Christian festivals are a shadow of the real worship in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the real services in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the pure river of water of life in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the fruits of the tree of life in heaven to come; Christian festivals are a shadow of the crown of life in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the glorious sitting of the saints with GOD in HIS throne in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the eternal and the glorious rule of the saints with GOD in heaven to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the saints' rest from their labours to come;

The Christian festivals are a shadow of the terrible judgment of the LORD JESUS CHRIST to sinners to come; the Christian festivals are a shadow of the horrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur to sinners to come; and the Christian festivals are a shadow of the everlasting mourning and the everlasting tears to sinners in hell to come.

Thus, the Christian festivals, which are a shadow of things to come, should be celebrated. Now, besides these Christian religious festivals, all other festivals are not a shadow of things to come. Hence, other festivals should not be celebrated by anyone.

If the Christian religious festivals are not celebrated, then no one can understand these coming things. Hence the Christian religious festivals should be celebrated. Again, as the Christian religious festivals are about the coming things of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, everyone should celebrate the Christian religious festivals. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**12. WHAT IS THE OBJECT OR THE TRUE MEANING OF THE CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS ?**

*“Let no man therefore judge (accuse) you ... in respect of an holyday (Christian festival days), ... Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of CHRIST.”*

Colossians 2:16-17

The Christian religious festivals are a shadow of things to come; but the body or the object is of CHRIST, i.e., the true meaning of the Christian religious festivals is of CHRIST. Hence, the true meaning of the Christian religious festivals is of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The true meaning of the Christian religious festival celebrations is of the LORD GOD Almighty. As the Christian religious festival celebrations are of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, everyone should celebrate the Christian religious festivals.

Now, besides these Christian religious festivals, all other festivals are not of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, no one should celebrate the other festivals. Hence, the other festival celebrations are unwanted and useless celebrations; the other festival celebrations will not give any blessing; the other festival celebrations will bring the terrible wrath of GOD; the other festival celebrations will bring the terrible judgment of GOD; and the other festival celebrations will bring the terrible punishment of GOD. The other festival celebrations will bring the horrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. The other festival celebrations will bring a curse.

Thus, everyone must clearly know the body or the object of the Christian festival celebrations. Everyone must clearly understand the

true meaning of the Christian festival celebrations. Everyone must celebrate the Christian religious festivals to obtain abundant blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, the object or the true meaning of the Christian religious festivals, the Christian religious festival celebrations, the Christian religious festival services, the Christian religious festival decorations, etc., is of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. If anyone neglects CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, by not celebrating the Christian religious festivals, then how can he receive the blessings of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD; how can he escape from the terrible wrath of GOD; how can he escape from the terrible judgment of GOD; how can he escape from the horrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur; and how can he enter into the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven?

As the Christian religious festivals are a shadow of things to come and the object of the Christian religious festivals is of CHRIST, no one can judge or accuse the Christian religious festival celebrations; no one has any power or right to accuse the Christian religious festival celebrations; no one has any power or right to accuse the Christmas festival celebrations or the Christmas Day celebrations or the Easter festival celebrations or the Easter Sunday celebrations or the Pentecostal festival celebrations or the day of Pentecost celebrations or the New Year Day celebrations or the House of Prayer Dedication festival celebrations or the LORD's Supper festival celebrations. No one has any power or right to accuse these Christian religious festivals of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

As no one has any power or right to judge or accuse those who organize or participate any Christian religious festival celebration, no one has any power or right to judge or find fault with the Christmas Day, 25 December. Hence on 25 December, the Christmas Day or the Christmas festival must be celebrated without any debate and without any hesitation or hindrance and without any disturbance. As the LORD JESUS CHRIST our GOD has known the Christmas Day and established 25 December as the Christmas Day, everyone must celebrate the Christmas Day festival on this day. HE is the ONLY wise GOD and the great GOD and HE knows everything.

Thus, everyone must know the object or the true meaning of the Christian religious festival celebrations is of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, and no one will cause HIM trouble and no one will persecute HIM by any kind of argument. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 13. WHAT IS THE NEED OF THE CHRISTIAN FESTIVAL CELEBRATIONS ?

As the Christian religious festival celebrations are a shadow of things to come and the object of these celebrations is of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, everyone should celebrate these festivals. These Christian festivals reveal all the worldly and heavenly blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. All the spiritual blessings and worldly blessings are poured upon the people during these festivals. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST reveals HIMSELF and blesses us especially, enormously and immensely during these festivals. Special joy, special happiness, special health of the body, mind and soul, special strength, special peace, special comfort, special consolation, etc., are obtained during these festivals. Special joy of the HOLY SPIRIT will reside in the hearts of HIS people during these festivals.

Thus, the Christian festival days are the special days for HIS people; the Christian festival days are the special joyful days for HIS people; the Christian festival days are the days of special blessings to HIS people. Abundant blessings will be poured upon HIS people during these festival days. Hence, the need of these Christian religious festivals is obvious and everyone should celebrate these festival days specially without fail.

But, if anyone is ill or on a sickbed during these festival days, he will not be able to celebrate these festival days specially. Again if a servant of GOD or GOD's minister is fasting during these festival days by the commandment of GOD, then he cannot celebrate these festival days specially. On such occasions they cannot celebrate these festival days specially. Not celebrating these festivals on such occasions is not a sin or guilt. Again, the poor people with little money or few possessions cannot celebrate these festivals specially. If circumstances do not permit anyone to celebrate, in such a situation, not celebrating these festivals specially is not a sin or guilt. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 14. THE LORD JESUS CHRIST OUR GOD HAS GONE TO CELEBRATE HIS FESTIVALS

In the Old Testament period, our LORD GOD had commanded HIS people to celebrate the feast (festival) of the LORD's Passover, the feast of the Unleavened Bread, the feast of Harvest or the feast of Weeks, of the first-fruits of harvest or the Pentecostal festival, the feast of Ingathering or the feast of Tabernacles, the day of blowing of Trumpets on the first day of the seventh month, and the day of Atonement on the tenth day of the seventh month. The LORD GOD had also commanded that three times a year, all men-children should appear before the LORD GOD in the place which HE would choose. See Exodus 23:16; 34:22-23; Leviticus 23; and Deuteronomy 16:1-17.

When our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was in this world as Saviour, HE went to Jerusalem to celebrate the feast of the Dedication of the LORD's temple, the house of prayer and the feast of Tabernacles, and the feast of the LORD's Passover. See St. John 10:22-42; 7:2-53; St. Luke 2:41-47.

During the feast of the Dedication of the LORD's temple, our LORD JESUS was walking in the temple in Solomon's Porch. The Jews gathered round HIM, saying,

*"How long dost THOU make us to doubt? If THOU be the CHRIST, tell us plainly."*

St. John 10:24

JESUS answered them and said,

*"I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in MY FATHER's name, they bear witness of ME. But ye believe not, because ye are not of MY sheep, as I said unto you. MY sheep hear MY voice, and I know them, and they follow ME: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of MY hand. MY FATHER, which gave them ME, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of MY FATHER's hand. I and MY FATHER are One."*

St. John 10:25-30

Again, our LORD JESUS sent HIS disciples to the feast of Tabernacles. HE did not go with HIS disciples. However, after HIS disciples

had left for the feast, HE also went to the feast, not openly, but in secret. Then at the feast, the Jews sought HIM, and said,

*"Where is HE?"*

St. John 7:11

Now about the middle of the feast JESUS went up into the temple and taught. And the Jews marvelled, saying,

*"How knoweth this MAN letters, having never learned?"*

St. John 7:15

JESUS answered them and said,

*"MY doctrine is not MINE, but HIS that sent ME. If any man will do HIS will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of GOD, or whether I speak of MYSELF."*

St. John 7:16-17

On the last day the great day of the feast, JESUS stood and cried out, saying,

*"If any man thirst, let him come unto ME, and drink. He that believeth on ME, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly (heart) shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake HE of the Spirit, which they that believe on HIM should receive: for the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) was not yet given; because that JESUS was not yet glorified.)"*

St. John 7:37-39

On hearing HIS Words, many of the people said,

*"Of a truth this is the Prophet."*

St. John 7:40

Others said,

*"This is the CHRIST."*

St. John 7:41

Then some of the officers, who were sent by the chief priests and Pharisees, came to arrest HIM. But no man laid hands on HIM. Then the officers went back to the chief priests and Pharisees, who asked them,

*"Why have ye not brought HIM?"*

St. John 7:45

The officers answered,

*"Never man spake like this MAN."*

St. John 7:46

'Never man spake like this MAN' means 'No man ever spoke like this MAN'.

Further, when our LORD JESUS was twelve years old, HE went to Jerusalem for the feast of the Passover, according to the custom. In the temple, HE sat among the teachers and heard them, and asked them questions.

*"And all that heard HIM were astonished at HIS understanding and answers."*

St. Luke 2:47

When the feast of the Passover was near, our LORD JESUS had fed about five thousand men, besides women and children with five loaves of barley bread and two fishes. (Including women and children, the number will certainly exceed ten thousand. Ordinarily, in such a gathering the number of women will certainly exceed the number of men.) They all ate and were filled, and the disciples picked up twelve basketfuls of broken pieces that were leftover. See St. John 6:4-15.

Again, when it was almost time for a feast of the Passover, many went up from the country to Jerusalem, to purify themselves before the Passover and they sought for JESUS, and spoke among themselves as they stood in the temple,

*"What think ye, that HE will not come to the feast?"*

St. John 11:56

The next day a great multitude came to the feast. When they heard that JESUS was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of palm trees and went out to meet HIM, and cried out,

*"Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the LORD."*

St. John 12:13

'Hosanna' is Aramaic for GOD save or help; (an exclamation of adoration).

Then JESUS, when HE had found a young ass, sat on it; as it is written:



*"Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt."*

St. John 12:15

And as HE went, they spread their clothes on the way. When HE was drawing near the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise GOD with a loud voice for all the mighty works they had seen, saying:

*"Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the LORD: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest."*

St. Luke 19:38

This glorious event is traditionally known as the triumphal entry into Jerusalem. During peace times, Israel's kings used to ride on the colt of an ass to show their official entry. Thus, our LORD JESUS CHRIST arrived in the full declaration of HIS glorious kingship, the KING of kings. This most glorious kingly procession of our LORD JESUS clearly reveals the desirability of such processions to extol HIS highness. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The LORD JESUS, on the night HE was betrayed, celebrated and finished the Old Testament feast of the Passover with HIS disciples. Then, on the same night HE established the New Testament feast of the Passover or the feast of the LORD's Supper or the feast of the Holy Communion. HE sat down with HIS disciples and celebrated the feast of the LORD's Supper. And HE said to HIS disciples,

*"With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of GOD."*

St. Luke 22:15-16

And JESUS took bread, and blessed it, and broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said,

*"Take, eat: this is MY body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of ME."*

I Corinthians 11:24

And JESUS took the cup (containing juice of fresh new grapes), and gave thanks, and gave it to HIS disciples, saying,

*"This cup is the new testament in MY blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of ME."*

I Corinthians 11:25

For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the LORD's death till HE comes (I Corinthians 11:26). This glorious feast of the LORD's Supper is the most blessed feast of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This glorious feast is celebrated in remembrance of the LORD's death. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Since our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has gone and celebrated HIS feasts (festivals), we must also celebrate HIS feasts. Since our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has set an example to celebrate HIS feasts, we must also celebrate HIS feasts. Not celebrating HIS feasts is against the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Everyone must fulfil HIS will by celebrating HIS glorious festivals, to enter into the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 15. PAUL, THE APOSTLE HAS CELEBRATED THE LORD'S FESTIVALS

*"Let no man therefore judge (accuse) you ... in respect of an holyday (Christian festival days), ... Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of CHRIST."*

Colossians 2:16-17

In this verse, Paul the apostle has warned that no one should accuse anyone in respect of celebrating the Christian religious festivals. Hence it shows that Paul had celebrated all Christian religious festivals for the glory of the LORD.

Again, in Acts 20:16 we see that Paul was in a hurry to reach Jerusalem to celebrate the Pentecostal festival or the day of Pentecost. This shows that Paul had celebrated the Pentecostal festival for the glory of the LORD.

*"For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost."*

Acts 20:16

Further, Paul has commanded to celebrate the New Testament feast of the Passover or the feast of the LORD's Supper or the feast of the Holy Communion without malice or wickedness in the heart, and with sincerity and truth. This also shows that Paul had celebrated the feast of the LORD's Supper for the glory of the LORD.

*“Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even CHRIST our Passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.”*

I Corinthians 5:6-8

Hence, everyone should celebrate the Christian religious festivals for the glory of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **16. USELESS AND WORTHLESS CELEBRATIONS OF THE CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS**

Many people are celebrating the glorious Christian religious festivals uselessly and worthlessly by drinking alcoholic drinks, by using narcotics, by seeing films, sports, etc., by acting dramas, by playing revellings, orgies, etc. When celebrating the festivals, knowingly or unknowingly they beat one another; intentionally or unintentionally they kill one another; and without the least compunction they indulge in all kinds of evil deeds. Such useless and worthless celebrations are abominations in the sight of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Such useless and worthless celebrations are sins.

Acting as Father Christmas (Santa Claus) during Christmas festival seasons is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christmas festival. Father Christmas (Christmas Father) is an imaginary old man with long red loose clothes and a long white beard. Acting as Father Christmas is sin.

Making Christmas huts with idols or statues or images or photos or pictures of child JESUS in the manger, Virgin Mary, angels, shepherds, and other unwanted articles, is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christmas festival. Making such huts is sin.

Making Christmas trees with idols, or statues, or images, or photos, or pictures of child JESUS, Virgin Mary, angels, shepherds and other unwanted articles, is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christmas festival. Making such trees is sin. Now, Christmas tree is an evergreen tree, or an artificial tree that looks similar, that people

decorate with multi-coloured lights and other very decorative articles and have in their homes or outside at Christmas. Making such Christmas trees is not sin.

Sending Christmas cards with photos, or pictures of child JESUS, Virgin Mary, angels, shepherds and other unwanted photos or pictures is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christmas festival. Sending such cards is sin. But, sending Christmas cards with photos or pictures of natural scenery, natural phenomena, etc., to reveal the magnificent and mighty works of GOD, is not sin.

Singing songs of joy and praise sung at Christmas—singing Christmas carols, without godliness and holiness is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christmas festival. Singing such Christmas carols is sin. But, singing Christmas carols with godliness and holiness is not sin.

Making motion pictures (movies) or seeing motion pictures (movies) to celebrate Christian religious festivals is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christian festivals. Making or seeing such things is sin.

Carrying the shrines of pagans, the pedestals of idols, statues, images, photos, pictures, etc., is a useless and worthless celebration of the Christian festivals. Carrying such things is sin.

Christian religious celebration without heart reality is very hateful to GOD. The worship during Christian religious celebrations and other times, without heart reality, will make GOD feel strong disgust and great anger against the people. Such celebrations and worships never satisfy the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST hates and despises such festival days.

*"I hate, I despise your feast days, and I will not smell (savour) in your solemn (sacred) assemblies. Take thou away from ME the noise of thy songs; for I will not hear the melody of thy viols."*

Amos 5:21, 23

Such useless and worthless celebrations will bring the terrible wrath of GOD; such celebrations will bring the terrible judgment of GOD; and such celebrations will lead to the horrible hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. So no one should celebrate the glorious

Christian religious festivals uselessly, worthlessly, improperly, irreverently and impiously.

#### 17. THE TRUE CELEBRATION OF THE CHRISTIAN FESTIVALS

Many people are wrongly thinking that the true celebration of the Christian festivals is in drinking and in eating and in dancing and in games and in sports and in plays and in tournaments and in amusements and in merriments and in merrymakings and in cries and in gambling and in gambolling and in revellings and in decorating houses and buildings and in wearing new dresses and ornaments and in displaying fireworks and in giving large feasts.

But, the true celebration of the Christian festivals is in repentance from sins and in forgiveness of sins and in salvation from sins and in redemption from sins and in all goodness and in the born-again experience and in holiness and in the HOLY SPIRIT and in spiritual growth and in prayers and in praying in the HOLY SPIRIT and in the spiritual fruit and in the spiritual gifts and in rejoicing in the LORD and in worshipping GOD in the HOLY SPIRIT, and in godliness and in the fear of GOD and in obedience and in humility and in fellowship with one another and in the love of GOD and in praising GOD and in thanking GOD and in singing spiritual songs in heart and in truth and in faith and in good testimony and in doing the will of GOD.

*"Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the LORD is. And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess (which leads to debauchery); but be filled with the Spirit; Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the LORD; Giving thanks always for all things unto GOD and the FATHER in the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST; Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of GOD."*

Ephesians 5:17-21

*"Let the Word of CHRIST dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the LORD. And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the LORD JESUS, giving thanks to GOD and the FATHER by HIM."*

Colossians 3:16-17

The true celebration of the Christian festivals will bring everlasting blessings of the LORD GOD; it will bring spiritual and bodily blessings of the LORD GOD; it will bring heavenly and worldly blessings of the LORD GOD; and it will lead to the everlasting kingdom of GOD or the everlasting kingdom of heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Everyone should celebrate the Christian religious festivals properly and truly to enter into the kingdom of GOD and to receive eternal happiness in heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**18. THE CELEBRATION OF THE CHRISTIAN RELIGIOUS FESTIVALS IS NOT SIN, BUT THE CELEBRATION OF OTHER RELIGIOUS FESTIVALS IS SIN**

*"Let no man therefore judge (accuse) you ... in respect of an holyday (Christian festival days), ... Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of CHRIST."*

Colossians 2:16-17

As the Christian religious festival days are a shadow of things to come and the body or the object of the Christian religious festival days is of CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the celebration of the Christian religious festival days is not sin. But the other religious festival days are not a shadow of things to come and the object of other religious festival days is not of CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the celebration of other religious festival days is sin.

Now, no one should make mention of the names of other gods, and their names should not be heard from anyone's mouth. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD warns,

*"And in all things that I have said unto you be circumspect (cautious): and make no mention of the name of other gods, neither let it be heard out of thy mouth."*

Exodus 23:13

And no one should serve other gods, for that will be a great snare to them. This snare will make them fall into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"...Neither shalt thou serve their gods; for that will be a snare unto thee."*

Deuteronomy 7:16

But if you fail to do these things, you will be sinning against the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD; and you may be sure that your sins will find you out; and you will receive the wages of your sin, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"But if ye will not do so, behold, ye have sinned against the LORD: and be sure your sin will find you out."*

Numbers 32:23

*"For the wages of sin is death; ..."*

Romans 6:23

So, everyone must be blameless before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD in all things.

*"Thou shalt be perfect with the LORD thy GOD."*

Deuteronomy 18:13

Further, the Christian religious festival days should not be covered and these days should be celebrated, to reveal all things to come and to reveal CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the object of the Christian religious festival days.

The celebration of the Christian religious festival days will bring great blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. But the celebration of other religious festival days will bring curse. The true celebration of the Christian religious festival days will give eternal life in eternal heaven. But the celebration of other religious festival days will give eternal fire in eternal hell. Thus, the celebration of the Christian religious festival days is not sin; but the celebration of other religious festival days is sin. The wages of sin is the fiery lake of burning sulphur, the second death. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST does not desire your inheritance in hell, but HE desires your inheritance in heaven. Therefore, HE is revealing all these things in this rare book " ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !! " Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 19. CELEBRATION OF THE JUBILEE

Our LORD GOD owned the land and HIS people.

*"...For the land is MINE; for ye are strangers and sojourners with ME."*

Leviticus 25:23

"Proclaim liberty" is an expression referring to the release of Hebrew (Israelite) slaves and of property every fifty years in the Year of Jubilee. Celebration of a Jubilee is very much Scriptural.

*"And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee unto you; and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family."*

Leviticus 25:10

During the Jubilee celebrations, the trumpet must be sounded to express their joy and happiness. Further, trumpet must be sounded to notify the Jubilee celebrations in the entire land (Leviticus 25:9). Trumpet is made of ram's horn called "yobel". From yobel the term "Jubilee" has come.

Besides, the Jubilee celebrations must be holy (Leviticus 25:12). During the Jubilee celebrations, liberty or freedom must be declared and everyone must be free to return to his own property (Leviticus 25:13). Everyone should hallow the year of Jubilee, the fiftieth year (Leviticus 25:10). Once every fifty years, slaves who are bought with a price should be freed, servants under contract or agreement should be freed, debts should be cancelled and ancestral properties should be returned to the original family owners. In a way, the sale of land in Israel was a lease until the year of Jubilee. The LORD GOD prohibited the accumulation of properties to the detriment of the poor. **"The land is MINE"**, said the LORD. GOD's people are only tenants (I Chronicles 29:15; Hebrews 11:13). Their true home is in heaven (Philippians 3:20). In this world Christians are aliens (I Peter 2:11). Their GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is in heaven, where CHRIST is and where HIS believers are spiritually in union with HIM. They have set their minds on the things of coming heavenly life. The celebration of Jubilee helps the poor and stabilizes the society in their



earthly life and gives them hope for their coming heavenly life. Glory be to GOD!

Now, in the famous passage (Isaiah 61:1) announcing good news to the afflicted, including a proclamation of liberty to the captives, Isaiah uses the term "liberty". This text was quoted by CHRIST in the synagogue in Nazareth with reference to HIS own ministry. HE proclaimed liberation from sin and all its consequences. Freedom from sin is very essential for a sinful man. Freedom from sin removes our intolerable burden of sin.

*"The SPIRIT of the LORD is upon ME, because HE hath anointed ME to preach the Gospel to the poor; HE hath sent ME to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the LORD."*

St. Luke 4:18-19

The New Testament clearly reveals the ministry of the HOLY SPIRIT in CHRIST's humanity (Hebrews 10:5), birth (St. Matthew 1:18), growth (St. Luke 2:40, 52), baptism (St. Luke 3:21-22), temptation (St. Luke 4:13-14), ministry (St. Luke 4:18-19), miracles (St. Matthew 12:28), death (Hebrews 9:14), resurrection (Romans 8:11) and glorification (St. John 16:13-14).

The acceptable Year of the LORD is the New Testament age. This is typified by the Year of Jubilee in Leviticus 25:8-17. During the New Testament age, GOD would accept the returned captives of sin (Isaiah 49:8; II Corinthians 6:2). During the New Testament age, the oppressed under the bondage of sin would enjoy the liberty of GOD's salvation. During the New Testament age, the captives, the oppressed, etc., would keep the New Testament Jubilee after getting the liberty of GOD's salvation. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### **4. DO CHRISTIANS NEED PILGRIMAGES?**

In the past two decades, several individuals and organizations have come out to organize what is widely known as "Holy Land Tours." "Walk where HE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) walked; and feel HIS presence" is their slogan to lure the poor souls! Most of the participants have a false belief that they have now become holier than the

non-participants and some of the participants falsely believe that a visit to the Holy land—Jerusalem undoubtedly guarantee their passage into heaven, the kingdom of GOD itself. Most of the participants are baptized once again in the turbid waters of the Jordan River. And after this re-baptism, they falsely feel exuberant and energetic! The following are the words of a gullible participant! "Now I can live the way I like. Because here I booked my ticket to the cozy life of heaven after my death." So, it is high time we weeded out these wrong notions from all Christians.

The Holy Bible very clearly says,

*"... Ye shall be holy: for I the LORD your GOD am holy."*

Leviticus 19:2

Some evangelists and TV missionaries are very busy in increasing their worldly wealth (worldly riches) abundantly in promoting their projects by these pilgrimages. What a pitiable thing it is!

As the SPIRIT of GOD is present everywhere, undertaking this pilgrimage to Jerusalem or Bethlehem or Nazareth or any other Biblically important place will not guarantee their entry into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. So, call unto HIM from any place; HE will answer all your prayers and requests readily. Glory be to GOD!

But, going to Jerusalem and all other Biblically important places for testifying them to themselves and to other people is good in the sight of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. By this, their faith (belief) in the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and in HIS Holy Bible—the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Scriptures as well as the faith (belief) of those who hear about the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and about HIS Good Book, the Holy Bible abounds exceedingly. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

# BAPTISM AND LORD'S SUPPER OR HOLY COMMUNION

## 1. BAPTISM

OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST says,

**"He that believeth (who believes) and is baptized shall be  
(will be) saved."**

St. Mark 16:16

In this section, let us discuss the baptism of water but not the baptism of the HOLY SPIRIT. Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST commanded baptism, saying,

*"GO ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the  
name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST  
(the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

St. Matthew 28:19

HE commanded HIS disciples to go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT. Before the foundation of the world, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST had foreseen the necessity of this glorious baptism of water. So, when HE was in this world as Saviour, HE instituted this glorious baptism through John, the Baptist—the prophet.

### 1.1 WHAT IS BAPTISM? AND BLESSINGS OF BAPTISM—31BLESSINGS

The word 'BAPTISM' means 'the most glorious heavenly washing prepared by the heavenly GOD in HIS unbounded and manifold wisdom, for HIS saved people'.

Only by this baptism, do HIS people become the members of HIS church. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be coming to catch up with HIM HIS church. Those who are the members of HIS church will be caught up with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Now, the word **baptize** (in Greek baptizo) means "to dip or immerse in water", indicating the correct procedure for baptizing.

Fulfilling the righteousness of the LORD GOD is baptism. See St. Matthew 3:13-16.

*"...For thus it becometh us (is fitting for us) to fulfil all righteousness. ..."*

St. Matthew 3:15

Acknowledging the fact that the LORD GOD is just is baptism. Those who are baptized, declare the righteousness of GOD always.

*"And all the people that heard HIM, and the publicans, justified (declared the righteousness of) GOD, being baptized with the baptism of John."*

St. Luke 7:29

Accepting the counsel of the LORD GOD is baptism.

*"But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of GOD against themselves, being not baptized of HIM."*

St. Luke 7:30

Baptism is a glorious sign for the people who repent to GOD and receive the forgiveness of sins (remission of sins) from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Thus, baptism is a glorious symbol for the forgiveness of sins and for the repentance from sins.

*"Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of JESUS CHRIST for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Acts 2:38

Again, baptism is a preparation to receive the gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT (I Corinthians 12:8-12). See Acts 2:38.

Baptism is a glorious sign for the people who receive salvation from sins. People are saved from their sins by their faith. The LORD JESUS CHRIST said to a woman who had lived a sinful life:

*"Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace."*

St. Luke 7:50

The saved people, after receiving baptism, become the members of the church.

*"...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be (were being) saved."*

Acts 2:47

Baptism is a glorious sign for those people who have belief in JESUS CHRIST.

*"He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned (condemned)."*

St. Mark 16:16

Washing away the sins is baptism. Washing away the atom-like or dust-like sins is baptism, i.e., washing away the sins purely and clearly is baptism.

*"And now why tarriest thou (why do you wait)? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the LORD."*

Acts 22:16

The experience of getting into JESUS CHRIST is baptism.

*"Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into JESUS CHRIST were baptized into HIS death?"*

Romans 6:3

The experience of getting into the death of JESUS CHRIST is baptism. See Romans 6:3.

The experience of raising up from the dead is baptism. Those who were dead in their transgressions and sins, are raised up from the dead by baptism. Those who are raised up from the dead, are getting the blessing to sit together in heavenly places in CHRIST JESUS.

*"Therefore we are buried with HIM by baptism into death: that like (just) as CHRIST was raised up from the dead by the glory of the FATHER, even so we also should walk in newness of life."*

Romans 6:4

*"And you hath HE quickened (made alive), who were dead in trespasses and sins; Even when we were dead in sins, hath*

*quicken us (made us alive) together with CHRIST, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in CHRIST JESUS."*

Ephesians 2:1, 5-6

Getting the experience to walk in newness of life is baptism. See Romans 6:4.

United together in the likeness of the death of JESUS CHRIST is baptism, that is united with the death of JESUS CHRIST is baptism. The blessings of the LORD JESUS CHRIST are coming through HIS death. Through HIS death, we receive life—spiritual life, eternal life and immortality.

*"For if we have been planted (united) together in the likeness of HIS death, we shall be also in the likeness of HIS resurrection."*

Romans 6:5

United together in the likeness of the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST is baptism, that is united with the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST is baptism; the LORD JESUS CHRIST was resurrected for our justification. Mighty faith is coming to us through HIS resurrection. This faith is the victory that overcomes the world. See Romans 6:5.

*"Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification."*

Romans 4:25

'For' means 'because of'.

*"And if CHRIST be not raised, your faith is vain (futile); ye are yet in your sins."*

I Corinthians 15:17

*"For whatsoever is born of GOD overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith."*

I John 5:4

A holy washing in the most holy name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is baptism.

*"And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the LORD JESUS, and by the Spirit of our GOD."*

I Corinthians 6:11

Putting on CHRIST is baptism.

*"For as many of you as have been baptized into CHRIST have put on CHRIST."*

Galatians 3:27

Baptism is sanctification with the washing of water and cleansing with the washing of water by the Word of GOD. 'The washing of water' refers to water baptism, which is the outward symbol of an inward change.

*"That HE might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word."*

Ephesians 5:26

Getting the circumcision in the LORD JESUS CHRIST is baptism. Getting the circumcision of CHRIST is baptism. This is the spiritual circumcision. This circumcision is not done by the hands. This is the glorious circumcision. Heart, eyes, ears, tongue, hands etc., of the body are circumcised by the LORD JESUS CHRIST gloriously. This circumcision is that of the heart, in the Spirit. This circumcision is the circumcision of the foreskins of the heart, in the Spirit. This circumcision is that of the eyes, in the Spirit. This circumcision is that of the tongue, in the Spirit. This circumcision is that of the hands, in the Spirit. This circumcision is that of the ears, in the Spirit etc. By this circumcision, those who are baptized are all one in CHRIST JESUS. By this circumcision, they are rooted and built up in HIM and strengthened in the faith. Now, circumcision denotes cutting off or removal. By this spiritual circumcision, one's sinful nature is broken and removed by CHRIST.

*"In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of CHRIST."*

Colossians 2:11

*"Circumcise therefore the foreskin of your heart, and be no more stiffnecked (stubborn)."*

Deuteronomy 10:16

*"Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: lest MY fury come forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings."*

Jeremiah 4:4

*"For as many of you as have been baptized into CHRIST have put on CHRIST. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond (slave) nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in CHRIST JESUS."*

Galatians 3:27-28

*"For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the Spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of GOD."*

Romans 2:28-29

Now, a man is not a Jew if he is only one outwardly (fleshly). A man is a Jew if he is one inwardly (spiritually). Further, circumcision which is done by men (not by women) merely outward and physical is not circumcision. Circumcision is circumcision of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the written law. The true circumcision consists of those circumcised of heart, not of body. Circumcision of the body (the flesh) has no spiritual value or significance. In spiritual circumcision, there is no ethnic (Jew, Greek or Gentile), social (bond, free) or sexual (male, female) distinctions. In CHRIST JESUS neither circumcision nor uncircumcision has any value. The only thing that counts is faith in JESUS that is produced by love.

*"For in JESUS CHRIST neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love."*

Galatians 5:6

Putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of CHRIST is baptism. See Colossians 2:11. Putting off the body of the sins of the flesh and getting a holy body of sinless nature is baptism. Those who get baptism are totally immersed into the water. When totally immersed into the water, the body of the sins of the flesh is put off into the water and a holy body of sinless nature is given by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Hence, they come out from the water with holy flesh and body. This is the true baptism. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Being buried with JESUS CHRIST is baptism. See Romans 6:4. Those who are dead to sin are to be buried with JESUS CHRIST, that is those who are dead to sin, are to be baptized. Those who are not



dead to sin, should not be buried with JESUS CHRIST, that is those who are not dead to sin, should not be baptized. If anyone who has not been dead to sin or if anyone who has not been saved is given baptism, then the one who is giving baptism will be punished by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Hence, anyone who is not dead to sin (not saved), should not be buried with JESUS CHRIST, that is anyone who is not dead to sin (not saved), should not be given baptism.

A saved one is laden with a man who has been dead to sin, until he receives baptism. A saved one is laden with the dead body of a man who has been dead to sin, until he receives baptism. If he is laden with the above dead body for a long time, then he will get tired in his spiritual life. His tiredness in spiritual life will lead to a fall in his spiritual life. Therefore, a man who is saved by JESUS CHRIST or a man who is dead to sin should receive baptism immediately.

Getting the faith of the operation of GOD (the faith in the power of GOD), who raised the LORD JESUS CHRIST from the dead is baptism.

*"Buried with HIM in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with HIM through the faith of the operation of GOD, who hath raised HIM from the dead."*

Colossians 2:12

Risen with the LORD JESUS CHRIST is baptism. See Colossians 2:12. By receiving baptism, they are fit for taking part in the first resurrection of the saints. Blessed and holy people will take part in the first resurrection. The second death or hell has no power over them. They will be priests of GOD and of CHRIST. GOD and CHRIST are one. They will reign this world with CHRIST for a thousand years.

*"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of GOD and of CHRIST, and shall reign with HIM a thousand years."*

Revelation 20:6

Seeking those things, which are in heaven above is baptism. Getting the experience of setting hearts on things above is baptism. Getting the experience of setting minds on things above is baptism and getting the experience of setting minds not on earthly things

is baptism. Anyone who has received baptism must be dead to sins and he should live for righteousness. Again, anyone who has received baptism is risen up with the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, his/her life is hidden with CHRIST in GOD. When CHRIST, who is his/her life finally appears to catch up with HIS church, then he/she will also appear with HIM in glory.

*"If ye then be risen with CHRIST, seek those things which are above, where CHRIST sitteth on the right hand of GOD. Set your affection (mind) on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hid with CHRIST in GOD. When CHRIST, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with HIM in glory."*

Colossians 3:1-4

Salvation by the washing of regeneration (rebirth) is baptism. When they come out from the water after receiving baptism, they receive the salvation by the washing of regeneration. They put off their sinful generation (sinful birth) into the water when they are totally immersed into the water, and when they come out from the water, they receive the sinless generation or regeneration.

*"Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to HIS mercy HE saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Titus 3:5

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said unto Nicodemus:

*"Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of GOD."*

St. John 3:3

Two Old Testament incidents show a shadow of baptism. When the children of Israel passed through the Red sea, they were all baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea (I Corinthians 10:1-2). Eight souls including Noah, when they were in the ark of Noah, they were all baptized (I Peter 3:20-21). The above two incidents show only a shadow of baptism, and they do not show the true or real baptism. Receiving the New Testament baptism as mentioned above is the real baptism. Receiving the New Testament baptism is baptism.

Not the putting away (removal) of the filth (dirt) of the flesh (body), but the putting away of the filth of the soul and spirit is baptism. A spiritual washing of the soul and spirit is baptism.

*"The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward GOD,) by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST."*

I Peter 3:21

The pledge of a good conscience towards GOD is baptism. See I Peter 3:21. Now, their covenant with death and their agreement with hell, before getting their salvation, should not stand and they should be disannulled. Hence, a life with the pledge of a good conscience towards GOD is baptism. A life with the pledge to obey all teachings, preachings, doctrines, and commandments of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is baptism.

Further, the salvation by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST is baptism. See I Peter 3:21. By the resurrection of the LORD JESUS CHRIST the holy ones ask:

*"O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?"*

I Corinthians 15:55

By receiving baptism, the holy ones are released and saved from the power of grave and redeemed from the power of death. See Hosea 13:14.

## 1.2 WHERE TO GO ?

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST received baptism in the river Jordan to set an example to others (St. Matthew 3:13). JESUS HIMSELF was about thirty years old when HE received baptism (St. Luke 3:21-23). HE was baptized by John, the Baptist to set an example to others. John was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because there was plenty of water. See St. Matthew 3:13-16; St. John 3:23. Hence, to receive baptism, you must go to a place where there is plenty of water. Receiving baptism from an artificial tank is against the example shown by our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And John also was baptizing in Aenon near to Salim, because*

*there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized."*

St. John 3:23

### 1.3 HOW TO RECEIVE ?

To receive baptism, you must go to a place where there is plenty of water and you must go down into the water. The one who gives baptism should also go down into the water. Hence, both of them should go down into the water.

*"...They went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the LORD caught away Philip, ..."*

Acts 8:38-39

*"And JESUS, when HE was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: ..."*

St. Matthew 3:16

### 1.4 HOW TO BE BAPTIZED ?

The one who receives baptism should go down into the water with the one who gives baptism, and he/she should receive baptism by totally immersing into the water. He/she should get the totally immersed baptism.

Baptism should be received as if one is buried. When one is buried, no member or part of the body is left open. Hence, when you are baptized, your whole body should be totally immersed or totally buried into the water. You must be buried with the LORD JESUS CHRIST by baptism.

*"Therefore we are buried with HIM by baptism ..."*

Romans 6:4

*"Buried with HIM in baptism, ..."*

Colossians 2:12

Sanctification and cleansing with the washing of water by the Word of GOD is baptism and salvation by the washing of rebirth is baptism. See Ephesians 5:26 and Titus 3:5. Now, perfect sanctification, cleansing and salvation are obtained only by the perfect washing of water by the Word of GOD; i.e., only by the total washing of water by the Word of GOD; i.e., only by the totally immersed baptism.

### 1.5 BY WHOM ?

The LORD JESUS CHRIST was baptized by John, the Baptist to set an example to others. The king Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just and holy man. He protected John, and he liked to listen to his words and he did many things as per his words.

*"For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him; and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly."*

St. Mark 6:20

John, the Baptist was a great man in the sight of the LORD GOD. He was never to take any fermented drink. He was filled with the HOLY SPIRIT, even from his mother's womb.

*"For he shall be great in the sight of the LORD, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), even from his mother's womb."*

St. Luke 1:15

John, the Baptist was a servant of the LORD GOD. He was not married. He lived a celibate lifestyle. He lived as a hermit and sage.

Receiving baptism from such true ministers or servants of the LORD GOD would be the true baptism. The apostles, prophets, evangelists and pastors, the called servants of the LORD GOD are authorized by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to give baptism.

The elders or bishops and deacons, the uncalled servants are never authorized by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to give baptism. The elders or bishops and deacons are married men (I Timothy 3: 1-13; Titus 1:5-9). No married men are authorized by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to give baptism. No women (married or unmarried) are authorized by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to give baptism.

### 1.6 IN WHOSE NAME ?

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has commanded HIS disciples to baptize in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT. See St. Matthew 28:19. Hence, the disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST baptized in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT. They had never changed HIS command.

But, in Acts 2:38 it is written:

*"...Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of JESUS CHRIST for the remission of sins, ..."*

Acts 2:38

Again, in Acts 19:5 it is written:

*"...They were baptized in the name of the LORD JESUS."*

Acts 19:5

The LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded HIS disciples (apostles) to baptize in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT. But, in the Acts of the Apostles, it is written differently. What are the reasons for these writings? What are the meanings of these writings? What is the mystery in these writings?

At that time, the Jews or the Israelites believed GOD, the FATHER and GOD, the SON and GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT. They also believed that GOD the SON will come as MESSIAH. MESSIAH in Hebrew means CHRIST in Greek. But, the Jews did not believe that GOD the SON is the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They did not believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is their MESSIAH. They did not have any belief about the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who is GOD the SON. Hence, they denied JESUS CHRIST; they denied their own MESSIAH; they denied their own JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH; they denied their own GOD the SON.

By this time, the apostles did great wonders in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. On seeing the great wonders of the LORD, the Jews or the Israelites began to believe JESUS CHRIST. They believed JESUS CHRIST as their own MESSIAH; they believed JESUS CHRIST as their own SAVIOUR; they believed JESUS CHRIST as their own REDEEMER; they believed JESUS CHRIST as their own JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH; they believed JESUS CHRIST as their own GOD the SON.

Then, they repented; they confessed their sins; they received forgiveness of sins; and they received salvation from sins. Thus, they were saved by the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Thus, they were saved by GOD the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. To reveal these important things, St. Luke has written like this.

Hence, these are the reasons for these writings in the Acts of the Apostles. But, the saved people were baptized in the name of the

FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT, as commanded by the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Those Jews or Israelites believed JESUS CHRIST and were saved by JESUS CHRIST. To mean that the Jews or the Israelites believed JESUS CHRIST as their own SAVIOUR and that they were saved by JESUS CHRIST, it is written in the Acts of the Apostles as above. To mean that the Jews or the Israelites accepted JESUS CHRIST as their own MESSIAH, it is written as above. To mean that the Jews or the Israelites accepted JESUS CHRIST as their own GOD the SON, it is written as above. To mean that the Jews or the Israelites believed JESUS CHRIST as their own REDEEMER and that were redeemed by JESUS CHRIST, it is written as above. To mean that the Jews or the Israelites believed JESUS CHRIST as their own JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, it is written as above. To mean that the Jews or the Israelites believed JESUS CHRIST as their own GOD the SON and that they were saved by their own GOD the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, it is written as above. Hence, these are the meanings of these writings in the Acts of the Apostles.

But, no one was baptized in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They were all baptized in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT as commanded by the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The disciples or the apostles of the LORD had never changed any commandment of their heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They had never baptized anyone in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is the true thing. This is the certain thing. There is no change in this true and certain thing. There is no change in this truth. There is no change in this truthful saying.

Again, one mystery (secret thing) in the writings in the Acts of the Apostles is to be discussed here. The Holy Bible says:

*"Now the LORD is that (the) Spirit: and where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is liberty."*

II Corinthians 3:17

From this verse, we come to know that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Spirit or the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the HOLY SPIRIT; and the HOLY SPIRIT is the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the*

*government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace."*

Isaiah 9:6

From this verse, we come to understand that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON.

Besides, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said:

*"I and MY FATHER are One."*

St. John 10:30

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said:

*"...He that hath seen ME hath seen the FATHER; ..."*

St. John 14:9

From these verses, we come to know that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER.

Again, the Holy Bible says:

*"In whom we have redemption through HIS blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible GOD, the firstborn of every creature."*

Colossians 1:14-15

From the above verses, we come to understand that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the true image of the invisible GOD. That is, GOD the SON is the true image of the invisible GOD; GOD the SON is the true image of the invisible GOD the everlasting FATHER. Now, GOD the everlasting FATHER is residing in the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the everlasting FATHER and the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the SON and the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the HOLY SPIRIT. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the most holy GOD of TRINITY. GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT are the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is the mystery in these writings in the Acts of the Apostles.

Hence, everyone must clearly understand that everyone must be baptized in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT as commanded by the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



## 1.7 WHO TO BE BAPTIZED ?

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded HIS disciples to go and teach all nations (make disciples of all nations), baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY SPIRIT.

*“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT): Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.”*

St. Matthew 28:19-20

Now, who are the disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST? Those who continue in HIS Word are HIS disciples. Those who hold on to HIS teachings are really HIS disciples.

*“Then said JESUS to those Jews which believed on HIM, If ye continue in MY Word, then are ye MY disciples indeed.”*

St. John 8:31

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the heavenly Master. Those who hold on to the teachings of their heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and follow in HIS footsteps are HIS disciples. Those who hold on to the teachings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, are really HIS disciples. Those who obey the Word of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, are HIS real disciples.

The real disciples of the LORD JESUS CHRIST are to be baptized. The real servants of the LORD JESUS CHRIST are given the supreme command to go and make disciples of all the nations by baptizing them and teaching them to observe all HIS preachings (St. Matthew 28:19-20).

Again, those who are to be baptized should believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER, and GOD the SON, and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT; and HE is the ONLY TRUE GOD; and HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

*“And we know that the SON OF GOD is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know HIM that is true, and we*

*are in HIM that is true, even in HIS SON JESUS CHRIST. This is the true GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

Further, those who are to be baptized should believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Saviour, and they should repent of their sins and receive forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins by faith. See Acts 2:38, 47.

*"And HE (JESUS) said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace."*

St. Luke 7:50

Again, those who are to be baptized should be dead with CHRIST from the rudiments of the world. Rudiments of the world means basic principles of the world. See Colossians 2:20. Basic principles of the world are always against the godly principles of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Basic principles of the world are only worldly principles. They are not the principles of the LORD GOD. They are not the ordinances of the LORD GOD. They are the legalistic ordinances. Some basic principles of the world are: observing times, augury, enchantment, sorcery, divination, necromancy, wizardry, consulting with familiar spirits, etc.

*"Wherefore if ye be dead with CHRIST from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, ... after (according to) the commandments and doctrines of men?"*

Colossians 2:20, 22

Further, those who are to be baptized should not lay aside the commandments of the LORD GOD; they should not hold onto the traditions of men; they should not keep their own traditions; they should not nullify the Word of GOD by their traditions; they should never hold the human commands and teachings; and they should never hold the doctrines of men. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world the Pharisees and scribes asked HIM,

*"Why walk not THY disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?"*

St. Mark 7:5

JESUS answered and said to them,

*"Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth ME with their lips, but their heart is far from ME. Howbeit in vain do they worship ME, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of GOD, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do."*

St. Mark 7:6-8

And JESUS said to them,

*"Full well ye reject the commandment of GOD, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or his mother; Making the Word of GOD of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye."*

St. Mark 7:9-13

Hence, those who are to be baptized should be dead to the traditions and doctrines of men.

**In the Holy Bible, the marriage laws relating to husband and wife are given as follows:**

*"Wherefore they are no more (no longer) twain, but one flesh. What therefore GOD hath joined together, let not man put asunder."*

St. Matthew 19:6

*"Whosoever shall put away (divorce) his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away (divorce) her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery."*

St. Mark 10:11-12

*"Let not the wife depart from her husband: But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away (divorce) his wife. The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the LORD."*

I Corinthians 7:10-11, 39

*"For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of (concerning) her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man."*

Romans 7:2-3

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST hates divorce. Husband should not put away his wife and wife should not depart from her husband.

*"...HE hateth (hates) putting away: ..."*

Malachi 2:16

*"...Let not the wife depart from her husband."*

I Corinthians 7:10

There is no question of divorce in marriage. So, HE severely warns,

*"...Let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth."*

Malachi 2:15

The wife is bound to her husband by the law of the LORD GOD; and the husband is bound to his wife by the law of the LORD GOD. This is the important marriage law. But by tradition, the wife is bound to her husband by a wedding ring/band or by a wedding chain. Again, by tradition, an engagement ring/bangle is also given by a man to a woman when they agree to get married; an engagement bracelet is also given by a woman to a man when they agree to get married. Such things are by traditions and not by the law of the LORD. Those who are to be baptized should be dead to such things of traditions.

Further, those who are to be baptized should save themselves from the crooked and from the corrupt and from the perverse generation; they should save themselves from vain worship; they should save themselves from the hypocrites; and they should save themselves from their vain and hypocritical teachings. The apostle Peter testified and exhorted the people, saying,

*"Save yourselves from this untoward generation."*

Acts 2:40

Then those who gladly received Peter's word were baptized; and that day (on the Pentecostal day) about three thousand souls were added to the church (Acts 2:41). Hence, those who are to be baptized should gladly receive the Word of GOD, and they should save themselves from vain worship, and they should save themselves from the crooked and the corrupt and the perverse generation.

Now, Isaiah the prophet condemned his own people, the Jews or the Israelites for honouring GOD with their mouth and lips but not with their heart. Further, he told that their fear or reverence toward GOD was taught by the commandment of men (Isaiah 29:13). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST also condemned them for their hypocrisy as follows:

*"Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh (near) unto ME with their mouth, and honoureth ME with their lips; but their heart is far from ME. But in vain they do worship ME, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men."*

St. Matthew 15:7-9

Further, those who are to be baptized should be dead to sins and should live for righteousness.

*"...How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?"*

Romans 6:2

*"Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed."*

I Peter 2:24

Again, those who are to be baptized should not be conformed to this world (to the pattern of this world), but they must be transformed by the renewing of their mind.

*"And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of GOD."*

Romans 12:2

For the transformation by the renewing of their mind, first of all, they should offer their bodies a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to GOD. This is the wise spiritual worship; this is the wise spiritual

service. They are the wise people; they are the wise virgins; they are not the foolish people; they are not the foolish virgins (St. Matthew 25:1-2).

*"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of GOD, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, which is your reasonable service."*

Romans 12:1

Again, for the transformation by the renewing of their mind, their whole spirit and soul and body should be kept holy and blameless. Transformation by the renewing of the mind makes transformation in spirit and soul and body.

*"And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

Further, for the full transformation, they should shake off their dust of sin; and they should loose themselves from the bands of their neck. Those bands of their neck were tied when they were the captives and slaves of sins and Satan. Again, they should loose themselves from the bands of their hands, legs, noses, ears, waists, fingers, etc. The bands of the necks are chains; the bands of the fingers are rings, etc. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST says,

*"Shake thyself from the dust; arise, and sit down, O Jerusalem: loose thyself from the bands of thy neck, O captive daughter of Zion."*

Isaiah 52:2

'Daughter' means 'people'.

Isaiah the prophet condemned the proud and fashionable people, since they were more interested in the latest fads of fashion than the spiritual well-being of them. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST warns,

*"Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling (jingling) with their feet: Therefore the LORD will smite with a scab the crown of the head of the daughters of Zion, and the LORD will discover (uncover) their secret parts. In that day the LORD will take away the bravery of their*

*tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon, The chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers, The bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings, The rings, and nose jewels, The changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins, The glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils. And it shall come to pass, that instead of sweet smell there shall be stink; and instead of a girdle a rent; and instead of well set hair baldness; and instead of a stomacher a girding of sackcloth; and burning instead of beauty."*

Isaiah 3:16-24

'Daughters' refer to people.

Again, all the activities of those who are to be baptized, should be godly. They should keep their feet off from evil. Their eyes should look straight ahead. Their eyelids should look straight before. They should give attention to HIS Words. They should incline their ear to HIS sayings. They should put away their deceitful mouth. They should put perverse lips far from them. Above all else, they should keep their heart with diligence, for out of it spring the issues of life. See Proverbs 4:20-27.

They should not wear any ornaments. They should not well-dress their hair. They should not apply any strong pungent fragrance or perfume on their body. They should always live in godliness. Their lives should be always precious in the sight of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Otherwise, the wrath of the LORD GOD will be upon them; they will be judged and thrown into the lake of burning sulphur.

Further, wearing ornaments will kindle the wrath of GOD. To escape from the wrath of GOD, the LORD GOD has commanded the children of Israel too to take off their ornaments. So they stripped off their ornaments by the mount Horeb. The LORD said to Moses,

*"Depart, and go up hence, thou and the people which thou hast brought up out of the land of Egypt, unto the land which I swear unto Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, saying, Unto thy seed will I give it: And I will send an angel before thee; and I will drive out the Canaanite, the Amorite, and the Hittite, and the Perizzite, the Hivite, and the Jebusite: Unto a land flowing with milk and*

*honey: for I will not go up in the midst of thee; for thou art a stiffnecked (stubborn) people: lest I consume (destroy) thee in the way."*

Exodus 33:1-3

When the people heard these evil (grave) tidings, they mourned, and no one put on his/her ornaments. For the LORD had said to Moses,

*"Say unto the children of Israel, Ye are a stiffnecked (stubborn) people: I will come up into the midst of thee in a moment, and consume thee: therefore now put off thy ornaments (jewels) from thee, that I may know what to do unto thee."*

Exodus 33:5

So, the children of Israel stripped themselves of their ornaments by mount Horeb.

*"And the children of Israel stripped themselves of their ornaments by the mount Horeb."*

Exodus 33:6

GOD hates beautifying or having a high thinking about one's own beauty, since it makes one's own heart haughty; and HE hates causing oneself to glitter since it corrupts one's own wisdom (Ezekiel 28:17). Again, wearing the following dresses will also kindle the wrath of GOD.

1. Costly array (expensive clothes). See I Timothy 2:9.
2. The changeable suits of apparel, i.e., the dress with pictures like dogs, cats, birds, lizards, etc. See Isaiah 3:22.
3. Stomacher or comely dresses or shining dresses. See Isaiah 3:24.
4. Attire of a harlot or attire of a prostitute. It is an unpleasant thin dress, which shows the nakedness of the body.

*"And, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtil of heart."*

Proverbs 7:10

5. A woman must not wear men's clothing. A man must not wear women's clothing. Hence, **transvestism** is sin. This sin is often associated with homosexuality and lesbian (Leviticus 20:13).



*"The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy GOD."*

Deuteronomy 22:5

The adornment of women must be as follows:

*"In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works."*

I Timothy 2:9-10

*"Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in GOD, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement."*

I Peter 3:3-6

Further, those who are to be baptized should have no desire to make a fair show in the flesh (no desire to make a good outward appearance) and they should have a form (dress) of godliness, not denying the power of godliness. They should have no desire to have a moustache, sideboards (sideburns), etc.

*"As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of CHRIST."*

Galatians 6:12

*"Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away."*

II Timothy 3:5

Again, those who forsake the LORD GOD, deck themselves with earrings and jewellery. Thus, they burn incense to the Baalim (Baal) or to the devils and they go after their lovers, i.e., they go after the devils. Hence, they are doing sins, which deserve eternal punishment in hell.

*"And I will visit upon her the days of Baalim, wherein she burned incense to them, and she decked herself with her earrings and her jewels, and she went after her lovers, and forgot ME, saith the LORD."*

Hosea 2:13

Those who are to be baptized should throw their ornaments away like a menstrual cloth.

*"Ye shall defile also the covering of thy graven images of silver, and the ornament of thy molten images of gold: thou shalt cast them away as a menstruous cloth; thou shalt say unto it, Get thee hence."*

Isaiah 30:22

The spiritual meaning of the word 'images' mentioned in the above verse is 'bodies of the people'.

Further, men should not have long hair; and women should not have short hair; and men and women should not decorate their hair.

*"Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering. But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of GOD."*

I Corinthians 11:14-16

Again, women should not be quarrelsome and ill-tempered. Those who are to be baptized should not be quarrelsome and ill-tempered.

*"It is better to dwell in a corner of the housetop, than with a brawling woman in a wide house. It is better to dwell in the wilderness, than with a contentious and an angry woman."*

Proverbs 21:9, 19

*"A continual dropping in a very rainy day and a contentious woman are alike."*

Proverbs 27:15

*"But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath."*

Romans 2:8

Besides, women should be always virtuous. A virtuous woman is a crown to her husband (Proverbs 12:4). Crown is a symbol of monarchy.

Further, men should be without anger or disputing. They should have holy hands. Blood should not be in their hands. Those who are to be baptized should not be adulterers or adulteresses or fornicators or homosexuals or lesbians or gay persons.

*"I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting."*

I Timothy 2:8

*"And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide MINE eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood."*

Isaiah 1:15

*"For your hands are defiled with blood, and your fingers with iniquity; your lips have spoken lies, your tongue hath muttered perverseness."*

Isaiah 59:3

*"That they have committed adultery, and blood is in their hands, ..."*

Ezekiel 23:37

*"And the righteous men, they shall judge them after the manner of adulteresses, and after the manner of women that shed blood; because they are adulteresses, and blood is in their hands."*

Ezekiel 23:45

*"...But whoremongers (fornicators) and adulterers GOD will judge."*

Hebrews 13:4

Those who are to be baptized should not be idolaters. Again, covetousness is idolatry. Covetous man is an idolater. Any man who loves anything or anybody more than GOD is an idolater.

*"Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry."*

I Corinthians 10:14

*"...Covetousness, which is idolatry."*

Colossians 3:5

*"...Covetous man, who is an idolater, ..."*

Ephesians 5:5

Again, no one should set up their idols in their heart. See Ezekiel 14:3. Are there idols in your heart? Even though you are not worshipping or keeping idol gods of the world in your life, giving

priority to anything else above GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in your life is idolatry.

No one should have any liking for the unwanted dresses or for the ornaments. They should hate the above things wholeheartedly. Decked with gold, silver, precious stones, pearls, etc., and dressed in unwanted clothes with unwanted colours are the decorations of the bride of antichrist; they are the decorations of the bride of Satan, the devil.

*"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH."*

Revelation 17:4-5

The spiritual meaning of the word 'woman' mentioned in the above verse is all the congregations in the world, except the congregation of the church of the living GOD. That is, except the congregation following the first century Christian church. See Acts Chapter 2.

Those who are to be baptized must be transformed by the renewing of their mind and they should not be conformed to the pattern of this world. Now, what is told in the Holy Bible about the body of a man?

*"...Now the body is not for fornication, but for the LORD; and the LORD for the body."*

I Corinthians 6:13

*"Know ye not that your bodies are the members of CHRIST? shall I then take the members of CHRIST, and make them the members of an harlot? GOD forbid (certainly not)."*

I Corinthians 6:15

Hence, those who wear the dress of a prostitute are making them (their bodies) the members (organs) of a prostitute. This is a sin, which deserves eternal punishment in hell. Thus, their bodies should always be the members (organs) of CHRIST, the most holy GOD.

Everyone should make it his/her habit to flee fornication. Every sin that a man or a woman does is outside the body, but he/she who

commits fornication (sexual immorality) sins against his/her own body. Fornication is a great sin, which deserves eternal punishment in hell.

*"Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without (outside) the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body."*

I Corinthians 6:18

Further, the people of the LORD GOD are not their own. They belong to the LORD GOD. They received their bodies from the LORD GOD and hence their bodies should be the temple of the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) which is in you, which ye have of GOD, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify GOD in your body, and in your spirit, which are GOD's."*

I Corinthians 6:19-20

The people of the LORD GOD are bought with a price. They are bought with the most holy blood of JESUS CHRIST, the LORD GOD. They are bought with the most holy flesh of JESUS CHRIST, the LORD GOD. They are bought with the most holy life of JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD. The LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST gave HIMSELF fully to buy HIS people; HE gave HIMSELF fully to save HIS people; HE gave HIMSELF fully to redeem HIS people; HE gave HIMSELF fully to sanctify HIS people; HE gave HIMSELF fully to anoint HIS people with the HOLY SPIRIT; HE gave HIMSELF fully to make HIS people enter into the kingdom of GOD; HE gave HIMSELF fully to make HIS people escape from judgment and hell. Since the people of the LORD GOD are bought by GOD, they should glorify GOD in their body and in their spirit and in their soul. They should glorify GOD in all things. Those who are to be baptized should always glorify GOD in all things.

Again, those who are to be baptized should have belief.

*"He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned (condemned)."*

St. Mark 16:16

Those who have the belief will live adhering strictly to the instructions, words of advice, laws, statutes, commandments, etc., of the LORD GOD. They will walk in accordance with the glorious Gospel of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They should have strong belief in the promises of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They should have the faith with deeds. They should have the living faith. The faith without deeds is dead. The faith without deeds is useless. There is only one faith.

*"But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?"*

James 2:20

*"One LORD, one faith, one baptism."*

Ephesians 4:5

Further, those who are to be baptized should believe with all their heart. As Philip and the eunuch (the Ethiopian) went on their way, they came to some water. And the eunuch said,

*"See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?"*

Acts 8:36

Then Philip said,

*"If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest."*

Acts 8:37

And the eunuch answered and said,

*"I believe that JESUS CHRIST is the SON OF GOD."*

Acts 8:37

Then Philip baptized the eunuch (the Ethiopian).

Who are they that believe with all their heart? What are the experiences of such believers? If anyone believes with all his heart, then he will believe the following verses of the Holy Bible fully.

*"...I am the LORD that healeth thee."*

Exodus 15:26

*"And the LORD will take away from thee all sickness, ..."*

Deuteronomy 7:15

*"Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases."*

Psalms 103:3

*"...HIMSELF (JESUS HIMSELF) took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses."*

St. Matthew 8:17

*"Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the LORD: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the LORD shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much."*

James 5:14-16

If anyone believes with all his heart, then he will never search for any worldly doctor or any worldly physician and he will never take any medicine for his diseases or sicknesses. He believes fully that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the heavenly doctor and heavenly physician and HE will heal all his diseases and sicknesses and HE is the best healer of all diseases and sicknesses and HE is the divine healer of all diseases and sicknesses. He will also believe that there are miracles and gifts of healings in the church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 12:28). Those who are to be baptized should believe all the above things with all their heart. Everything that does not come from faith is sin.

*"...Whatsoever is not of faith is sin."*

Romans 14:23

## 1.8 CHILD BAPTISM

Baptism should never be given to children or infants. The LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded HIS disciples to baptize the people as mentioned in St. Matthew 28:19-20. Thus, those who are to be baptized should be HIS disciples. But, a little child or infant could not be HIS disciple; the little children or infants could not be HIS disciples.

Further, from the Word of the LORD JESUS CHRIST in St. Mark 16:16, anyone can clearly understand that he who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned. Now, no belief can be seen in a little child or infant; no belief can be seen in little children or infants. Hence, a little child or

infant should not be baptized; little children or infants should not be baptized.

Again, from Acts 2:38, everyone can clearly understand that baptism is to be given to those who received forgiveness of sins (remission of sins), after they repent of their sins. Hence, baptism is a glorious symbol for the forgiveness of sins and for the repentance from sins. A little child has no idea about repentance from sins or about forgiveness of sins. The little children have no idea about repentance from sins or about forgiveness of sins. Thus, baptism should never be given to little children.

Furthermore, from St. Luke 7:29-30, we come to know that acknowledging the fact that the LORD GOD is just is baptism, and accepting the counsel of the LORD GOD is baptism. Besides, from St. Matthew 3:15, we come to know that fulfilling the righteousness of GOD is baptism. The above three things cannot be done by a little child; the above three things cannot be done by little children. Hence, little children should never be baptized.

In addition, baptism is a glorious sign for those people who have belief or faith in JESUS CHRIST (St. Mark 16:16). But, little children have no idea about this belief or faith in CHRIST. Thus, baptism should never be given to little children.

Again, baptism is the experience of washing away the sins (Acts 22:16). But, little children have no idea about their sins. Hence, they have no idea about this glorious spiritual experience. Thus, baptism should never be given to little children.

Further, baptism is the experience of getting into JESUS CHRIST; baptism is the experience of getting into the death of JESUS CHRIST (Romans 6:3). But, little children have no idea about these glorious spiritual experiences. Hence, little children should never be baptized.

Furthermore, baptism is the experience of raising up from the dead. Those who were dead in their transgressions and sins are raised up from the dead by baptism (Romans 6:4). But, little children have no idea about their transgressions and sins. Hence, baptism should never be given to little children.



Besides, united with the death of JESUS CHRIST is baptism; united with the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST is baptism (Romans 6:5). But, little children have no idea about these glorious spiritual experiences. Thus, little children should never be baptized.

Again, getting the experience to walk in newness of life is baptism (Romans 6:4). But, little children have no idea about this glorious spiritual experience. Little children have no idea about this spiritual walking with a new life. Hence, baptism should never be given to little children.

Further, a holy washing in the most holy name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is baptism (I Corinthians 6:11). Putting on CHRIST is baptism (Galatians 3:27). But, little children have no idea about these glorious spiritual experiences. Thus, little children should never be baptized.

Furthermore, sanctification and cleansing with the washing of water by the Word of GOD is baptism (Ephesians 5:26). But, little children have no idea about these glorious spiritual experiences. Hence, baptism should never be given to little children.

Again, getting the spiritual circumcision in the LORD JESUS CHRIST is baptism; putting off the body of sins of the flesh by the circumcision of CHRIST is baptism (Colossians 2:11). But, little children have no idea about these glorious spiritual experiences. Thus, little children should never be baptized.

In addition, burying with JESUS CHRIST is baptism; risen with the LORD JESUS CHRIST is baptism; getting the faith of the operation of GOD is baptism (Colossians 2:12); seeking those things, which are in heaven is baptism (Colossians 3:1-2). But, little children have no idea about these blessed experiences. Hence, baptism should never be given to little children.

Besides, salvation by the washing of regeneration or rebirth is baptism (Titus 3:5). But, little children have no idea about this glorious spiritual rebirth or regeneration. Thus, baptism should never be given to little children.

Further, receiving the New Testament baptism is baptism (I Peter 3:21). But, little children have no idea about the New Testament

baptism or about the Old Testament baptism. Hence, little children should never be baptized.

Furthermore, putting away of the filth of the soul and spirit is baptism (I Peter 3:21). But, little children have no idea about their filthy soul or spirit. Thus, little children should never be baptized.

Again, the pledge of a good conscience towards GOD is baptism (I Peter 3:21). But, little children have no idea about any pledge; they have no idea about a good conscience; they have no idea about GOD. Thus, baptism should never be given to little children.

In addition, salvation by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST is baptism (I Peter 3:21). But, little children have no idea about the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST; they have no idea about this glorious salvation. Hence, little children should never be baptized.

Besides, baptism is a preparation to receive the gift of the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 2:38). But, little children have no idea about the preparation to receive the gift of the HOLY SPIRIT. Thus, baptism should never be given to little children. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now many people have a wrong thought about the baptism of Lydia and her household and the baptism of the household of Stephanas and the baptism of the Philippian jailer and his household.

Now, Lydia was led to believe GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The LORD opened her heart to heed the things spoken by Paul. She believed the gospel preached by Paul and then her household also believed the gospel and they were saved. And then they were baptized. But many people wrongly assume that the baptism of Lydia and her household implies infant baptism.

*"And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped GOD, heard us: whose heart the LORD opened, that she attended unto (to heed) the things which were spoken of Paul. And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the LORD, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us."*

Paul baptized the household of Stephanas. This also does not imply infant baptism.

*"And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other."*

I Corinthians 1:16

Now, Paul and Silas were guiltlessly seized and dragged and brought before the magistrates, and the magistrates commanded them to be rent off their clothes and to be beaten. After they had been severely beaten, they were thrown into prison. The jailer was commanded to guard them securely. So he put them in the inner cell of the prison and fastened their feet in the stocks. They were in great agony and pain.

At midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to GOD, and the other prisoners were listening to them. Suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken. At once all the prison doors were opened, and everybody's chains were loosed.

The jailer woke up, and when he saw the prison doors open, he drew his sword and was about to kill himself because he thought the prisoners had escaped. But Paul called with a loud voice, saying,

*"Do thyself no harm: for we are all here."*

Acts 16:28

Then the jailer called for lights, rushed in and fell down trembling before Paul and Silas. He brought them out and asked,

*"Sirs, what must I do to be saved?"*

Acts 16:30

They said,

*"Believe on the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house."*

Acts 16:31

Paul and Silas spoke the Word of the LORD to him and to all who were in his house. And he took them the same hour of the night and washed their stripes. The jailer and his household believed the gospel preached by Paul and Silas and they were saved and they were baptized. And when he had brought them into his house, he set food

before them; he greatly rejoiced because he had come to believe in GOD—he and his household. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“...And was baptized, he and all his, straightway. ... and rejoiced, believing in GOD with all his house.”*

Acts 16:33-34

Again, many people wrongly assume that the baptism of the jailer's household implies infant baptism. But, Paul and Silas preached the Word of the LORD, the glorious Gospel of JESUS CHRIST to the jailer's household. They all heard the word preached; they all understood the word preached; they all had believed the word preached; they all had confessed their sins before the LORD JESUS CHRIST with broken-heart, with tears, and with humility; they all had received the salvation of their souls (the salvation from sins), the reward of their faith. Those who had believed the Gospel, and obtained salvation from sins, were baptized.

*“Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls.”*

I Peter 1:9

Further, no infant can hear and understand the word preached; no infant can believe the word preached; no infant can receive salvation from sins by confessing its sins. Hearing the Word of GOD, believing the Word of GOD, confessing sins, receiving salvation from sins and being baptized with the washing of water by the word and by the HOLY SPIRIT were the consistent acts of the first century Christians. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Again, in the household of the jailer or in the household of Lydia or in the household of Stephanas, there might be infants or there might not be infants. But, neither Paul nor Silas had baptized infants; neither Paul nor Silas had baptized children. They baptized as per the commandment of our LORD JESUS CHRIST in St. Matthew 28:19-20. They baptized the disciples of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 8:31). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, household means all the people who live together in a house, especially a family. In a family, there may be infants or there may not be infants.

*“For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them*

*which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you."*

I Corinthians 1:11

Here, the household of Chloe had informed about disagreements, does not mean that the nursing child or the nursing children of the household of Chloe had informed about disagreements. This means that two or more people in the household of Chloe had informed about disagreements. In the household of Chloe, there might be infants or there might not be infants. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Furthermore, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has never baptized any little child; HE has never commanded HIS disciples to baptize little children. But, HE took the little children up in HIS holy arms, put HIS holy hands upon them, and blessed them. Hence, little children should never be baptized. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And they brought young children to HIM, that HE should touch them: and HIS disciples rebuked those that brought them. But when JESUS saw it, HE was much displeased, and said unto them, 'Suffer the little children to come unto ME, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of GOD. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of GOD as a little child, he shall not enter therein.' And HE took them up in HIS arms, put HIS hands upon them, and blessed them."*

St. Mark 10:13-16

Again, to set an example, our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST received baptism, when HE HIMSELF was about thirty years old.

*"Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that JESUS also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, And the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon HIM, and a voice came from heaven, which said, THOU art MY beloved SON; in THEE I am well pleased. And JESUS HIMSELF began to be about thirty years of age, ..."*

St. Luke 3:21-23

From these things, anyone can very clearly understand that child baptism (infant baptism) is spiritually inefficacious and unwarranted.

## 1.9 HOW MANY BAPTISMS ?

*“ONE LORD, ONE FAITH, ONE BAPTISM.”*

Ephesians 4:5

There is only one baptism—water baptism. This baptism is given and received according to the above-mentioned facts. Any baptism contrary to the above-mentioned facts is not baptism. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

In the first century, some disciples of John the Baptist had given baptism (John's baptism) to some people perversely, as it is given nowadays in many churches, as sprinkling of water or pouring of water or immersing in water in a small artificial tank. This baptism had not been given according to the above-mentioned facts. So, the apostle Paul deemed it necessary to baptize them, and they were baptized. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, He said unto them, Have ye received the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT). And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on HIM which should come after him, that is, on CHRIST JESUS. When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the LORD JESUS. And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. And all the men were about twelve.”*

Acts 19:1-7

## 1.10 NEGLECT OF BAPTISM

*“But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of GOD against themselves, being not baptized of him.”*

St. Luke 7:30

If anyone neglects baptism, after getting the required experiences, then he is rejecting the counsel of the LORD GOD against himself. Hence, he is doing evil against himself; he is doing sin against

himself; he is doing evil against himself again; he is doing sin against himself again. Thus, he is going out of the way of the LORD GOD. This evil act will give him judgment and hell.

Hence, the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD warns those who are rejecting the counsel of the LORD JESUS CHRIST against themselves.

*"And now why tarriest thou (why do you wait)? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the LORD."*

Acts 22:16

### 1.11 SIGNIFICANCE OF BAPTISM

Anyone who has received baptism is risen up with the LORD JESUS CHRIST and his/her life is hidden with CHRIST in GOD. When CHRIST who is his/her life finally appears to catch up with HIM HIS church, then he/she will also appear with HIM in glory (Colossians 3:1-4).

Now, when the children of Israel started their journey to Canaan, the Promised Land, the Red sea or the world of sea fully obstructed their journey. And the Egyptians, Pharaoh and all his horses and chariots and horsemen and troops of army pursued the children of Israel and were about to overtake them as they were by the Red sea. The children of Israel saw the Egyptians marching after them. They were greatly terrified and cried out to the LORD GOD. Moses the man of GOD (the servant of GOD) also cried out to the LORD GOD. Then the LORD GOD wonderfully divided the waters of the Red sea through HIS servant Moses and the children of Israel went through the sea on dry ground (Exodus 14:1-22).

Likewise, the people who are baptized have started their journey to their heavenly Canaan, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. As the Red sea or the world of sea obstructed the children of Israel, the world will obstruct the people who are baptized. As our LORD GOD gave victory to the children of Israel through HIS servant Moses, HE will certainly give victory to the people who are baptized through HIS true servants.

Further, we have already seen that when the children of Israel passed through the Red sea, they were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea (I Corinthians 10:1-4). After they were baptized,

they went out into the wilderness of Shur. And they were three days in the wilderness without finding any water. When they came to Marah, they could not drink its water because it was bitter. At that time also, Moses, the servant of GOD, cried out to the LORD GOD, and the LORD GOD showed him a tree. He cut a piece of wood from that tree and cast it into the water, and the water became sweet (Exodus 15:22-25).

Likewise, the life of those people who are baptized is like the life in the wilderness. But, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is with them always "to save them to the uttermost" (Hebrews 7:25). Further, the world will become bitter to the people who are baptized. But, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will make it sweet to HIS people through HIS true servants.

Again, after our LORD JESUS was baptized, HE was tempted by Satan, the devil and HE overcame the tempter Satan, the devil (St. Matthew 4:1-11). Likewise, the people who are baptized will have to meet temptations. Because our LORD JESUS HIMSELF suffered when HE was tempted, HE is able to help those who are tempted (Hebrews 2:18). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—the Great Helper (Hebrews 13:6), will give HIS great help during those temptations and give HIS great victory to HIS people. For that, everyday we should pray to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—"Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil" (St. Matthew 6:13).

As soon as our LORD JESUS was baptized, HE came up out of the water. At that moment, the heavens were opened to HIM and HE saw the Spirit of GOD descending like a dove and lighting (alighting) upon HIM (St. Matthew 3:16). Again, baptism is a preparation to receive the gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 2:38). Hence, the people who are baptized should immediately wait and pray for the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT (I John 2:20; II Corinthians 1:21) and for obtaining the gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT (I Corinthians 12:8-12) and for obtaining the fruits of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23; Ephesians 5:9). The anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT and the gifts of the HOLY SPIRIT and the fruits of the HOLY SPIRIT are very essential for one's spiritual life. Without these spiritual blessings, no one can live as a victorious spiritual man. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



## 2. LORD'S SUPPER OR HOLY COMMUNION

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST says,

**“Whoso (whoever) eateth (eats) MY flesh, and drinketh (drinks) MY blood, hath (has) eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.”**

St. John 6:54

The LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion is the most solemn religious feast in the Christian church in which one unleavened bread (the bread without yeast), made up of fresh and fine grains of wheat and new grape juice, made up of fresh and fine grapes (the fruits of the vine) are shared in a solemn ceremony as a remembrance of the great suffering and death of JESUS CHRIST to pay for our sins. This is the most awesome Christian worship instituted by the LORD JESUS CHRIST on the eve of HIS death, being a spiritual partaking of bread and the fruits of the vine. The two symbols of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion are the bread, representing the broken body of CHRIST, and the cup, representing CHRIST's shed blood. Saint Matthew tells us,

*“And as they were eating, JESUS took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, ‘Take, eat; this is MY body.’ And HE took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, ‘Drink ye all of it; For this is MY blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.’ But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in MY FATHER's kingdom.”*

St. Matthew 26:26-29

Only the believers, the saved people of the LORD must observe the feast of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, and it must be observed during night and it should not be observed during daytime (I Corinthians 11:23-26).

### 2.1 PASSOVER

When we read Exodus 12:1-20, we can very well understand what the Israelites' Old Testament feast of the LORD's Passover was about. The above Passover was celebrated by killing a lamb for each

household in the evening, on the fourteenth day of the first month of their year. The month Nisan or Abib is the first month of their year. The lamb must be one year old male, without blemish (defect). If any household is too small for a whole lamb, they must share one with their nearest neighbour, having taken into account the number of people there are. The lamb may be taken from the sheep or the goats. The lamb was the sacrifice of the LORD's Passover, during the Old Testament period. See Exodus 12:27.

From the above day of the first month evening until the evening of the twenty-first day of the first month, they should eat unleavened bread (bread made without yeast), the bread of affliction (Deuteronomy 16:3). For seven days, no leaven (yeast) is to be found in their houses. And whosoever eats anything with yeast in it will be cut off from the congregation (community) of Israel. The unleavened bread refers to holiness and lowliness of heart. This seven day feast is called the feast of Unleavened Bread.

When the first feast of the LORD's Passover was observed by the Israelites in Egypt, they obtained the following blessings from the LORD GOD. See Exodus Chapter 12. The blessings are:

1. They obtained full freedom from the cruel slavery of Egypt.
2. They were saved from the cruel death of all the first-born in the land of Egypt, from the first-born of Pharaoh, the king of Egypt that sat on his throne unto the first-born of the captive that was in the dungeon and all the first-born of cattle, by the terrible wrath of the LORD GOD.
3. There was a great difference between the Israelites, the children of the LORD GOD and the Egyptians.
4. While there was loud wailing and a great cry in the land of Egypt, because there was not a house without someone dead; the Israelites were celebrating the feast of the LORD's Passover in great joy and happiness.
5. They started their journey towards the land of Canaan (the land of Palestine), their Promised Land, promised by the LORD GOD.

Now, to observe (keep) the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover, you must obtain full freedom from the slavery of sins, from the slavery of Satan, the devil and from the slavery of curse; you must be saved and redeemed from the terrible wrath of the LORD GOD; there must be a great difference between you and other Gentiles, the unsaved people; you must have the experience to celebrate the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion in great joy and happiness; and you must be a traveller towards the land of heavenly Canaan (the kingdom of heaven), your Promised Land, promised by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The feast of the LORD's Passover must be observed during night and it should not be observed during daytime (Exodus 12:42). To set an example, our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST also observed the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion during night-time and not on daytime (I Corinthians 11:23-26).

The New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Breaking of Bread or the Holy Communion is clearly explained in I Corinthians 5:6-8.

*"Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even CHRIST our Passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth."*

I Corinthians 5:6-8

The spiritual meaning of 'old leaven' means 'old sins' and 'little leaven' means 'dust-like or atom-like very small sins'. The New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Breaking of Bread or the Holy Communion must be observed with sincerity and truth and not with malice and wickedness. They should not bear malice against the LORD GOD; they should not malign others and they must be noble.

In the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Lamb of GOD is sacrificed for us and for the whole

world, on the fourteenth day of the first month of their year. Hence, the Old Testament feast of the LORD's Passover came to an end.

**Now, the regulations (ordinances) for the feast of the LORD's Passover are as follows. The regulations are:**

1. No stranger is to eat of it (Exodus 12:43). These strangers are the people who are strangers to the laws and doctrines and commandments of the LORD GOD.
2. No hired servant is to eat of it (Exodus 12:45). These hired servants are the people who are living for this world and not living for the kingdom of heaven. They are the most pitiable people.

*"If in this life only we have hope in CHRIST, we are of all men most miserable."*

I Corinthians 15:19

3. No uncircumcised person is to eat of it (Exodus 12:48). By the circumcision of the LORD GOD, they are renewed in the spirit of their mind and they put on the new man, created to be like GOD in true righteousness and holiness.

*"In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of CHRIST."*

Colossians 2:11

*"That ye put off concerning the former conversation (conduct) the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after GOD is created in righteousness and true holiness."*

Ephesians 4:22-24

4. All the congregation of Israel must celebrate it (Exodus 12:47). The congregation of Israel is the congregation of the LORD GOD. The congregation of the LORD GOD is the congregation of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The congregation of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is HIS church. The saved and the baptized people are the members of HIS church. They are without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.

*"...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be saved."*

Acts 2:47

*"That HE might present it to HIMSELF a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish."*

Ephesians 5:27

## **This is how the children of GOD are to eat the feast of the LORD's Passover:**

*"And thus shall ye eat it; with your loins girded, your shoes on your feet, and your staff in your hand; and ye shall eat it in haste: it is the LORD's Passover."*

Exodus 12:11

'Your loins girded' means 'a belt on your waist'.

Now, this loin is the belt of truth; these shoes are the feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace; and this staff is the shield of faith.

*"Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, ...And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked."*

Ephesians 6:14-16

The New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover is otherwise called the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread.

## **2.2 PARTICIPANTS**

Further, in the first century Christian church, the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread was observed by those who continued (devoted) themselves steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine, and those who continued themselves steadfastly in fellowship with each other and those who continued themselves steadfastly in prayers.

*"And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers."*

Acts 2:42

‘In Breaking of Bread’ means ‘in LORD’s Supper’ or ‘in Holy Communion’. Apostles’ doctrine includes their witnesses, their works, their instant prayers, their fellowship with one another, and their Breaking of Bread.

Those who continue themselves steadfastly in the above three things are eligible to continue themselves steadfastly in the Breaking of Bread or eligible to partake of the Breaking of Bread or of the LORD’s Supper or of the Holy Communion.

Now, some people say that the Old Testament is not necessary for them and the New Testament is enough for them. But, they must know that **the apostles’ doctrine contains all the doctrines from Genesis to the Revelation**. Hence, all the doctrines in the Holy Bible are the apostles’ doctrines. All the doctrines in the Holy Bible are handed over by the LORD GOD to HIS apostles. The mysteries in the Holy Bible are revealed by the LORD GOD to HIS apostles of the New Testament period and the mysteries are revealed by the LORD GOD to HIS prophets through HIS apostles. But, the mysteries were not revealed to HIS ministers of the Old Testament period.

*“How that by revelation HE made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of CHRIST) Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto HIS holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit.”*

Ephesians 3:3-5

‘In other ages’ means ‘in the Old Testament generations’.

Further, what is told about the ministers of the old covenant? What is told about the ministry of the old covenant? What is told about the ministers of the new covenant? And what is told about the ministry of the new covenant?

*“Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament (new covenant); not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth life. But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly (steadily) behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away (passing away): How shall not the ministration of the Spirit be rather (more) glorious? For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness*

*exceed in glory. For even that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of (because of) the glory that excelleth. For if that which is done away (passing away) was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious. Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness (boldness) of speech: And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to (look steadily at) the end of that which is abolished (was passing away): But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the Old Testament; which veil is done away in CHRIST. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the LORD, the veil shall be taken away."*

II Corinthians 3:6-16

'Ministration' means 'ministry'.

*The spiritual meaning of the word 'the letter' is the laws of the Old Testament, i.e., eye for eye, tooth for tooth etc.*

The new covenant ministry is the ministry of the Spirit, more glorious than the old covenant ministry. Its glory remains always. The new covenant ministry brings righteousness and everlasting glory. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**Now, what are the three sections of the Old Testament ? See St. Luke 24:44.**

1. The things which are written in the law of Moses.
2. The things which are written by the prophets (the Scriptures of the prophets).
3. The things which are written in the Psalms.

All the mysteries in the Old Testament are revealed only to the apostles and not to others. Let us see some examples.

**What is the revelation to Paul, the apostle relating to the law of Moses ?**

*"Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also? For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth GOD take care*

*for oxen? Or saith HE it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that thresheth in hope should be partaker of his hope."*

I Corinthians 9:8-10

'Doth GOD take care for oxen?' means 'Is it oxen GOD is concerned about?'

### **What is the revelation to Paul, the apostle relating to the Scriptures of the prophets ?**

*"Now to HIM that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of JESUS CHRIST, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting GOD, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith."*

Romans 16:25-26

The Gospel of Paul, the preaching of JESUS CHRIST clearly reveals the mysteries in the Scriptures of the prophets.

### **What is the revelation to Paul, the apostle relating to the Psalms ?**

*"...Today if ye will hear HIS voice, Harden not your heart, as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness."*

Psalms 95:7-8

*"Again, HE limiteth (designates) a certain day, saying in David, Today, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if ye will hear HIS voice, harden not your hearts."*

Hebrews 4:7

Therefore, 'Today' means 'GOD set a certain day'.

### **What is the revelation to Paul, the apostle relating to 'GOD rested on the seventh day' in Genesis ?**

*"And on the seventh day GOD ended HIS work which HE had made; and HE rested on the seventh day from all HIS work which HE had made. And GOD blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it:*



*because that in it HE had rested from all HIS work which GOD created and made."*

Genesis 2:2-3

*"Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of (remaining of) entering into HIS rest, any of you should seem to come short of it. For unto us was the Gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. For we which have believed do enter into rest, as HE said, As I have sworn in MY wrath, if they shall (they shall not) enter into MY rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. For HE spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise (in this way), And GOD did rest the seventh day from all HIS works. And in this place again, If they shall enter into MY rest. Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief (disobedience): Again, HE limiteth (designates) a certain day, saying in David, Today, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if ye will hear HIS voice, harden not your hearts. For if Joshua had given them rest, then would HE not (HE would not) afterward have spoken of another day. There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of GOD. For he that is entered into HIS rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as GOD did from HIS. Let us labour (be diligent) therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief (disobedience)."*

Hebrews 4:1-11

Now, 'GOD rested on the seventh day' refers to the eternal rest to the people of GOD in the kingdom of GOD (heaven).

Again, all the doctrines relating to repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins (remission of sins), salvation from sins, the experience of divine goodness, the experience of born-again (born-from-above), holiness, holy life, obtaining the HOLY SPIRIT (the Spirit of GOD), redemption from sins, spiritual growth, etc., are the doctrines of the apostles. Those who devote themselves steadfastly in the Breaking of Bread must devote themselves steadfastly in the above spiritual experiences.

Further, all the doctrines relating to offerings, tithes of all things, first-born of the sheep, ox, etc., first-fruits of grain (corn), new wine,

oil, honey and all that the fields produced, first portion of the dough (the ground meal), etc., are the doctrines of the apostles. The total consecration of a man's life to GOD's service involves submitting oneself, one's own family, and all of one's possessions to GOD.

*"Only the firstling of the beasts (first-born among the animals), which should be the LORD's firstling, no man shall sanctify it; whether it be ox, or sheep: it is the LORD's. And all the tithe of the land, whether of the seed of the land, or of the fruit of the tree, is the LORD's: it is holy unto the LORD. And if a man will at all redeem ought of his tithes, he shall add thereto the fifth part thereof. And concerning the tithe of the herd, or of the flock, even of whatsoever passeth under the rod, the tenth shall be holy unto the LORD. He shall not search whether it be good or bad, neither shall he change it: and if he change it at all, then both it and the change thereof shall be holy; it shall not be redeemed."*

Leviticus 27:26, 30-33

*"And as soon as the commandment came abroad, the children of Israel brought in abundance the firstfruits of corn, wine, and oil, and honey, and of all the increase of the field; and the tithe of all things brought they in abundantly. And concerning the children of Israel and Judah, that dwelt in the cities of Judah, they also brought in the tithe of oxen and sheep, and the tithe of holy things which were consecrated unto the LORD their GOD, and laid them by heaps. In the third month they began to lay the foundation of the heaps, and finished them in the seventh month. And when Hezekiah and the princes came and saw the heaps, they blessed the LORD, and HIS people Israel. Then Hezekiah questioned with the priests and the Levites concerning the heaps. And Azariah the chief priest of the house of Zadok answered him, and said, Since the people began to bring the offerings into the house of the LORD, we have had enough to eat, and have left plenty: for the LORD hath blessed HIS people; and that which is left is this great store. Then Hezekiah commanded to prepare chambers in the house of the LORD; and they prepared them, And brought in the offerings and the tithes and the dedicated things faithfully: ..."*

II Chronicles 31:5-12

*"And the first of all the firstfruits of all things, and every oblation (sacrifice) of all, of every sort of your oblations, shall be the*

*priest's: ye shall also give unto the priest the first of your dough, that he may cause the blessing to rest in thine house."*

Ezekiel 44:30

*"Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the LORD thy GOD which HE hath given thee."*

Deuteronomy 16:17

**Tithing** is the practice of giving 10 per cent of one's income to the LORD GOD. The payment of tithes and offerings is a recognition of their proper subjection and obedience to GOD that HE owns them and all that they have. Withholding the tithes and offerings is renouncing the Sovereignty of GOD. Renouncing the Sovereignty of GOD was the sin committed by Lucifer or Satan, the devil in the beginning.

### **What is meant by offering ?**

*"But who am I, and what is my people, that we should be able to offer so willingly after this sort? For all things come of THEE, and of THINE own have we given THEE."*

I Chronicles 29:14

All things belong to the LORD GOD and all things come from the hands of the LORD GOD to HIS people. From the above things, which they received from the LORD GOD, they give a portion to the LORD GOD. They are receiving from the hands of the LORD GOD and they are giving the same to the LORD GOD. Hence, receiving from the hands of the LORD GOD and giving the same to the LORD GOD is the offering.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST satisfies HIS people with HIS abundant goodness (Jeremiah 31:14) and HIS servants or ministers should be satisfied with their abundant goodness, viz. abundant tithes and offerings and dedicated things of HIS people (II Chronicles 31:4-10). Glory be to GOD!

Anyone who is not giving the offerings to the LORD GOD is in debt to the LORD GOD. Hence, give to GOD what is GOD's. When you pay the debts to the LORD GOD, your debts will be cleared. All the offerings belong to GOD. All the offerings are of GOD's.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST said,

*"Render ... unto GOD the things that are GOD's."*

St. Matthew 22:21

Again, honouring the LORD GOD is the offering. Anyone who is not giving the offerings to the LORD GOD dishonours the LORD GOD.

*"Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the first-fruits of all thine increase: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses (vats) shall burst out with new wine."*

Proverbs 3:9-10

In the Old Testament period, the priests of the LORD GOD accepted the offerings, tithes, etc. In the New Testament period, the ministers of JESUS CHRIST, ministering the Gospel of GOD, are accepting the offerings, tithes, etc., since they are the priests of the New Testament period. See Romans 15:15-16. They have the right to receive remuneration for their work. GOD's people are to share their material possessions with their ministers. The wise men (the Magi) very well honoured our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST by offering their very significance and valuable symbolical gifts to HIM and also by presenting themselves as the best and valuable gifts to HIM (St. Matthew 2:11). Glory be to GOD!

*"Even so hath the LORD ordained (commanded) that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel."*

I Corinthians 9:14

*"Let him that is taught in the word communicate (share) unto him that teacheth in all good things."*

Galatians 6:6

**Tithes**—the custom of each individual giving back to GOD, each year, one tenth of the year's livestock and produce, especially when donated to the church, receivable by its workers or ministers of GOD. Giving the offerings, tithes, etc., to the LORD GOD will bring more blessings to the people and all the nations will call them blessed. If anyone who is not giving to GOD what is GOD's or if anyone who is not giving the offerings, tithes, etc., to the LORD GOD, then he is robbing GOD and he is committing the following sins. The sins are:

1. He is turned away from the ordinances of the LORD GOD and he has not kept them.
2. He is gone away from the LORD GOD.

3. He has robbed GOD.
4. He is under a curse.
5. He has taken the food of the LORD's servants (ministers).

*“Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from MINE ordinances, and have not kept them. Return unto ME, and I will return unto you, saith the LORD of hosts. But ye said, Wherein (In what way) shall we return? Will a man rob GOD? Yet ye have robbed ME. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed THEE? In tithes and offerings. Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed ME, even this whole nation. Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat (food) in MINE house, and prove (test) ME now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it. And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the LORD of hosts. And all nations shall call you blessed: for ye shall be a delightful (delightful) land, saith the LORD of hosts.”*

Malachi 3:7-12

‘Cast her fruit before the time in the field’ means ‘fail to bear fruit for you in the field’.

Do not rob GOD by holding back from GOD in tithes and offerings (Malachi 3:8-10; Leviticus 27:30-32). If we give our tithes and offerings to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST wholeheartedly, HE will return them abundantly by giving favourable weather and destroying the locusts invading our farmlands and saving our farms from wormeaten. **GOD's blessings will come only when the blessings of HIM are placed in HIS hands in tithes and offerings.**

Our LORD JESUS watches every offering made to HIM and HE values the attitude of the given more than the magnitude of its worth. HE gladly appreciated the offering of the poor widow's two mites (St. Luke 21:1-4). At the time of our LORD JESUS, mite was the smallest coin in Israel.

Unrighteous people are not at all fit to bring their gifts or offerings before the altar of the LORD GOD.

*"For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught (something) against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift."*

St. Matthew 5:20, 23-24

Do not charge your brother interest, whether on money or food or anything else that may earn interest. Brother is the member of the congregation or church and not a stranger.

*"Thou shalt not lend upon usury (charge interest) to thy brother; usury of money, usury of victuals, usury of any thing that is lent upon usury: Unto a stranger thou mayest lend upon usury; but unto thy brother thou shalt not lend upon usury: that the LORD thy GOD may bless thee in all that thou settest thine hand to in the land whither thou goest to possess it."*

Deuteronomy 23:19-20

Now, what is said about the congregation of the church?

*"Now ye are the body of CHRIST, and members in particular."*

I Corinthians 12:27

Hence, the members of the church must be like-minded one toward another according to CHRIST JESUS. They must glorify GOD with one mind (heart) and one mouth and having the same love. They must be of one accord and their attitude should be as that of CHRIST JESUS.

*"Now the GOD of patience and consolation grant you to be like-minded one toward another according to CHRIST JESUS: That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify GOD, even the FATHER of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

Romans 15:5-6

*"If there be therefore any consolation in CHRIST, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels (affection) and mercies (sympathy), Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind. Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind*

*let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. Let this mind be in you, which was also in CHRIST JESUS."*

Philippians 2:1-5

Further, they must be completely humble and gentle and patient, bearing with one another in love. They must not lie to each other. They must also forgive one another and live according to the following verses.

*"I therefore, the prisoner of the LORD, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation (calling) wherewith ye are called, With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing (bearing with) one another in love; Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers. And grieve not the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as GOD for CHRIST's sake hath forgiven you."*

Ephesians 4:1-3, 25-32

*"Lie not one to another, seeing (since) that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of HIM that created him. Put on therefore, as the elect of GOD, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies (tender mercies), kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; Forbearing (bearing with) one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as CHRIST forgave you, so also do ye. And above all these things put on charity (love), which is the bond of perfectness."*

Colossians 3:9-10, 12-14

But, in the matter of forgiveness, there is one kind of GOD's ministers, who may or may not give forgiveness. Giving forgiveness to anyone is their own will and pleasure. This is the authority given by the LORD JESUS CHRIST to HIS apostles. If they forgive anyone his sins, they are forgiven; if they do not forgive anyone his sins, they are not forgiven. These happen according to the grace and guidance of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.

*"Whose soever sins ye remit (forgive), they are remitted (forgiven) unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained."*

St. John 20:23

Again, they must do all things without murmurings and disputings. They must be blameless and harmless and they must shine as lights in the world.

*"Do all things without murmurings and disputings: That ye may be blameless and harmless (innocent), the sons (children) of GOD, without rebuke (fault), in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation (generation), among whom ye shine as lights in the world."*

Philippians 2:14-15

Further, patience is very much needed to save their souls.

*"In your patience possess ye your souls."*

St. Luke 21:19

*"For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of GOD, ye might receive the promise."*

Hebrews 10:36

Again, they must not be proud, but they must be willing to associate with people of low position.

*"Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits."*

Romans 12:16

Further, their love must be sincere, and they should honour one another above themselves and they must live according to the following verses.



*"Let love be without dissimulation (hypocrisy). Abhor that which is evil; cleave (cling) to that which is good. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring (giving preference to) one another; Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the LORD; Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; Distributing to the necessity (needs) of saints; given to hospitality. Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not."*

Romans 12:9-14

Again, their sins and their sinful lusts must be cured and they must be holy and righteous.

*"Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed."*

I Peter 2:24

*"Ye have heard that it was said by (to) them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell."*

St. Matthew 5:27-29

'Offend thee' means 'causes you to sin'.

Further, they should not swear and their communication and their acts and deeds must be as follows.

*"Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by (to) them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear (swear falsely) thyself, but shalt perform unto the LORD thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is GOD's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is HIS footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication (word) be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil. Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil (an evil person): but whosoever shall*

*smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also."*

St. Matthew 5:33-39

Again, they must flee from the following sins. They must flee from fornication; they must flee from idolatry; they must flee from youthful lusts; and they must flee from love of money.

*"Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without (outside) the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body."*

I Corinthians 6:18

*"Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry."*

I Corinthians 10:14

*"Flee also youthful lusts: but follow (pursue) righteousness, faith, charity (love), peace, with them that call on the LORD out of a pure heart."*

II Timothy 2:22

*"For the love of money is the root of all (all kinds of) evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But thou, O man of GOD, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness."*

I Timothy 6:10-11

Further, they must live by faith. GOD's righteous people or the just will live by faith. If anyone lives by faith, then he/she will never search for any worldly doctor or physician and he/she will never take any medicine for his diseases and sicknesses and he/she will do according to James 5:14-16 below.

*"Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, MY soul shall have no pleasure in him. But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul."*

Hebrews 10:38-39

*"Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the LORD: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the LORD shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent*

*prayer of a righteous man availeth much."*

James 5:14-16

Again, they must be religious and they must keep tight reins on their tongues.

*"If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. Pure religion and undefiled before GOD and the FATHER is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world."*

James 1:26-27

*"Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a matter (forest) a little fire kindleth (sets on fire)! And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature (life); and it is set on fire of hell."*

James 3:5-6

Further, they must give to the servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and they should not offend HIS servants.

*"For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in MY name, because ye belong to CHRIST, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. And whosoever shall offend (cause to stumble) one of these little ones that believe in ME, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea."*

St. Mark 9:41-42

Again, they must be submissive to the elders (apostles) of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and they must be submissive towards one another (I Peter 5:1, 5; Ephesians 5:21).

Furthermore, **the husband is the divinely appointed head and authority over his wife.** The husband is responsible to protect his wife spiritually and bodily. The wife's submission to her husband should be in everything in the fear of GOD and in everything conforming to GOD's will. The marital responsibility of husband is to love his wife. The husband who loves his wife loves himself. The wife should respect her husband. The husband will not be bitter toward his wife. He will not be rude or unkind or cruel toward his wife. The husband and the wife should be one flesh.

Woman is said not to have been taken out of man's head to be lorded-over by her husband, nor from his feet to be trampled on by him, nor from his hands to be beaten up by him, but from his side to be equal with him, from under his arm to be protected by him and from near his heart to be loved by him (Genesis 1:26-27; 2:7, 18-25). He must always be very helpful to his wife intellectually, morally and physically as her counterpart. It is not lawful for a man to put away (divorce) his wife (St. Matthew 19:3-6).

**Now, the fellowship between husband and wife must be as follows. The apostle Paul says,**

*"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the LORD. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as CHRIST is the head of the church: and HE is the Saviour of the body. Therefore as the church is subject unto CHRIST, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. Husbands, love your wives, even as CHRIST also loved the church, and gave HIMSELF for it. So ought men to love their wives (their own wives) as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the LORD the church: For we are members of HIS body, of HIS flesh, and of HIS bones. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning CHRIST and the church. Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence (respects) her husband."*

Ephesians 5:22-25, 28-33

*"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit (fitting) in the LORD. Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them."*

Colossians 3:18-19

Disobedient or unsaved husbands are to be won over by their wives' chaste conduct accompanied by fear of GOD. The husband will live with his wife with understanding, giving honour to his wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heir together of the grace of life, so that his/her prayers may not be hindered.

**The apostle Peter says about the behaviour of wives and husbands and about the relationship of wives to husbands and the relationship of husbands to wives. He says,**

*“Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the (a) word be won by the conversation (conduct) of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation (conduct) coupled with fear. Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in GOD, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters (children) ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement. Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.”*

I Peter 3:1-7

Wives must always submit to and obey their husbands in the LORD. Wives should obey the Word of GOD. Wives should have a chaste and virtuous conduct. Wives should not have any outward adorning with jewellery or ornaments. Wives' inner being must be adorned with a meek, gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of GOD. Wives should have implicit faith in GOD. Wives should always do good and be absolutely faithful to their husbands, so that they will never be found guilty of infidelity.

Now, **Adam the first man was deceived by Eve the first woman since he forgot GOD, his Creator and he did not co-live with HIM, always relying on HIM and being one with HIM. He put aside GOD and assumed the headship over GOD and acted independently of HIM. This opened the way for Satan, the devil to deceive man. Thus, he betrayed GOD and became a traitor to GOD. What an awful thing it is!**

**Eve was deceived by Satan, the devil since she forgot GOD, her Creator and she did not co-live with HIM, always relying on HIM and being one with HIM. She put aside GOD and assumed the headship**

over GOD and acted independently of HIM. Further, she forgot her husband and she did not co-live with him, always relying on him and being one with him. She put aside her husband Adam and assumed the headship over her husband and acted independently of her husband (Ephesians 5:23). These things opened the way for Satan, the devil to deceive woman. Thus, she betrayed GOD as well as her husband and became a traitor to GOD as well as to her husband. What an awful thing it is! So, husbands and wives should be very careful about their fellowship with one another and with GOD to save their lives from the evil one, Satan, the devil (See Genesis 3).

The Spirit-filled Christian wife recognizes that her husband's role in giving leadership is not only GOD-ordained, but is a divine reflection of CHRIST our GOD's own loving, authoritative headship of the church.

In GOD's creation, the female is weaker than the male, physically and psychologically. But, GOD created man as well as woman as vessels of HIS honour and glory to contain HIM and to make known HIS honour and glory upon them (Romans 9:23). The believers in CHRIST are vessels to contain CHRIST as their divine and excellent treasure (II Corinthians 4:7). Even though the wives, as female vessels, are weaker, they are still vessels of the LORD; and wives can be vessels unto honour and glory. So, the husbands must know the preciousness of the wives and give due respect and honour to their wives.

Further, all believers are heirs of the grace of life. The wives are also husbands' fellow heirs of the grace of life and the husbands are also wives' fellow heirs of the grace of life. So, the husbands must live with their wives in the most intelligent and reasonable way. They must be governed by human and spiritual knowledge, and not governed by any passion or emotion. They should also understand the nature of the marriage relationship and the weakness of the female. The husbands should honour and respect their wives and they should live with them, so that nothing will hinder their prayers. Without prayers, no one can inherit the grace of life, the grace of eternal life, the eternal kingdom of GOD.

**Apostle Paul about the principles of marriage and about keeping marriage vows:** He intends to teach that it is morally and

spiritually good for a man not to touch a woman. In their letter to St. Paul, the Corinthians have raised **six questions about single and married life.**

- (1) Are married couples to continue normal sexual relations after conversion or regeneration? **Yes** (I Corinthians 7:1-7).
- (2) Should single people marry? **Yes.** Here, Paul prefers the single life—but only for those with GOD's gift of self-control (I Corinthians 7:7-9).
- (3) Is divorce between Christians permissible? **No, it is not** (I Corinthians 7:10-11).
- (4) What about the unconverted husband or wife? Christians are to stick to their unconverted partners, unless the partner wants separation (I Corinthians 7:12-16).
- (5) What is the responsibility of the father towards his virgin daughter? See I Corinthians 7:36-38.
- (6) May widows or widowers remarry? **Yes, they may** (I Corinthians 7:39-40).

Furthermore, they should not adorn themselves with any ornaments. **The apostles Peter and Paul clearly tell us about the prohibitions against jewellery and costly dress.** Their teachings are as follows:

*“Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel (costly apparel); But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price.”*

I Peter 3:3-4

*“In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array (clothing).”*

I Timothy 2:9

Husbands and wives must have holy hands. Their hands should not be defiled with blood. Adultery, bribery, killing or beating by

hands or by weapons, writing false witnesses, writing lies, putting false signatures, etc., defile the hands.

*"I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting (disputes)."*

I Timothy 2:8

*"And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide MINE eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood."*

Isaiah 1:15

*"For your hands are defiled with blood, and your fingers with iniquity; your lips have spoken lies, your tongue hath muttered perverseness."*

Isaiah 59:3

Women (wives) must show discretion; and they must be GOD-fearing, virtuous and wise.

*"As a jewel of gold in a swine's snout, so is a fair woman which is without discretion."*

Proverbs 11:22

*"Favour is deceitful, and beauty is vain: but a woman that feareth the LORD, she shall be praised."*

Proverbs 31:30

*"A virtuous woman is a crown to her husband: but she that maketh ashamed is as rottenness in his bones."*

Proverbs 12:4

*"Every wise woman buildeth her house: but the foolish plucketh (pulls) it down with her hands."*

Proverbs 14:1

*"Even so must their wives be grave (reverent), not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things."*

I Timothy 3:11

Husbands should not deal with their wives treacherously. They should not beat their wives. They should not be beaters. Wives are husbands' companions (partners). Wives are husbands' marriage covenant. Husbands are wives' companions (partners). Husbands are wives' marriage covenant. Wives' tears, weeping, crying and wailing cover (flood) the altar of the LORD GOD. Hence, the LORD GOD will



be the witness between them and their husbands. It will be a very terrible thing for the husbands.

*"And this have ye done again, covering the altar of the LORD with tears, with weeping, and with crying out, insomuch (because) that HE regardeth not the offering any more, or receiveth it with good will at your hand. Yet ye say, Wherefore? Because the LORD hath been witness between thee and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant."*

Malachi 2:13-14

**Marriage is an indissoluble union.** Marriage is the union of one man and one woman (St. Mark 10:6-9). The law of GOD binds the wife as long as her husband lives. The law of GOD binds the husband as long as his wife lives. Only death breaks the marital union. In the event of the husband's death, the wife is free from obligation to her husband and may either remain unmarried or may remarry. She may remarry, only in the LORD. Also, in the event of the wife's death, the husband is free from obligation to his wife and may either remain unmarried or may remarry. He may remarry, only in the LORD. To marry another while one's spouse is still living, is adultery. Adultery is a great sin against our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Adulterers and adulteresses will be thrown into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the LORD."*

I Corinthians 7:39

*"For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of (concerning) her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man."*

Romans 7:2-3

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine fundamental principles for **marital relationship** regarding family life (St. Matthew 5:27-28; St. Matthew 19:3-9) are utterly shattered and destroyed due to

divorces and same-sex marriages and relationships—the homosexual and lesbian marriages and relationships (Romans 1:26-28; I Corinthians 6:9-10). It is a shame even to talk about these very ugly things done in secret (Ephesians 5:12). Unless these people are saved from these very ugly sins and from all other sins by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Only Saviour (Acts 4:12) and live a sinless and holy and righteous life, they will be thrown into hell, the hell-fire, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8).

Without chastity, there is no might in one's spiritual life. Chastity is the might of a spiritual man or woman. Spiritual men and women must be chaste in all their behaviours, speeches, looks, etc. The aged men or older men or elderly men are to be examples of godliness to the younger men. The aged women or older women or elderly women are to teach the younger women by their example. And they must teach the younger women to be sober, to love their husbands, and to love their children. The younger women must be submissive to their own husbands. They must stay at home, and they must be workers at home. They should not be wandering about from house to house. They must not be gossips. Young men must also be sober-minded. They must not be gossips or gossip-mongers.

*“That the aged men be sober, grave (reverent), temperate, sound in faith, in charity (love), in patience. The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers (slanderers), not given to much wine, teachers of good things; That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the Word of GOD be not blasphemed. Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.”*

Titus 2:2-6

The older men must be treated as fathers; the older women must be treated as mothers; the younger men must be treated as brothers; and the younger women must be treated as sisters, with all purity.

*“Rebuke not an elder (older man), but entreat (exhort) him as a father; and the younger men as brethren: The elder women (older women) as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity.”*

I Timothy 5:1-2

Honour widows who are really widows.

*"Honour widows that are widows indeed."*

I Timothy 5:3

The true widows will trust in GOD, and continue in supplications and prayers night and day. But the widow who lives in worldly pleasures and lusts is spiritually dead while she physically lives.

*"Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in GOD, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day. But she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth."*

I Timothy 5:5-6

The apostle Paul gives a few words of advice to slaves under unbelieving masters and to slaves under believing masters (Christian masters). His advice to slaves under unbelieving masters is:

*"Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of GOD and HIS doctrine be not blasphemed."*

I Timothy 6:1

'Let as many servants as are under the yoke' means 'Let all those who are under the yoke as slaves'.

Now, Christianity creates equality of standing before GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Because of this, some believing slaves (Christian slaves) desire to get social equality of standing before their believing masters (Christian masters), and despise their Christian masters. But, believing slaves (Christian slaves) should not despise their believing masters (Christian masters), and they should serve them all the better, because those who benefit by this good service (the fine work of the slaves) are believers, dear to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. ..."*

I Timothy 6:2

No one should fail to pay the wages of the labourers. The apostle James warns,

*"Behold, the hire (wages) of the labourers who have reaped (mowed)*

*down your fields, which is of you (you have) kept back by fraud, crieth (cry out): and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the LORD of Sabaoth (the LORD of hosts or the LORD of armies)."*

James 5:4

The apostle James warns against personal favouritism.

*"Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not GOD chosen the poor of this world rich (to be rich) in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which HE hath promised to them that love HIM? But ye have despised the poor. ... But if ye have respect (show partiality) to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced (convicted) of the law as transgressors."*

James 2:5-6, 9

Everyone should have fellowship with one another. Everyone should love one another. Everyone should love his neighbour as himself. Everyone should love the LORD his GOD with all his heart, with all his soul, and with all his mind. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*"Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself."*

St. Matthew 22:37, 39

*"Ye love one another."*

St. John 13:34

Now, these are called the apostles' doctrine, the doctrine given by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to HIS apostles. Those who continue themselves steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and those who continue themselves steadfastly in fellowship with each other are eligible to partake of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion.

Now, to partake of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, they must devote themselves steadfastly to prayers. Prayer alone will enable us to stand before the returning SON OF MAN, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. We should pray for all men.

*"Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST)."*

St. Luke 21:36

*"But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer."*

I Peter 4:7

*"Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer."*

Romans 12:12

*"Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving."*

Colossians 4:2

*"Pray without ceasing."*

I Thessalonians 5:17

*"I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of GOD our Saviour."*

I Timothy 2:1-3

*"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel, For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak."*

Ephesians 6:18-20

If they devote themselves steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship with one another and in prayers, then they will be filled with the joy of the HOLY SPIRIT, their faith in the LORD GOD will grow more and more, their holy love with each other will be increasing, and their faith in the LORD GOD will be known everywhere.

*"And ye became followers of us, and of the LORD, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT): So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia. For from you sounded out the Word of the LORD not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to GOD-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak any thing."*

I Thessalonians 1:6-8

*"We are bound to thank GOD always for you, brethren, as it is meet (fitting), because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity (love) of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth; So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of GOD for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure."*

II Thessalonians 1:3-4

The people with the above experiences and with the experiences mentioned below in the next sub-heading are eligible to partake of the feast of the LORD's Supper or the Breaking of Bread or the Holy Communion.

In the first century Christian church, they observed the feast of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion with gladness and singleness of heart and they continued daily with one accord in the temple. To observe the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread, gladness and singleness of heart and sincere heart are also required.

*"And they, continuing daily with one accord (mind) in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat (food) with gladness and singleness of heart."*

Acts 2:46

### 2.3 MEANING OF LORD'S SUPPER

Our LORD GOD, who has called everyone into the fellowship with HIS SON JESUS CHRIST our LORD, is faithful.

*"GOD is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of HIS SON JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

I Corinthians 1:9

Full fellowship with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (I John 1:3) and full fellowship with each other (I John 1:7) are required of HIS people, the saved.

The fellowship with the **Life** of the LORD GOD, the fellowship with the **Spirit** of the LORD GOD, the fellowship with the **Soul** of the LORD GOD, the fellowship with the most holy **flesh** of the LORD GOD and the fellowship with the most holy **blood** of the LORD GOD are very essential for full fellowship with the LORD GOD. When a

man gets salvation from his sins by the LORD JESUS CHRIST, he will be in fellowship with the **Life** and the **Spirit** and the **Soul** of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"But now being made free from sin, and become servants to GOD, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of GOD is eternal life through JESUS CHRIST our LORD."*

Romans 6:22-23

The fellowship with the most holy flesh of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and the fellowship with the most holy blood of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are obtained by the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread. The LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion is the fellowship with the most holy flesh and the most holy blood of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Thus, full fellowship with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is obtained only by the LORD's Supper or by the Holy Communion.

Further, for the fellowship with the most holy GOD, they must be holy. Again, for the fellowship with the most holy flesh of the most holy GOD and for the fellowship with the most holy blood of the most holy GOD, they must be holy. They must be holy in their spirit and soul and body (flesh). They must be cleansed (purified) from all filthiness of their spirit and soul and body, perfecting holiness in the fear of GOD.

*"And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

*"Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of GOD."*

II Corinthians 7:1

Now, for the above cleansing (purification), they must be obedient. If they are not obedient, then they will not be cleansed. For the above obedience, they should have full faith. Without faith, no one can obey. Abraham's faith and obedience are highly appreciable.

*"As obedient children, not fashioning (conforming) yourselves*

*according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as HE which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation (conduct); Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy."*

I Peter 1:14-16

*"By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. By faith Abraham, when he was tried (tested), offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: Accounting that GOD was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure."*

Hebrews 11:8, 17-19

*"Now the LORD had said unto Abram (Abraham), Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed."*

Genesis 12:1-3

*"Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all."*

Romans 4:16

Further, for the fellowship with the most holy flesh and the most holy blood of the LORD or for the partaking of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, the faith of Abraham must be with everyone. They should believe the LORD with full heart. The believers of the LORD GOD are Abraham's offspring and Abraham is the father of all believers. The believers of the LORD should follow the faith of Abraham but they should not follow the Old Testament lifestyle of Abraham.

Hence, for the partaking of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, they must be obedient; they must believe the LORD with full heart; they must live by faith; and they must be holy. Living by faith must be according to the verses in James 5:14-16.



Again, for the fellowship with the most holy flesh and the most holy blood of the LORD or for the partaking of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread, good report (good witness) by all men and by the truth and by the holy servants of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is very essential.

*"Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we also bear record; and ye know that our record is true."*

III John 12

Further, for the fellowship with the most holy flesh and the most holy blood of the LORD or for the partaking of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion they should always do the will of the LORD GOD. The LORD's will will always be against the will and wish of man. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST always walked in accordance with the will of the LORD.

*"For even CHRIST pleased not HIMSELF; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached THEE fell on ME."*

Romans 15:3

Prayer life with continued prayers, full of faith, full of belief, full of humility, full of holiness, full of obedience, truthfulness in all things, fellowship with each other (Acts 2:42), holy and blameless before the LORD GOD in love, doing always the will of GOD even unto death, good witness by all men and by the truth and by the LORD's servants, etc., are the required experiences to partake of the Breaking of Bread or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion.

## 2.4 IMPORTANCE

*"The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of CHRIST? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of CHRIST? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread."*

I Corinthians 10:16-17

By the Holy Communion of the most holy blood of JESUS CHRIST and by the Holy Communion of the most holy body (flesh) of JESUS CHRIST, full fellowship with JESUS CHRIST, the LORD GOD is obtained.

Since, they are all partakers of the one bread, they being many are one bread, and one body. The glorious fellowship is one bread and one body, the most holy body of JESUS CHRIST. Hence, all the saints or the people of the LORD GOD are one bread and one body. They are fellow-citizens with one bread and one body, the most holy body of JESUS CHRIST and members of the most holy body of JESUS CHRIST in particular (individually). Now, the church is the most holy body of JESUS CHRIST. The members of the church are the saved people. See Acts 2:47.

*"Now ye are the body of CHRIST, and members (organs) in particular."*

I Corinthians 12:27

## 2.5 IMPROPER PARTICIPATION

When instituting the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion, our LORD JESUS CHRIST did not allow Judas Iscariot, the traitor to participate in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion. Hence, our LORD JESUS CHRIST desires no improper participation in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion. HE does not desire any improper participation in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion by the believers (the saved). So HE severely warns,

*"Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the LORD, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the LORD. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the LORD's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep (are dead)."*

I Corinthians 11:27-30

The above things are also happening in our church. The partakers of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion in an unworthy manner will be guilty of sinning against the most holy body and the most holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. An extremely disgusting weakness or a seriously debilitating illness or the capital punishment (punishment by death) will be given for this guilt against the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

The above guilt is a guilt to deserve the terrible wrath of GOD; the above guilt is a guilt to deserve the terrible judgment of GOD; the above guilt is a guilt to deserve the terrible hell (the eternal punishment).

So, no believers should partake in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion improperly or unworthily, and the unsaved should never partake in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion.

## 2.6 WASHING OF FEET

Washing the guests' feet was done by the servants or slaves. It was a menial task. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST washed HIS disciples' feet; HE washed the feet of the people who were the work of HIS creation. By doing this menial task, HE showed HIS very humble service and HIS great humility.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST washed HIS disciples' feet like a servant or slave; HE washed the feet of HIS people like a servant or slave. HE washed HIS disciples' feet to save and redeem all those who are caught by pride, the evil character of Satan, the devil. HE washed the feet of HIS own creations, the work of HIS hand to save and redeem all those who were caught by pride, the evil character of Satan, the devil. By doing this menial task, HE has taught a lesson of humility and humble service to all those that are sorely in need, since all are puffed up with pride.

The purpose of this washing of feet by our LORD JESUS CHRIST was to set an example. The purpose of this washing of feet by our LORD JESUS CHRIST was to establish an ordinance. The first century Christians washed feet as an act of humble service. The first century Christians washed feet as an act of humility. The believers of the first century Christian church practised this as a church ordinance. So, we, the believers of our church are also practising this as our church ordinance. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"HE (JESUS) riseth from supper, and laid aside HIS garments; and took a towel, and girded HIMSELF. After that HE (JESUS) poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith HE (JESUS) was girded."*

St. John 13:4-5

Before establishing the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover, our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST got up from the supper or the meal of the Old Testament feast of the LORD's Passover and took off HIS outer clothing and wrapped a towel round HIS waist. After that, HE poured water into a basin and began to wash HIS disciples' feet, and wiped them with the towel that was wrapped round HIM. This shows the LORD JESUS CHRIST's true humility. One of the greatest qualities of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is HIS humility.

This humility is absolutely essential for those who partake of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion. Hence, the partakers of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion should wash and wipe one another's feet. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST set an example for the saints or the people of the LORD GOD to follow as HE had done for HIS disciples. This act of humble service will fetch abundant blessings of the LORD GOD. This act of humility will fetch abundant blessings of the LORD GOD. Those who practise this will be greatly blessed by our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"So after HE (JESUS) had washed their feet, and had taken HIS garments, and was set down again, HE (JESUS) said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? Ye call ME Master and LORD: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your LORD and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord (master); neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them."*

St. John 13:12-17

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST has established the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover or the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread and HE has ended the Old Testament feast of the LORD's Passover.

## 2.7 WHOSE REMEMBRANCE ?

The LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST has shed HIS most holy blood from the garden of Gethsemane to Calvary for the people of the whole world. HE has shed HIS most holy blood completely on the cross for the people of the whole world. HIS most holy blood is the blood of the New Testament. HIS blood is shed for the people of the whole world, for the forgiveness of their sins. And HIS most holy body was terribly broken for the people of the whole world. HE died for the people of the whole world.

The LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion is celebrated in remembrance of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. The Holy Communion is given in remembrance of the terribly broken body, the most holy body of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Holy Communion is given in remembrance of the most holy blood shed by the LORD JESUS CHRIST from Gethsemane to Calvary. The Holy Communion is taken in remembrance of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST's terrible death on the cross to pay for our sins.

*"And as they were eating, JESUS took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is MY body. And HE took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is MY blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission (forgiveness) of sins."*

St. Matthew 26:26-28

*"...That the LORD JESUS the same night in which HE was betrayed took bread: And when HE had given thanks, HE brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is MY body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of ME. After the same manner also HE took the cup, when HE had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in MY blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of ME. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew (proclaim) the LORD's death till HE come."*

I Corinthians 11:23-26

Abundant blessings of the LORD are given to those who are in remembrance of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the LORD GOD. Abundant blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are given to those who partake of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion.

## 2.8 BLESSINGS OF LORD'S SUPPER

The LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said:

*"I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is MY flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), and drink HIS blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth MY flesh, and drinketh MY blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For MY flesh is meat (food) indeed, and MY blood is drink indeed. HE that eateth MY flesh, and drinketh MY blood, dwelleth in ME, and I in him. As the living FATHER hath sent ME, and I live by the FATHER: so he that eateth ME, even he shall live by ME. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever."*

St. John 6:48-51, 53-58

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the bread of life. HE is the living bread that came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live for ever. This bread is HIS most holy flesh. HE gives this bread for the life of the whole world. Unless you eat the most holy flesh of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and drink HIS most holy blood, you have no life in you. Thus, one of the blessings obtained by partaking of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion is full life, everlasting life.

Further, whoever eats HIS most holy flesh and drinks HIS most holy blood will be raised up by HIM on the last day. This is the second blessing. Here, the last day means the day of the first resurrection of the saints. They are the blessed and the holy.

*"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of GOD and of CHRIST, and shall reign with HIM a thousand years."*

Revelation 20:6

Again, whoever eats HIS most holy flesh, the real food and drinks HIS most holy blood, the real drink remains in HIM and HE in him. Hence, the living GOD lives in him always. He lives in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST always. This is the third blessing.

Further, whoever eats HIS most holy flesh, the bread that came down from heaven or the manna of life will live for ever. He will never die. The second death (hell) has no power over him. He will live with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever in the kingdom of GOD. This is the fourth blessing. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 2.9 SIGNIFICANCE OF LORD'S SUPPER

During the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion service, one unleavened bread (the bread without yeast), made up of fresh and fine grains of wheat and new grape juice, made up of fresh and fine grapes (the fruit of the vine) are placed on the table.

The church of the LORD consists of many saved people (Acts 2:47). These saved people are the members of the church. The members of the church are the most holy body of CHRIST and they are the members of the most holy body of CHRIST in particular (individually) (I Corinthians 12:27). Now, the church consists of many saved people and the bread consists of many grains of wheat. Many grains of wheat represents many saved people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

During the Holy Communion service, truly, the unleavened bread will become the most holy flesh of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and truly, the new grape juice, made up of fresh and fine grapes will become the most holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, by the wonderful work of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Hence, those who partake of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion eat, truly, the most holy flesh of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and drink, truly, the most holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

So, anyone who partakes of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread or the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover in an unworthy manner, will be punished by a vile weakness or by a vile sickness or by death (I Corinthians 11:27-30).

The partakers of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion partake of the one bread. Since, they are all partakers of the one bread, they being many are one bread, and one body, the most holy body of JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. This is one of the greatest blessings of the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion or the Breaking of Bread or the New Testament feast of the LORD's Passover. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

This is the most solemn and awesome religious feast of Christians, the saved. This is the most blessed religious feast of Christians, the saved. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

While celebrating the Old Testament feast of Passover, no fermented bread or no fermented things should be seen among them in all their territory and no fermented bread or no fermented things should be eaten or drunk by them (Deuteronomy 16:1-4).

Likewise, when celebrating the New Testament feast of Passover or the Holy Communion or the LORD's Supper, no fermented bread or no fermented juice of grapes (no fermented wine) should be used. While instituting the LORD's Supper, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has not given HIS disciples (apostles), the fermented bread or the fermented juice of grapes (the fermented wine). HE has given HIS disciples (apostles) the unfermented bread and the sweet and unfermented juice of fresh and fine grapes—the fruit of the vine (St. Mark 14:25). The Jewish historian Josephus, who was contemporary with the apostles, explicitly calls the clusters of grapes freshly squeezed in a cup by Pharaoh's cupbearer as 'the fruit of the vine' (Genesis 40:10-11).

The Talmud—the collection of ancient writings on Jewish law and tradition indicates that drinking to the accompaniment of musical instruments on festive occasions such as wedding was forbidden. Rabbi S.M. Isaac, an eminent nineteenth century rabbi and editor of the Jewish Messenger, says: "The Jews do not, in their feasts for sacred purposes, including the marriage feast, ever use any kind of fermented drinks. In their oblations and libations, both private and public, they employ the fruit of the vine, that is, fresh grapes—unfermented grape juice, and raisins, as the symbol of benediction. Fermentation is to them always a symbol of corruption". So,



in the wedding in Cana, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has given the sweet and unfermented juice of fresh and fine grapes—the fruit of the vine, by turning water into good wine (St. John 2:1-11).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has used the following three illustrations for the same purpose: (1) New cloth is not used to patch up an old garment (St. Luke 5:36); (2) New wine is not placed in old wineskins (St. Luke 5:37-38); (3) New wine is not liked by those who are accustomed to drink the old (St. Luke 5:39). The common purpose of these three illustrations is to help people to recognize that the old forms of religious life seem good, only so long as one is not accustomed to or acquainted with **the new forms of religious life taught by CHRIST**. In this context, the old fermented wine—the Old Testament doctrine, the Law of Moses seems good only to those who do not know about the better new wine—the New Testament doctrine, the divine Gospel of CHRIST. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has abstained from all intoxicating substances or alcoholic beverages and HE has given no sanction to HIS followers to use them (Ephesians 5:18).

'The fruit of the vine' that our LORD JESUS commanded to be used as a memorial of HIS redeeming blood was not fermented. Fermented grape juice (fermented wine) represents human corruption, but unfermented and pure grape juice is a fitting emblem of CHRIST's untainted blood shed for the remission of our sins. Glory be to GOD!

Hence, making or using of different kinds of fermented wine or different kinds of alcoholic drinks and beverages is strictly prohibited or forbidden.

Making or using different kinds of fermented wine or different kinds of alcoholic drinks and beverages will wholly destroy the godly life of moral and spiritual excellence; it will wholly occupy the minds with the wrong notions and shameful ideas; it will vigorously activate a life of indulgence; and it will wholly destroy all **Christian virtues**. In a state of intoxication, your eyes seek strange women, leading you into terrible sins, viz. fornication, adultery, etc. Drunkards will not inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD (I Corinthians 6:10).

*"Who hath woe? who hath sorrow? who hath contentions? who hath babbling? who hath wounds without cause? who hath*

*redness of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine; they that go to seek mixed wine. Look not thou upon the wine when it is red, when it giveth his colour in the cup, when it moveth itself aright. At the last it biteth like a serpent, and stingeth like an adder. Thine eyes shall behold strange women, and thine heart shall utter perverse things. Yea, thou shalt be as he that lieth down in the midst of the sea, or as he that lieth upon the top of a mast. They have stricken me, shalt thou say, and I was not sick; they have beaten me, and I felt it not: when shall I awake? I will seek it yet again."*

Proverbs 23:29-35

*"Woe unto them that rise up early in the morning, that they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, till wine inflame them!"*

Isaiah 5:11

All Christian virtues, especially, the **three great Christian virtues** of faith, hope and love (charity) will be fully destroyed by drunkenness and gluttony (Proverbs 23:20-21; Ephesians 5:18; Hosea 4:11). The greatest of all Christian virtues is love (I Corinthians 13:13), because GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is love (I John 4:8) and has endowed us with HIS love (St. John 3:16; I John 4:10) and has commanded us to love HIM (Psalm 31:23) and to love one another (St. John 13:34-35). Trust in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is faith (Psalm 37:3) and belief in HIS promises is faith (Genesis 15:6). For our day-to-day life, faith is very essential. The confident and firm expectation which comes through trust in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is hope (Romans 8:24-25). Salvation comes by grace through faith (Ephesians 2:8) and hope always accompanies salvation. The hope of eternal life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD will help us to rejoice in CHRIST (Titus 1:2). The drunkards and gluttons should not participate in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion. Glory be to GOD!

## THE LORD'S CHURCH

### 1. THE CHURCH

**“Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the Day (of the LORD's return) approaching.”**

**Hebrews 10:25**

**THE CHURCH** is the congregation or the assembly of the holy and righteous people who are delivered from their sins and saved by JESUS CHRIST. Those who are delivered from their sins by the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST are baptized by total immersion in water in the name of the FATHER, the SON and the HOLY SPIRIT and they become the members of the church of GOD. Besides, the church is an assembly of baptized believers under the discipline of the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST added to HIS church daily those who were being saved and baptized. This church is the church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*“...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be saved.”*

Acts 2:47

Now, the church is the congregation of the saints. The church is the assembly of the saints (Psalm 89:5, 7). The church is the congregation of the righteous (Psalm 1:5). The church is the congregation of the mighty (Psalm 82:1). The church is the great congregation (Psalm 40:9). The church is the assembly of the upright (Psalm 111:1). The church is the church of CHRIST (Romans 16:16). The church is the church of the living GOD (I Timothy 3:15).

The LORD JESUS CHRIST has said to Peter, HIS disciple:

*"And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon This Rock I will build MY church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it."*

St. Matthew 16:18

'This Rock' means 'the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF'. The church of the living GOD is built upon the Rock, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. The gates of hell will not overcome it. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Some use this verse (St. Matthew 16:18) to teach that Peter was the foundation-stone of the church. But, this teaching is completely false and absurd. From Psalm 18:31 and I Corinthians 10:4, we can clearly understand that the Rock is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

*"For who is GOD save (except) the LORD? or who is a rock (the Rock) save (except) our GOD?"*

Psalm 18:31

*"...And That Rock was CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 10:4

And in Isaiah 28:16, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST promises to lay in Zion a Precious Corner Stone. So, we can clearly identify that Corner Stone as JESUS CHRIST (Romans 9:33; I Peter 2:6). HE is the Unique Foundation (I Corinthians 3:11). To those who believe in HIM, HE becomes a Sure Foundation. To those who reject HIM, HE becomes a Stumbling Stone.

*"Therefore thus saith the LORD GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a Foundation a Stone, a Tried Stone, a Precious Corner Stone, a Sure Foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste."*

Isaiah 28:16

*"Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a Chief Corner Stone, Elect (Chosen), Precious: and he that believeth on HIM shall not be confounded (put to shame)."*

I Peter 2:6

*"As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a Stumblingstone and Rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on HIM shall*

*not be ashamed."*

Romans 9:33

The church is the household of GOD. The Chief Corner Stone of HIS church is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. HE is a Tested Stone; HE is a Precious Corner Stone; HE is a Sure Foundation; HE is the Strong Foundation of HIS church. The church is built on the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Corner Stone and Strong Foundation. The other foundation of HIS church is the apostles and prophets.

*"Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of GOD; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF being the Chief Corner Stone; In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the LORD: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of GOD through the Spirit."*

Ephesians 2:19-22

Further, the church is the house of GOD. The church is the church of the living GOD. The church is the pillar (support) and ground (foundation) of the truth.

*"But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of GOD, which is the church of the living GOD, the pillar and ground of the truth."*

I Timothy 3:15

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has bought the church with HIS own blood. HIS blood is the most precious blood. The LORD JESUS CHRIST shed HIS own blood completely for HIS glorious and holy church. The LORD JESUS CHRIST earned HIS glorious church by shedding HIS own blood, by giving up HIS own flesh and giving up HIS own life completely.

*"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) hath made you overseers, to feed (shepherd) the church of GOD, which HE hath purchased with HIS own blood."*

Acts 20:28

*"But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

I Peter 1:19

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the head of the church. The believers, the children of GOD are the members of the sacred body of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE nourishes and cherishes (feeds and cares) HIS church.

*"...CHRIST is the head of the church: ..."*

Ephesians 5:23

*"And HE is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things HE might have the preeminence."*

Colossians 1:18

*"For we are members of HIS body, of HIS flesh, and of HIS bones."*

Ephesians 5:30

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST loved the church and gave HIMSELF for the church, to make the church holy, and to set it apart and to cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. 'The washing of water' refers to water baptism, which is the outward symbol of an inward change.

*"...CHRIST also loved the church, and gave HIMSELF for it; That HE might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word."*

Ephesians 5:25-26

The church of the LORD is the glorious church without any stain of sin. The church of the LORD is holy with the divine presence of the LORD. It is glorious and without blemish. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's love for the church is to present it to HIMSELF as a glorious church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.

*"That HE might present it to HIMSELF a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish."*

Ephesians 5:27

The church is the church of the first-born children of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Their names have been written in the Book of Life in heaven.

*"To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are*

*written in heaven, ..."*

Hebrews 12:23

Now, in the present time, the LORD's church is like a barren and desolate woman (Isaiah 54:1). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will multiply HIS seed, HIS people or HIS believers of the church and HIS ministers (Levites) of the church as the host of heaven (stars) which cannot be numbered and as the sand of the sea which cannot be measured (Jeremiah 33:22). So, we should pray to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST continuously for HIS coming down from the heavens (the skies) by rending (tearing) the skies (Isaiah 64:1), for doing HIS promised spiritual works of the former and the latter spiritual rains (Joel 2:23) and to make HIS church as Lebanon, the fruitful field (Isaiah 29:17). Glory be to GOD!

### 1.1 ASSEMBLING TOGETHER

The assembling together of GOD's people consists of participation in worship, instruction, and fellowship. It provides mutual encouragement and strengthening; it provides mutual stirring up of godly love and good works; it provides mutual vanishing up of hatred and godless deeds. Since they are the body of CHRIST (I Corinthians 12:27), their actions and attitudes toward one another should reflect CHRIST's character. So, let us not forsake assembling of ourselves together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us exhort one another—and all the more as you see the Day of the coming of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST approaching.

*"Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the Day (of the LORD's return) approaching."*

Hebrews 10:25

In the early centuries, there were **House Churches**. Christian believers and other followers of CHRIST assembled together and worshipped in the houses of Christian believers for their convenience. The houses of Aquila and Priscilla, Lydia, and Philemon were among the few which were opened for regular worship to the brethren. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST filled them with the power of the HOLY SPIRIT and used them for HIS mighty works. Now-a-days, there are thousands and thousands of House Churches in houses and thousands and thousands of denominations in houses and in other places.

But, they do not experience the power of the HOLY SPIRIT and are uselessly following the worldly principles, rituals and traditions. What an awful thing it is!

Again, the assembling together involves the divine worship of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. By assembling together, we worship GOD, a Person, not a day. Everyday is to be holy to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. So, if possible, each and everyday, we may assemble together to worship GOD. In the first century Christian church, each and everyday the believers (the saved) continued to assemble together with one accord to worship GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And they, continuing daily with one accord (mind) in the temple,  
..."*

Acts 2:46

Normally, we observe Sunday as the Sabbath, since CHRIST resurrected on a Sunday and since the first century Christian church observed Sunday as the Sabbath. Since everyday is to be holy to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, we never allow the Sabbath to become an issue.

During the assembling together, orderly worship with fear of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is very essential. All things should be done for edification. All things should be done decently and in order. Our GOD is not the author of confusion but of peace.

*"Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling."*

Psalms 2:11

*"For GOD is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints."*

I Corinthians 14:33

*"Let all things be done decently and in order."*

I Corinthians 14:40

*"...Let all things be done unto edifying."*

I Corinthians 14:26

Speaking in tongues, preaching a doctrine, telling a revelation, interpreting the truth, singing psalms, and glorifying GOD should be done for edification and they should be done decently and in order.

Women should keep silent in the assembling together, for they are not permitted to speak; but they are commanded to be submissive, as the law also says. And if they want to learn anything, let them ask



their own husbands at home; for it is shameful for women to speak in the assembling together.

*"Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law. And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church."*

I Corinthians 14:34-35

## 1.2 COMMUNAL SHARING—NOT COMMUNISM OR MAOISM

The communal sharing was voluntarily practised for a certain time by the first century Christian church at Jerusalem, after the day of Pentecost. Such communal sharing was not directly preached by the apostles. Rather they encouraged the believers to help the poor willingly and cheerfully (II Corinthians 8, 9).

*"The liberal soul shall be made fat (prosperous): ..."*

Proverbs 11:25

*"He that hath a bountiful eye (generous eye) shall be blessed; for he giveth of his bread to the poor."*

Proverbs 22:9

Giving alms involves using one's material assets in ways that will glorify GOD, such as relieving some human need. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"But rather give alms of such things as ye have; and, behold, all things are clean unto you."*

St. Luke 11:41

Further, this communal sharing does not correspond to communism or Maoism, because this communal sharing resulted from a spiritual unity among the people; and it was a voluntary act.

But, communism or Maoism is a social organization in which goods are held in common, and it is not done as a voluntary act. In communism or Maoism there is no spiritual unity among the people. In communism or Maoism there is no spiritual life among the people; and there is no spirituality in communism or Maoism. Most of the Communists and the Maoists are atheists. The Communist Party and the Maoist Party are atheistic, that is, they deny the existence of GOD. The founders of the Communist Party and the Maoist Party

were atheists and most of the Communist leaders and the Maoist leaders are atheists. Even though unbelief in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is a terrible sin, atheists, including Communists and Maoists, can be saved if they repent and believe the Gospel that the LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered and died for their sins and rose again the third day that they might have eternal life.

### 1.3 CHURCH DISCIPLINE

How will you deal with a sinning brother? In respect of church discipline, the responsibility of action is threefold: (1) personal, go and tell him; (2) private, two or three witnesses; and (3) corporate, tell it unto the church.

If your brother, the believer, sins against you, go and tell him his fault (offence) between you and him alone. This should be done in straightforward honesty, but it should not be done in anger or in wrath or in bitterness. If he hears you, you have gained your brother.

But if he will not hear you, take with you one or two more, so that by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a publican. The stubborn sinner is to be cut off from Christian fellowship (I Corinthians 5:4-5 and I Timothy 1:20).

In respect of church discipline, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has opened HIS most holy mouth and said,

*“Moreover if thy brother shall trespass (sins) against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect (refuses) to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect (refuses) to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.”*

St. Matthew 18:15-17

Further, the spiritual brethren are to restore the erring brother. They are to bring this erring brother (fallen brother) back to his former moral and spiritual condition. Now, those restoring the fallen must individually watch over their own lives, or they also may be

tempted. The spiritual men can be morally pulled down as they deal with the sin of their carnal counterpart.

*"Brethren, if a man be overtaken (caught) in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted."*

Galatians 6:1

A **heretic** is a person who is guilty of believing what is generally accepted. His thoughts and opinions are contrary to real Christian faith. A heretic is a factious person. He is seditious or schismatic. He is a dissenter, seceder or a separatist, who tries to bring about a breach or a cleft in the communion of the church. In these last days, in every fellowship schism will try to raise its ugly head. This is part of Satan's vile and cunning devices. So, every believer should be vigilant and watchful and guard himself against the dangerous tendency to perpetuate secessionism. Apostle Paul gives us clear guidance and strict instruction about how to deal with those with fissiparous tendencies.

In respect of the discipline of a factious person (heretic or schismatic or gnostic), warn him/her once and then warn him/her a second time. After that, have nothing to do with him/her. You must be sure that such a person is subverted (warped) and sinning, being self-condemned.

*"A man that is an heretick after the first and second admonition reject; Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself."*

Titus 3:10-11

'Subverted' means 'twisted, perverted, distorted and depraved'.

Receive one who is weak in the faith with tenderness, but not to disputes over doubtful things. The stronger brother is to take the weak brother to himself with tenderness.

*"Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations."*

Romans 14:1

Note those who cause divisions and offences in the assembly of GOD that are contrary to the doctrine of GOD; and turn away from them.

*"Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them."*

Romans 16:17

Heretical teachers or schismatical teachers or gnostical teachers are false teachers who teach erroneous doctrine. A **heretic** or a **schismatic** or a **gnostic** should not be admitted into a believer's home; and he should not be greeted, for he who greets him shares in his evil deeds. It is not a prohibition against allowing non-Christians (the unsaved or neighbours) into one's home—unless, of course, they are preaching or spreading anti-Christian doctrine.

*"If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds."*

II John 10-11

Dissociate from every brother who walks disorderly and not according to the tradition which he received from the apostles. 'One who walks disorderly and not according to the tradition' means one who lives not in conformity to the Word of GOD, the apostles' doctrine. Every believer should stand fast and hold the traditions (teachings) which he/she was taught, whether by word (mouth) or by epistle (letter).

*"Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us."*

II Thessalonians 3:6

*"Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle."*

II Thessalonians 2:15

Doctrinal accuracy and purity is very essential to the church. The first century Christian church, from the day of Pentecost, persevered correctly in the apostles' doctrine. It placed itself fully under the authority of GOD by accepting the divine discipline of the Word of GOD. The proclamation of the glorious Gospel, the Scriptures revealed the divine discipline and correct beliefs and lifestyle.

*"And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and*

*fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers."*

Acts 2:42

**Our risen LORD JESUS CHRIST condemned the Church of the Laodiceans for its lukewarm activity** (Revelation 3:16). You are lukewarm when you do not bother to pray earnestly in the Spirit daily and simply pray a prayer for the sake of praying or you do not bother to attend the worship in the Church and simply attend for the sake of attending or you do not bother to praise and sing earnestly in the Spirit and simply tell a praise or some praises for the sake of praising and simply sing a song for the sake of singing. Our LORD JESUS wants HIS people to be prayerful, fervent, active, enthusiastic and zealous in the Spirit in all spiritual matters. Our LORD JESUS warns, Just as lukewarm food or tepid food spoils the stomach and forces one to vomit, so will the lukewarm churches, the indifferent churches be cast off from HIS most holy presence. What a pitiable thing it is!

#### 1.4 CHURCH AND STATE

In distinguishing obedience to GOD from obedience to Caesar (a worldly ruler), our LORD JESUS CHRIST identified two different kingdoms: church and state. They have two distinct purposes. JESUS taught us not only to 'render unto GOD' but also to 'render unto Caesar'. Christians are therefore responsible for obeying laws, paying taxes, praying for those in authority, and boldly speaking out and standing for GOD and HIS laws in government. And they should live in this world as the salt of the earth and as the light of the world (St. Matthew 5:13-14). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"Render (Pay) therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto GOD the things that are GOD's."*

St. Matthew 22:21

#### 1.5 PURPOSE OF THE CHURCH

The main purpose of the church is to make disciples of all kinds of people. Those who are evangelized and converted should then be baptized; and then they should be trained in Christian knowledge and beliefs and for effective service. The three purposes of the church are evangelism, baptism, and education.

*"Go ye therefore, and teach (make disciples of) all nations, baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

St. Matthew 28:19

## 1.6 CHURCH—BRIDE OF CHRIST

CHRIST is called the Bridegroom and HIS church is called the bride, since HE loved the church and gave HIMSELF for it on the cross at Calvary, to present it to HIMSELF as a glorious church. See Ephesians 5:25-27. Now, **the spiritual meaning of 'bride' is 'prepared' (Revelation 21:2). This means that the church which is prepared for the everlasting reign with CHRIST.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 1.7 CHURCH—BODY OF CHRIST

The Holy Bible presents the church as members of JESUS' Body, possessing the closest possible relationship with HIM and with one another.

*"Now ye are the Body of CHRIST, and members in particular (individually)."*

I Corinthians 12:27

The church is called the 'Body of CHRIST'. Hence, the whole church on earth (the spiritual church) is considered to be the body. So, individual members of the whole church (the spiritual church) are seen as parts of the body. For the proper functioning of the church, every member must do his/her part in spiritual co-operation with the other members. When anyone disrupts the spiritual co-operation, he/she brings reproach on the Body of CHRIST. So, no one should disrupt the spiritual co-operation of the church. If anyone disrupts the spiritual co-operation of the church, then he/she will be cast into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

## 1.8 CHURCH—ONE NEW MAN

The church is the one new man having the life of CHRIST and HIS person (Ephesians 2:15). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has made the Jewish (the Israelite) and Gentile believers into "one new man".

## 1.9 CHURCH—KINGDOM OF GOD

The church is the kingdom of GOD (Ephesians 2:19), with the saints as citizens possessing its rights and bearing its responsibilities. The church should be subjected to CHRIST in everything (Ephesians 5:24).

## 1.10 CHURCH—GOD'S FIELD

The church is GOD's field. The church is GOD's cultivated land. The church is GOD's farmland. Believers of GOD are GOD's farms, farm labourers, fellow workers and HIS building or mansion.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is also a worker of HIS field. While GOD's ministers in CHRIST, HIS fellow workers, are working on HIS field, HE is also working with them. **Working together with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST on HIS field to grow HIS church is a most blessing thing** and they can expect a rich harvest of sanctified souls. Glory be to GOD!

*"For we are labourers together with GOD: ye are GOD's husbandry (field), ..."*

I Corinthians 3:9

## 1.11 CHURCH—HOUSE OF GOD OR HOUSEHOLD OF GOD

The church is the house of GOD (I Timothy 3:15). The church is the household of GOD (Ephesians 2:19). The household of GOD is the family of GOD. It is a family full of life and joy. The house as well as the household is one and the same thing—the assembly that is composed of the believers (Ephesians 2:19; Hebrews 3:6). Further, the church is GOD's building (I Corinthians 3:9) or GOD's house.

## 1.12 CHURCH—DWELLING PLACE OF THE LIVING GOD

The church is the church of the living GOD (I Timothy 3:15). The church is the dwelling place of the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, in which HE lives (Ephesians 2:21-22)—universally, a holy temple in the LORD, and locally, the dwelling place of GOD in the Spirit.

For the building of GOD's dwelling place, the LORD is one with our spirit and our spirit is one with the LORD. One spirit suggests the highest possible unity between the believer and the LORD (I Corinthians 6:17).

Now, the living GOD lives in the church. The living GOD and the living church live, move and work together. The living church is the house and the household of the living GOD. Hence, the living church attains the life of the living GOD and it becomes the manifestation of the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

### 1.13 CHURCH—WARRIOR OR FIGHTER

The church is the warrior or fighter (Ephesians 6:11-12), who deals with and defeats GOD's enemy to accomplish GOD's eternal purpose. The church needs the whole armour of GOD for the spiritual warfare (Ephesians 6:13-20). For further details, please see page 494.

### 1.14 CHURCH—SALT OF THE EARTH

Salt gives a good taste and a sweet taste and a pleasant taste. Salt adds flavouring. Salt acts as a preservative to preserve foods. The basic character of the Christian church should be like the salt of the earth. It should give a good taste to the people of the whole world; it should give a sweet taste to the people of the whole world; it should give a pleasant taste to the people of the whole world; it should add flavouring to the people of the whole world; and it should act as a preservative to preserve the people of the whole world. The Christian church is the salt to the corrupted earth.

*"Ye are the salt of the earth: ..."*

St. Matthew 5:13

Again, salt, by nature, is a substance that kills and eliminates the germs of corruption. To the corrupted earth, the Christian church is an antidote to keep the earth from becoming fully corrupted. Hence, in nature the Christian church is the healing salt to the people of the whole world. The Christian church is the salt, the only panacea to meet the world's needs. Glory be to GOD!



Salt preserves food from corruption and seasons it and makes it wholesome, acceptable and palatable. Similarly the church alone can purify the society, counteracting every corrupt tendency and setting up a good and worthwhile example to the unsaved. For this, the church must be genuine and must have a savour of its own doing away with all kinds of worldliness.

### 1.15 CHURCH—LIGHT OF THE WORLD

Light is the shining of a lamp to enlighten those in darkness. To the darkened world, darkened with sin and sinful lusts, the Christian church is such a light, effacing the world's darkness. Hence, in behaviour the Christian church is the shining light. The Christian church is the light of the world.

*"Ye are the light of the world. ..."*

St. Matthew 5:14

As the shining light, the Christian church is like a city situated upon a mountain, a city that cannot be hidden (St. Matthew 5:14) and the Christian church is like the lighted lamp on the lamp-stand (St. Matthew 5:15). A lighted lamp placed under a bushel cannot shine out its light. The Christian church as the lighted lamp should not be covered by a bushel. A bushel is an instrument for measuring grain. Hence, bushel is an item pertaining to food; concern for food causes people to be worried (St. Matthew 6:25). The light as a city on a mountain shines over the outsiders, whereas the lighted lamp on the lamp-stand shines over all who are in the house. As a city on a mountain, the light cannot be hidden, and as the lamp on the lamp-stand, the light should not be hidden.

When the Christian church expresses GOD in its behaviour and good works, people see GOD and give glory to GOD (St. Matthew 5:16).

The Christian church is the light, for all the nations to see. The glory of the LORD will be streaming from that light. It will shine forth brightly into the darkness of human depravity. Then all nations will come to that light and mighty kings will be drawn to see the glory of the LORD dawn upon HIS church (Isaiah 60:3).

## 2. THE LORD'S CHURCH

The LORD's church or GOD's church comprises all the true believers or true Christians of JESUS CHRIST, throughout the world. Only our LORD JESUS CHRIST can look into a person's heart and know if he/she is a true believer or a true Christian in JESUS CHRIST. Hence, this church is always visible to our LORD JESUS CHRIST. So, this church is not the invisible church to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, because HE only can see it clearly and openly. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, the LORD's church is the church of the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This church is the visible church to our LORD JESUS CHRIST. And this church is not the invisible church to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The LORD's church is the continuing church, the Christian church of the first century. On the 50th day of the LORD's resurrection or the day of Pentecost in Greek, nearly 120 people were waiting in prayer in an upper room. At that time, suddenly, the sound of a rushing mighty wind came there from heaven and filled the whole house where they were sitting and they saw cloven tongues of fire. The HOLY SPIRIT sat upon the people like cloven tongues of fire. They were filled with the HOLY SPIRIT, the power of the LORD GOD and they began to speak in other tongues (languages). They began to speak in other languages, never learned and never spoken by them and never known to them (Acts 2:1-4). They spoke with the HOLY SPIRIT to GOD, the wonderful works of GOD, the greatness of GOD and the glorious secrets of GOD. He who speaks with the HOLY SPIRIT edifies himself (Acts 2:11; I Corinthians 14:2, 4).

**The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Romans 8:9) is the Creator of the Christian church at Pentecost (Acts 2:1-4).** The ability to speak in different kinds of tongues (languages) indicates the church's ultimate universality, its presence among people of every language (Acts 2:1-12). The HOLY SPIRIT creates a fellowship of love and unity, and companionship (Acts 2:43-46). The HOLY SPIRIT unites all people (Acts 1:8). The HOLY SPIRIT gives great power to reveal CHRIST through preaching, supported by miracles (Acts 4:29-33). The HOLY SPIRIT strengthens, encourages, edifies, comforts and enables the inner life of the church to grow in everyplace in peace and in fear of GOD (Acts 9:31).

The HOLY SPIRIT speaks (Acts 1:16). HE enables others to speak (Acts 2:1-4). HE offers two gifts impossible to get elsewhere—forgiveness (freedom) from the past (II Corinthians 3:17) and the gift of the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 2:38). HE bears witness (Acts 5:32). HE sends out HIS workers (Acts 13:4) and appoints people to shepherd HIS church (Acts 20:28). HE helps in our weaknesses and makes intercession for us (Romans 8:26). HE heals (I Corinthians 12:9). HE leads (Acts 8:29). HE forbids certain course of action (Acts 16:6-7). HE is fully linked with HIS people (Acts 15:28).

During the Old Testament period, GOD divided people by languages and scattered them to live in different quarters of the globe (Genesis 11:1-9). Now, from the day of Pentecost, by the glorious act of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, HE unites the scattered people by languages, by speaking in different kinds of tongues (languages). See Acts 2:1-12. Thus the true unity in CHRIST (Colossians 3:11) of the GOD's people and HIS church is brought about, made known and confirmed by the utterance of the HOLY SPIRIT which is heard by all alike. How wonderful our LORD's doing is!

The **spiritual church** or the **Christian church**, or the **Pentecostal church** of the LORD was born openly on the day of Pentecost. Until that day, the church of the LORD remained hidden like a child, which remains in the womb of its mother. The spiritual church of the LORD was born on the day of Pentecost. The first century Christian church was born on the day of Pentecost. **Our church is the continuing Christian church of the first century.** This church has been established as the continuing church of the first century Christian church for these last days, for the glorious works of the LORD. **The name of our Church is aptly named by GOD as "Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabha" in Tamil — "Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church" in English.**

In HIS church, the LORD meets sinners, saves them, sanctifies them and anoints them with HIS HOLY SPIRIT. The LORD heals also the sick and casts out evil spirits or devils from people who believe in the LORD. The LORD is performing miraculous and wondrous works in HIS church through HIS ministers. **The true believers of this church live by faith.** They know, believe and are convinced that they are justified and saved by the faith in our LORD JESUS CHRIST and

because of this faith they are never used to taking any medicine for their diseases, infirmities etc. They live according to Hebrews 10:38. The glorious signs of this glorious church are miracles and gifts of divine healing (I Corinthians 12:28).

In HIS church, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST works through HIS ministers, called and separated for HIS ministry. Through them the LORD GOD works for the perfecting of the saints, for the edifying of the body of CHRIST, for the full spiritual growing of the saints, for the spreading of HIS Gospel and for the church to grow in godliness.

*"And HE gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of CHRIST: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the SON OF GOD, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of CHRIST."*

Ephesians 4:11-13

Those who are not fully grown up in their spiritual life will be tossed to and fro and easily carried about with every wind of false doctrine, by the trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness by which they lie in wait to deceive (Ephesians 4:14). And they will be easily carried about with various and strange false doctrines. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures warns,

*"Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. ..."*

Hebrews 13:9

**The LORD's church is the church which stamps or treads Satan, the devil or the wicked one, under its feet (Romans 16:20).**

### **3 . SALIENT FEATURES**

**The salient features of the LORD's church are:**

1. Church for the spiritual goodness of the whole world.
2. Church for the physical goodness of the whole world.
3. Church for the whole world for the repentance from sins.
4. Church for the whole world for the forgiveness (remission) of sins.

5. Church for the whole world for the salvation (deliverance) from sins.
6. Church for the whole world for the experience of divine goodness or divine conversion.
7. Church for the whole world for the spiritually born-again experience or the experience of being born-from-above.
8. Church for the whole world for the redemption from sins.
9. Church for the whole world for getting holiness and holy life.
10. Church for the whole world for getting the HOLY SPIRIT of the holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to live a holy life.
11. Church for the whole world for the spiritual growth and mental growth.
12. Church for the whole world for divine healing or faith healing. Faith healers are in this church.
13. Church for the whole world for the growth of godliness and holiness and righteousness.
14. Church for the whole world to see the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.
15. Church for the whole world for a peaceful living.
16. Church for the whole world to enter into the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven or the divine world through steadfast prayers.

Since the Spiritual Church, the New Testament Church was born on the Day of Pentecost, the New Testament Church is aptly named "Pentecostal Church". The name of our Church is aptly named by GOD as "Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabha" in Tamil — "Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church" in English.

We, the workers of our church are all bachelors and spinsters, leading an austere and simple life and living for the welfare of the sick and for the welfare of the public and for the welfare of the whole world. We, the workers of our church are praying for the salvation of the whole world. Waiting prayers, fasting prayers,

awakening prayers and intercessory prayers are being conducted for the welfare of the sick and for the welfare of the public and for the welfare of the whole world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

We believe in ONE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the FATHER Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth and of all things visible and invisible. We believe in the holy Trinity GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. We believe in the holy Triune GOD in One GODHEAD, in three functional persons, GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT, in the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; and HE is the sovereign Creator and Ruler of the universe.

And we believe in ONE LORD JESUS CHRIST, the only begotten SON OF GOD, begotten of the FATHER before the creation of the cosmos. HE is GOD of GOD; HE is Light of Light; HE is the very GOD of very GOD; HE is Begotten; HE is not made; HE is GOD the FATHER; HE is GOD the SON; HE is GOD the HOLY SPIRIT.

And we believe that for us, the sinners and for our salvation from sins, HE came down from heaven and was born by the HOLY SPIRIT of the Virgin Mary and was made Man, GOD-MAN, possessing both Divinity and Humanity in the name of LORD JESUS CHRIST. JESUS is our Saviour. HE is our Redeemer. HE is our GOD. HE is our JEHOVAH. HE is our MESSIAH. HE is our salvation.

And we believe that HE was crucified also for us, the sinners under Pontius Pilate. HE suffered and died and was buried; and the third day HE rose again according to the Scriptures; and ascended into heaven, and sits on the right hand of the FATHER. And we believe that HE shall come again with glory and power to judge both the living and the dead; and HIS kingdom shall have no end.

And we believe in the HOLY SPIRIT, the GOD and the LORD and Giver of Life, who proceeds from GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON, who with GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON is worshipped and glorified as the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

And we believe that there is only one holy Christian church, which is the continuing church of the first century Christian church. And we acknowledge one Baptism for the remission of sins; and we look

for the resurrection of the dead; and for the glorious life of the world to come. Amen.

Again, we believe that the Holy Bible is the divinely inspired and authoritative WORD OF GOD.

And we believe in the resurrection of the saved unto everlasting life and blessedness in heaven, and the resurrection of the unsaved unto everlasting punishment in hell.

And we believe that the church is the indivisible Body of CHRIST, bound together by the HOLY SPIRIT, consisting only of those who are born-again, for whom HE now makes intercession in heaven, and for whom HE shall come again.

And we believe that our LORD JESUS CHRIST's great commission to HIS servants is to go unto all the world and preach the Gospel of GOD's salvation to every creature, and disciple all the nations, and baptizing them by total immersion in water in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT, and teaching those who believe. Amen.

#### **4. DIVINE HEALING OR FAITH HEALING**

The great healing power of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is revealed in a number of instances in the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. Now, what is meant by divine healing or the faith healing? The miraculous healing which one receives from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST by faith is called the divine healing or the faith healing.

No application of any medical treatment is required for this faith healing or divine healing. No medicine is required for this faith healing or divine healing. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the miraculous healer or the divine healer from heaven. HE miraculously heals all diseases of the people. So, HE does not want any medical treatment or medicine to heal. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, when our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE commanded HIS disciples to heal the sick, by touching them and by anointing them with oil in the name of HIM. So, they healed the sick,

by touching them and by anointing them with oil in HIS name (St. Mark 6:12-13). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Here, the prayed oil is applied in the wonderful name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and HE heals the sick or raises the sick up through this prayed oil. GOD's unchanging will is to heal the sick, especially the saved or the believers of the church, by anointing with oil. So, HE commands the sick as follows:

*"Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the LORD: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the LORD shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much."*

James 5:14-16

If a believer of the church of the LORD (who is saved from sins by the LORD and is baptized) falls ill, he must call for the ministers (elders) of the church of the LORD. The ministers of the LORD must pray for him, by anointing him with oil in the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The prayer of faith will make the sick person well; the LORD will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven. This is the divine recovery from illness. This is the divine healing of the LORD GOD. This is the faith healing of the LORD GOD. The fervent prayer of a righteous man, particularly the fervent prayer of the minister of GOD (the servant of GOD) is powerful and effective. This is the glorious law and statute given to the believers by the LORD.

The oil, which is prayed and given by the ministers of the LORD, works as a glorious and divine medicine of heaven. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST gives a divine and wonderful healing to the sick person through this prayed oil. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Thus, everyone should understand that this anointing with oil is not a medicinal anointing, and this anointing with oil is not a medical treatment. When the believer of the church or the saved one is sick, he should confess his own sins to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and GOD may heal him. If he is not healed, he should call the ministers of GOD to pray for his healing by anointing with oil, in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. All diseases experienced by the saved



people today will be cured by trusting GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and by confessing their sins and by the prayer of faith. The prayer of faith entails both the prayer of the sick person and the prayer of the ministers of GOD. As this prayer of faith reveals a miraculous healing, it includes a gift of healing, especially a gift of healing of GOD's ministers. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST heals through HIS ministers (servants) by giving HIS wonderful gift of healing to them.

There are three common reasons, which bring illnesses to people. The reasons are:

1. The sins, vices, transgressions, iniquities, evil, wickedness, trespasses, filthiness of sinners, etc., bring them illnesses (Psalm 107:17; Job 20:11).

*"There is no soundness in my flesh because of THINE anger; neither is there any rest in my bones because of my sin."*

Psalm 38:3

2. The sufferings and afflictions, the ministers of GOD undergo in the service of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST bring them illnesses and infirmities.

*"Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother, and companion in labour, and fellowsoldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants. For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick. For indeed he was sick nigh unto death: but GOD had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow. I sent him therefore the more carefully, that, when ye see him again, ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful. Receive him therefore in the LORD with all gladness; and hold such in reputation: Because for the work of CHRIST he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lack of service toward me."*

Philippians 2:25-30

3. The saints of the LORD fall ill for the glory of the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Lazarus, the brother of Martha and Mary of Bethany, fell ill for the glory of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then, our LORD JESUS has said,

*"This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of GOD, that the SON OF GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) might be glorified thereby."*

St. John 11:4

Then, Lazarus died due to his illness and he was buried. On the fourth day of his burial, our LORD JESUS CHRIST raised him up from the dead for the glory of HIS name (St. John 11:1-46). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is a great healer. HE is the good GOD who heals. HE will take away from you all sickness, and will afflict you with none of the horrible diseases.

*"And the LORD will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases ..."*

Deuteronomy 7:15

*"...I am the LORD that healeth thee."*

Exodus 15:26

HE miraculously heals all diseases, illnesses, weaknesses, wounds and all tumours. The LORD casts out all devils and evil spirits. HE is the LORD of great power who performs great wonders, great signs and great deeds. The LORD is the great physician or surgeon. HIS immensely holy blood is the most wonderful heavenly medicine and it gives glorious cure.

*"Is there no balm in Gilead; is there no physician there? why then is not the health of the daughter of MY people recovered?"*

Jeremiah 8:22

*"Go up into Gilead, and take balm, O virgin, the daughter of Egypt: in vain shalt thou use many medicines; for thou shalt not be cured."*

Jeremiah 46:11

Here, the spiritual meaning of the word 'Physician or Surgeon' is 'the LORD JESUS CHRIST', the spiritual meaning of the word 'Gilead' is 'the Calvary' where our LORD JESUS CHRIST was crucified and the spiritual meaning of the word 'Balm' is 'the most holy blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST'. In olden days, balm was taken from the bark of one kind of green tree by tapping. Now, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has

said about HIMSELF that HE is the green tree (St. Luke 23:31). From the green tree, viz., the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the balm, viz., the most holy blood of JESUS CHRIST is taken from HIS wounds.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the LORD of great power and great authority to heal any disease, any illness, any wound, any tumour, any weakness and to cast out any devil and any evil spirit, just by thinking of them in HIS heart. HE is the LORD who alone performs great wonders and miracles. Everything will be done when told by HIM. Anything will cease to work when commanded by HIM. There is no wondrous thing that HE cannot do.

*"Behold, I am the LORD, the GOD of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for ME?"*

Jeremiah 32:27

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD was in this world as Saviour, HE performed great wonders by healing all manner of diseases of the people and by casting out devils and evil spirits. HE opened the eyes of the blind and the born blind to see; HE made the lame leap; HE made the crippled jump; HE made the dumb speak; HE made the deaf hear; HE cleansed the lepers; HE raised up the dead. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And HE healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; ..."*

St. Mark 1:34

*"And great multitudes came unto HIM, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at JESUS' feet; and HE healed them: Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the GOD of Israel."*

St. Matthew 15:30-31

*"The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them."*

St. Matthew 11:5

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST did great works also through HIS disciples or ministers. The LORD has given them power to heal sicknesses and to cast out devils.

*"And HE ordained twelve, that they should be with HIM, and that HE might send them forth to preach, And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils."*

St. Mark 3:14-15

*"And they went out, and preached that men should repent. And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them."*

St. Mark 6:12-13

Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST performed many miraculous signs and wonders through HIS apostles.

*"And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought (done) among the people; ..."*

Acts 5:12

Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST performed many miraculous signs and wonders through HIS apostle Peter. He healed a man lame from his mother's womb (Acts 3:1-11); and he raised Dorcas (Tabitha) from the dead (Acts 9:36-42). In Lydda, he healed a man named Aeneas, a paralytic who had been bedridden for eight years (Acts 9:32-35).

*"Insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow (fall on) some of them. There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with (tormented by) unclean spirits: and they were healed every one."*

Acts 5:15-16

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST performed many miraculous signs and wonders through HIS apostle Paul. He healed a man lame from his mother's womb (Acts 14:8-11); he raised Eutychus from the dead (Acts 20:6-12); he healed the father of Publius, suffering from fever and bloody flux (dysentery), through the laying on of his hands; and when this was done, the rest of those on the island who had diseases also came and were healed (Acts 28:8-9); and when a venomous viper fastened (bit and hanged) on his hand, he suffered no harm (Acts 28:1-6).

*"And GOD wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or*

*aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them."*

Acts 19:11-12

Even today, the LORD is performing great wonders through HIS ministers. HE will do the same in the days to come. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The LORD JESUS CHRIST forgives the sins and iniquities of the people and heals their diseases.

*"Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases."*

Psalms 103:3

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Forgiver of sins and iniquities. When HE was in this world, HE forgave and healed a paralyzed man (paralytic) by HIS powerful word. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"For whether (which) is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk? But that ye may know that the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith HE to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. And he arose, and departed to his house."*

St. Matthew 9:5-7

When a sinner realizes that all his illnesses or sicknesses or diseases, and all bonds of devils are the result of his sins, iniquities and filthy works, he weeps and confesses his sins, iniquities, filthy works, etc., to the LORD. He meditates how the LORD suffered and shed HIS most holy blood in Calvary. He prays for the forgiveness (remission) of his sins and for the redemption and salvation from his sins. The LORD JESUS CHRIST forgives his sins, iniquities, filthy deeds, etc., and redeems and saves him from his sins, iniquities, filthy deeds, etc. And the LORD heals all his diseases and delivers him from all bonds of devils and evil spirits. When a man is really redeemed and saved by the LORD JESUS CHRIST, all his diseases, weaknesses and all the bonds of devils which he acquired through his sins, iniquities, filthy deeds, etc., are totally cured. He receives good health and strength. A man receives this divine health, when he obtains forgiveness of sins and salvation and redemption from sins.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the same yesterday, today and tomorrow. HE is the same in HIS Words and deeds. The LORD is performing glorious works through HIS ministers. HE is performing glorious works by HIS ministers. The LORD never changes in HIS Words, in HIS works, in HIS promises and in HIS deeds. The LORD heals the people by sending HIS glorious Words; HE heals the people by sending HIS power; HE heals the people by touching with HIS glorious hands (St. Matthew 8:15); all who touched HIM (the hem of HIS garment) were perfectly healed. HE is the LORD who heals by HIS scars (I Peter 2:24). JESUS' most powerful and holy name heals the people. HE heals by HIS name through faith in HIS name (Acts 3:16).

*"...And HE touched his ear, and healed him."*

St. Luke 22:51

*"And besought (begged) HIM that they might only touch the hem of HIS garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole (well)."*

St. Matthew 14:36

*"When the even was come, they brought unto HIM many that were possessed with devils (demons): and HE cast out the spirits with HIS Word, and healed all that were sick."*

St. Matthew 8:16

*"And they that were vexed (tormented) with unclean spirits: and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch HIM: for there went virtue (power) out of HIM, and healed them all."*

St. Luke 6:18-19

Diseases and sicknesses cause physical and mental agony, helplessness, hopelessness, loneliness and shattering of mind. If anyone comes to JESUS by faith and with fear and by ignoring social shame, he/she will get a divine healing from HIM. A woman who had suffered from an issue of blood for twelve years, spent all her money she had on many doctors to get a cure/healing. But no one could heal her; and her ailment and pain worsened. Then, she heard about JESUS and with a very strong belief, she came behind HIM, filled with fear and touched the hem (border) of HIS garment, ignoring her social stigma (St. Matthew 9:20-21) and immediately she was perfectly healed by our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Her faith or belief about our LORD

JESUS gave her a miraculous healing from HIM (St. Mark 5:24-34).  
Glory be to GOD!

Therefore, a person who believes in the LORD JESUS CHRIST needs no other healer, no other medicine or no other remedy. **There is no doctor or physician or surgeon in the world who is greater than the LORD JESUS CHRIST.** HE is the great and glorious doctor of heaven. HE is the great and glorious physician of heaven. HE is the great and glorious surgeon of heaven. HE is the divine doctor, the divine physician and the divine surgeon of heaven, always good and sufficient for the people who believe in HIM. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

While JESUS CHRIST was having dinner at Matthew's house, many tax collectors and 'sinners' came and ate with HIM and HIS disciples. When the Pharisees saw this, they asked HIS disciples,

*"Why eateth your Master with publicans (tax collectors) and sinners?"*

St. Matthew 9:11

On hearing this, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said to them,

*"They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."*

St. Matthew 9:12-13

In the above verses, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has not said anything about the sick people, with bodily sicknesses. But, HE has said about the sick people, with sicknesses in their soul; HE has said about the sick people, sick with sins, iniquities, filthy deeds, etc. For that HE has clearly said that HE has not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Thus, no one should misunderstand that the LORD JESUS CHRIST has asked the believers to consult a worldly doctor or physician or surgeon for their sicknesses and to take a medical or a surgical or any other treatment for their diseases. Everyone must understand that no other physician or surgeon or doctor, other than the LORD JESUS CHRIST is needed for anyone who believes in HIM and no treatment from any worldly physician or surgeon or doctor is needed for anyone who believes in HIM.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST never likes any healing/cure of HIS people from any sickness/disease by any worldly physician/surgeon/doctor/healer. But HE always likes to heal/cure HIS people from every sickness/disease miraculously. So, we must always seek HIM to obtain HIS miraculous healing/cure (II Chronicles 15:1-2; 16:12-13).

#### 4.1 WHY SHOULD THE BELIEVERS NOT TAKE ANY MEDICINE?

Now, the people who are saved and baptized by total immersion in water, in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT are the members of the church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are the believers of this church. The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the head of the church. The members of this church are the members (organs) of the immensely holy body of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. As they are the organs of the immensely holy body of the LORD, they are the very same body of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Thus, when they use medicine, they are using it to the body of JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF, since they are the very same body of JESUS CHRIST. Many believers of the LORD are not aware of what a terrible and treacherous sin it is to use medicine to their bodies. The believers of HIS church, the saints and the righteous must live by faith. They must believe in the LORD with their whole heart and live in total faith on the LORD. From the Holy Scripture of the LORD, anyone can clearly understand that the just (the righteous) will live by faith.

*"Now the just shall live by faith: ..."*

Hebrews 10:38

The true believers of the Beginning church, the Christian church of the first century lived by faith. The true believers of the 21st century also live by faith. The true believers of our church, the continuing Christian church of the first century also live by faith. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The LORD JESUS CHRIST has bought HIS believers at the cost of HIS immensely holy flesh and blood and HIS glorious life. Therefore, the members of HIS church, who belong to the LORD GOD HIMSELF must glorify GOD with their body, spirit and soul (I Corinthians 6:20).



They must always glorify GOD also with the works of their most holy faith (Jude 20). GOD's most holy name should never be blasphemed by them.

*"What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also."*

James 2:14, 17-18, 20, 26

Apostle Paul did not take any medicine or remedy to counteract the effects of the deadly poison when bitten by a venomous viper (Acts 28:3-6). Another time, the Jews from Antioch and Iconium beat, tortured and stoned St. Paul to death and left his body outside the city and went away. But, soon he rose up, as if nothing had happened to him and came into the city (Acts 14:19-20). He lived always by faith (Hebrews 10:38). He healed the sick and cast out devils.

When a believer of GOD or a member of HIS church uses medicine to his/her body, he/she uses medicine to GOD's immensely holy body itself. When a believer uses medicine, his/her evil act blasphemes the most powerful and the most holy and the most glorious name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. It tarnishes HIS most holy and wonderful name. The believer who undergoes medical treatment without understanding who he/she is and what his/her body is, causes great grief to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Hence, he/she should not forget that his/her deed is a great sin and treachery liable for terrible judgment and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

#### **4.2 WHY SHOULD THE BELIEVERS NOT DEFILE THEIR BODIES ?**

GOD made man in HIS image (Genesis 9:6; Colossians 3:10). David, the psalmist says,

*"I will praise THEE; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made:  
..."*

Psalm 139:14

GOD whom no one can see, manifested HIMSELF in flesh and revealed HIMSELF to mankind.

*"...GOD was manifest in the flesh, ..."*

I Timothy 3:16

Do you (the believers) know that your body is the temple of the HOLY SPIRIT who is in you, whom you have from GOD and you are not your own? (I Corinthians 6:19). So man has no authority over his own body. The human body is intended to be dedicated, consecrated and kept sacred for the LORD and HIS Word to abide in the human heart.

We must also realize that our body has an important role to play in bringing honour and glory to GOD. In the regenerated or the saved man, his spirit must always please GOD and his body should not rebel against GOD and his flesh should not revolt against GOD. Carnality should not raise its ugly head over anything that the Spirit of GOD wishes to do.

We know how physical pleasures try to reign supreme in the lives of human beings. With some people money becomes a god and with some others drink becomes a god. But, as far as pleasure is concerned, almost everyone wants to experience and enjoy it. So, no wonder many become unsuspecting victims of Satan, the devil and his minions and indulge in vile passions, perpetrating moral degradation and perpetuating evil-mindedness. Nowadays with many, many people the Media, that is, TV series/show/programme, cable/satellite TV, computer, radio, the Web, the Internet, magazines, and the newspapers become gods. With some people novels become gods.

Many people give a lot of importance to how they look. Is there anything wrong about it? Yes, there is. In their effort to look pleasing, they tend to err. A garment maker's advertisement says, "Dress makes a man". It is true that we need clothes to look decent. What we wear should be clean and simple. Wearing gaudy and motley coloured dresses to attract the attention of others should be avoided. There are people who make an idol out of their fashions and dresses. This is a modern way of idol worship.

Using cutex or nail polish, lipstick, costly dresses, festal apparels, fine clothings, gorgeous apparels, transparent dresses, perfumes or

jewellery to entice and lure others is the sin of vanity of life and the lust of the eyes. The lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the pride of life are sins (I John 2:16). By making these sins appealing to Adam and Eve, Satan caused the fall of the human race (Genesis 3:1-6).

It is absolutely essential that we must give due importance to physical cleanliness and external appearance. When we come to worship the LORD on Sundays or other days, we keep ourselves tidy and neat and wear a decent but simple clean dress that will in no way draw the attention of others to ourselves. Suppose, a man has to attend a prayer meeting immediately after the sweat and toil of his day's work, he may use a very light or mild body deodorant to make himself presentable. Body odour (BO), the smell of the human body, especially of sweat is usually regarded as unpleasant. So, deodorizing of unpleasant odours is not sin. Using a sweat freshener to rid of unpleasant odours is not sin. No one can object to that; so far, everything is all right. But if he, wantonly or deliberately uses a strong pungent perfume or fragrance with a view to getting cheap recognition from others in the fellowship or church, then he is erring and this is certainly to be condemned. So, the motive is very important.

When we have specific instructions in the Word of GOD about what is good for us, we have to abide by and obey it implicitly without attempting any exemption or explanation for relaxation or compromise of the command. In the Holy Bible, we come across several 'touches', such as the unclean touch (Leviticus 5:2-3; Isaiah 52:11; II Corinthians 6:17), angelic touch (I Kings 19:5, 7), queenly touch (Esther 5:2), cleansing touch (Isaiah 6:7), healing touch (St. Matthew 8:3), blessing touch (St. Mark 10:13-16), Satanic touch (I John 5:18) and the sex motivated touch. The last one, we find in I Corinthians 7:1. It says,

*"...It is good for a man not to touch a woman."*

I Corinthians 7:1

On this basis, touching a woman or shaking hands with her is a sin. We should not bring in the cultural background to justify greeting with a hand-shake as permissible. Let us not forget man-woman relationship is where spiritual focus is often severely tested.

Similarly a woman having her head not covered in an assembly is committing an offence against GOD-given ordinance (I Corinthians 11:5-16). When the Word of GOD declares a particular action as sin, it is a sin and abomination. There can be no rethinking about it or arguing against it.

The Holy Bible says of a few indispensables, a few absolute essentials without which we cannot be spiritually alive. To be precise, we can glean seven important absolutely certain declarations from GOD's Word. Four of these are from Hebrews and the rest from James, I Corinthians and the gospel of St. John.

1. **Propitiating Blood:**

*"...Without shedding of blood is no remission (there is no remission)."*

Hebrews 9:22

2. **Pleasing Faith:**

*"But without faith it is impossible to please HIM: ..."*

Hebrews 11:6

3. **Paternal Chastening:**

*"...Without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons."*

Hebrews 12:8

4. **Practical Holiness:**

*"...Holiness, without which no man shall see the LORD:"*

Hebrews 12:14

5. **Proving Works:**

*"...Faith without works is dead also."*

James 2:26

6. **Possessing Love:**

*"...And have not charity (without love), I am nothing."*

I Corinthians 13:2

7. **Providing Power:**

*"...For without ME ye can do nothing."*

St. John 15:5

Are your actions meant to glorify GOD? Should you not be a model to others? As a child of GOD, should you not glorify GOD? Should you not reflect and radiate HIS glory in whatever you do?

*"And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the LORD, and not unto men."*

Colossians 3:23

The believers or the regenerated or the saved should not defile their bodies. They should be wholly holy in their spirit and soul and body (I Thessalonians 5:23). They should always reflect and radiate GOD's glory in whatever they do. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 5. SOME IMPORTANT PROMISES

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, on the night HE was betrayed, gave to HIS disciples some important promises. HE promised HIS followers that HE would never leave them comfortless or forsake them (St. John 14:18; Hebrews 13:5). HE also promised that HE was going away to heaven to prepare a place for them, and HE would come again, that they may be where HE is (St. John 14:3). Again, HE promised them about the sending of the **Comforter** or the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or the SPIRIT of TRUTH (St. John 14:26; 16:7,13). Our LORD JESUS also promised them about HIS peace. HE does not give HIS peace to HIS people as the world gives. HE gives HIS peace, the divine heavenly peace, the **"real peace"** to HIS people. So, our hearts might not be troubled or afraid (St. John 14:27).

Furthermore, JESUS gave HIS disciples an important promise,

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on ME, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto MY FATHER. And whatsoever ye shall ask in MY name, that will I do, that the FATHER may be glorified in the SON. If ye shall ask any thing in MY name, I will do it."*

St. John 14:12-14

The above promise of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has not yet been fulfilled. The one who believes or the one who has the faith on the LORD JESUS CHRIST will do what the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS

CHRIST has done in this world, when HE was in this world; and he will do even greater works or greater things than HE has done in this world, when HE was in this world. This most wonderful promise of the LORD JESUS CHRIST has not yet been fulfilled by anyone in this world. **A man who believes or who has the faith on the LORD JESUS CHRIST will fulfil this important promise.** One man will fulfil the above wonderful promise. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

All the promises of GOD are in HIM to the glory of the LORD GOD, by the ministers of GOD.

*"For all the promises of GOD in HIM are yea, and in HIM Amen, unto the glory of GOD by us."*

II Corinthians 1:20

'Yea and Amen' mean surely and certainly all the promises of the LORD GOD will be fulfilled by GOD.

From the Holy Scriptures, we come to know that the LORD GOD has power to do what HE has promised.

*"...What HE had promised, HE was able also to perform."*

Romans 4:21

For the fulfilment of the promise of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST all believers of the LORD must wait and continue with one accord in prayer and supplication. In full belief, they should ask GOD. They should ask GOD in faith, with no doubting (St. Matthew 21:22).

*"But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering (not doubting). ..."*

James 1:6

**What was the promise about the anointment with the HOLY SPIRIT ? How was the promise fulfilled ?**

*"And, being assembled together with them, (JESUS) commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the FATHER, which, saith HE, ye have heard of ME. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT) not many days hence."*

Acts 1:4-5

*"These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of JESUS, and with HIS brethren."*

Acts 1:14

*“And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven (divided) tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.”*

Acts 2:1-4

Thus, for the fulfilment of the wonderful promise referred to in St. John 14:12-14, all believers must wait and continue with one accord in prayer and supplication. They must be consistent in prayer. They must pray unceasingly. They must be clear-minded, self-controlled, and watchful in prayer. Praying for the fulfilment of this important promise of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the duty of all believers. This is a mandate given by our LORD JESUS CHRIST to each and everyone of the believers. So, let us commit ourselves with a gladsome mind and devote our time and energy and endeavour wholeheartedly to fulfilling this important duty and responsibility by obeying this order and commandment of our LORD JESUS CHRIST to pray continuously, day and night with fear and trembling.

During the fulfilment of this wonderful promise, the whole world will see the great wonders of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and the strange happenings, until now not happened; the whole world will overwhelm with amazement and the whole world will come under the glorious salvation of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **6. DIVINE REVELATION OF THE SUN-CLAD WOMAN**

In the divine revelation of the sun-clad woman, the glorious church of GOD and its great enemy, Satan, the devil are described in Revelation 12:1-6.

*“And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:”*

Revelation 12:1

*“And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.”*

Revelation 12:2

*“And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.”*

Revelation 12:3

*“And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.”*

Revelation 12:4

*“And she brought forth a man Child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her Child was caught up unto GOD, and to HIS throne.”*

Revelation 12:5

*“And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of GOD, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.”*

Revelation 12:6

Now, a church or congregation is a structured body of believers. There was no such church before the time of Abraham—the father of all believers (Romans 4:16). Abraham was the first official head of the congregation, which was the nation of Israel. The nation of Israel was the only congregation that existed in this world until CHRIST came to die for our sins.

During the Old Testament period, GOD's relationship with Israel was close and intimate. GOD lavished HIS blessings on Israel but they repeatedly displeased HIM. So, HIS wrath fell on Israel. The northern kingdom of Israel was destroyed by the Assyrians and the southern kingdom of Judah was destroyed by the Babylonians. They were in captivity for a long time. Then a remnant came out of Babylon, returned to Jerusalem and the nation once again gradually came into existence. GOD recognized it as HIS congregation. Thus Israel continued to be the external representation of the kingdom of GOD on earth until the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.



The era of national Israel has come to an end and the glorious era of the New Testament church has begun. We have received a supreme blessing from Israel in our LORD JESUS CHRIST and let us thank the LORD for this glorious and precious gift. Many passages in the Old Testament show that believers would come to GOD from every nation and Gentiles would serve HIM. Now, a number of believers are coming to GOD from every nation and Gentiles are serving HIM. GOD's programme of worldwide evangelization began on the day of Pentecost—the fiftieth day since our LORD JESUS CHRIST's resurrection from the dead and it is in progress.

In the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:1**, "**woman**" signifies the glorious church of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 5:27; Hebrews 12:23). Now, in Jeremiah 6:26, our LORD GOD calls HIS people or HIS church as "O daughter of MY people" and in Zechariah 9:9 HE calls HIS people or HIS church as "O daughter of Zion" and "O daughter of Jerusalem". Thus woman signifies HIS church or HIS people.

Now, in Revelation 14:4, we read, "These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins". In this, the word "**women**" mentions all ungodly and unholy and **apostate** churches of this world.

And in Revelation 17:4, we read, "And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication". In this, the word "**woman**" signifies all false religious systems and beliefs and denominations, all atheistic beliefs and all ungodly and unholy and **apostate** churches of this world.

"**The sun**" signifies the Sun of Righteousness, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Psalm 84:11; Malachi 4:2; St. Luke 1:78-79).

"**A woman clothed with the sun**" signifies the church clothed with the Sun of Righteousness, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Galatians 3:27).

*"For as many of you as have been baptized into CHRIST have put on CHRIST."*

"**Heaven**" signifies the church having very high and very great revelations, as heaven is very high and very great.

"**The moon**" signifies the church, which has been separated from the world and worldly things, and it is having very high spiritual experiences. Further, the moon could not give the light by itself to the earth. But it reflects the light of the sun to the earth. As such, the church could not give the divine light of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST by itself to the world. But it reflects the divine light of the Sun of Righteousness, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to the world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

"**Twelve stars**" signify the apostles of our LORD JESUS CHRIST and they also signify the church which continues steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, in the Breaking of Bread (in the LORD's Supper or in the Holy Communion) and in prayers (Acts 2:42) and in following the example of the apostles (I Corinthians 11:1-2; 4:15-16) and in walking according to the pattern of the apostles (Philippians 3:17).

"**A crown of twelve stars**" signifies the church having the power and reign of the apostles.

Now, the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:2** signifies that the LORD JESUS CHRIST should be revealed to the whole world through HIS church. For this, great labours, pains, tribulations and efforts of HIS servants are required. So, many labourers or servants of GOD are required to do HIS ministry (St. Luke 10:2). The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and HIS glorious and miraculous works will be revealed to the whole world by great labours, pains, tribulations, sufferings, afflictions, trials, striving and efforts of HIS servants only (Galatians 4:11, 19; Colossians 1:24-25, 29).

*"My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until CHRIST be formed in you."*

Galatians 4:19

*"Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of CHRIST in my flesh for HIS body's sake, which is the church: Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of GOD which is given to me for you, to fulfil the Word of GOD; Whereunto I also labour, striving according*

*to HIS working, which worketh (works) in me mightily."*

Colossians 1:24-25, 29

In the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:3**, "**a great red dragon**" signifies Satan, the devil. His red colour shows his murderous and wicked character (St. John 8:44). His seven heads, seven crowns and ten horns depict his worst restraining power and influence he has against the people of GOD or against the church of GOD.

In the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:4**, "**the stars of heaven**" signifies the servants of GOD of this world. **The tail of the dragon**, the devil drew one third of the servants of GOD of this world who transgressed the Word of GOD and threw them to the earth. They were fallen from their very high position to a very awful and low position in hell. What a pitiable thing it is! So, the servants of GOD of this world should be very careful in doing HIS ministry. Apostle James also warns:

*"My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation."*

James 3:1

Satan, the devil is called "the angel of the bottomless pit".

*"...Which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon."*

Revelation 9:11

St. Peter calls him the adversary, the devil (I Peter 5:8). He is the wicked one (St. Matthew 13:19). He is the ruler of the darkness (Ephesians 6:12) and the god of this age (II Corinthians 4:4). The Pharisees called him Beelzebub, the ruler of the demons (St. Matthew 12:24). St. Paul uses the name Belial to indicate Satan, the wicked one (II Corinthians 6:15).

Satan, the devil is always an enemy to the people of GOD or the church of GOD (I Peter 5:8). He is the greatest enemy to the church of GOD or the people of GOD. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST crushed the head of Satan, the devil on the cross at Calvary (Genesis 3:15). Again, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gives HIS great power and strength to HIS glorious church or to HIS people to crush the tail and other parts

of Satan, the devil under their feet (Romans 16:20). Hence, the gates of hell will not overcome HIS glorious church (St. Matthew 16:18).

"The dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born" means that Satan, the devil is always against the church of GOD or the people of GOD, opposing them vehemently trying to destroy and swallow them up.

*"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:"*

I Peter 5:8

The latter part of the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:4** and the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:5** have no connection with each other. The latter part of the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:4** tells about the glorious church. But the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:5** tells about our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. Now, at this juncture, everyone should know what the nature of the prophetic Word of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is. Isaiah 28:13 clearly says,

*"But the Word of the LORD was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; ..."*

Isaiah 28:13

Hence, it is very difficult to understand the spiritual meaning of a prophetic word. Only the true spiritual people can understand the correct spiritual meaning of a prophetic Word of GOD.

Again, the "**man-Child**" is CHRIST, destined to rule all nations (Revelation 19:15-16; Psalm 2:6-9). At the time of the birth of CHRIST, Satan was ready to kill HIM. When HE was a child, he tried to kill HIM through Herod, the king. After that also he was ready to kill HIM in many ways. But, he could not.

Further, Satan, the adversary sought to implement his scheme through Herod the Great. He made Herod slaughter all the male children aged two and under, in and around Bethlehem (St. Matthew 2:13-18). Satan, the devil—the liar (St. John 8:44) tempted CHRIST by promising to give HIM the world's kingdom without any suffering (St. Matthew 4:1-11). But the world is our LORD JESUS CHRIST's (Psalm 24:1). Judas Iscariot also was influenced by Satan, the devil

and made a tool to betray our LORD JESUS CHRIST so that GOD's plan of salvation might be prevented. Satan, the devil also used the Jewish leaders to thwart our LORD JESUS CHRIST's redemptive mission. Even now, Satan, the adversary continues consistently in his attempts to oppose CHRIST through false and twisted gospels (Galatians 1:6-9; I John 4:1-4).

Apostle Peter admonishes believers to be of sober spirit and be on the alert as the adversary, the devil prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking to devour believers (I Peter 5:8).

Satan and his demons always try to attack individual believers through sinful desires and alluring world system and through temptations, proposals, questions, lies, attacks and doubts (Ephesians 6:16).

Satan, the tempter is crouching to capture the believers. Apostle Paul recognized Satan's crafty ways in bringing about disharmony in the family relationships.

*"Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. The wife hath not power of (authority over) her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of (authority over) his own body, but the wife. Defraud (Deprive) ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency (lack of self-control)."*

I Corinthians 7:3-5

Prayer requires us to be free from persons, matters and things. The prayer that requires staying away from the spouse for a time must be special and of great importance.

In these last days, pastors and members of the church are susceptible to attacks by Satan, the devil. Just as Satan, the devil entered into Judas, he subtly influences the pastors and the believers who are weak in their faith. Through them, he causes internal and external problems, endangering the unity of the church.

Eve, though in the perfectly sinless atmosphere of the garden of Eden, easily became a victim to Satan's vile and cunning designs. Is it not far easier for him to entice and deceive gullible people who live

in a sin-saturated world contaminated and polluted and dominated by a TV and internet culture. Expecting all these and more, apostle Paul admonishes us against the deception of Satan, the devil.

*"But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in CHRIST."*

II Corinthians 11:3

Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world to save sinners (I Timothy 1:15). HE is the TRUE GOD (I John 5:20). HE is the Saviour of the world (St. Luke 2:11). HE came down from heaven to take the place of all of us sinners and to pay for all our sins with HIS own blood (I John 1:7, 9). HE died for us and on the third day HE rose again from the dead (St. Luke 24:5-7). HE appeared to HIS disciples and HIS followers for forty days (Acts 1:3; I Corinthians 15:3-7). Thus, HE clearly proved that HE really was alive. After giving HIS final instructions to HIS followers and disciples, HE returned to heaven to prepare a place for those who believe in HIM (St. John 14:3) and to rule over all things (Hebrews 1:3; St. Matthew 28:18). Before HIS ascension into heaven, HE promised that HE would come again with power and great glory (St. Matthew 24:30) to judge the living and the dead (Acts 10:42).

Those who believe in HIM and those who are saved will enjoy all the glory and splendour of heaven with the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever (St. John 3:16; Revelation 21:24). Those who reject and those who are not saved will be judged and they will be cast into eternal hell-fire to suffer for ever and ever (St. Matthew 25:41; II Thessalonians 1:9; Revelation 21:8).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will rule all the nations of the world with a rod of iron. When HE came for the first time, HE did not rule all the nations of the world but HE will, one day. HE was caught up unto GOD and to HIS throne at HIS ascension into heaven (Acts 1:9; Hebrews 1:8; Ephesians 4:10) and HE had confirmed that the work of atonement had been finished.

Again, in the prophetic **verse Revelation 12:6**, "**the woman**" refers to the church of GOD and "**the wilderness**" signifies the sufferings of GOD's people in this world. During the time of their

tribulations, even in the Great Tribulation period also, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will prepare a place to nourish them. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **7. GOD'S MANDATE ABOUT JEWELLERY AND DRESS**

GOD has created gold and silver intending them to be used as coins and not intending to be used as jewellery or ornaments. Gold is a very precious metal because of its extreme malleability, ductility and durability. In contemporary society, the value of gold is used as a standard for the value of currency. The gold standard is a monetary system in which the value of money is assigned on the value of gold. The gold reserve is the stock of gold held by a country's central bank. In international financial transactions, the economic stability of a country is determined by its stock of gold in its treasury.

Further, GOD has given us gold to make gold articles like spoons and dishes used at meals, and to coat another metal with gold to protect it. And GOD has made silver available to us to make silver articles like knives, forks, dishes, etc., used at meals, and HE has made it as an excellent conductor of heat and electricity, to be used in electrical contacts and for electroplating tableware. And GOD has made diamond, the hardest known mineral, highly prized as a gemstone to be used in cutting tools, etc., and not to use it as jewellery.

Again, GOD has created gold, silver, pearls, and other precious metals and precious stones, intending to be used for the glory of GOD HIMSELF, by decorating HIS temple or HIS House of Prayer (I Chronicles 29:1-9; II Chronicles 3; 4; 5:1).

Now, the gates of heaven are the pearly gates (Revelation 21:21). The wall of heaven is of jasper, the most precious jewel (Revelation 21:11, 18). The foundations of the wall of the city of heaven are adorned with all kinds of precious stones (Revelation 21:19). The city of heaven is pure gold, like clear glass (Revelation 21:18); and the street of the city is also pure gold, like transparent glass (Revelation 21:21).

Now, let us ponder a little on whether or not wearing jewellery aids to glorify GOD.

We live in an empty, aimless world which is becoming more and more godless. Social values have been turned upside down. Moral values have been deteriorating deplorably. People chase after objects of self-gratification. Wherever we turn, we find lawlessness, moral degeneracy and depravity. Biblical Christianity is shunned everywhere. Real Christians have to live their godly living in the midst of this hostile and reviling TV and film dominated culture.

In this background, when a believer goes out wearing gold ornaments, costly costume and strong perfumes, she is unnecessarily attracting the attention of others. We find a lot of people who like and deliberately choose this style of living. But, should GOD's children imitate them is the question.

One of the motives of an unbeliever in adorning with expensive jewellery and showy attire is to exhibit and establish her status. It may be the outcome of her inferiority complex. However, a believer who has committed herself wholly need not be concerned about any of these insecure feelings. Her security is in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. She cares more for her inner being than for her external appearance which is corruptible and perishable. This does not mean that she should totally ignore or neglect her hair or dress. She should not keep her hair unkempt or untidy or dishevelled. She should keep her hair neatly combed. She should dress herself properly, decently in simple and neat clothes with modesty, propriety and moderation.

Is jewellery one of the basic necessities of life? Not at all. Actually it causes more harm than good. Any woman decked with jewels is likely to be the target of robbers, thieves and rowdy elements and may bring terrible disaster and even death to her life. Even, keeping jewels at home is very risky nowadays. Why don't people realize all these adverse effects?

Some people, especially those who are newly married wrongly think that jewels can be pledged to get money in an emergency situation. This argument is not valid since people can always safely deposit their extra money in a bank whenever they can and increase their income also.



GOD does not want HIS children to be enslaved to Satan, the devil or to become victims of his evil designs. The desire to buy gold and silver is irresistible with many believers. But, GOD does not want HIS children to be endangered by evil and HE warns them to abandon the insatiable craving for ornaments.

Furthermore, decorating with the ornaments of gold or silver or pearls or precious stones or costly dresses is one of the three great sins mentioned in the Holy Bible—the pride of life (I John 2:16). The **pride of life** is one of the greatest sins which produces the other two great sins—the lust of the eyes and the lust of the flesh (I John 2:16). The Fall of Adam and Eve was due to these three sins. What a pitiable thing it is! Now, if one has no pride of life, then he/she has no desire to wear any kind of ornament. Due to the pride of life, people wear various kinds of ornaments and other things. Only due to the pride of life people adorn themselves with various kinds of ornaments and with other things. Only due to the pride of life, people beautify their outward body with various kinds of ornaments and with other things. Beautifying the external (outward body) with various kinds of ornaments and other things is neglecting the inward, the internal being (the soul). No one should neglect his/her inner being, the soul by adorning the outward with various kinds of ornaments and with other things. If one wears ornaments and other things, then he/she commits the sin of the vanity of life. This ugly sin produces the other two ugly sins—the lust of the eyes and the lust of the flesh. What a dangerous thing it is!

Now, no one should wear any costly clothing (I Timothy 2:9; I Peter 3:3), or any changeable suits of apparel—the festal apparel (Isaiah 3:22), or any shining dress (Isaiah 3:24), or any attire of a harlot—very thin soft and ugly garment to show his/her fleshly body awkwardly (Proverbs 7:10). A woman should not wear men's clothing, and a man should not wear women's clothing, for all who do so are an abomination to the LORD our GOD (Deuteronomy 22:5). The GOD-created differences between men and women should not be disregarded (Leviticus 20:13).

In fact, all the ornaments of gold or silver or pearls or precious stones placed on the head or any other part of the body of any male

or female are of no value compared to the meek and quiet spirit (I Peter 3:4). The meek and quiet spirit is eternal; and the other is passing.

Further, the passage I Timothy 2:9-10 clearly condemns all these styles, ornament or dress and demands to dress modestly and discreetly with shamefacedness (decency) and sobriety (propriety), not with braided hair or gold or silver or pearls or precious stones or costly clothing or other things, but with good works, appropriate for women who profess godliness. Women or men are not to dress immodestly. Either women or men should not be with braided hair or gold or silver or pearls or precious stones or costly clothing or other things. Their proper dress should confirm their Christian testimony and behaviour.

*"In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works."*

I Timothy 2:9-10

Now, women's having long hair is intended by GOD for their glory and as a sign of their submission to GOD's will and wish (I Corinthians 11:15). But, it is misused by many, especially by those who live in luxurious and corrupt life. Besides, they beautify their lustful flesh by adorning it extravagantly with gold and other costly things. Everyone should absolutely abstain from these GOD-condemned practices.

Our most beloved GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is altogether lovely (Song of Solomon 5:16). The SPIRIT of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT lives in HIS people and makes HIS people altogether lovely—internally and externally (Philippians 4:8) without any cost. Then, where is the need for wearing the artificial external ornaments with cost? No need at all. What is the use of beautifying one's outward body cosmetically with cost? No use at all.

Now, the material adornment of the plaiting of hair or the putting on of gold or silver or pearls or precious stones or costly dresses is the outward adornment and it is corruptible. But, everyone should have the incorruptible adornment of a meek and quiet spirit in

his/her hidden man of the heart. Our inward man or the inner man or the soul should be adorned with a meek and quiet spirit. This glorious spiritual adornment is very precious in the sight of GOD. This glorious incorruptible adornment is very precious in the sight of GOD. The man or the woman is to emphasize his/her inner qualities, not his/her outer appearance. The references to adorning are the strict prohibitions against jewellery and dress.

*"Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of GOD of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in GOD, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters (children) ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement (terror)."*

I Peter 3:3-6

The proud and fashionable women are strongly condemned by our LORD GOD through the prophet Isaiah, since they walk with heads held high and with mincing steps, tinkling the anklets on their feet; and they have flashing seductive eyes; and they decorate themselves with many ornaments, costly things and dresses. The prophet predicts that the women who delight in these corruptible things of feminine accessories will be severely punished and finally they will be damned. In the same manner, the men who delight in these corruptible things of feminine accessories will also be severely punished and finally they will be damned to perdition.

*"Moreover the LORD saith, Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet: Therefore the LORD will smite with a scab the crown of the head of the daughters of Zion, and the LORD will discover their secret parts. In that day the LORD will take away the bravery of their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon, The chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers, The bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings, The*

*rings, and nose jewels, The changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins, The glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils. And it shall come to pass, that instead of sweet smell there shall be stink; and instead of a girdle a rent; and instead of well set hair baldness; and instead of a stomacher a girding of sackcloth; and burning instead of beauty."*

Isaiah 3:16-24

Everyone should loose himself/herself from the bonds of ornaments of his/her neck or nose or ears or hands or legs or fingers or arms or hip or head or breast, etc., (Isaiah 52:2). No one should defile his/her body, by covering or decorating his/her body with silver or gold or any other thing and everyone should cast them away as a menstrual cloth (Isaiah 30:22).

Further, these ornaments become their idols in their hearts (Ezekiel 14:3). Those who deck themselves with ornaments have forgotten GOD and are going after their lovers—Satan, the devil and his minions (Hosea 2:13). Covetousness in respect of ornaments and other things is idolatry (Colossians 3:5). The ornamental and abominable adornments of the mother of harlots and of the abominations of the earth are clearly depicted in Revelation 17:4-5.

No one should wear a wedding ring or a wedding chain or any other thing to show their marital status, since the wife is bound by the law of the LORD as long as her husband lives and the husband is also bound by the law as long as his wife lives. The law of the LORD has dominion over them as long as they live (I Corinthians 7:39; Romans 7:1-2). Hence, no other symbol or sign, except the law of the LORD, is essential to show their marital status. So, they should not be bound by any wedding ring or wedding chain or any other thing.

Our LORD GOD has severely condemned HIS people through the man of GOD, Moses to take off their ornaments. So they stripped themselves of their ornaments by the mount Horeb. Adorning with ornaments is very hateful to GOD. Adorning with ornaments will bring the terrible wrath of GOD. Adorning with ornaments will cause terribly disastrous results. Adorning with ornaments will bring great destruction. Those who adorn with ornaments are the stiff-necked

people. Hence, they will be consumed completely by the wrath of GOD.

*“For the LORD had said unto Moses, Say unto the children of Israel, Ye are a stiffnecked people: I will come up into the midst of thee in a moment, and consume thee: therefore now put off thy ornaments from thee, that I may know what to do unto thee. And the children of Israel stripped themselves of their ornaments by the mount Horeb.”*

Exodus 33:5-6

The false church, the one world material church or the one world Ecumenical church or the Roman Catholic church with all other false religious systems and beliefs and denominations and all atheistic beliefs and all ungodly and unholy and apostate churches of this world, is described as a great whore or prostitute (Revelation 17:1) decked with all worldly splendour whose illicit relations are achieved by intoxication of abominations and filthiness of fornication and other evil deeds (Revelation 14:8; 17:4-5). Decked with gold, silver, precious stones, pearls, etc., and dressed in unwanted clothes with unwanted colours are the decorations of the bride of antichrist; they are the decorations of the bride of Satan, the devil (Revelation 17:4-5).

Since our LORD JESUS CHRIST gave HIMSELF for our sins, HE alone might deliver us from this present evil world of wickedness (Galatians 1:4-5; Ephesians 2:2; 6:12). As our LORD JESUS CHRIST is not of this world, HIS people should not be of this world (St. John 17:13-16). As our LORD JESUS CHRIST has overcome this world, we should also overcome this world (St. John 16:33). So, we should hate all our vainglory, pride and self-will in decorating ourselves with the outward adornments of jewellery and costly clothing and we should decorate ourselves with the inward adornments of meek and quiet spirit (I Peter 3:3-6). Glory be to GOD!

In spite of what we have discussed so far, if any believer is still enticed to artificial external ornaments and persists in the heathen ways, let her/him answer the following ten eliminating questions and be convinced of what is wrong and what is right and what is pleasing to GOD and what is abominable to HIM. May the LORD's grace touch those stiff-necked and hardened souls!

**Ten eliminating questions.**

1. Does our external adornment glorify GOD?
2. Does it bring us near to or far away from GOD?
3. Does it help us to fight against or fall to temptation?
4. Does it edify or enslave?
5. Does it help to spread the Gospel?
6. Does it help to become Christ-like?
7. Is it characteristic of the world or of the FATHER?
8. Is there any real benefit?
9. Is it wise?
10. Is it safe?

## CHRISTIANITY

**CHRISTIANITY** is the truest and the highest and the best religion as it is based on the belief that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and that HIS teachings alone are of truly divine origin.

**"...This (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is the true GOD, and eternal life."**

**I John 5:20**

Christianity is an open-faced religion and nothing is to be done under cover of secret (St. Luke 8:17).

Christianity is the only true bond to establish the true relationship of love, trust, faith, belief and affection with the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. It is the only true bond connecting all people of the world with the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

In Christianity alone there is "the true worship of the Most High GOD and the TRUE GOD", the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Most holy love, most holy faith, most holy trust, most holy belief, most holy affection with the Most High GOD are involved only in Christianity. Always keeping in line with the Words of the Most High GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is very essential in Christianity.

In Christianity, the true worship of the Most High GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the only worship. In Christianity, no other worship is allowed. In Christianity, the worship of the Most High GOD, the

LORD JESUS CHRIST is for the spiritual needs and bodily needs; and it is for the inheritance in heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

Christianity is full of good and bright heavenly doctrines of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and it reflects the ONLY HEAVENLY GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Christianity highly develops the inner man, the soul as well as the outer man, the body. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, Christianity alone provides a substitute to bear the sins of mankind. CHRIST is the ONLY ONE who is able to bear our sins and save us.

*"Who HIS own self bare our sins in HIS own body on the tree (cross), that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes (wounds) ye were healed."*

I Peter 2:24

*"Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

*"If we confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."*

I John 1:9

Again, Christianity alone provides boldness for sinful people to come before the most holy GOD.

*"Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need."*

Hebrews 4:16

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST said,

**"I am the way, the truth, and the life: ..."**

St. John 14:6

Hence, you must know that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONLY ONE who can save you, and you must throw yourself altogether on the mercies of GOD. As you know your hopeless condition as a sinner, cry out to GOD to save you.

*"And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, GOD be merciful to me a sinner."*

St. Luke 18:13



Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST wants you to come to HIM in total humility, acknowledging your sinfulness and your helplessness, trusting totally in HIM. You must know that no one is good enough in himself/herself to go to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. You must also know that your sins are sending you to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. So, you do not love your sins; repent of your sins; cry to GOD for HIS mercies; pray to GOD sincerely for an intense hatred for your sins, with broken-heart and with tears and with humility; pray to GOD sincerely for your forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, and for getting all other spiritual experiences, with broken-heart and with tears and with humility. Then our GOD will surely supply all your needs according to HIS riches in glory by CHRIST JESUS (Philippians 4:19).

The Holy Bible warns us that the end is very soon. The end of the world and the return of CHRIST will be very soon.

*"For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape."*

I Thessalonians 5:3

All is vanity. The end of all things is near. Are you ready for HIM?

*"Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity."*

Ecclesiastes 1:2

*"But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer."*

I Peter 4:7

## **1. GOD IS LOVE**

*"...GOD is Love."*

I John 4:8

The Word of GOD, the Holy Bible says, "GOD is Love," not "Love is GOD." Our sinful world with its weak and selfish view of love, has fully turned these words and contaminated our understanding of love. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's divine nature is love—divine self-sacrificial love (Ephesians 5:2). In HIS nature and in HIS actions, GOD is loving. HIS love towards mankind is clearly seen on the cross

at Calvary. The Holy Bible similarly affirms that GOD is light, holy, powerful, faithful, true, just and perfect.

Now, GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT are the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Thus GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Love. The GOD of Christianity is Love. Further, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Love. This divine nature of GOD makes HIM uniquely GOD. Also, HIS Spirit, HIS person, HIS life, HIS self-existence, HIS unchangeableness, HIS infinitude and HIS unity make HIM uniquely GOD. Without these divine things, GOD would not be GOD. So, we must love and worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, as HE truly is. For our part, we must continue to love and trust HIM.

The LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world and died for us. HIS death was vicarious. The atonement of CHRIST is the vicarious atonement. HE died for our benefit and HE died in our place. HIS death was a substitutionary sacrifice. HE died as a substitute for sin. HE died in the place of the Christian; HE died in the place of the church; and HE died in the place of the whole world. Thus HIS love is very great (Hebrews 2:9).

*"But GOD commendeth HIS love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, CHRIST died for us."*

Romans 5:8

*"...CHRIST also loved the church, and gave HIMSELF for it."*

Ephesians 5:25

There is no love like the love of JESUS. HIS love is perfect. HIS love gives joy to our hearts. HIS love gives life to our souls. HIS love enlightens our eyes. HIS love neither fades nor fails. HIS love is very precious. HIS love is boundless. HIS love is pure and free. HIS love is divine. HIS love is wondrous. HIS love is redeeming and saving. HIS love is ever the same. HIS very sweet voice of love came down from the cross at Calvary.

*"FATHER, forgive them; for they know not what they do. ..."*

St. Luke 23:34

There is no heart like the heart of JESUS. HIS heart is filled with tender love and compassion. There is no word like the Words of

JESUS. HIS Words are filled with divine life, full of comfort, joy and courage. HIS Words are very precious to our souls. HIS Words are coming out of HIS most loving heart.

JESUS is the Lover of our souls. JESUS loved us and HE gave HIMSELF for us. HIS love seeks us. HIS love calls us. HE is seeking and calling to save and redeem us. HIS love flows as an endless river from the cross at Calvary to all eternity. There is none like JESUS. No one can find any, like our LORD JESUS CHRIST. We are so glad that JESUS loves us and HE loves even us. The love of GOD for sinful mankind is the love which no one deserves (Romans 13:10).

*"Herein is love, not that we loved GOD, but that HE loved us, and sent HIS SON to be the propitiation for our sins."*

I John 4:10

As St. Paul writes about love in I Corinthians 13, of what love is, he consciously draws us towards JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. HE is the ever-living embodiment of this outgoing, longsuffering, self-giving, self-effacing love. Without HIM there would be no church.

*"Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. Charity never faileth: ..."*

I Corinthians 13:4-8

'Charity' means 'love'.

## **2 . RELIGION OF LOVE**

"Love GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST" and "Love your neighbour as yourself" are the two great commandments of Christianity.

Our LORD JESUS said,

*"Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."*

St. Matthew 22:37-40

*"If any man love not the LORD JESUS CHRIST, let him be Anathema Maran-atha."*

I Corinthians 16:22

'Anathema' means 'devoted to destruction or curse'. 'Maran-atha' means 'our LORD is come'.

In Christianity everyone should "**OVERCOME EVIL WITH GOOD**" (Romans 12:21). The life and death of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the greatest example of this ethical truth. To overcome evil with good, the LORD JESUS has said,

*"But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also."*

St. Matthew 5:39

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST alone is the epitome of divine love and the source of all true love. GOD's love was clearly proved at Calvary when JESUS CHRIST died for all our sins. Love is an attribute of GOD; and love is a description of GOD's being. GOD's love is absolute; GOD's love is never-changing. Since GOD first loved us, we ought to love GOD first and we ought to love others as well. Since GOD so loved us, we ought to love GOD greatly and we ought to love one another. (I John 4:11; Ephesians 2:4; II Thessalonians 2:16).

Now, **Zacchaeus'** heart yearned and affectionately longed within him to see JESUS and he set his love upon HIM (Psalm 91:14). Even though Zacchaeus was a cheat and a turncoat, JESUS loved him; and in response he was saved. He repented and returned money over and above his unjust gains. His confession revealed his penitent heart. He showed his faith by his changed behaviour and by loving others (the poor). GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came to give eternal life through salvation and the kingdom of GOD to Zacchaeus and all. HE came to seek and to save all the lost, regardless of their previous sinful ways of life. See St. Luke 19:1-10.

### **3. BLESSINGS OF CHRISTIANITY**

Christianity is the simplest and the broadest and the deepest and the highest religion. In Christianity only we can get spiritual blessings or heavenly blessings: the repentance from sins, the forgiveness of sins,

the salvation from sins, the redemption from sins, the experience of divine goodness, the born-again or born-from-above experience, the holiness and holy life, the spiritual growth, the anointment with the HOLY SPIRIT, the first resurrection of the saints, the thousand years rule of the saints with CHRIST, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven, etc. In Christianity, we find the second resurrection of the sinners, the judgment, hell, etc.

In Christianity, we see the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST as the great benefactor; HE is the great defender; HE is the great intercessor; HE is the great comforter; HE is the great helper; HE is the great healer; and HE is the great loving guide.

In Christianity only we find the love of GOD, hope, faith, peace, humility, truth, righteousness, holiness, goodness, lowliness, meekness, longsuffering, gentleness, happiness and joy.

Christianity is not for a particular race, but it is for all races. Hence, there is no race in Christianity and it belongs to the whole world and it cannot be localized.

Further, Christianity is not an artificial one, but it is the most real one and it is the most genuine one. Hence, there is no artificiality in Christianity.

Again, Christianity is not an accidental or incidental one, but it is a well planned one by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, in Christianity everything is purposive.

Furthermore, Christianity is not an obscure one, but it is an obvious one to everyone who seeks the truth sincerely. Hence, there is no obscurantism in Christianity.

Again, Christianity is purely moral. Hence, there is nothing immoral in Christianity; there is no immorality in Christianity; and there is no sexual-immorality in Christianity.

Further, Christianity is not concerned with politics. Hence, there is no party apparatus in Christianity and there is no party politics in Christianity. Christianity avoids political confrontations. "Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and unto GOD

the things which be GOD's" (St. Luke 20:25) is, obviously, very significant here. Christianity separates Church and State.

Again, Christianity is a religion of freedom. Christianity gives inner freedom. It makes one free from sins, free from fears, free from worries, free from sicknesses, free from irritations, free from all devils, free from judgment, free from hell, etc. Christianity gives great happiness and great joy in heart and in body and in spirit and in soul. It gives great joy and great happiness in the Spirit of CHRIST or in the Spirit of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT.

*"And the disciples (Christians) were filled with joy, and with the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

Acts 13:52

Besides, Christianity gives eternal joy and happiness, eternal bliss, eternal kingdom and eternal reign with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **In the eternal state**, there will be no sin and there will be no tears, death, sorrow, crying or pain.

*"And GOD shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."*

Revelation 21:4

*"And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."*

Isaiah 35:10

#### **4 . CHRISTIAN LIFE**

**The saved or the true Christians live a sinless life in a sinful world like the saltwater fishes (not absorbing saltiness) in seawater (salty water).** Now, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has sacrificed HIMSELF on the cross for the salvation of the whole world. Hence, the Old Testament sacrifices are not at all necessary to anyone. But, everyone should present his body a living sacrifice to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Thus, the Christian life begins with total commitment and irrevocable presentation of oneself to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. As the human body is the instrument of all sins, it should be

irrevocably submitted and surrendered to GOD to obtain a sinless body to live a sinless life; it should be presented to GOD to live a righteous and holy life.

*"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of GOD, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of GOD."*

Romans 12:1-2

In Christian life, there is a strong belief in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. In Christian life, there is a true union between GOD and man. Such union can be found nowhere else. In Christianity, the great compassion of GOD enters strongly into all HIS people and there is remedy for all human ills present in their hearts.

The true relationship between GOD and man is similar to the true relationship between father and child. Now, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the FATHER in heaven. HE is the heavenly FATHER and men are HIS children. GOD HIMSELF will be with HIS children and be their GOD. HE will wipe away all tears from their eyes and console them. So, everyone must live with HIM as HIS child in perfect love and confidence. The child should always live with the heavenly FATHER. The heavenly FATHER knows all about HIS child; HE is able to give him all he needs, even before he asks for it.

*"And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear."*

Isaiah 65:24

When the child repents of his sins, the FATHER forgives his sins; the FATHER gives everything to him in prayer, even though the FATHER knows everything beforehand. The child knows that the FATHER is always with him and near him to fulfil his needs. If anyone believes in the FATHER and lives as HIS child, then he will not be in isolation or desolation or despair.

In Christianity prayer life is very essential; fear of GOD is very essential; practice of good works is also very essential; always keeping the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is very essential; always

being led by the Spirit of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT is very essential; always expecting the kingdom of GOD, the kingdom in which all darkness and evil will be put away, is very essential; always having the fear about HIS terrible judgment is very essential; and always having the fear about the horrible hell is very essential. Glory be to GOD!

In Christianity there is no communist ideology or socialist ideology. Christianity is not a heavy yoke and it is not burdensome. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls,

*"Come unto ME, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take MY yoke upon you, and learn of (from) ME; for I am meek (gentle and humble) and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For MY yoke is easy, and MY burden is light."*

St. Matthew 11:28-30

To rejoice along with HIM and to live as a child with the FATHER in heaven, HE is calling everyone to come to HIM. HE is calling everyone to worship HIM only and to serve HIM only (St. Matthew 4:10).

In Christianity the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the only source of all good things; HE is the only channel of all good things; HE is the only goal of all good things (James 1:17). So, everyone should worship HIM to receive all good things from HIM.

*"For of HIM, and through HIM, and to HIM, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen."*

Romans 11:36

Christian life is a spiritual journey by faith and hope; It is a divine journey after getting salvation (deliverance) from sins; It is a divine journey of holiness and righteousness; It is a divine journey with the power and strength of the HOLY SPIRIT; It is a divine missionary journey, for the GOD's ministers; It is a spiritual journey from great despair to great happiness. Christian life is a divine journey to heaven, the kingdom of GOD and it is a divine journey of victory with the inward and outward illumination of the divine light of life (St. John 8:12).

In Christianity there are no pilgrimages; there are no rituals; there are no traditions; there are no myths and legends; there are no occult or magic practices; there are no occult rituals; there are no magic



powers; there are no mesmerizing performances; there are no witchcrafts; there are no witch doctors; there are no medicine men; there are no shamans; there are no enchanters; there are no witches; there is no fatalism; there is no shamanism; there is no hypnotism; and there is no hypocrisy.

Again, in Christianity there are no mysterious nature-worship cults; there are no bizarre or very strange claims; there is no sorcery; there is no enchantment or enticement; there is no divination; there is no bargaining; there are no unwanted or outward regulations; there is no idolatry; there is no worship of the Madonna (the Virgin Mary); there is no worship of the saints; there is no worship of the angels; there is no worship of the evil spirits or devils or demons; there is no worship of the celestial bodies; there is no worship of the terrestrial species; there is no worship of the extraterrestrial beings; there is no worship of wood; there is no worship of stone; there is no worship of silver; there is no worship of gold; there is no heathen worship; there is no pagan worship; there is no worship of Satan, the devil; and there are no irrational practices. In Christian life, there are no such practices. In Christianity, there is no lie; there is no abomination; there is no impurity and there is no immorality.

Every Christian must be a committed Christian. A personal decision should be made for a committed Christian life. A personal decision will make us pay the cost. A committed Christian's decision will influence others. To a committed Christian, GOD reveals HIMSELF at the right time and at the right turning point. A committed Christian should have a right concept and he/she should develop his/her commitment.

Christian life is a committed life. Christian life is a dedicated life. Christian life is a pledged life. Christian life is a committed life in support of Christian doctrine and Christian faith and Christian cause. Christian life without commitment is not at all a Christian life.

Sobriety is very essential for a committed Christian life. Humility is also very essential for a committed Christian life. Commitment is the foundation of obedience. Total commitment is the foundation of total obedience. Total obedience is also very essential for a committed Christian life.

Every committed Christian should be humble; every committed Christian should be obedient; every committed Christian should consider himself/herself worth nothing; every committed Christian should take the form of a servant (Philippians 2:7-8). The mind of every committed Christian should be the same as that of CHRIST JESUS (Philippians 2:5).

A committed Christian should not be a double-minded person. He should not be a slothful person. He should not be a dabbler. He should not make any wrong commitment.

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST clearly showed us a totally committed life. Elias (Elijah) and Moses had a totally committed life. Daniel, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego had a totally committed life. The apostle Paul and the apostle Peter and other apostles of the LORD and many others had a totally committed life.

Commitment is the result of a very firm resolution. It does not depend on one's abilities. It starts with little things. It begins and grows in an atmosphere of wrestling (struggle). Be patient and single minded during harsh circumstances resulting from commitment.

The world will take notice of our commitment. The world will be annoyed by our commitment. The world will question our commitment. The world will test our commitment. The world will test the depth, strength, power, holiness, righteousness and faithfulness of our commitment. We must submit ourselves to GOD and always rely on GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and keep our whole trust in HIM. Then, our commitment will bring glory not only to GOD but also to ourselves. The end of our committed Christian life will be heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Everyone should commit his/her ways and works unto the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and trust in HIM.

*"Commit thy way unto the LORD; trust also in HIM; and HE shall bring it to pass."*

Psalm 37:5

*"Commit thy works unto the LORD, and thy thoughts shall be established."*

Proverbs 16:3

Christians should not be worldly; they should not be stained by worldliness; they should be pure and undefiled (James 1:27). They should watch and pray so that they will not fall into temptation (St. Matthew 26:41). They should be vigilant and prayerful (Colossians 4:2). The heart of endurance is prayer. Prayer is the heart of enduring trials. If we want to endure, we must always depend on GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Christians should be watchful and ready that they may be caught up by CHRIST secretly (St. Matthew 24:42-44). They should be faithful and wise (St. Matthew 24:45-47) and they should live by faith (Hebrews 10:38).

Christians should not be fleshly—adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envy, murders, drunkenness, revelries, and the like are fleshly sins (Galatians 5:19-21). Christians should flee from such fleshly sins. Those who practise such things will not inherit the kingdom of GOD.

Christians should be filled with spiritual fruits such as love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness and temperance (Galatians 5:22-23), righteousness and truth (Ephesians 5:9), lowliness of mind (Ephesians 4:2; Philippians 2:3), mercy (Philippians 2:1), godliness (II Peter 1:6), holiness (Ephesians 1:4; Colossians 1:22) and purity (St. Matthew 5:8). They should live in the Spirit and they should walk in the Spirit (Galatians 5:25). If we walk in the Spirit, then we will not fulfil the lust of the flesh (Galatians 5:16).

Christians should be holy and without blame before our LORD JESUS CHRIST in love (Ephesians 1:4). Their love must be without hypocrisy (Romans 12:9). They must have fervent love for one another, for **"love will cover a multitude of sins"** (I Peter 4:8). They should love their neighbours as themselves (St. Matthew 19:19). Above all things, they should put on love, which is the bond of perfection (Colossians 3:14). The love of GOD has been poured out in our hearts by the HOLY SPIRIT (Romans 5:5). The love of GOD is GOD HIMSELF (I John 4:8, 16). If we love GOD we will do whatever HE tells us to do. And HE has told us from the very first to love each

other (II John 5). And this is love: that we walk according to HIS commandments. As you have heard from the beginning, HIS commandment is that you should walk in love (II John 6).

Christians should honour their father and mother (St. Matthew 19:19). Christian parents should discipline their children to fear GOD and help them to be saved. They should not provoke their children to wrath, but bring them up in the training and admonition of the LORD (Ephesians 6:4). Children should obey their parents in the LORD, for this is right and they should honour their father and mother (Ephesians 6:1-2). No one should neglect his/her father and mother. Obligations to parents should not be neglected by anyone. Husbands should love their own wives and not be bitter toward them (Colossians 3:19). They should give honour to their wives (I Peter 3:7). Wives should submit themselves to their own husbands in the LORD (Colossians 3:18). Christian marriage is sacred and binding.

Servants should be obedient to their fleshly masters (Ephesians 6:5). Masters should give their servants what is just and fair, knowing that they also have a Master in heaven (Colossians 4:1). The wages of the labourers should not be kept back by fraud (James 5:4).

Christians should submit themselves to their rulers in the LORD; they should honour the king (I Peter 2:13-17). Now, the higher authorities are established by GOD (Romans 13:1). So, we must obey civil government, but when it goes contrary to the explicit commands of GOD, we must obey GOD and be ready to suffer the consequences (Acts 5:29).

Christians should not swear at all (St. Matthew 5:34-37). They are the salt of the earth (St. Matthew 5:13). They are the light of the world (St. Matthew 5:14). They should lay up treasures in heaven (St. Matthew 6:19-21). They should love their enemies (St. Matthew 5:44). They should not serve GOD and riches (St. Matthew 6:24).

**Christian life toward others including GOD's saints or GOD's ministers should be as follows:**

*“Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. Be kindly affectioned (affectionate) one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring (giving*

*preference) one another. Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits."*

Romans 12:9-10, 13, 15-16

### **Christian life toward GOD should be as follows:**

*"Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the LORD."*

Romans 12:11

### **Christian life toward ourselves, the believers should be as follows:**

*"Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer."*

Romans 12:12

### **Christian life toward the persecutors and enemies should be as follows:**

*"Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not. Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is MINE; I will repay, saith the LORD. Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him (with the Bread of Life—the Word of GOD); if he thirst, give him drink (Living Water—the LORD's Gospel): for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head (symbol of purification). Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good."*

Romans 12:14, 17-21

### **Christian life, in general, before all men should be as follows:**

*"Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men."*

Romans 12:17

*"Let not (do not let ) mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart: So shalt thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of GOD and man."*

Proverbs 3:3-4

*“Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the LORD,  
but also in the sight of men.”*

II Corinthians 8:21

**In these five aspects, Christian life is complete and proper.**

Christians should flee from fornication or sexual immorality (I Corinthians 6:18). Christians should flee from idolatry (I Corinthians 10:14). Worshipping idols or images or statues or photos is idolatry. Covetousness is also idolatry (Colossians 3:5). Loving anyone or anything more than our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is idolatry. Covetous person is an idolater (Ephesians 5:5). Christians should flee from youthful lusts (II Timothy 2:22). Christians should flee from love of money, for the love of money is the root of all kinds of evil (I Timothy 6:10-11).

Further, Christian life is a good fight of faith; the good fight of faith against Satan and his henchmen (I Timothy 6:12; II Timothy 4:7; Ephesians 6:12). Again, Christian life is a heavenly race and we must run this race successfully (I Corinthians 9:24). We must run this heavenly race to win the heavenly prize, the kingdom of GOD (Hebrews 12:1-2). The crown of righteousness (II Timothy 4:8), the unfading crown of glory (I Peter 5:4) and the crown of life (James 1:12) will be a portion of the glory for the overcomers' enjoyment in the manifestation of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven (II Peter 1:11).

Christian life is a sanctified life (I Corinthians 1:2). Christian life is a justified life; Christian life is a glorified life (Romans 8:30). Final glorification is the ultimate step in GOD's complete salvation in which GOD will completely change or transfigure our mortal lowly body, conforming it to the resurrected glorious body of CHRIST (Philippians 3:21). Then we will be like CHRIST (I John 3:2). The **Christian faith** is not merely local or regional but worldwide (Romans 1:8). The Gospel of GOD produces godly character and noble conduct in Christians by faith (Colossians 1:6). The Christian faith must grow more and more and the love, everyone of us has for each other must increase abundantly (II Thessalonians 1:3). Glory be to GOD!

## 5 . SELF-SURRENDER

Christianity is centred on the crucifixion of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Christianity focuses or concentrates on the crucifixion of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Christian faith and love are on the person of the Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Now, the centre of the Christian faith is in our LORD JESUS CHRIST's vicarious atonement. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST laid down HIS most glorious life for us and for the whole world, by HIS self-surrender. Thus, Christianity is centred in our self-surrender and in laying down our lives for HIM and for the brethren.

*"Hereby perceive we the love of GOD, because HE laid down HIS life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren."*

I John 3:16

*"Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends."*

St. John 15:13

Again, Christianity consists in loving the Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and following HIM in faith and love. In Christianity only we can see the divine power of GOD. The divine power of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is coming down and entering into HIS people. Hence, the divinity of our divine GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will be clearly reflected on HIS people. In our self-surrender and in laying down our lives for JESUS CHRIST, the divinity of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST enters into us. In Christianity only we can see the divinity of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 6 . ESSENCE

In Christianity only we see the good Saviour—no parallel to HIM; we see the good Redeemer—no parallel to HIM; we see the good Master—no parallel to HIM; we see the good Comforter—no parallel to HIM; we see the good Shepherd—no parallel to HIM; we see the good Physician or Doctor—no parallel to HIM; we see the Prince of Peace—no parallel to HIM; we see the Wonderful GOD—no parallel

to HIM; we see the good Counsellor—no parallel to HIM; we see the Mighty GOD—no parallel to HIM; and we see the everlasting FATHER—no parallel to HIM. HE is the only unparalleled and the only incomparable. HE is too good, too great, too mighty, too powerful to have an equal.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is healing the sick; HE is giving rest to the weary and heavy laden; HE is living among HIS people; HE is living among the poor and the sick and even among the outcasts from society.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of strict justice and great holiness. Though HE is so kind, HIS judgments will happen very soon over guilty people or sinners. HE can cast both soul and body into hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. HE is the sole authority to cast sinners into hell. But HIS blessed people will inherit HIS kingdom, the kingdom of GOD. HE will give HIS everlasting kingdom to HIS people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The essence of Christianity is in upholding the authority of HIS church, the Christian church. HIS church is the congregation of HIS saved people. HIS church is the "body of CHRIST". As HIS church is considered to be HIS body, so individual members are seen as parts of HIS body or seen as members of HIS body. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...And the LORD added to the church daily such as should be (were being) saved."*

Acts 2:47

*"Now ye are the body of CHRIST, and members in particular (individually)."*

I Corinthians 12:27

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST loved the church and gave HIMSELF for the church. HE sanctifies and cleanses the church with the washing of water by the word. 'The washing of water' means 'immersion Baptism in water'. The ultimate purpose of JESUS CHRIST's love for the church is to present the church to HIMSELF a glorious church, without stain or spot or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.

*"...CHRIST also loved the church, and gave HIMSELF for it; That HE might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by*



*the word, That HE might present it to HIMSELF a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish."*

Ephesians 5:25-27

The saved people or the believers of GOD or the true Christians have come to the city of the living GOD, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of joyful heavenly angels, to the general assembly and church of the first-born, whose names are written in the Book of Life in heaven; to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST the righteous Judge of all and to the spirits of men and women made perfect (Hebrews 12:22-23). **This is the superior and final triumphant status of Christians. This is the superiority and finality and fullness of Christianity. See also pages from 1388-1391. This is the main essence of Christianity.**

## **7. ONLY UNIVERSAL RELIGION**

The founder of Christianity is the ONE who is living by HIMSELF; HE is the ONE who is living in HIS everlasting kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven; HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Christianity focuses on the work of CHRIST, the Almighty GOD.

When HE was in this world, what HE preached was, in fact, HIMSELF. HE embodied HIS glorious preachings in HIS life perfectly. Hence, the founder of Christianity, the LORD JESUS CHRIST did a very great work in establishing it as the Only True Universal Religion.

Christianity is being opened to all the people of the world. Christianity is being opened to all that are bound by sins and iniquities. It gives freedom to sinners and it fills the hearts of sinners with divine hope, divine joy, divine faith, divine love, divine views, divine contentment and divine peace.

Further, Christianity unites all people in one brotherhood under the loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who is the FATHER of all. Hence this makes Christianity the only true universal religion.

*"One GOD and FATHER of all, ..."*

Ephesians 4:6

In CHRIST as well as in Christianity, there is neither Jew nor Greek (the Gentiles); there is neither bond nor free; and there is neither male nor female.

*“There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond (slave) nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in CHRIST JESUS.”*

Galatians 3:28

Thus, Christianity, the religion of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is free to spread out in all directions rapidly. Christianity, the only true universal religion is free to spread out among all the races of the world rapidly. Christianity, the religion of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is the religion of scientific accuracy without any error. It accurately reflects the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, HIS everlasting kingdom, etc. Since HIS kingdom of heaven or HIS everlasting kingdom is assuredly coming, everyone should be prepared for HIS kingdom of heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, Christianity is the universal religion; Christianity is the only universal religion; and Christianity is the only true universal religion. Hence, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST must be the desire and faith of all mankind; and the religion of JESUS CHRIST, Christianity must be the religion of all mankind; and all the people of the world must put their trust in this only true universal religion, Christianity. In Christianity, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is found not merely outside HIS people but within the hearts and minds of HIS people; HIS people will be HIS sons and daughters; and HE will be their FATHER. Praise the LORD! Alleluia!

*“...As GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be MY people. And will be a FATHER unto you, and ye shall be MY sons and daughters, saith the LORD Almighty.”*

II Corinthians 6:16, 18

## **8 . CONTINUATION OF JEWISH RELIGION**

The GOD of Christianity is the LORD GOD of the Old Testament. The LORD GOD of the Old Testament is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH. HE is the self-existent Creator of all things; HE is the Creator of the earth and the skies; HE is the Creator of all living things; HE is the Creator of mankind; and HE is the GOD of heaven. Thus the GOD of Christianity is the LORD GOD or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH. The LORD GOD or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH is GOD, the FATHER. HE is the LORD of hosts and HE is the LORD Almighty. HE is the ONLY TRUE GOD of the Jews or the Israelites and HE is the ONLY TRUE GOD of the Christians.

Now, the Saviour of Christianity is the MESSIAH (CHRIST) of Jewish prophecy. MESSIAH is a Hebrew word for CHRIST. Thus, MESSIAH is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is GOD, the SON. Thus the MESSIAH is GOD, the SON. The MESSIAH or the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Hence, the MESSIAH or the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD of the Christians and HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD of the Jews or the Israelites. Thus, Christianity is the continuation of the Jewish Religion.

Again, the Israelites or the Jews were wonderfully delivered from Egypt by JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, and they were wonderfully guided and protected on their journey towards Canaan, the Promised Land by JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH. The following verses in the Holy Bible of the holy LORD clearly reveal that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD who delivered, guided, and protected the Israelites. The pre-existence of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is also revealed in the following verses. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH is the divine deliverer, the divine guide and the divine protector. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Moreover, brethren, I would not (do not want) that ye should be ignorant (unaware), how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto*

*Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat (food); And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 10:1-4

*"HE is the Rock, HIS work is perfect: for all HIS ways are judgment: a GOD of truth and without iniquity, just and right is HE."*

Deuteronomy 32:4

*"The LORD is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my GOD, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler (shield), and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower."*

Psalms 18:2

Further, Moses was the Old Testament prophet, who knew the LORD JESUS CHRIST face to face. See Deuteronomy 34:10; St. Matthew 17:1-8. Moses was looking ahead to his reward, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven. He was eagerly looking ahead to receive the reward from CHRIST. So, he chose to be afflicted along with the people of GOD rather than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a short time, and he regarded great reproach for the sake of CHRIST or JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH as of greater value than the treasures of Egypt.

*"By faith Moses, when he was come to years (came of age), refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of GOD, than to enjoy the pleasures (passing pleasures) of sin for a season; Esteeming the reproach of CHRIST greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had (looked) respect unto the recompence of the reward."*

Hebrews 11:24-26

Further, GOD the FATHER and GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT are ONE. This ONE AND ONLY GOD is a being infinitely wise and good. HE is the SAVIOUR of the world. HE is the MESSIAH. Hence, all people of the world should trust HIM. All people including Jews or Israelites must put their trust in this ONE GOD and this ONLY GOD and this ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Whoever calls on the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be delivered or saved (Joel 2:32). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**“For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same LORD over all is rich unto all that call upon HIM. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the LORD shall be saved.”**

Romans 10:12-13

## **9 . HISTORY [FROM ADAM TO CHRIST]**

**CHRISTIANITY** is historical and factual and it is not fictitious. Christianity is based upon unchangeable and unchallengeable historical facts (St. Luke 2:1-7; 3:1-2). Christianity is based on the principles of absolute truth (Acts 2:22). Christianity is objective. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the sole focus and central point of Christianity. Christianity is highly sensible and highly logical and highly reasonable and highly intelligent (St. Matthew 22:36-40; St. John 8:32). In Christianity, there is a 100% certainty of entering into heaven, the kingdom of GOD (St. Matthew 11:12). Many people reject CHRIST and HIS Christianity because of their ignorance (St. John 7:40-43), pride (St. John 12:42-43) and immoral behaviour (St. John 3:19-20). But no one can falsify the eternal facts and truths of Christianity (St. John 17:17; Galatians 2:5). **Christianity is the continuation of the first-ever religion and the history of the first-ever religion is clearly explained below.**

### **9.1 THE CREATION**

In the very beginning, there was GOD only. This ONLY GOD is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Then HE created the heaven and the earth (Genesis 1:1). HE is the Creator of all things (I Corinthians 8:6). HE is the Creator of all heavenly bodies and HE is the Creator of all earthly things. **HE created all the above things out of nothing, without any raw material. For HE spoke, and they were (Psalm 33:9). HE calls the things not being as being (Romans 4:17). HE can create something out of nothing. This is GOD's mighty power of creation. See Genesis Chapters 1 and 2.** HE is the Creator of mankind. HE is GOD, the WORD (St. John 1:1, 14). GOD, the WORD is the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Timothy 3:16). And GOD, the WORD was manifest in the flesh. HE came in this world in the name of JESUS CHRIST.

When our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created the heavens (the skies) and the earth, the sun, the moon, the planets and the stars, the mountains and the oceans, the seas and all things in the seas, the world and all things of the world, HE had not used any raw material, HE had no one to help HIM or to counsel HIM, HE had no tools to work, HE had no models to copy and HE had not taken any space of time to finish. HE spoke, things happened (Psalm 33:9). Glory be to GOD!

Our GOD created the kingdom of heaven for us (St. Matthew 25:34). CHRIST is the first-born of all creation; and by HIM and for HIM all things have been created, both in the heavens and on earth (Colossians 1:15-17). Thus, the earth belongs to GOD (Psalm 24:1). HE loves and cares for HIS creation. So, we must be caretakers and not destroyers of the trees, the birds, the cattle, etc. GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created man in HIS own image, in the image of GOD and in HIS own likeness; male and female HE created them (Genesis 1:26-27). The name of the first man is Adam; and the name of the first woman is Eve. The LORD GOD planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there HE put them. HE created man from the dust of the ground with a living soul, by breathing into his nostrils the breath of life.

*"And the LORD GOD formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul."*

Genesis 2:7

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has created the man with a living soul and also the woman with a living soul. Thus, HE has created the mankind each with a living soul. **Man's body will perish. But, his living soul will not perish.** HE has created all things (Colossians 1:16-17). HE has created all things for HIS pleasure. HE has created the mankind for HIS pleasure. HE has created us for HIS pleasure. So, HE loves us and HE wants us. This is HIS **divine purpose** in creating us.

*"...THOU hast created all things, and for THY pleasure they are and were created."*

Revelation 4:11

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created the man in HIS own image and according to HIS likeness (Genesis 1:26-27). Hence, man was created by GOD, according to GOD's kind or GOD's race

**(Acts 17:28-29) and all other living things were created by GOD, according to their kind (Genesis 1:11-12, 21, 24-25).**

Our GOD created the kingdom of heaven for us (St. Matthew 25:34). But, HE has not created hell for us, the mankind. Hell, the everlasting fire was created for the devil and his angels. It was not created for man!

*"...Everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels."*

St. Matthew 25:41

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST doesn't want anybody to go there. It is not HIS purpose for men to go there. Now, the whole duty of mankind is:

*"...Fear GOD, and keep HIS commandments: for this is the whole duty of man."*

Ecclesiastes 12:13

## 9.2 THE WORSHIP OF GOD

Then GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST commanded HIS people to serve or worship HIM only with fear and trembling (Psalm 2:11). Thus, they (Adam and Eve) worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST face to face with fear and trembling. They worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST only, with fear and trembling.

*"...Thou shalt worship the LORD thy GOD, and HIM only shalt thou serve."*

St. Matthew 4:10

## 9.3 THE FALL OF MANKIND

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST commanded Adam and Eve that they should not eat the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for in the day that they eat of it they will surely die. When they trespassed the commandment of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST by eating the fruit of the forbidden tree, spiritual death occurred to them. So, they were separated from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

In the Holy Bible, we find three deaths. They are: (1) Physical death—both soul and breath (spirit) leave the body (Genesis 35:18; I Kings 17:17-22); (2) Spiritual death—separation of the individual

from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Spiritual death occurs when anyone lives according to his/her flesh or fleshly sins. For if you live according to the flesh you will die (Romans 8:13). All the unsaved people are under spiritual death. All sinners are under spiritual death; and (3) Eternal death—separation from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever. This is also called the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8). The final estate of the lost person (sinner) in the lake of fire is eternal death.

When they trespassed the commandment of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST by eating the fruit of the forbidden tree, spiritual death occurred to them, and they (Adam and Eve) were separated from GOD and they began to hide themselves from the most glorious presence of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in shame and guilt.

*“And the LORD GOD commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.”*

Genesis 2:16-17

*“And the serpent (Satan) said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And they heard the voice of the LORD GOD walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD GOD amongst the trees of the garden.”*

Genesis 3:4, 6, 8

Then they were driven out from the most glorious presence of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Abel was the second son of Adam. He was a righteous man (St. Matthew 23:35). He feared and worshipped GOD. By faith he offered to GOD a more excellent sacrifice than his brother, Cain (Hebrews 11:4). GOD accepted Abel's offerings. So, Cain murdered his own brother, Abel. Thus Adam's first son became the very first murderer. Human violence and man's inhumanity began from Adam's first son. Arrogance, contempt and wickedness began from Adam's first son. And the other sins also began to enter into the world from the second-generation.



Enos was the third from Adam. Due to the sins of mankind, in the third-generation, the most glorious presence of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was hidden and the people began to call upon and worship the most holy name of the LORD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“And to Seth, to him also there was born a son; and he called his name Enos: then began men to call upon the name of the LORD.”*

Genesis 4:26

#### 9.4 WICKEDNESS OF MANKIND

In the tenth-generation, sin filled the earth; sin flooded the world; the wickedness and sins of mankind were great on the earth, and every imagination or intent of the thoughts of their hearts was only evil all the day and the earth was also corrupt before the LORD GOD and the earth was filled with violence. They forgot to call upon (worship) GOD. They forgot the LORD GOD, their Creator. They were against the LORD GOD, their Creator. So, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST was very sorry for HE had made man on the earth and it grieved HIM very much at HIS heart.

*“And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the LORD that HE had made man on the earth, and it grieved HIM at HIS heart. The earth also was corrupt before GOD, and the earth was filled with violence. And GOD looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.”*

Genesis 6:5-6, 11-12

Since sin flooded the world, the LORD GOD determined to destroy the whole world by a flood (Genesis 7:11-24).

#### 9.5 GOD COMMANDED NOAH TO MAKE THE ARK

But, Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. He was a just man and blameless in his generations and he walked with GOD. He had a wife and three sons. His sons were married and they had no children.

*“But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. ... Noah was a*

*just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with GOD."*

Genesis 6:8-9

Now, due to the wickedness and sins of mankind, the LORD GOD decided to destroy the earth by flood. The LORD GOD commanded Noah to make an ark. The LORD GOD said to Noah,

*"The end of all flesh is come before ME; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch."*

Genesis 6:13-14

Again, Noah was a righteous man and he was a man of obedience and faith. Till then, he had never seen rain (Genesis 2:5). Yet, moved with godly fear, he made the ark and everything just as the LORD GOD had commanded him (Genesis 6:22). He took every kind of food that was to be eaten and stored it as commanded by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"By faith Noah, being warned of GOD of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith."*

Hebrews 11:7

**The discovery of the Real Noah's Ark in Eastern Turkey, as mentioned in Genesis 8:4, strengthens more and more the faith (belief) of everyone or everybody in GOD and in the Holy Bible.**

## 9.6 NOAH PREACHED RIGHTEOUSNESS

Further, Noah was a preacher of righteousness. He preached righteousness to his generation. And he preached about the destruction of the ancient world. But the people abused him, mocked at him and scoffed at him. Only his household accepted his righteous preachings of the LORD GOD. So Noah, his wife, his three sons and his sons' wives, totally eight, were saved from the great destruction by the flood. The sons of Noah are Shem, Ham, and Japheth.

*"And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the*

*world of the ungodly."*

II Peter 2:5

## 9.7 THE GREAT FLOOD

GOD determined to judge or convict mankind for its sinfulness. So, HE warned the evil world through Noah. The sinful human beings were given 120 years after this warning, before the judgment of the Flood actually came (Genesis 6:3). Then, obeying the instructions of the LORD GOD, Noah and his household entered into the ark to escape the waters of the flood. They that went into the ark went in male and female of all living things, as the LORD GOD had commanded Noah, and the LORD GOD shut Noah in. After seven days the LORD GOD sent rain on the earth for forty days and forty nights, to wipe from the face of the earth every living creature HE had made. The waters rose greatly on the earth and all the high mountains under the entire heavens were covered. The water level was 15 cubits (or about 22.5 feet) higher than the highest mountain. Then, Noah was six hundred years old.

*"And Noah was six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the earth. And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of the flood. Of clean beasts, and of beasts that are not clean, and of fowls, and of every thing that creepeth upon the earth, There went in two and two unto Noah into the ark, the male and the female, as GOD had commanded Noah. And it came to pass after seven days, that the waters of the flood were upon the earth. In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered. And the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days."*

Genesis 7:6-12, 20, 24

The waters prevailed and increased greatly, and the ark floated on the surface of the water. Everything on the dry land that had the breath in the nostrils died; men and animals and the creatures that moved along the ground and the birds of the air were wiped from

the earth. Only Noah was left alive, and those with him in the ark. The waters prevailed upon the earth for a hundred and fifty days.

*“All in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark.”*

Genesis 7:22-23

#### **9.8 THE WATERS RECEDED—NOAH AND FAMILY LEFT THE ARK**

Then the LORD GOD remembered Noah and every living thing in the ark. The waters continued to recede, and then the earth was completely dry. The ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat. Then, the LORD GOD commanded Noah to come out of the ark with his household and with all the living things in the ark. They all came out. The LORD GOD blessed all living things, so that they might abound on the earth, and be fruitful and multiply on the earth (Genesis 8:17). Praise The LORD! Alleluia! See Genesis 8:1-19.

*“And Noah went forth, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons’ wives with him: Every beast, every creeping thing, and every fowl, and whatsoever creepeth upon the earth, after their kinds, went forth out of the ark.”*

Genesis 8:18-19

#### **9.9 NOAH OFFERED BURNT OFFERINGS TO THE LORD GOD**

Noah and every living thing in the ark came out of the ark. And since Noah walked with GOD, he built an altar to the LORD GOD, and he offered burnt offerings on the altar. The LORD GOD regarded this sacrifice as a sweet savour (a smell of satisfaction). Noah called upon (worshipped) the name of the LORD GOD. But he worshipped no idols or any other gods. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“And Noah builded an altar unto the LORD; and took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar. And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; ...”*

Genesis 8:20-21

## 9.10 THE LORD GOD'S COVENANT WITH NOAH

Then the LORD GOD blessed Noah and his sons, and said to them:

*"Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish (fill) the earth. And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every fowl of the air, upon all that moveth upon the earth, and upon all the fishes of the sea; into your hand are they delivered. And you, be ye fruitful, and multiply; bring forth abundantly in the earth, and multiply therein."*

Genesis 9:1-2, 7

Further, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST made a covenant with Noah. HE had set HIS rainbow in the clouds, the sign of the covenant between the LORD GOD and the earth. In HIS covenant with Noah, GOD promised that HE would never again use a universal flood to judge the world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Again, our LORD GOD said to Noah and his sons,

*"This is the token (sign) of the covenant which I make between ME and you and every living creature that is with you, for perpetual generations: I do set MY bow in the cloud, and it shall be for a token of a covenant between ME and the earth. And it shall come to pass, when I bring a cloud over the earth, that the bow shall be seen in the cloud: And I will remember MY covenant, which is between ME and you and every living creature of all flesh; and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh."*

Genesis 9:12-15

'Bow' means 'rainbow'.

**The rainbow signifies the faithful GOD's faithfulness in keeping HIS Covenant. Again, the rainbow is seen around GOD's throne at the end of the Holy Bible (Revelation 4:3), indicating that GOD's faithfulness will remain for ever and ever.**

Now, everyone should understand that the earth will not be destroyed by the flood again; but it will be destroyed by fire, due to the sins of the world. The fire of GOD'S jealousy will devour the whole world.

*"Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the LORD's wrath; but the whole land shall be*

*devoured by the fire of HIS jealousy: for HE shall make even a speedy riddance (end) of all them that dwell in the land."*

Zephaniah 1:18

*"Looking for and hasting (hastening) unto the coming of the day of GOD, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?"*

II Peter 3:12

### 9.11 THE DESCENDANTS OF NOAH

After the flood, Noah lived three hundred and fifty years (Genesis 9:28). All the days of Noah were nine hundred and fifty years, and then he died (Genesis 9:29). We are all the descendants of Noah. All the people of the world since the Flood are the descendants of the three sons of Noah. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And the sons of Noah, that went forth of the ark, were Shem, and Ham, and Japheth: ... These are the three sons of Noah: and of them was the whole earth overspread (populated)."*

Genesis 9:18-19

### 9.12 ONE LANGUAGE BECAME SO MANY LANGUAGES

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the author of language. Soon after HE created the first man Adam, HE spoke with Adam. Immediately, language came into existence. Glory be to GOD!

Now, all the people of the world had one language or dialect. They had one common speech. As they moved eastward, they found a plain in Shinar and settled there. They did not wish to scatter over the face of the whole earth or they did not wish to fill the earth. Shinar was in the region of Babylon. There they planned to build a city and a tower, the top of which might reach to the heavens. They wished to bind their strength with the city and the tower. They thought that the tower might serve as a rallying point and a symbol of their fame.

But, they did not want to fill the earth to fulfil GOD's commandment to Noah and his family. See Genesis 9:1. To fill the earth they should settle in all the earth. To settle in all the earth they must be scattered. The LORD GOD wished better divisions of people and not one group of people or one large collection of people. So, GOD confused their speech so that they would not understand each other

and scattered them throughout the whole world. Now, one language became so many languages. See Genesis 11:1-9. Thus our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the author of all languages. Glory be to GOD!

### 9.13 CONFUSION OF LANGUAGES

When the people began to build the city and the tower, the LORD GOD came down to see the city and the tower. All people were in one group and they spoke the same language and they thought that nothing they proposed to do would be restrained from them.

Now, the LORD GOD confused their language, so that they could not understand one another's speech. So they stopped building the city and the tower. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST scattered them from there over all the earth. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! Now there are more than three thousand languages and dialects.

*"And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let Us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD did there confound (confuse) the language of all the earth: and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth."*

Genesis 11:1, 5-9

In verse 6, 'Let Us go down', the plural does not refer to angels, but is a plural of HIS majesty.

### 9.14 ABRAHAM (ABRAM)

Now, Abraham (his former name was Abram) was the twentieth-generation from Adam or the eleventh-generation from Noah. The wife of Abraham was Sarah (her former name was Sarai). Sarai was barren and she had no children.

Abraham was a native of Ur of Chaldees (Chaldeans). It was located at about ten miles west of the Euphrates river near the Persian Gulf, some two hundred miles south-east of Baghdad.

Terah was the father of Abraham. Terah took his son Abraham and his grandson (his son Haran's son) Lot, and his daughter-in-law (his son Abraham's wife) Sarai; and together they set out from Ur of Chaldees to go to the land of Canaan. But when they came to the place Haran, they settled there. This Haran was in Syria. Terah died in Haran and Abraham was in Haran. See Genesis 11:27-32.

### 9.15 THE CALL OF ABRAHAM

When Abraham was seventy-five years old, the LORD GOD appeared to Abraham and HE established a glorious covenant with him. The LORD GOD said to Abraham (Abram),

*"Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed."*

Genesis 12:1-3

So, Abraham departed from Haran as the LORD GOD told him. When he set out from Haran, he took his wife Sarai and his brother's son Lot, and all their possessions they had gathered, and the people they had acquired in Haran; and they set out for the land of Canaan, and they came to Canaan. At that time, Canaanites were in the land. See Genesis 12:4-6. Canaanites were the descendants of Ham, Noah's son (Genesis 9:18). Now, the obedience and faith of Abraham was so great.

*"By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went (where he was going)."*

Hebrews 11:8

The Holy Bible exhorts us to follow the faith of Abraham (Romans 4:3, 16-22; Galatians 3:6; Hebrews 11:8; James 2:23).

Then the LORD GOD appeared to Abraham again and said,



*"Unto thy seed will I give this land: ..."*

Genesis 12:7

'Seed' means 'descendants'.

There Abraham built an altar to the LORD GOD who appeared to him and called upon (worshipped) the name of the LORD GOD.

*"...There he builded an altar unto the LORD, and called upon the name of the LORD."*

Genesis 12:8

Abraham called upon (worshipped) the name of the LORD GOD. But he worshipped no idols or any other gods. He had patiently waited and obtained the promise (Hebrews 6:15). He gave tithes of all to the priest of the Most High GOD (Hebrews 7:1-2).

#### **9.16 ABRAHAM WENT TO EGYPT FROM CANAAN**

Due to severe famine, Abraham went to Egypt with Sarai and Lot from the land of Canaan. Then they returned from Egypt. Abraham was very rich in cattle, in silver, and in gold. Lot had flocks, and herds and tents. Since their possessions were so great, they were not able to stay together. And quarrelling arose between the herdsmen of Abraham and the herdsmen of Lot. See Genesis 12:10; 13:1-7.

#### **9.17 LOT WENT TO WICKED SODOM**

Then by the request of Abraham, Lot chose for himself the whole plain of the Jordan and set out towards the east. The whole plain of the Jordan was well watered and it was like the garden of the LORD (the garden of Eden). Lot went and lived in Sodom in the plain of Jordan. The men of Sodom were exceedingly wicked sinners before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. See Genesis 13:8-13.

#### **9.18 THE BATTLE OF THE KINGS**

Then the king of Shinar, the king of Ellasar, the king of Elam and Tidal king of nations (Goyim) went to war against the king of Sodom and the king of Gomorrah and the king of Admah and the king of Zeboiim and the king of Zoar—four kings went to war against five kings. The four kings seized all the goods of Sodom and Gomorrah and their provisions, and they went away. They also carried off Lot,

Abraham's brother's son, who dwelt in Sodom, and his possessions. See Genesis 14:1-12.

### 9.19 ABRAHAM RESCUED LOT

When Abraham heard that Lot had been taken captive, he armed his three hundred and eighteen trained servants born in his household and went in pursuit as far as Dan. Abraham recovered all the goods and brought back Lot and his possessions, together with the women and the other people. The might of Abraham was clearly revealed to everyone. See Genesis 14:13-16.

When Abraham returned after defeating the four kings, the king of Sodom came out to meet him. The king of Sodom said to Abraham (Abram),

*"Give me the persons, and take the goods to thyself."*

Genesis 14:21

But Abraham (Abram) said to the king of Sodom,

*"I have lift up mine hand unto the LORD, the Most High GOD, the possessor of heaven and earth, That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet (sandal strap), and that I will not take any thing that is thine, lest thou shouldest say, I have made Abram rich."*

Genesis 14:22-23

Abraham refused to take anything for him. He was very pure before the king of Sodom. He had no covetousness. He demonstrated his total allegiance to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

### 9.20 MELCHIZEDEK (MELCHISEDEC) BLESSED ABRAHAM

Melchizedek (Melchisedec) or King of Salem, priest of the Most High GOD brought out bread and wine, and blessed Abraham. He blessed Abraham (Abram), saying,

*"Blessed be Abram (Abraham) of the Most High GOD, possessor of heaven and earth: And blessed be the Most High GOD, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. ..."*

Genesis 14:19-20

Melchizedek blessed Abraham. The lesser person was blessed by the greater. Besides Abraham paid tithes to Melchizedek. These

indicate Melchizedek's superior priesthood. Thus, Melchizedek was superior to Abraham. Melchizedek means King of righteousness and King of Salem means King of peace (Hebrews 7:1-2).

*“And without all contradiction (fear of doubt) the less (lesser or inferior) is blessed of the better (greater or superior).”*

Hebrews 7:7

### 9.21 THE LORD GOD'S PROMISES TO ABRAHAM

Abraham lived in the land of Canaan, the Promised Land. Abraham believed the LORD GOD, and HE counted it to him as righteousness. After Lot had parted from him, the LORD GOD said to Abraham (Abram),

*“Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward: For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed (descendants) for ever. And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered. Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee.”*

Genesis 13:14-17

*“After these things the Word of the LORD came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward. And Abram said, LORD GOD, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus? And HE brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell (count) the stars, if thou be able to number them: and HE said unto him, So shall thy seed be. And he believed in the LORD; and HE counted it to him for righteousness. And HE said unto him, I am the LORD that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it.”*

Genesis 15:1-2, 5-7

### 9.22 THE LORD GOD'S COVENANT WITH ABRAHAM

Further, the LORD GOD made a covenant with Abraham (Abram), saying,

*“Unto thy seed (descendants) have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: The*

*Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites."*

Genesis 15:18-21

### 9.23 EVERLASTING COVENANT

When Abraham (Abram) was ninety-nine years old, the LORD GOD appeared to him and said,

*"I am the Almighty GOD; walk before ME, and be thou perfect. And I will make MY covenant between ME and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly."*

Genesis 17:1-2

And Abraham (Abram) fell on his face. And GOD talked with him, saying,

*"As for ME, behold, MY covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations. Neither (No longer) shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee. And I will establish MY covenant between ME and thee and thy seed (descendants) after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a GOD unto thee, and to thy seed (descendants) after thee. And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their GOD."*

Genesis 17:4-8

This everlasting covenant guarantees Israel the right of possession of Canaan as an earthly inheritance for ever. Thus, the Israelites or Jews have a rightful claim to this land of Canaan as long as the earth shall stand. The LORD GOD, the divine Landlord gave this permanent title deed to Israel, HIS son. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then, the LORD GOD said to Abraham,

*"As for Sarai thy wife, thou shalt not call her name Sarai, but Sarah shall her name be. And I will bless her, and give thee a son also of her: yea, I will bless her, and she shall be a mother of nations; kings of people shall be of her."*

Genesis 17:15-16

Then Abraham fell on his face and laughed, and said in his heart,

*"Shall a child be born unto him that is an hundred years old?  
and shall Sarah, that is ninety years old, bear?"*

Genesis 17:17

And Abraham said to the LORD GOD,

*"O that Ishmael might live before THEE!"*

Genesis 17:18

And the LORD GOD said to Abraham,

*"Sarah thy wife shall bear thee a son indeed; and thou shalt call his name Isaac: and I will establish MY covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed (descendants) after him. And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee: Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation. But MY covenant will I establish with Isaac, which Sarah shall bear unto thee at this set time in the next year."*

Genesis 17:19-21

Ishmael was the son of Abraham and his mother was Hagar, an Egyptian maidservant of Sarai. Now, GOD promised Isaac; and HE established HIS covenant with Isaac, but HE did not establish HIS covenant with Ishmael. Isaac was a child of promise, but Ishmael was not a child of promise.

Now, Abram's name was changed by the LORD GOD as Abraham, which means father of many nations. He is the father of all the believers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Sarai's name was changed by the LORD GOD as Sarah, which means mother of nations. She is the mother of all the believers of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### **9.24 THE COVENANT OF CIRCUMCISION**

Further, the LORD GOD had established circumcision as a sign of the covenant. Circumcision was to serve as an outward sign of inward dedication to GOD. But it was not a true circumcision; it was not a spiritual circumcision. Circumcision denotes a cutting off or removal. This circumcision was a fleshly circumcision; this circumcision was a

physical circumcision. This circumcision was only for male people and it was done with hands outwardly.

Again, the true circumcision or the spiritual circumcision is in the removal of the foreskins of the heart. This true and spiritual circumcision is in the putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of CHRIST. This circumcision is not a physical circumcision and it is not made with hands outwardly. This circumcision is an inward circumcision by the Spirit of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. By this spiritual or inward circumcision, the sinful nature or fleshly nature of the body is removed by CHRIST. This most glorious spiritual circumcision is for all; this circumcision is for both male and female people. The saved people when they receive immersion Baptism as per the commandment of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will receive this most glorious spiritual or inward circumcision.

*"Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: lest MY fury come forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings."*

Jeremiah 4:4

*"In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of CHRIST."*

Colossians 2:11

*"For as many of you as have been baptized into CHRIST have put on CHRIST. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in CHRIST JESUS. And if ye be CHRIST's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."*

Galatians 3:27-29

*"For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the Spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of GOD."*

Romans 2:28-29

Again, Abraham was the Friend of GOD. He was righteous before GOD.

*"And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed GOD, and it was imputed (accounted) unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of GOD."*

James 2:23

### 9.25 SODOM AND GOMORRAH

Lot was in the wicked Sodom. He had a wife and two daughters. The cry of Sodom and Gomorrah was so great and the people of Sodom and Gomorrah were grievous sinners. Their sins cried out for punishment. The LORD GOD decided to destroy the wicked Sodom and Gomorrah and HE revealed HIS decision to HIS friend Abraham. See Genesis 18:17-21.

*"...The cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, ... their sin is very grievous."*

Genesis 18:20

### 9.26 ABRAHAM INTERCEDED FOR SODOM

So, Abraham interceded for the wicked Sodom. See Genesis 18:22-33.

But evidently there were not even ten righteous. Therefore the cities had to be destroyed. In all likelihood, Lot was the only 'just' man there. He was the only righteous man there. Lot was greatly oppressed with the filthy conduct of the wicked. While dwelling among them, Lot was greatly tormented in his righteous soul day after day, seeing and hearing about their lawless deeds.

*"And delivered just Lot, vexed (oppressed) with the filthy conversation (conduct) of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed (tormented) his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)"*

II Peter 2:7-8

### 9.27 TWO ANGELS VISITED LOT

Now, two angels of the LORD arrived at Sodom one evening. At that time, Lot was sitting in the gateway of Sodom. When Lot saw them, he rose up to meet them; and he bowed down with his face to the ground. He requested them greatly to stay in his house. So they went

into his house. Lot set a great feast before them and they ate. See Genesis 19:1-3.

### 9.28 THE WICKEDNESS OF THE PEOPLE OF SODOM

But, before they had gone to bed, all the men of the wicked Sodom, both old and young, surrounded the house. They called to Lot and said to him,

*"Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them."*

Genesis 19:5

And Lot went out at the door unto them, and shut the door after him, and said,

*"I pray you, brethren, do not so wickedly."*

Genesis 19:7

The word 'know' here refers to homosexuality or sodomy. The people of Sodom were great homosexuals or sodomites or gay persons or poofs or poofers or lesbians. Homosexuality is a great sin against GOD and homosexuals are great sinners against GOD. A lesbian relationship (lesbianism) is a great sin against GOD and lesbians are great sinners against GOD. But, GOD forgives those who repent of their sins (those who confess and forsake their sins) and put their trust in JESUS CHRIST for eternal life.

*"He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy."*

Proverbs 28:13

**Now, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created woman with distinct physiological differences from man, giving her the capacity to bear children. HE laid down a divine Code of Conduct for the sexual relationship of HIS people. See Leviticus 18:6-20, 22-23; 20:10-23; Romans 1:26-27; I Corinthians 1:9-10.**

**Homosexuals are also called Sodomites and the sin, homosexuality is called sodomy. Sodomites or homosexuals and lesbians decay and destroy GOD's divine plan for family life and procreation. The Holy Bible warns that such people will not inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD (I Corinthians 6:9-10). Now-a-days, homosexuals and lesbians are on a very high rise among the people, particularly among**



**GOD's ministers, viz. pastors, teachers, preachers, etc. What a sorrowful thing it is! Unless they are saved and led to a holy life, they will not escape hell, the hell-fire.**

Then the people of Sodom pressed sore upon Lot and came near to break down the door. But the two angels inside reached out and pulled Lot back into the house and shut the door. They struck the men who were at the door of the house, both old and young, with blindness so that they could not find out the door. The two angels said to Lot,

*"Hast thou here any besides? son in law, and thy sons, and thy daughters, and whatsoever thou hast in the city, bring them out of this place: For we will destroy this place, because the cry of them is waxen great before the face of the LORD; and the LORD hath sent us to destroy it."*

Genesis 19:12-13

So, Lot went out and spoke to his sons-in-law, who were to marry his daughters, and said,

*"Up, get you out of this place; for the LORD will destroy this city."*

Genesis 19:14

But his sons-in-law did not believe his words and they thought that he was joking.

### **9.29 LOT DELIVERED**

When it was morning, the two angels hurried Lot up, saying,

*"Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city."*

Genesis 19:15

While he hesitated, the two angels grasped his hand and the hand of his wife and the hands of his two daughters and brought them safely out of the city, for the LORD GOD was merciful to him. As soon as the angels had brought them out, the LORD GOD said,

*"Escape for thy life; look not behind thee, neither stay thou in all the plain; escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed."*

Genesis 19:17

In the meantime, Lot requested the LORD GOD to allow him to go into a nearby small city to spare his soul. And the LORD said to Lot,

*“See, I have accepted thee concerning this thing also, that I will not overthrow this city, for the which thou hast spoken. Haste thee, escape thither; for I cannot do any thing till thou be come thither (arrive there).”*

Genesis 19:21-22

Therefore the name of the city was called Zoar. 'Zoar' means 'small'. The righteous Lot was among those who suffered loss: but he himself was saved, as one escaping through fire (I Corinthians 3:15).

### 9.30 LOT'S WIFE BECAME A PILLAR OF SALT

By the time Lot reached Zoar, the sun had risen upon the earth. Then the LORD GOD has destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah by the rain of burning sulphur. But Lot's wife looked back longingly at sin from behind him, and became a pillar of salt. She was unwilling to turn completely towards GOD. Forward running towards GOD with a backward looking at sin could not make her run towards GOD.

*“Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; And HE overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground. But his wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt.”*

Genesis 19:24-26

Lot's wife lingered behind, thinking about her worldly possessions. Lot's wife did not run for her life, as commanded by the LORD GOD. So her soul was lost. Now, spiritual life is a run towards GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. To save the life of the soul, everyone should run towards GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Wherefore seeing (since) we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto JESUS the author (originator) and finisher of our faith; who for the joy*

*that was set before HIM endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of GOD. For consider HIM that endured such contradiction (hostility) of sinners against HIMSELF, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds."*

Hebrews 12:1-3

*"...But this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of GOD in CHRIST JESUS."*

Philippians 3:13-14

Lot's wife looked back as against the commandment of GOD. She looked back at the unwanted worldly things; she looked back at the corruptible things; she did not forget the unwanted worldly things behind; she did not forget the corruptible things behind; she did not look at the incorruptible things ahead; she did not remember the incorruptible things ahead; she did not look at the incorruptible world, the kingdom of GOD ahead; and she did not remember the incorruptible world, the kingdom of heaven ahead. Therefore, she lost her precious life and her soul was not delivered from death.

Lot's wife stayed in the plain as against the commandment of the LORD GOD. The plain means the broad way that leads to eternal destruction in hell.

*"Enter ye in at the strait gate (narrow gate): for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth (leads) to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat (by it): Because strait (narrow) is the gate, and narrow (difficult) is the way, which leadeth (leads) unto life, and few there be that find it."*

St. Matthew 7:13-14

Lot's wife did not run to the mountain, as commanded by GOD. Thus she lost her soul. The Mountain means 'the Rock'. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the spiritual Rock or the spiritual Mountain. The source of supply of the spiritual food and the spiritual drink is CHRIST, the LORD GOD; and the source of supply of ordinary food and ordinary drink to all people of the world is also CHRIST, the LORD GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And did all eat the same spiritual meat (food); And did all*

*drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 10:3-4

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST used this incident as a warning to everyone not to look back (St. Luke 17:21-33). Lot's wife lingered behind and looked back on her worldly possessions, and was buried.

### 9.31 SODOM, GOMORRAH, ADMAH AND ZEBOIIM DESTROYED

Then Abraham got up early in the morning and went to the place where he had stood before the LORD GOD. He looked towards Sodom and Gomorrah, and towards all the land of the plain and he saw the dense smoke of the cities of the plain went up as the smoke of a furnace. The LORD GOD destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah by the rain of burning sulphur. When the LORD GOD destroyed the cities of the plain, HE remembered Abraham and HE delivered Lot and his two daughters. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And it came to pass, when GOD destroyed the cities of the plain, that GOD remembered Abraham, and sent Lot out of the midst of the overthrow, when HE overthrew the cities in the which Lot dwelt."*

Genesis 19:29

Now, the LORD GOD had destroyed not only Sodom and Gomorrah but also Admah and Zeboiim due to their terrible sins. Sodom and Gomorrah were surrounded by Admah and Zeboiim. The LORD GOD destroyed Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim by the rain of burning sulphur.

*"And that the whole land thereof is brimstone, and salt, and burning, that it is not sown, nor beareth, nor any grass groweth therein, like the overthrow of Sodom, and Gomorrah, Admah, and Zeboim, which the LORD overthrew in HIS anger, and in HIS wrath."*

Deuteronomy 29:23

Further, the great deliverance of Lot from Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim reveals the great fact that GOD will deliver HIS own people, the righteous or the saints from the coming judgment and hell. But, the great destruction of Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim reveals the great fact that GOD will punish the ungodly

sinners by fire and brimstone eternally. Again, the destruction of Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim by burning them to ashes is a clear example of what is going to happen to the ungodly sinners and the sinful world and what will be the great punishment to the ungodly sinners (Jude 7-8; II Peter 2:6-10, 12-15) .

*“Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance (punishment) of eternal fire. Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.”*

Jude 7-8

*“And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after (afterward) should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;) The LORD knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.*

*But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot (revel) in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting (revellings in) themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children.”*

II Peter 2:6-10, 12-14

**The discovery of the Real destroyed cities of the plain by brimstone (sulphur) and fire (Genesis 19:24)—at present the cities of the plain, Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim appear as the Dead Sea or the Salt Sea. They contain evidences of ashes and brimstone (II Peter 2:6) which GOD rained down upon (Genesis 19:1-29). This**

**also greatly strengthens the faith (belief) of everyone or everybody in GOD and in the Holy Bible.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 9.32 THE BIRTH OF ISAAC

Now, as the LORD GOD had promised, Sarah bore a son, Isaac to Abraham. Isaac was the miraculously born son of Abraham and Sarah. When Abraham was a hundred years old, Isaac was born to him. Isaac was a child of promise, but Ishmael was not a child of promise. Ishmael mocked Isaac. Therefore, Sarah advised Abraham to send Hagar, the bondwoman and her son Ishmael away.

*"...Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman."*

Galatians 4:30

*"And Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham, mocking. Wherefore she said unto Abraham, Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac. And the thing was very grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son. And GOD said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called."*

Genesis 21:9-12

Then Abraham sent Hagar and Ishmael away obeying the command of GOD. Thus, Abraham had with him only one son Isaac. Still, Abraham feared GOD and he was ready to do the will of GOD always.

### 9.33 THE LORD GOD TESTED ABRAHAM—ABRAHAM BECAME THE FATHER OF ALL BELIEVERS OR TRUE CHRISTIANS

Further, the LORD GOD tested Abraham. HE asked Abraham to offer his only son Isaac whom he loved as a burnt offering or sacrifice. While Abraham was about to give his only son Isaac as a sacrifice, the LORD GOD called to Abraham from heaven and prevented him. See Genesis 22:1-14.

Now, Abraham's very stable faith in the LORD GOD is very clearly revealed to all. Abraham's faith and obedience are highly appreciable. The LORD GOD has tested Abraham's faith or belief in GOD

(Hebrews 11:17-19), obedience to GOD (Hebrews 11:8), fearfulness to GOD (Genesis 22:12), love or friendship with GOD (II Chronicles 20:7), righteousness of GOD (James 2:23) and service to GOD (Psalm 105:6). **The LORD GOD tests the righteous and not the sinful** (Psalm 11:5). Glory be to GOD!

As per the command of GOD, when Abraham was going to offer Isaac as a sacrifice to GOD, Isaac did not struggle or argue; he willingly accepted his sufferings and death. What a GOD-fearing and obedient good boy he was!

*"By faith Abraham, when he was tried (tested), offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: Accounting that GOD was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure."*

Hebrews 11:17-19

'Figure' means 'figurative sense'.

Then the LORD GOD called to Abraham from heaven a second time and said,

*"By MYSELF have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed (descendants) as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed MY voice."*

Genesis 22:16-18

Abraham obeyed GOD; he believed GOD; he loved GOD; he feared GOD; and he was righteous before the LORD GOD. He was a servant of GOD (Psalm 105:6). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Abraham had staunchly believed that our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST "calls things that are not as though they were" and "gives life to the dead" (Romans 4:17). He saw our GOD's mighty power of creation in the birth of Isaac (Romans 4:18-21) and he saw HIS great power of resurrection in the offering up and gaining back of Isaac

(Genesis 22:1-14). Hence by his staunch faith and obedience, Abraham became **the father of all believers or true Christians** (Romans 4:16-17; Hebrews 11:17-19). Glory be to GOD!

*"... Abraham; who is the father of us all, (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before HIM whom he believed, even GOD, who quickeneth the dead (gives life to the dead), and calleth those things which be not as though they were."*

Romans 4:16-17

### 9.34 THE BIRTH OF JACOB (ISRAEL)

Now, Rebekah was the wife of Isaac. He had two sons, namely Esau and Jacob. Esau was Jacob's twin brother. He was the first-born. Jacob was born clutching the heel of his twin brother. See Genesis 25:19-26.

### 9.35 ESAU SOLD HIS BIRTHRIGHT TO JACOB (ISRAEL)

The first-born was given two shares in the family inheritance, instead of the single share that each of his younger brothers received. The first-born should accept more responsibility and he should be rewarded with honour. But Esau considered the responsibilities and honours unimportant. He totally neglected them. He disregarded and despised his birthright and he sold his birthright to Jacob for a single meal. Thus, he lost both his birthright and blessing to Jacob. Due to his total neglect of his GOD-given birthright, he lost his royal priesthood and royal kingship (Hebrews 12:16-17; Revelation 1:6).

*"And Esau said to Jacob, Feed me, I pray thee, with that same red pottage (stew); for I am faint: ... And Jacob said, Sell me this day thy birthright. And Esau said, Behold, I am at the point to die: and what profit shall this birthright do to me? And Jacob said, Swear to me this day; and he sware unto him: and he sold his birthright unto Jacob. Then Jacob gave Esau bread and pottage of lentiles; and he did eat and drink, and rose up, and went his way: thus Esau despised his birthright."*

Genesis 25:30-34

*"Lest there be any fornicator, or profane (godless) person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat (food) sold his birthright. For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited (wanted*



*to inherit) the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears."*

Hebrews 12:16-17

Before the birth of Esau and Jacob, the LORD GOD has said to Rebekah,

*"...The elder shall serve the younger."*

Genesis 25:23

This was a startling revelation about Esau and Jacob. Jacob was a good-natured man. Hence he got the blessings of GOD. Jacob received the birthright as per the will of GOD. Glory be to GOD!

*"...Jacob was a plain man, dwelling in tents."*

Genesis 25:27

### 9.36 THE LORD GOD'S COVENANT WITH ISAAC

Then the LORD GOD appeared to Isaac and said,

*"Go not down into Egypt; dwell in the land which I shall tell thee of: Sojourn in this land, and I will be with thee, and will bless thee; for unto thee, and unto thy seed, I will give all these countries, and I will perform the oath which I swear unto Abraham thy father; And I will make thy seed (descendants) to multiply as the stars of heaven, and will give unto thy seed all these countries; and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; Because that Abraham obeyed MY voice, and kept MY charge, MY commandments, MY statutes, and MY laws."*

Genesis 26:2-5

Thus, the Abrahamic covenant was confirmed with Isaac. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 9.37 JACOB (ISRAEL) OBTAINED ISAAC'S BLESSING

Now, Isaac favoured and loved the profane Esau, but the LORD GOD favoured and loved the good-natured Jacob. Jacob would be the head over Isaac's household. This was the will of GOD. So GOD blessed Jacob through his father Isaac, even though his father wanted to bless Esau. GOD's will and HIS prophecy were fulfilled.

*"And his father Isaac said unto him, Come near now, and kiss*

*me, my son. And he came near, and kissed him: and he smelled the smell of his raiment, and blessed him, and said, See, the smell of my son is as the smell of a field which the LORD hath blessed: Therefore GOD give thee of the dew of heaven, and the fatness of the earth, and plenty of corn and wine: Let people serve thee, and nations bow down to thee: be lord over thy brethren, and let thy mother's sons bow down to thee: cursed be every one that curseth thee, and blessed be he that blesseth thee."*

Genesis 27:26-29

Then Jacob's name was changed to Israel when he wrestled with the Angel of the LORD or the LORD GOD. HE blessed him there. 'Israel' means 'May GOD Prevail (for HIM)'. See Genesis 32:24-30; Hosea 12:3-5.

### 9.38 THE LORD GOD'S COVENANT WITH JACOB (ISRAEL)

The LORD GOD appeared to Jacob at Bethel and made HIS covenant with Jacob (Israel). Jacob had a dream in which he saw a ladder resting on the earth, with its top reaching to heaven, and the angels of GOD were ascending and descending on it. The LORD GOD stood above it and said,

*"I am the LORD GOD of Abraham thy father, and the GOD of Isaac: the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed (descendants); And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed. And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of."*

Genesis 28:13-15

Then Jacob awoke from his sleep and said,

*"Surely the LORD is in this place; and I knew it not. And he was afraid, and said, How dreadful is this place! this is none other but the house of GOD, and this is the gate of heaven."*

Genesis 28:16-17

This vision and Jacob's response to this vision reveal that he was a true believer of GOD.

### 9.39 THE LORD GOD BLESSED JACOB (ISRAEL)

Again, the LORD GOD appeared to Jacob at Bethel and blessed him. The LORD GOD said to him,

*"Thy name is Jacob: thy name shall not be called any more Jacob, but Israel shall be thy name: and HE called his name Israel. And GOD said unto him, I am GOD Almighty: be fruitful and multiply; a nation and a company of nations shall be of thee, and kings shall come out of thy loins; And the land which I gave Abraham and Isaac, to thee I will give it, and to thy seed (descendants) after thee will I give the land."*

Genesis 35:10-12

### 9.40 THE TWELVE TRIBES OF ISRAEL

Israel or Jacob had twelve sons. They were Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Joseph, Benjamin, Dan, Naphtali, Gad and Asher. They were the twelve tribes of Israel. The descendants of Israel are called the Israelites or the Jews. Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were the forefathers of the Israelites or the Jews. They were the patriarchs of the Israelites or the Jews.

Now, Reuben lost his birthright since he defiled himself by defiling his father's bed (Genesis 49:4). Joseph received the birthright since he was always perfect and without blame and he did not defile himself by any means and always guarded himself from wickedness and sin; and he was always holy and guileless before GOD (Genesis 39:5-20; 48:5-20).

### 9.41 JOSEPH

Joseph was the son of Rachel and Jacob or Israel. Joseph was good natured and forgiving-natured (Genesis 50:17-21) and he was his father's favourite. He feared GOD (Genesis 42:18). He was innocent and guileless (Genesis 37). His longing zeal in holiness and holy life was remarkable (Genesis 39:7-12). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD was in him (Genesis 41:38). He was very understanding and wise (Genesis 41:39). He was a revealer of GOD's secrets (Genesis 40; 41:1-44). He was a very strict disciplinarian (Genesis 39:5-23). He was a good trainer of good discipline (Genesis 42-46). He was handsome in form and appearance. He brought their father a bad report about his evil

brothers. Israel loved Joseph more than any of his other sons, because he had been born to him in his old age; and he made him a coat of many colours. When his brothers saw that their father loved him more than any of them, they hated him much. Joseph had a dream and he told it to his brothers. When they heard the dream, they hated him more. Then Joseph had another dream and he told that to his brothers. When they heard this dream, they were greatly jealous of him. Later, his jealous brothers sold Joseph into slavery to a passing caravan of Ishmaelites. Joseph had been taken down to Egypt. See Genesis 37.

#### 9.42 JOSEPH BECAME THE PRIME MINISTER TO PHARAOH, THE KING OF EGYPT

The LORD GOD was with Joseph and by the grace of the LORD GOD, he rose to the position of grand Vizier or Prime Minister to Pharaoh, the king of Egypt by interpreting Pharaoh's dreams about seven years of great plenty and seven years of great famine. Joseph was eventually reconciled to his brothers. He then invited his father and his entire family to move into Egypt to escape this great famine. See Genesis 41-45.

#### 9.43 JACOB (ISRAEL) WENT TO EGYPT

When Israel or Jacob feared to go to Egypt, the LORD GOD spoke to Israel in a vision at night and said,

*"Jacob, Jacob."*

Genesis 46:2

He said,

*"Here am I."*

Genesis 46:2

And the LORD GOD said,

*"I am GOD, the GOD of thy father: fear not to go down into Egypt; for I will there make of thee a great nation: I will go down with thee into Egypt; and I will also surely bring thee up again: and Joseph shall put his hand upon thine eyes."*

Genesis 46:3-4

So, Jacob (Israel) went to Egypt.

**9.44 JACOB (ISRAEL) BLESSED PHARAOH AND HIS OWN SONS**

Jacob (Israel) with his descendants went to Egypt. Jacob met his beloved son Joseph. Joseph brought his father Jacob in and presented him before Pharaoh. Jacob blessed Pharaoh, the king of Egypt. Then he blessed his sons. Joseph received the blessing (double portion) of his father. See Genesis 47; 48; 49:1-28.

**9.45 THE GREAT BELIEF OF JACOB (ISRAEL)**

Jacob (Israel) instructed his sons that he be buried with his fathers in the cave in the field of Ephron the Hittite, the cave in the field of Machpelah, before Mamre in the land of Canaan, where Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Rebekah and Leah (wife of Jacob) had been buried. Abraham bought this cave field as a burial place from Ephron the Hittite for a price of four hundred shekels of silver, according to the weight currency among the merchants. This reflects the great belief of Jacob about the Promised Land of Canaan. As instructed by Jacob, his body was placed in the cave of Machpelah with other patriarchs Abraham and Isaac. See Genesis 49:29-33; 50:1-13.

**9.46 JOSEPH COMFORTED HIS BROTHERS**

After burying his father, Joseph returned to Egypt together with his brothers and all the others who had gone with him to bury Jacob. Then Joseph's brothers thought that Joseph would hate them and pay them back for all their wrongdoings. So they sent a messenger to Joseph and asked him to forgive their sins and wrongdoings. They humbly asked Joseph to forgive the sins of the servants of the GOD of his father. When they spoke to him, Joseph wept. They went and fell down before his face; and they said,

*"Behold, we be thy servants."*

Genesis 50:18

Now, the two dreams of Joseph were fully fulfilled. Joseph said to them,

*"Fear not: for am I in the place of GOD? But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but GOD meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive. Now therefore fear ye not: I will nourish you, and your little ones. And he comforted*

*them, and spake kindly unto them."*

Genesis 50:19-21

#### 9.47 THE GREAT BELIEF OF JOSEPH

Finally, Joseph said to his brothers,

*"I die: and GOD will surely visit you, and bring you out of this land unto the land which HE sware to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob. And Joseph took an oath of the children of Israel, saying, GOD will surely visit you, and ye shall carry up my bones from hence."*

Genesis 50:24-25

'I die' means 'I am dying'.

This reflects the great belief of Joseph about the Promised Land of Canaan. Then Joseph died at the age of hundred and ten. After they embalmed his body, it was placed in a coffin in Egypt.

#### 9.48 THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL (THE ISRAELITES) IN EGYPT

Now the descendants of Jacob in Egypt numbered seventy in all. Joseph and all his brothers and all that generation died, but the Israelites were fruitful, and increased abundantly, and multiplied, and became very numerous and the land was filled with them. See Exodus 1:1-7.

#### 9.49 ISRAEL OPPRESSED BY A NEW KING

Then a new king, who did not know about Joseph, came to power. The new Egyptian king said to his people,

*"Behold, the people of the children of Israel are more and mightier than we: Come on, let us deal wisely with them; lest they multiply, and it come to pass, that, when there falleth out any war, they join also unto our enemies, and fight against us, and so get them up out of the land."*

Exodus 1:9-10

So, they put slave masters over them to oppress them with forced labour. But the more they were oppressed, the more they multiplied and spread. The Egyptians came to dread the children of Israel and extracted maximum work from them ruthlessly. They made their lives

bitter with hard labour in mortar and brick and with all hard work in the fields. In all their hard labour, the Egyptians used them harshly.

Pharaoh, the king of Egypt said to Shiphrah and Puah, the two poor Hebrew (Israelite) midwives,

*"When ye do the office of a midwife to the Hebrew women, and see them upon the stools; if it be a son, then ye shall kill him: but if it be a daughter, then she shall live."*

Exodus 1:16

But the midwives feared GOD and did not do what the king of Egypt had told them to do. They saved the men children alive. Then the king of Egypt summoned the midwives and asked them,

*"Why have ye done this thing, and have saved the men children alive?"*

Exodus 1:18

The midwives answered the Egyptian king Pharaoh,

*"Because the Hebrew women are not as the Egyptian women; for they are lively, and are delivered ere (before) the midwives come in unto them."*

Exodus 1:19

#### 9.50 PHARAOH'S VERY CRUEL ORDER

SO GOD was very kind to the midwives and the Israelites increased and became very numerous. And because the midwives feared GOD, HE provided households (houses) for them and honoured them by writing their names in the Book of Life (Revelation 20:15), for these two poor midwives did a great thing for GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then Pharaoh gave a very cruel order to all his people:

*"Every son that is born ye shall cast into the river, and every daughter ye shall save alive."*

Exodus 1:22

Because of this very cruel order of Pharaoh, many Israelite male children were thrown into the river Nile and killed. This very cruel act of Pharaoh kindled the terrible wrath of the LORD GOD against Egypt.

### 9.51 THE BIRTH OF MOSES (MOSHEH)

Now Moses was born in the tribe of Levi. When his mother saw that he was a goodly child, she hid him for three months. But when she could not hide him longer, she took an ark of bulrushes, and coated it with slime and with pitch (tar) and she placed the child in it and laid it among the reeds along the bank of the river Nile. His sister Miriam (Numbers 26:59) stood at a distance to know what would happen to him. Then Pharaoh's daughter went down to the river to bathe, and her maidens were walking along the riverside. She saw the ark among the reeds and sent her maid to fetch it. When she opened it, she saw the child. The child was crying, and she had compassion on him, and said,

*"This is one of the Hebrews' children."*

Exodus 2:6

Then his sister asked Pharaoh's daughter,

*"Shall I go and call to thee a nurse of the Hebrew women, that she may nurse the child for thee?"*

Exodus 2:7

Pharaoh's daughter said to her, "Go". And the maid went and called the child's mother. The Pharaoh's daughter said to her,

*"Take this child away, and nurse it for me, and I will give thee thy wages. ..."*

Exodus 2:9

So the woman took the child and nursed him. When the child grew older, she brought him to Pharaoh's daughter and he became her son. Pharaoh's daughter called his name Moses (Mosheh) and she said,

*"Because I drew him out of the water."*

Exodus 2:10

### 9.52 EARLY YEARS OF MOSES

Pharaoh's daughter nourished Moses and brought him up as her own. Moses was specially educated in all the wisdom of the Egyptians. When he was forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren, the children of Israel. He saw one of them being ill-treated and



smitten by an Egyptian. So, Moses defended the Israelite and avenged him who was oppressed and killed the Egyptian. Moses thought his own people, the children of Israel would understand that GOD would deliver them by his hand, but they did not. The next day when he went out, he saw two Israelites fighting. He asked the one who did the wrong, why are you striking your fellow Israelite? But the man who did his brother wrong, pushed Moses away and said,

*“Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us? Wilt thou kill me, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?”*

Acts 7:27-28

### 9.53 MOSES FLED FROM EGYPT

When Moses heard this, he feared. When Pharaoh heard this, he tried to kill Moses, but Moses fled from Pharaoh and went to Midian in the Sinai wilderness (Exodus 2:15) and settled there as a sojourner. There he married Zipporah the daughter of Jethro (Reuel) and had two sons.

### 9.54 THE CRY OF THE ISRAELITES

Then the king of Egypt died. The Israelites groaned because of their bondage, and they cried, and their cry came up unto GOD because of their slavery. The LORD GOD heard their groaning and HE remembered HIS covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob. So the LORD GOD looked upon the Israelites and HE acknowledged them. See Exodus 2:23-25.

### 9.55 THE CALL OF MOSES

After forty years had passed, the LORD GOD appeared to Moses in a flame of fire from within a bush in Horeb, the mountain of GOD. Moses saw that though the bush burned with fire, the bush was not consumed. So Moses said,

*“I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt.”*

Exodus 3:3

When the LORD GOD saw that he had turned aside to look, GOD called to him from within the bush,

*"Moses, Moses."*

Exodus 3:4

And Moses said,

*"Here am I."*

Exodus 3:4

And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground."*

Exodus 3:5

'Draw not nigh hither' means 'Do not draw near this place'.

Moreover, the LORD GOD said to Moses,

**"I am the GOD of thy father, the GOD of Abraham, the GOD of Isaac, and the GOD of Jacob."**

Exodus 3:6

#### 9.56 THE LORD GOD COMMISSIONED MOSES

At this, Moses hid his face, because he was afraid to look upon GOD. And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"I have surely seen the affliction of MY people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows; And I am come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land unto a good land and a large, unto a land flowing with milk and honey; unto the place of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites. Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel is come unto ME: and I have also seen the oppression wherewith the Egyptians oppress them. Come now therefore, and I will send thee unto Pharaoh, that thou mayest bring forth MY people the children of Israel out of Egypt."*

Exodus 3:7-10

But Moses said to GOD,

*"Who am I, that I should go unto Pharaoh, and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt?"*

Exodus 3:11

And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Certainly I will be with thee; and this shall be a token unto thee, that I have sent thee: When thou hast brought forth the people out of Egypt, ye shall serve GOD upon this mountain."*

Exodus 3:12

And Moses said to GOD,

*"Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The GOD of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is HIS name? what shall I say unto them?"*

Exodus 3:13

And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"I AM THAT I AM: and HE said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you."*

Exodus 3:14

The great significance of the name of GOD given in this verse, "I AM THAT I AM" constitutes the great idea that the "I AM" reveals GOD as the Being who is self-existent, and who, in HIMSELF, possesses eternal or everlasting life and eternal existence. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 9.57 ROD OF MOSES

Moses had a rod in his hand to keep his father-in-law's flock of sheep. Moses said to GOD,

*"But, behold, they will not believe me, nor hearken unto my voice: for they will say, The LORD hath not appeared unto thee."*

Exodus 4:1

And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"What is that in thine hand?"*

Exodus 4:2

And Moses said to GOD,

*"A rod."*

Exodus 4:2

And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Cast it on the ground."*

Exodus 4:3

Then Moses cast his rod on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from before it. The LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Put forth thine hand, and take it by the tail."*

Exodus 4:4

Moses put forth his hand, and caught it, and it became a rod in his hand.

#### 9.58 SIGNS FOR MOSES

The LORD GOD said furthermore to Moses,

*"Put now thine hand into thy bosom."*

Exodus 4:6

Moses put his hand into his bosom; and when he took it out, his hand was leprous as snow. And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Put thine hand into thy bosom again."*

Exodus 4:7

Moses put his hand into his bosom again; and when he plucked it out his hand was turned again as his other flesh.

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"And it shall come to pass, if they will not believe thee, neither hearken to the voice of the first sign, that they will believe the voice of the latter sign. And it shall come to pass, if they will not believe also these two signs, neither hearken unto thy voice, that thou shalt take of the water of the river, and pour it upon the dry land: and the water which thou takest out of the river shall become blood upon the dry land."*

Exodus 4:8-9

And Moses said to the LORD GOD,

*"O my LORD, I am not eloquent, neither heretofore (before), nor since THOU hast spoken unto THY servant: but I am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue."*

Exodus 4:10

And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the LORD? Now therefore go, and I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what*

*thou shalt say."*

Exodus 4:11-12

And Moses said to the LORD GOD,

*"O my LORD, send, I pray THEE, by the hand of him whom THOU wilt send."*

Exodus 4:13

### 9.59 AARON'S APPOINTMENT

Then, the anger of the LORD GOD was kindled against Moses, and HE said,

*"Is not Aaron the Levite thy brother? I know that he can speak well. And also, behold, he cometh forth to meet thee: and when he seeth thee, he will be glad in his heart. And thou shalt speak unto him, and put words in his mouth: and I will be with thy mouth, and with his mouth, and will teach you what ye shall do. And he shall be thy spokesman unto the people: and he shall be, even he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of GOD. And thou shalt take this rod in thine hand, wherewith thou shalt do signs."*

Exodus 4:14-17

Immediately, Moses obeyed GOD; he obeyed the call of GOD. So, everyone should obey GOD's call, since HE knows his/her capability for doing HIS ministry. Excuses for refusing GOD's call will kindle the anger of GOD.

Then, Moses went back to Jethro his father-in-law, and said to him,

*"Let me go, I pray thee, and return unto my brethren which are in Egypt, and see whether they be yet alive."*

Exodus 4:18

And Jethro said to Moses,

*"Go in peace."*

Exodus 4:18

Our LORD GOD said to Moses that all the men who sought his life were dead (Exodus 4:19). Thus, GOD saved Moses wonderfully from his enemies. What a loving GOD our GOD is!

## 9.60 MOSES RETURNED TO EGYPT

Moses took the rod of GOD in his hand; and he returned to the land of Egypt with his wife and two sons.

Then the LORD GOD said to Aaron,

*"Go into the wilderness to meet Moses."*

Exodus 4:27

Aaron went and met Moses in the Mount of GOD, and kissed him. Moses told Aaron all the Words of the LORD GOD who had sent him, and all the signs which HE had commanded him to perform. Moses and Aaron went and brought together all the elders of the children of Israel. Aaron told them everything the LORD GOD had said to Moses, and did the signs in the sight of the people, and they believed. When they heard that the LORD GOD had visited the children of Israel, and that HE had looked upon their affliction, they bowed down their heads and worshipped. See Exodus 4:27-31.

## 9.61 MOSES AND AARON WENT TO PHARAOH

Afterwards Moses and Aaron went to Pharaoh, the king of Egypt and said,

*"Thus saith the LORD GOD of Israel, Let MY people go, that they may hold a feast unto ME in the wilderness."*

Exodus 5:1

And Pharaoh said to Moses and Aaron,

*"Who is the LORD, that I should obey HIS voice to let Israel go? I know not the LORD, neither will I let Israel go."*

Exodus 5:2

And Moses and Aaron said to Pharaoh,

*"The GOD of the Hebrews hath met with us: let us go, we pray thee, three days' journey into the desert, and sacrifice unto the LORD our GOD; lest HE fall upon us with pestilence, or with the sword."*

Exodus 5:3

## 9.62 PHARAOH'S CRUEL COMMAND

But Pharaoh did not allow the Israelites to go and hold a festival to the LORD GOD. The same day Pharaoh commanded the taskmasters of the people, and their officers, saying,

*"Ye shall no more give the people straw to make brick, as heretofore (before): let them go and gather straw for themselves. And the tale (quota) of the bricks, which they did make heretofore, ye shall lay upon them; ye shall not diminish aught thereof: for they be idle; therefore they cry, saying, Let us go and sacrifice to our GOD. Let there more work be laid upon the men, that they may labour therein; and let them not regard vain words."*

Exodus 5:7-9

The taskmasters were brutal and hurried the people of Israel and the officers of the taskmasters whipped the people to complete the work.

Then the officers of the children of Israel came and cried to Pharaoh, saying,

*"Wherefore dealest thou thus with thy servants? There is no straw given unto thy servants, and they say to us, Make brick: and, behold, thy servants are beaten; but the fault is in thine own people."*

Exodus 5:15-16

But Pharaoh said to the officers of the Israelites,

*"Ye are idle, ye are idle: therefore ye say, Let us go and do sacrifice to the LORD. Go therefore now, and work; for there shall no straw be given you, yet shall ye deliver the tale (quota) of bricks."*

Exodus 5:17-18

The officers of the children of Israel saw that they were in a bad situation. They informed this matter to Moses and Aaron. Moses returned to the LORD GOD and said,

*"LORD, wherefore hast THOU so evil entreated (brought trouble on) this people? why is it that THOU hast sent me? For since I came to Pharaoh to speak in THY name, he hath done evil to this people; neither hast THOU delivered THY people at all."*

Exodus 5:22-23

### 9.63 THE COVENANT RENEWED WITH MOSES

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Now shalt thou see what I will do to Pharaoh: for with a strong hand shall he let them go, and with a strong hand shall he drive them out of his land."*

Exodus 6:1

The LORD GOD also said to Moses,

*"I am the LORD: And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of GOD Almighty, but by MY name JEHOVAH was I not known to them. And I have also established MY covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their pilgrimage (sojournings), wherein they were strangers (sojourners). And I have also heard the groaning of the children of Israel, whom the Egyptians keep in bondage; and I have remembered MY covenant. Wherefore say unto the children of Israel, I am the LORD, and I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians, and I will rid you out of their bondage, and I will redeem you with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments: And I will take you to ME for a people, and I will be to you a (your) GOD: and ye shall know that I am the LORD your GOD, which bringeth you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians. And I will bring you in unto the land, concerning the which I did swear to give it to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob; and I will give it you for an heritage: I am the LORD."*

Exodus 6:2-8

In Hebrew "GOD ALMIGHTY" is "EL SHADDAY". The name "GOD ALMIGHTY" conveys the concept of GOD's great power, great might and great strength. In Hebrew "JEHOVAH" is "YAHWEH" or "YHWH". The name "JEHOVAH" emphasizes the LORD GOD's most horrible and most terrible actions to redeem HIS people, the Israelites from bondage and to form a godly nation and to give them a good and happy life through HIS commandments and covenants. JEHOVAH, the LORD GOD is the great King and Israel is HIS kingdom. HIS people should render complete submission to HIM, allegiance to HIM and obedience to HIM. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



#### 9.64 MOSES' ROD TURNED INTO A SERPENT

Moses and Aaron did just as the LORD GOD had commanded them. When they spoke to Pharaoh, Moses was eighty years old and Aaron was eighty-three years old. Pharaoh asked them to show a miracle for them. At once, as the LORD GOD had commanded, Moses said to Aaron to take his rod, and cast it before Pharaoh. Aaron cast down his rod before Pharaoh and before his servants, and it became a serpent. Then Pharaoh called his wise men and his sorcerers and his Egyptian magicians. The Egyptian magicians, viz. Jannes and Jambres (II Timothy 3:8-9), also did the same things by their enchantments. They were Satan's "lying wonders". Each one cast down his rod and it became a serpent. But Aaron's rod swallowed up their rods. Now Pharaoh's heart was hardened, and he refused to let the people go. See Exodus 7:7-14, 22.

#### 9.65 THE PLAGUE OF BLOOD

Then in the morning, as the LORD GOD had commanded, Moses went with his rod and waited on the bank of the river Nile to meet Pharaoh and told him about the coming plague of blood. But Pharaoh did not listen to the words of Moses. Then Moses and Aaron did just as the LORD GOD commanded. Aaron lifted up the rod, and smote the waters that were in the river Nile, in the sight of Pharaoh, and in the sight of his servants. All the waters that were in the river were turned to blood, and the fish in the river died, and the river smelled so bad; and the Egyptians could not drink its water. The false gods of the Nile were made loathsome before the very eyes of Pharaoh and the Egyptians. There was blood everywhere in Egypt. But the Egyptian magicians did the same things by their enchantments. They were Satan's "lying wonders". See II Thessalonians 2:9; St. Matthew 24:24. Again, Pharaoh's heart was hardened, and he refused to let the people go. See Exodus 7:15-25.

#### 9.66 THE PLAGUE OF FROGS

Seven days had gone by after the LORD had smitten the river. As the LORD GOD had commanded, Moses went and met Pharaoh and said about the coming plague of frogs. But Pharaoh did not listen to the words of Moses. Then Moses and Aaron did just as the LORD GOD

commanded. Aaron stretched out his hand over the waters of Egypt; and frogs came up, and covered the land of Egypt. The Egyptian magicians also did the same things with their enchantments. They were Satan's "lying wonders". See II Thessalonians 2:9; St. Matthew 24:24. Then Pharaoh summoned Moses and Aaron and said,

*"Entreat (pray to) the LORD, that HE may take away the frogs from me, and from my people; and I will let the people go, that they may do sacrifice unto the LORD."*

Exodus 8:8

Moses allowed Pharaoh to specify the time when the frogs should be removed. Moses said to Pharaoh,

*"Glory over me: when shall I entreat (pray) for thee, and for thy servants, and for thy people, to destroy the frogs from thee and thy houses, that they may remain in the river only?"*

Exodus 8:9

And Pharaoh said,

*"To morrow."*

Exodus 8:10

And Moses said,

*"Be it according to thy word: that thou mayest know that there is none like unto the LORD our GOD. And the frogs shall depart from thee, and from thy houses, and from thy servants, and from thy people; they shall remain in the river only."*

Exodus 8:10-11

Moses and Aaron went out from Pharaoh: and Moses cried to the LORD GOD because of the frogs, which HE had brought against Pharaoh. The LORD GOD did according to the word of Moses. The frogs died in the houses, in the villages and in the fields. They were piled into heaps and the land stank. But when Pharaoh saw that there was relief, he hardened his heart and he did not listen to Moses and Aaron. See Exodus 8:12-15.

#### 9.67 THE PLAGUE OF LICE

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Say unto Aaron, Stretch out thy rod, and smite the dust of the*

*land, that it may become lice throughout all the land of Egypt."*

Exodus 8:16

And they did so. All the dust of the land became lice (gnats) throughout all the land of Egypt. There were lice upon men and upon beasts. The Egyptian magicians could not bring lice with their enchantments. They could not reproduce their "lying wonders" with their enchantments. Now their "lying wonders" came to an end. There were lice upon the Egyptian king, and upon the Egyptian queen, and upon the Egyptian princes, and upon the king's households, and upon all the Egyptians. Also there were lice upon the Egyptian magicians. Then the Egyptian magicians were forced to admit that 'this is the finger of GOD' (this is the miraculous and powerful act of GOD). So they said to Pharaoh,

*"This is the finger of GOD."*

Exodus 8:19

But Pharaoh's heart was hardened and he did not let the Israelites go.

#### 9.68 THE PLAGUE OF FLIES

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Rise up early in the morning, and stand before Pharaoh; lo, he cometh forth to the water; and say unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Let MY people go, that they may serve ME. Else, if thou wilt not let MY people go, behold, I will send swarms of flies upon thee, and upon thy servants, and upon thy people, and into thy houses: and the houses of the Egyptians shall be full of swarms of flies, and also the ground whereon they are. And I will sever (set apart) in that day the land of Goshen, in which MY people dwell, that no swarms of flies shall be there; to the end thou mayest know that I am the LORD in the midst of the earth. And I will put a division between MY people and thy people: to morrow shall this sign be."*

Exodus 8:20-23

And the LORD GOD did so. And GOD made a 'distinction' between the Egyptians and the Israelites. But Pharaoh hardened his heart this time also and he did not let the Israelites go.

### 9.69 THE PLAGUE ON THE CATTLE

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*“Go in unto Pharaoh, and tell him, Thus saith the LORD GOD of the Hebrews, Let MY people go, that they may serve ME. For if thou refuse to let them go, and wilt hold them still, Behold, the hand of the LORD is upon thy cattle which is in the field, upon the horses, upon the asses, upon the camels, upon the oxen, and upon the sheep: there shall be a very grievous murrain (severe pestilence). And the LORD shall sever (make a difference) between the cattle of Israel and the cattle of Egypt: and there shall nothing die of all that is the children’s of Israel. And the LORD appointed a set time, saying, To morrow the LORD shall do this thing in the land.”*

Exodus 9:1-5

And the LORD GOD did so. Again GOD made a 'distinction' between the Egyptians and the Israelites.

Here, by the plague on the cattle, the Egyptians' and Pharaoh's worship of various animals and animal-headed deities was severely rebuked and ridiculed. But the heart of Pharaoh was hardened, and he did not let the Israelites go.

### 9.70 THE PLAGUE OF BOILS

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses and Aaron,

*“Take to you handfuls of ashes of the furnace, and let Moses sprinkle it toward the heaven in the sight of Pharaoh. And it shall become small dust in all the land of Egypt, and shall be a boil breaking forth with blains (sores) upon man, and upon beast, throughout all the land of Egypt.”*

Exodus 9:8-9

And they did so in the sight of Pharaoh, and festering boils broke out upon men and upon beasts. The Egyptian magicians could not stand before Moses because of the boils; for the boil was upon the magicians, and upon all the Egyptians. The boils were very painful and seriously affected their knees, legs and soles of their feet, and they spread from the soles of their feet to the top of their head (Deuteronomy 28:35), so the magicians could not stand before Moses. In Exodus 8:18 we see that the 'magicians' could not 'bring forth lice';

now the 'magicians' cannot even 'stand before Moses'. Now, the LORD GOD hardened the heart of Pharaoh, and he did not listen to Moses and Aaron.

### 9.71 THE PLAGUE OF HAIL

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses about the horrible plague of hail. And Moses said this to Pharaoh and his men. Those who feared the Word of the LORD GOD hurried to bring their servants and their livestock inside. But those who ignored the Word of the LORD GOD left their servants and their livestock in the field. Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Stretch forth thine hand toward heaven, that there may be hail in all the land of Egypt, upon man, and upon beast, and upon every herb of the field, throughout the land of Egypt."*

Exodus 9:22

When Moses stretched forth his rod towards heaven, the LORD GOD sent thunder and hail, and the fire ran along upon the ground; and the LORD GOD rained hail upon the land of Egypt. So there was hail, and fire mingled with the hail. It was a very grievous hail in all the land of Egypt since it became a nation. Throughout Egypt hail smote everything in the field, both men and animals; it smote down every herb of the field, and broke every tree of the field. But there was no hail in the land of Goshen, where the children of Israel were. Again GOD made a 'distinction' between the Egyptians and the Israelites.

Then Pharaoh summoned Moses and Aaron and said to them,

*"I have sinned this time: the LORD is righteous, and I and my people are wicked. Entreat (Pray to) the LORD (for it is enough) that there be no more mighty thunderings and hail; and I will let you go, and ye shall stay no longer."*

Exodus 9:27-28

Then Moses said to Pharaoh,

*"As soon as I am gone out of the city, I will spread abroad my hands unto the LORD; and the thunder shall cease, neither shall there be any more hail; that thou mayest know how that the earth is the LORD's. But as for thee and thy servants, I know that ye*

*will not yet fear the LORD GOD."*

Exodus 9:29-30

And Moses went out of the city from Pharaoh, and when he spread abroad his hands to the LORD GOD, the thunders and hail ceased, and the rain was not poured upon the earth. When Pharaoh saw that the rain and the hail and the thunders were ceased, he sinned yet more, and hardened his heart and he did not let the Israelites go.

### 9.72 THE PLAGUE OF LOCUSTS

Then Moses and Aaron came in unto Pharaoh, and said to him,

*"Thus saith the LORD GOD of the Hebrews, How long wilt thou refuse to humble thyself before ME? let MY people go, that they may serve ME. Else, if thou refuse to let MY people go, behold, to morrow will I bring the locusts into thy coast (territory): And they shall cover the face of the earth, that one cannot be able to see the earth: and they shall eat the residue of that which is escaped, which remaineth unto you from the hail, and shall eat every tree which groweth for you out of the field: And they shall fill thy houses, and the houses of all thy servants, and the houses of all the Egyptians; which neither thy fathers, nor thy fathers' fathers have seen, since the day that they were upon the earth unto this day. ..."*

Exodus 10:3-6

Moses and Aaron went out from Pharaoh. Then the servants of Pharaoh said to him,

*"How long shall this man be a snare unto us? let the men go, that they may serve the LORD their GOD: knowest thou not yet that Egypt is destroyed?"*

Exodus 10:7

Then Moses and Aaron were brought back to Pharaoh and he said unto them,

*"Go, serve the LORD your GOD: but who are they that shall go?"*

Exodus 10:8

And Moses said to Pharaoh,

*"We will go with our young and with our old, with our sons and*

*with our daughters, with our flocks and with our herds will we go; for we must hold a feast unto the LORD."*

Exodus 10:9

And Pharaoh said to Moses and Aaron,

*"Let the LORD be so with you, as I will let you go, and your little ones: look to it; for evil is before you. Not so: go now ye that are men, and serve the LORD; for that ye did desire."*

Exodus 10:10-11

Then Moses and Aaron were driven out of Pharaoh's presence. And the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Stretch out thine hand over the land of Egypt for the locusts, that they may come up upon the land of Egypt, and eat every herb of the land, even all that the hail hath left."*

Exodus 10:12

And Moses did so; and the LORD GOD brought an east wind upon the land all that day, and all that night. By morning the wind had brought the locusts; they went up over all the land of Egypt and settled down in all the coasts (territories) of Egypt; they were very grievous. Never before had there been such locusts, nor will there ever be again. They covered the face of the whole earth, so that the land was darkened. They did eat every herb of the land, and all the fruits of the trees which were left after the hail. There remained not any green thing in the trees, or in the herbs of the field in all the land of Egypt. See Exodus 10:13-15.

Then Pharaoh quickly summoned Moses and Aaron and said,

*"I have sinned against the LORD your GOD, and against you. Now therefore forgive, I pray thee, my sin only this once, and entreat (pray to) the LORD your GOD, that HE may take away from me this death only."*

Exodus 10:16-17

Moses left Pharaoh and prayed to the LORD GOD. And the LORD GOD turned a mighty strong west wind, which took away the locusts, and cast them into the Red sea. Not a single locust remained in all the coasts of Egypt. But the LORD GOD hardened Pharaoh's heart, and he would not let the children of Israel go.

### 9.73 THE PLAGUE OF DARKNESS

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*“Stretch out thine hand toward heaven, that there may be darkness over the land of Egypt, even darkness which may be felt.”*

Exodus 10:21

And Moses did so; there was thick darkness (total darkness) in the land of Egypt three days. No one could see anyone else or rise from his place for three days. But all the children of Israel had light in their dwellings. See Exodus 10:22-23.

Then Pharaoh summoned Moses, and said,

*“Go ye, serve the LORD; only let your flocks and your herds be stayed: let your little ones also go with you.”*

Exodus 10:24

And Moses said to Pharaoh,

*“Thou must give us also sacrifices and burnt offerings, that we may sacrifice unto the LORD our GOD. Our cattle also shall go with us; there shall not an hoof be left behind; for thereof must we take to serve the LORD our GOD; and we know not with what we must serve the LORD, until we come thither.”*

Exodus 10:25-26

But the LORD GOD hardened Pharaoh's heart, and he did not let them go. Pharaoh said to Moses,

*“Get thee from me, take heed to thyself, see my face no more; for in that day thou seest my face thou shalt die.”*

Exodus 10:28

### 9.74 DEATH OF THE FIRST-BORN THREATENED

Now, the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*“Yet will I bring one plague more upon Pharaoh, and upon Egypt; afterwards he will let you go hence: when he shall let you go, he shall surely thrust you out hence altogether.”*

Exodus 11:1

Moses, the man of GOD was very great in the land of Egypt, in the sight of Pharaoh's servants, and in the sight of the people. Then Moses said to Pharaoh,



*“Thus saith the LORD, About midnight will I go out into the midst of Egypt: And all the firstborn in the land of Egypt shall die, from the firstborn of Pharaoh that sitteth upon his throne, even unto the firstborn of the maidservant that is behind the mill; and all the firstborn of beasts. And there shall be a great cry throughout all the land of Egypt, such as there was none like it, nor shall be like it any more. But against any of the children of Israel shall not a dog move his tongue, against man or beast: that ye may know how that the LORD doth put a difference between the Egyptians and Israel. And all these thy servants shall come down unto me, and bow down themselves unto me, saying, Get thee out, and all the people that follow thee: and after that I will go out.”*

Exodus 11:4-8

And Moses went out from Pharaoh with great anger.

#### 9.75 THE LORD'S PASSOVER INSTITUTED

Meanwhile, the feast of the LORD's Passover was instituted by the LORD GOD to save HIS people from the plague of the first-born. The first month of the Jewish Sacred Calendar is Abib or Nisan. The Feast of the LORD's Passover was celebrated on the fourteenth day of the first month.

Moses called for all the elders of Israel, and said to them,

*“Draw out and take you a lamb according to your families, and kill the passover. And ye shall take a bunch of hyssop, and dip it in the blood that is in the basin, and strike the lintel and the two side posts with the blood that is in the basin; and none of you shall go out at the door of his house until the morning. For the LORD will pass through to smite the Egyptians; and when HE seeth the blood upon the lintel, and on the two side posts, the LORD will pass over the door, and will not suffer the destroyer to come in unto your houses to smite you. ... It is the sacrifice of the LORD's passover, who passed over the houses of the children of Israel in Egypt, when HE smote the Egyptians, and delivered our houses.”*

Exodus 12:21-23, 27

And the people bowed their heads and worshipped GOD.

### 9.76 THE DEATH OF THE FIRST-BORN

Then the children of Israel did just what the LORD GOD had commanded Moses and Aaron. At midnight the LORD GOD passed through to strike the Egyptians.

*"And it came to pass, that at midnight the LORD smote all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, from the firstborn of Pharaoh that sat on his throne unto the firstborn of the captive that was in the dungeon; and all the firstborn of cattle. And Pharaoh rose up in the night, he, and all his servants, and all the Egyptians; and there was a great cry in Egypt; for there was not a house where there was not one dead."*

Exodus 12:29-30

Since by the cruel order of Pharaoh, the king of Egypt, many male children of the Israelites were killed by casting into the river Nile, the LORD GOD smote all the first-born in the land of Egypt. The LORD our GOD is the righteous Judge. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

During the night Pharaoh summoned Moses and Aaron and said,

*"Rise up, and get you forth from among my people, both ye and the children of Israel; and go, serve the LORD, as ye have said. Also take your flocks and your herds, as ye have said, and be gone; and bless me also."*

Exodus 12:31-32

The Egyptians urged the people to hurry and leave the country hurriedly. "For (For otherwise)," they said,

*"We be all dead men (We will all die)."*

Exodus 12:33

### 9.77 THE ISRAELITES LEFT EGYPT

The people took their dough before it was leavened, their kneading troughs being bound up in their clothes upon their shoulders. The children of Israel did as Moses instructed and asked the Egyptians for jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment. The LORD GOD gave the people favour in the sight of the Egyptians and they gave them what they asked for and they benefited from the spoils of the Egyptians. The jewels of silver, the jewels of gold and clothing were

the conscience money for the Israelites' generations of slave labour and it had been promised to Abraham long before.

*"And also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance (possessions)."*

Genesis 15:14

The Israelites were driven out of Egypt. A mixed multitude of people went up with them, as well as very much cattle, both flocks and herds. The sojourning of the children of Israel in Egypt was four hundred and thirty years. At the end of the four hundred and thirty years, to the very day, all the hosts of the LORD GOD went out from the land of Egypt. The Israelites were about six hundred thousand men on foot, besides women and children.

When Pharaoh let the people go, the LORD GOD did not lead them through the way of the land of the Philistines, though that was near. For the LORD GOD said,

*"Lest peradventure the people repent (change their minds) when they see war, and they return to Egypt."*

Exodus 13:17

But the LORD GOD led the people around through the way of the wilderness towards the Red sea. They went up harnessed out of the land of Egypt. And Moses took the bones of Joseph with him, because Joseph had made the children of Israel swear an oath. Joseph had said,

*"GOD will surely visit you; and ye shall carry up my bones away hence with you."*

Exodus 13:19

## 9.78 THE PILLAR OF CLOUD AND THE PILLAR OF FIRE

And the LORD GOD went before them by day in a pillar of cloud, to lead them on their way; and by night in a pillar of fire, to give them light, so that they could travel by day and night. Neither did the LORD GOD take away the pillar of the cloud by day, nor the pillar of fire by night, out of the sight of the people.

When Pharaoh, the king of Egypt was told that the people had fled, the hearts of Pharaoh and of his servants were turned against the people and they said,

*"Why have we done this, that we have let Israel go from serving us?"*

Exodus 14:5

And Pharaoh had his chariot made ready and took his army with him. He took six hundred chosen chariots, along with all the chariots of Egypt, with captains over all of them. The LORD GOD hardened the heart of Pharaoh, and he pursued after the children of Israel, who went out with a high hand. The Egyptians—all Pharaoh's horses and his chariots and his horsemen and his army pursued after the Israelites and overtook them as they camped by the Red sea near Pihahiroth, opposite Baalzephon. When Pharaoh drew nigh, the Israelites lifted up their eyes, and there were the Egyptians, marching after them. They were terribly frightened and cried out to the LORD GOD (Exodus 14:11-12). They said to Moses,

*"Because there were no graves in Egypt, hast thou taken us away to die in the wilderness? wherefore hast thou dealt thus with us, to carry us forth out of Egypt?"*

Exodus 14:11

## 9.79 THE CROSSING OF THE RED SEA

And Moses said to the people,

*"Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation (deliverance) of the LORD, which HE will shew to you today: for the Egyptians whom ye have seen today, ye shall see them again no more for ever. The LORD shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace."*

Exodus 14:13-14

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Wherefore criest thou unto ME? speak unto the children of Israel, that they go forward: But lift thou up thy rod, and stretch out thine hand over the sea, and divide it: and the children of Israel shall go on dry ground through the midst of the sea."*

Exodus 14:15-16

Then the LORD GOD, who had been going in front of the camp of Israel, withdrew and went behind them. The pillar of cloud also went from before their face, and stood behind them. The pillar of cloud came between the camp of the Egyptians and the camp of

Israel. It brought darkness to the one side and light to the other; it brought darkness to the Egyptians and light to the Israelites; so that the Egyptians could not come near the Israelites all night long.

Then Moses stretched out his hand over the sea, and the LORD GOD caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea into a dry land, and the waters were divided. The children of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry ground, and the waters were a wall to them on their right, and on their left. The Egyptians pursued them and went in after them to the midst of the sea, even all Pharaoh's horses and his chariots and his horsemen and his army. Then in the morning watch, the LORD GOD looked to the host of the Egyptians through the pillar of fire and of the cloud, and confused the whole Egyptian army. The LORD GOD made the wheels of their chariots come off so that they drove heavily scraping along the dry ground. And the Egyptians said,

*"Let us flee from the face of Israel; for the LORD fighteth for them against the Egyptians."*

Exodus 14:25

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Stretch out thine hand over the sea, that the waters may come again upon the Egyptians, upon their chariots, and upon their horsemen."*

Exodus 14:26

Moses stretched forth his hand over the sea as commanded by the LORD GOD. When the morning appeared, the sea returned to its place with great strength. The Egyptians fled against it, and the LORD GOD overthrew the Egyptians in the midst of the sea. The waters returned, and covered the entire cavalry, the chariots, and the horsemen, and all the host of Pharaoh that had followed the Israelites into the sea. Not one of them remained or survived. But the children of Israel walked through on dry land in the midst of the sea; and the waters were a wall to them on their right, and on their left. Thus, the LORD GOD saved Israel that day from the hands of the Egyptians; and the Israelites saw the Egyptians lying dead on the seashore. When Israel saw the great work, which the LORD GOD had done upon the Egyptians, the people feared the LORD GOD, and believed

the LORD GOD, and HIS servant Moses. **The discovery of the Real Red Sea Crossing of the Israelites, by dividing the Red Sea by LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST through Moses, the servant of GOD (Exodus 14:1-31), also greatly strengthens the faith (belief) of everyone or everybody in GOD and in the Holy Bible.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 9.80 THE WATERS OF MARAH

Then Moses led the Israelites in the wilderness of Shur. They travelled in the wilderness for three days without finding water. When they came to Marah, they could not drink its water because it was bitter. But the LORD GOD turned the bitter water into sweet through HIS servant Moses. See Exodus 15:22-25. Again, the LORD GOD gave them water by splitting the rocks.

*"HE clave the rocks in the wilderness, and gave them drink as out of the great depths. HE brought streams also out of the rock, and caused waters to run down like rivers."*

Psalm 78:15-16

#### 9.81 THE ANGELS' FOOD (MANNA)

Further, the LORD GOD gave them food, the angels' food or the corn of heaven for forty years. Their clothes did not wear out and their feet did not swell (Deuteronomy 8:4) and their shoes did not wear out during these forty years.

*"And had rained down manna upon them to eat, and had given them of the corn of heaven. Man did eat angels' food: HE sent them meat (food) to the full."*

Psalm 78:24-25

*"And the house of Israel called the name thereof Manna: and it was like coriander seed, white; and the taste of it was like wafers made with honey."*

Exodus 16:31

*"And I have led you forty years in the wilderness: your clothes are not waxen old upon you, and thy shoe is not waxen old upon thy foot."*

Deuteronomy 29:5

## 9.82 THE TEN COMMANDMENTS

At mount Sinai, the LORD GOD gave the Ten Commandments to the children of Israel through HIS servant Moses. **The discovery of the Real Mt. Sinai where GOD gave HIS ten commandments to Moses, also greatly strengthens the faith (belief) of everyone or everybody in GOD and in the Holy Bible.** The Ten Commandments are:

*“And GOD spake all these words, saying, I am the LORD thy GOD, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before ME. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy GOD am a jealous GOD, visiting (punishing) the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate ME; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love ME, and keep MY commandments. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy GOD in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh HIS name in vain. Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy GOD: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it. Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy GOD giveth thee. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not steal. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour’s.”*

Exodus 20:1-17

## 9.83 THE OLD TESTAMENT LAW AND THE PRIESTHOOD

Again, the LORD GOD gave the Law of the Old Testament to the children of Israel through HIS servant Moses. The Levitical priests

and their qualifications and their works were explained in the Law. Aaron, the Levite became the high priest by the call of GOD. The divine call and appointment of Aaron as high priest was confirmed by GOD, without any room for dispute, **by a glorious miracle of GOD—the budding, blossoming and almonds' fruiting of Aarons rod, a dead and dried-up piece of wood.** Aaron was accepted by GOD as having authority in the GOD-given ministry of the priesthood (Numbers 17:1-10).

*"And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of GOD, as was Aaron."*

Hebrews 5:4

#### 9.84 THE TABERNACLE

The Tabernacle represents the completion of GOD's redemption of HIS people from Egypt to dwell among them in divine happiness, with the sanctuary, prepared, sanctified and occupied by GOD's descended glory and presence. Further, the erection of the Tabernacle in the shadow of heaven, the kingdom of GOD was done by Moses to congregate (assemble) and worship the LORD GOD (Hebrews 8:5). The LORD GOD spoke to Moses out of the Tabernacle of the congregation, as a man speaks to his friend (Leviticus 1:1; Exodus 33:11; Numbers 12:8).

Again, the Tabernacle was a very complex Tent. The invisible GOD (the heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain HIM) had come down to reside among HIS people, by pitching HIS Tent in the midst of their tents. HE had lived among them and travelled with them wherever they had travelled. What a loving GOD our GOD is! On the day of dedication of the Tabernacle, the glory of the LORD GOD filled the Tabernacle (Exodus 40:34). The LORD GOD in HIS glory had actually come down to dwell among HIS people.

At mount Sinai, the LORD GOD gave the Ten Commandments to HIS people (Exodus 20:1-17). So mount Sinai stands for the fulfilment of the first half of the covenant promise of Exodus 6:7: *"I will take you to ME for a people (for MY people)."* The Tabernacle stands for the fulfilment of the second half of the covenant promise of Exodus 6:7: *"and I will be to you a GOD (your GOD)."* Everything HE had done was



for HIS final purpose: *"I will dwell among the children of Israel (MY people)"* (Exodus 29:43-46).

### 9.85 THE END OF THE OLD TESTAMENT SACRIFICES

Furthermore, the regulations concerning the Old Testament sacrifices were given by the LORD GOD through HIS servant Moses. But the most glorious sacrifice of CHRIST on Calvary had ended the Old Testament sacrifices. The complete sacrifice of CHRIST for our sin should be remembered, and we should give ourselves as living sacrifices to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Romans 12:1-2).

*"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of GOD, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, which is your reasonable service."*

Romans 12:1

### 9.86 THE WATER OF MERIBAH

Then the whole congregation of the Israelites arrived at the desert of Zin, and they stayed at Kadesh. There was no water for the congregation and they gathered themselves together against Moses and Aaron. And the people contended with Moses.

Then Moses and Aaron went from the presence of the assembly to the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, and they fell upon their faces. The glory of the LORD GOD appeared to them, and the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and speak ye unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink."*

Numbers 20:8

Moses took the rod from the presence of the LORD GOD, as the LORD GOD commanded him. Then Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before the rock, and Moses said to them,

*"Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock?"*

Numbers 20:10

Then Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice. The water came out abundantly, and the whole congregation drank, and their beasts also drank. But the LORD GOD said to Moses and Aaron,

*“Because ye believed ME not, to sanctify ME in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore ye shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them.”*

Numbers 20:12

This is the water of Meribah (Contention), where the Israelites protested against the LORD GOD, and where the LORD GOD was sanctified among them.

The LORD GOD commanded Moses to speak to the rock before the eyes of the Israelites, to bring water out of the rock for them and for their livestock. But instead Moses smote the rock twice with his rod. He did not sanctify the most Sovereign GOD; he did not hallow the most Sovereign GOD; he did not set the most Sovereign GOD apart in the sight of the Israelites. So he forfeited his privilege to bring the Israelites into **C**anaan, the **P**romised **L**and.

#### 9.87 JOSHUA TO SUCCEED MOSES

Then Moses said to the LORD GOD,

*“Let the LORD, the GOD of the spirits of all flesh, set a man over the congregation, Which may go out before them, and which may go in before them, and which may lead them out, and which may bring them in; that the congregation of the LORD be not as sheep which have no shepherd.”*

Numbers 27:16-17

Then the LORD GOD said to Moses,

*“Take thee Joshua the son of Nun, a man in whom is the Spirit, and lay thine hand upon him; And set him before Eleazar the priest, and before all the congregation; and give him a charge in their sight. And thou shalt put some of thine honour upon him, that all the congregation of the children of Israel may be obedient. And he shall stand before Eleazar the priest, who shall ask counsel for him after the judgment of Urim before the LORD: at his word shall they go out, and at his word they shall come in,*

*both he, and all the children of Israel with him, even all the congregation."*

Numbers 27:18-21

Joshua was appointed as Moses' successor by the laying on of Moses' hands on Joshua and gave him a charge, as the LORD had commanded through Moses (Numbers 27:23), to receive some of Moses' honour upon him, that all the congregation of the children of Israel will obey him (Numbers 27:20). Joshua received the blessings of his prophet, mentor, master and spiritual father, the greatest treasure and reward for doing the divine ministry of GOD. "*And without all contradiction (fear of doubt) the less (lesser or inferior) is blessed of the better (greater or superior)*" (Hebrews 7:7).

And Moses did as the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST had commanded him. Joshua was filled with the Spirit of wisdom because Moses had laid his hands on him. So the Israelites listened to him and did what the LORD GOD had commanded Moses. Joshua then conquered the land of Canaan and apportioned it to the tribes of Israel. The bones of Joseph, which the Israelites had brought up from Egypt, were buried at Shechem. Now, this earthly Canaan reveals the coming heavenly Canaan or the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD.

Now, Joshua was chosen by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST to lead the Israelites into the promised land of Canaan because of his courage, faith in the LORD GOD and his steadfastness and faithfulness to Moses who was his prophet, master, mentor and spiritual father. Even though he was filled with the SPIRIT of GOD, he was told by Moses twice to "*Be strong and of a good courage*" (Deuteronomy 31:7, 23) and the LORD GOD reminded this thrice to him (Joshua 1:6-7, 9). Joshua was told by the LORD GOD to be strong and courageous thrice because he had to be strong and courageous to face very difficult and most dangerous obstacles. The LORD GOD promised Joshua that HE would be with him, helping him to lead the people to Canaan. Joshua had put his whole trust and dependence on the LORD GOD to succeed the very terrible task ahead. Joshua crossed the River Jordan when the LORD GOD wonderfully divided and dried up the waters of Jordan (Joshua 3) and utterly destroyed Jericho when the LORD GOD made the wall of Jericho fall down flat (Joshua 6:1-20) and utterly defeated thirty-one Canaanite kings (Joshua 12:24) by the help from

the LORD GOD (Joshua 12:24). What a helping GOD our GOD is! Since the Gibeonites had made peace with Joshua and the children of Israel, he did not fight against the Gibeonites. Joshua was very strong, bold and courageous with a very strong faith in the LORD GOD. His faith and courage in the LORD GOD, gave him great victories.

The LORD GOD sent large stones (hail-stones) upon the army of the five kings of the Amorites from heaven while they fled from before Israel (Joshua 10:11). On that day, Joshua spoke to the LORD and he said in the sight of Israel, "*Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon*" (Joshua 10:12). And the sun stood still in the middle of the heavens upon Gibeon and it did not hurry to set for about a whole day and the moon stayed in the valley of Ajalon, until the Israelites had avenged themselves upon their enemies. And there was never a day like that day, before it or after it, when our LORD listened to the voice of a man; for the LORD fought for Israel (Joshua 10:13-14). Glory be to GOD!

Joshua was always obedient to the will of GOD and he always presented himself to the will of GOD (Joshua 1:9). He had very well known about the divine intention of the LORD GOD about him. He feared GOD and prayed to GOD. The LORD GOD saved him from all his troubles and encamped round about him (Psalm 34:6-7). He had a staunch belief in the promises of the LORD GOD. He clearly understood that HIS promises were strong weapons against his enemies to overcome them. He used those strong weapons against his enemies and overcame them. **Promises of GOD are strong weapons given by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to HIS children to overcome in their spiritual warfare.**

Joshua served and worshipped the LORD GOD with fear and rejoiced with trembling with his whole family (Joshua 24:15; Psalm 2:11). He meditated upon the Law of the LORD day and night with delight (Joshua 1:8; Psalm 1:2). He behaved himself very wisely in all his ways and the LORD GOD was with him always. He was very watchful in all his words and deeds. The LORD GOD's glorious presence was always with him and he was always faithful unto HIS divine leading and he prospered wherever he went (Joshua 1:7-8). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 9.88 THE DEATH OF MOSES

Moses blessed the tribes of Israel and then he went up from the plains of Moab to the mountain of Nebo, to the top of Pisgah. The LORD GOD showed him the land of Canaan, the Promised Land, which HE promised on oath to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob (Israel). Then Moses, the servant of the LORD GOD died there in the land of Moab, according to the Word of the LORD GOD. The LORD GOD buried him in a valley in the land of Moab, but to this day, no one knows where his sepulchre (tomb) is. This most extraordinary act of our LORD GOD reveals the fact that HE gave him rest due to his sufferings. Since then, no prophet has risen in Israel like Moses, whom the LORD GOD knew face to face.

*“And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face, In all the signs and the wonders, which the LORD sent him to do in the land of Egypt to Pharaoh, and to all his servants, and to all his land, And in all that mighty hand, and in all the great terror which Moses shewed in the sight of all Israel.”*

Deuteronomy 34:10-12

### 9.89 THE LAW OF MOSES

The LORD GOD gave HIS law to Moses, and Moses gave it to the people. Thus, the books of the Law (the Torah) are called the law of Moses. By the HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD GOD, Moses wrote about the creation of the world, the fall of mankind into sin, the promise of the Saviour, the wickedness of succeeding generations, the great flood which destroyed all mankind except Noah and his family, the confusion of languages at the tower of Babel and the subsequent scattering of various language groups, the call of Abraham (Abram), and the history of Israel up to his own lifetime. The first five Books of the Holy Bible are called the Books of Moses. They are **GENESIS**, **EXODUS**, **LEVITICUS**, **NUMBERS** and **DEUTERONOMY**. These books are also called Pentateuch. Moses was the original author of the Pentateuch (except for Deuteronomy 34, which recounts the death of Moses). Moses was a hundred and twenty years old when he died (Deuteronomy 34:7). The first forty years, he spent as Pharaoh's son, learning the wisdom of the Egyptians (Acts 7:22). The next forty years,

he spent in the desert of Midian as a shepherd (Exodus 2:15; 3:1; Acts 7:30). The final forty years, he spent wandering in the Sinai wilderness with the children of Israel (Deuteronomy 8:2-4). He wrote all the books of the Pentateuch in his last forty years of life, during the wilderness wanderings. He endured great hardships and troubles during the wilderness wanderings.

*“And he (Moses) was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; he did neither eat bread, nor drink water. And he wrote upon the tables the words of the covenant, the ten commandments.”*

Exodus 34:28

### 9.90 MOSES' PROPHECY ABOUT CHRIST (MESSIAH)

Moses had prophesied about our **Promised Prophet**, viz., the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the SAVIOUR and the REDEEMER.

*“This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A Prophet shall the LORD your GOD raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; HIM shall ye hear.”*

Acts 7:37

*“For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A Prophet shall the LORD your GOD raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; HIM shall ye hear in all things whatsoever HE shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people. Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days. Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which GOD made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed. Unto you first GOD, having raised up HIS SON JESUS, sent HIM to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.”*

Acts 3:22-26

*“To HIM give all the prophets witness, that through HIS (JESUS CHRIST's) name whosoever believeth in HIM shall receive remission of sins.”*

Acts 10:43

*“Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men,*

*whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

*"In whom we have redemption through HIS (JESUS CHRIST'S) blood, even the forgiveness of sins."*

Colossians 1:14

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was born about fifteen hundred years after the prophecy was spoken by Moses. So, after about fifteen hundred years, when our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world as Saviour, HE spoke to the Jewish (Israelite) leaders who claimed to be followers of Moses,

*"For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed ME: for he wrote of ME. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe MY Words?"*

St. John 5:46-47

#### 9.91 ABRAHAM'S SEED IS CHRIST (MESSIAH)

Further, we saw that the LORD GOD had given a glorious promise to Abraham.

*"And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed MY voice."*

Genesis 22:18

**"The seed"** is "The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the SAVIOUR and the REDEEMER", who according to HIS human nature was a descendant of Abraham, born two thousand years after the promise was given. This promise was repeated to Abraham's son Isaac.

*"...And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed."*

Genesis 26:4

Again, this promise was repeated to Abraham's grandson Jacob or Israel.

*"...In thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed."*

Genesis 28:14

Further, GOD also told Abraham that he would be the father of many nations, and that his descendants would be as numerous as the dust of the earth, and as the stars of the sky, and as the sand on the seashore. See Genesis 17:4-5; 13:16; 15:5 and 22:17. Abraham is the

father of faith in GOD, due to his faithful obedience to GOD's call and HIS commands. The Christian faith is a strong faith, rooted in the promises of GOD; and the Christian faith is a growing faith; and the Christian life is a growing life in faith.

The Holy Bible of the most holy GOD says that Abraham is the father of all who believe in JESUS.

*"...That he (Abraham) might be the father of all them that believe, ..."*

Romans 4:11

*"Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham."*

Galatians 3:7

Furthermore, if one belongs to the LORD JESUS CHRIST, then he is Abraham's seed, and heir of eternal life according to the promise. All mankind will be blessed in Abraham's seed and principal heir, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And if ye be CHRIST's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."*

Galatians 3:29

*"And if children, then heirs; heirs of GOD, and joint-heirs with CHRIST; if so be that we suffer with HIM, that we may be also glorified together."*

Romans 8:17

'Joint-heirs with CHRIST' means 'all believers will share all of their inheritance in the kingdom of GOD together and they will be glorified according to their devoted and sacrificial lives they live in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST'.

*"Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their FATHER. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."*

St. Matthew 13:43

## 10. BELIEVERS OF CHRIST OR MESSIAH ARE CALLED CHRISTIANS

In the first century, the believers of CHRIST or MESSIAH were called Christians; the saved people of CHRIST were called Christians; and the saved and those who received immersion baptism in the name of



the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT were called Christians; those who continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in prayers, and in Holy Communion, were called Christians (Acts 2:42); those who lived in the Spirit and those who walked in the Spirit were called Christians (Galatians 5:25); and the disciples of CHRIST were called Christians.

*"...And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch."*

Acts 11:26

### 10.1 CHRISTIANITY—THE ONLY DIVINE RELIGION OF CHRIST OR MESSIAH

The only divine religion based on the belief that CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and the ONLY SAVIOUR and the ONLY REDEEMER and the ONE LORD and based on HIS most precious teachings, is Christianity. Hence, Christianity is the religion of CHRIST or MESSIAH.

Now, only in Christianity do we see the worship of the Most High GOD, the most powerful GOD, the most Sovereign GOD, the Almighty GOD, the most wonderful GOD, the everlasting GOD, the ONE GOD, the ONLY GOD, and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Only in Christianity do we see the love, feeling, hope, faith and will of men towards GOD. Only in Christianity do we see that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is capable of hearing our prayers, powerful to do all good things to us, able to help us at all times and able to supply all our needs by HIS extraordinary might and power. Only in Christianity do we see the sense of strong friendship with GOD. Only in Christianity can man be in living relation with GOD. Only in Christianity can man hope to be transformed into the likeness of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Only in Christianity do we see the true relationship between GOD and HIS people, viz., father and children. Only in Christianity do we see a divine worship of GOD, for our spiritual and bodily ends and needs and for our heavenly and worldly ends and needs. Only in Christianity do we find the divine healing of the soul and body. The only divine healer is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Only

in Christianity do we see a life of infinite and eternal value. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Only in Christianity do we see the highest value of a man's eternal life. Christianity clearly reveals an inward man, the soul, and the outward man, the body. Christianity clearly reveals the Supreme Being, viz., the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Only in Christianity do we see the divine qualities of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Christianity clearly reveals the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Christianity clearly reveals hell. Christianity clearly reveals judgment. Christianity clearly reveals the Millennium of CHRIST or the thousand years rule of CHRIST in this world. Christianity clearly reveals that the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein will be burned up. See II Peter 3:10. Christianity clearly reveals the creation of new heavens and a new earth and a rejoicing New Jerusalem and the creation of a joyful new people.

*"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in MY people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying."*

Isaiah 65:17-19

*"For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before ME, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain."*

Isaiah 66:22

## 10.2 CHRISTIANITY IS THE CONTINUATION OF THE FIRST-EVER RELIGION

Christianity is the Christian religion, the only divine religion that is based on the divine teachings of our LORD JESUS CHRIST and the divine belief that HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD (I John 5:20; I Corinthians 8:6).

GOD created mankind to be fruitful (Genesis 1:28). GOD created mankind to fulfil HIS will that a sinless and holy tribe of people, the

ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD, a godly people, a blessed and immortal people might greatly multiply from Adam and Eve (Malachi 2:15).

GOD created mankind to fear before HIM always (Proverbs 28:14); and to keep HIS divine commandments and to delight greatly in HIS divine commandments (Psalm 112:1). If anyone fears GOD, then he will hate evil (Proverbs 8:13). GOD created mankind to be a blessed and mighty generation of the upright (Psalm 112:2).

Now, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created mankind in HIM to do good works, which HE prepared beforehand that they should walk in them. HE never created mankind to do evil works or sinful works. HE never created mankind to walk according to the lust of the flesh or fleshly lusts; HE never created mankind to walk according to the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life (I John 2:16). HE never created mankind to walk according to their will and pleasure. HE created mankind to live according to HIS will. HE created mankind to live according to HIS laws and statutes and covenants.

*"For we are HIS workmanship (creation), created in CHRIST JESUS unto good works, which GOD hath before ordained (prepared) that we should walk in them."*

Ephesians 2:10

Besides, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST chose mankind in HIM before the foundation (creation) of the world, that they should be holy and without blame before HIM in love.

*"According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before HIM in love."*

Ephesians 1:4

Again, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the all-knowing GOD. HE had known that the mankind would certainly fall into sin and they would certainly need a Saviour to save them from their sins or a Redeemer to redeem them from their sins.

So, before the foundation (creation) of the world, the Saviour (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was foreordained for the people of the whole world. This clearly means that before the foundation of the world, salvation to the people of the whole world was planned and prepared by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; and before the foundation of the

world, holiness and holy life and all other spiritual experiences were prepared by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for the people of the whole world. To reveal and to give these divine spiritual (heavenly) blessings to mankind, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was manifest (revealed) in these last times and sacrificed HIMSELF on the cross at Calvary.

*"But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you."*

I Peter 1:19-20

Again, from the foundation (creation) of the world, the Lamb of GOD (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) was in principle, slain for the people of the whole world. This clearly means that our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's redemptive death for the people of the whole world, was a determined fact from the foundation of the world due to the sins of mankind (due to the sins of the first man Adam and of the first woman Eve and of their descendants).

*"...The Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."*

Revelation 13:8

Besides, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world and preached the divine Gospel of GOD's salvation, the Word of GOD. HIS disciples also preached the Word of GOD, the divine Gospel of GOD's salvation. At the present time also, HIS true ministers or servants (apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers) preach the Word of GOD, the divine Gospel of GOD's salvation. The Holy Bible, the Word of GOD or the Holy Scriptures also preaches the divine Gospel of GOD's salvation. Thus, the Word of GOD strongly bears witness on earth about our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Again, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST completely shed HIS most holy blood from Gethsemane to Calvary for us. So, HIS most holy blood also strongly bears witness on earth about HIM.

Further, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST gave up HIS Spirit or breathed HIS last on the cross at Calvary (St. Matthew 27:50). So, HIS Spirit also strongly bears witness on earth about HIM.

Thus, the **Spirit of GOD**, the **Word of GOD**, and the **blood of GOD** always bear witness on earth about our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST strongly. So, no one can escape from these three strong witnesses of GOD. No one can escape from GOD. No sinner can escape from HIS terrible wrath. No sinner can escape from HIS terrible judgment. No sinner can escape hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in (as) one."*

I John 5:8

'The water' means 'the Word of GOD or the Word of Truth' (St. John 3:5; James 1:18).

Now, in the beginning the ONE GOD, and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was worshipped by mankind, since HE is the ONE GOD and the Creator.

*"...There is none other GOD but one. But to us there is but one GOD, the FATHER, of whom are all things, and we in HIM; and one LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom are all things, and we by HIM."*

I Corinthians 8:4, 6

Thus, in the beginning there was a true worship of the TRUE GOD; there was one worship of the ONE GOD; and there was only one worship of the ONLY GOD. In the beginning, people worshipped the ONE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in the beauty of holiness; they worshipped HIM out of a pure heart; they worshipped HIM and loved HIM with all their heart and with all their soul and with all their strength; and they worshipped their own Creator, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. In the beginning there was no idolatry or any other form of worship. The early world had no idols, no temples and no priests.

Hence, all other worships against the ONE GOD, the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came later. Nature-worship (the worship of sun, moon, star and other heavenly bodies, the winds, the thunders, the storms, the rain, the fire, the sky, the rivers, the springs, the wells, the tree or trees, the groves, the crops, the fruits, the rocks and stones (artificial or natural stones), birds, reptiles, etc.), ancestor-worship, animal-worship, worship of human spirits and other evil spirits, fetish-worship

(objects supposed to be visited by spirits), idolatry, personifications, sphinx-worship, the practice of having totems (totemism), etc., came later, against the ONE GOD, and the ONLY GOD, and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The weakest and the worst things or the weakest and the abominable things in the world are subjugated to the strongest and the most holy LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Now, from the history of mankind referred to in the Holy Bible, we come to know that, first of all, the first man Adam and the first woman Eve worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then in the second generation Abel, the son of Adam worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Hence in the beginning, religion was one. In the beginning religion was universal among the people. In the beginning there was one and only universal religion, that was the religion of the ONE GOD, and the ONLY GOD, and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Then in the third generation, Enos worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Then in the seventh generation, Enoch worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Enoch walked with GOD and GOD took him from this life, so that he did not experience death (Genesis 5:21-24). In the tenth generation, except Noah, all people on earth had corrupted their ways. But Noah worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Noah was a just man and perfect in his generation and he walked with GOD. In the twentieth generation, Abraham worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The LORD GOD gave him great promises also. In the twenty-first generation, Isaac worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He had also received great promises from GOD. In the twenty-second generation, Jacob (Israel) worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and so on. He had also received great promises from GOD.

Then Moses worshipped GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in the name of "I AM THAT I AM" and in the name of JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH. JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH and the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH and the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the ONE and the same GOD. Praise The LORD!

Alleluia! "I AM" reveals GOD as the supreme Being, and absolutely self-existent Being, and absolutely permanent-existent Being, having eternal life in HIM. JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD of the Jews. But JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH, the GOD of the Jews is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Thus, JEHOVAH or YAHWEH or YHWH or the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD of the Christians. Hence, the Jews (the Israelites) and the Christians have the ONE and the same GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Moreover, brethren, I would not (do not want) that ye should be ignorant (unaware), how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat (food); And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was CHRIST."*

I Corinthians 10:1-4

From these, we come to know that Christianity is the continuation of the Jewish Religion and this Jewish Religion is the continuation of the first-ever religion. Thus, Christianity is the continuation of the first-ever religion; and Christianity is the continuation of the first-ever religion in which the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD had been worshipped; and Christianity is the only soul-saving religion. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

When the **living soul** (the breath of life) of man goes away, the man dies (Genesis 2:7). But the soul is not dead. If there is no opening, the soul of a sinful man is able to move about and pass through to make unpleasant noises, and to cause various troubles. The soul of a sinful man does these things. But the soul of a holy man will not do like this. His soul will be caught up in the **third heaven** by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and it will be in complete rest up to the coming of CHRIST. Hence, from these things, we come to know that the person continually exists after the death of the body, i.e., the soul continually exists after the death of the body. This soul can be saved, only by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the Only SAVIOUR. Thus the only soul-saving religion is Christianity. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Thus, Christianity is the one and only religion of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; and Christianity is the one and only universal religion of the GOD of the universe. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, who should be accepted by all universally. Hence, Christianity the only divine religion of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, should be accepted by all universally, to enter into the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of CHRIST or the kingdom of heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 10.3 CHRISTIANITY—HIDDEN AND REVEALED

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's eyes are too pure to look at evil. So HE hides HIMSELF and HE hides HIS most holy face to evil or sin.

*"THOU art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity (wickedness): ..."*

Habakkuk 1:13

Now, Christianity, the first-ever religion and the only true religion of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD has been hidden due to the sins of mankind. Christianity, the only divine religion of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the religion of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, has been hidden and unrevealed due to the sins of mankind. But it has been revealed to all people of the world, by our LORD JESUS CHRIST's vicarious death on the cross. Christianity, the new and living way has been revealed to all the people of the world, through our LORD JESUS CHRIST's ploughed and pierced body. HIS most holy body was ploughed up by severe scourging (whipping). Six Roman soldiers scourged our LORD JESUS CHRIST severely. The Roman scourge consisted of a whip, split into several strips, into which sharp bones and metal pieces were embedded to cut the flesh. HIS most holy head was pierced by a sharp thorny iron crown. HIS most holy face was wounded by the plucking out of HIS beard. HIS most holy hands and feet were pierced by long nails and HIS most holy side (heart) was pierced by a spear. A Roman soldier pierced HIS side with a spear.

*"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of JESUS, By a new and living way, which HE*



*hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, HIS flesh."*

Hebrews 10:19-20

*"The plowers plowed upon MY back: they made long their furrows."*

Psalms 129:3

*"I gave MY back to the smiters, and MY cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not MY face from shame and spitting."*

Isaiah 50:6

*"But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced HIS side, and forthwith (immediately) came there out blood and water."*

St. John 19:34

The hidden divine religion has been revealed to the whole world, through the horrible wounds of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Now, the hidden divine religion is very clearly visible to the whole world, through the horrible wounds of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Christianity, the only divine religion of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is very clearly visible to all. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **1 1 . OTHER RELIGIONS**

**Except Christianity, all the other religions of the world are religions of the material world. All the religions of the material world are full of errors and failures and disappointments.** All the religions of the material world are not spiritual. All the religions of the material world are material. At this point, it is relevant to discuss some details of the religions of the material world.

Now, **Buddhism** is the religion of Buddhists. It is an Asian religion based on the teaching of Buddha (Gautama Siddhartha). Originally, Buddhism had no gods and no worship. It was a religion without GOD, without priesthood, without prayer and without worship. Hence, Buddha the founder of Buddhism is credited with having preached atheism. Originally, Buddha was not an object of worship. But the deification of Buddha and the worship of him and ancestor-worship are in Buddhism. In Buddhism, Buddhists had no ceremony

for any gods. In Buddhism, there are so many reincarnations. This belief is completely contrary to the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, which says,

*"...It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment."*

Hebrews 9:27

This clearly means that there is no reincarnation; and concerning GOD's judgment there is no exception.

Again, the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD says,

*"...The spirit (of man) shall return unto GOD who gave it."*

Ecclesiastes 12:7

*"For GOD shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil."*

Ecclesiastes 12:14

**Agnostic** is a person who is not sure whether or not GOD exists. Agnostic is a person who believes that nothing can be known about the existence of GOD. Such belief is called **agnosticism**. Agnostics have no belief about immortal things. Agnostics are sinners.

**Atheist** is a person who believes that there is no GOD. Disbelief in the existence of GOD is called **atheism**. Atheists are sinners. They have no belief about immortal things. GOD, however, has revealed HIMSELF very clearly to us in HIS most Holy Word, the Holy Bible. The denial of GOD's existence brings moral decay of the human race. The denial of GOD's existence brings universal depravity of the human race. A proverb in English language says: 'An atheist is one point beyond the devil'.

What does the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures tell about an atheist?

*"The fool hath said in his heart, There is no GOD. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good."*

Psalms 14:1

Buddhism declares that man must save himself by his own efforts. Hence, it is broadly human and it is a product of human mind. Buddha was a man, and Buddhism is a record of his human life and

his human experience. The well-known denial of soul in Buddhism is that the soul is nothing but the name and form—made up, like the body, of the four elements, viz., earth, air, fire and water. Buddhism is a sad religion and it is not a full religion, since it aims not at the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven. By one's own efforts, no one can get salvation from sins and holiness and holy life to enter into the most holy kingdom of GOD.

**Jainism** is the religion of Jainists (Jains). Jainism is an Indian religion so like Buddhism. It also has a human founder. Mahavira the founder of Jainism was also an atheist. Originally, Jains had no gods. But the deification of Mahavira and the worship of him are in Jainism. Jainism is also a sad religion and it is not a full religion, since it aims not at the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven.

**Confucianism** is the name of the philosophy of Confucius of China. His conversation was chiefly about worldly matters. His philosophy was based on moral responsibility of every individual in the capacity of son, father, student, ruler, subject, etc. Confucianism is interested chiefly in human relationships and not in immortality. The main doctrine of Confucianism is that the measure of man is man. Hence, Confucianism is not at all a religion. It never aims at the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven.

**Taoism** is an ancient Chinese philosophy. It was founded by Lao-Tsze (the old master). It insists on humility and feminine respectability. Veneration of female is matriarchal in character. Hence, Taoism is not at all a religion. It never aims at the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven.

**Islam (Muhammadism)** is the religion of Muslims. It was founded by Mohammed of Arabia in the 7th century A.D. In Arabic, Allah means GOD. Allah (GOD) was a common name used by Arabs, even though they worshipped so many gods. So, there were no historical accounts or evidences about Allah. Islam means submission to Allah. Muslim is a person who submits himself to Allah. Demands of Islam consist of the following five precise points. (1) Belief—in Allah and in Mohammed. (2) Prayer—the repetition of words at five separate times each day, with his face towards Mecca (Arabia).

(3) Almsgiving—to support the poor and the war against infidels (those who reject Islam). (4) Fasting—during the month of Ramadan. (5) The Hajj—a journey to Mecca that all Muslims try to make at least once in their lives. These precepts of Islam will never make any man sinless and holy. Hence, by these precepts, no man can enter into the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven. Further, Islam is a yoke and it is inwardly hostile to freedom, and it is incapable of helping spiritual developments.

**Sikhism** is the religion of Sikhs. It was founded by Guru Nanak of Pakistan in the late 15th century A.D. Sikhism has been described as pantheism. A Muslim sect, the Qudiani, has been quoting that Guru Nanak was a devout and ardent Muslim. But he contended Islam. He developed Sikhism from Hinduism. So, he contended Hinduism also. Sikhism does not consider the first Sin. Every man/woman is sinful in his/her origin or birth is because of the first Sin or Original Sin. Unless one realizes his/her first Sin, he/she cannot realize his/her other sins. Unless one confesses his/her first Sin, he/she cannot confess his/her other sins. To obtain forgiveness (remission) of sins, salvation (deliverance) from sins, holiness and holy life, everyone should realize and confess his/her first Sin and all other sins. How can a religion that does not recognize the sinfulness of man do any good at all to mankind! Hence, by following such a doctrine, no man can enter into the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven.

**Hinduism** is the religion of Hindus. It is the chief religion of India. In Hinduism, there are so many groups and so many divisions, so many gods of so many types and so many ways of worship, several beliefs and several reincarnations, several rituals and several ceremonies, several journeys to several places and several bathings in several seas or rivers or ponds, divinations, black magic, witchcraft, sorcery, idolatry, the caste system, etc. Nature-worship, ancestor-worship, fetish-worship, animal worship, reptile worship, worship of birds, weapon-worship, worship of devils or demons or evil spirits, human-worship, quasi-human-worship, various sacrifices, etc., are in Hinduism. Superstitions are filled in all quarters. Superstitious beliefs, superstitious fears and superstitious practices are innumerable. Hence, in Hinduism, there is no way to get salvation from sins, and

there is no way to get holiness and holy life to enter into the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven.

**Bahaim** is the religion of Bahais. It was founded by Bahauallah of Iran in the 19th century A.D. Its chief aim is to combine all religions into one single religion. It affirms the spiritual unity of mankind and the equality of men and women and it advocates peace and universal education. But there is no spirituality in Bahaim. It excludes women from serving on its supreme governing body. It is composed of or connected with physical objects (such as universal education, community activities, etc.), rather than the mind or spirit. It is connected with the material world. It is concerned with the body rather than the mind or soul. Hence, Bahaim aims not at the most holy kingdom of GOD or the most holy kingdom of heaven.

**Zoroastrianism** is an ancient religion of Persian origin founded by Zoroaster, which teaches the existence of two rival gods, the good and the evil. In Zoroastrianism, there is no way to get salvation from sins and there is no way to enter into the most holy kingdom of GOD. **All the above religions are man-made religions; they focus on human product.**

**Judaism (the Jewish Religion)** is the religion of the Jewish people or the Israelites. It is a religion in accordance with the Old Testament Scriptures of the Holy Bible and the Talmud. The Talmud is a collection of ancient writings on Jewish law and tradition. These writings constitute the basis of religious authority of Orthodox Judaism. Animal sacrifices are in Judaism. Now, it is impossible for the blood of bulls and goats to take away sins.

*"For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins."*

Hebrews 10:4

Therefore, our LORD JESUS CHRIST or MESSIAH or MESSIAS made the supreme sacrifice for all, paying for all our sins with HIS own blood when HE suffered and died for us on the cross (Hebrews 9:26).

*"And HE is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world."*

I John 2:2

Our LORD, JESUS CHRIST is the new and living way by which HIS believers have direct access into heaven, the most holy place of GOD.

*"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of JESUS, By a new and living way, which HE hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, HIS flesh."*

Hebrews 10:19-20

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's sacrifice is a once-for-all sacrifice, and it is a perfect sacrifice. HE paid for all our sins with HIS own blood (Isaiah 53:5; I Peter 2:24; I John 1:7). No one can get salvation by keeping the Old Testament Scriptures and the Talmud. Everyone must put his/her trust completely in JESUS CHRIST for salvation from sins.

*"...CHRIST JESUS came into the world to save sinners; ..."*

I Timothy 1:15

Judaism is a religion of the material world, since the Jewish people or the Israelites have no belief in the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. The LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is MESSIAH or MESSIAS.

In Judaism, there is no hope for salvation, since salvation is found only in our LORD JESUS CHRIST or MESSIAH or MESSIAS, and the holy Doctrines of the Holy Bible alone can make the sinner wise enough to accept GOD's salvation through faith in CHRIST JESUS (II Timothy 3:15).

*"Neither is there salvation in any other (other than JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

What Judaism failed to achieve, Christianity is certainly able to. Judaism could not do what it was relied upon to accomplish. What is the reason for this? Judaism was only the earthly shadow of those heavenly realities that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST came to establish and bring within our reach. Christianity is CHRIST and HE is the perfect fulfilment of the Old Testament Law (St. Matthew 5:17; Romans 10:4) and HIS divine Gospel gives us the very things that the Law professed

to give, but much more effectively. An in-depth spiritual study of the Epistle to Hebrews will make this point clear and we are urged to be loyal to the new covenant (the New Testament) of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST with its paramount privileges. Glory be to GOD!

## 12. CULTS OR SECTS AND ISMS

Cult is a system of religious worship steeped in rituals and false doctrines. They share an obsessive devotion to a person or ideal. The Chinese cult of ancestor worship, the New Age cult of reincarnation, the Hindu-Buddhist cults of demonic influences, etc., are some examples. Cults are also called sects.

Again, cult implies a system of religious worship that is not true. It also implies a religious system that denies the essential fundamental teachings of the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Bible. The false teachings of the cults include differences of interpretation and rejection or perverting of the basic Scriptural doctrines.

All the cults are abundantly filled with heresies and false doctrines. Most of the cults are very skilled in deceiving believers who are not grounded in the Holy Word of GOD, the Holy Scriptures. How important it is to know the Holy Word of GOD, and to be absolutely grounded in the essential fundamental teachings of the Holy Word of GOD! The cults are formulating various doctrines of the devils. **The truth is what GOD says, not what man formulates.**

Our GOD's eye could see all moments—past, present and future. Our GOD's eye could see all the people—the dead, the living, and the coming generations. In the past, for the benefit of the people, GOD spoke to them through HIS prophets, the holy men of GOD. Their prophecies never came by the will of man, but by the will of GOD. They spoke as they were moved by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.

*“For the prophecy came not in old (any) time by the will of man: but holy men of GOD spake as they were moved by the HOLY GHOST.”*

II Peter 1:21

Nowadays certain church leaders are boldly making false and bizarre claims of having 'direct messages' from GOD through

extra-Biblical sources. Their claims are blasphemous and deceptive. They are deceiving billions by their false prophecies. Six marks of false prophets are furnished below:

Through false signs and wonders, they lead the people astray after false gods (Deuteronomy 13:1-4). Their prophecies do not come to pass (Deuteronomy 18:20-22). They contradict GOD's Word (Isaiah 8:20). They bear bad fruit (St. Matthew 7:15-20). All worldly men speak well of them (St. Luke 6:26). They deny that JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, has come once and for all in the flesh (I John 4:3). Anyone of these marks will identify the false prophets.

**Christology** is a branch of theology that is concerned with the person and character of CHRIST. Briefly, Christology is the study of CHRIST. The study of CHRIST means the study of CHRIST's teaching. The study of CHRIST means the study of Christian teaching. Christian doctrine instructs us not to live like the unbelievers. The unbelievers live in the vanity (futility) of their mind; they are darkened in their understanding; they are separated from GOD because of the ignorance that is in them due to the blindness (hardening) of their hearts; they have lost all sensitivity, and they have given themselves over to lasciviousness (sensuality) so as to indulge in every kind of uncleanness with greediness (with a continual lust for more). See Ephesians 4:17-19.

Christianity teaches us to put off the old man, to renounce our former way of life and sins. We must be renewed in our mind to do the will of GOD. Christianity, teaches us to put on the new man, created in true righteousness and holiness. 'The old man' should be laid aside and 'the new man' should be properly worked in our daily life. The old man, lying must be replaced by truth-telling, the new man. The old man is sinful anger and it must be replaced by righteous indignation, the new man. The old man, theft must be replaced by honest work, the new man. The old man is foul language and it must be replaced by gracious speech, the new man. The old man, bitterness and wrath must be replaced by kindness and forgiveness. See Ephesians 4:20-32.



At the present time, Cults and Isms are growing more and more. They are teaching perverse things, to draw away the people after themselves. So, be on your guard!

The apostle Paul warns:

*"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, ... For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock."*

Acts 20:28-29

## 12.1 SPIRITISM

This is one of the worst cults that were practised from the early history of the world. This is the belief that living persons can receive messages from dead people, usually sent through a person with special evil powers, called a medium or spiritist. Spiritism is contrary to the Word of GOD and is detestable in HIS sight. No one should consult the dead on behalf of the living.

*"And the soul (person) that turneth after such as have familiar spirits (turn to mediums), and after wizards, to go a whoring after them, I will even set MY face against that soul, and will cut him off from among his people."*

Leviticus 20:6

*"A man also or woman that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death: ..."*

Leviticus 20:27

It is the clear testimony of the Holy Scriptures, the Holy Bible, that Spiritism is the masquerading of evil spirits, particularly Satan, the devil. Spiritism is condemned by St. Paul in I Timothy 4:1-2. Spiritism denies the deity of JESUS CHRIST, and HIS virgin birth.

Mediums or spiritists are sinners. Because of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's great love and mercy, HE forgives the sins of all those who truly repent of their sins and put their trust in CHRIST for eternal life.

**Wicca witchcraft** is not the old religion. It is quite new. It is the modern world witchcraft. It is enticing. It is tempting. It is seductive. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST warns,

*"For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect."*

St. Mark 13:22

If such people entice or tempt or seduce you, do not consent.

*"...If sinners entice thee, consent thou not."*

Proverbs 1:10

GOD hates the sin of witchcraft and Wicca witchcraft (the new religion) and all sin.

## 12.2 MORMONISM

This is one of the largest and the worst cults of the 19th century. Mormons are divided into two major groups: the Church of JESUS CHRIST of Latter-Day Saints and the Reorganized Church of JESUS CHRIST of Latter-Day Saints. In the hidden truth revealed in November 2014, the Mormon Church has admitted that its founder Joseph Smith was not a monogamous; he married about 40 women including a 14-year-old and others who were already the wives of his followers; and he authorized his followers to practice 'Plural Marriage'. What a great sex sin it is!

Mormons do not believe the virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST. They deny the deity of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They deny the deity of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. They deny the deity of the ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Mormonism is confusing because it uses Bible Words but with different meanings. Mormons have a different Bible. Historical facts contradict this book of Mormon. No ancient copies of transcripts or manuscripts of the book of Mormon have ever been found. The founder of Mormonism was involved in the occult. His book pertained mostly to fiscal matters.

The Holy Bible is the only Book given to mankind by the heavenly GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The Book of Mormon is said to contain new revelation. The Holy Bible is complete and it contains all revelations from GOD. The Holy Bible requires no new revelation from GOD. The Holy Bible is not only the complete revelation from GOD, but also it is the final revelation from GOD; and nothing should

be added thereunto or taken away (Deuteronomy 4:2; Proverbs 30:6; Jude 3; Revelation 22:18-19). Hence, those who claim a new revelation from GOD, whether they be Mormons or others, stand condemned.

Mormons do not believe the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. They have no belief in the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They claim to be Christians, but they are not. Mormons believe in another JESUS, a different spirit, and a false gospel.

*“For if he that cometh preacheth another JESUS, whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.”*

II Corinthians 11:4

Mormons are missionary-minded. They preach another JESUS, whom the apostles of the first century Christian church did not preach; they receive a different spirit which the apostles of the first century did not receive; theirs is a different gospel which the apostles of the first century would not accept.

Mormons have no assurance of salvation. They may come to your doors with polished manners and courtesy, saying that they would like to speak to you concerning their church—the Church of JESUS CHRIST of Latter-Day Saints and this deceiving title may appeal to many. Do not receive these un-Christian sect into your houses nor greet them; for he/she who greets them shares in their evil deeds (II John 9-11).

### 12.3 JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

This is also one of the largest and the worst cults of the 19th century. It is known as 'The International Bible Students Association', 'The Watch Tower And Tract Society', 'The Brooklyn Tabernacle', 'The People's Pulpit Association', 'Millennial Dawn' and 'Russelism'.

Jehovah's Witnesses have no assurance of salvation themselves. Jehovah's Witnesses have no belief in the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Jehovah's Witnesses do not believe the following Biblical truths concerning sin and retribution. The Holy

Bible clearly teaches: "The soul that sinneth, it shall die" (Ezekiel 18:20). After death, the judgment (Hebrews 9:27). Punishment in hell is eternal (St. Mark 9:43; II Thessalonians 1:7-10; St. Matthew 25:41; Revelation 14:9-11). The rich man in hell-fire was certainly tormented continuously (St. Luke 16:23-26). Jehovah's Witnesses deny the holy Trinity of GOD. They deny the deity and humanity of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They deny the glorious redemption through the most holy blood of JESUS. They deny the open coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They deny the judgment of CHRIST. They pervert the Biblical teachings about hell. They are not godly men and women. They are deceivers. They deceive the hearts of the innocent (Romans 16:18).

Jehovah's Witnesses have no church. They have no prayer. They have no knowledge about holiness or holy life. With some tracts or pamphlets, they walk about like roaring lions, seeking whom they may devour (I Peter 5:8). They walk about in two by two, in groups of one man and one woman. They may be married couples or unmarried couples or romantic couples. They spend their hours in door-to-door work to proclaim a false message. So, be sober and be vigilant about these false witnesses. Do not receive these false witnesses into your houses nor greet them; for he/she who greets them shares in their evil deeds (II John 9-11). Beware, they accept JEHOVAH as their GOD. They also say about themselves that they are called to witness for JEHOVAH.

*"Ye are MY witnesses, saith the LORD, and MY servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe ME, and understand that I am HE: before ME there was no GOD formed, neither shall there be after ME."*

Isaiah 43:10

But in truth, they are witnesses against JEHOVAH, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They deny the deity of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and the Almighty GOD. They do not believe the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. When our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST was in this world, the Jews asked HIM,

*"Who art THOU? (Who are YOU?) ..."*

St. John 8:25

And JESUS said to them,

*"Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning."*

St. John 8:25

Just what our LORD JESUS CHRIST has been saying to them from the beginning, refers to the LORD GOD who spoke unto Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, etc. HE said unto Moses,

*"I am the LORD: And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of GOD Almighty, but by MY name JEHOVAH was I not known to them."*

Exodus 6:2-3

Further, the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, says,

*"Behold, GOD is my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid: for the LORD JEHOVAH is my strength and my song; HE also is become my salvation."*

Isaiah 12:2

Hence, it is very clear that our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is JEHOVAH. HE has become our salvation. If you do not believe that JESUS CHRIST is JEHOVAH, you will die in your sins. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE said unto the Jews,

*"Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am HE (JEHOVAH), ye shall die in your sins."*

St. John 8:23-24

'HE' means 'The LORD GOD' or 'JEHOVAH' or 'The Almighty GOD'.

The great GOD and our SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is JEHOVAH (Titus 2:13; Psalm 95:3). JESUS CHRIST is the GOD (II Peter 1:1). HE is the TRUE GOD (I John 5:20). HE is the ONLY TRUE GOD (St. John 17:3). HE is the only wise GOD (Jude 25). HE is the LORD and Saviour (II Peter 3:18). HE is Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End (Revelation 21:6). HE is the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last (Revelation 22:13).

JEHOVAH is the Saviour—JESUS CHRIST is the Saviour (Isaiah 43:3; Titus 2:13). JEHOVAH is the KING of kings—JESUS CHRIST is the KING of kings (Psalm 95:3; Revelation 17:14; 19:16). JEHOVAH is

the GOD of gods and the LORD of lords—JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of gods and the LORD of lords (Deuteronomy 10:17; I Timothy 6:15). JEHOVAH is the righteous Judge—JESUS CHRIST is the righteous Judge (Psalm 50:6; 96:13; II Timothy 4:1; I Peter 1:17).

JEHOVAH is the true Light—JESUS CHRIST is the true Light (Isaiah 60:19-20; St. John 1:4, 9). JEHOVAH is the Rock—JESUS CHRIST is the Rock (Deuteronomy 32:4; I Corinthians 10:4). JEHOVAH is the Redeemer—JESUS CHRIST is the Redeemer (Isaiah 48:17; Ephesians 1:7). JEHOVAH is the Good Shepherd—JESUS CHRIST is the Good Shepherd (Psalm 23:1; St. John 10:14).

JEHOVAH is the Creator of all things—JESUS CHRIST is the Creator of all things (Genesis 1:1-31; Psalm 95:5; 102:25; Isaiah 40:28; St. John 1:1-3, 10; I Corinthians 8:6). JEHOVAH is GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT—JESUS CHRIST is GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON and GOD the HOLY SPIRIT (Genesis 1:1-2; Job 33:4; Isaiah 9:6; St. John 10:30; 14:9; II Corinthians 3:17-18). From the Biblical truths mentioned above, Jehovah's Witnesses can clearly understand that JEHOVAH is the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HE is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, Jehovah's Witnesses are a soul-destroying sect. They are like terrorists with various passports and they are like cheats with various names. To safeguard ourselves from the terrible effects of this soul-destroying sect, we should remember the best safeguard that worked so effectively in the midst of the early Bereans. About them it is written:

*"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so."*

Acts 17:11

#### 12.4 CHRISTIAN SCIENCE

This is also one of the worst cults of the 19th century. It was founded by a married woman. This cult, even though it takes the name of Christian, it is Anti-Christian. It is one of Satan's counterfeit religions to beguile those who do not know the truth. It resembles Pantheism—the false doctrine that says GOD is everything

and everything is GOD. The great distinction between 'GOD the Creator' and HIS creations are not known to Christian Scientists. The main doctrines of the Holy Bible are denied or distorted by them. They have absurd and unscriptural beliefs. No true Christian should be deceived at all by this cult.

Christian Scientists deny the virgin birth of JESUS CHRIST. They deny the deity of JESUS CHRIST. They also deny the humanity of JESUS CHRIST. They do not believe JESUS to be the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and the Almighty GOD. They do not believe the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, says,

*"...This (JESUS CHRIST) is the true GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

Christian Science is a false science. The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures warns us about being deceived by such false sciences. The apostle Paul warns to avoid

*"...Oppositions of science falsely so-called."*

I Timothy 6:20

By professing such false sciences, people have gone astray from the faith.

*"Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. ..."*

I Timothy 6:21

The 'Christian Science' cult can be explained in the words of Isaiah. He says,

***"...The whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint. From the sole of the foot even unto the head there is no soundness in it; but wounds, and bruises, and putrefying sores: ..."***

Isaiah 1:5-6

So, be careful to stand on the Word of GOD to safeguard yourself from these worthless scientists.

## 12.5 UNITARIANISM

This is one of the cults of the 16th century. It is similar to Arianism. Unitarians deny the deity of JESUS CHRIST. They deny the doctrine of the Trinity, the unity of GOD the FATHER, GOD the SON, and GOD

the HOLY SPIRIT in one GODHEAD. They do not believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. They do not believe the Biblical verses. When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE said,

*"I and MY FATHER are One."*

St. John 10:30

*"...He that hath seen ME hath seen the FATHER; ..."*

St. John 14:9

Again, the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, says,

*"Now the LORD is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is liberty."*

II Corinthians 3:17

Now Unitarians are found in the evangelical and other churches.

## 12.6 UNIFICATION CHURCH

This is one of the worst cults of the 20th century. Sun Myung Moon, the self-proclaimed false messiah founded this cult in Korea. **Moonies** deny the deity of JESUS CHRIST. They deny the humanity of JESUS CHRIST. Its founder had many visions of Satan, the devil. So he falsely claimed that JESUS had commanded him to build the kingdom of heaven on the earth.

But, the kingdom of heaven has already been prepared for HIS people from the foundation of the world, by our heavenly FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"...Come, ye blessed of MY FATHER, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world."*

St. Matthew 25:34

Now, antichrist is the ultimate opponent of GOD, GOD's plans, and GOD's people. Moonies are the followers of this antichrist, Moon.

Further, who are the antichrists? The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, says,

*"Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby*



*we know that it is the last time."*

I John 2:18

*"Who is a liar but he that denieth that JESUS is the CHRIST? He is antichrist, that denieth the FATHER and the SON. Whosoever denieth the SON, the same hath not the FATHER: (but) he that acknowledgeth the SON hath the FATHER also."*

I John 2:22-23

*"For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that JESUS CHRIST is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist."*

II John 7

## 12.7 THE WORLDWIDE CHURCH OF GOD

This is one of the worst cults of the 20th century. This cult is a most subtle cult, founded by Herbert W. Armstrong. It is as great a danger as the Jehovah's Witnesses. Armstrongism, the modern sect was formerly known as the 'Radio Church of GOD' and now it goes under the name of the 'Worldwide Church of GOD'. (The Worldwide Church of GOD should not be mistaken with a Pentecostal group known as the Church of GOD).

**Armstrongism** is full of heresies. It denies the Holy Trinity of GOD. It denies the deity of JESUS CHRIST. It denies the humanity of JESUS CHRIST. It denies the doctrine of the Trinity. It condemns the exalting of the Person of CHRIST. It denies the basis of salvation. It denies the reward of the saved. It denies the glorious spiritual experience of born-again or born-from-above. The followers of Armstrong have no knowledge about this glorious spiritual experience.

Now, a born-again person is a Christian. The born-again Christian no longer lives for himself (his own selfish needs) but for HIM who died for him and rose again.

*"And that HE died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto HIM which died for them, and rose again."*

II Corinthians 5:15

A person is born-again by the powerful working of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD through the Word of GOD. A born-again person is a new creation in CHRIST. Anyone who is in CHRIST is a Christian.

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

Armstrongism professes to tell the plain truth, but it is not at all truth. This sect is fundamentally unsound. This sect's heavy emphasis on prophecy is completely misleading. Armstrong claims to be the only true leader in the world. But, he is one of the satanic counterfeits. The Holy Bible warns of such false apostles and deceitful workers:

*"For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of CHRIST. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works."*

II Corinthians 11:13-15

## 12.8 THE UNITY SCHOOL OF CHRISTIANITY

This is one of the largest and the worst gnostic cults of the 20th century. They think that they have the spiritual knowledge, but they have not. They think that they have the knowledge of spiritual things, but they have not. They think that they have the knowledge of spiritual matters, but they have not. They pervert the doctrine of the Trinity. They divide JESUS and CHRIST.

They pervert the Word of the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They pervert the ways of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They pervert the glorious Gospel of CHRIST. Those who pervert the Gospel of CHRIST will be accursed.

The apostle Paul severely warns those who are turning to a different gospel, and those who are perverting the Gospel of CHRIST. Paul warns,

*"I marvel that ye are so soon removed (turning away) from HIM that called you into the grace of CHRIST unto another gospel: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the Gospel of CHRIST."*

*But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.*

*As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed (eternally condemned)."*

Galatians 1:6-9

## 12.9 THE SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS

This is also one of the worst cults of the 19th century. It was founded by a married woman. Their fundamental doctrine is called 'The Great Controversy'. The name of their doctrine itself reveals that the Seventh-Day Adventists' doctrine is a great controversial one, and that it is a doctrine of devils (demons), and that it is a doctrine of great apostasy. **Apostasy** is the deliberate and permanent rejection of the Christian faith and Christianity. Their doctrine of great apostasy comes through a hypocritical liar, whose conscience has been seared with a hot iron. The devils (demons) expound their doctrines, not directly, but indirectly through such people, especially through such human ministers.

Also the name of their doctrine itself shows that the Seventh-Day Adventists are a great controversial people and they are giving heed to deceiving spirits and they have no faith in the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and they are not the godly people and they are not the saved people and they are not willing to be saved.

Paul, the apostle's predictions of the great apostasy about the latter times are true and he warns,

*"Now the spirit speaketh expressly (clearly), that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing (deceiving) spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron."*

I Timothy 4:1-2

The Seventh-Day Adventists mainly insist on the observance of the Seventh-Day Sabbath. The main positions taken by them are as follows:

1. Sabbath-keeping is commanded in the Decalogue (The Ten Commandments).
2. The Decalogue is binding on all men for all time.
3. The churches have changed a seventh-day for a first-day Sabbath.
4. Sabbath-keeping in addition to faith is essential to salvation.

The Holy Scriptures, the Holy Bible, does not support these things. So, we believe not for the following reasons:

1. Sabbath-keeping was given on no nation other than Israel, to whom it was given as a sign from GOD (Exodus 31:13, 17) and as a memorial of Egyptian bondage and GOD's deliverance (Deuteronomy 5:12-15).
2. In the Decalogue we look for essential things or principles. The Christian 'LORD's Day' upholds the principles of rest and worship. In this the Jewish Sabbath was set aside. The LORD's Day reminds believers of their new creation and deliverance from bondage through the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST on the LORD's Day or the First day.
3. The Decalogue is connected with the Old Covenant, while we are now under the New Covenant (Galatians 3:24-25; 5:13-14; II Corinthians 3:7-11; Hebrews 8:9).

*"In that HE saith, A new covenant, HE hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away."*

Hebrews 8:13

4. In the New Testament, each commandment of the Decalogue is reiterated and expanded in its application, except the fourth relating to Sabbath (Romans 14:1-7; Galatians 4:10-11; Colossians 2:14-17). The Holy Bible gives exhaustive lists of sins, but in not one of them does first-day observance appear.
5. Sabbath-keeping is expressly stated to be not obligatory on Christians.

*"Let no man therefore judge you ... in respect of ... the Sabbath days: Which are a shadow of things to come; ..."*

Colossians 2:16-17

6. When the question of the great commandment in the law was brought before our LORD JESUS CHRIST, HE summarized all the law and the prophets in two commandments. HE said,

*"Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."*

St. Matthew 22:37-40

7. When the subject of law observance was brought before the council at Jerusalem, the only matters stipulated to be observed were: abstaining from food offered to idols and from blood and from things strangled and from fornication (Acts 15:29), and it is clearly stated,

*"It seemed good to the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things."*

Acts 15:28

8. In Galatians, the apostle Paul denounces those Jewish Christians who wanted to supplement the Gospel faith with Jewish legalism. The observance of 'days' is one of the marks of this legalism.

*"Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain."*

Galatians 4:10-11

9. In Colossians, the apostle Paul classes the Sabbath as an integral part of a disappeared law which CHRIST nailed to HIS cross.

*"Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to HIS cross."*

Colossians 2:14

'The handwriting of ordinances' means 'the laws of Old Testament'.

Thus, the Jewish sabbath was neglected by the church in favour of the LORD's Day, and the Old Covenant was superseded by the New Covenant.

Following the death and resurrection of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the Feast of Passover (Leviticus 23:4-5) was superseded by the LORD's Supper (I Corinthians 11:20); the Feast of First-fruits (Leviticus 23:10-14) was superseded by Easter, the festival of the resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Luke 24:5-8); the Feast of Pentecost or the Feast of Weeks (Leviticus 23:15-16) was superseded by the Feast of the descent of the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 2:1-4); and the observance of the old Sabbath day was superseded by the observance of the LORD's Day, the first day of the week in commemoration of the resurrection of CHRIST (St. Matthew 28:1-6).

After HIS resurrection, HE met with HIS disciples on the first day (St. John 20:19); and again a week later, HE met with them on the first day (St. John 20:26). It was on the first day of the week, the day of Pentecost, the HOLY SPIRIT descended to constitute the church. This was the history of the birth of the LORD's Day.

The Seventh-Day Adventists falsely claim that the keepers of the seventh day have 'the seal of GOD' while the observers of the first day have 'the mark of the beast'. Now, at this juncture, it would be reasonable to ask them the following questions concerning their own Sabbath-keeping.

1. Do they keep the whole of the law strictly themselves?
2. Do they stone any who gather sticks on the Sabbath?  
See Numbers 15:32-36.
3. Do they kindle a fire on the Sabbath? See Exodus 35:1-3.
4. Do they observe the other Sabbaths of Israel?
5. Do they observe circumcision which is the other covenant sign between them and GOD? See Genesis 17:10-12.

If not, the curse of GOD will rest on them.

*"For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them."*

Galatians 3:10

### 12.10 THE SALVATION ARMY

This is also one of the cults of the 19th century. It was started to help poor people. 'Saved to Save' is its fundamental doctrine. But they are not the saved. They do not know anything about the saved or anything about salvation or anything about baptism or anything about the Word of GOD. So, they totally deny and neglect baptism.

Its ministers wear military uniforms and they have military ranks. Men and women are working in this army. Men and women have military ranks. When joining in this army, they sign in the 'Salvation Army Articles of War'. Now, GOD wants all of them to be saved and come to the knowledge of the truth about JESUS CHRIST, our Saviour (I Timothy 2:4).

### 12.11 CHRISTADELPHIANISM

This is also one of the worst cults of the 19th century. It denies and rejects most of the fundamentals of the Word of GOD. It denies the Scriptural doctrine of the Holy Trinity. It denies the person of the HOLY SPIRIT. It denies that CHRIST is the eternal GOD. It ridicules the Scriptural doctrine of the substitutionary atonement of CHRIST. It denies the Rapture—the LORD catching HIS people to the FATHER's House. Christadelphians have no assurance of salvation themselves. Beware of Christadelphians.

### 12.12 ARMINIANISM AND CALVINISM

**Arminianism** is a theological doctrine of the Dutch theologian, Jacobus Arminius (1560-1609), and subsequently developed by his followers, which differs widely on the five basic points of **Calvinism**, the theological doctrine of John Calvin, a French Protestant Reformer (1509-1564) which lays special stress on the sovereignty of GOD in the conferring of grace. Calvin says there is no freewill. This is completely wrong. His tenets are causing great confusion. Calvinism's surprising Catholic connection is awful. Now, Arminianism says:

1. Atonement is granted universally.
2. Predestination is not absolute; it is only conditional.

3. Believers have the inherent power to resist the advances of sin, but may fall from grace.
4. For all human efforts the support of divine grace is required, but it need not be irresistible in man.
5. Regeneration is possible with the aid of the HOLY SPIRIT. Collectively the emphasis on these GOD and man relations indicates the need and existence of the freedom of man's will.

The Arminians called themselves Remonstrants and established an independent church and their views were shared by the Methodists. The followers of John Calvin are called Calvinists and they are of different types with different confused doctrines.

The debate regarding Arminianism and Calvinism falls along five simple lines that we call T.U.L.I.P.: Total depravity, Unconditional election, Limited atonement, Irresistible grace and Perseverance of the saints—the acronym TULIP. Let us focus on the Biblical foundations of this acronym.

Man is **totally depraved**. Man's **total depravity** is an ugly concept that divides the church as no other doctrinal teaching in regards to salvation. Man is totally depraved means that every human being is sinful and they are incapable of saving or redeeming themselves. Total depravity means that everyone is by virtue of their own free will and their own power and their own choices, incapable of salvation or redemption. But Arminianism wrongly says that "man is capable". The Holy Bible clearly says that we are dead in trespasses and sins (Ephesians 2:1), and dead people cannot make themselves alive and they have no capacity within themselves to get salvation or redemption.

In the case of **unconditional election**, the Holy Bible teaches that the people who are saved are saved because they were chosen by the will of GOD apart from their own merit. But Arminianism wrongly holds that the people are saved and redeemed by acts of their own will.

Now, **election** is a wonderful doctrine and a marvellous promise. Election is required for anyone to be saved. It is a necessary part of GOD's magnificent salvation plan for mankind. A corollary doctrine



in the Holy Bible of GOD's elective plan is **predestination**. Election ensures success as we bring the Gospel of GOD's salvation. Through the gospel message, GOD will seek and save those whom HE has predestined to be saved. HE will call them; HE will justify them; and HE will glorify them (Romans 8:30). This is the absolute promise of GOD. This is unconditional election. The doctrine of election and predestination is wonderful. The doctrine of election and predestination does not foster fatalism. What a wonderful doctrine it is!

Further, man desperately wants to be sovereign in his own right, which was the nature of Lucifer (Satan, the devil) when he fell into sin. By man's nature it is reprehensible to him to acknowledge the sovereignty of GOD. However, the doctrine of unconditional election, underscores that GOD is sovereign and GOD's will concerning salvation or redemption is completely sovereign.

Again, in the case of **limited atonement** or **particular atonement**, CHRIST's payment at the cross was effective for only those who were elect of GOD. There was no provision made for those who would not believe on HIM. But Arminianism wrongly says that everybody's sins have been paid for, all across the world, whether people believe or not.

Moreover, in the case of **irresistible grace**, GOD irresistibly draws us to HIMSELF and we are saved by the grace of GOD alone. When the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD works on the heart of a sinner, the sinner cannot resist. But Arminianism wrongly says that the sinner can resist.

Furthermore, in the case of **perseverance of the saints**, the last in the five points, is the concept that if we are saved (St. Matthew 24:13), we are going to persevere to glory. Perseverance of the saints is also called **Eternal Security**. But Arminianism does not accept this Eternal Security.

In view of the above facts, anyone can very well understand that Arminianism is not Biblical and it is not Christian.

Arminius was one of the false teachers. And now there are a variety of false teachers. Their sphere—they will be among the people and among the church. Their secrecy—they will secretly bring

in the church destructive heresies. Their sacrilege—they will deny their heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who bought them. Their success—many will follow their pernicious ways. Their sensuality—their habitual sexual immorality and unrestrained debauchery. Their stigma—the way of truth will be blasphemed and slandered and defamed by them. Their ulterior motive—in their greed (an uncontrolled and covetous desire for money and wealth) they will exploit people with false and deceptive words. Their end—they will bring swift destruction on themselves.

*“But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the LORD that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: ...”*

II Peter 2:1-3

### 12.13 FREEMASONRY

Freemasonry is a worldwide secret society or semi-secret society or brotherhood. Masons deny that Freemasonry is a religion. However, they admit that it is religious. Freemasonry source is heathenish source. Freemasonry's rules, symbols, and rites are much the same as the ancient mysteries of paganism. But, some rites are exclusively for professing Christians. Some of the degrees in Masonry are supposed to be the continuation of orders dating back to the old Crusades. There are thirty-three degrees, through each of which a Mason must pass before he attains the secrets of the Mystic Shrine. Masons are sworn to secrecy. Our LORD JESUS has said,

*“Swear not at all; neither by heaven; ... nor by the earth; ...”*

St. Matthew 5:34-35

Masonry claims to fit men for 'The Grand Lodge Above'. But, in the above there is no such lodge. Masons have first of all the social fellowship for which the hearts of all evil men crave (Proverbs 21:10). In the gatherings of their lodge, their social instincts are satisfied.

Charles G. Finney was the greatest evangelist of the first half of the 19th century and he himself was an ex-Mason. In writing against the Freemasonry, he said:

"The fact is that Freemasonry is the most anomalous, absurd and abominable institution that can exist in a Christian country; and is on the face of it, from the fact that it will not allow its principles to be discussed and divulged, a most dangerous thing in human society".

Many churchgoers have become involved in the Masons, and they claim that Masonry is Christian! What a dangerous thing it is!

Freemasonry is incompatible with (not suited for association with) Christianity while it pays lip service to a god; it is not the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST of the Holy Bible.

#### 12.14 HUMANISM—HUMANISTS

Humanism is one of the worst cults. Humanists are the ugly cults. Humanism is contrary to the Word of GOD. It wrongly teaches that there is no life after death. So, humanists wrongly advocate everyone to find the ugly life of the flesh here and now. They wrongly advocate sexual activities and promiscuities for the young, as well as the old. They wrongly advocate free use of pornography and drugs. They wrongly endorse prostitution, homosexuality, lesbianism, miscarriage, and abortion. So, they are hostile to morality, and they are hostile to Christianity.

Humanists are the immoral people. Sexual immorality and all other abuses are their final goal. So, they do not like to retain GOD in their knowledge. They have no fear of GOD. They have no fear about judgment or hell. Hence, GOD gives them up to all forms of uncleanness and its consequences; and HE gives them up to all forms of sexual depravity and its consequences; and HE gives them over to a debased mind to do those things which are not fitting (Romans 1:24-32). So, if they do not repent of their sins, they will be destroyed in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"Whose end is destruction, ... and whose glory is in their shame,  
who mind earthly things."*

### 12.15 THEOSOPHY

Theosophy is one of the worst cults of the 19th century. Theosophists are the mystical cults. It was also founded by a married woman. Their teaching is based on mystical insight. They attempt to get union with GOD through ecstasy and contemplation without reference to the Holy Word of GOD. Theosophy is anti-Scriptural, for the Holy Scriptures clearly teach that:

*"He that is of GOD heareth (hears) GOD's Words: ..."*

St. John 8:47

### 12.16 HINDU-BUDDHIST CULTS

These cults have made inroads among young people in the West. Exposure to demonic influences, promiscuous sex and use of drugs have damaged many lives. The Holy Bible clearly teaches that our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST came to call these sinners to repentance.

*"I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."*

St. Luke 5:32

### 12.17 ROMAN CATHOLICISM—THE CULT OF MARY

*"Howbeit in vain do they worship ME, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men."*

St. Mark 7:7

Most people, including Catholics, do not know that the Catholic religion is the worst cult of Mary. Much of the world's idolatry includes the mother-child cult. In Catholic religion also there is the mother-child cult of Madonna-Child cult. The Catholic religion propagates a false religious system (apostasy) and oppresses GOD's people (the saved). Molestations are not new to Catholic priesthood. People just happen to hear a number of scandals lately.

In Catholic religion, there are multiple gods (now called saints or angels), goddess (Mary) and statues. Roman Catholics have also a Pope god. They have so many Marys and so many apparitions of Marys. Mary worship is their main goddess worship. No one should worship the fake gods or goddesses of Romanism or Roman Catholicism. Everyone should worship the real LORD JESUS, the LORD JESUS

of the Holy Bible, not the one of men's wicked imaginations and counsels and synods.

**The Mass or Eucharist**—the heart of Roman Catholicism, is blasphemous, heretical and damnable. It is filled with heresies, paganism, pantheism, mysticism and deception. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST died only once for our sins. But, HE never dies at all times and at all places as in Roman Catholic Eucharist or Mass.

*“Who (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people’s: for this HE did once, when HE offered up HIMSELF.”*

Hebrews 7:27

*“... But now once in the end of the world hath HE appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of HIMSELF.”*

Hebrews 9:26

Hence, the Roman Catholic Eucharist or Mass is sin.

Roman Catholic church and its auxiliary churches (Latin Catholic church, Syro-Malankara Catholic church or Malankara Syrian Catholic church, etc.), are not Christian. These are no churches. Roman Catholicism is filled with lies and deception. Roman Catholic teaching is a very deceptive teaching.

Modern Protestants have completely forgotten what a Roman Catholic was and what a Roman Catholic is and what a Roman Catholic will be. They wrongly consider Roman Catholic as church. Hence, the modern ideas and beliefs of **Protestantism** tend to coincide with Roman Catholicism. What an awful thing it is!

Most of the modern Pentecostals have also completely forgotten what a Protestant was and what a Protestant is. The modern idea that **Pentecostalism** coincides with Protestantism is wrong because Pentecostalism is part of Protestantism and not a substitute for it.

Everyone should worship the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and HIM only should everyone serve (St. Matthew 4:10). Mary worship and other worships anger GOD (Psalm 16:4). Mary never saves souls (Psalm 116:8; 121:7). Mary is not a co-redeemer; there is no co-redeemer (Acts 4:12). Mary did not remain perpetually a virgin after she had given birth to her first-born Son, JESUS (St. Matthew 1:25).

At this juncture, everyone should remember the mystery about Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the earth (Revelation 17:5). The Holy Bible says she's a mother—the one conceiving, gestating, reproducing, delivering and rearing harlots, whores, sodomites, homosexuals, lesbians and all other abominations. Let him/her who has understanding understand the mystery.

*"The LORD is ... not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."*

II Peter 3:9

## 12.18 CAN CHRISTIANS (THE SAVED) REMAIN CATHOLICS ?

Can Christians or the saved remain Catholics? No. Can Christians or the saved remain in the Roman Catholic church? Not at all.

Its worship is idolatrous. Its dogmas condemn Christians. Its rituals are rooted in paganism. Its authority is not divine. Its doctrines are demonic. Its teachings deny CHRIST. It advocates Mariolatry. Thus, Roman Catholics are not Christians. They are cults. Hence, the Roman Catholic church is one of the worst cults.

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures, does not teach Mariolatry—Mary worship. It presents Mary as blessed. But a Saviour is needed for a sinner. So Mary said,

*"My soul doth magnify the LORD, And my spirit hath rejoiced in GOD my Saviour. For HE hath regarded the low estate of HIS handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed."*

St. Luke 1:46-48

Can Catholics be saved? Of course, they can. But, if they are saved they should leave the Roman Catholic church, for no Christian can pray to Mary; no Christian can pray to the saints; no Christian can pray to the angels; no Christian can partake of the Mass, for CHRIST died once for all; and no Christian can go to a priest to ask forgiveness of sins, for CHRIST is the Forgiver of sins. Hence, no confessional is necessary. The saved should repudiate and separate from Romanism. They should repudiate and separate from Romanists' false teachings.

To repudiate and separate from the false teachings of various 'isms' and 'cults', we need godly wisdom, which is not earthly or sensual or devilish (James 3:15). We need much wisdom, the wisdom from above which is

*"...pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy."*

James 3:17

This is a deep spiritual matter, and spiritual things must be "spiritually discerned" (I Corinthians 2:14). We need the wisdom and grace of the HOLY SPIRIT to repudiate and separate from false teachings of various 'isms' and 'cults'.

At the present time, 'cults' and 'isms' are growing more and more. The Illuminati, a body of Satan worshippers formed in 1776, merged with Freemasonry in 1782. Their common objective is to establish a new world order. So, they work towards one world government, one world religion, and one world economy. Billy Graham was selected for membership by the Illuminati to promote and bring about a global church based in Rome. Most of the Christians, and non-Christians, are totally unaware of Billy Graham's antichrist position. They do not know of his strange, unscriptural false teachings and statements. The kingdom of heaven is not for any preacher, or priest, or pastor, or prophet, or apostle, or evangelist, or self-professed Christian, but "he that doeth the will of MY FATHER which is in heaven" (St. Matthew 7:21) only will enter into the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **12.19 NEW AGE**

The New Age Movement is one of the worst cults. It is connected with a way of life that rejects modern Western values and is based on astrology, eastern mysticism, reincarnation, self-awareness, Western occultism, etc. New Age travellers are some people in Britain who reject the values of modern society and travel from place to place, living in their vehicles.

New Agers reject the glorious salvation by GOD's grace through faith in JESUS CHRIST who paid for all our sins by HIS great suffering and death on the cross (Ephesians 2:8-9; St. John 3:16).

The New Age Movement is preparing people to recognize and receive the coming world ruler, the antichrist. It fits the description of the antichrist's religion—a rejection of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and the declaration that self is GOD. Its philosophy is against all Christian beliefs. New Agers have a pantheistic belief. So, they claim to embrace all beliefs and all religions. Astrology also plays an important role in the New Age beliefs. All these beliefs are against GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. So, these unwanted beliefs are sins.

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST is very eager to save these New Agers also. So, they should repent, turn to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and do works befitting repentance.

*"...They should repent and turn to GOD, and do works meet for repentance."*

Acts 26:20

## 12.20 SCIENTOLOGY

This is one of the worst cults based on the acquisition of a good knowledge of oneself and spiritual fulfilment through courses of study and training. But, no one can attain spiritual fulfilment through these theological courses of study and training; no one can attain spiritual fulfilment based on getting a knowledge of himself/herself or by one's own ability, effort or behaviour.

The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, says,

*"...Ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, which is your reasonable service (sensible worship)."*

Romans 12:1

This shows that Christian life begins with total commitment and irrevocable presentation of our bodies a living sacrifice, holy, and acceptable to GOD, since our bodies have been instruments of sin. Again, we must present not only our bodies but also our soul and spirit a living sacrifice, holy, and acceptable to GOD, to keep our whole spirit, soul, and body blameless, unprovable, irrefragable,



faultless and guiltless, spotless and blemishless at the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...Your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST."*

I Thessalonians 5:23

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST not only saves us through HIM, but HE also gives us the faith to believe on HIM. If we pray to HIM, HE will give us the faith in HIM (JESUS CHRIST) as our Saviour.

*"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of GOD."*

Ephesians 2:8

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST works particularly through the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, to give us that faith. So, give heed to it with all your heart; hear and study the Holy Bible faithfully.

*"So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of GOD."*

Romans 10:17

Scientists are not spiritual people. They are natural people. Now, the natural man (the fleshly man or an unspiritual man) without the Spirit of GOD does not accept the things of the Spirit of GOD, for they are foolishness to him and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned. The natural man does not accept the truth in his heart, since he has no spiritual discernment. He does not have the ability to sift the facts. This spiritual discernment is produced only by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD.

*"But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."*

I Corinthians 2:14

Now, these theological courses of study and training defy the things of the Spirit of GOD. They defy the spiritual things. They defy the spiritual matters. The theological courses of study and training bear bad and bitter fruits. These bad and bitter fruits of humanistic philosophies (ideals) are now being harvested in moral decay, widespread drug abuse, mindless violence, rejection of authority,

disorientation, spiritual vulnerability, etc. These theological courses of study and training by the exposure to demonic influences damage and kill many precious lives.

**Mysticism** is an anti-Scriptural belief. Scientologists are mystics. Scientologists are cult promoters. The cults—Christian Science, Mormonism, JEHOVAH's Witnesses, Scientology, Seventh-Day Adventists, and Theosophy have originated in the United States of America. Mysticism is greatly found in these cults. Thus, the USA is greatly under these cults or sects. A pagan culture is found in the USA. Most of the US people have no real knowledge of the contents of the Holy Bible. A respect for the Holy Bible without a knowledge of or obedience to its divine contents and an interest in Christianity without a holiness to suggest it are some of the devastating things in the USA. Humanists, homosexuals, lesbians, new age enthusiasts, pro-choice abortionists and such other aberrant groups are growing more and more in the USA. Thus, the inscription on every US Coin, '**In GOD We Trust**' has no reality, and it is fading fast. Atheists are growing more and more in the UK. What a sorrowful thing it is!

**Occultism** is the practice of knowing and using evil spirits. Witchcraft, divination, and sorcery are types of occultism. These evil practices are strongly forbidden by the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures. See Deuteronomy 18:10-12; II Chronicles 33:1-6. The USA is also under this occultism. The US people are interested in the occult practices. But, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST hates these sinful practices. No people should follow occultism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

Now, everyone must understand these cults and cultists. All people must safeguard themselves from these cults and cultists, by the grace and guidance of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. When we beg HIM to forgive us, we glorify HIM, and we will be safeguarded. When we ask and believe, we glorify HIM, and we will be safeguarded.

Only the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, teaches us the Scriptural belief. It teaches us that he who is of GOD hears GOD's Words.

*"He that is of GOD heareth GOD's Words: ..."*

St. John 8:47

Further, the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures, says,

*"...They have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, ..."*

II Peter 2:20

Now, by acquiring a knowledge of yourself, you cannot escape the pollutions of the world. But, only through the knowledge of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, you can escape the pollutions of the world. Thus, Scientologists and other cults cannot escape the pollutions or sins of the world by getting a knowledge of themselves. Scientologists and other cults will face destruction for lacking in the true spiritual wisdom. Because they have rejected the knowledge of the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, HE will also reject them.

*"MY people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, ..."*

Hosea 4:6

At this juncture, I boldly give you the same warning of the apostle John, the personal follower and witness of CHRIST. He warns,

*"We are of GOD: he that knoweth (knows) GOD heareth (hears) us; he that is not of GOD heareth not (does not hear) us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."*

I John 4:6

'The spirit of error' is 'the spirit of deceit or the spirit of falsehood'.

## 12.21 THE CHRISTIAN MIND SHOULD NEVER BE SEDUCED

Various isms seduce the Christian mind. They affect us individually as believers and corporately as the church.

**In heathenism**, some people have found their main root in the worship of dead ancestors; some people have found their main root in the deification of animals—cats, rats, bulls, cows, lions, jackals, crocodiles, snakes, and the rest; and some people have found their main root in the belief in a vast world of evil spirits. The evil spirits show mysterious dreams; the evil spirits suggest mysterious experiences; the evil spirits dwell in trees or animals or human beings; and the evil spirits move in springs and rivers and wind and storm. The

heathens should believe the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is the Saviour; HE is the Redeemer; HE is the Mediator; HE is the Way, the Truth and the Life. No Christians should follow heathenism and their mind should never be trapped into seduction.

**Anti-authoritarianism** wholly usurps the authority of GOD. Many people, especially many church leaders and their believers are influenced by anti-authoritarianism. They reject the authority of the church; they refuse to submit to the authority of the Word of GOD; they refuse to submit to GOD; they have a self-centred, rather than a Christ-centred, concept of the gospel; they lack humility in the presence of GOD; they have a reduced concept of their own sinfulness; they have a reduced concept of salvation, thinking GOD's grace is cheap and easy; and they have a reduced concept of GOD, the holiness of GOD. Anti-authoritarianism is the doctrine of the devil. No Christians should follow anti-authoritarianism and their mind should never be trapped into seduction.

**Antinomianism** is also the doctrine of the devils. The logic of antinomianism is:

"If we are saved by grace through faith, and if GOD no longer takes our sin into account, and sin can no longer condemn us to hell, then it doesn't matter if we sin". The Holy Bible clearly says:

*"...The soul that sinneth (sins), it shall die."*

Ezekiel 18:4

*"For the wages of sin is death; ..."*

Romans 6:23

'Death' means 'the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur'.

No Christians should follow antinomianism and their mind should never be trapped into seduction.

**Evolutionism** throws GOD completely out. It has no basic principles. Evolutionism, the atheistic theory has been completely disproved. No Christians should follow evolutionism and their mind should never be trapped into seduction.

**Existentialism** discards the anchor of GOD's Word. It seeks mystical things. It does not seek the factual things. No absolute truth is

found in existentialism. No Christians should follow existentialism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Faithism** is putting faith in our faith. It does not see merit in faith, the gift of GOD. But, it sees merit in human endeavour. No Christians should follow faithism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Hedonism** is the belief that worldly or fleshly pleasure is the most important thing in life. In hedonism, sinful lusts dictate. No Christians should follow hedonism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Legalism** is despising the gift of GOD's grace. It teaches about human effort. This is common to all other religions and cults. It does not teach about the gift of GOD's grace. Only by the gift of GOD's grace, anyone can be saved. Legalists observe the letter of the law rather than the Spirit. No Christians should follow legalism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Materialism** emphasizes on material objects and needs with little or no interest in spiritual things. It is pushing CHRIST fully out from our lives. No Christians should follow materialism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Mysticism** prefers anti-Scriptural inner impressions. It is fully against GOD's Holy Word. No Christians should follow mysticism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Nihilism** is total rejection of moral judgments or value statements. In Latin, 'nihil' means 'nothing'. Nihilism as well as **postmodernism** desperately says, 'there is nothing there to know—no meaning, no purpose, no reality'. No Christians should follow nihilism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Pantheism** is the worship or toleration of worship of all gods of various cults. Its basic concept is everything is god; god is everything. All New Age is pantheistic or monistic. No Christians should follow pantheism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Relativism** says: there is no absolute truth; there is no absolute right or wrong; and there is no absolute reality. It is fully against the

Holy Word of GOD. No Christians should follow relativism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Secular humanism** is living in the absence of GOD. It exclusively concerns with human interests and human activities. The human being, not GOD, is the centre and measure of all things. No Christians should follow secular humanism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Subjectivism** is seeking truth in one's own mind and feelings. The difference between objective and subjective is the difference between facts and feelings. The Holy Bible says,

*"Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding."*

Proverbs 3:5

No Christians should follow subjectivism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Traditionalism** is covering completely the Word of GOD with human ideas. It is one of the original enemies of GOD's truth. So, everyone should learn to distinguish between harmful and harmless traditions. We should be CHRIST-centred in our understanding. No Christians should follow traditionalism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Pelagianism** is the theological doctrine of a fifth century British monk who denied Original Sin and the doctrine of divine grace. What a dangerous and untruthful doctrine it is! No Christians should follow Pelagianism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

**Word of Faith Teaching** is twisting the Word of GOD. Here we confront mysticism, faithism, New Age pantheism and visualization, subjectivism, hedonism, materialism, existentialism, legalism, anti-intellectualism, emotionalism, relativism, heathenism, anti-authoritarianism, evolutionism, antinomianism, traditionalism, nihilism, occultism and Christianized secular humanism, all merged together and masquerading as true Christianity. This teaching is fooling evangelical churches, Charismatic churches and so many other churches. Many televangelists are also fooling many people by

this teaching. No Christians should follow this false teaching and their mind should not be trapped into seduction. The Christian mind should never be seduced.

No one should believe the ultimate cosmic consciousness of monism. No one should believe the mystical god-within of pantheism and the New Age. No one should believe the fear-generating spirit gods of animism. No one should believe the man-made gods of idolaters. No one should believe the heathen gods. No one should believe the god of deism and Islam. Everyone should believe the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is the ONLY GOD of Christianity. HE is the Light of the World and apart from HIM all people walk in darkness, sinful darkness. No one should believe any other god of any other religion.

**Shamanism** is a religion dominated by shamans, based essentially on magic, spiritism and sorcery. No Christians should follow shamanism and their mind should not be trapped into seduction.

#### 12.22 APOSTOLIC AND EVANGELICAL AND CHARISMATIC AND PENTECOSTAL AND PROTESTANT CHAOS

**Apostolic** teachings relating to the Roman Catholic church are filled with **apostasies** and blasphemies and this church is an **apostate** church of this world, filled with **apostates**.

**Evangelicals** are of three types: Evangelical Protestants, Evangelical Catholics and Evangelical Orthodox. These Evangelicals do not have a valid conversion or born-again experience. So, no one should follow these evangelicals.

**Charismatic Movement** is a lying movement that began in the United States in 1950s. Charismatics exercise **glossolalia**. In Greek, glossa means tongue; lalia means speech. They especially stress that all people speak in tongues in times of prayer. Their speaking in tongues is full of chaos and folly and pretence. Many so-called Pentecostals are also stressing all people should speak in tongues in times of prayer. Their speaking in tongues is also full of chaos and folly and pretence. Some Protestants are also stressing people speak in tongues in times of prayer. Their speaking in tongues is also full of

chaos and folly and pretence. They even stress small children speak in tongues in times of prayer. What a sorrowful thing it is!

In the United States in 1995, the **Pensacola** revival, the counterfeit revival began with very strange things—the preacher couldn't walk, the preacher fell to the floor, the preacher knocking people out, unscriptural music, orchestrated meetings to heighten emotions, bewitching, kids couldn't stop shaking even when they go to school, people falling out while simply introducing themselves, congregation being hypnotized by being told to keep looking at a banner (a big wavy flag), etc. None of this is found in the Holy Bible, the Good Book. It is 'like a false story straight out of the Holy Bible'. So, beware of this devilish parties (St. Matthew 7:15).

In the first century, on the day of Pentecost (on the 50th day of our LORD's resurrection), about 120 saved people (not the unsaved) including men and women, assembled together with one accord in prayer and supplication to be anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or to be baptized by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (Acts 1:13-15). Their anointing by the HOLY SPIRIT is clearly explained in Acts 2:1-4.

When they were anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT, they spoke to GOD in tongues of the wonderful works of GOD (Acts 2:11); they spoke to GOD in tongues of the mysteries of GOD (I Corinthians 14:2); they spoke to GOD in tongues for their edification (I Corinthians 14:4); and they spoke to GOD in tongues for a sign, not to those who believe but to those who are unbelievers (I Corinthians 14:22). All things were done for edification (I Corinthians 14:26). All things were done decently and in order (I Corinthians 14:40).

On the day of Pentecost, when they were anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT, they never thudded their bodies to the floor; they never barked like dogs; they never oinked like pigs; they never laughed so hard by laughing their heads off; they never rolled around on the floor senselessly without knowing their nakedness; they never acted like the drunkards without any understanding; they never jumped up and down to some heart throbbing music. No seductive music or seductive lights seduced their mind. No women lifted up (upraised) their hands to showing their awkwardness (I Timothy 2:8).



Further, they never attempted to get rid of the evil spirit by knocking people down with a touch or push or press. They never told any false prophecy. They never did any kind of counterfeit miracles and signs. They never did any lying wonders (II Thessalonians 2:9). They never cheated anybody by calling some names of the known people. They never asked the people to practise or to speak in cheating tongues or false tongues like, "Thu-Thu-Thu; The-The-The". They never lied or cheated the people by such things. Charismatics and many of the so-called Pentecostals and some Protestants as well are indulging in these abominable things. Our GOD is not the author of confusion but of peace (I Corinthians 14:33) and these things are certainly confusions and these things are certainly lunacies.

What was our LORD JESUS doing while HE was in this world? HE was preaching and teaching the kingdom of GOD and doing good works. HE asked HIS followers to wait and pray for the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 1:4-5). What was Paul doing? He was preaching the Gospel of GOD's salvation and asked the people to get anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (Acts 19:2).

Hell is not a laughing matter. What about Charismatic preachers and many so-called Pentecostal preachers and some Protestant preachers? Falling down in the pulpit, weeping and wailing falsely, laughing their heads off, slaying in the evil spirit—knocking people down with a touch or push or press, prophesying about worldly things, doing lying wonders and speaking in false tongues while nobody knows for what purpose they are doing such things. We certainly should not be laughing. The SPIRIT of CHRIST would not make us laugh.

Charismatics are not the saved people. Hence, Charismatic Christians are not Christians. Such Catholics, Evangelicals, Pentecostals and Protestants are also not the saved people. So, they are also not Christians. But if anyone seems to be contentious about these things, I want you to remember I Corinthians 11:16 where apostle Paul says,

*"But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of GOD."*

I Corinthians 11:16

Now, at this juncture, I want you to remember the Word of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE says,

**“...He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.”**

St. Matthew 19:12

## **1 3 . THE DEITY AND HUMANITY OF JESUS CHRIST**

The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures teaches JESUS CHRIST as having divine nature and human nature. Many false teachers (modern theologians and liberals) preach heresies concerning the deity and humanity of JESUS CHRIST. Liberals are liberal Protestants (Church of England, Episcopalians, Orthodox, Lutherans, Baptists, Methodists, Presbyterians, Pentecostals, Assemblies of GOD, Church of GOD, the Pentecostal Mission, and a host of others), together with Roman Catholics, Charismatics, Ecumenicals, Evangelicals, Promise keepers, etc.

'Cults' and 'isms' teach heresies concerning the deity and humanity of JESUS CHRIST. So we need to know the teachings of the Holy Scriptures on the deity and humanity of JESUS CHRIST.

### **13.1 THE DEITY OF JESUS CHRIST**

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST exists from the beginning as the WORD (St. John 1:1). HE is the TRUE GOD and eternal life (I John 5:20). HE is the great GOD (Titus 2:13). HE is the only wise GOD (Jude 25). HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD (Ephesians 4:6). HE is the living GOD, and the eternal KING (Jeremiah 10:10). HE is the blessed and the only Potentate, the KING of kings and LORD of lords, who alone has immortality, dwelling in the light, which no man can approach unto (I Timothy 6:15-16).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is GOD manifested in the flesh (I Timothy 3:16; Colossians 2:9). HE is GOD, the SON (Hebrews 1:8, 10). HE claims power (authority) in heaven and in earth (St. Matthew 28:18). HE claims power (authority) over all flesh (St. John 17:2). HE claims power (authority) over all nature (St. Matthew 8:23-27). HE

claims authority and power over all devils (St. Luke 4:35-41). HE claims Head over the church (Ephesians 5:23). HE claims Head over every principality (authority) and power (Colossians 2:10). HE has power (authority) to execute judgment (St. John 5:27-29).

Our GOD, JESUS CHRIST is called the LORD (Acts 9:17; Romans 10:13). HE is called JEHOVAH (Exodus 6:3). HE is called the LORD JEHOVAH (Isaiah 12:2). HE is called CHRIST (MESSIAH), the SAVIOUR of the world (St. John 4:42). HE is called the REDEEMER of the world (Isaiah 49:26).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is called Alpha and Omega (Revelation 1:8, 11). HE is called the First and the Last (Revelation 1:11, 17). HE is called the Beginning and the End (Revelation 22:13).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is called Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty GOD, the Everlasting FATHER, and the Prince of Peace (Isaiah 9:6). HE is called EMMANUEL (IMMANUEL)—GOD with us (St. Matthew 1:23; Isaiah 7:14).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST carried out divine works—the creation of the worlds (Hebrews 1:2), the creation of the angels, the human beings, etc. (Colossians 1:16-17). HE is the upholder of the universe (Hebrews 1:3).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST forgives our sins, which only GOD could do (St. Mark 2:5-7). HE saves us from sins, which only GOD could do (Acts 4:12). HE redeems us from sins, which only GOD could do (I Peter 1:18-19). HE cleanses (purifies) us from all sin by HIS most holy blood (I John 1:7). HE cleanses us from all unrighteousness (I John 1:9). HE washes us, HE sanctifies us and HE justifies us in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 6:11).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the SON OF GOD, acknowledged by GOD, the FATHER (Acts 13:33). HE is the SON OF GOD, acknowledged by the angels (St. Luke 2:10-13). HE is the SON OF GOD, acknowledged by the devils (St. Matthew 8:29). HE is the SON OF GOD, acknowledged by the apostles (men) (St. Matthew 16:15-17; Acts 4:33). HE is the SON OF GOD, acknowledged by HIMSELF (St. John 5:25).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST accepted worship from angels (Hebrews 1:6). HE accepted worship from men (St. Matthew 8:2). HE accepted worship from all creatures (Revelation 5:13). Likewise, HE accepts worship from angels; HE accepts worship from men; HE accepts worship from all creatures. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST claims HIMSELF to be GOD (St. John 10:30). HE possesses all the attributes of GOD (St. John 14:9). HE is 'I AM' which can be claimed only by GOD (St. John 8:58).

Baptism is administered in HIS name (in the name of the SON) also (St. Matthew 28:19). Benediction is given in HIS name (in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST) also (II Corinthians 13:14).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has divine attributes and moral attributes of GOD. HE is omniscient (St. John 16:30). HE is omnipresent (I Corinthians 1:2). HE is omnipotent (Romans 4:17). HE is Sovereign (Philippians 2:9-11). HE is holy (St. Luke 4:34). HE is sinless and guileless (I Peter 2:22). HE is righteous (I John 2:1). HE is faithful (Revelation 1:5). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 13.2 THE HUMANITY OF JESUS CHRIST

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had human ancestry (St. Luke 3:23-38; St. Matthew 1:1-17). HE had a human birth (Galatians 4:4). HE was the WORD manifested in the flesh (St. John 1:14). HE was given human names, viz., JESUS and CHRIST JESUS (St. Matthew 1:21; I Timothy 2:5). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was the holy child of the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Matthew 1:18; Acts 4:30). HE was conceived by the HOLY SPIRIT and born of the Virgin Mary. The Virgin Birth of JESUS CHRIST is a miraculous thing.

*"Therefore the LORD HIMSELF shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call HIS name IMMANUEL."*

Isaiah 7:14

Hence, according to HIS human nature, HE had a mother. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the TRUE GOD and eternal life (I John 5:20). HE is the Creator and Sustainer of all things (Hebrews 1:2-3; Colossians 1:16-17). Hence, according to HIS divine nature, HE had no mother.

But, in order to save us from our sins, HE had to become a true and holy man, and to suffer all the temptations of man, though HE was sinless (St. John 8:46; I Peter 2:22); HE had to suffer all the punishment that we deserve; HE had to pay for our sins with HIS holy, precious, and divine blood. In order to do this, HE had to become a man. To become a man, HE had to have a mother.

Now, to be born as a true and holy man without sin and to live a perfectly holy life, HE had to be conceived by the HOLY SPIRIT. So our LORD JESUS CHRIST was conceived by the HOLY SPIRIT and born in this world. Then HE died as our substitute. There was no other way by which we could be saved from the power of sin, death, and the devil. There was no other way by which we could be saved from hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST was called as man (St. John 8:40; Acts 2:22; Philippians 2:8). The SON OF MAN is the title by which our LORD JESUS CHRIST most often referred to HIMSELF (St. Matthew 8:20). HE is the last Adam from heaven and HE became a Life-giving Spirit and HE is the spiritual life (I Corinthians 15:45-46). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST possessed a physical nature (Hebrews 2:14-15; St. John 1:14; I Timothy 3:16). HE had a body (St. John 1:14). HE had a soul (St. Matthew 26:38). HE had a spirit (St. Luke 23:46).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST lived as a man. HE was subject to the laws of human development. HE grew (St. Luke 2:40). HE asked questions (St. Luke 2:46). HE possessed wisdom (St. Luke 2:52). HE encountered temptations (St. Matthew 4:1-11). HE humbled HIMSELF and became obedient to the point of death, even the death on the cross (Philippians 2:8).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had the limitations and infirmities of normal human beings. HE slept (St. Matthew 8:24). HE was hungry (St. Matthew 4:2). HE felt thirsty (St. John 4:7). HE was wearied from HIS journey (St. John 4:6). HE wanted a quiet place to take some rest (St. Mark 6:31).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST had the instincts of human beings. HE loved (St. John 11:36). HE had compassion (St. Matthew 9:36). HE was angry and grieved (St. Mark 3:4-5). HE groaned (St. John 11:38). HE wept (St. John 11:35). HE prayed (St. Matthew 14:23).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST suffered like men. HE suffered on the cross like men (Hebrews 2:18; Isaiah 53:3, 5). HE died like men (Hebrews 2:9). HE was buried like men (St. John 19:38-42). HE was resurrected and still possesses a glorious body (St. Luke 24:39).

So, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST alone is worthy of our adoration. We should worship and adore HIM only. We should love HIM with all our heart, with all our soul and with our entire mind. We should live for HIM only. We should worship and serve HIM sincerely with gladness, since HE is the LORD from heaven (I Corinthians 15:47). And no one should consider HIM a man. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **14. CHRISTIANITY IS THE ONLY TRUE RELIGION**

In this world, there are so many religions and religious groups. Among these, some religions are godless religions, not respecting or believing in GOD. Hence in these religions, there is no place for true godliness and true holiness; and there is no place for ONE GODHEAD or ONE GOD. In some religions, polytheism, the belief that there are so many gods, prevails. Thus in these religions also, there is no place for true godliness and true holiness; and there is no place for ONE GODHEAD or ONE GOD. Again, some religions say about monotheism, the belief that there is one GOD only. In these monotheistic religions also, there is no place for true godliness and true holiness. These monotheistic religions do not fulfil the required divine qualities of the ONE GODHEAD or the TRUE GODHEAD or the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD; the ONLY SUPREME BEING, perfect in power, wisdom and goodness, the Creator and the Ruler of the entire universe, and the eternal GOD, without beginning and without end. In Christianity or in the Christian religion only we see the true godliness and the true holiness and the TRUE GODHEAD and the ONE GODHEAD or the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and the ONLY DIVINE GOD having the required divine qualities of GOD (Psalm 90:2; Leviticus 11:44). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, the only true religion of GOD must be a system of religious belief in the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY

TRUE GOD; and it must be a system of religious worship of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Most religions teach that man can be saved and they can have eternal life by being good and by attending religious ceremonies and services. On the other hand, Christianity teaches that all people are sinners and they cannot do anything to save themselves, and that the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD became a man and came into the world in the name of JESUS CHRIST, and HE took our place as our substitute, and died on the cross to pay for our sins with HIS own blood. The most holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST purifies us from all sin.

*"...The blood of JESUS CHRIST ... cleanseth us from all sin."*

I John 1:7

The LORD JESUS CHRIST died and HE was buried, but HE rose from the dead on the third day. Christians put their trust in JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY SAVIOUR and the ONLY REDEEMER and the ONLY TRUE GOD, for forgiveness of sins, for salvation from sins, for redemption from sins, for godliness and holiness and holy life, for the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, for spiritual growth and for everlasting life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Christians obey the commands of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I John 5:3) and live a holy life, out of their love and appreciation for what the LORD JESUS CHRIST has done for them. As the LORD JESUS CHRIST said, if you love ME, you will keep (obey) MY commandments.

*"If ye love ME, keep MY commandments."*

St. John 14:15

Again, belief in the existence of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is clearly revealed in Christianity. Belief in the creation of the entire universe by the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is also clearly revealed in Christianity. Belief in the creation of human beings with soul in a spiritual nature by the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is also clearly revealed in Christianity. Belief in the existence of this soul continually after the death of the body is clearly revealed in Christianity. The divine qualities of a divine religion are clearly revealed in

Christianity. Hence, Christianity is the only divine religion of the ONLY DIVINE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and it is the only true religion of the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Glory be to GOD!

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST remains constant and always present with HIS people. So, we can ever live with HIM. HE intends HIS people to worship HIM according to HIS will and not according to their own whims (St. Matthew 15:7-9). Their godliness (religion) should match the will of GOD. It should conform to the will and nature of GOD. No one should make godliness suit to his/her own needs or expectations (I Timothy 3:16; James 1:26-27).

And everyone should be a true Christian; and everyone should be very religious; and everyone should be pious and godly to enter into the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. Pure religion and undefiled before GOD and the FATHER is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world."*

James 1:26-27

Without JESUS no one could be religious or pious or godly. Our LORD JESUS has said,

**"...Without ME ye can do nothing."**

St. John 15:5

#### 14.1 TRIALS, TRIBULATIONS AND SUFFERINGS

**Those who persecute JESUS' followers, persecute JESUS HIMSELF (Acts 9:4-5).** HE always feels sympathetic towards us when we suffer (Hebrews 4:15). In this world GOD's people will have tribulations. Our LORD JESUS has said,

*"In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world."*

St. John 16:33

*"Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted (tribulation), and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for MY name's sake."*

St. Matthew 24:9



*"If the world hate you, ye know that it hated ME before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you."*

St. John 15:18-19

The believers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST must go through many tribulations to enter into the kingdom of GOD.

*"We must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of GOD."*

Acts 14:22

Our LORD GOD hears the cries of the afflicted (Psalm 22:24; Hebrews 5:7). The people of the LORD are appointed to afflictions—hardships, trials, tribulations, sufferings, etc.

*"That no man should be moved (shaken) by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto."*

I Thessalonians 3:3

It has been granted for HIS people on behalf of CHRIST not only to believe on HIM, but also to suffer for HIS sake (Philippians 1:29). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that we should follow HIS steps (I Peter 2:21). HE committed no sin and no guile was found in HIS mouth (I Peter 2:22). When HE was reviled, HE did not revile in turn; when HE suffered, HE did not threaten, but committed HIMSELF to HIM who judges righteously (I Peter 2:23).

If we suffer for righteousness' sake, we are blessed (I Peter 3:14). It is the will of GOD to suffer for doing good as a testimony to others (I Peter 3:17). Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the righteous also suffered for us, the unrighteous on the cross (I Peter 3:18). Since CHRIST suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves with the same mind, because he who has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin (I Peter 4:1). And he should not live the rest of his earthly life in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of GOD (I Peter 4:2).

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST calls us to HIS eternal glory and after we have suffered a while, HE will HIMSELF restore us and make us perfect, establish, strengthen and settle us (I Peter 5:10). Those

who suffer according to the will of GOD should commit their souls to their faithful Creator and continue to do good (I Peter 4:19).

Do not be surprised at the fiery trial we are suffering, as though some strange thing is happening to us. But rejoice since we are going to partake of CHRIST's sufferings, and be glad with exceeding joy when HIS glory is revealed. If we are reproached because of the name of CHRIST, we are blessed, for the Spirit of glory and of GOD rests upon us. On their part HE is blasphemed, but on our part HE is glorified. But let none of us suffer as a murderer or thief or an evildoer or even as a meddler (I Peter 4:12-15).

However, if we suffer as Christians, let us not be ashamed, but let us glorify GOD in this matter.

*"Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify GOD on this behalf."*

I Peter 4:16

If indeed we suffer with HIM, then we will also be glorified together (Romans 8:17). If we endure, we will also reign with HIM. If we deny HIM, HE also will deny us (II Timothy 2:12).

A Christian facing trials must have a joyous attitude (James 1:2), implicit faith (James 1:3), great endurance with an understanding mind (James 1:3), a submissive will for his/her endurance has its perfect work (James 1:4), divine wisdom (James 1:5), asking GOD with confident trust and with a stable believing heart in HIM (James 1:6-8), and humility with a very humble spirit that trusts GOD's provisions and HIS heavenly reward (James 1:9-12).

Now, the heart of endurance is prayer. Prayer is the heart of enduring trials. Prayer is the heart of getting relief from trials. If we want to endure trials or get relief from trials, we must depend on our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who is the only divine source. Christians who successfully endure trials are truly happy, filled with inner joy in their hearts. Happiness comes through victory over trials.

*"Behold, we count them happy which endure. ..."*

James 5:11

'Happy' means 'blessed' or 'satisfied' or 'filled with inner joy'.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST warns of the coming persecutions.

*"But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for MY sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your FATHER which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for MY name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved."*

St. Matthew 10:17-22

Only those who are truly saved will endure to the end. They will be patient in tribulations (Romans 12:12). They will glory in tribulations, knowing that tribulation produces patience and patience produces experience and experience produces hope and hope never disappoints, because the love of GOD has been poured out in their hearts by the HOLY SPIRIT who was given to them (Romans 5:3-5).

**Purposes of Suffering** are to make us like JESUS CHRIST (Philippians 3:10); to glorify GOD (St. John 9:1-3); to refine our lives (I Peter 1:6-7); to rebuke our sin (I Peter 2:20; Hebrews 12:5-9); to silence Satan, the devil (Job 1:9-12); and to produce spiritual fruits (I Peter 5:10).

The believers of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST should **suffer for the sake of righteousness**. Joseph, Job, Jeremiah and Paul suffered for the sake of righteousness.

**The sufferings of Joseph:** Joseph was hated by his brothers (Genesis 37:4-8); he was cast into a waterless pit (Genesis 37:24); his brothers conspired against him to kill him (Genesis 37:17-20); he was sold into slavery (Genesis 37:28); he was enticed by Potiphar's wife (Genesis 39:7-10); and was falsely accused and rigorously imprisoned for no fault of his (Genesis 39:11-20; Psalm 105:17-18).

**The sufferings of Job:** Job's 500 yoke of oxen and 500 female donkeys were stolen and all but one of his farm servants were killed (Job 1:3, 14-15); his 7000 sheep and all but one of his herdsmen were burned by a fire (Job 1:3, 16); his 3000 camels were stolen and all

but one of his servants were killed (Job 1:3, 17); his seven sons and three daughters and all but one of his household servants died in a windstorm (Job 1:2, 18-19); and he was terribly struck with very painful boils from the soles of his feet to the top of his head (Job 2:7-8). Suffering led Job to faith—holding on to faith.

**The sufferings of Jeremiah:** Jeremiah was treacherously persecuted by his own family (Jeremiah 12:6); he was plotted against to be killed by his native villagers (Jeremiah 11:18-23); he was rejected and ridiculed and beaten by the false religious priests (Jeremiah 20:1-9); he was arrested, beaten, falsely accused of treason and rigorously imprisoned in a dungeon (Jeremiah 37:11-16) and he was imprisoned in a cistern having no water but only mire (mud) in it, to sink into the mire (Jeremiah 38:1-13). Loneliness was a characteristic of Jeremiah's life. His life and ministry were shaped by suffering.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST wants and expects steadfast faith and obedience from HIS people. Jeremiah's steadfast faith and obedience amidst his mental and physical agony remain a great example to GOD's people. However, even in the state of terrible agony, he never uttered any blame against GOD. But he faithfully wrote, HIS mercies renew every morning and HIS faithfulness is great (Lamentations 3:22-23). He also wrote,

*"The LORD is my portion, saith my soul; therefore will I hope in HIM."*

Lamentations 3:24

**The sufferings of Paul:** Paul's enemies conspired against him to kill him (Acts 25:3); he was stoned and left for dead (Acts 14:19); he was beaten and jailed at Philippi (Acts 16:19-24); he was ridiculed (Acts 26:24); he was falsely accused (Acts 21:21); he was bitten by a serpent (Acts 28:3-4); and he was forsaken by all (II Timothy 4:16). The sufferings of Paul are clearly explained in II Corinthians 11:23-28.

Paul sacrificed his name and fame and life and surrendered himself at the most holy feet of our LORD JESUS, to use him according to HIS divine will (Acts 9:6; Philippians 3:12-14). He responded to HIM without consulting anyone (Galatians 1:16). Our LORD JESUS was with him in all occasions, amidst darkness and storms in the sea and in great dangers (Acts 27:9-44). If you are ready to sacrifice and

surrender yourself like Paul, our LORD JESUS will use you according to HIS divine will. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The world was not worthy to GOD's people. The world will not be worthy to GOD's people.

*"And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth."*

Hebrews 11:36-38

Apostle Paul tells us about one of his prolonged sufferings: a chronic infirmity (a continuous physical affliction), which he refers to as his thorn in the flesh (II Corinthians 12:7). It was painful ("thorn") and shameful to him. But he has not only endured it but has also been able to encourage us to look at pain, trials and suffering from GOD's point of view instead of man's—from a divine perspective instead of a human one. This is evident from his following verse:

*"Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for CHRIST's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong."*

II Corinthians 12:10

If we go on in spite of our pain and suffering, we grow stronger. If we give in and give up we lose. In short, "No pain, no gain; No pain, no growth; No pain, no blessing." Sufferings lead us to divine growth in GOD (II Corinthians 12:10) and eternal reigning with CHRIST (II Timothy 2:12). But this can only be accomplished if we listen to our LORD's Word,

*"MY grace is sufficient for thee: for MY strength is made perfect in weakness."*

II Corinthians 12:9

Suffering produces brokenness. Brokenness removes resentment and rebellion against GOD and man. Brokenness accepts criticism sweetly, without retaliation or resentment. All self-justification and

self-defence, all discontent and irritation with circumstances of sufferings, reveal unbrokenness. Brokenness saves us (Psalm 34:18).

Trials teach us submission to our LORD JESUS CHRIST and deliver us from our own ways and thoughts. GOD's way of developing patience in us is trials (James 1:2-4).

If we fight against the trials, refusing to give us in the hands of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Peter 5:6), we will be spiritually depleted, mentally depressed and physically weary. If we cast all our cares upon GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for HE cares for us (I Peter 5:7), we will emerge from the trials victoriously, spiritually stimulated, mentally alert and physically sound.

To have peace and joy in times of trials, we must trust in the LORD and keep our mind on the LORD (Isaiah 26:3); we must keep in touch with GOD by prayer and supplication (Philippians 4:6-7); we must meditate upon the Word of GOD (St. John 16:33; Romans 15:4; I Peter 1:6-8) and we must meditate upon CHRIST's sufferings on the cross (Colossians 1:20); we must give ourselves to GOD's will (Hebrews 12:11); and we must believe that the LORD will sustain us (Psalm 3:5).

**The sufferings through fasting and prayer:** Fasting without prayer is not a fasting. Abstaining for a certain period of time from some important or necessary activity in one's life is fasting. Everyone must spend that time in prayer before GOD. The fastings of Moses, Elijah, Daniel, Ezra, Nehemiah and Paul are a few of the examples of biblical fasting.

During fastings, everyone should spend his/her fasting period in continuous prayer without feeling sleepy but being wakeful and watchful, refraining from food, and in total avoidance of sex and sex-exciting thoughts and they should be concentrating and meditating constantly on spiritual aspirations.

To know the will of GOD, prayer and fasting are very essential. To know the will of GOD, submission to the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is very essential. To know the will of GOD, counsels are also very essential. To know the will of GOD, the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD is also very essential.

Now, our light and momentary afflictions and troubles are achieving for us an eternal glory (Romans 8:18).

*“For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.”*

II Corinthians 4:17

No one will separate us from the love of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HIS people ask,

**“Who shall separate us from the love of CHRIST? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?”**

Romans 8:35

Nothing can separate us from the love of GOD, which is in CHRIST JESUS our LORD (Romans 8:36-39).

*This page has been intentionally left blank*



## THE LAST DAY

**“Alas for the day! for the day of the LORD is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall it come.”**

Joel 1:15

**THE LAST DAY** will bring very great and terrible disasters of various kinds. The earth and the heavenly bodies will go into destruction. The Last Day will be the great and the terrible day of the LORD. It will be the great and the terrible day of GOD's wrath. It will be the great and the terrible day of destruction from the Almighty GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **Unless saved, no one can escape from the Last Day. Only the saved people with a prayerful life will escape from the Last Day (I Peter 4:7).** The Last Day or the Day of the LORD (Isaiah 13:6, 9) refers to CHRIST's coming to consummate the history of mankind and the history of the universe (II Peter 3:10); it also refers to the final day of CHRIST's coming to punish HIS enemies (the sinners) in hell-fire (St. Matthew 25:41) and to grant security, rest and blessing to HIS people (the saved) in heaven, the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 25:34); and it refers to CHRIST's coming to fulfil all HIS secrets (Daniel 2:47) and for HIS final triumph over all things by HIS supreme sovereignty (Deuteronomy 10:17; I Timothy 6:15).

### 1. 66 EVENTS

#### 1. SOME SIGNS OF THE COMING OF THE LAST DAY

After the Great Tribulation and after the Millennium of CHRIST (the thousand years rule of CHRIST), the brightness of the sun and

the moon and the stars will be dimmed. There will be signs in the sun and in the moon and in the stars. The powers of heaven (the heavenly bodies) will be shaken. The sea and the waves will be roaring. There will be fearful sights and great signs from heaven. The qualities of the earth and the sky will be changed.

On the earth, nations will be in great distress and frenzied perplexity. The hearts of men and women will be failing them, overcome by the fear due to the expectation of those things, which will happen to the earth.

*"And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men's hearts failing them for (from) fear, and for looking after (the expectation of) those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken."*

St. Luke 21:25-26

*"...And fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven."*

St. Luke 21:11

Then the brightness of the sun and the moon and the stars will be dimmed more and more. Great and terrible events will occur on the earth. After that the sun will be darkened and it will turn black like sackcloth of hair; the moon will not give light and it will turn blood red; and the stars will fall from the sky. The qualities of the earth and the sky will be changed more and more. Great and terrible events will occur on the earth more and more.

*"The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come."*

Joel 2:31

*"Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken."*

St. Matthew 24:29

On the earth, there will be more and more tremblings; there will be more and more afflictions; there will be more and more oppressions; there will be more and more distresses; there will be more and

more sorrows; there will be more and more griefs; there will be more and more worries; there will be more and more terrors; there will be more and more fears; there will be more and more frights; there will be more and more tragedies; there will be more and more pains; there will be more and more sighs; there will be more and more tears; there will be more and more weepings; there will be more and more cries; there will be more and more lamentations; there will be more and more wails. What an ascending order of difficulty it is! What an ascending order of trouble it is!

## 2. THE LAST DAY—THE GREAT DAY OF THE LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST

The Last Day will be the great day of GOD; the last day will be the great day of the LORD; the last day will be the great day of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; the last day will be the great day of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. The last day is known to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST only. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"But it shall be one day which shall be known to the LORD,  
..."*

Zechariah 14:7

The Last Day of the LORD or the great day of the LORD is near. It is near and hastens quickly towards sinners.

*"The great day of the LORD is near, it is near, and hasteth (hurries) greatly, even the voice of the day of the LORD: the mighty man shall cry there bitterly."*

Zephaniah 1:14

## 3. THE LAST DAY—NEITHER DAY NOR NIGHT

On the Last Day, there will be no light. The last day will be a day, without daytime or night-time. That day will not be like any other day. The last day will be the most terrible day. That day will be the most intolerable and unendurable, of all the days.

*"And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark: But it shall be one day which shall be known to the LORD, not day, nor night: ..."*

Zechariah 14:6-7

#### 4. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF DARKNESS AND BLACKNESS

The Last Day will be a day of darkness and gloom. It will be a day of black clouds and thick darkness. That day will not be like any other day. That day will be the most awful and frightening day.

*"... Let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD cometh, for it is nigh at hand; A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, ..."*

Joel 2:1-2

#### 5. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE SHINING OF THE LORD'S GLORY ONLY

On the Last Day, there will be darkness, blackness, gloom, and clouds. But the glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will gloriously shine on that day, to save that day from utter darkness. The last day will be a day of the glorious shining of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's glory only. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"The glory of the LORD shall endure for ever: ..."*

Psalm 104:31

#### 6. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE SIGN OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST WILL APPEAR IN HEAVEN

*"And then shall appear the sign of the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) in heaven: ..."*

St. Matthew 24:30

On the Last Day, the great and terrible sign of the great and terrible GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will appear in heaven. All sinners will clearly see the great and terrible sign of the great and terrible GOD in the sky. That great and terrible sign of the great and terrible GOD will give great fear, trembling, shock, shiver, terror and horror to all sinners.

Since, from the beginning of the world, no such sign has ever appeared in the sky and no one has ever seen such a great and terrible sign in the sky, on seeing that great and terrible sign of the great and terrible GOD in heaven, all sinners will become half-dead and they will fight for their lives. What a horrible thing it will be! What a terrible thing it will be!

**7. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, ALL SINNERS WILL GET RESURGENT BODIES COMPATIBLE WITH HELL**

On the Last Day, all sinners, those who have died and those who are living, will get resurgent bodies to suit hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will open the graves of those who have died as sinners and cause them to come up from their graves. They will come up from their graves with resurgent bodies to suit hell. Those who have died as sinners and those who were cremated will also get resurgent bodies to suit hell. At the same time, those who are living in the world as sinners will also get resurgent bodies to suit hell. Then all sinners will stand up as one man and look up into heaven with their resurgent bodies. At that time, they will see the great and terrible sign of the great and terrible GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. What a terrible thing it is! What a dreadful thing it is!

*“Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear HIS voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.”*

St. John 5:28-29

**8. THE LAST DAY —THE DAY OF THE GLORIOUS COMING OF JESUS CHRIST IN THE CLOUDS**

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST ascended into heaven with clouds, before the very eyes of HIS disciples, on the fortieth day after Easter, which occurred forty days after HIS glorious resurrection from the dead. While HE was blessing them with HIS most holy hands lifted up, HE was parted from them and ascended into heaven. HE ascended into heaven from the mount of Olivet (Olives). At the time of HIS glorious ascension, HIS most beautiful feet stood on the mount of Olives.

On the Last Day, HE will come back in the same way from heaven amidst clouds. Then all sinners with their worst hellish bodies will see HIS glorious coming in the clouds, and they will be in great panic. What a terrible thing it is!

*“Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same JESUS, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen HIM go into*

*heaven. Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey."*

Acts 1:11-12

**9. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE MOST HOLY AND BEAUTIFUL FEET OF JESUS CHRIST WILL STAND ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES**

On the Last Day, the most holy and beautiful feet of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will stand on the mount of Olives, which faces Jerusalem on the east. At that time, the mount of Olives will be split in the centre thereof from east to west, making a very great valley; half of the mountain will move toward the north and half of it toward the south. What a tremulous thing it is!

*"And HIS feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south."*

Zechariah 14:4

**10. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE COMING OF JESUS CHRIST WITH GREAT POWER AND GLORY**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming from heaven in the clouds. HE will be coming with great power and great glory. HIS great power and great glory will be revealed on the last day. HIS great power has not yet been revealed to anyone. HIS great glory has not yet been revealed to anyone. What a power our LORD JESUS has! What a glory our LORD JESUS has!

At that time, all sinners with their worst hellish bodies will see HIM, and they will mourn and wail. What a pitiful thing it is!

*"...And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."*

St. Matthew 24:30

**11. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE GREAT WAILING OF SINNERS**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming with the clouds. HE will be coming with great power and great glory. Then all

sinner with their worst hellish bodies will see HIS glorious coming. Every eye will see HIM, even those who pierced HIM, those who whipped HIM, those who smote HIM, those who mocked at HIM, those who blasphemed against HIM, and all kindreds (sinners) of the earth will wail and mourn because of HIM. There will be a great and terrible wailing because of HIM; there will be a great and terrible mourning because of HIM. What a horrible thing it is!

*“Behold, HE cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see HIM, and they also which pierced HIM: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of HIM. Even so, Amen.”*

Revelation 1:7

## 12. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE COMING OF JESUS CHRIST WITH ALL HIS SAINTS

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming with all HIS saints.

*“...And the LORD my GOD shall come, and all the saints with THEE.”*

Zechariah 14:5

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming with all HIS believers, witnesses, priests, and ministers (servants of GOD). Enoch, the seventh from Adam (the first man), prophesied and said,

*“Behold, the LORD cometh with ten thousands of HIS saints.”*

Jude 14

All the saints of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST will be coming down with HIM with their glorious heavenly bodies. They will be coming down with HIM from the place prepared for their rest. They will be the holy; they will be the blessed. The blessed and the holy will be coming down with our most glorious GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST with their glorious heavenly bodies. What a glorious thing it is! What a wonderful thing it is! What a happy thing it is! No one will be able to explain the most glorious coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST with HIS saints. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 13. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE COMING OF JESUS CHRIST WITH HIS MIGHTY ANGELS

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming from heaven in HIS great glory with HIS mighty angels. HE will be coming with all the holy angels of HIS.

*"...The LORD JESUS shall be revealed from heaven with HIS mighty angels."*

II Thessalonians 1:7

*"When the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall come in HIS glory, and all the holy angels with HIM, ..."*

St. Matthew 25:31

In heaven, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has millions of mighty and holy angels (Revelation 9:16). HE will be coming with HIS millions of mighty and holy angels. Every eye will see HIM and HIS mighty and holy angels, and all the sinners of the earth will wail and mourn because of HIM. What a terrible thing it is! What a horrible thing it is!

### 14. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE COMING OF JESUS CHRIST IN FLAMING FIRE

*"But who may abide the day of HIS coming? and who shall stand when HE appeareth? ..."*

Malachi 3:2

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming from heaven in flaming (blazing) fire. No one can endure the day of HIS coming. No one can stand when HE appears.

*"...The LORD JESUS shall be revealed from heaven with HIS mighty angels, In flaming fire ..."*

II Thessalonians 1:7-8

In heaven, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is sitting on a throne of fiery flame. Its wheels are a burning fire. A fiery river is flowing, coming out from before HIM. What a terrible GOD our GOD is!

*"...HIS throne was like the fiery flame, and his (its) wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream (river) issued and came forth from before HIM: ..."*

Daniel 7:9-10



Every eye will see HIS terrible coming from heaven in blazing fire, and all sinners of the earth will wail and mourn greatly because of HIM. What a horrible thing it is! What a terrible thing it is!

**15. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE OPEN COMING OF JESUS CHRIST**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming from heaven openly. Every eye will see HIS terrible coming from heaven openly. Every eye will see HIS terrible coming publicly. As the lightning comes from the east and shines even to the west, so also will be the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. Every eye will see HIS terrible coming from heaven openly and publicly, and all the sinners of the earth will wail and mourn greatly because of HIM. What a terrible thing it is! What a dreadful thing it is!

*“For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) be.”*

St. Matthew 24:27

All sinners with their worst hellish bodies will be dismayed much by HIS terrible coming with HIS mighty angels, in blazing fire. They will be terrified much; they will be horrified much; they will be frightened much; they will tremble much; they will be shocked with great terror; they will be choked with great horror; and they will cry out with loud voices. What a pitiful thing it is! What a horrible thing it is!

**16. THE LAST DAY —THE DAY OF THE FIERCE WRATH OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**

The Last Day of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST upon all the nations is very near.

*“For the day of the LORD is near upon all the heathen (all the nations): ...”*

Obadiah 15

With fierce wrath, GOD will come to judge all the nations.

Now, a **heathen** is a person who does not acknowledge the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD,

the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Psalm 2:1-2; Acts 4:25). Hence, heathens are sinners.

The Last Day will be a day of fierce wrath; that day will be a day of great trouble and distress; that day will be a great day of devastation and desolation. Even the voice of the day of the LORD (the voice of the last day) will be bitter; then the mighty men will cry out bitterly.

*"The great day of the LORD is near, it is near, and hasteth (hurries) greatly, even the voice of the day of the LORD: the mighty man shall cry there bitterly. That day is a day of wrath, a day of trouble and distress, a day of wasteness and desolation, ..."*

Zephaniah 1:14-15

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will bring great distress upon all sinners, and they will walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD.

*"And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD: ..."*

Zephaniah 1:17

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will punish the world for their evil; HE will punish the wicked for their sins and iniquities; HE will put an end to the arrogance of the proud; HE will terminate the haughtiness of the terrible.

*"And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible."*

Isaiah 13:11

The Last Day will be a merciless day; that day will be a day of revenge against all sinners; that day will be a day of great danger; that day will be a day of the fierce wrath of GOD against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men who suppress the truth by their unrighteousness.

*"For the wrath of GOD is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold (suppress) the truth in unrighteousness."*

Romans 1:18

On the Last Day, the fierce wrath of GOD will be poured upon all sinners, and they will carry HIS fierce wrath fully. Neither their silver nor their gold will be able to deliver them on the day of the LORD's wrath.

*"Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the LORD's wrath; ..."*

Zephaniah 1:18

On the Last Day, all the sinners will try to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. But no one will be able to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. In no way will they be able to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. Wherever they be, they will not be able to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. They will cry out with a loud voice to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. They will wail and mourn and lament to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. But they will not be able to escape from the fierce wrath of GOD. What a horrible thing it is! What a terrible thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is! What a dreadful thing it is!

**17. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE COMING OF THE RIGHTEOUS AND TERRIBLE JUDGE, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**

*"But, O LORD of hosts, that judgest (judges) righteously, that triest (tests) the reins (the mind) and the heart, ..."*

Jeremiah 11:20

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming to judge all the sinners of the world. HIS countenance will be greatly dreadful; HIS appearance will be greatly fearful. During HIS coming, all sinners will stand and look with their worst hellish bodies in great trembling and fear. All hands will be feeble, and all knees will be as weak as water. Horror and terror will cover them. Their faces will be covered with shame; their hearts will melt; their spirit will faint; they will sigh with broken-heart and bitter grief; they will cry aloud with broken-heart and bitter grief. What a horrible thing it is! What a terrible thing it is!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the righteous Judge. HE is the terrible Judge. HE will judge the world in righteousness. HE will judge the people with equity. HE will judge the people in HIS truth. HE will judge each man's work impartially without any mistake.

*"...For HE cometh to judge the earth: with righteousness shall HE judge the world, and the people with equity."*

Psalm 98:9

*"...For HE cometh, for HE cometh to judge the earth: HE shall judge the world with righteousness, and the people with HIS truth."*

Psalm 96:13

*"And if ye call on the FATHER, who without respect (partiality) of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning (stay) here in fear."*

I Peter 1:17

The end will come upon all sinners. HE will pour out HIS great fury upon them; HE will accomplish HIS great anger upon them; HE will judge them according to their ways; HE will repay them for all their abominations; HE will have no pity; HE will not spare them; HIS eye will not spare anyone. What a dreadful thing it is!

*"Now is the end come upon thee, and I will send MINE anger upon thee, and will judge thee according to thy ways, and will recompense upon thee all thine abominations. And MINE eye shall not spare thee, neither will I have pity: but I will recompense thy ways upon thee, and thine abominations shall be in the midst of thee: and ye shall know that I am the LORD."*

Ezekiel 7:3-4

#### **18. THE LAST DAY — THE DAY, THE SINNERS WILL HIDE THEMSELVES DREADFULLY**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming to judge all the sinners of the world. During HIS coming, all sinners will see HIS most horrible and terrible face of fierce wrath. They will greatly mourn and groan; they will greatly lament and cry out with a loud voice; they will hide themselves from the most horrible and terrible face of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

They will go into the rocks, and hide in the dust; they will go into the holes of the rocks and into the caves of the earth; they will go into the clefts of the rocks, and into the tops of the rugged rocks, to escape from the terror of the LORD and the glory of HIS majesty.

*"Enter into the rock, and hide thee in the dust, for fear of the*

*LORD, and for the glory of HIS majesty. And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of HIS majesty, when HE ariseth to shake terribly the earth. To go into the clefts of the rocks, and into the tops of the ragged rocks, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of HIS majesty, when HE ariseth to shake terribly the earth."*

Isaiah 2:10, 19, 21

'For fear of the LORD' means 'from the terror of the LORD'.

On the Last Day, the sinners will want to die, but they will not be able to die. On the last day, the sinners will want to hide from GOD permanently, but they will not be able to hide from GOD permanently. The kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the chief captains (the commanders), the mighty men, every slave and every free man, will hide themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains. Men and women will hide themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains.

*"And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains."*

Revelation 6:15

And they will call to the mountains and the rocks,

*"Fall on us, and hide us from the face of HIM that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: For the great day of HIS wrath is come; and who shall be able (is able) to stand?"*

Revelation 6:16-17

If a big stone falls on the body of a man or on the body of a woman, then the state of his/her body will be nothing. Then, if a great mountain or a great rock falls on the body of a man or on the body of a woman, what will be the state of his/her body? Its state will be less than nothing. On the last day, the sinners will not be able to think about this horrible thing. They will be in dreadful fear. And every knee will bow to GOD, and every tongue will confess to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Romans 14:11).

The Last Day will be the great day of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's fierce wrath. Unable to bear HIS fierce wrath, the sinners will call to

the mountains and the rocks to fall on them and to hide them from the terrible face of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. What a dreadful thing it is! What a terrible thing it is! What a horrible thing it is!

**19. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, ALL SINNERS WILL BE SEIZED AND HELD TOGETHER**

On the Last Day, the sinners will not be able to hide themselves from our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for a long time. In a short while, all sinners will be seized and held together. All liars, all thieves, all robbers, all murderers, all fornicators, all adulterers, all adulteresses, all sorcerers, all enchanters, all magicians, all wizards, all necromancers, all backbiters, all unbelievers, all fraudsters, all idolaters, all drunkards, all blasphemers, all revilers, all revellers, etc., will be seized and held together. Their own iniquities and sins will seize the sinners themselves. The cords of their sins will hold them fast. No sinner will be able to escape on that day. What a horrible thing it is! What a terrible thing it is!

*"His own iniquities shall take (seize) the wicked himself, and he shall be holden (caught) with the cords of his sins."*

Proverbs 5:22

Their lives will be in great grief and sorrow. They will not be able to bear their great grief and sorrow. They will shiver in horror. They will cry out in horror. What a dreadful thing it is!

**20. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, ALL SINNERS WILL BE GATHERED AND SEPARATED**

On the Last Day, all sinners will be gathered and separated by the angels. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will send HIS angels to gather and separate them.

*"The SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall send forth HIS angels, and they shall gather out of HIS kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity."*

St. Matthew 13:41

*"So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever (separate) the wicked from among the just."*

St. Matthew 13:49

As the tares are gathered to be burnt in the fire, the angels will gather all sinners together (St. Matthew 13:36-43). As the bad are separated from a fishing-net, the angels will separate all sinners from the righteous (St. Matthew 13:47-50). Then all sinners will pathetically cry to escape from the great woe. But they will not be able to escape from that great woe. No sinner will be able to escape from the great woe of that great day. What a pitiful thing it is! What a woe-ful day it is!

## 21. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE GREAT WHITE THRONE OF JUDGMENT WILL BE SET

*“And I saw a great white throne, and HIM that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.”*

Revelation 20:11

On the Last Day, the judgment seat of CHRIST, the great white throne of judgment will be set to judge the sinners. On that day, we must all appear before the judgment seat of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, that each one may receive the things done in his/her body, according to what he/she has done, whether good or bad (II Corinthians 5:10).

On seeing the judgment seat of CHRIST, all sinners will cry aloud to escape judgment. But no one will be able to escape. Their hearts will be troubled and frightened much. Their hands will greatly tremble. Their knees will greatly shiver. What a terrible thing it is!

Now, this present universe is reserved for fire, until the great day of judgment and destruction of ungodly people (II Peter 3:7). The judgment will take place in this earth, since the present unclean heavens with all things viz., sun, moon, stars and planets (Job 15:15; 25:5; Revelation 6:12-14), except the third heaven—the holy **Paradise** (II Corinthians 12:2-4) will be dissolved and all the sinners of the earth will be devoured by the fire of HIS jealousy (Zephaniah 1:18; 3:8), just before HIS judgment; and the present unclean earth with all other things viz., mountains, oceans, seas, islands, etc., will be dissolved by the fire of HIS jealousy, just after HIS judgment (II Peter 3:10-12; Revelation 20:11-13; 21:1). **This is one of the greatest mysteries of GOD.** Thus the judgment day will be a day without daytime or night-time (Zechariah 14:7).

**22. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST WILL SIT ON HIS GREAT JUDGMENT SEAT**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will sit on the throne of HIS glory (St. Matthew 25:31). HE will sit on HIS great white throne of judgment (Revelation 20:11), with a terrible countenance and with a dreadful appearance. No sinner will be able to see HIS terrible face of fierce wrath. No sinner will be able to endure HIS fierce wrath. They will cry out more and more; they will mourn more and more; they will lament more and more; they will groan more and more; they will shiver more and more; they will be frightened more and more. What a horrible thing it is! What a terrible thing it is!

**23. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST ALONE WILL BE EXALTED**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST alone will be highly exalted. HE alone is the highly exalted ONE. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST alone is the highly exalted GOD (Psalm 148:13). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

On the Last Day, the lofty looks of men and the loftiness of men will be bowed down and humbled; the haughtiness of men or the pride of men will be bowed down and brought low. Our LORD GOD will utterly abolish the idols.

*“The lofty (proud) looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day. And the loftiness (pride) of man shall be bowed down, and the haughtiness of men shall be made low: and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day. And the idols HE shall utterly abolish.”*

Isaiah 2:11, 17-18

On the Last Day, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone will be highly exalted. HE is the Most High GOD. HE is the Almighty GOD. On seeing the highly exalted LORD JESUS CHRIST, even mighty men will cry out bitterly. They will not be able to keep silent before HIM. They will get more and more distress. They will get more and more trouble. Their mind will be greatly distraught. They will be in a totally disturbed state of mind. They will have no peace of mind. All



sorts of fears will pass through their mind. Only dark thoughts will fill their mind. They will be in a very hopeless situation. What a pitiful thing it is! What a pathetic thing it is!

**24. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, ALL SINNERS WILL STAND BEFORE JESUS CHRIST, THE RIGHTEOUS AND TERRIBLE JUDGE**

On the Last Day, the sinners will not be able to hide themselves from our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. The angels of GOD will bring and produce all sinners before our LORD JESUS CHRIST, and they will stand before HIM with a great dreadful fear and cry. All sinners will stand before our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the righteous Judge with a great dreadful fear and cry. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will be sitting on the great white throne of judgment terribly and horribly and angrily. All sinners will be in a state of great abasement and shame. They will be in very great distress and trouble. What a pitiful thing it is! What a miserable thing it is! What a ruinous thing it is!

*“THOU, even THOU, art to be feared; and who may stand in THY sight when once THOU art angry?”*

Psalm 76:7

**25. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE SAINTS AND THE SINNERS WILL BE SEPARATED**

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be coming with all HIS saints. Then all the sinners of the earth will be brought and produced before HIM by HIS angels. The saints of the LORD and the sinners of the earth will stand before HIS great white judgment seat.

*“...For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of CHRIST.”*

Romans 14:10

The saints of the LORD will stand before our LORD with their most glorious heavenly bodies. But, the sinners of the earth will stand before our LORD with their worst hellish bodies. The sinners will cry out with a loud voice to escape judgment. But, they will not be able to escape judgment.

Then our LORD JESUS CHRIST will separate the people one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. And HE will set the sheep (the saints) on HIS right hand, but the goats (the sinners) on the left.

*“And before HIM shall be gathered all nations: and HE shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: And HE shall set the sheep on HIS right hand, but the goats on the left.”*

St. Matthew 25:32-33

Then the King, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will say to those on HIS right hand, the blessed or the saved,

*“Come, ye blessed of MY FATHER, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungred (hungry), and ye gave ME meat (food): I was thirsty, and ye gave ME drink: I was a stranger, and ye took ME in: Naked, and ye clothed ME: I was sick, and ye visited ME: I was in prison, and ye came unto ME.”*

St. Matthew 25:34-36

Then the saints, the righteous will answer HIM, saying,

*“LORD, when saw we THEE an hungred (hungry), and fed THEE? or thirsty, and gave THEE drink? When saw we THEE a stranger, and took THEE in? or naked, and clothed THEE? Or when saw we THEE sick, or in prison, and came unto THEE?”*

St. Matthew 25:37-39

And the King will answer and say to them,

*“Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these MY brethren, ye have done it unto ME.”*

St. Matthew 25:40

Then the King, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will say to those on HIS left hand, the cursed or the lost,

*“Depart from ME, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungered (hungry), and ye gave ME no meat (food): I was thirsty, and ye gave ME no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took ME not in: naked, and ye clothed ME not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited ME not.”*

St. Matthew 25:41-43

Then the sinners will answer HIM, saying,

*“LORD, when saw we THEE an hungered (hungry), or athirst (thirsty), or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto THEE?”*

St. Matthew 25:44

And the King will answer and say to them,

*"Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to ME."*

St. Matthew 25:45

What a dreadful thing it is! What a horrible thing it is!

**26. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, EVERYONE WILL AGAIN SEE THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE RIGHTEOUS AND THE WICKED**

Now the great distinction between the righteous or the saints or the blessed or the saved and the wicked or the sinners or the cursed or the lost is clearly seen in this world. The righteous are light in the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They walk as children of light. Goodness, holiness, righteousness and truth are the works of the righteous. But, the wicked are darkness in Satan, the devil. They walk as children of darkness. Badness, unholiness, unrighteousness and falsehood are the works of the wicked. The difference between the righteous and the wicked are: (1) no fellowship between righteousness and unrighteousness (2) no communion between light and darkness (3) no concord between CHRIST and Satan (4) no part held by the righteous with the wicked and (5) no agreement between the temple of GOD and idols.

*"...for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion (fellowship) hath light with darkness? And what concord (accord) hath CHRIST with Belial (Satan)? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of GOD with idols? ..."*

II Corinthians 6:14-16

The great distinction between the righteous and the wicked will be clearly seen again on the last day by everyone. The righteous will stand on the right of our LORD JESUS CHRIST gloriously with their most glorious heavenly bodies. The wicked will stand on the left of our LORD JESUS CHRIST awkwardly and dreadfully with their worst hellish bodies.

*"Then shall ye return, and discern (Then you will again see the distinction) between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth GOD and him that serveth HIM not."*

Malachi 3:18

**27. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, EVERYONE WILL AGAIN SEE THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN THOSE WHO SERVE GOD AND THOSE WHO DO NOT SERVE GOD**

The great distinction between those who serve GOD and those who do not serve GOD is clearly seen now in this world. This great distinction between those who serve GOD and those who do not serve GOD will be clearly seen again on the last day. Those who serve GOD will be greatly honoured by GOD, the FATHER. GOD, the FATHER is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

*“If any man serve ME, let him follow ME; and where I am, there shall also MY servant be: if any man serve ME, him will MY FATHER honour.”*

St. John 12:26

Those who do not serve GOD will be greatly dishonoured by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Those who do not serve GOD are the unprofitable servants; they are the worthless servants; they will be thrown into hell, the outer darkness.

*“And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”*

St. Matthew 25:30

**28. THE LAST DAY—THE GREAT DAY OF JUDGMENT**

The Last Day will be the great Day of Judgment. On that day, everyone of us will give account of himself/herself to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*“So then every one of us shall give account of himself to GOD.”*

Romans 14:12

That day will be the most terrible day; that day will be the most horrible day; that day will be the most dreadful day; that day will be the most awful day; that day will be the most shocking day; that day will be the most disgusting day; that day will be the most tearful day; that day will be the most sorrowful day; that day will be the most discontented day. The sinners will be oppressed and broken in judgment.

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will sit on HIS great white throne of judgment, and give HIS righteous judgment. HE will

judge the world with righteousness and the people with HIS truth (Psalm 96:13). HE will judge the people with equity (Psalm 98:9). HE will render HIS righteous judgment according to HIS glorious Gospel. HE will judge the secrets of the people according to HIS glorious Gospel (Romans 2:16). HE will rebuke the sinners on the great day of judgment.

Again, the great day of judgment will be the day of GOD's wrath against all hardness (stubbornness) and impenitent hearts. GOD's furious and terrible wrath will be fully revealed on the great day of judgment. The sinners will greatly tremble because of fear; they will greatly shiver because of fear; they will be terribly shocked because of fear; terror, horror and dread will fall upon them; anguish and distress will cover upon them; they will cry out with a loud voice; they will greatly groan and mourn with tears. No one can escape the judgment of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE will render HIS righteous judgment to everyone according to his/her deeds (Romans 2:5-6).

*"...For I will not justify the wicked."*

Exodus 23:7

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the righteous Judge will not condemn the holy people; HE will not condemn the righteous people; HE will not condemn the upright people; HE will not condemn the clean people; HE will not condemn the saints or the saved; HE will not condemn the godly.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the righteous Judge will not acquit the guilty; HE will not acquit the wicked; HE will not acquit the unclean; HE will not acquit the unholy; HE will not acquit the unrighteous; HE will not acquit the unsaved; HE will not acquit the sinners; HE will not acquit the transgressors; HE will not acquit the trespassers; HE will not acquit the fornicators; HE will not acquit the adulterers; HE will not acquit the filthy; HE will not acquit the sorcerers; HE will not acquit the sexually immoral; HE will not acquit the murderers; HE will not acquit the idolaters; HE will not acquit the liars; HE will not acquit the covetous; HE will not acquit the polygamists;

HE will not acquit the homosexuals; HE will not acquit the gay persons; HE will not acquit the sodomites; HE will not acquit the

lesbians; HE will not acquit the ungodly; HE will not acquit the kidnappers; HE will not acquit the perjurers; HE will not acquit the drunkards; HE will not acquit the revellers; HE will not acquit the revilers; HE will not acquit the thieves; HE will not acquit the robbers; HE will not acquit the extortionists; HE will not acquit the effeminate—the effeminate are burned within with their lustful thoughts and they are the most ugly secret sinners.

HE will not acquit the backbiters; HE will not acquit the haters of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; HE will not acquit the whisperers; HE will not acquit the violent; HE will not acquit the proud; HE will not acquit the boasters; HE will not acquit the inventors of evil things; HE will not acquit the disobedient to parents; HE will not acquit the atheists or the pantheists or the polytheists;

HE will not acquit those who make their sons or their daughters or themselves pass through the fire; HE will not acquit those who practice divination or witchcraft; HE will not acquit the observers of times or the soothsayers; HE will not acquit those who interpret omens or the enchanters; HE will not acquit those who conjure spells or the charmers; HE will not acquit the consulters with familiar spirits or the mediums; HE will not acquit the wizards or the spiritists; HE will not acquit those who call up the dead or the necromancers; HE will not acquit the magicians; HE will not acquit the witch doctors; HE will not acquit the fake medicine men; HE will not acquit the shamans;

HE will not acquit those who speak idle words; HE will not acquit those who speak great swelling words; HE will not acquit those who reject our LORD JESUS CHRIST and do not receive HIS Words; HE will not acquit the murmurers (grumblers) and the complainers; HE will not acquit the flatterers; HE will not acquit those who give false witnesses; HE will not acquit those who are quarrelsome; HE will not acquit the evildoers; HE will not acquit the polyandrists;

HE will not acquit those who defraud labourers of their wages; HE will not acquit those who oppress the widows and the fatherless; HE will not acquit those who deprive aliens (strangers) of justice; HE will not acquit those who pervert justice; HE will not acquit those who have shown no mercy;

HE will not acquit those who tempt (test) the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST; HE will not acquit those who do not have the Spirit of CHRIST; HE will not acquit those who do not do the will of GOD; HE will not acquit those who trouble the children of GOD; HE will not acquit the cowardly and the abominable; HE will not acquit those who do not fear GOD; HE will not acquit those who are the unbelieving; HE will not acquit those who have cast off the first faith with our LORD JESUS CHRIST; HE will not acquit those who have left the first love with our LORD JESUS CHRIST;

HE will not acquit those who do not know GOD; HE will not acquit those who forget GOD; HE will not acquit those who do not obey the glorious Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST; HE will not acquit those who do not love our LORD JESUS CHRIST; HE will not acquit those who do not keep themselves in the love of GOD—those who keep themselves in the love of GOD will love one another. For this is the love of GOD, that we keep HIS commandments and HIS commandments are unburdensome (I John 5:3).

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST pronounces HIS judgment, **two books of heaven** will be opened before HIM. The name of one book is the Book of Life. In this book, all the names of the saints would have been written and their good works would have been recorded with all minute details. In another book, all the names of the sinners would have been written and all the sinful acts of the sinners would have been recorded with all minute details. Without any objection, every sinner will accept that he/she is a guilty sinner, deserving judgment and eternal punishment in hell. Our LORD's judgment would be so righteous that the sinner would accept without any objection that hell is the righteous punishment for his/her sins.

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will judge everyone who has ever lived. The sinners whose names are not written in the Book of Life will be cast into hell, the lake of eternal fire and they will be tormented for ever and ever.

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST announces HIS judgment to sinners, the great flaming fire of hell, the fiery waves of the fiery sea with a terrible frightening noise will be appearing before them and coming towards them like the sea waves. The sinners will be greatly

frightened and will try to save themselves from the frightful presence of hell-fire. But they will not be able to.

What a terrible day it is! What a horrible day it is! What a trembling day it is! What a tearful day it is! What a sorrowful day it is!

**29. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, ALL THE WOUND SCARS ON THE MOST HOLY BODY OF JESUS CHRIST WILL VANISH**

All the wound scars (Zechariah 13:6), on the most holy body of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, had not yet vanished (disappeared). After HIS glorious resurrection on the third day, HE appeared to HIS disciples. But, Thomas, one of the twelve, was not with them when JESUS came. The other disciples therefore said to him,

*"We have seen the LORD."*

St. John 20:25

But Thomas said to them,

*"Except I shall see in HIS hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into HIS side, I will not believe."*

St. John 20:25

After eight days, our LORD JESUS again appeared to HIS disciples. Thomas was also with them. Our LORD JESUS said to Thomas,

*"Reach hither thy finger, and behold MY hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into MY side: and be not faithless, but believing."*

St. John 20:27

'Be not faithless' means 'do not be unbelieving'.

From this anyone can clearly understand that the wound scars on the most holy body of our LORD JESUS CHRIST had not yet vanished. HIS wound scars were clearly seen on HIS most holy body.

On the Last Day, the great day of judgment, when our LORD JESUS CHRIST pronounces HIS righteous judgment, HE will show HIS wound scars to all, to prove HIS great afflictions and HIS terrible death on the cross, for the sinners of the world. The sinners and the saints will see HIS terrible wound scars on HIS most holy feet and on HIS most holy hands and on HIS most holy side. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



At that time, the saints will be astonished greatly; they will weep in joy by remembering the great love of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; they will weep in sorrow by remembering HIS great afflictions and HIS terrible death on the cross; they will obtain great wisdom and knowledge and understanding about their own GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

And the sinners will be greatly frightened to see the wound scars of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will try to escape from HIS most holy presence. They will try to escape HIS terrible judgment. They will try to escape hell. They will cry aloud to escape. But they will not be able to escape by anyway or by any means.

What an awful thing it is! What a dreadful thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is! What a terrible thing it is! What a horrible thing it is!

On the Last Day, after the great judgment, all the wound scars on the most holy body of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will vanish or disappear. Then, no more scars on HIS most holy body. What a wonderful GOD, our GOD is!

### 30. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE END OF ALL SINS AND INIQUITIES

The Last Day will be the day of the end of all sins, iniquities, trespasses and transgressions. The Last Day will be the day of the end of all unrighteousness, uncleanness, unholiness, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness, evil-mindedness, sexual immorality, envy, murder, strife, deceit, and the like. It will be the day of the end of all drunkenness, adultery, fornication, lusts, lasciviousness (licentiousness), idolatries, sorceries, witchcrafts, hatred, contentions, jealousies, and the like. It will be the day of the end of outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, heresies, and the like.

The Last Day will be the day of the end of all revellings (revelries), recreations, sports, games, hobbies, drinking parties, dancing parties, revilings, idle words, funny words, outrageous words, and the like. The Last Day will be the day of the end of all friendship with the world, love of their own selves, love of money, accepting bribes, perverting justice, love of silver and gold, love of ornaments and clothing, love of worldly pleasures, and the like.

The Last Day will be the day of the end of all pride, blasphemies, disobedience, ungratefulness, haughtiness, recklessness, fierceness, badness, and the like.

On the Last Day, everyone must give account to our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. There is no creature hidden from HIS sight. But all things are naked and open to the eyes of HIS.

*“Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in HIS sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of HIM with whom we have to do (must give account).”*

Hebrews 4:13

*“Who shall give account to HIM that is ready to judge the quick (living) and the dead.”*

I Peter 4:5

The Last Day will be the closing day of all accounts of sins, iniquities, transgressions and trespasses. The Last Day will be the closing day of all accounts of uncleanness, wickedness, unholiness, unrighteousness, etc. On the Last Day, all the accounts of sins, iniquities, etc., will be totally closed. On the Last Day, all the accounts of unholiness, unrighteousness, etc., will be totally closed. The Last Day will be the closing day of all sins and iniquities. The Last Day will be the day of the end of all sins and iniquities. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 31. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY THAT WILL BURN LIKE A FURNACE

*“For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.”*

Malachi 4:1

The Last Day will burn like a furnace. Hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur will burn like a furnace. It will be the day of horrible hell-fire. It will be the day of horrible hell-fire flames.

The very hot flames of hell-fire will spread over hell and these flames of hell-fire will ascend to the sky; these flames of hell-fire will churn up violently and toss themselves to and fro, like the waves of a roaring sea during a very great storm. These flames of hell-fire will come towards the sinners with a great shout and with a great sound

of tumult and with a violent rage and with a fierce anger to devour them. No one can endure it. No sinner can escape from it. What an awful thing it is!

At that time, the sinners will shout and cry more and more; they will shiver and tremble more and more; they will lament and mourn more and more; they will groan and weep more and more; they will fear more and more; they will shed tears more and more; and they will become as weak as water. What a dreadful thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is!

But, the sinners will never escape hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur; they will never escape the very hot flames of hell-fire; they will never escape the devouring fire of hell. What an awful thing it is!

The sinners will be cast into the hell-fire. The very hot flames of hell-fire will devour the worst hellish bodies of the sinners. These hellish bodies of the sinners will give them very great pain, unbearable pain. No one will be able to bear this terrible pain in hell. Very great pain! Very great woe! Very great sorrow! Everlasting pain! Everlasting woe! Everlasting sorrow!

The sinners will be in the lowest depths of the pit, hell for ever and ever. The sinners will be in the hell-fire for ever and ever. The unprofitable servants will be bound together hand and foot and they will be thrown into outer darkness, hell; there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth for ever and ever; everlasting pain, everlasting cry, everlasting tears, everlasting woe, everlasting sorrow and everlasting destruction will be their lot.

Everyone must escape the day that will burn like a furnace. For this, this precious and rare book "ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!" is written by the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, for all the people of the world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

### 32. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY THAT WILL BURN THE SINNERS

*"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts,*

*that it shall leave them neither root nor branch."*

Malachi 4:1

On the Last Day, the sinners will be horribly burned by the hell-fire. They will be stubble. That day will burn them up. That day will leave them neither root nor branch. The sinners will be tormented in the hell-fire for ever and ever. No one will be able to escape hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. No one will be able to dwell with the devouring fire. No one will be able to dwell with everlasting burnings. What a painful thing it is! What an awful thing it is!

*"...Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings?"*

Isaiah 33:14

### **33. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE END OF THE SINNERS**

On the Last Day, the sinners will be consumed from the earth, and the wicked will be no more. On the Last Day, the sinners or the wicked will vanish from the earth. The Last Day will be the day of the end of the sinners or the wicked.

*"Let the sinners be consumed out of the earth, and let the wicked be no more. ..."*

Psalms 104:35

### **34. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE SUFFOCATING HEAT**

On the Last Day, the sinners will be very severely scorched with suffocating heat. They will be very severely scorched with great heat. They will be very severely scorched with horrible fire. No one can bear this suffocating heat. No one can bear this great heat. Not even for a second can they bear this scorching and suffocating heat. No one can bear this horrible fire. What a pitiful thing it is!

*"...HE will burn up the chaff (the sinners) with unquenchable fire."*

St. Matthew 3:12

### **35. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE SUFFOCATING SULPHUR SMOKE**

On the Last Day, the sinners will be very severely scorched with suffocating sulphur smoke. Every limb of theirs will be damaged. They

will horribly experience great trouble in breathing due to the suffocating sulphur smoke. They will horribly experience great difficulty in breathing by the suffocating sulphur smoke inhalation. They will move very wildly due to breathlessness. What a pitiful thing it is!

Their nostrils will be filled with the suffocating sulphur smoke. Their mouths, lungs and stomachs will be filled with the suffocating sulphur smoke. And the smoke of their torment will ascend for ever and ever; and they will have no rest day or night.

*“And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever:  
and they have no rest day nor night, ...”*

Revelation 14:11

### **36. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE SUFFOCATING THIRST AND HUNGER**

On the Last Day, the sinners will be punished with suffocating thirst and hunger. They will be punished with unquenchable thirst for water and with unquenchable hunger for bread (food). Not even a morsel of bread will be given to them to quench their hunger. They will be punished with a most powerful thirst for water. Not even a single drop of water will be given to them to cool their tongues (St. Luke 16:24). They will move very wildly about to cool their tongues. But, they will be in unbearable thirst for ever and ever. Always they will be in everlasting thirst and hunger. What a pitiful thing it is!

### **37. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF COMPLETE SLEEPLESSNESS**

On the Last Day, the sinners will be punished with complete sleeplessness. So, they will be greatly puzzled about what to do. Their brains will be completely puzzled and numbed with pain and terror and they will be in a state of total collapse. Not even for a second can they sleep. Not even for a second can they take rest. What a pitiful thing it is!

### **38. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE WORST STENCH**

The Last Day will be the day of the worst stench. On the Last Day, the sinners' nostrils will be filled with the awful stench of the suffocating sulphur smoke combined with the most awful stench of the burning sinners themselves. No one can bear this most awful

stench. Not even for a second can they bear this abominable and repulsive stench. What a pitiable thing it is!

**39. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE OUTER DARKNESS (THE BLACKEST DARKNESS)**

On the Last Day, the sinners will be in hell, the outer darkness (St. Matthew 25:30) or the blackest darkness (Jude 13). As a result of this blackest darkness, the sinners will be in great fear and trembling for ever and ever. What a pitiable thing it is!

**40. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF GREAT TORMENT AND SORROW**

The Last Day will be the day of great torment and sorrow. On the Last Day, the sinners will be given adequate punishment for their sins and iniquities. They will be given full punishment for their detestable and abominable works. They will undergo great torture and grief. Their plagues will overtake them. They will be consumed by unquenchable fire for ever and ever. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST severely warns the sinners,

*"And MINE eye shall not spare thee, neither will I have pity: but I will recompense thy ways upon thee, and thine abominations shall be in the midst of thee: and ye shall know that I am the LORD."*

Ezekiel 7:4

**41. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY THAT WILL BURN THE SINNERS AS IF TO LIME**

*"And the people shall be as the burnings of lime: as thorns cut up shall they be burned in the fire."*

Isaiah 33:12

On the Last Day, the sinners will be like the burnings of lime in the hell-fire. Like thorns cut up they will be burned in the hell-fire. What a painful thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is!

**42. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF UNQUENCHABLE FIRE**

*"...Into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched."*

St. Mark 9:43

The fire in hell will never be quenched. No one will be able to quench the hell-fire, the everlasting fire. The Last Day will be the day of unquenchable fire. The sinners will be tormented by unquenchable fire for ever and ever. What a painful thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is!

#### 43. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF UNDYING WORMS

*"Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched."*

St. Mark 9:44

*"...The worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee."*

Isaiah 14:11

The sinners will be cast into the hell-fire. There will be undying worms. These grievous undying worms will bore holes in the hellish bodies of the sinners and eat their flesh. It will give more and more pain to the sinners. Again, the very hot flames of hell-fire will enter through these holes, and it will give utmost pain to the sinners. The hottest flames of hell-fire will enter into their flesh and bones. So, there will be a great weeping and gnashing of teeth. The hellish bodies of the sinners will be burned in the hell-fire for ever and ever, and the grievous undying worms will eat their flesh for ever and ever. What a painful thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is! What an awful thing it is!

#### 44. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY THAT WILL NOT GIVE EVEN A DROP OF WATER

On the Last Day, the sinners will be cast into hell; there will be undying worms and everlasting fire. The most terrible heat of hell, soon will give the sinners a most powerful thirst. The tongues or mouths of the sinners will be dried up completely. There will be no moisture in their tongues or mouths. They will have a most powerful thirst for water. So, in order to cool their tongues, they will cry out, "Water, water, water, ..." But, no one will give even a drop of water. They will even wish to get water from the tip of one's finger by dipping the tip of one's finger in water. But, they will never get. On the Last Day, the sinners will not get even a drop of water or even a moistness of water. What a terrible thing it is! What an unbearable thirst it is!

Now, in this world, the sinners are very boldly indulging in sinful or evil pleasures. They are very eagerly drinking the most unclean water of sin like milk. They are blaspheming and abusing GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST with their tongues or mouths wilfully. So, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will give HIS righteous punishment to the tongues or mouths of the sinners. The sinners will not be given even a drop of water or even a moistness of water to cool their tongues or mouths. They will be in hell with a most powerful thirst. They will be in hell with an everlasting thirst. They will be in hell with an unquenchable thirst.

The sinners will be in hell with the grievous undying worms. They will be in hell with the grievous everliving worms. They will be in hell in the everlasting fire. They will be in hell in the unquenchable fire. They will be in hell with an everlasting thirst. What a horrible thing it is! What an awful thing it is! What a pitiful thing it is!

#### 45. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF HELL

In hell, the sinners' worms will not die and the fire will not quench. In hell, the sinners will be like the burnings of lime and they will be like thorns cut up and burnt in the fire. They will be burnt in hell for ever and ever in the everlasting fire. In hell, the grievous undying worms will eat their hellish bodies for ever and ever by making deep holes into their bodies. The hottest flames of hell-fire will enter into their flesh and bones. In hell, they will be with an unquenchable thirst for water and hunger for bread (food) and they will be tormented and tortured for ever and ever. In hell, there will be weeping, crying, lamenting, wailing, mourning, groaning, and gnashing of teeth for ever and ever. What a horrible thing it is!

Hell will burn with fire and sulphur (brimstone) for ever and ever. Very grievous will be the smoke of hell-fire. The sinners will be in hard breathlessness. So, they will not be able to bear their breathlessness. They will tremble and shiver in horror due to their breathlessness. What a pitiful thing it is!

The Last Day will be the day of hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. No sinner will be able to escape hell, the everlasting fire. None will be able to escape hell, the bottomless pit (the abyss). None will



be able to find out the length and breadth and depth of hell. What a terrible place it is!

In order to escape hell, this precious and rare book "ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!" is written by the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, for all the people of the world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**46. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE WORLDS WHICH WERE FRAMED BY THE WORD OF GOD WILL BE DESTROYED BY THE WORD OF GOD**

*"...The worlds were framed by the Word of GOD, ..."*

Hebrews 11:3

*"...And upholding all things by the word of HIS power, ..."*

Hebrews 1:3

*"But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men."*

II Peter 3:7

In the beginning, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST created the worlds by the Word of HIS power. HE upholds all things of the worlds by the Word of HIS power. On the Last Day, HE will completely destroy the worlds by the Word of HIS power. What a powerful GOD our GOD is! What a mighty GOD our GOD is!

In the beginning, HE said the Word, "Let there be" (See Genesis 1). On the Last Day, HE will say the Word, "Let there not be". What a mighty GOD our GOD is! What a powerful GOD our GOD is!

**47. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE WHOLE WORLD WILL BE DEVoured BY THE FIRE OF GOD'S JEALOUSY**

*"For the LORD thy GOD is a consuming fire, even a jealous GOD."*

Deuteronomy 4:24

*"...But the whole land shall be devoured by the fire of HIS jealousy: ..."*

Zephaniah 1:18

*"For our GOD is a consuming fire."*

Hebrews 12:29

The glory of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is like a devouring (consuming) fire. HE is a consuming fire. The fire of HIS jealousy will devour the whole world. On the Last Day, the whole world will be devoured by the fire of GOD's jealousy, just after the judgment. What a fearful and mighty GOD our GOD is!

**48. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE SUN, THE MOON, THE PLANETS AND THE STARS WILL BE DESTROYED BY GOD**

*"And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falleth off from the vine, and as a falling fig from the fig tree."*

Isaiah 34:4

*"And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; ..."*

Revelation 6:14

On the Last Day, the sun, the moon, the planets, and the stars of the heavens will be dissolved, and the sky will be rolled up like a scroll. Then, no one will see this sun or moon; no one will see these planets or stars. Everything in the heavens will be destroyed by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, just before the judgment.

Everything in the heavens will fall like withered leaves from the vine; everything in the heavens will fall like withered figs from the fig tree, and everything will be dissolved by the fire of GOD's jealousy. The sun, the moon, the planets, and the stars will be set ablaze by the fire of GOD's jealousy. GOD will scatter them like stubble that passes away by the great wind of the wilderness.

No more sun! No more moon! No more planets! No more stars! Nothing will be there! There will be no place for them.

On the Last Day, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will destroy the sun, the moon, the planets, and the stars by HIS fire of wrath of fervent heat. What a dreadful GOD our GOD is!

**49. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE HEAVENS (THE SKIES) WILL BE DISSOLVED BY GOD**

*"Looking for and hastening (hastening) unto the coming of the day*

*of GOD, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?"*

II Peter 3:12

On the Last Day, the heavens will be rolled up like a scroll by the great power of GOD, and the fire of GOD's jealousy will dissolve the heavens. The heavens will be set ablaze by the fire of GOD's jealousy, just before the judgment. GOD will scatter the heavens like stubble that passes away by the great wind of the wilderness.

No more heavens! No more skies! Nothing will be there! There will be no place for them.

On the Last Day, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will destroy the heavens by HIS fire of wrath of fervent heat. What a fearful GOD our GOD is!

**50. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE EARTH WILL BE DISSOLVED BY GOD**

*"...And every mountain and island were moved out of their places."*

Revelation 6:14

On the Last Day, the earth with all the mountains, islands, seas, etc., will be moved by the great power of GOD, and the fire of GOD's jealousy will dissolve the earth completely. The earth will be set ablaze by the fire of GOD's wrath, just after the judgment. GOD will scatter the earth like stubble that passes away by the great wind of the wilderness.

No more seas! No more islands! No more land! No more rivers! No more springs! No more mountains! No more hills! No more plants! No more trees! No more grasses! No more herbs! No more living creatures! No more beasts! No more livestock! No more wild animals! No more creeping things! No more fishes! No more birds! No more world! No more universe! Nothing will be there! There will be no place for them.

On the Last Day, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will destroy the whole earth by HIS fire of wrath of fervent heat. What a dreadful GOD our GOD is!

**51. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE END OF THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN**

*“While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.”*

II Corinthians 4:18

What is seen by our eyes is temporary, but what is unseen by our eyes is eternal. We see the earth, the sun, the moon, the stars, etc., by our eyes. They are all temporary things. They are not eternal things.

On the Last Day, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will destroy the things, which are seen. Then, no more temporary things! No temporary things will be seen any more!

The Last Day will be the day of the end of the things, which are seen. Then, no one can see these temporary things.

Now, heaven, the kingdom of GOD is not seen. So, everyone must prepare for the eternal kingdom of GOD, the kingdom of heaven. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**52. THE LAST DAY—THE LAST OR THE FINAL DAY OF THE WORLD**

The Last Day will be the Last Day of the world; the Last Day will be the Last Day of the heavens (the skies); the Last Day will be the Last Day of the earth; the Last Day will be the Last Day of the universe; the Last Day will be the Last Day of the sun, the moon, the planets and the stars. The Last Day will be the final day of all seen things. The Last Day will be the Last Day of all seen things.

So, everyone should fear this last and final day of the world; everyone should fear this last and final day of the heavens; everyone should fear this last and final day of the universe; everyone should fear this last and final day of all seen things.

To escape this last and final day, this precious and rare book “ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!” is written by the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, for the people of the whole world.

**53. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF THE END OF THE WORLD (THE AGE)**

The Last Day will be the day of the end of the world or the day of the end of the age. Then, no more days or no more times or no more weeks or no more months or no more years or no more seasons or no more occasions or no more opportunities will be there.

Therefore, everyone should be very careful about their present day life. They should not waste their time. They should be wise, and they should walk according to the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"See then that ye walk circumspectly (carefully), not as fools, but as wise, Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the LORD is."*

Ephesians 5:15-17

To escape the day of the end of the world, everyone should do the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

On the Last Day, the world will be gone, and its place will be remembered no more, and its history will be remembered no more. What a tremendous thing it is!

**54. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE NEW HEAVENS IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS WILL APPEAR**

*"...Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away."*

Hebrews 8:13

The present heavens are considered as the old heavens or the first heavens. The present heavens (skies) are filthy, abominable, and impure in the sight of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"...Yea, the heavens are not clean in HIS sight."*

Job 15:15

The devil (Satan), the evil spirits, the evil forces of wickedness in the skies, and the people of the darkness of this world have made these present heavens filthy, abominable and impure (Ephesians 6:11-12). So, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has created the new heavens in which righteousness and holiness dwell.

*"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven*

*and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea."*

Revelation 21:1

*"Nevertheless we, according to HIS promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness."*

II Peter 3:13

Hence, everyone should look beyond these present heavens to the new heavens in which righteousness and holiness dwell.

On the Last Day, the old heavens in which unholiness and unrighteousness dwell will disappear, and the new heavens in which holiness and righteousness dwell will gloriously appear for HIS people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Last Day will be the day of appearing of the new heavens of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the new heavens in which righteousness and holiness dwell. These old heavens are not worthy to be compared with the most glorious new heavens. What glorious new heavens they are!

#### **55. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE NEW EARTH IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS WILL APPEAR**

The present earth is considered as the old earth or the first earth. This earth is filthy, abominable, impure, corrupt and filled with violence in the sight of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"The earth also was corrupt before GOD, and the earth was filled with violence. And GOD looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth."*

Genesis 6:11-12

The devil (Satan), the evil spirits, and the wicked sinners have made this present earth filthy, abominable, impure, corrupt and violent. So, our LORD JESUS CHRIST has created the new earth in which righteousness and holiness dwell (Revelation 21:1; II Peter 3:13).

Hence, everyone should look beyond this present world to the new earth in which righteousness and holiness dwell.

On the Last Day, the old earth in which unrighteousness and unholiness dwell will disappear, and the new earth in which righteousness and holiness dwell will gloriously appear for HIS people. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The Last Day will be the day of appearing of the new earth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the new earth in which righteousness and holiness dwell. This old earth is not worthy to be compared with the most glorious new earth. What a glorious new earth it is!

The former things (the old heavens and the old earth) will not be remembered, nor will they come into mind. The new heavens and the new earth will endure before our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.”*

Isaiah 65:17

*“For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before ME, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain.”*

Isaiah 66:22

These new heavens will be the new heavens of eternal holiness and righteousness. They will never wax old. This new earth will be the new earth of eternal holiness and righteousness. It will never wax old. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### **56. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE HOLY CITY, THE NEW JERUSALEM OR THE KINGDOM OF GOD WILL BE ESTABLISHED ON THE NEW EARTH**

*“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from GOD out of heaven, ... And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from GOD, Having the glory of GOD: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal.”*

Revelation 21:1-2, 10-11

On the Last Day, the new heavens and the new earth will gloriously appear for HIS people. The great glory of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be seen on HIS people. Then, the holy city (the great city), the New Jerusalem or the holy city, the everlasting Zion or the holy city, the everlasting Canaan or the holy city, the kingdom of

GOD or the holy city, the kingdom of heaven will descend out of heaven from GOD, and it will be established on the new earth for the people of GOD, the saved people.

This will be the most holy city of GOD. This will be the great city of GOD. This will be the everlasting city of GOD; this will be the everlasting New Jerusalem of GOD; this will be the everlasting Zion of GOD; this will be the everlasting Canaan of GOD; this will be the everlasting kingdom of GOD; this will be the everlasting kingdom of heaven. It will be a kingdom which cannot be shaken; it will be a kingdom which cannot be moved (Hebrews 12:28); it will be a building of GOD, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens (II Corinthians 5:1); it will be the everlasting kingdom of the eternal GOD; it will be the everlasting kingdom of the loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The holy city of GOD or the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven or the everlasting New Jerusalem or the everlasting Zion or the everlasting Canaan is the one and the same kingdom or the one and the same place. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

On the Last Day, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will establish HIS everlasting kingdom on the new earth, for HIS people; HE will establish HIS everlasting kingdom on the new earth, for the inheritance of the saints in the light (Colossians 1:12); HE will establish HIS everlasting kingdom on the new earth for HIS saints, those who have made a glorious covenant with HIM by sacrifice (Psalm 50:5; Romans 12:1).

To enter into the kingdom of GOD, this precious and rare book "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" — "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!" is written by the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, for all the people of the world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 57. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST WILL GATHER HIS SPECIAL TREASURE INTO HIS KINGDOM

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's **special treasure** is HIS people, the saved people; HIS special wealth is HIS people, the redeemed people. They always obey HIS voice and keep HIS covenant. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!



*"Now therefore, if ye will obey MY voice indeed, and keep MY covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto ME above all people: for all the earth is MINE: And ye shall be unto ME a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. ..."*

Exodus 19:5-6

They are the people of GOD; they are the redeemed; they are the saints; they are the righteous; they are the holy; they are the wise; they are a chosen people; they are a royal priesthood; they are our GOD's own special people; they are the blessed.

On the Last Day, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will gather HIS special treasure into HIS eternal kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD. HE will pity HIS people, just as in compassion a man pities his own son who serves him. HE will have pity on HIS own special treasure.

*"And they shall be MINE, saith the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up MY jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him."*

Malachi 3:17

'Jewels' means 'special treasure'.

*"Like as a father pitieth his children, so the LORD pitieth them that fear HIM."*

Psalms 103:13

GOD's people will be a crown of glory in the most holy hand of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, and a royal diadem in HIS most holy hand.

*"Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the LORD, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy GOD."*

Isaiah 62:3

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will take delight in HIS people; HE will rejoice over HIS people with gladness; HE will quiet HIS people with HIS love; HE will rejoice over HIS people with singing; HE will make HIS people the everlasting excellency; they will receive a double portion; they will inherit a double portion; they will rejoice in their inheritance; they will come to the everlasting Zion or the everlasting Canaan or the everlasting New Jerusalem or the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD with singing and with everlasting joy on their

heads; everlasting joy will be theirs; they will obtain everlasting joy and gladness, and sorrow, sighing, crying, tears, pains, thirst and hunger will flee away.

*"The LORD thy GOD in the midst of thee is Mighty; HE will save, HE will rejoice over thee with joy; HE will rest (quiet you) in HIS love, HE will joy over thee with singing."*

Zephaniah 3:17

*"For your shame ye shall have double (double honour); and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be unto them."*

Isaiah 61:7

*"And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in MY people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying."*

Isaiah 65:19

*"And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."*

Isaiah 35:10

In order to acquire this special treasure, the saved or the redeemed people, our LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE was pierced and crushed. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE shed all HIS most holy blood. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE suffered and died. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE was buried. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE rose again the third day. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE appeared to HIS disciples and others, over a period of forty days. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE ascended into heaven. In order to acquire this special treasure, HE descended upon the earth as the HOLY SPIRIT, on the day of Pentecost. These are all unchangeable truths; these are all never changing truths. The supreme sacrifice of our LORD JESUS CHRIST for this special treasure, the saved or the redeemed is not imaginable. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

On the Last Day, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will gather HIS special treasure, the saved or the redeemed into HIS most glorious

kingdom, the kingdom of heaven. What a loving GOD our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

**58. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE PEOPLE OF GOD WILL SEE THE MOST GLORIOUS HEAVEN**

On the Last Day, the people of GOD or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated people will find the most glorious heaven, the kingdom of GOD absolutely astonishing. On that day, they will be astonished to see a great and high wall of heaven. The wall will be made of very precious jasper stone of great brilliance. On that day, they will be astonished to see the twelve foundations of the wall of the most holy city (heaven), and on them they will see the names of the twelve apostles of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. On that day, they will be astonished to see these foundations of the most holy city wall, decorated with all kinds of very precious stones. On that day, they will be astonished to see the **twelve gates** of the most holy city. And they will see the twelve angels at the gates. On the gates, they will see the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel. The twelve gates will be twelve invaluable pearls; each gate will be made of a single pearl of very great brilliance. On that day, they will be astonished to see the street of the most holy city, made of pure gold, like transparent glass (Revelation 21:10-21). What a wonderful city it is! What a holy city it is! What a wonderful heaven it is!

Again, in heaven, the people of GOD will be astonished to see HIS sky-high upper houses; they will be astonished to see very beautiful upper houses, with many beautiful storeys with many beautiful rooms, built by GOD, not made with hands. They will see the astonishing and beautifully decorated rooms of the upper houses, decorated by GOD, not decorated with hands. How wonderful these upper houses are! How beautiful these upper houses are!

*"It is HE that buildeth HIS stories (storeys) in the heaven, ... The LORD is HIS name."*

Amos 9:6

Besides, in heaven, the people of GOD will see with astonishment the pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the most glorious throne of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Revelation 22:1).

What a wonderful river it is! What a beautiful river it is! What a holy river it is!

Furthermore, in heaven, the people of GOD will be astounded to see the tree of life, on each side of the pure river of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month (Revelation 22:2). What a beautiful tree it is! What a sweet-tasting fruit it is! What a fresh-tasting fruit it is!

On seeing this most wonderful and holy city (heaven), the people of GOD will be greatly astonished; they will be greatly surprised; they will be overwhelmed with great joy; they will rejoice with great joy; they will leap with great joy; they will jump with great joy; they will spring with overwhelming joy. What a joyful day it is! What a joyful heaven it is!

#### **59. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE PEOPLE OF GOD WILL ENTER INTO HEAVEN**

On the Last Day, the people of GOD, the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD, with their own GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will enter into heaven with great joy, with their own Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will enter into heaven with overwhelming joy, with their own Redeemer, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will enter into heaven with great joy, with the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The decor of HIS kingdom will be of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is the only decorator of heaven; HE is the only designer of heaven; HE is the only builder of heaven, the kingdom of GOD. No one will be able to decorate like this. No one will be able to design like this. No one will be able to build like this. What a wonderful decor it is! What a wonderful decoration it is! What a wonderful design it is!

Heaven, the kingdom of GOD will be very decorative. It will be very beautifully decorated with invaluable pearls and with very precious stones and with very pure gold. No one will be able to explain its beauty. What a beautiful heaven it is!

Heaven, the kingdom of GOD will be very pleasing to the eye for ever and ever; it will be very pleasant to the sight for ever and ever. No weariness will be caused to the eyes. No weariness will be caused to the mind. No weariness will be caused to the spirit. No weariness will be caused to the body. No weariness will be caused to the soul. No tiredness or boredom will be caused to HIS people. They will be rejoicing greatly with their own GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever. What a rejoicing heaven it is! What a joyful heaven it is!

In heaven, the people of GOD will praise HIM; they will give thanks unto HIM; they will come before HIM with thanksgiving; they will sing unto HIM; they will come before HIM with joyful songs; they will make a joyful shout to the LORD; they will shout joyfully before the LORD; they will be joyful together before the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE is the blessed and only Potentate, the KING of kings and LORD of lords. HE is the immortal GOD, dwelling in an unapproachable light (I Timothy 6:15-16). What a wonderful GOD our GOD is! What a mighty GOD our GOD is!

**60. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE PEOPLE OF GOD WILL RECEIVE THEIR TREASURES FROM GOD**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*“But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.”*

St. Matthew 6:20-21

To the people of GOD or to the saved, storing up for themselves treasures in heaven, will be one of the glorious benefits. On the Last Day, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will give back their wonderful treasures with glorious rewards and prizes. And on that day, particularly, the true servants of GOD or the true ministers of GOD will receive their wonderful treasures with a number of special rewards and prizes, for their true and hard labour; and they will also get their whole salary in one lump sum with all benefits. Large sum! Very large sum! Special rewards! Special prizes! Wonderful treasures! What a joyful day it is!

*"...The labourer is worthy of his reward."*

I Timothy 5:18

**61. THE LAST DAY — THE DAY, THE PEOPLE OF GOD WILL WORSHIP GOD FACE TO FACE IN HEAVEN**

In heaven, the people of GOD or the saints will be merry with our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They will be in great joy with our LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will be in overwhelming joy with our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

They will be given the fruits of the tree of life to eat (Revelation 2:7; 22:2). They will be given the waters of the pure river of life to drink (Revelation 7:17; 22:1). They will be clothed in white garments, clean and bright invaluable garments of salvation (Revelation 3:5; Isaiah 61:10). They will be arrayed in clean and bright invaluable robe of righteousness (Revelation 19:8; Isaiah 61:10). They will rejoice greatly in the LORD; their souls will be joyful in their GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will also write on them HIS most glorious and wonderful new name. HIS most glorious and wonderful new name will be on their foreheads. What a wonderful new name it is! What a glorious new name it is!

*"...And I will write upon him MY new name."*

Revelation 3:12

*"And they shall see HIS face; and HIS name shall be in their foreheads."*

Revelation 22:4

They will be given very beautiful crowns; they will be given very precious and wonderful crowns. They will be given very beautiful thrones; they will be given very precious and wonderful thrones. They will sit on their beautiful thrones, with their beautiful crowns on their heads. They will sit on their wonderful thrones, with HIS most wonderful and glorious new name on their foreheads. What a pleasant sight it is! What a fascinating sight it is!

With many wonderful crowns on HIS most holy head, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will wonderfully sit on HIS most glorious throne. HE will sit on HIS most glorious throne; with a most glorious name

written on HIM, that no one knows except HIMSELF. This most glorious name of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will never be revealed to anyone. This most glorious name of our GOD will be hidden and unrevealed for ever and ever. HE hides HIS most glorious name HIMSELF.

*"...And on HIS head were many crowns; and HE had a name written, that no man knew, but HE HIMSELF."*

Revelation 19:12

*"Verily THOU art a GOD that hidest THYSELF, O GOD of Israel, the Saviour."*

Isaiah 45:15

These most wonderful crowns of our LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS most glorious hidden name will reveal HIS most high power and authority. On HIS most wonderful and fearful throne, HE will sit very beautifully and majestically, with HIS most glorious crowns on HIS most glorious head and with HIS most glorious name (hidden name) written on HIM. No one will be able to describe HIS beauty or majesty. No one will be able to describe the beauty of HIS throne. No one will be able to describe the beauty of HIS crowns. No one will be able to describe the beauty of HIS name (hidden name) written on HIM. What a wonderful GOD our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is! What a beautiful GOD our GOD is! What a fearful GOD our GOD is! What a majestic GOD our GOD is! What a glorious GOD our GOD is!

In heaven, there will be no sun or moon to shine. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is its light (Revelation 21:23). HE is the everlasting light. HE is the true light. HE is the Sun of Righteousness (Malachi 4:2). HE will shine in HIS kingdom for ever and ever. What a glorious light our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is! What a glorious Sun of Righteousness our GOD is!

On the Last Day, in heaven, the people of GOD or the saints will worship GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST face to face; they will bow down and worship HIM; they will fall on their faces and worship HIM; they will serve the LORD with fear and they will rejoice with trembling; they will give thanks at the remembrance of HIS holiness and righteousness. Their service of GOD will be the true service. Their worship of GOD will be the true worship. They will worship HIM in

Spirit and in truth. They will serve HIM in Spirit and in truth. They will be the true worshippers of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever. During their worship, they will get immense happiness and blessings of GOD. No one will attain such happiness or blessings ever before. What a blissful life it is! What a blessed life it is! What a happy life it is!

For the saints or the people of GOD or the saved, the Last Day will be the first day of worship in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. On that day, in heaven, they will worship the most wonderful and beautiful GOD face to face; they will worship the LORD of lords and the KING of kings face to face; they will worship the only Potentate face to face; they will worship the immortal GOD, dwelling in unapproachable light face to face. They will be the blessed for ever and ever. What a blessed people they are!

**62. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, THE PEOPLE OF GOD WILL START THEIR EVERLASTING REIGN IN HEAVEN**

In heaven, the kingdom of GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will make HIS saints or HIS saved people kings and priests to serve HIM and to reign over HIS kingdom with HIM. HE is GOD; HE is GOD, the FATHER. HE is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

*“And hath made us kings and priests unto GOD and HIS FATHER; to HIM be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.”*

Revelation 1:6

The clean and bright invaluable white garments will be their priestly or kingly clothing (see also the above point 61). No such clothing will be seen in this world. What a wonderful clothing it is! What a beautiful clothing it is!

HIS saints will reign over HIS kingdom with HIM for ever and ever; they will sit on their thrones, with their crowns on their heads and reign over HIS kingdom with HIM for ever and ever. Their reign with HIM will be a most glorious reign; their reign with HIM will be a most blessed reign; their reign with HIM will be a most peaceful reign; their reign with HIM will be a reign of righteousness; their reign with HIM



will be a reign of holiness; their reign with HIM will be a most happy reign. They will reign over HIS kingdom with HIM, with great joy and happiness for ever and ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST will see their glorious reign, and HE will be very happy about HIS children. HE will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there will be no more death, no more sorrow, no more grief, no more pain, no more crying, no more tribulations, and no more sufferings. In their reign with CHRIST, there will be everlasting happiness and joy.

*“And GOD shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.”*

Revelation 21:4

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST will satisfy them with the fullness of HIS house plentifully; HE will make them drink of the river of HIS pleasures abundantly (Psalm 36:8). HE will extend HIS peace to them as a river and HE will extend HIS righteousness to them as the waves of the sea (Isaiah 48:18). Out of their hearts will flow rivers of living water, the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (St. John 7:38). The kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven will be filled with righteousness, holiness, peace and joy in the HOLY SPIRIT for ever and ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

On the Last Day, the people of GOD or the saved people or the saints will start their glorious and everlasting reign in heaven with our LORD JESUS CHRIST. What a glorious reign it is! What a peaceful reign it is! What a happy reign it is! What a blessed reign it is! What a blissful reign it is!

### **63. THE LAST DAY—THE MOST BLESSED DAY OF THE SAINTS OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**

The Last Day will be the most joyful day of the saints of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. That day will be the most blessed day of the saints of the LORD. The saints or the saved people of GOD will praise GOD with great joy; they will give thanks to GOD with great joy; they will move with great joy; they will smile with great joy; they will

be overwhelmed by great joy; they will shout with great joy. What a joyful day it is!

The saints or the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will gloriously shine in heaven by the glory of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever. No one will be able to explain their glory; no one will be able to explain their glorious shining; no one will be able to explain their charm or beauty. They will gloriously reign over HIS kingdom with HIM as kings and priests for ever and ever. Praise The LORD! Alleluia! What a glorious reign it is! What a wonderful reign it is!

*"Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their FATHER. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."*

St. Matthew 13:43

If a man/woman forfeits his/her soul, and gains the whole world, then there will be no gain in his/her birth as a man/woman. If a man/woman forfeits his/her soul, then he/she will be thrown into hell, the everlasting fire.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST asks,

*"For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"*

St. Mark 8:36-37

To escape hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, this rare and precious book "ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!" is written by the will of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, for the people of the whole world.

#### **64. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY, ALL THE PROMISES OF GOD WILL BE FULFILLED**

What our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has promised, HE is able to fulfil fully and perfectly.

*"...What HE had promised, HE was able also to perform."*

Romans 4:21

On the Last Day, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will fulfil all HIS promises fully and perfectly. HE will fulfil all HIS promises in the Holy

Bible, the Holy Scriptures fully and perfectly. On that day, the divine Word of GOD will be fulfilled fully and perfectly. On that day, all the promises of GOD will be fulfilled fully and perfectly. No Word of GOD will be left unfulfilled. No promises of GOD will be left unfulfilled. What a truthful GOD our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is!

#### 65. THE LAST DAY—THE VERY LONG DAY

When you read about this Last Day and its happenings, you can very well understand that it will be the very long day; it will be the long-drawn day; it will be the longest day; it will be the greatest day. How great a day it will be!

#### 66. THE LAST DAY—THE DAY OF EVERLASTING DESTRUCTION TO THE SINNERS AND THE DAY OF EVERLASTING BLISS TO THE SAINTS

On the Last Day, the sinners will be punished with everlasting destruction in hell; they will be punished with everlasting trouble and distress in hell; they will be in everlasting contempt and shame in hell. On the Last Day, the sinners or the wicked, and all the nations that forget GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will be thrown into hell, the everlasting fire. The Last Day will be the day of everlasting destruction to the sinners. They are the foolish people.

*"The wicked shall be turned (thrown) into hell, and all the nations that forget GOD."*

Psalm 9:17

On the Last Day, the saints or the saved will be endowed with everlasting bliss in heaven, the everlasting kingdom of GOD. They will be in heaven with CHRIST for ever and ever, with everlasting life. They will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who turn many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. The Last Day will be the day of everlasting bliss to the saints. They are the wise people.

*"And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever."*

Daniel 12:3

## 2. HOW TO ESCAPE THE WRATH OF GOD ?

During the caught-up of the believers at the LORD's coming, the unbelievers or the spiritually dead people will be left abandoned. As there will the eagles (vultures) be gathered together, wherever the dead body (corpse) is, trembling, distress, fright and wrath of GOD about judgment and hell will cover the unbelievers or the spiritually dead people (St. Luke 17:34-37).

To escape the wrath of GOD on the Last Day, everyone should obtain repentance from sins, forgiveness (remission) of sins, salvation (deliverance) from sins and redemption from sins; everyone should obtain the experience of divine goodness and the experience of born-again or born-from-above; everyone should obtain the experience of holiness and holy life; everyone should obtain the experience of the HOLY SPIRIT or the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT; everyone should have a prayer life; and everyone should grow in his/her spiritual life. Then only you will be able to escape the wrath of GOD on the Last Day or the day of the end of the world (the age).

Further, after getting salvation (deliverance) from sins, everyone should receive immersion baptism in the name of the FATHER and of the SON and of the HOLY SPIRIT. After receiving baptism, everyone should live as believers of the church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and they should live by faith.

Furthermore, the believers of the church should partake in the LORD's Supper or the Holy Communion.

Besides, the believers of the church should gloriously live in CHRIST always. They should live as a new creation. By living according to the Word of GOD, everyone should keep their way pure.

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

*"Wherewithal shall (How can) a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to THY Word."*

Psalms 119:9

Furthermore, the believers should be true worshippers of CHRIST. They should worship GOD in Spirit and in truth. They should serve the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST acceptably with reverence and godly fear. Then only will they be able to escape the wrath of GOD on the last day or the day of the end of the world (the age), and enter into the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven, a kingdom that cannot be shaken. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve GOD acceptably with reverence and godly fear."*

Hebrews 12:28

### **3. PERILOUS TIMES OF THE PRESENT AGE**

The present age is the present evil age. The present evil age is filled with the worst satanic system. The unsaved who are dead in offences and sins, walk according to the present evil age. In the present evil age, the evil condition of the Christian society or the corrupted situation of Christianity is openly seen. Merely an outward form of godliness is seen in many of the Christians.

'The **Brethren**' or 'the Brethren Movement' or 'the Brethren Assembly' is one of the worst cults. The brethren have no belief in the HOLY SPIRIT and they are highly brainwashing many impressionable people with their highly deceptive teachings. Brethrens are self-conceited; they have their own ways of interpretation giving importance only to worldly things. They run down, criticize and do not accept spiritual values. They live in their own frame of mind and within their own frame of reference. So, be very careful about this worst movement.

In the present evil age, many of the Christians are living as lovers of self (II Timothy 3:2), lovers of money or wealth (II Timothy 3:2; I Timothy 6:10), lovers of pleasure (II Timothy 3:4), lovers of husbands (I Corinthians 7:34), lovers of wives (I Corinthians 7:33) and lovers of children (Genesis 48:8-20); and nonlovers of good (II Timothy 3:3), nonlovers of GOD (II Timothy 3:4) and nonlovers of GOD's will (I Peter 4:2).

In the present evil age, Christianity is in decline. The present evil age is in the last days perilous times, filled with apostasy. See II Timothy 3:1-7 at page 135-136.

Further, in the present evil age, many of the people are living as lovers of the course of this world to fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind (Ephesians 2:2-3), lovers of Satan, the devil (I Timothy 5:15; Ephesians 2:2), lovers of the world for the lusts of the flesh (James 4:1, 4), lovers of lasciviousness and all uncleanness (Ephesians 4:19), lovers of youthful lusts (II Timothy 2:22), lovers of fornication or sexual immorality (I Corinthians 6:18), lovers of unrighteousness (II Thessalonians 2:12), lovers of sin (I Peter 4:1), lovers of drunkenness or debauchery (I Peter 4:3), lovers of revellings or revelries or carousings or orgies (I Peter 4:3), lovers of the drunkard and the glutton (Proverbs 23:20-21), lovers of drinking parties or drinking bouts (I Peter 4:3), lovers of evil men (Proverbs 24:1-2), lovers of angry men and furious men (Proverbs 22:24-25), lovers of false humility (Colossians 2:18), lovers of abominable idolatries (I Peter 4:3; I Corinthians 10:14), lovers of angel worship (Colossians 2:18), lovers of self-willed worship (Colossians 2:23) and lovers of lying vanities (Jonah 2:8; Ecclesiastes 11:10; Jeremiah 2:5).

Further, the apostle Peter warns that in the last days of the present evil age, scoffers (mockers) walking according to their own lusts will ridicule the glorious promise of CHRIST's second coming. For a long time their judgment has not become ineffective and their destruction does not slumber (II Peter 2:3).

*"Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after (according to) their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of HIS coming? ..."*

II Peter 3:3-4

## GOD IS WONDERFUL ! GOD IS TERRIBLE ! GOD'S FINAL CALL TO BE THE ONE PEOPLE !

**Our** LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is wonderful and HE is terrible. HE is a wonderful and terrible GOD. HE does wonderful and terrible works. HE is the Most High GOD. HE is the great KING, the KING of kings. HE is the LORD, the LORD of lords.

**“...And HIS name shall be called Wonderful, ...”**

**Isaiah 9:6**

**“For the LORD Most High is terrible; HE is a great King over all the earth.”**

**Psalms 47:2**

Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls all to **“repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand”** (St. Matthew 4:17).

### **1. GOD'S MIGHTY POWER DEMONSTRATED** **[18 INSTANCES]**

#### **1. THE GREAT FLOOD DESTROYED THE WHOLE WORLD**

In the days of Noah, the whole world was destroyed by a great universal Flood because of people's wickedness and sins. This great universal Flood is presented as a fact of history in the Holy Bible. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST referred to this Flood as an example of the

worldwide judgment to accompany HIS second coming (St. Matthew 24:37-39).

**2. SODOM AND GOMORRAH WERE DESTROYED BY FIRE AND BRIMSTONE FROM HEAVEN**

In the days of Lot, the people of Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah, and Zeboim were destroyed by fire and brimstone from heaven, because of their filthy conduct and sins. This great destruction by fire and brimstone is presented as a fact of history in the Holy Bible. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST referred to this great destruction also as an illustration of the universal judgment to accompany HIS second coming (St. Luke 17:28-30).

**3. THE LORD GOD DIVIDED THE RED SEA TERRIBLY**

The miracle at the Red sea, reveals our LORD GOD's greatest act of redemption during the Old Testament period. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST redeemed HIS people, the Israelites by a miraculous crossing in deep water (I Corinthians 10:1-4).

**4. THE ANGEL OF THE LORD GOD KILLED 185,000 ASSYRIANS IN ONE NIGHT**

Hezekiah, the king of Judah was no match for Sennacherib, the king of Assyria. The blasphemous Sennacherib put Jerusalem under siege. By his command, Rabshakeh, his chief aide greatly blasphemed against the LORD GOD. When Hezekiah heard this, he took all his concerns to the LORD GOD in prayer, believing that GOD would vindicate HIS most holy name and deliver Jerusalem. Isaiah, the prophet also assured Hezekiah that the LORD GOD would deal with the blasphemous Sennacherib.

The LORD GOD heard the prayer of faith and HE intervened through HIS angel, who killed 185,000 Assyrians in one night. After returning to his own country, Sennacherib's own sons assassinated him also (II Kings 19:35-37).

**5. THE LORD GOD DIVIDED THE RIVER JORDAN WONDERFULLY**

The LORD GOD divided the river Jordan to exalt and bless Joshua, the servant of the LORD. When the soles of the feet of the priests



who bore the ark of the LORD GOD—the LORD of all the earth—rested in the waters of Jordan, its waters were cut off; the waters flowing downstream were cut off and the waters that came down from upstream stood still and rose up in a heap very far away; the waters that came down from upstream stopped flowing and the waters flowing down to the Salt sea were cut off. So the Israelites miraculously crossed over opposite Jericho. All the Israelites miraculously crossed over on dry ground. The LORD GOD magnified Joshua, the servant of the LORD, in the sight of all the Israelites. See Joshua 3.

## 6. ISRAEL'S VICTORY AT JERICHO

Jericho was securely shut up because of the Israelites; none went out, and none came in. In obedience to the command of the LORD GOD, Joshua with all his armed men marched around the city once and returned to the camp. They did this for six days. On the seventh day, they rose up early at daybreak and marched around the city seven times. The seventh time around, when the priests blew the trumpets, Joshua commanded the people,

*"Shout; for the LORD hath given you the city."*

Joshua 6:16

Accordingly, the people shouted when the priests blew the trumpets. When the people heard the sound of the trumpet, and the people shouted with a great shout, the wall collapsed and crumbled to dust. Then the people went up into the city, every man straight before him, and they took the city and devoted it to GOD. See Joshua 6:1-20.

## 7. THE SUN STOOD STILL AND THE MOON STOPPED

Joshua fought against the five kings of the Amorites, the king of Jerusalem, the king of Hebron, the king of Jarmuth, the king of Lachish, the king of Eglon. The LORD GOD discomfited (confused) them before the Israelites. They killed the Amorites with a great slaughter at Gibeon.

As the Amorites fled before Israel on the road down from Beth-horon to Azekah, the LORD GOD cast down great hailstones on them

from the sky. There were more who died from the hailstones than those whom the Israelites killed with the sword.

On the day the LORD gave the Amorites over to Israel, Joshua said to the LORD in the sight of Israel,

*"Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon."*

Joshua 10:12

So the sun stood still, and the moon stopped till the people avenged themselves upon their enemies. The sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and did not hasten to go down for about a whole day. There has been no day like that before it or after it, a day when the LORD heeded the voice of a man; the LORD GOD fought for Israel. See Joshua 10:1-14.

#### 8. THE SWORD OF THE LORD AND OF GIDEON !

The Spirit of the LORD GOD came upon Gideon, the servant of GOD. Gideon with all his thirty-two thousand men went to fight against the Midianites, the Amalekites and all the children of the east. They were as numerous as locusts; and their camels were without number, as the sand on the seashore. The LORD said to Gideon,

*"The people that are with thee are too many for ME to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel vaunt themselves against ME, saying, Mine own hand hath saved me. Now therefore go to, proclaim in the ears of the people, saying, Whosoever is fearful and afraid, let him return and depart early from mount Gilead. ..."*

Judges 7:2-3

So twenty-two thousand men returned, and ten thousand remained. And the LORD said to Gideon,

*"The people are yet too many; bring them down unto the water, and I will try (test) them for thee there: and it shall be, that of whom I say unto thee, This shall go with thee, the same shall go with thee; and of whomsoever I say unto thee, This shall not go with thee, the same shall not go."*

Judges 7:4

So Gideon brought the men down to the water. And the LORD said to Gideon,

*“Every one that lappeth of the water with his tongue, as a dog lappeth, him shalt thou set by himself; likewise every one that boweth down upon his knees to drink.”*

Judges 7:5

Three hundred men lapped with their hands to their mouths. All the rest bowed down on their knees to drink. And the LORD said to Gideon,

*“By the three hundred men that lapped will I save you, and deliver the Midianites into thine hand: and let all the other people go every man unto his place.”*

Judges 7:7

So Gideon sent away all the rest of the Israelites to their tents, and retained those three hundred men. They took provisions and their trumpets in their hands. During that night the LORD said to Gideon,

*“Arise, get thee down unto the host; for I have delivered it into thine hand. But if thou fear to go down, go thou with Phurah thy servant down to the host: And thou shalt hear what they say; and afterward shall thine hands be strengthened to go down unto the host.”*

Judges 7:9-11

So Gideon and Phurah went down to the outpost of the armed men who were in the camp. When they arrived, there was a man telling a dream to his friend. He said,

*“Behold, I dreamed a dream, and, lo, a cake of barley bread tumbled into the host of Midian, and came unto a tent, and smote it that it fell, and overturned it, that the tent lay along.”*

Judges 7:13

His friend answered and said,

*“This is nothing else save the sword of Gideon the son of Joash, a man of Israel: for into his hand hath GOD delivered Midian, and all the host.”*

Judges 7:14

When Gideon heard the dream and its interpretation, he worshipped the LORD GOD. Then he returned to the camp of Israel and called out,

*"Arise; for the LORD hath delivered into your hand the host of Midian."*

Judges 7:15

Then Gideon divided the three hundred men into three companies, and he placed trumpets and empty pitchers in the hands of all of them, with lamps within the pitchers. Gideon told them,

*"Look on me, and do likewise: and, behold, when I come to the outside of the camp, it shall be that, as I do, so shall ye do. When I blow with a trumpet, I and all that are with me, then blow ye the trumpets also on every side of all the camp, and say, The sword of the LORD, and of Gideon."*

Judges 7:17-18

Gideon and the hundred men with him reached the outpost of the camp at the beginning of the middle watch. They blew their trumpets and broke the pitchers that were in their hands. The three companies blew their trumpets and broke the pitchers—they held the lamps in their left hands and the trumpets in the right hands for blowing—and they shouted,

*"The sword of the LORD, and of Gideon."*

Judges 7:20

Every man stood in his place all around the camp of the Midianites. The whole army of the Midianites ran and cried out and fled. When the three hundred blew the trumpets, the LORD GOD set every man's sword against his friend throughout the whole camp; and the army of the Midianites fled. Then the Israelites gathered together and pursued the Midianites and defeated them. See Judges 7.

## 9. THE PHILISTINES' SIN WITH THE ARK OF GOD

The ark of GOD (the ark of the covenant) symbolized the great ruling presence of GOD among HIS people. Therefore the ark of GOD was placed in the Most Holy Place of the tabernacle—the sanctuary of GOD or the dwelling place of GOD.

The gold-covered ark of the covenant contained the gold pot of manna, Aaron's rod that had budded, and the two stone tablets of the covenant containing the Ten Commandments of GOD (Hebrews 9:4).

The Philistines took the ark of GOD and brought it from Ebenezer to Ashdod. They brought the ark of GOD into the house (temple) of Dagon and set the ark of GOD beside Dagon (a Philistine idol). When the people of Ashdod arose early in the morning, there was Dagon, fallen on its face to the earth before the ark of the LORD GOD. So they took Dagon and set it in its place again. And when they arose early the next morning, there was Dagon, fallen on its face to the earth before the ark of the LORD GOD. The head of Dagon and both the palms of its hands were broken off and were lying on the threshold; only the body remained.

The hand of the LORD GOD was heavy upon the people of Ashdod and its territory. HE brought devastation upon them and struck them with emerods (tumours) in their secret parts. Since the hand of the LORD GOD was heavy upon the people of Ashdod, they sent the ark of the LORD GOD to Gath. There also, the hand of the LORD GOD was heavy upon the people of Gath; HE brought devastation upon them and struck them (both small and great) with emerods in their secret parts. Therefore they sent the ark of the LORD GOD to Ekron. As the ark of the GOD of Israel was entering Ekron, the people of Ekron cried out,

*"They have brought about the ark of the GOD of Israel to us, to slay us and our people."*

I Samuel 5:10

So they called together all the rulers of the Philistines and said,

*"Send away the ark of the GOD of Israel, and let it go again to his own place, that it slay us not, and our people:"*

I Samuel 5:11

For there was a deadly destruction throughout all the city; the hand of the LORD GOD was heavy upon it. Those who did not die were stricken with emerods in their secret parts; and the outcry of the city went up to heaven. See I Samuel 5.

## 10. ISRAEL'S VICTORY OVER THE PHILISTINES

The Philistines drew near to battle against Israel. But that day the LORD thundered with a great thunder against the Philistines. The LORD GOD discomfited (confused) the Philistines. They were overcome before Israel. The men of Israel struck them down from Mizpeh, as far as Bethcar. See I Samuel 7:10-11.

## 11. THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD ON DAVID

The Spirit of the LORD GOD came upon David. He was the second and greatest king of Israel. He began as a shepherd. He demonstrated his courage, strength and faithfulness by killing a lion and a bear that had attacked his flock.

David became a national hero when he killed the Philistine giant Goliath. He killed the Philistine with a sling and with a stone. The Philistine defied the armies of Israel. He was over nine feet tall. (His height was six cubits and a span.) When the Philistine arose and came and drew near to attack him, David ran quickly towards the battle line to meet the Philistine. David put his hand in his bag and took out a stone; and he slung it and struck the Philistine in his forehead. The stone sank into his forehead, and he fell on his face to the earth. David killed the Philistine giant Goliath in the name of the LORD of hosts, the GOD of the armies of Israel, whom Goliath had defied. By the Spirit of the LORD GOD, David killed the Philistine giant Goliath. The Philistines were overcome before Israel. See I Samuel 16:13; 17:1-58.

## 12. THE GOD WHO ANSWERS BY FIRE—HE IS GOD (THE CONTEST ON MOUNT CARMEL)

Consequent on the request of the prophet Elijah (Elias), Ahab, the king of Israel sent word throughout all Israel and gathered all the four hundred and fifty prophets of Baal together on mount Carmel. Then Elijah went before the people and said,

*"How long halt ye between two opinions? if the LORD be GOD, follow HIM: but if Baal, then follow him."*

I Kings 18:21

But the people answered him not a word.

Elijah was the only one of the LORD's prophets left, but Baal had four hundred and fifty prophets. Elijah said to the people,

*"I, even I only, remain a prophet of the LORD; but Baal's prophets are four hundred and fifty men. Let them therefore give us two bullocks; and let them choose one bullock for themselves, and cut it in pieces, and lay it on wood, and put no fire under: and I will dress the other bullock, and lay it on wood, and put no fire under: And call ye on the name of your gods, and I will call on the name of the LORD: and the GOD that answereth by fire, let HIM be GOD."*

I Kings 18:22-24

Then all the people answered and said that it was well spoken.

Then they brought two bulls. The prophets of Baal took the bull, which was given them and prepared it first, since they were many; and they called on the name of Baal from morning till noon. They shouted,

*"O Baal, hear us."*

I Kings 18:26

But there was no voice; no one answered; and they leaped upon the altar they had made.

At noon, Elijah ridiculed and mocked at them and said,

*"Cry aloud: for he is a god; either he is talking (meditating), or he is pursuing (busy), or he is in (on) a journey, or peradventure he sleepeth, and must be awaked."*

I Kings 18:27

So they cried aloud, and cut themselves with knives and lancets, as was their custom, until their blood gushed out on them. Midday passed, and they continued their very nervous prophesying until the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice. But there was no voice; no one answered; no one paid attention.

Then Elijah asked all the people to come near to him. So all the people came near to him. And Elijah repaired and rebuilt the altar of the LORD that was broken down. He took twelve stones according to the number of tribes of the sons of Jacob or Israel. With the twelve stones, he built an altar of the LORD; and he made a trench

around the altar, large enough to hold two measures (about fifteen litres) of seed. And he put the wood in order; he cut the bull in pieces, and laid it on the wood. Then he said to them to fill four barrels with water, and pour it on the burnt sacrifice and on the wood. They did it. Again, he said to them to do it a second time. They did it a second time. Then he said to them to do it a third time. They did it a third time. So the water ran all around the altar; and he filled the trench also with water. At the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, the prophet Elijah came near, and said,

*“LORD GOD of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that THOU art GOD in Israel, and that I am THY servant, and that I have done all these things at THY Word. Hear me, O LORD, hear me, that this people may know that THOU art the LORD GOD, and that THOU hast turned their heart back again.”*

I Kings 18:36-37

Then the fire of the LORD fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench. When all the people saw it, they fell on their faces: and they said,

*“The LORD, HE is the GOD; the LORD, HE is the GOD.”*

I Kings 18:39

The LORD GOD answered by fire. So the LORD GOD is GOD. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the real GOD. HE gives us rain (Jeremiah 14:22). Baal, the false god is impotent—no more able to produce fire than to send the needed rain. See I Kings 18:17-46

### 13. THE CITY WALL OF APHEK FELL ON 27,000 SYRIANS

The Syrians and the Israelites encamped opposite each other for seven days. On the seventh day, the battle began. The children of Israel killed one hundred thousand foot soldiers of Syrians in one day. But the rest of them fled into the city of Aphek. The city wall of Aphek fell on twenty-seven thousand of the Syrians who were left. See I Kings 20:29-30.



#### 14. GOD'S CHARIOTS AND HORSES

The Prophet Elisha, the man of GOD, gave the counsel of GOD to the king of Israel. The king of Israel did according to the counsel of Elisha. So the king of Syria's war plans against Israel were shattered. On knowing this, the king of Syria sent horses and chariots and a great army to capture Elisha. They came by night and surrounded the city of Dothan. When the servant of Elisha arose early and went out, there was an army, surrounding the city with horses and chariots. Elisha's servant said to Elisha,

*"Alas, my master! how shall we do?"*

II Kings 6:15

Elisha answered,

*"Fear not: for they that be with us are more than they that be with them."*

II Kings 6:16

And Elisha prayed, and said,

*"LORD, I pray THEE, open his eyes, that he may see."*

II Kings 6:17

Then the LORD GOD opened the eyes of the young man (the servant of Elisha), and he saw. He looked and saw the mountain full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha. See II Kings 6:8-17.

#### 15. SYRIA'S ARMY WAS BLINDED

The Syrians came down to capture Elisha, the man of GOD. Elisha prayed to the LORD, and said,

*"Smite (strike) this people, I pray THEE, with blindness. ..."*

II Kings 6:18

And the LORD GOD struck them with blindness according to the word of Elisha. Then he led the Syrians to Samaria. When they had come to Samaria, Elisha said,

*"LORD, open the eyes of these men, that they may see."*

II Kings 6:20

And the LORD opened their eyes, and they saw; and there they were inside Samaria. When the king of Israel saw them, he said to Elisha,

*"My father, shall I smite (kill) them? shall I smite them?"*

II Kings 6:21

Elisha answered,

*"Thou shalt not smite (kill) them: wouldst thou smite those whom thou hast taken captive with thy sword and with thy bow? set bread and water before them, that they may eat and drink, and go to their master."*

II Kings 6:22

Then the king of Israel prepared a great feast for them; and after they ate and drank, he sent them away and they returned to their master, the king of Syria. See II Kings 6:18-23.

#### 16. THE FLIGHT OF THE SYRIANS

Benhadad, the king of Syria with his entire army besieged Samaria. So there was a great famine in the city. Then the LORD GOD had caused the Syrians to hear the sound of chariots, horses and a great army, so that they said to one another,

*"Lo, the king of Israel hath hired against us the kings of the Hittites, and the kings of the Egyptians, to come upon us."*

II Kings 7:6

So they arose and fled at twilight, and left the camp intact—their tents, their horses, and their donkeys. They left the camp as it was and fled for their lives.

Then the people of Israel went out and plundered the tents of the Syrians. So a measure of fine flour of wheat was sold for a shekel, and two measures of barley for a shekel, according to the Word of the LORD. Elisha's prophecy and promises of plenty were fulfilled. Elisha had prophesied and said,

*"Hear ye the Word of the LORD; Thus saith the LORD, To morrow about this time shall a measure of fine flour be sold for a shekel, and two measures of barley for a shekel, in the gate of*

*Samaria."*

II Kings 7:1

A measure is about 7.5 litres. See II Kings 6:24-33; 7:1-19.

## 17. GOD QUENCHED THE FIERY FURNACE

Nebuchadnezzar, the king of Babylon made an image of gold, sixty cubits (about ninety feet) high and six cubits (about nine feet) wide. He set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon. Then he sent word to the princes, the governors, the captains, the judges, the treasurers, the counsellors, the sheriffs, and all the rulers of the provinces, to come to the dedication of the image he had set up. So all of them assembled for the dedication of the image and they stood before it. Then a herald cried aloud,

*"To you it is commanded, O people, nations, and languages, That at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, dulcimer, and all kinds of musick, ye fall down and worship the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar the king hath set up: And whoso falleth not down and worshippeth shall the same hour be cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace."*

Daniel 3:4-6

Therefore at that time, when they heard the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and all kinds of music, they fell down and worshipped the image of gold that king Nebuchadnezzar had set up. But the Jews (the Israelites) Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego did not fall down or worship the image, even though Nebuchadnezzar had set over them the affairs of the province of Babylon; they refused to worship the image of gold that king Nebuchadnezzar had set up. When Nebuchadnezzar heard this, he was furious with rage. Then in his rage and fury, he commanded his officers to bring Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. So they were brought before the king. Nebuchadnezzar said to them,

*"Is it true, O Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, do not ye serve my gods, nor worship the golden image which I have set up? Now if ye be ready that at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and dulcimer, and all kinds of musick, ye fall down and worship the image which I have made; well: but if ye worship not, ye shall be cast the same hour*

*into the midst of a burning fiery furnace; and who is that GOD that shall deliver you out of my hands?"*

Daniel 3:14-15

Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego answered and said to the king,

*"O Nebuchadnezzar, we are not careful (we have no need) to answer thee in this matter. If it be so, our GOD whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and HE will deliver us out of thine hand, O king. But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up."*

Daniel 3:16-18

Then Nebuchadnezzar was full of fury, and the expression on his face changed toward them. Therefore, he commanded his men to heat the furnace seven times more than it was usually heated. And he commanded the mightiest men who were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego and cast them into the burning fiery furnace. Then these three men were bound in their coats, their trousers, their hats, and other garments, and were cast into the midst of the burning fiery furnace. Since the king's command was urgent (severe), and the furnace exceedingly hot, the flame of the fire killed those men who took up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. And these three men, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego fell down bound into the midst of the burning fiery furnace.

Then king Nebuchadnezzar was astonished, and rose up in haste and asked his counsellors,

*"Did not we cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?"*

Daniel 3:24

They replied,

*"True, O king."*

Daniel 3:24

The king answered,

*"Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no (are not) hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the SON OF GOD."*

Daniel 3:25

Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego trusted GOD. So, GOD protected them in the burning fiery furnace. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then Nebuchadnezzar went near the mouth of the burning fiery furnace and said,

*"Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, ye servants of the Most High GOD, come forth, and come hither."*

Daniel 3:26

Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego came from the midst of the fire. The princes, governors, captains, and the king's counsellors gathered together. They saw these men on whose bodies the fire had no power; the hair of their head was not singed; their coats and their other garments were not affected; and the smell of fire had not passed on them. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then king Nebuchadnezzar made a **wise decree** to all people, nations, and languages that dwelt in his kingdom:

*"Blessed be the GOD of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who hath sent HIS angel, and delivered HIS servants that trusted in HIM, and have changed (defied) the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they might not serve nor worship any god, except their own GOD. Therefore I make a decree, That every people, nation, and language, which speak any thing amiss against the GOD of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, shall be cut in pieces, and their houses shall be made a dunghill: because there is no other GOD that can deliver after this sort (like this)."*

Daniel 3:28-29

Then the king promoted Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego in the province of Babylon.

## 18. GOD SHUT THE MOUTHS OF THE LIONS

King Darius the Mede had appointed one hundred and twenty princes to rule throughout his kingdom, with three presidents over them. Of these three presidents, Daniel was the most capable. Daniel distinguished himself above the presidents and princes, because an excellent spirit was in him; and the king planned to set him

over the whole realm. So the princes and presidents tried to find some charge against Daniel concerning the kingdom; but they could not find any charge or fault against him, because he was faithful and no error or fault was found in him. Then these men said,

*"We shall not find any occasion against this Daniel, except we find it against him concerning the law of his GOD."*

Daniel 6:5

So these princes and presidents went as a group to the king and said,

*"King Darius, live for ever. All the presidents of the kingdom, the governors, and the princes, the counsellors, and the captains, have consulted together to establish a royal statute, and to make a firm decree, that whosoever shall ask a petition of any god or man for thirty days, save (except) of thee, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions. Now, O king, establish the decree, and sign the writing, that it be not (cannot be) changed, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which altereth not."*

Daniel 6:6-8

Therefore, king Darius signed the written decree. Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went home. He went up to his upper room and with his windows open toward Jerusalem, he knelt down on his knees three times a day, and prayed and gave thanks before his GOD, just as he had done before.

Then these men assembled and found Daniel praying and making supplication before his GOD. So they went to the king and spoke to him about his royal decree:

*"Hast thou not signed a decree, that every man that shall ask a petition of any GOD or man within thirty days, save of thee, O king, shall be cast into the den of lions?"*

Daniel 6:12

The king answered and said,

*"The thing is true, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which altereth not."*

Daniel 6:12

Then they answered and said before the king,

*"That Daniel, which is of the children of the captivity of Judah, regardeth not thee, O king, nor the decree that thou hast signed, but maketh his petition three times a day."*

Daniel 6:13

When king Darius heard these words he was greatly displeased with himself for signing the law and set his heart on Daniel to deliver him; and he laboured till the going down of the sun trying to think of some way to get Daniel out of this predicament. Then these men approached the king and said to the king,

*"Know, O king, that the law of the Medes and Persians is, That no decree nor statute which the king establisheth may be changed."*

Daniel 6:15

So the king had to give the command for Daniel's arrest and they brought Daniel and cast him into the den of lions. But the king spoke, saying to Daniel,

*"Thy GOD whom thou servest continually, HE will deliver thee."*

Daniel 6:16

Then a stone was brought and laid on the mouth of the den, and the king sealed it with his own signet ring and with the signets of his lords that the purpose concerning Daniel might not be changed.

Then the king went to his palace and spent the night fasting; and no musicians were brought before him. Also his sleep went from him. So the king arose very early in the morning and went in haste to the den of lions. And when he came to the den, he cried out with a lamenting voice to Daniel. The king spoke, saying to Daniel,

*"O Daniel, servant of the living GOD, is thy GOD, whom thou servest continually, able to deliver thee from the lions?"*

Daniel 6:20

Then Daniel said to the king,

*"O king, live for ever. My GOD hath sent HIS angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before HIM innocency (innocence) was found in me; and also*

*before thee, O king, have I done no hurt (wrong)."*

Daniel 6:21-22

Then the king was exceedingly glad for him, and commanded to take Daniel out of the den. So Daniel was taken out of the den of lions, and no injury whatever, not even a scratch was found on him, because he believed in his GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

At the king's command, the men who had accused Daniel were brought and cast into the den of lions, along with their wives and children. And before they hit the bottom of the den, the lions overpowered them, broke all their bones, and tore them apart in pieces.

Then king Darius wrote a **wise decree** to all people, nations, and languages that dwelt in all the earth:

*"Peace be multiplied unto you. I make a decree, That in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble (must tremble) and fear before the GOD of Daniel: for HE is the living GOD, and stedfast for ever, and HIS kingdom that which shall not be destroyed, and HIS dominion shall be even unto the end. HE delivereth and rescueth, and HE worketh signs and wonders in heaven and in earth, who hath delivered Daniel from the power of the lions."*

Daniel 6:25-27

So Daniel because of his **faith** and **trust** in the living GOD was never put to shame but prospered not only in the reign of Darius, but also in the reign of Cyrus, the Persian. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **2 . WHO ARE THE BLESSED ?**

**My** beloved brothers and sisters in CHRIST, who read this precious book, give the most sincere thought to what you have read in this precious book.

There is no other name except the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST under heaven given for the people to obtain forgiveness of sins (remission of sins), salvation from sins (deliverance from sins), redemption from sins, holiness and holy life, and the HOLY SPIRIT and to reach heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The blessed people are those



who obtain the above spiritual experiences and those who walk always in the counsel of GOD and those who walk always according to the law of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile."*

Psalm 32:1-2

*"Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the LORD. Blessed are they that keep HIS testimonies, and that seek HIM with the whole heart."*

Psalm 119:1-2

*"Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in HIS law doth he meditate day and night."*

Psalm 1:1-2

*"Blessed is every one that feareth the LORD; that walketh in HIS ways."*

Psalm 128:1

*"Praise ye the LORD. Blessed is the man that feareth the LORD, that delighteth greatly in HIS commandments."*

Psalm 112:1

*"And HE (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) opened HIS mouth, and taught them, saying, Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see GOD. Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of GOD. Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for MY sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you."*

St. Matthew 5:2-12

Now, if you have obtained readiness and eligibility to inherit heaven, the kingdom of heaven and if you are worthy of waiting for the coming of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, you will enjoy immense peace, joy, happiness, consolation, and a life without the fear of death. You will have no fear of death, if you are confident of inheriting heaven, the kingdom of GOD or of going to the LORD JESUS CHRIST, when you happen to pass away. If you are the blessed, your name will be in the Book of Life in heaven, the kingdom of heaven.

The names of the blessed people would have been written in the Book of Life. The blessed people will inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD. They are the greatly blessed ones. They are the saints. They are the pure people. They are not the abominable people. They are the undefiled people. They are not liars. They deserve very great blessings of the LORD GOD. They deserve eternal blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"And there shall in no wise (by no means) enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's Book of Life."*

Revelation 21:27

The blessed people live and walk according to the HOLY SPIRIT. They bear good spiritual fruits such as love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, righteousness and truth (Ephesians 5:9; Galatians 5:22-23, 25).

The blessed people glorify GOD in their spirit and in their soul and in their body (I Corinthians 6:20). They praise GOD in their soul (Psalm 103:1-2). Their spirit is guileless (Psalm 32:2). Their soul is redeemed from vanity and hypocrisy (Psalm 24:4; 49:8; Job 27:8). Their body is escaped from uncleanness of things such as fornication, adultery, homosexuality, etc. (I Thessalonians 4:3-7).

Inwardly, their heart is established in blameless holiness (I Thessalonians 3:13); and outwardly, their body is established in sanctification and honour, not allowing it to indulge in the passion of lust (I Thessalonians 4:4-5). The blessed people are the holy people. They are holy in their whole spirit and soul and body. They are holy and blameless till the coming of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*“And the very GOD of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.”*

I Thessalonians 5:23

The above verse, I Thessalonians 5:23, reveals the glorious appearance of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, splendid in holiness, in the mid-sky in all HIS divine glory (I Corinthians 15:51-54; Philippians 3:20-21; I Thessalonians 4:16-17) during HIS divine Secret Coming to catch up with HIM HIS saints; and it also reveals the blessedness of the preserve of the saints' whole spirit and soul and body wholly holy and blameless; and their beauty of holiness. About the divine Secret Coming of CHRIST, it further displays a surprising amazement, a great miracle, an absolute wonder, a divine feeling of great happiness and joy, an astounding attraction, an encouraging incentive, an ultimate goal, a divine pressing toward the greatest prize of all, the kingdom of GOD and a severe warning to the saints/the saved.

The blessed people always do the will of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Only those who do the will of GOD who is in heaven, will enter into the kingdom of heaven (St. Matthew 7:21-23).

The blessed people offer their bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and pleasing to the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This is their spiritual act of worship. They are not conformed to the pattern of this world. They are transformed by the renewing of their mind. They are able to prove what GOD's will is—HIS good and acceptable and perfect will.

*“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of GOD, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto GOD, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of GOD.”*

Romans 12:1-2

The blessed people are like the wise virgins with plenty of oil. They are the anointed people anointed with fresh and fine oil, the HOLY SPIRIT and they are ready and fully prepared themselves to meet the LORD GOD. They are ready and fully prepared for the coming of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. See St. Matthew 25:1-13.

The blessed people are born of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They are the overcomers of the world by faith. They are the overcomers of Satan, the devil by faith. They are the overcomers of everything by their belief in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"For whatsoever is born of GOD overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that JESUS is the SON OF GOD?"*

I John 5:4-5

In this world, the blessed people serve and worship the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, in the model of what is in heaven.

*"Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, ..."*

Hebrews 8:5

The blessed people are those who die in the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They will rest from their labours and their deeds will follow them.

*"And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the LORD from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them."*

Revelation 14:13

Man is of the earth. He is made from the dust of the ground. The blessed people will be given a glorious body, during the coming of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This glorious body will be like the most glorious body of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This vile body made from the dust of the ground will be wonderfully changed into a glorious flying body by the great power of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"And the LORD GOD formed man of the dust of the ground, ..."*

Genesis 2:7

*"For our conversation (citizenship) is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the LORD JESUS CHRIST: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto*

*HIS glorious body, according to the working whereby HE is able even to subdue all things unto HIMSELF."*

Philippians 3:20-21

The blessed people will be caught up with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, to meet HIM in the air and they will be ever and ever with HIM.

*"For if we believe that JESUS died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in JESUS will GOD bring with HIM. For this we say unto you by the Word of the LORD, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the LORD shall not precede (precede) them which are asleep (dead). For the LORD HIMSELF shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of GOD: and the dead in CHRIST shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the LORD in the air: and so shall we ever (always) be with the LORD."*

I Thessalonians 4:14-17

The blessed people are the members of the church of the living GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are the saved; they are the baptized; they are the holy; they are the righteous; and they are the anointed. These blessed people will be dressed in clean, bright and white clothing in fine linen. Clean, bright and white clothing in fine linen spiritually symbolizes the righteousness of saints.

*"And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints."*

Revelation 19:8

Here, she means the church of the living GOD.

The blessed people will reign this world with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for a period of a thousand years. That period of a thousand years is also called a Millennium. CHRIST will reign on earth without any opposition and HIS Millennial kingdom will be characterized by righteousness, peace and love. The earthly Jerusalem will be the headquarters of CHRIST's Millennial kingdom.

*"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests*

*of GOD and of CHRIST, and shall reign with HIM a thousand years."*

Revelation 20:6

'GOD and CHRIST' are the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

The blessed people will receive the immensely glorious crown of life, the crown of righteousness or the crown of glory, the never-fading crown of glory.

*"Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried (has been proved), he shall receive the crown of life, which the LORD hath promised to them that love HIM."*

James 1:12

*"Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the LORD, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love HIS appearing."*

II Timothy 4:8

*"And when the chief Shepherd (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away."*

I Peter 5:4

After getting the crown of life, the blessed people will sit on their thrones and rule and govern as kings and priests with the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever in heaven, the kingdom of heaven. They are the most blessed people.

*"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with ME in (on) MY throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with MY FATHER in (on) HIS throne."*

Revelation 3:21

*"...Unto HIM that loved us, and washed us from our sins in HIS own blood, And hath made us kings and priests unto GOD and HIS FATHER; to HIM be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen."*

Revelation 1:5-6

'GOD and HIS FATHER' are the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will write on these blessed people HIS new name and HIS name will be on their foreheads.

*"And they shall see HIS face; and HIS name shall be in (on) their foreheads."*

Revelation 22:4

The blessed people will sing and praise the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in everlasting happiness, joy and pleasure.

*"And they sing the song of Moses the servant of GOD, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are THY works, LORD GOD Almighty; just and true are THY ways, THOU King of saints. Who shall not fear THEE, O LORD, and glorify THY name? for THOU only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before THEE; for THY judgments are made manifest."*

Revelation 15:3-4

'The Lamb' is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

The blessed people will eat and enjoy the fruits of life from the tree of life in heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

*"He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of GOD."*

Revelation 2:7

*"In the midst (middle) of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations."*

Revelation 22:2

'He that hath an ear, let him hear' means that 'everyone should lend his/her ears to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and accept HIM and HIS Words'. When our LORD JESUS was in this world, HE repeatedly said, "He that hath ears to hear, let him hear" (St. Matthew 11:15).

The blessed people will drink and enjoy the water of life, from the pure river of the water of life or from the pure river of the HOLY SPIRIT in heaven, the kingdom of heaven. They will also bathe and enjoy in the pure river of the water of life.

*"There is a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the city of GOD, the holy place of the tabernacles of the Most High."*

Psalms 46:4

*"And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of GOD and of the Lamb."*

Revelation 22:1

'GOD and the Lamb' are the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

The blessed people will see the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST face to face, and they will serve HIM in great joy, pleasure and happiness in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. They will live for ever and ever in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. **This is the greatest blessing a man can ever obtain.** The children of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, who obtain these great blessings are the truly blessed people; they are the wise people. They will shine like the brightness of the heavens and like the stars for ever and ever by the glory of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever."*

Daniel 12:3

*"And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of GOD did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: ..."*

Revelation 21:23-24

Here, the Lamb is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

### **3. MAN-MADE GODS**

Man-made gods are not gods. So, no one should make his/her own gods. No one should make gods and worship them. Making gods and worshipping them are sins. GOD is not like gold or silver or stone, something shaped by art and man's devising (Acts 17:29).

*"Shall a man make gods unto himself, and they are no gods?"*

Jeremiah 16:20

Everyone should trust in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, but not in idols. HE alone is GOD. HE alone is worthy of praise. HE alone is worthy to be served and worshipped. HE alone will save you. What is the condition of the idols? What is the condition of the man-made



gods or the false gods? What is the condition of those who make idols? What is the condition of the idolaters? What is the condition of those who worship false gods? Worthless, hopeless and pitiable.

*"Their idols are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. They have mouths, but they speak not: eyes have they, but they see not: They have ears, but they hear not: noses have they, but they smell not: They have hands, but they handle not: feet have they, but they walk not: neither speak they through their throat. They that make them are like unto them; so is every one that trusteth in them."*

Psalm 115:4-8

Considering the impotence of the idols or the man-made gods or the false gods and the emptiness of false religion, everyone should worship the great GOD and the All-powerful GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"And have cast their gods into the fire: for they were no gods, but the work of men's hands, wood and stone: therefore they have destroyed them."*

Isaiah 37:19

**Worshipping idols or man-made gods or false gods is a great sin against GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.** So, such sinners should repent of this sin and obtain forgiveness of sin and salvation from sin, from our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST. Otherwise, it might be an unpardonable sin, deserving judgment and hell. Also, no one should forsake the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"How shall I pardon thee for this? thy children have forsaken ME, and sworn by them that are no gods: ..."*

Jeremiah 5:7

The heart of idolatrous worship, the worship of man-made gods or the false gods was Samaria. So GOD's anger was severely kindled against the people of Samaria.

*"...Of their silver and their gold have they made them idols, that they may be cut off. Thy calf, O Samaria, hath cast thee off; MINE anger is kindled against them: how long will it be ere (until) they attain to innocency (innocence)? For from Israel was it also: the workman made it; therefore it is not GOD: but the calf*

*of Samaria shall be broken in pieces."*

Hosea 8:4-6

'Calf' means 'golden calf image'.

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and everyone should worship HIM in spirit and in truth, since our GOD is the HOLY SPIRIT and the truth and the heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain HIM. HE is upright and just. HE is a faithful GOD who does no wrong.

*"...Behold, heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain THEE;  
..."*

II Chronicles 6:18

*"HE is ... a GOD of truth and without iniquity, just and right is HE."*

Deuteronomy 32:4

*"GOD is a (the) Spirit: and they that worship HIM must worship HIM in spirit and in truth."*

St. John 4:24

Our LORD GOD is greater than the heavens. Now, heaven is HIS throne and earth HIS footstool. This clearly shows the magnitude and immensity of GOD. HE is not limited to any house or place or temple made by people. GOD's desire is to dwell in men and women who tremble at HIS Word and who are of a poor and contrite spirit. In eternity (in the kingdom of heaven or in the kingdom of GOD) there is no need for a temple, "for the LORD GOD Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it" (Revelation 21:22). The LORD GOD Almighty and the Lamb are the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. In heaven, there is everlasting joy and gladness (Isaiah 35:10).

So, everyone should gain access to this real heaven, the kingdom of GOD, and everyone should avoid hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. In hell, their worms will not die, nor will their fire be quenched (St. Mark 9:44).

*"Thus saith the LORD, The heaven is MY throne, and the earth is MY footstool: where is the house that ye build unto ME? and where is the place of MY rest? For all those things hath MINE hand made, and all those things have been, saith the LORD: but*

*to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at MY Word."*

Isaiah 66:1-2

Hence, men should not make gods for themselves, since they are not gods. Men should not make their gods, since they are not gods. Men should not make their own gods, since they are not gods. Men should not make idols or images to worship, since they are not gods. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### **4 . GOD'S DWELLING**

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. HE is the ONLY GOD of heaven and HE dwells in heaven, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD.

*"O give thanks unto the GOD of heaven: for HIS mercy endureth for ever."*

Psalms 136:26

Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST dwells in HIS holy temple. HE never dwells in any unholy place. The present name of HIS holy temple is a **house of prayer**.

*"The LORD is in HIS holy temple, the LORD's throne is in heaven: HIS eyes behold, HIS eyelids try (test), the children of men."*

Psalms 11:4

*"But the LORD is in HIS holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before HIM."*

Habakkuk 2:20

*"Even them will I bring to MY holy mountain, and make them joyful in MY house of prayer: their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon MINE altar; for MINE house shall be called an house of prayer for all people."*

Isaiah 56:7

Further, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST dwells with the humble and the contrite having a humble and contrite spirit in the LORD.

*"For thus saith the High and Lofty One that inhabiteth eternity,*

*whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones."*

Isaiah 57:15

Again, if the believers of the LORD JESUS CHRIST love one another, then HE dwells in them.

*"...If we love one another, GOD dwelleth in us, and HIS love is perfected in us."*

I John 4:12

Furthermore, the LORD JESUS CHRIST dwells in HIS believers' hearts by faith.

*"That CHRIST may dwell in your hearts by faith; ..."*

Ephesians 3:17

Again, the people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the temple of the living GOD. Since the Spirit of GOD dwells in them, they are the temple of GOD and they must be holy always.

*"And what agreement hath the temple of GOD with idols? for ye are the temple of the living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be MY people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you."*

II Corinthians 6:16-17

*"Know ye not that ye are the temple of GOD, and that the Spirit of GOD dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy; for the temple of GOD is holy, which temple ye are."*

I Corinthians 3:16-17

Further, the bodies of the believers of CHRIST are the members of CHRIST. Hence, they are the body of CHRIST and members in particular. Thus, the believers of CHRIST—those who are saved and have received immersion baptism as mentioned above, are the members of HIS church. Again, the church of the living GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the house of GOD. Thus, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST dwells in HIS house, viz., in HIS church.

*"Know ye not that your bodies are the members of CHRIST?  
..."*

I Corinthians 6:15

*"Now ye are the body of CHRIST, and members in particular."*

I Corinthians 12:27

*"But if I tarry long (am delayed), that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of GOD, which is the church of the living GOD, the pillar and ground of the truth."*

I Timothy 3:15

During the true Holy Communion or in the LORD's Supper, the most holy flesh of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is eaten and the most holy blood of the LORD JESUS CHRIST is drunk. Now, he who eats HIS flesh and he who drinks HIS blood, dwells in HIM and HE in him.

*"He that eateth MY flesh, and drinketh MY blood, dwelleth in ME, and I in him."*

St. John 6:56

Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is always willing to dwell with HIS people in HIS eternal kingdom. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of GOD is with men, and HE will dwell with them, and they shall be HIS people, and GOD HIMSELF shall be with them, and be their GOD."*

Revelation 21:3

## **5 . RESPECT HOLY PLACES**

Usually shoes or sandals or slippers are used, in and out of our houses, for the safety of our feet. They are used to protect our feet from dirt, dust, thorns, cold, heat, etc.

When our LORD GOD appeared to Moses, HE commanded him to take off his shoes from his feet, because the place where Moses stood was a holy ground or holy place. Our LORD GOD said to Moses,

*"Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the*

*place whereon thou standest is holy ground."*

Exodus 3:5

Further, the captain of the LORD's host said to Joshua,

*"Loose thy shoe from off thy foot; for the place whereon thou standest is holy."*

Joshua 5:15

Hence, it is very clear that in the holy places, no one should put on his/her dirty and dusty shoes or sandals or slippers. Those who put on their dirty and dusty shoes or sandals or slippers in the holy places, dishonour the most holy GOD and dishonour the most holy presence of GOD. Those who put on their dirty and dusty shoes or sandals or slippers when praying to GOD in the holy places or when preaching the Word of GOD in the holy places, dishonour the most holy GOD. Those who put on their dirty and dusty shoes or sandals or slippers when praying to GOD or when attending the Christian religious services or when conducting the Christian religious services, dishonour the most holy GOD. But everyone should honour and fear our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST always in everything to receive HIS blessings.

*"HE will bless them that fear the LORD, both small and great."*

Psalms 115:13

No one should despise HIS most holy name. Our LORD GOD says,

*"A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a (the) FATHER, where is MINE honour? and if I be a Master, where is MY fear? ..."*

Malachi 1:6

So, everyone should revere and honour our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in all things; everyone should fear and honour our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in everything, since salvation and praise and thanks and honour belong to our Only wise GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Putting on dirty and dusty shoes or sandals or slippers in the holy places will dishonour and despise our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. Hence, dirty and dusty shoes or sandals or slippers should not be put on our feet in the holy places.

Now, a freezing cold weather or a boiling hot weather must be controlled in the holy places, by using some other fresh and clean materials for the safety of our feet. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## **6 . ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!**

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created man in HIS true righteousness and in HIS true holiness. But that man fell by his own disobedience, and therefore was cursed by GOD. And this curse of death was completely vanquished by the death of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST on the cross at Calvary (Genesis 3:15-16).

Now, man is a personal being with the power to think, feel and decide. He has certain ability to make himself morally good or bad and certain capacity for his spiritual growth or decline. In the beginning, man loved GOD and obeyed GOD and feared GOD and worshipped GOD and was a holy creature. But his sin, the deliberate and willful rejection of GOD's divine command, made him an unholy and ugly creature. Sin altered him and he fled from GOD and loved evil and ugly things more than righteousness (St. John 3:19-20). Hence, we, all humans are hopelessly lost and we are in need of a Saviour. That is why our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD came into this world to save and redeem us all from sin (St. Luke 19:10).

Further, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is also a personal being who always seeks to fellowship with mankind, like a most loving father. However, GOD is GOD and HE is not a man, and HE does not think, feel and decide like man (Isaiah 55:8-9). So, no one should question HIM about HIS Words or deeds.

When our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE did the great miracle of feeding about five thousand hungry men besides women and children with five barley loaves of bread and two small fishes. Besides these men, a large uncounted group of women and children were also miraculously fed with those loaves of bread and fishes (St. Matthew 14:13-21; St. Mark 6:30-44; St. Luke 9:10-17; St. John 6:1-15). From this great miracle, we infer the following divine qualities of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST: HE was very

eager to see the people who came to HIM; HE was moved with great compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd to shepherd them; HE lovingly received them to give them spiritual food and bodily food and spiritual healing and bodily healing; HE lovingly spoke to them of the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven—that is, HE gave the spiritual food, the glorious Gospel of HIS kingdom to them to eat first, in order that they would enter into heaven—that is, HE fed the hungry souls who needed soul's feeding or spiritual feeding and satisfied them fully; HE healed all the bodily sick people who were greatly troubled by diseases and by devils and had no peace and HE healed the spiritually sick people who needed spiritual healing and who were troubled by sins and had no peace; HE fed all the hungry who needed life's feeding or bodily feeding and satisfied them fully. Then HE sent the crowds to their houses.

Even though, the human race departed from the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, GOD has lovingly provided a new and living way for them to be reconciled to HIM and to be the ONE AND ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of HIM, through the veil of HIS most holy flesh (Hebrews 10:19-20). So, HE lovingly calls the people of the whole world to be HIS ONE AND ONLY TRUE PEOPLE. Hence, everyone should obey HIS divine call to be HIS ONE AND ONLY TRUE PEOPLE.

My dearly beloved brothers and sisters in CHRIST: If you have not responded to our LORD JESUS CHRIST's heavenly call so far, your sins that are already in you or that have already entered into you will never leave you (Romans 5:12); sin, the sinful nature of the sinful one or the evil nature of the evil one, the devil or Satan will enter into you more and more (Romans 5:12); sin will reign you more and more (Romans 5:21); sin will have dominion over (lord over) you more and more (Romans 6:14); sin will deceive you more and more (Romans 7:11); sin will dwell in you and make its home in you more and more (Romans 7:17); sin will operate more vehemently from the base camp of flesh and destroy you by and by; sin will kill your soul completely (Romans 7:11); and finally sin will bring you eternal death, eternal damnation in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Romans 6:23). Sin is alive (Romans 7:9). Sin is very dangerous and



it is very active and alert to bring you eternal damnation in hell. If you are not fully saved from your sins by the grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, then your sin and your soul's death cannot be separated; and your sin and your eternal death in hell cannot be separated. You will be always in hell in eternal damnation. So, be watchful always and by obeying HIS heavenly call, immediately repent of your sins and receive the full salvation of GOD and escape hell.

Now, Satan, the devil is the adversary to mankind. As a roaring lion, he is walking and seeking us to devour (I Peter 5:8). As a wicked and deceit fowler, he lies in wait and sets snares and traps to catch us (Psalm 91:3; Jeremiah 5:26). He is injecting more and more sins and sinful lusts into sinners and he is also shooting his fiery darts of sins and sinful lusts into sinners (Ephesians 6:16).

Sinners have permitted their hearts to become fat, their ears to become dull of hearing and their eyes to be blind to truth. They have submitted their hearts, their ears and their eyes to Satan, the devil and not to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Acts 28:26-27). Hence, a human and satanic action in rebellion against GOD and HIS Word is prevailing. But GOD's Word is not hidden from mankind; GOD's Word is not far off; GOD's Word is not in the sky; GOD's Word is not beyond the seas; GOD's Word is near us; GOD's Word is in our mouth; and GOD's Word is in our heart (Deuteronomy 30:11-14). The Holy Bible, GOD's Holy Word is written in the simplest human language possible. So, we are without excuse; we are inexcusable.

Now, the god of this world or the god of this age (Satan, the devil) has blinded the thoughts and the minds of the sinners, so that the light of the glorious Gospel of CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD might not shine into their hearts (II Corinthians 4:4). This is similar to a video camera lens's being covered so that the light cannot shine into the camera to bring in the image. It is also like a blind man, into whom the light is unable to shine. Further, it is like a man with his eyes veiled, into whom the light is unable to shine. Anything such as philosophy, religion, cultural traditions, the rudiments of the world, the traditions of men, and the commandments and doctrines of men that hinders people from apprehending the glorious Gospel of CHRIST is a veil.

---

**Satan, the devil blinds the minds and the thoughts of mankind as follows:**

1. By totally deceiving all people (Revelation 12:9).
2. By being the leader of all sinners and all backsliders (I John 3: 8-10; I Timothy 5:15) and all spirit rebels (Ephesians 6:10-18).
3. By causing diversions and by blinding people to the Gospel (II Corinthians 4:4).
4. By working lying wonders or false miracles (II Thessalonians 2:9; St. John 8:44).
5. By tempting people (I Corinthians 7:5).
6. By causing doubt and unbelief (Genesis 3:4-5; Romans 14:23).
7. By causing double-mindedness (James 1:5-9).
8. By taking all advantage of all adversities of people by his devices or schemes (II Corinthians 2:11).
9. By causing offences (St. Matthew 16:23).
10. By hindering answers to prayer (Psalm 88:1-18).
11. By provoking to sin (I Chronicles 21:1).
12. By hindering the Gospel of GOD (Acts 13:10).
13. By taking away (stealing) the Word of GOD from people, so that they would not believe and be saved (St. Luke 8:12).
14. By resisting others (Zechariah 3:1-2).
15. By contending with messengers of GOD (Jude 9).
16. By sending messengers to defeat saints (II Corinthians 12:7).
17. By setting snares for people to fall into sin and sinful lusts (I Timothy 3:7; II Timothy 2:26).
18. By causing all sickness, disease, physical and mental illnesses (Acts 10:38).
19. By causing deadness and weakness (Hebrews 6:1; 9:14).

20. By entering into union with others against GOD (St. John 13:2; St. Luke 22:3).
21. By making war on the saints (Ephesians 6:10-18).
22. By causing delay and compromise (Acts 24:25; 26:28).
23. By causing darkness and oppression (II Corinthians 4:4; II Peter 1:4-9).
24. By causing divisions and strife (I Peter 5:8; I Corinthians 3:1-3).
25. By transforming himself deceitfully into an angel of light (II Corinthians 11:14).
26. By doctrines of devils (I Timothy 4:1), heretical teachings (Titus 3:10), various and strange self-chosen doctrines, different from the truth (Hebrews 13:9), prosperity gospel, wealth and health gospels, work gospel, false teachings and destructive heresies (II Peter 2:1), dilution of CHRIST's Gospel, and compromise on the true Gospel.

**Sinners are the remote-controlled equipments of Satan, the devil.**

Sinners are remotely controlled by Satan, the devil from outside and they are also inwardly controlled by Satan, the devil from inside. Sinners sin by Satan, the devil's remote control from outside (Psalm 109:6); and they sin also by Satan, the devil's inward control from inside (St. Luke 22:3). Sinners are fully in the evil hands of Satan, the devil, like monkeys in the hands of a monkey-charmer. What a pitiable thing it is!

Further, the end of all things related to the corruptible flesh and the corruptible world is very near. So, living for GOD's glory is very essential and serving for GOD's glory is very essential. Therefore, we should be of a sound mind, have a clear mind of sobriety and self-control, be able to understand things properly and thoroughly without being disturbed and we should be sober and watchful unto prayers, by humbling ourselves under the mighty hand of GOD (I Peter 5:6) and by casting all our life with its care and anxiety upon GOD (I Peter 5:7).

*"But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and*

*watch unto prayer."*

I Peter 4:7

## 6.1 WHO IS THE ONE GOD ?

Again, **my** beloved **brothers** and **sisters** in **CHRIST**,

*"For there is One GOD, ..."*

I Timothy 2:5

*"...This (JESUS CHRIST) is the true GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

*"One LORD, one faith, one baptism, One GOD and FATHER of all, ..."*

Ephesians 4:5-6

Now, there is no reason for anyone to have a doubt over the fact that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD.

Further, there is no reason for anyone to have any doubt over the fact that HE is the GOD to be served; HE is the GOD to be worshipped; HE is the GOD to be revered; HE is the GOD to be hallowed; HE is the GOD to be adored; HE is the GOD to be believed; HE is the GOD to be hoped; HE is the GOD to be feared; HE is the GOD to be respected; HE is the GOD to be called upon; HE is the GOD to be bowed down; HE is the GOD to be knelt down; HE is the GOD to be loved; and HE is the GOD to be followed.

Since the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, any man should bow down and kneel down and fall down before HIM and worship HIM in fear and trembling and worship HIM in holiness with folded hands.

*"Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling."*

Psalms 2:11

*"Sanctify (Hallow) the LORD of hosts HIMSELF; and let HIM be your fear, and let HIM be your dread."*

Isaiah 8:13

Again, there can be no doubt about the fact that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE

GOD with a name, which is above every name and which is the most holy name and which is the most powerful name. HE is the great and the most holy and the most powerful GOD to be worshipped truly by everyone.

*"Wherefore GOD also hath highly exalted HIM, and given HIM a name which is above every name: That at the name of JESUS every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD, to the glory of GOD the FATHER."*

Philippians 2:9-11

'Things' mean 'those'.

Further, there can be no doubt about the fact that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, is the HOLY SPIRIT. Hence, everyone should worship HIM in spirit and in truth (St. John 4:24).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the ONE who is without sin (St. John 8:46); the ONE who is qualified to rebuke sin (St. Matthew 11:20); the ONE who is qualified to condemn sin (St. John 8:10); the ONE who is qualified to forgive sin (St. Mark 2:10); the ONE who is able to set people free from sin (St. John 8:11); the ONE who is able to wash people from sin (I Corinthians 6:11); the ONE who is able to sanctify people or set people apart from sin (I Corinthians 6:11); and the ONE who is able to justify people or declare people righteous (I Corinthians 6:11) for HIS kingdom, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD.

Besides, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's eyes are too pure to look at evil. HE cannot look at iniquity (Habakkuk 1:13). HE is the only righteous Judge. HE is angry with the wicked everyday (Psalm 7:11). No one can hide himself/herself in secret places, so that HE cannot see him/her.

*"Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD."*

Jeremiah 23:24

Further, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the LORD Almighty; HE is the LORD of hosts. HE is the GOD who commands the sun to shine

by day; HE is the GOD who commands the moon and stars to shine by night; HE is the GOD who divides or stirs up the sea, so that its waves roar; HE is the GOD who has great surprising strength.

*"Thus saith the LORD, which giveth the sun for a light by day, and the ordinances of the moon and of the stars for a light by night, which divideth the sea when the waves thereof roar; The LORD of hosts is HIS name."*

Jeremiah 31:35

*"Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of HIS hand, and meted out (measured) heaven with the span, and comprehended (calculated) the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?"*

Isaiah 40:12

*"Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, HE taketh (lifteth) up the isles as a very little thing."*

Isaiah 40:15

*"Who hath ascended up into heaven, or descended? who hath gathered the wind in HIS fists? who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? ..."*

Proverbs 30:4

Everyone must worship the Omnipotent (the all-powerful) GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. For HE spoke, and it was done; HE commanded, and it stood firm.

*"For HE spake, and it was done; HE commanded, and it stood fast."*

Psalms 33:9

Everyone must worship the Omnipotent (the all-powerful) LORD and KING of the nations. Everyone must worship GOD's name. HIS name is the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE is the Maker of all things. HE is the TRUE GOD and HE is the living GOD.

*"But the LORD is the true GOD, HE is the living GOD, and an everlasting King: at HIS wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide HIS indignation. Thus shall ye say unto them, The gods that have not made the heavens and the*

*earth, even they shall perish from the earth, and from under these heavens. HE hath made the earth by HIS power, HE hath established the world by HIS wisdom, and hath stretched out the heavens by HIS discretion. When HE uttereth HIS voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens, and HE causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth; HE maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of HIS treasures. Every man is brutish in his knowledge: every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. They are vanity, and the work of errors: in the time of their visitation (punishment) they shall perish. The portion of Jacob is not like them: for HE is the Former (Maker) of all things; and Israel is the rod (tribe) of HIS inheritance: The LORD of hosts is HIS name."*

Jeremiah 10:10-16

'Jacob or Israel' means 'the saved people'.

No one is like our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. HE is great and HIS name is mighty in power.

*"Forasmuch as there is none like unto THEE, O LORD; THOU art great, and THY name is great in might."*

Jeremiah 10:6

Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is glorious in holiness; HE is fearful in praises; HE is doing wonders.

*"...Who is like THEE, glorious in holiness, fearful in praises, doing wonders?"*

Exodus 15:11

Further, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of righteousness, justice, loving-kindness, and truth.

*"Justice and judgment (Righteousness and justice) are the habitation of THY throne: mercy and truth shall go before THY face."*

Psalms 89:14

Furthermore, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is love.

*"...GOD is love."*

I John 4:8

Besides, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's person and power are expressed in Hebrews and Colossians. HE is the brightness of GOD's glory; HE is the express image of GOD's person. HE is the express image of the invisible GOD.

*"Who being the brightness of HIS (GOD's) glory, and the express image of HIS (GOD's) person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, ..."*

Hebrews 1:3

*"Who is the image of the invisible GOD, ..."*

Colossians 1:15

Here, it is very important to notice that even a child in the womb of a woman is also upheld by GOD's powerful Word. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Besides, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's mighty and wonderful works are incalculable.

*"Which doeth great things and unsearchable; marvellous things without number."*

Job 5:9

*"Which doeth great things past finding out; yea, and wonders without number."*

Job 9:10

Furthermore, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the GOD who shuts the mouths of lions, and quenches the fury of the flames. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Who ... stopped the mouths of lions, Quenched the violence of fire, ..."*

Hebrews 11:33-34

Again, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the GOD who gives life to the dead, and calls things that are not as though they were.

*"...Even GOD, who quickeneth (gives life to) the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were."*

Romans 4:17

Further, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the GOD who holds in HIS hand your life and my life, and all your ways and my ways.



*"...And the GOD in whose hand thy breath is, and whose are all thy ways, ..."*

Daniel 5:23

Again, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, who came to this world to save sinners. HE is the Only Saviour of the world. HE saves people from their sins. HE is the good Saviour of souls. HE is the Only Saviour of souls. Our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST gives us salvation from sins. It is the great gift of GOD (Ephesians 2:8).

*"...Thou shalt call HIS name JESUS: for HE shall save HIS people from their sins."*

St. Matthew 1:21

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is good and forgiving and abundant in mercy to all those who call upon HIM (Psalm 86:5). HE is the Only Forgiver of sins. HE forgives all sins of mankind. HE has authority on earth to forgive sins. Since there is no remission of sins or forgiveness of sins without the shedding of blood, HE shed all HIS most holy and precious blood on the cross at Calvary for the forgiveness of our sins.

*"...The SON OF MAN (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) hath power (authority) on earth to forgive sins, ..."*

St. Mark 2:10

*"...And without shedding of blood is no remission (forgiveness)."*

Hebrews 9:22

*"...Which (HIS blood) is shed for many for the remission (forgiveness) of sins."*

St. Matthew 26:28

*"In whom we have redemption through HIS blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of HIS grace."*

Ephesians 1:7

Further, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the good Deliverer of souls. HE is the Only Deliverer of souls. HE delivers souls from death and eyes from everlasting tears and feet from everlasting falling or stumbling. Here death means second death or the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

*"For THOU hast delivered my soul from death, mine eyes from tears, and my feet from falling."*

Psalm 116:8

Again, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Only Redeemer of the world. HE is the good Redeemer of souls. HE is the Only Redeemer of souls. HE redeems the people by HIS most precious and holy blood and by HIS most precious and holy flesh and by HIS most precious and holy life.

*"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible (perishable) things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation (conduct) received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of CHRIST, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

I Peter 1:18-19

Thus, there can be no doubt about the fact that the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Only Forgiver and HE is the Only Saviour and HE is the Only Deliverer and HE is the Only Redeemer.

*"...All flesh shall know that I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the Mighty One of Jacob."*

Isaiah 49:26

'Jacob' means 'the saved people'.

Moreover, the LORD JESUS CHRIST lives with HIS people. So HE came to this world with a name EMMANUEL. EMMANUEL means GOD with us.

*"...They shall call HIS name EMMANUEL, which being interpreted is, GOD with us."*

St. Matthew 1:23

Further, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the blessed and the only Potentate, the KING of kings and the LORD of lords; who only has immortality, dwelling in the light which no one can approach unto and whom no one has seen nor can see. HE is the GOD visible and invisible. HE is the Almighty GOD. HE is Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the Ending. HE is the First and the Last. HE is the GOD Almighty, who was and who is and who is to come soon.

*"That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our LORD JESUS CHRIST: Which in HIS times HE shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the KING of kings, and LORD of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."*

I Timothy 6:14-16

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the LORD, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty. Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: ..."*

Revelation 1:8, 11

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."*

Revelation 22:13

The LORD JESUS CHRIST is the wonderful GOD. HE is the Mighty Ruler. HE is the Mighty GOD. HE is the wonderful Counsellor. HE is the Everlasting FATHER. HE is the GOD of Peace. HE is the GOD of Glory (Acts 7:2). HE is the GOD of Fear (Genesis 31:42)—the most fearsome and the most reverential GOD (Isaiah 9:6-7).

Even animals like ass (donkey) and lion fear and obey GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Numbers 22:22-32; I Kings 13:23-25), but the people of this world, even prophets or GOD's ministers or GOD's servants are not at all fearing and obeying GOD. What a sorrowful thing it is!

## 6.2 EXISTENCE OF GOD

**GOD does need no proof for HIS glorious existence. But, if any man does not believe JESUS CHRIST is GOD, the ONLY TRUE GOD (I John 5:20), he will die in his sins (St. John 8:23-24) and inherit hell, the everlasting hell-fire (Revelation 21:8).**

**GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine and most powerful title "The Great I AM" (Exodus 3:14; St. John 18:1-6) denotes that GOD is the ONE and the ONLY ONE who is self-existing and ever-existing and who depends on nothing apart from HIMSELF (St. John 8:23-24, 58).**

At this juncture, let us consider some important points about the glorious existence of GOD.

*"Because that which may be known of GOD is manifest in them; for GOD hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of HIM from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even HIS eternal power and GODHEAD; so that they are without excuse."*

Romans 1:19-20

GOD's glorious creation (the universe, the world and all living things) reveals two important invisible things about GOD—HIS eternal power and GODHEAD (Divinity). Creation reveals that GOD is the most powerful; hence, all the people of the world are obligated to HIM and the fact that HE is GOD. No one is able to stand before GOD and say that he/she turned away from GOD because GOD did not give any vision or revelation to him/her. But all the people of the world have had the vision or revelation. Hence, all the people of the world are accountable to GOD. What may be known about GOD is evident to all the people of the world, because GOD has made it evident to them by HIS glorious creation (the universe, the world and all living things). In the beginning, GOD created the heavens and earth from nothing. The heavens and earth were created by the Word of GOD. This creative power of GOD explains HIS glorious existence.

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

*"By the Word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of HIS mouth."*

Psalm 33:6

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the Word of HIS power, ..."*

Hebrews 1:3

The heavens are GOD's preachers in the sky. They proclaim always (day and night) the truth that GOD exists. The heavenly bodies are objective and positive proof that a most powerful creative GOD exists.

*"The heavens declare the glory of GOD; and the firmament (expanse of heaven) sheweth HIS handywork (the work of HIS hands). Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth (reveals) knowledge."*

Psalm 19:1-2

But, some people have a wrong thought that the universe, the world and all living things came into existence purely by chance. Why is this wrong thought? The answer is:

*"...They did not like to retain GOD in their knowledge, ..."*

Romans 1:28

*"Because that, when they knew GOD, they glorified HIM not as GOD, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible GOD into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Who changed the truth of GOD into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more (rather) than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen."*

Romans 1:21-23, 25

The theory of evolution and the theory of thermodynamics regarding creation are false and unreasonable. So, they must be discarded. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST knows the thoughts of men, the false and unreasonable theories of men. HE knows that they are futile.

*"The LORD knoweth the thoughts of man, that they are vanity."*

Psalm 94:11

Now, man is a moral and intellectual being. Since man is a moral and intellectual being, his Creator, GOD, is also a moral and intellectual being. This also explains the glorious existence of GOD. Conscience is a knowing within oneself. Conscience is a knowledge or sense of right and wrong, with a compulsion to do right. Heart is the apparent location of the conscience. Conscience provides the awareness and sufficient grounds for condemnation, because it establishes a framework of right and wrong and it also reflects the law of GOD written in our hearts. Man was created in the image and

likeness of GOD and even after the Fall he has the law of GOD written in his heart. If our hearts condemn us, we will be condemned. If our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before GOD.

*"Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another."*

Romans 2:15

*"For if our heart condemn us, GOD is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward GOD."*

I John 3:20-21

Again, in this world, every house is built by someone. A builder is necessary to build a house. Without a builder, no house can be built. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the builder of the heavens and earth and everything in them. Without this Almighty GOD, no heavens and earth can be built. This also explains the glorious existence of GOD.

*"For every house is builded by some man; but HE that built all things is GOD."*

Hebrews 3:4

Further, the world in which we live clearly proves that a great mind or intelligence was behind its creation and arrangement. Man was fearfully and wonderfully created by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Man's bodily arrangement is a very beautiful and useful arrangement. GOD's great intelligence is clearly seen in man's creation and in his bodily arrangement. This also explains the glorious existence of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...HE that teacheth man knowledge, shall not HE know?"*

Psalms 94:10

*"HE that planted the ear, shall HE not hear? HE that formed the eye, shall HE not see?"*

Psalms 94:9

*"I will praise THEE; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are THY works; and that my soul knoweth right well."*

Psalms 139:14

A person who believes that there is no GOD, is an atheist. Disbelief in the existence of GOD is atheism. But, GOD has revealed HIMSELF very clearly in HIS Holy Bible. The fool or the senseless or the morally deficient or the morally decayed says in his heart that there is no GOD. Atheists are wilfully against the truth of GOD's Word. So, they will be condemned (II Thessalonians 2:12).

*"The fool hath said in his heart, There is no GOD. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good."*

Psalm 14:1

*"HE that chastiseth (disciplines) the heathen, shall not HE correct (punish)? ..."*

Psalm 94:10

Now, it is left to your will and wish to recognize and receive the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, as your own GOD and to accept HIS divine doctrines mentioned in the Holy Bible—the holiest of all books and in this precious guide book, **"ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!"** — **"THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!"**, as your own. Everyone should be righteous; everyone should be holy. No one should be unjust; no one should be filthy. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST warns:

*"He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. And, behold, I come quickly; and MY reward is with ME, to give every man according as his work shall be."*

Revelation 22:11-12

This precious book **"ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!"** — **"THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!"** which you have seen and read will have convinced you about what is going to happen on the Last Day (on the Day of Judgment) and that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Therefore, don't be late; don't be slack; don't give room to unbelief and doubt; in spite of knowing the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, don't lose your own soul. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST asks:

*“For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?”*

St. Mark 8:36-37

Don't forget that now is the day of grace; now is the day of mercy; now is the time accepted; now is the day of salvation; and now is the time of the last days (II Corinthians 6:2).

Human beings in general (Romans 1:18-32) refuse to accept GOD, the GOD of order and beauty. They have no excuse, for GOD can clearly be seen and known in HIS orderly and beautiful creation. So GOD lets them do as they want, and they sink deeper and deeper into their own sinful thinking, ugly doings and perverse and perverted behaviour. The **extreme sin** of a wretched sinner, is applauding, rather than regretting, the sins of others. Thus, everyone is under GOD's judgment and hell.

If you are saved and delivered and redeemed and if you live a holy life taking advantage of these good last days; you will be caught up with the LORD JESUS CHRIST, who is to come soon and you will obtain immense pleasure and happiness in heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

Now, you must also know that it may so happen that you have to depart from this world at an unexpected time. Therefore, you must receive the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, as your own Saviour and Deliverer and Redeemer today itself. If you repent and obtain forgiveness of sins (remission of sins), salvation from sins (deliverance from sins), redemption from sins and the HOLY SPIRIT to live a holy life from the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and if you pray to GOD steadfastly and live a holy and sinless life, you will be a true child of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and you will certainly inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

### 6.3 THE HOLY BIBLE ALONE DECLARES "THE ONLY TRUE GOD"

Only the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures declares the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, to all people of the world. We obtain eternal life (an endless existence) from our LORD JESUS CHRIST. A personal relationship with GOD is obtained from our LORD JESUS



CHRIST. An eternal relationship with GOD is obtained from our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD.

*"And this is life eternal, that they might know THEE the ONLY TRUE GOD, and JESUS CHRIST, ..."*

St. John 17:3

Further, the Holy Bible declares about the ONLY TRUE GOD as follows:

*"...This (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is the TRUE GOD, and eternal life."*

I John 5:20

*"For there is ONE GOD, ..."*

I Timothy 2:5

*"ONE LORD, one faith, one baptism, ONE GOD and FATHER of all, ..."*

Ephesians 4:5-6

*"I am the LORD thy (your) GOD, ... Thou (you) shalt (shall) have none other gods before (besides) ME."*

Deuteronomy 5:6-7

*"I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no GOD beside ME: ..."*

Isaiah 45:5

*"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of HIS government and peace there shall be no end, ..."*

Isaiah 9:6-7

*"But the LORD is the TRUE GOD, HE is the living GOD, and an everlasting King: ..."*

Jeremiah 10:10

*"Forasmuch as there is none like unto THEE, O LORD; THOU art great, and THY name is great in might. Who would not fear THEE, O King of nations? for to THEE doth it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their*

*kingdoms, there is none like unto THEE."*

Jeremiah 10:6-7

*"I, even I, am the LORD; and beside ME there is no saviour."*

Isaiah 43:11

*"Look unto ME, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am GOD, and there is none else."*

Isaiah 45:22

*"Neither is there salvation in any other (other than the LORD JESUS CHRIST): for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."*

Acts 4:12

*"To HIM give all the prophets witness, that through HIS name whosoever believeth (believes) in HIM (the LORD JESUS CHRIST) shall receive remission (forgiveness) of sins."*

Acts 10:43

*"...Our LORD JESUS CHRIST: Which in HIS times HE shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the KING of kings, and LORD of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."*

I Timothy 6:14-16

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith (says) the LORD, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty."*

Revelation 1:8

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."*

Revelation 22:13

*"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise GOD, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen."*

I Timothy 1:17

Only the Book of the LORD or the Holy Scriptures or the Scripture of Truth or the Good Book or the Holy Bible declares the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, to the people of the whole

world, to be the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of the ONLY TRUE GOD, to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### 6.4 STRIVE TO ENTER INTO HEAVEN

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST severely warns,

*"Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able."*

St. Luke 13:24

**Strive:** This word is a translation of the Greek word **AGONIZOMAI** which has been used in several verses in the New Testament. Originally it was used to mean contending for victory in the public games, as in I Corinthians 9:25. Then it generally came to mean to fight, to wrestle as in St. John 18:36, indicating the task of the good fight of faith in persevering amid temptation and opposition (I Timothy 6:12; II Timothy 4:7). It also denoted special pains and toil and fervent labouring (Colossians 1:29; 4:12; I Timothy 4:10). It came also to mean straining every nerve to the uttermost towards the goal, the goal for the prize of the high call of GOD in CHRIST JESUS (Philippians 3:14). This is what this word means in St. Luke 13:24 which I have quoted above. This implies hindrances in the divine development and progress of Christian life and a great and continuing struggle against conflicts of various kinds.

Now, it is very important for us to remember at the beginning that our LORD JESUS CHRIST is not suggesting that anyone can MERIT (deserve) heaven by **striving** for it. No matter how rigorously they labour, sinners can never save themselves. Salvation is solely by grace and not by works (Ephesians 2:8-9). But entering the **narrow gate** is nonetheless difficult because of its cost (loss) in terms of human pride, because of the sinner's natural love for sin, and because of the world's and Satan's opposition to the truth.

"**Many will seek to enter in**" means at the judgment when many will protest they deserve entrance into heaven (St. Matthew 7:21-23; 25:41-46).

*"The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of GOD is preached, and every man presseth into it."*

St. Luke 16:16

"Every man presseth (**Greek: BIAZO**) into it" means pressing himself with great energy. This means while the Pharisees were busy opposing CHRIST, sinners were entering HIS kingdom in large numbers. The language of this expression speaks of violent force, signifying the zeal with which sinners were seeking and **striving** with all their heart to enter the kingdom of GOD through the **narrow gate**.

"**Strive**" means "**try or struggle physically, morally, mentally, emotionally and spiritually extremely hard**".

The word **strive** is a command. The word **strive** condemns many and comes with a severe warning and the verse St. Luke 13:24 contains an awful prophecy: "**Many will seek to enter in, and will not be able**".

The **strait gate** or the **narrow gate** or the **narrow door** (St. John 10:9) or the **narrow path** or the **narrow road** is the **narrow way**. The **narrow way** is our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (St. John 14:6). HE is the only way of salvation. HE is the only one way to be saved—through HIMSELF (Acts 4:12). HE is the **narrow gate**. HE HIMSELF is the **narrow gate** for sinners. This gate is **too narrow** for those who love sins and sinful lusts of the world and those who are not willing to get the salvation of their souls. Such people will not enter into this gate.

In eternity past, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST planned to make this **narrow gate** for sinners, by dying for them on the cross. So this **narrow gate** cost HIM HIS own most holy body and most holy blood. HE opened this **narrow gate**, the new and living way through the veil of HIS most holy flesh (Hebrews 10:20).

This **narrow gate** is the only way to heaven, the kingdom of GOD. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the **only gate** through which anyone can get into heaven. This **narrow gate** leads us to repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life, spiritual growth, anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT, the peace with GOD and eternal life in heaven. Those who enter through this gate will be saved and they will enter into heaven.

Even though this gate is narrow, it is a gate through which thousands upon thousands of sinners, extremely bad sinners have entered

and have been saved. Thousands upon thousands of people, from all countries and classes of society have come to this gate and they have been saved. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's earnest desire is that everyone should enter through this gate and be saved.

Many have lived and died without entering into this gate, the gate of salvation. Salvation is set before you as a free gift of GOD (Ephesians 2:8). So, do not neglect this blissful gate and perish because of unbelief.

**"Strive" is a command to all people of the world.** Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded us to **strive** to enter into the **narrow gate**, the gate of salvation and HE has not commanded us to **strive** for any other thing. So, we should **strive** to enter into the gate of salvation. We should **strive** to come, believe, labour, repent, ask, seek and knock at our LORD JESUS CHRIST. With HIS divine help, we should **strive** to overcome our own evil hearts, sins and sinful lusts of the world, the world and its temptations and Satan, the devil—the destroyer of our souls.

People **strive** for all kinds of things, such as riches, greatness, fame, education, promotion, powers of the world and other worldly lusts and worldly things which are corruptible. The incorruptible things, such as repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness and holy life, spiritual growth, anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT, the peace of GOD and eternal life in heaven are inside the **narrow gate**. Everyone should **strive** for these incorruptible things.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has commanded us to **strive** and we have no excuse if we refuse to do so and to be lazy in spiritual things and to be living in sins and sinful lusts. There is a very great danger outside the **narrow gate**. To die outside the **narrow gate** is to lose our souls without hope for ever. Due to the shortness and uncertainty of time, our LORD JESUS CHRIST urges us not to delay and not to leave it too late, but to act quickly to enter into the **narrow gate**.

Again, the word **"strive" condemns many and comes with a severe warning**. It condemns many who call themselves Christians, since they make no efforts at all in spiritual matters. They are **not**

**striving.** Many are irregular in attending church worship. This is **not striving.** Many attend regularly only out of customary habit. This is **not striving.** Many hardly ever touch and read the Holy Bible. This is **not striving.** But they very interestingly touch and read newspapers, magazines, novels, etc., neglecting the Word of GOD. This is **not striving.** They very interestingly read pornographic books, novels or magazines. This is **not striving.** They very interestingly watch pornographic movies or films. This is **not striving.** Pornographers are sinners. They very interestingly watch TV programmes, such as movies or films, entertainment or sport events, etc. This is **not striving.**

Many never pray to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. This is **not striving.** Many do not thank GOD. Many do not seek GOD. Many go to bed without prayer and they get up without prayer. Many ask nothing from GOD. Many confess nothing to GOD. They know one day they must die. But they are **not striving** to pray with their Maker and their Judge. We with our common sense can judge ourselves if we are **striving.** Our heavenly GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST warns, **Strive.** Very few people **strive** to enter through the **narrow gate** to be saved and to enter into heaven. Many people boldly make many bold excuses. In the **parable of the Great Supper (Banquet)**, illustrating lack of appreciation of GOD and hatred of HIM (St. Luke 14:15-24), we see some bold excuses—one has his land to attend to; another has his oxen to try out; and another has his own family affairs. There is no excuse for making an excuse (Deuteronomy 30:11-14; Romans 1:20; 2:1). Since they were occupied by their riches, such as land, cattle, or a wife, they refused **GOD's Glorious Invitation** and they made some bold excuses (St. Luke 14:15-24). All sinners are united into one, on making excuses regarding why they do not renounce sin and serve GOD. They do not **strive** to get GOD's full salvation. JESUS' parable of the Great Supper (Banquet) is triggered by one of the supper guests. In order to 'eat bread in GOD's kingdom', it is necessary to say yes when the invitation through Gospel comes and we should be saved, since there is no second chance.

Further, **our LORD JESUS CHRIST has prophesied, "Many will seek to enter in and will not be able".** In this prophecy, HE is speaking of HIS second coming to judge the world. At that time, HIS longsuffering will come to an end, the throne of grace will be replaced by the

throne of judgment and the opened **narrow gate** will be barred and closed and the day of grace will be past for ever. An awful time is coming and all the values of the world will be turned upside down. Those who live for this world as sinners will become worthless (Proverbs 1:24-31). When the great Day of Judgment will come, these solemn Words of our LORD JESUS CHRIST will be fulfilled: "**Many will seek to enter in and will not be able**".

Everyone should put forth personal effort to enter into heaven through the **narrow gate**. Now, have you actually entered through this **narrow gate**? Are you now inside it? If not, your sins are not forgiven; you are not saved; you are not regenerated; you are not fit for heaven, the kingdom of GOD; and when you die you will be eternally miserable in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

Now, the opened **narrow gate** stands before you, ready for you to enter in. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is ready to save you. Enter at once, without any delay. Let us **strive** and work while it is day, for "**the night cometh, when no man can work**" (St. John 9:4). And let us **strive** and work to show our neighbours the **narrow gate**, for "**he which converteth (who turns) the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, ...**" (James 5:20).

**Many will not be able to enter into heaven because:** Many do not obey the divine call of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Matthew 11:28); many do not call upon (worship) the name of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Genesis 4:26; Romans 10:13); many do not do the will of the heavenly FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. Matthew 7:21), since it is not pleasing to them (Romans 15:3); many do not choose to be ill-treated or reproached or suffered in the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Hebrews 11:25-26); many do not seek and **strive** the correct way (St. Luke 13:24; 18:9-14; Psalm 34:18; 51:1-5; I John 1:9); many do not seek and **strive** at the correct time—before the door of salvation is shut (St. Luke 13:25; II Corinthians 6:2; St. Matthew 7:21-23; 25:10-12); many do not seek and **strive** in the correct place—stand outside the door of salvation without accepting CHRIST genuinely (St. Luke 13:25-26; Revelation 3:20); many do not seek and **strive** upon the correct pleas—we received YOU, we entertained YOU and we supported YOU (St. Luke 13:26; St. Matthew 25:41-46);

many do not seek and **strive** with the heart, but with the mouth; their heart is far away from GOD (St. Luke 13:26; Isaiah 29:13; St. Matthew 15:8); and many do not dislike sins and sinful pleasures, the passing pleasures of sins (Hebrews 11:25).

Now, to enter into heaven through the **narrow gate**, everyone should seek and **strive** the correct way; everyone should seek and **strive** at the correct time; everyone should seek and **strive** in the correct place; everyone should seek and **strive** upon the correct pleas; everyone should seek and **strive** with the sincere mouth confession toward GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST continually and with the sincere believing heart abiding in HIM (Romans 10:9-10); everyone should obey the divine call of GOD; everyone should call upon (worship) the name of the LORD; everyone should do the will of the LORD; everyone should choose the way of afflictions; and everyone should hate sins and sinful pleasures of the world.

Most importantly, we should **strive** to receive the full salvation of GOD and we should always **strive** to work out our salvation lifelong with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12). If we always fear and tremble before our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, then there is no possibility of a fall or a failure in our spiritual life.

Further, godliness is profitable for all things of this life and of the life to come (I Timothy 4:8). So, we should **strive** much in the LORD to get godliness or piety and also to the living of GOD in us (I Timothy 3:16).

Besides, we should **strive** always to keep our conscience without offence (clear) toward GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and men (Acts 24:16). If we earnestly **strive** for these things, then we will be given rest for our souls from our labours and we will be the blessed in the LORD for ever (Revelation 14:13). Glory be to GOD!

No one should **strive** for the bread (the bread of deceit—Proverbs 20:17) which does not satisfy (Isaiah 55:2). Everyone should **strive** for the true "Bread of Life" (St. John 6:32-35) which alone is good for the body, soul and spirit. There is no personal profit for our souls in our own **striving** for the worldly things (Ecclesiastes 1:3; 2:22).



GOD's ministers or GOD's servants should **strive** with the mighty power GOD has given to them, to present every person perfect in CHRIST JESUS (Colossians 1:28-29). They should always **strive** for the spiritual welfare and bodily welfare of the people of the whole world (II Corinthians 6:5). They should **strive** according to the Laws of GOD, the rules and regulations of GOD (II Timothy 2:5). GOD's ministers are GOD's fellow workers (I Corinthians 3:9). They are the hard-working (**hard-striving**) farmers of CHRIST and they should be the first to partake of the fruits, the spiritual blessings (II Timothy 2:6). Without **striving** in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, no one will enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD.

## 6.5 GOD'S FINAL CALL TO BE THE ONE PEOPLE

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's final call to be the ONE PEOPLE of GOD is the heavenly calling of GOD (Hebrews 3:1); HIS final call to be the ONE PEOPLE of GOD is the holy calling of GOD (II Timothy 1:9); HIS final call to be the ONE PEOPLE of GOD is the high calling of GOD (Philippians 3:14).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's gifts and HIS call are irrevocable (Romans 11:29). HE calls all people everywhere to repentance or salvation (Acts 17:30). HE calls all people for a dedicated life in JESUS CHRIST. HE calls all people into the fellowship of JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 1:9). HE calls all people to be Christians (Romans 1:6). HE calls all people for sanctification (I Corinthians 3:4). HE calls all people to holiness and holy life (I Peter 1:15-16). And at times HE calls HIS servants (ministers) to do HIS special ministry (Acts 13:2).

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls all who are weary and burdened, to give them rest (St. Matthew 11:28-30). HE lovingly calls all to the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD for eternal bliss (St. Matthew 4:17).

The children of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST are the people of GOD. They are the ONE PEOPLE of GOD; they are the ONLY ONE PEOPLE of GOD and they are the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of GOD. They are the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD. They are the ONLY ONE PEOPLE of the ONLY ONE GOD. They are the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD. They are the ONE PEOPLE and

the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The children of GOD are the chosen people of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are the own people of the LORD GOD. They are the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE blessed by the LORD GOD. They are the royal priests of the LORD GOD. They are the holy people of the LORD GOD. They are the righteous people of the LORD GOD. They are the special people of the LORD GOD. They are the people saved by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST. They are the people delivered by the LORD GOD. They are the people redeemed by the LORD GOD. The saved people are spiritually called Israel. The children of GOD have obtained mercy and grace of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

*"But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth (proclaim) the praises of HIM who hath called you out of darkness into HIS marvellous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of GOD: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy."*

I Peter 2:9-10

*"A seed shall serve HIM; it shall be accounted to the LORD for a generation."*

Psalm 22:30

'A seed' means 'The chosen generation of the LORD'.

*"Happy art thou, O Israel: who is like unto thee, O people saved by the LORD, the shield of thy help, and who is the sword of thy excellency! and thine enemies shall be found liars unto thee; and thou shalt tread upon their high places."*

Deuteronomy 33:29

The children of GOD live by faith. They are the just (the righteous people). They believe GOD with all their heart. They never use any medicine for their sicknesses.

*"Now the just shall live by faith: ..."*

Hebrews 10:38

*"...For I am the LORD that healeth thee."*

Exodus 15:26

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have no "vain faith" or "vain belief" in the wrong or false doctrines and in the doctrines of devils.

*"...Some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing (deceiving) spirits, and doctrines of devils."*

I Timothy 4:1

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have no "dead faith" or "dead belief" or "faith without works".

*"But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?"*

James 2:20

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have no "weak faith"—belief expressed as mere legalism.

*"Him that is weak in the faith ..."*

Romans 14:1

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have no kind of unbelief. They have no "little faith"—a mixture of faith and unbelief or doubt. Our LORD JESUS said to Peter,

*"O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?"*

St. Matthew 14:31

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have "strong faith"—faith that is rooted in the promises of GOD. They give glory to GOD, being fully convinced that GOD has power to do what HE has promised. They have no failure of faith.

*"He staggered (wavered) not at the promise of GOD through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to GOD; And being fully persuaded (convinced) that, what HE had promised, HE was able also to perform."*

Romans 4:20-21

Faith, hope and love remain in the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD. But, the greatest of these three is love. This love of GOD comes from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith. Thus, the

ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith.

*"And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity."*

I Corinthians 13:13

*"Now the end (purpose) of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned."*

I Timothy 1:5

'Charity' means 'love'.

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are born of GOD (I John 5:18); they are the children of GOD (St. John 1:12); they are the born-again or the regenerated people of GOD (St. John 3:3, 5); they are the saved (Revelation 21:24); they are the redeemed (I Peter 1:18); they are made alive by CHRIST when they were dead in trespasses and sins (Ephesians 2:1); GOD always leads them in triumph in CHRIST (II Corinthians 2:14); they are in fullness in CHRIST (Colossians 2:10); they are the saints (Ephesians 1:1); they are the witnesses of GOD (Acts 1:8); and they are the blessed (Ephesians 1:3).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the poor in spirit (St. Matthew 5:3); in their spirit is no guile or deceit (Psalm 32:2); they are the meek (St. Matthew 5:5); they are the merciful (St. Matthew 5:7); they are the pure in heart (St. Matthew 5:8); they are the peacemakers (St. Matthew 5:9); and they consider the poor (Psalm 41:1).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the branches of the true vine, the true vine is the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 15:5); their transgressions, sins and trespasses are forgiven (Psalm 32:1); their sins are covered (Psalm 32:1); their sins the LORD does not impute (count against) (Psalm 32:2); and they are kings and priests to our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Revelation 5:10).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the habitation of GOD (Ephesians 2:22); they are the household of GOD (Ephesians 2:19); they are the temple of the living GOD (I Corinthians 3:16; II Corinthians 6:16); they are the body of CHRIST and they are parts

(members) of the body of CHRIST (I Corinthians 12:27); and they are GOD's field and GOD's building (I Corinthians 3:9).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the undefiled; they walk in the law of the LORD; they keep their testimonies; they seek HIM with the whole heart; they also do no iniquity and they walk in HIS ways (Psalm 119:1-3); they walk not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stand in the path of sinners, nor sit in the seat of the scornful (Psalm 1:1); their delight is in the law of the LORD and in HIS law they meditate day and night (Psalm 1:2); they fear the LORD and they delight greatly in HIS commandments (Psalm 112:1); they keep justice and they do righteousness at all times (Psalm 106:3); their strength is in HIM and their hearts are set in HIS ways (Psalm 84:5) and they do HIS commandments (Revelation 22:14).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD get HIS sound wisdom, knowledge of the Holy ONE and good understanding. All the treasures of wisdom, knowledge and understanding are hidden in our LORD JESUS CHRIST (Colossians 2:3). The Spirit of wisdom, knowledge and understanding are in HIM (Isaiah 11:2). Everyone should get the wisdom of GOD, the hidden wisdom which GOD ordained before the foundation of the world for our glory (I Corinthians 2:7). See Psalm 111:10; Proverbs 2:6-7; 3:13; 4:7; 9:10.

### **Why do GOD's people have so much trouble in this world?**

**“But when we are judged, we are chastened of the LORD, that we should not be condemned with the world.”**

I Corinthians 11:32

If we are not chastened or punished or disciplined, then we are illegitimate children and not true sons and daughters of GOD and we will be condemned with the world. Troubles and sufferings are not merely punishment for sin; for GOD's people, they may serve as a discipline to grow in spiritual life (Job 5:17; Hebrews 12:5-11). When Job was in great trouble, he reproved his foolish wife who asked him to abandon his integrity, and to curse GOD and die. Job reproves,

*“...What? shall we receive good at (from) the hand of GOD, and shall we not receive evil (trouble)?”*

Job 2:10

As GOD's children, we are disciplined or punished, just as human father disciplines or punishes his child, so that we might repent of our sins (II Corinthians 7:10) and grow in grace and in the knowledge of CHRIST (II Peter 3:18). Sufferings will give us crown of rejoicings with exceeding joy during CHRIST's glorious coming (I Peter 4:13).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the great nation and this great nation is a wise and understanding people (Deuteronomy 4:6). Their GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is very near to them, whenever they call upon HIM (Deuteronomy 4:7).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD wait for HIM (Isaiah 30:18); they always fear HIM in reverent fear (Proverbs 28:14; I Peter 1:17); they hear or listen to HIM (Proverbs 8:34); they hear the Word of GOD and keep it (St. Luke 11:28); they keep their hands from doing any evil (Isaiah 56:2); they trust in the LORD and their hope is the LORD (Jeremiah 17:7); the LORD will deliver them in times of trouble (Psalm 41:1); the LORD will preserve them and keep them alive and they will be blessed on the earth (Psalm 41:2); the LORD will not deliver them to the will of their enemies (Psalm 41:2); the LORD will strengthen them on their bed of illness and the LORD will restore them on their sickbed (Psalm 41:3).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are those who have not seen HIM and yet have believed HIM.

**“ ... Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed. ”**

St. John 20:29

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are those who endure temptation (James 1:12); they persevere (James 1:25); they suffer for righteousness' sake (I Peter 3:14); they are reproached for the name of CHRIST (I Peter 4:14); they watch and keep their garments of salvation (Revelation 16:15); they keep the words of the prophecy of the Scripture (II Peter 1:20-21; Revelation 22:7); they are the dead who die in the LORD (Revelation 14:13); and they have no second death—the fiery lake of burning sulphur or hell (Revelation 21:8).

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have part in the first resurrection—the resurrection of the saints (Revelation 20:6); they have part in the thousand years rule (the Millennium) with CHRIST (Revelation 20:6); they have part in the kingdom of GOD, the kingdom of heaven (II Corinthians 5:1; Revelation 19:1); they will be with CHRIST eternally in HIS kingdom (I Thessalonians 4:16-17; Philippians 3:20); and they have no separation from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Revelation 21:3-4). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are a "new creation". That is, the saved people are a "new creation". They perceive the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST in a new and living way. Their old lives or sinful lives have passed away from them and new lives or sinless lives have come into them. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"Therefore if any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."*

II Corinthians 5:17

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the children of obedience. They wholeheartedly obey the pattern of teaching (form of doctrine) entrusted to them. They never follow the ways of this world and of the prince of the power of the air, the spirit (Satan, the devil) who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

*"For your obedience is come (reported) abroad unto all men. ..."*

Romans 16:19

*"But GOD be thanked, that ye (though ye) were the servants (slaves) of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you."*

Romans 6:17

*"Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience."*

Ephesians 2:2

*"Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of GOD upon the children of disobedience."*

Ephesians 5:6

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD never run with the unsaved into the same excess of dissipation. They never walk in licentiousness, lusts, drunkenness, revellings, drinking parties, abominable idolatries, etc.

*“For the time past of our life may suffice (is enough for) us to have wrought (done) the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries: Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you.”*

I Peter 4:3-4

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE AND ONLY GOD conduct themselves in a manner worthy of the Gospel of CHRIST. They stand fast in one spirit, with one mind contending together for the faith of the Gospel.

*“Only let your conversation (conduct) be as it becometh the Gospel of CHRIST: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the Gospel.”*

Philippians 1:27

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD dwell in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST also dwells in them.

*“Hereby know we that we dwell in HIM, and HE in us, because HE hath given us of HIS Spirit.”*

I John 4:13

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have eternal life, the eternal life of the eternal GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*“These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the SON OF GOD; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the SON OF GOD.”*

I John 5:13

‘The SON OF GOD’ means ‘The LORD JESUS CHRIST’.

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD are the salt of the earth. Salt is used for flavouring and preserving foods. It gives good taste,



sweetness, and pleasantness. It is a very suitable description of the saved in their relationship to the world, in which they live. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"Ye are the salt of the earth: ..."*

St. Matthew 5:13

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the Light of the world and in HIM there is no darkness at all. HE is perfect and good; there is no sin or evil in HIM. Since GOD is the Light of the world, HIS children (the saved) are also the light of the world. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"Ye are the light of the world. ..."*

St. Matthew 5:14

*"Then spake JESUS again unto them, saying, I am the Light of the world: he that followeth ME shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life."*

St. John 8:12

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD bear much spiritual fruit, since they remain in HIM and HE remains in them. They glorify GOD by their good works, and anyone can understand that GOD is really with them. Our LORD JESUS said,

*"...He that abideth in ME, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: ..."*

St. John 15:5

The attitude of the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD is the same as that of CHRIST JESUS.

*"Let this mind be in you, which was also in CHRIST JESUS."*

Philippians 2:5

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD—the children of GOD have a good testimony (witness) of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD; they have a good testimony of all men—the believers and unbelievers; they have a good testimony of GOD's ministers; they have a good testimony of the truth—the law of GOD; they have a good testimony of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of GOD."*

Romans 8:16

*“Demetrius hath good report (testimony) of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we also bear record; and ye know that our record is true.”*

III John 12

*“Ye are witnesses, and GOD also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe.”*

I Thessalonians 2:10

The righteousness of the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD—the righteousness of the children of GOD will shine out brightly; their salvation will shine out like a burning lamp. The Sun of Righteousness, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will rise on them. The glory of the LORD will be seen on them. They will be a crown of glory in the most holy hand of the LORD. They will be a royal diadem in the most holy hand of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. See Isaiah 62:1-3; Malachi 4:2.

The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD—the saved people are the light of the world. As a city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden, their salvation cannot be hidden. Their salvation cannot be hidden from the world. Their salvation cannot be hidden from his/her household. Their salvation cannot be hidden from his/her villagers/city. Their salvation cannot be hidden from anybody.

*“Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid.”*

St. Matthew 5:14

Among the unsaved, the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD shine as lights in the world, holding fast to the Word of Life. They are blameless and harmless (pure) and without grumbling or arguing and without fault in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation. As stars are readily noticeable in a dark sky, the children of GOD are readily noticeable in this sinful world. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“Do all things without murmurings and disputings: That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons (children) of GOD, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world; Holding forth (fast to) the Word of Life; ...”*

Philippians 2:14-16

**GOD has given to us Only One Bible—the Holy Bible.** We firmly believe that GOD has given the Authorized (King James) Version 1611, the King James Version or the Authorized Version of the Holy Bible for the English-speaking people. English is a foreign language for us and not for the English-speaking people. We use the Authorized (King James) Version wholeheartedly. Why can't the English-speaking persons? Since they are caught under Satan's Ecumenical trap of Ecumenism, Romanism (Roman Catholicism), Charismatism, Oikoumenism, Apostolicism, Ecclesiasticism, Liberalism, Modernism, Idealism, Pluralism and Westernisation of Spiritualism, they neglect the Authorized (King James) Version. Except this Version, all other versions in English are greatly poisoning the Word of GOD, the Word of Life—the River of Life at its sacred source. So, the English-speaking people are lovingly called to make use of the Authorized (King James) Version of the Holy Bible, the only GOD-given Bible.

**The ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD or the blessed and the holy people of the ONE GOD will be given a thousand years rule (a Millennium rule) on earth with CHRIST** (Revelation 20:6). They will rule this earth with CHRIST. During this thousand years rule, Satan, the devil will be imprisoned, so that he may not deceive the nations anymore until the thousand years are completed (Revelation 20:1-10). The names of the idols will be cut off (banished) from the land and the false prophets and the unclean spirits will be removed from the land and all kinds of evil and wicked activities of Satan and his henchmen will be put down (Zechariah 13:2) and the land will be purged of sin. All kinds of rebellions, terrorisms, wars and violences on earth will be put down (Psalm 78:8; St. Matthew 24:6-7) and all the troubles will be ended. All kinds of diseases, sicknesses, pestilences and famines will be taken away from the midst of HIS people and there will be no earthquakes or floods or tsunamis or storms or tempests or any other natural calamities (Exodus 23:25; St. Matthew 24:7) and evil will have been totally eradicated.

During the thousand years rule of CHRIST, Israel will be fully delivered from the nations (Zechariah 8:7-8). Jerusalem or Zion will be the head (capital) of all nations (Zechariah 8:3; Psalm 48:2). Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will sit on the throne of HIS glory at Jerusalem or Zion in Israel (St. Matthew 19:28). The covenants of GOD

made with Abraham (Genesis 12; 13; 15; 17), Isaac (Genesis 26), Jacob (Genesis 28) and others will be fulfilled. All prophecies concerning the glorious reign of the MESSIAH or the CHRIST will be fulfilled (Isaiah 11:5-10). The Israelites' or the Jews' long awaited rule of the MESSIAH or the CHRIST will be fulfilled. There will be restoration and reunion of GOD's dispersed people.

During the thousand years rule of CHRIST, the saints of all ages will be exalted to a kingly and priestly position according to their works (Revelation 1:6; 20:6). The earth will be restored to its rightful owners and the nations will be judged in righteousness by the saints (I Corinthians 6:2; St. Luke 22:29-30). A righteous and peaceful government will be restored on earth as originally planned by GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Isaiah 32:1).

During the **Millennial reign** of CHRIST, HIS holy temple (Habakkuk 2:20) or HIS capital building, which is the Millennial temple will be established in Jerusalem or Zion. The establishment of the literal, earthly, visible and civil kingdom of heaven on earth will be on the top of the mountains and it will be exalted above the hills and all nations will flow unto it (Isaiah 2:2; Micah 4:1). The temple will be glorified and the supremacy of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST will have been acknowledged.

*"Beautiful for situation, the joy of the whole earth, is mount Zion, on the sides of the north, the city of the great KING."*

Psalm 48:2

*"Out of Zion, the perfection of beauty, GOD hath shined."*

Psalm 50:2

During the Millennium, CHRIST will reign over all kingdoms of the earth gloriously, peacefully and righteously. At that time, Jerusalem will be the LORD's house, the mountain of the LORD and the house of GOD of Jacob (Isaiah 2:3; Micah 4:2). Again, Jerusalem will be the city of righteousness (Isaiah 1:26), the faithful city (Isaiah 1:26), the city of the LORD (Isaiah 60:14), the Zion of the Holy ONE of Israel (Isaiah 60:14), Hephzibah (Isaiah 62:4), meaning the LORD's delight is in her (Jerusalem), a city sought out and not forsaken (Isaiah 62:12), the throne of the LORD (Jeremiah 3:17), a green olive tree, fair and of good fruit (Jeremiah 11:16), the LORD is there or the

abiding presence of the LORD (Ezekiel 48:35), a city of truth (Zechariah 8:3), the mountain of the LORD of hosts (Zechariah 8:3), the holy mountain (Zechariah 8:3), the perfection of beauty (Psalm 50:2), the city of our GOD and the mountain of HIS holiness (Psalm 48:1), the joy of the whole earth and the city of the great King (Psalm 48:2).

During the Millennial reign, CHRIST will actually land on the planet earth and be visible among men. Jerusalem or Zion will be HIS dwelling place as well as HIS office place. Jerusalem or Zion will be the place of the soles of HIS feet, HIS capital building, HIS dwelling, HIS headquarters, HIS holy throne-seat and HIS official palace where HE will rule over all nations (Ezekiel 43:7). During HIS Millennial reign, CHRIST will have Jerusalem or Zion as HIS earthly headquarters and the New Jerusalem in heaven as HIS heavenly home. During the Millennium, the nations will submit their disputes to the arbitration of the LORD JESUS CHRIST and so wars will cease and the weapons of war will be turned into tools of peace (Isaiah 2:4; Micah 4:3).

The MESSIAH's or the CHRIST's ruling the world in righteousness and peace will extend even to the animal kingdom. Animals and other creeping things will not hurt or harm anyone. They will change their diets also (Isaiah 11:6-9; 65:25). Together with the coming of the golden age for humanity there will be a transformation of the lower creation and the animals will be content with the food GOD assigns to them. The earth will be full of the knowledge of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST as the waters cover the sea (Isaiah 11:9). All things will be gloriously restored as before sin entered into the world (Ezekiel 37:23). GOD will have HIS sanctuary in the midst of HIS people and will dwell with them. All heavenly blessings will be given to HIS people by our heavenly FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 1:3). Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls us all for this glorious thousand years rule. What a glorious thing it is!

Now, you too will obtain the experiences of the children of GOD. You too will obtain the experiences of the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and you too will rule with the LORD JESUS

CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD for ever and ever in heaven, the divine world.

Further, no one can have any doubt about the truth that the ONE PEOPLE or the ONLY ONE PEOPLE or the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE are the holy and righteous people of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They will certainly obtain the eternal blessings of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

Now, without any doubt, the old Tamil saying "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" reveals the great fact and truth that the people of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST are the ONE PEOPLE or the ONLY ONE PEOPLE or the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST.

**This precious book has been written because the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has willed it. It has been written for you to know and believe that the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD and HIS people are the ONE PEOPLE or the ONLY ONE PEOPLE or the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; and to inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD in HIS name.** Glory be to GOD!

## 6.6 SOME VERY IMPORTANT SPIRITUAL THINGS REGARDING SPIRITUAL LIFE—THE SO-CALLED CHRISTIAN WORLD OR CHRISTENDOM

Now, the horse and the mule have no understanding and they are senseless and foolish. In order to tame it or control it or check it, we have to bridle it by putting a metal bit in its mouth (Psalm 32:9). Likewise, **spiritual bit and bridle** are very essential to tame or control or regulate or check to attain good spiritual understanding. Figuratively, these pieces of equipment, bit and bridle speak of trials and tribulations which come as corrective measures from GOD. Sometimes, it is necessary for the LORD to deal in, what seems to be a harsh manner with HIS disobedient children. For instance, we very well know that some believers in Corinth became ill and others died because of their improper conduct in connection with the LORD's Supper (I Corinthians 11:17-30).

Spiritual bit and bridle control and regulate and check us to do the will of GOD. They make us come near to our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They make us obey the Word of GOD. They give us humility before GOD. They give us the fear of GOD. They give us the will to obey GOD with trembling. They turn our whole spirit, soul and body towards the will and pleasure of GOD. They remove our senseless conduct and give us a meek and quiet spirit. They give us a sinless and guiltless life. They make us beloved in CHRIST. They tame our eyes, ears, tongues and hearts and our whole body. They make us perfect men/women without stumbling in the dark. They deliver our souls from hell (James 3:2-12; Psalm 32:1).

Now, for our spiritual sight, our eyes must be circumcised and opened and anointed by the HOLY SPIRIT (Colossians 2:11; Psalm 119:18; Revelation 3:18). For our spiritual hearing, our ears must be circumcised and our itching ears that hear evil things must be healed by the HOLY SPIRIT (Colossians 2:11; II Timothy 4:3). For our spiritual speaking, our tongues must be circumcised and bridled from speaking lies, evil and deceit and our tongues must speak with varieties of tongues (Colossians 2:11; James 1:26; Psalm 34:13; I Corinthians 12:28). For our spiritual life, our hearts and our whole body must be circumcised and purified and established not by ceremonial rules, but by a spiritual operation by the HOLY SPIRIT, which is the baptism of our souls (Colossians 2:11; James 4:8; Hebrews 13:9).

To everyone in the world, now is the time of GOD's favour to be saved; now is the day of salvation to be saved; now is the accepted time to live as the children of GOD; now is the accepted time to live as the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"...Behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation."*

II Corinthians 6:2

**For a sinless life**, we must have a true determination not to sin (Psalm 17:3); and we must make a true covenant with GOD and with all our members of our body (Job 31:1); and we must have a prayer of

faith for our bodily and spiritual blessings (Psalm 141:1-4; Proverbs 4:23-27; James 5:15-16). Without the grace and guidance and help of GOD, we cannot live a sinless life (Psalm 127:1-2).

**Humbleness of mind** is always essential to live a godly life (Colossians 3:12). To obtain salvation from our ugly and shameful sins, we must humble ourselves before GOD. After getting salvation from sins, we humble ourselves before GOD for our GOD's free gift of salvation and for our free spiritual and bodily blessings (Ephesians 2:8). So, the saved should have more humbleness of mind than the unsaved. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's humbleness of mind is wonderful. HE is the model for us to emulate.

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has said,

*"...I am meek and lowly (gentle and humble) in heart: ..."*

St. Matthew 11:29

*"...I am among you as HE that serveth (the ONE who serves)."*

St. Luke 22:27

*"For whosoever exalteth (exalts) himself shall be abased (humbled); and he that humbleth (humbles) himself shall be exalted."*

St. Luke 14:11

*"...Whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister (servant); And whosoever will be chief (first) among you, let him be your servant (slave):"*

St. Matthew 20:26-27

*"Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven."*

St. Matthew 18:4

**For our humbleness of mind, 'JESUS CHRIST' must come in the place of 'I'** (Galatians 2:20). For this, the grace of GOD is very essential (James 4:6). When we humble ourselves in the sight of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, HE will lift us up (James 4:10) and "before honour is humility" (Proverbs 15:33). "Better it is to be of a humble spirit with the lowly" (Proverbs 16:19). When we worship and give praise and thanks to GOD, we must humble ourselves before GOD greatly



(St. Luke 18:9-14). If anyone wants to be exalted, he must humble himself (St. Luke 14:7-11).

Job humbly confesses that he is a worm and a maggot (Job 25:6). Apostle Paul humbly confesses that he is like the filth of the world and like the offscouring of all things (I Corinthians 4:13). He again humbly confesses that he is the worst sinner (I Timothy 1:15).

**Our faith creates humbleness of mind.** Humbleness of mind makes us realize the fact that we are nothing (I Corinthians 13:2) and are of no worth (St. Matthew 8:5-10). The centurion said to our LORD JESUS CHRIST,

*"LORD, I am not worthy that THOU shouldst (should) come under my roof: ..."*

St. Matthew 8:8

The Syrophoenician woman's faith made herself humble before our LORD JESUS CHRIST. She humbly compared herself to a dog (St. Mark 7:24-30).

**Our GOD hates the proud** and warns them severely in Jeremiah 50:31.

*"Behold, I am against thee, O thou most proud, saith the LORD GOD of hosts: for thy day is come, the time that I will visit (punish) thee."*

Jeremiah 50:31

When one's heart is filled with pride and arrogance, he thinks that no one can do anything to him.

*"...Who shall bring me down to the ground?"*

Obadiah 3

But our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST says,

*"Though thou exalt thyself as the eagle, and though thou set thy nest among the stars, thence will I bring thee down, ..."*

Obadiah 4

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST knew the pride and arrogance in the heart of Satan, the devil—Lucifer (Isaiah 14:13-14). In his pride, he arrogantly said in his heart,

*"...I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of GOD (angels of GOD): ..."*

Isaiah 14:13

Satan, the devil's pride and arrogance led him down to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Isaiah 14:15; Revelation 20:10). This is why our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST warns,

*"I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings."*

Jeremiah 17:10

**Pride is the gate of hell**, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Pride is the gateway of hell. Pride is the cause of sin and curse. The pride of life always works against our humbleness of mind. It works outside as well as inside of our hearts. Due to pride, Adam and Eve (the first man and the first woman) had fallen miserably. Due to pride, human beings commit all kinds of abominable sins.

**A man with a proud heart** stirs up strife (Proverbs 28:25). Contention comes only by pride (Proverbs 13:10). Pride goes before destruction (being destroyed) and a haughty (proud) spirit goes before a fall (Proverbs 16:18).

Pride utterly destroys spiritual life or Christian life. The pride of power, wealth and fame utterly destroy spiritual life. **Anyone's pride to grab high position which our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has reserved for HIS chosen one, utterly destroys his/her spiritual life.**

Satan, the devil cunningly injected pride, the deadly poison into the hearts of Adam and Eve without their knowledge. **Pride entered into the hearts of Adam and Eve without their knowledge. They could not see how it entered into them. They disobeyed GOD's command because of the pride of life.** Pride penetrated and pierced into their hearts without their knowledge. After that, they could not take away this terrible sin from their hearts. Now, with our own strength, we cannot take away this sin from our hearts. Only with the power and strength of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, we can take away this sin from our hearts and when we pray with a broken-heart and with tears and with weeping and by confessing our sins wholeheartedly, GOD will take away

this sin from our hearts. Further, we must have total separation from the world and we must not indulge in any corrupt communication and we must have pure and undefiled godliness and we must reveal in our life humbleness of mind, holiness, righteousness, love, sobriety and godliness. Glory be to GOD!

**Why do people go to hell?** People go to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur because of their unbelief in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (St. John 3:16-17). People go to hell because of their sins (Romans 6:23; I Corinthians 6:9-10; Galatians 5:19-21; Ephesians 5:3-5; Revelation 21:8). People go to hell since they have not been saved (Ephesians 2:8). People go to hell because of their unholiness (Hebrews 12:14) and ungodliness (Jude 15).

**Seven secret things in our creation are:**

- (1) **Where were we** when GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST laid the foundations of the earth? (Job 38:4). We were in the holy mind of GOD. Before the creation of the world GOD had chosen us in HIM that we should be holy and blameless before HIM in love (Ephesians 1:4).
- (2) **Whence did we come?** We came from GOD's wonderful creative hands (Psalm 119:73; 139:14) and were made in GOD's own image and in HIS own likeness with a living soul (Genesis 1:26-27; 2:7).
- (3) **Who are we?** Though we have become sinners—corrupt and depraved, subject to the sins and sinful lusts we are still the objects of GOD's love (Psalm 51:5; Genesis 8:21; Romans 3:23; St. John 3:16).
- (4) **Where are we going?** Sin personally offends GOD. Sin makes GOD angry. So, the wrath of GOD is revealed from heaven against all sinners (Romans 1:18). Life is a journey and its destination must be known (Psalm 2:12). The sinners are going towards their lives' destination—hell. The saved are going towards their lives' destination—heaven.
- (5) **Why are we here?** We are here in a congregation to escape the wrath of GOD (Romans 1:18); to obtain forgiveness of

sins, salvation from sins, etc., (I Thessalonians 5:9); to obtain sanctification and to abstain from fornication or sexual immorality and from all sins (I Thessalonians 4:3); to be filled with the HOLY SPIRIT (Acts 1:8); for sharing our faith (Acts 1:8); to be joyful in CHRIST JESUS (I Thessalonians 5:16); to be prayerful in life (I Thessalonians 5:17); to praise and thank GOD (I Thessalonians 5:18; Ephesians 5:20; Colossians 3:17); for growing strong in the grace that is in CHRIST JESUS (II Timothy 2:1); for studying the Word of GOD (II Timothy 3:14-17); to escape GOD's judgment (Revelation 20:11-13); to escape hell (Revelation 21:8); and to enter into heaven (St. Matthew 25:34).

- (6) What is our end?** As believers (saved)—heaven. As unbelievers (unsaved)—hell. If we are not saved, our lives are meaningless and we have the wrath of GOD and hell. JESUS can save anybody, regardless of what we have done. HE will grant salvation, if we are remorseful for our sins. The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance (II Peter 3:9).
- (7) How can we know these truths?** We can very well know these truths from the HOLY BIBLE, the living Word of GOD and from this precious guide book, "**ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!**" — "**THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!**" Glory be to GOD!

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the supreme example of:**

- (1) Suffering evil for doing good (I Peter 2:21; Hebrews 12:3) and suffering affliction with inexhaustible patience (James 5:10).
- (2) Suffering for our eternal salvation (Hebrews 5:8-9).
- (3) Sinlessness and guilelessness (I Peter 2:22), holiness, harmlessness and undefilement (Hebrews 7:26) and righteousness (I Peter 2:24; St. Matthew 5:10).
- (4) Love when being mocked and patience in threatening and committing HIMSELF to GOD (I Peter 2:23).

- (5) Praying (St. Matthew 14:23; St. John 17:9, 20) and praying in the early morning (St. Mark 1:35) and praying in the evening (St. Matthew 14:23).
- (6) Forbearing and forgiving (St. John 8:1-11; Colossians 3:13).
- (7) Humility in spirit, meekness, mercifulness, purity and gentleness in heart and striving to be a good Peacemaker (St. Matthew 5:3, 5, 7-9; 11:29).
- (8) A humble and loving Preacher or a good Preacher (St. Matthew 5:1-12).
- (9) Doing the will of GOD the FATHER (St. John 4:34; 6:38).
- (10) Humbleness and obedience (Philippians 2:8).
- (11) A good Shepherd (St. John 10:1-18), the Shepherd of our souls (I Peter 2:25).
- (12) A great High Priest (Hebrews 4:14; 5:1-10), a merciful and faithful High Priest (Hebrews 2:17), a sinless High Priest and a High Priest for ever (Hebrews 6:20) and a High Priest of good things to come (Hebrews 9:11).
- (13) A good heavenly Master (St. Matthew 23:10).
- (14) The great heavenly Prophet (Deuteronomy 18:15, 18-19; Acts 3:22).
- (15) Reproving the world of sin and reproving the unrepented sinners (St. Matthew 11:20-24; 23:1-39) and rebuking unbelief and hardness of heart (St. Mark 16:14).
- (16) Convicting the world of righteousness and of judgment (St. John 16:8; I Peter 1:17).
- (17) Not pleasing HIMSELF by taking all the reproaches of them that reproached HIM (Romans 15:3).
- (18) Resisting the devil (I Peter 5:9) and not giving an opportunity to the devil (Ephesians 4:27) and conquering the devil (St. Matthew 4:1-11) by the sword of the SPIRIT or the WORD of GOD (St. Matthew 4:4, 7, 10; Ephesians 6:17).

- (19) Performing the most menial task of selfless service, fit for a slave—washing of HIS disciples' feet (St. John 13:3-15).
- (20) Self-sacrificing humility and love for others (Philippians 2:2-4; St. Matthew 11:29; St. John 13:12-17).
- (21) A Servant—indeed, the humble, submissive and obedient Servant—who would suffer and die for our redemption (St. Mark 10:45; Philippians 2:6-8).
- (22) The people, in word or conversation (St. John 7:46), in conduct (St. John 8:46), in charity (love for those treating HIM well or ill), in spirit, in faith and in purity—sexual purity and integrity of life (I Timothy 4:12).

Everyone should follow the supreme example of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the author (beginner) and finisher of our faith. Just as a runner concentrates on the finish line of a long-distance race, we should concentrate on JESUS CHRIST, the goal and objective of our faith (Philippians 3:13-14). Our faith must begin and be completed in HIM. HE is both the start and the end of the race, the Christian life. HE is also the **supreme witness** who has already run the race and overcome (Hebrews 12:1-3).

Moreover, there are various and strange **self-chosen doctrines**, different from the divine truth of GOD (Hebrews 13:9). They are man-made covenants and man-made doctrines and man-made teachings and they are not of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Such strange self-chosen doctrines and man-made covenants and man-made doctrines and man-made teachings are like a sleeping bed that is too short for a man to stretch out himself on it or like a covering blanket that is so narrow that he cannot wrap himself in it. This very clear illustration in Isaiah 28:20 illustrates the futility of such false covenants and false doctrines and false teachings and the futility of trusting in mundane and ungodly human alliances and the worst spiritual state of a man attempting to sleep in such a manner. Beware of such false man-made covenants and man-made doctrines and man-made teachings. Beware of such mundane and ungodly human alliances.

*“For the bed is shorter than that a man can stretch himself on it:  
and the covering narrower than that he can wrap himself in it.”*

The **will of GOD** the FATHER is that everyone who sees the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and believes in HIM may have everlasting life; and the LORD JESUS CHRIST will raise him up on the last day—the day of the first resurrection of the saints (St. John 6:40). GOD, the FATHER is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **Everlasting life/eternal life** is an infinitely high and divine quality of life in divine and living fellowship with GOD—both now and for ever. Death cannot destroy this everlasting life that CHRIST gives. The everlasting life is the everlasting life of GOD; the everlasting life is the everlasting life of CHRIST; the everlasting life is the everlasting life of our LORD JESUS CHRIST. **In order to get the everlasting life of GOD:**

- (1) Everyone should see the LORD JESUS CHRIST through the Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures and through the Gospel of GOD, the Good News of GOD and recognize the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to whom the Holy Scriptures and the Gospel bear supreme testimony (St. John 5:39; St. Mark 1:15).
- (2) Everyone should come to HIM wholeheartedly (St. John 5:40).
- (3) Everyone should honour HIM greatly (St. John 5:41).
- (4) Everyone should have the great love of GOD in him/her (St. John 5:42).
- (5) Everyone should receive HIM in his/her heart (St. John 5:43).
- (6) Everyone should seek the honour that comes from GOD and not from men (St. John 5:44).
- (7) Everyone should believe HIS truthful Words (St. John 5:47).
- (8) Everyone should believe in HIM (St. John 5:44; 6:40). Those who believe in HIM receive repentance from sins and forgiveness of sins—remission of sins (St. Luke 24:47; Acts 10:43) and salvation from sins (Ephesians 2:8)—the salvation of their souls (I Peter 1:9). Those who believe in HIM are set free from sins and become servants of GOD (Romans 6:22). Further, those who believe in HIM receive an indwelling experience of the SPIRIT of TRUTH, the HOLY SPIRIT (St. John 14:17) and they receive HIS holiness and holy life (Romans 6:22).

Freedom from sins (salvation from sins), slavery to GOD and an indwelling experience of the HOLY SPIRIT produce holiness and holy life. Again, everyone should be anointed with the HOLY SPIRIT by speaking in tongues. There is no everlasting life (eternal life) without holiness (Hebrews 12:14). The everlasting life of GOD enters only into HIS holy people. So, everyone who believes in HIM should give evidence of the fact of the presence of holiness and holy life in him/her. Only by keeping HIS commandments, the everlasting life of GOD abides in HIS people (St. John 12:50). The everlasting life of GOD is given to HIS people by the everlasting love of GOD (Jeremiah 31:3). Glory be to GOD!

Now, GOD's people are the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the born-again or the Christians. They are not of the world (St. John 17:14). They are the sanctified (St. John 17:17). They are the just and the merciful and the faithful (St. Matthew 23:23). They do what is right in the sight of GOD (I John 2:29). They are born of GOD (I John 3:9). They are born of the Word of truth (James 1:18). They are born of water (the Word of truth) and of the Spirit (St. John 3:3-7). Their New Birth is spiritual and supernatural (St. John 1:13). They overcome the world by their faith in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I John 5:4-5). They believe JESUS is the CHRIST or the MESSIAH (St. John 1:41; I John 5:1). They love the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST with all their heart, with all their soul and with all their mind (St. Matthew 22:37) and they love one another (I John 4:7). They look for the SAVIOUR, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for their citizenship in heaven, to be in union with HIM for ever and ever (Philippians 3:20). They are the heirs of CHRIST (Galatians 3:29). They are the prayerful (Colossians 4:2). They live in the Spirit and walk in the Spirit (Galatians 5:25). GOD's people or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the born-again or the Christians who are having such a spiritual life do not sin or do not wrong (I John 5:18). So, they need not fear at CHRIST's coming (I John 2:28).

Again, GOD's people do not conform to this world (Romans 12:2). They do not keep their traditions (St. Mark 7:9) or their basic principles of the world (Colossians 2:20). They do not walk in the counsel of the ungodly and they do not stand in the path of the



sinner and they do not sit in the seat of the scornful (Psalm 1:1; 26:4-5). They do not love the world or the things of the world (I John 2:15). They do not speak as of the world (I John 4:5). They are not caught by the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life (I John 2:16). They do the will of GOD (I John 2:17). They do not have any friendship with the world and they do not have any enmity with GOD (James 4:4). They keep themselves unspotted from the world (James 1:27). They do not set their mind on earthly things (Philippians 3:19). They do not give heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons (I Timothy 4:1). They do not speak lies in hypocrisy (I Timothy 4:2). They do not grieve the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (Ephesians 4:30). They do not give place to the devil (Ephesians 4:27). They do not desire to be rich (I Timothy 6:9; Proverbs 28:20). They flee fornication (I Corinthians 6:18), youthful lusts (II Timothy 2:22), idolatry (I Corinthians 10:14) and love of money (I Timothy 6:9-11). They will not fulfil the lust of the flesh (Galatians 5:16). Their flesh does not lust against their Spirit and their Spirit does not lust against their flesh (Galatians 5:17). Their hearts are not deceitful and wicked (Jeremiah 17:9). They do not err in their heart and they have known GOD's ways (Psalm 95:10; Hebrews 3:10). Their feet do not slip (Psalm 18:36). They do not spend their lifetime in sins and sinful lusts (I Peter 4:2-4). They are not the unbelieving and unfaithful and sinful people (II Timothy 3:1-5). Such people do not sin or do not wrong.

Those who have been born of GOD are the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the born-again or the Christians. They do not sin and they cannot sin (I John 3:9). They are the righteous, just as HE is righteous (I John 2:29; 3:7). They are the holy, just as HE is holy (I Peter 1:15). They are the pure, just as HE is pure (I John 3:3). They are the sinless, just as HE is sinless (I John 3:5). They abide in HIM, by keeping HIS commandments (I John 3:6, 24). They are HIS children (I John 3:1, 10). They are **GOD's family** members and they are marked by their holy and righteous living and by their true faith, active love, consistent obedience and firm hope of eternal life. They are the house of GOD and they are HIS church members (I Timothy 3:15). They eagerly wait for the SAVIOUR, the LORD JESUS CHRIST from heaven, for HIS holy and righteous rule on earth during HIS

**Millennial kingdom** (Isaiah 32:1). **This is one of the divine secrets of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.** HIS divine secrets are with the righteous who fear HIM (Proverbs 3:32; Psalm 25:14).

**In this world, there are so many different churches and denominations—different from the church of the Living GOD. The reasons are:** The workers and members of the churches are carnal; they are not spiritual (I Corinthians 3:1-3); they are not able to receive spiritual foods (Hebrews 5:12-14) and there are envy, strife and divisions among them (I Corinthians 3:1-3). There are factions among them (I Corinthians 11:19). They are spiritually sluggish (Hebrews 3:10; 5:11) and mentally lazy (Hebrews 6:12). They are not the members of the one body, the Body of CHRIST (I Corinthians 12:12). They do not possess the one Spirit, the SPIRIT of CHRIST (I Corinthians 12:13). There are so many false prophets and false teachers among them and there are different kinds of false teachings among them (II Peter 2:1-2). They do not realize GOD's purpose and power (Ephesians 1:15-23). They are carried about with various kinds of strange doctrines (teachings) by the teachings of various kinds of strange teachers (Hebrews 13:9). They do not obey CHRIST to realize HIS purpose and power (Ephesians 5:24). They are not delivered from this evil age (Galatians 1:4). They forbid GOD's servants from speaking to the unsaved so that they may be saved (I Thessalonians 2:16). They are the instruments of Satan, the devil and they are deadly against every true voice raised for CHRIST and HIS truth (Revelation 18:2). They are fully in their ugly sins (Revelation 17:1-2). They do not want CHRIST, the blessed and only Potentate, the KING of kings and LORD of lords (I Timothy 6:15) to reign over them (St. Luke 19:14, 27).

The **church of the Living GOD** is a heavenly people with a heavenly hope and a heavenly inheritance (Colossians 1:5; Ephesians 1:3; I Peter 1:4; Hebrews 3:1; St. John 14:1-3). The church is called to obtain GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's own eternal glory and to share it with HIM (I Peter 5:10; I Thessalonians 2:12; II Thessalonians 2:14; Romans 8:17). The church is called and separated from other peoples to be GOD's own peculiar people above all the peoples of the earth to display GOD's holiness, righteousness and glory (I Peter 2:9).

In the **first century Christian church**, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST added only the saved to HIS church daily, through HIS ministers by immersion baptism (Acts 2:38-41, 47; 5:14). And HE did not add the unsaved to HIS church by baptism. Nowadays, many so-called ministers and would-be-pastors add the unsaved daily to their churches and not to GOD's church. Those who are making a fair show in their flesh (Galatians 6:12) and those who are having a corrupt life and illicit union with the world and those who are living in worldliness decked with gold, silver, pearls, etc., idolaters, adorers and worshippers of Mary and saints, worshippers of Satan, the devil and other devils (demons), fornicators, adulterers, adulteresses, homosexuals, lesbians, drunkards, murderers, lovers of money, sorcerers, etc., are numerous added to their churches. These churches have no seals; they are not sealed (owned) and they are not securely protected by GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT (Ephesians 1:13). Again, these churches have no solid foundation of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and they do not possess the following two additional seals. The two additional seals are: "The LORD knows those who are HIS" and, "Let everyone who names the name of CHRIST depart from iniquity" (II Timothy 2:19). Since these churches have no solid foundation of GOD and they do not possess the three seals, there is no security to these churches and there is no human responsibility to GOD.

Further, in the first century Christian church, believers' inward man (inner man—the soul) was renewed day by day (II Corinthians 4:16) and they were strengthened with the might and power of CHRIST through HIS SPIRIT, in the inner man (Ephesians 3:16). They were set apart for GOD (Galatians 1:15). CHRIST was always present in their lives—hearts, the inner being (Ephesians 3:17). If a person does not possess the indwelling HOLY SPIRIT, he/she does not possess CHRIST either (Romans 8:9). Christians are indwelt by the SPIRIT of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT. The SPIRIT of TRUTH, the HOLY SPIRIT always dwells with them and HE will be in them (St. John 14:17). They would do all things (they would overcome any and all situations they might face) through CHRIST who strengthens them (Philippians 4:13). They always rely upon GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for HIS strength. Christians always need HIS grace. HIS divine grace is sufficient for them. HIS divine strength is made perfect in weakness—bodily

weakness (II Corinthians 12:9). HIS divine strength, might and power work best in weakness. Christians' weakness (bodily weakness) provides the best opportunity for the display of GOD's divine power. The HOLY SPIRIT provides physical and mental stamina. So, Christians can withstand any and all situations they might face. GOD's SPIRIT, the HOLY SPIRIT gives them courage and strength to speak of JESUS CHRIST (Philippians 1:13). They never give up their faith. They always serve the All-powerful GOD. They never run away from HIS divine plan. The SPIRIT of GOD would release power and strength of CHRIST into their lives whenever GOD has a purpose for them to fulfil. Glory be to GOD!

Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is coming soon to catch up with HIM HIS church (Revelation 22:20). After HIS coming, Satan, the devil or the dragon will ascend out of the bottomless pit (Revelation 11:7) and he will give his power and his seat (throne) and great authority to the beast or the antichrist (Revelation 13:2). The people of the world will worship the dragon and the beast (Revelation 13:4). This worship will be enforced by a decree with a death penalty (Revelation 13:14-18). This will bring down the fierce wrath of GOD upon them (Revelation 14:9-11). A great arrogant mouth speaking great things with great arrogant self-assertion will also be given to the beast or the antichrist (Revelation 13:5). He will open his blasphemous mouth in blasphemy against GOD, to blaspheme HIS name and HIS tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven (Revelation 13:6). Those who dwell in heaven refer to the glorified saints who are caught up to be ever with the LORD when CHRIST comes for HIS own (I Thessalonians 4:16-17), before the beast or the antichrist comes to power. The antichrist's speaking will be violent and injurious against GOD HIMSELF and against HIS heavenly saints. The antichrist will unleash great hostility towards all who are of GOD upon the earth (Revelation 13:7; 11:3-7). The saints on the earth (Revelation 13:7), the godly remnant from among the Jews or the Israelites who bear witness to the coming MESSIAH, the CHRIST with a great company from among the Gentiles who receive their testimony to the coming KING, the CHRIST (Revelation 7:4-14) will refuse to worship the beast or the antichrist or his image and the dragon or Satan, the devil. Open and direct antagonism against CHRIST will culminate in

their gathering of their armies together in Armageddon (Revelation 16:16; 17:14; 19:19) to attack CHRIST at HIS glorious coming from heaven with HIS glorified saints and all the holy angels with HIM to establish HIS **Millennial kingdom** on earth (Revelation 20:4-6). The Lamb of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will overcome them (Revelation 19:19-21). HE will set up HIS most glorious reign of peace and righteousness, health and prosperity and joy in the HOLY SPIRIT such as the world has never known. The Spirit of GOD, the HOLY SPIRIT will be poured upon them from on high (Isaiah 32:15). There will be peace and righteousness and quietness and freedom from fear and anxiety. There will be an unprecedented period of universal peace (Isaiah 2:4) and prosperity (Ezekiel 34:26-27).

*"Behold, a King shall reign in righteousness, . . . Then judgment (justice) shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness remain in the fruitful field. And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever."*

Isaiah 32:1, 16-17

How great and glorious is our portion. How precious is our hope. How wonderful is HIS coming to catch up us to be with HIM in HIS glory. Let us witness for HIM for the little while that remains before HE comes to catch up us to HIMSELF. Let us stand firm for HIM for the honour and glory of HIS most holy name, by living lives of self-sacrificial love as our GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Ephesians 5:2).

Our GOD is always seeking and beseeching men to win their hearts by HIS **divine love—divine self-sacrificial love**. HE is beseeching men through HIS Gospel to be reconciled to HIMSELF (II Corinthians 5:20), after accomplishing the work of propitiation in HIS most holy blood for their eternal redemption (Hebrews 9:12). But, the world, with a very hardened heart rejects GOD's divine love; and the world is being given over to Satan, the devil's power; and under Satan's leadership it will soon head up in full and open revolt against GOD and against HIS Anointed CHRIST, as prophesied in Psalm 2.

*"The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against HIS anointed (CHRIST), saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away*

*their cords from us."*

Psalm 2:2-3

This is a **challenge against GOD** by a sinful world that has rejected HIS divine love and sets up its evil satanic power in direct opposition to GOD and HIS divine purpose that HIS Anointed CHRIST would reign. So, HE will execute HIS just judgment on the Satan-controlled world, the wicked kings and rulers and people of the earth who take counsel together against the LORD and against HIS Anointed KING, the CHRIST (Psalm 2:2); and crush their Satan-inspired and GOD-defying rebellion; and confine Satan, the devil and his whole host of demons into the bottomless pit and set up HIS most glorious **thousand years' reign** of righteousness and peace over all the earth.

All things in heaven and earth will be gathered together under HIS supreme HEAD and under HIS supreme heavenly administration (Ephesians 1:9-10). The kings and rulers will recognize and bow to the heavenly authority of the heavenly KING, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

*"O clap your hands, all ye people; shout unto GOD with the voice of triumph. Sing praises to GOD, sing praises: sing praises unto our KING, sing praises. For GOD is the King of all the earth: sing ye praises with understanding. GOD reigneth over the heathen (nations): GOD sitteth upon the throne of HIS holiness."*

Psalm 47:1, 6-8

Where GOD is KING, all is safe, all are cared and provided for, sins are forgiven, sickness unknown. The curse will be removed and the ground will bring forth abundantly and there will be righteous distribution of all. Under HIS righteous sceptre, they will obtain joy and gladness; and sorrow and sighing will flee away (Isaiah 35:1-10).

*"The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose. And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."*

Isaiah 35:1, 10

Death shall be no more. A man's life will be as a tree, and many trees are more than a thousand years old. An olive tree in the garden

of Gethsemane (St. Matthew 26:36; St. John 18:1) on the mount of Olives (St. Luke 22:39), the place of our LORD JESUS CHRIST's most agonizing prayer (St. Luke 22:39-44) and a sycamore-fig tree at Jericho into which Zacchaeus, the chief tax collector—a short man, climbed up to see our LORD JESUS CHRIST when HE was passing through Jericho, clearly prove the long life of trees. Besides, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, created the world and in it HE planted a garden—the garden of Eden (Genesis 2:8) with different kinds of trees. During the time of Noah, after 1650 years of the planting of this garden, it was completely destroyed by the great flood (Genesis 6-7).

*“. . . For as the days of a tree are the days of MY people, and MINE elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands.”*

Isaiah 65:22

The LORD's house, the holy temple or the House of Prayer (Isaiah 56:7) will be rebuilt and established at Jerusalem or Zion on the top of the mountains and become the centre of worship of all nations (Isaiah 2:2-4; Zechariah 8:22; Ezekiel 40-48).

*“And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the GOD of Jacob; and HE will teach us of HIS ways, and we will walk in HIS paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the Law, and the Word of the LORD from Jerusalem.”*

Isaiah 2:2-4

*“Yea, many people and strong nations shall come to seek the LORD of hosts in Jerusalem, and to pray before the LORD.”*

Zechariah 8:22

During the **Millennium**, a thousand years enjoyment of blessings and peace under CHRIST's righteous rule, GOD's people or the saved or the regenerated or the redeemed or the born-again or the Christians will have never been put to any test of faithfulness to CHRIST and really, their hearts will always be attached to HIM! Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Then, on the **Last Day**, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will be revealed from heaven in flaming fire with HIS mighty angels (II Thessalonians 1:7-8). HE will come to be glorified in HIS saints and to be admired among all those who believe (II Thessalonians 1:10). On that day, HE will reveal HIS divine justice by paying back trouble to those who trouble HIS people and giving rest to those who are troubled (II Thessalonians 1:6-7; Hebrews 10:30) and HE will reveal HIS divine judgment by punishing all sinners, including those who forget GOD (Psalm 9:17) and those who do not know GOD (those who refuse to recognize HIM) and do not obey the Gospel of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (II Thessalonians 1:8) and HE will punish them with everlasting destruction from HIS glorious presence and from the glory of HIS power (II Thessalonians 1:9; St. Matthew 25:31-34; 41, 46). In order to **escape this everlasting destruction in hell-fire**, we should be the fastest **spiritual runners** as well as the best **spiritual swimmers** (Jeremiah 12:5) by the SPIRIT of grace (Hebrews 10:29).

**To save the people of the sinful world from hell-fire**, our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST had determined, purposed, planned and prepared HIMSELF much earlier than the creation of the world and even from eternity (Micah 5:2; St. John 8:58), in accordance with HIS divine and marvellous plan and foreknowledge. For this, HE had prepared HIMSELF a place for HIS sacred birth at Bethlehem—Ephrathah (Micah 5:2) in a cowshed; HE had prepared HIMSELF a manger as a cradle for HIS lying on, after HIS sacred birth (St. Luke 2:7). HE had prepared HIMSELF to be born as a seed of a woman according to HIS promise (Genesis 3:15) and it was a miraculous sign of HIS sacred birth (Isaiah 7:14) signifying GOD's intervention in human history. For this (virginal conception), HE had prepared HIMSELF a mother (Virgin Mary) to be born as a human Child by the Holy power of the HOLY SPIRIT (Isaiah 7:14; St. Matthew 1:20-23). HE had prepared and chosen HIMSELF a convenient and appropriate time to be born in this world (St. Luke 2:1-7) and to have lived and died (St. Luke 3:1-6). For this, HE had intensely prepared the world as well through the universalized Greek language and the Roman kingdom.

Further, HE had prepared HIMSELF a convenient day (Christmas day) to be worshipped by all the angels (Hebrews 1:6) and to be



praised through jubilant singing by the angels, **soon after HIS sacred birth** (St. Luke 2:13-14). HE had prepared HIMSELF a convenient day (Christmas day) for us and for many including the shepherds (St. Luke 2:8-20) to see HIM—the exact image of the invisible GOD (Hebrews 1:3; Colossians 1:15) and to praise HIM and glorify HIM. HE had prepared HIMSELF to enter into the history of mankind to divide it into two (B.C. and A.D.) by HIS sacred birth (St. Luke 2:1-7) so that none could forget this blessed day.

Again, HE had prepared HIMSELF to save/redeem the world from sin (I Timothy 1:15). To fulfil HIS plans, HE had prepared HIMSELF to abandon HIS glorious kingdom of heaven (Psalm 2:4), throne (Psalm 11:4), crowns (Revelation 19:12), rule (Psalm 103:19), authority (St. Matthew 28:18), riches (II Corinthians 8:9), comeliness and beauty (Isaiah 53:2), delight and joy (Proverbs 8:30; Isaiah 53:3-4), health and comfort (St. Matthew 8:17), honour and majesty (Psalm 104:1), reputation (Philippians 2:7) and upper chambers (Psalm 104:3) and to be born in this world as a bond servant (St. Matthew 20:28) in the likeness of men (Philippians 2:5-8). HE had prepared HIMSELF to willingly abandon HIS glorious heavenly body and to enter into the world with flesh and blood—with an earthly body (Hebrews 2:14; I Timothy 3:16). HE had prepared HIMSELF to preach the Gospel of GOD's salvation to the people (St. Mark 1:15). HE had prepared HIMSELF to heal the sick and to cast out devils—demons (St. Matthew 9:35; St. Mark 5:1-20). HE had prepared HIMSELF to reprove and convict the world of sin and of righteousness and of judgment and of hell (St. John 16:8; St. Mark 9:43-48). HE had prepared HIMSELF to make mankind sons/daughters and heirs (Romans 8:17). For this, HE had prepared HIMSELF to suffer and die and to be resurrected for mankind (Isaiah 53:5; Hebrews 2:15; I Corinthians 15:3-8). HE had prepared HIMSELF to make mankind conscious of the presence of the eternal GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST amidst human beings in the name of EMMANUEL—"GOD with us" (St. Matthew 1:21-23). Glory be to GOD!

**To escape hell-fire**, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who speaks from heaven (Hebrews 12:25), sends HIS Word of salvation from heaven (Acts 13:26) and teaches through HIS HOLY SPIRIT (I Corinthians 2:13). HE shows the way of salvation through HIS holy

servants (Acts 16:17). HE opens the hearts/minds to respond to the Gospel message of HIS holy servants (Acts 16:14) as HE did to HIS disciples to understand the Holy Scriptures (St. Luke 24:45). The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD gives them understanding (Isaiah 11:2). HE makes the unbelievers' darkened foolish hearts (Romans 1:21) and their blinded devilish minds shine by the light of the glorious Gospel of CHRIST (II Corinthians 4:4), who is the exact image of the invisible GOD (Colossians 1:15; Hebrews 1:3).

Salvation belongs to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Psalm 3:8). GOD's salvation/GOD's great salvation (Hebrews 2:3)/GOD's eternal salvation (Hebrews 5:9) is given to those who lay aside all filthiness and overflow of naughtiness and receive with meekness the implanted Word of GOD (James 1:21) and to those who humble themselves under the mighty hand of GOD (I Peter 5:6). GOD's salvation will not be given to those who have friendship with the world, since friendship with the world is enmity with GOD (James 4:4). A friend of the world is the enemy of GOD (James 4:4). GOD's salvation will not be given to those who are spiritually unfaithful, who love the world rather than GOD. GOD's salvation will not be given to those who do not love GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS great sufferings and death (I Corinthians 16:22; I Peter 3:18) and to those who do not obey HIM (I Peter 1:14; Ephesians 5:6). Further, GOD's salvation will not be given to those who are carnally minded, who live according to the flesh (Romans 8:6), since it is in hostility to GOD (Romans 8:7). Their sinful mind will not subject to the Law of GOD, nor indeed can it do so (Romans 8:7). A carnally minded man is the enemy of GOD (Romans 8:7). He does not belong to GOD (Romans 8:9). He is bound up with death—eternal death (Romans 8:6), hostility to GOD (Romans 8:7), insubordination to the Law of GOD (Romans 8:7) and displeasing to GOD (Romans 8:8). Unless such persons turn and repent to GOD as in Jeremiah 31:19—with all their heart and with all their soul (Deuteronomy 30:2), they will never get salvation from sins.

*"Surely after that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was instructed (after I came to understand), I smote upon my thigh (side): I was ashamed, yea, even confounded (humiliated), because I did bear the reproach of my youth."*

Nowadays, the so-called **Christian world or Christendom** is fast sinking into the filthy cesspool (cesspit) of sin and corruption. It is surpassing all that ever been in the worst days of paganism of the past. By indulging in lecherous living, Christendom is dead spiritually while living physically (I Timothy 5:6; Revelation 3:1). Lecheries, treacheries and other deadly sins abound in Christendom. The so-called Christians are like cattle that continue to fatten themselves on the very day they are to be slaughtered, totally unaware of coming destruction (James 5:5). They fatten themselves with all kinds of deadly sins for the very day of judgment, totally unaware of the coming destruction in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, due to the **satanic wisdom of this world** (I Corinthians 3:19-20).

Further, at the present time, sin is exalted and righteousness is abased; morality is despised and immorality is well spoken of; Satan, the devil and his hosts are honoured; Satan, the father of lies and the murderer of mankind and the deceiver of the whole world is praised. The ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is opposed vehemently and made war against. And the remnant who dares to speak and witness in favour of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is persecuted and even murdered. Brute forces reign and justice stands afar off. Truth is fallen in the streets (Isaiah 59:14). Peace has taken its flight from the earth and it is driven away by hatred, variance, emulation, sedition, wrath, strife, fight, war and every evil deed. Gross darkness of sin is covering the face of the earth (Isaiah 60:2). As we look around on the world, surely, we see this gross darkness of sin upon the world.

Again, in the present times, all forms of false religions and false religious systems have been invented by Satan, the devil to keep the world to himself. He directly or indirectly attacks CHRIST and HIS divinity by every world movement of today. He secretly or openly undermines CHRIST's divine teachings through every world movement of today. Oh, my beloved brothers and sisters, be not deceived by these satanic world movements of today. Satan has filled the churches with his false teachers or false ministers. He has filled the churches with his false teachings, the doctrines of devils or demons (I Timothy 4:1). These false ministers are posing themselves as ministers of righteousness, inculcating Satan's false doctrines into the

minds (hearts) of the simple who cannot discern; and they undermine CHRIST and HIS glorious Gospel (II Corinthians 4:4; 11:13-15). They deny CHRIST's deity and speak against HIS virgin birth.

Besides, in these present times, the so-called Christendom/Christian world—the so-called Christian churches and denominations and institutions are practising and advocating the utter satanic and sinful darkness of **yoga** meditations and contortions. They are fast sinking into the satanic cesspool (cesspit) of sin and corruption. The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD says, "Your iniquities (transgressions and trespasses and sins) have separated between you and your GOD, and your sins have made HIM hide HIS face from you" (Isaiah 59:2), and it also says, "Behold, the Lamb of GOD (the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST) who takes away the sin of the world" (St. John 1:29). Thus, from these verses, anyone can clearly understand that sin is the sole cause of all human troubles and sin separates men from GOD and anyone can receive freedom from sins (salvation from sins) from our LORD JESUS CHRIST. But this satanic yoga says, "Ignorance is the sole cause of all human troubles," and it also says, "The Creator of all things (the TRUE GOD) and all HIS creations (human beings, animals, birds, fishes, creeping things, etc.,) are gods." What a dangerous and devilish and foolish thing it is! Now, men in the likeness and image of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Genesis 1:26-27) have a discerning power to discern both good and evil (Hebrews 5:14), but animals and all other creations have no discerning power. Thus, human beings are different from animals and all other creations.

Furthermore, from the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD, we clearly come to know that every man's heart/mind should be filled with HIS love (I John 2:5), grace and faith (I Timothy 1:14), hope (I Corinthians 13:13), loving kindness (Psalm 48:9), righteousness and holiness (Psalm 97:12), uprightness (Ecclesiastes 7:29), commandments, laws, statutes and precepts (Psalm 119:4-8, 97), mercy, truth, covenant and testimonies (Psalm 25:10), wondrous works (Psalm 119:27), spirit of wisdom (Exodus 28:3) and the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Acts 2:4). But, this satanic yoga says that every man's heart/mind should be emptied through

this satanic yoga meditations and contortions to attain understanding and a GOD-like state—like a false god-like state, like a coiled serpent. What a terrible thing it is! Now, at this juncture, the so-called Christians who belong to the so-called Christendom/Christian world or the so-called Christian churches/denominations, schools and institutions are seriously warned to escape from this coiled serpent and from the old serpent, the devil or Satan—the great deceiver (Revelation 12:9) who deceived mankind by clothing himself as a serpent—a coiled serpent (Genesis 3:1-7). Various sets of aasanas (postures) and surya namaskar (sun worship) in this satanic yoga are sins.

Besides, the satanic and sinful wisdom of this world or the wisdom of this satanic yoga is foolishness with GOD. Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST knows that this crafty wisdom is futile. Christians, of course, have nothing to do with yoga.

*“For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with GOD. For it is written, HE taketh (catches) the wise in their own craftiness. And again, The LORD knoweth (knows) the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain (futile).”*

I Corinthians 3:19-20

Now, what is true wisdom and understanding?

*“The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the Holy (the Holy One, the LORD JESUS CHRIST) is understanding.”*

Proverbs 9:10

Again, an unreformed man or an evil man or a sinner is lacking in GOD's glorious presence. If such a person empties his/her heart/mind through this satanic and sinful yoga meditations and contortions, what will happen to him/her and what will be his/her last state? A life unreformed and lacking in GOD's/the LORD JESUS CHRIST's glorious presence in heart/mind is open to occupancy/reoccupancy by evil and by the evil power of Satan, the devil and other demons. Then his/her last state will be worse than the first (St. Luke 11:24-26). So, emptying of one's mind/heart through this satanic yoga meditations and contortions is a very dangerous thing to one's whole spirit and soul and body. Our ONE AND ONLY TRUE

GOD's divine design is that all people everywhere should pray and meditate and worship and serve JESUS CHRIST as LORD and GOD.

*"That at the name of JESUS every knee should bow, of things (those) in heaven, and things (those) in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that JESUS CHRIST is LORD, to the glory of GOD the FATHER."*

Philippians 2:10-11

Besides, in these present times, the so-called Christendom/Christian world or the so-called Christian churches and denominations and institutions are under the satanic and sinful and **false theory of evolution** and under the satanic and sinful and false cults/sects and isms. The theory of evolution is an atheistic theory that blasphemes against the name of GOD. What a pitiable thing it is!

Now, the Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD begins with an instantaneous and wonderful act of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. It begins with a strong and positive and life-oriented affirmation of GOD's glorious and eternal existence and HIS great creative activity.

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

Again, everything GOD created is very good (Genesis 1:31). GOD created everything out of nothing (Genesis 1:1). Merely by speaking, GOD brought all things into being except mankind (Genesis 1; Psalm 33:6, 9). HE calls those things which do not exist as though they were (Romans 4:17). GOD only has this wondrous power and ability to do such miraculous things. The Holy Bible always confirms GOD's glorious and eternal existence and HIS wonderful creative power (Ecclesiastes 11:5; Isaiah 45:18; St. John 1:3; Colossians 1:16). St. John 1:1-10 stresses the miraculous work of CHRIST in creation.

Further, the Holy Bible clearly stresses that there is ONE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I John 5:20) worthy of the name and of the praise and of the glory, both now and ever; and it strongly opposes the satanic and sinful ideas that there are many gods (polytheism), that there is no GOD at all (atheism) and that GOD is manifest in all things, since everything is divine (pantheism). It also clearly reveals that the ONE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is sovereign over HIS entire creation. Thus, the truthful account of GOD's creation in the

Holy Bible falsifies and refutes the satanic and sinful and blasphemous theory of evolution, and the satanic and sinful and blasphemous ideas of atheism, polytheism, pantheism and all other satanic and sinful and blasphemous cults/sects and isms.

Again, at the present time, atheists are growing more and more in the UK (the Great Britain) and in many other countries. In London, many atheists have boldly launched a wide advertising campaign on 6 January 2009. They aim at persuading more and more people to come out as atheists. Spiritually, the Holy Bible sarcastically calls an atheist/polytheist/pantheist as: "Jeshurun" in Deuteronomy 32:15-18.

*"But Jeshurun waxed (grew) fat, and kicked: thou art waxen fat, thou art grown thick, thou art covered with fatness; then he forsook GOD which made him, and lightly (scornfully) esteemed (rejected) the Rock of his salvation."*

Deuteronomy 32:15

Now, the principal slogan of these atheists is—"There's probably no GOD. Now stop worrying and enjoy life". This atheistic slogan clearly reveals the fact that they want to live a lustful and sinful, corrupt and immoral and ugly life. They are not at all ashamed of committing abomination (Jeremiah 6:15). They forget GOD and they are unmindful of GOD who created them (Deuteronomy 32:18). Hence, they are decaying their own soul (St. Mark 8:36-37). A proverb in English explains their demonic character: "An atheist is one point beyond the devil". The Holy Bible again calls an atheist as: "Fool".

*"The fool (morally deficient) hath (has) said in his heart, There is no GOD. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, . . ."*

Psalms 14:1

Surely GOD will scatter their bones and put them in great fear where no fear was, and to shame (Psalm 53:1, 5).

Further, nowadays, **Protestantism** including Congregational (Independent), Presbyterian (Church of Scotland), Anglican (Church of England), Baptist, Methodist, Lutheran and other churches is filled with modernism and liberalism. It advocates the worst hellish acts and relationships of homosexuality and lesbianism (Romans 1:26-28).

Protestant churches are conducting homosexual and lesbian marriages. What a shameful and ugly thing it is! **Pentecostalism** is also filled with modernism and liberalism. It approves the sinful luxuries and amusements. **Catholicism** is filled with almost all kinds of 'cults/sects' and 'isms' and the veneration of saints and the worship of angels. It advocates the exaltation of Mary. Catholics exalt Mary above GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, blasphemously calling her the mother of GOD.

Again, on 12th February 2016, the Roman Catholic Pope and the Patriarch of the Russian Orthodox Church met for the first time to overcome the millennium-old (1000 year-old) differences in a historic encounter. Thus, Malankara Jacobite Syrian Christian Church (Syrian Orthodox Church) and Malankara Orthodox Syrian Church (Indian Orthodox Church) and all other Orthodox Churches will be on the move to join with the one world Ecumenical church. What an awful thing it is!

Now, almost all Christian denominations and churches, Buddhism, Hinduism, Jainism, Islam, Taoism, Confucianism, Bahaism, Atheism, Sikhism, Judaism, Zoroastrianism, Jehovah's Witnesses, Seventh-Day Adventists, Mormons, Moonies, Christian Scientists, Silent Unity sects, etc., are the parts of one overall plan of Satan, the devil to discredit the ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and prepare the whole world to accept and worship the antichrist with his worst system of Satan worship or devil worship. Satan, the devil himself is the false god of this false world system (II Corinthians 4:4). He is the archenemy of GOD and the unseen evil power behind all unbelief and ungodliness and sins.

Nowadays, the so-called **Christendom or Christian World** is mixing Christianity with other false religions and with other false religious beliefs and with other false religious worships; and with other false religious practices; and with other false religious festival celebrations; and with politics and with political beliefs and with political ideas. Even the so-called Christian priests worship the Hindu ways of worships and other ways of worships. English Bibles, Indianised Bibles, Europeanised Bibles and other various sorts of Bibles cause discords and offences and faults and guilts and sins and curses among the Christians and among the public. Readability, limited vocabulary,



understandability with understandable languages or translations, paraphrasing, worldly ideas, man's ideas, etc. destroy the souls of innumerable people and deceive the hearts of the simple. What a horrible thing it is!

Further, the **LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's shed blood speaks** the best things on earth (Acts 20:28; Hebrews 12:24). The **speaking blood of JESUS CHRIST** on earth speaks to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF to give us HIS forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness, etc. The speaking blood of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST on earth speaks to us to obtain HIS forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness, etc., from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. The most holy blood of JESUS, the living blood sprinkled all over on earth speaks to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF and to us, the sinners. The **speaking blood of GOD**, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is working all things together for good. Glory be to GOD!

So, no one should refuse to hear the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who spoke on earth. No one should refuse to hear the Word of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who speaks from heaven. No one should refuse to hear the Word of GOD who speaks by HIS speaking blood on earth (Hebrews 12:24-25). If we hear and obey the living Word of GOD, no one can separate us from the living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Glory be to GOD!

Furthermore, **in the first coming of CHRIST or in the first advent of CHRIST**, HE especially revealed HIS love, grace, mercy, holiness, sinlessness and righteousness (St. John 8:11, 46). **In the second coming of CHRIST or in the second advent of CHRIST**, HE will reveal HIS holiness, justice and judgment.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Judge of all the earth (Genesis 18:25). HE is the Judge of the living and the dead (Acts 10:42). HE is the Judge of all (Hebrews 12:23).

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is holy, holy, holy, ... (Isaiah 6:3; I Peter 1:16). HE is infinitely holy. HE sits upon the throne of HIS holiness (Psalm 47:8). So, HE will judge the world with holiness. In HIS second coming, HE will deal with all holily, revealing HIS holiness.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is righteous, righteous, righteous, ... (Psalm 119:137). HE is infinitely righteous. Justice and judgment are the habitation (foundation) of HIS throne (Psalm 89:14). HE will judge the world with righteousness and the people with equity (Psalm 98:9). HE will judge the world with righteousness and the people with truth (Psalm 96:10). HE will do right (Genesis 18:25). In HIS second coming, HE will deal with all justly, revealing HIS justice.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is upright and HIS judgments are upright (Psalm 119:137). HE will be consistent in judging HIS obedient and disobedient people. In HIS judgment, sinners will be set apart from the righteous. To the unbelievers (the sinners)—permanent separation from GOD. To the believers (the saved)—they will be permanently in GOD's glorious presence. In HIS judgment, HE will reveal HIS glory, holiness, purity, righteousness, justice, authority and ability. In HIS second coming, HE will deal with all authoritatively, revealing HIS righteous judgment and HE will deal with all genuinely, sincerely and honestly.

**Beware of sects/cults. Beware of 'isms'. Mormonism** is a deadly sect/cult. This is one of the worst secret sects/cults. Some male members of the Mormons of the Fundamentalist Church of JESUS CHRIST of Latter-Day Saints, formed in 1935, invented a very ugly term "spiritual wives" to have sex with kids, girls as young as twelve and to circumvent US polygamy law. These ugly polygamous sects/cults, the deadly sects/cults, poisonously spoil the precious lives of many innocent young children. What a sorrowful thing it is! The punishment of eternal hell-fire is ready for these evil men (Jude 7-8). Unless they repent of their sins with broken-heart and with tears and with humility, and obtain forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins, and live a holy life, they will never escape hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (II Peter 2:9-14).

Our LORD JESUS warns,

*"... Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."*

St. Luke 13:5

To live a holy life and to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD, everyone should seek the most holy GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and

HIS most holy face/presence and HIS most holy strength/might continually (Jeremiah 10:6; Psalm 16:11).

*“Seek the LORD and HIS strength, seek HIS face continually.”*

I Chronicles 16:11

In anticipation of the second coming of CHRIST, we should live holily, soberly, righteously and godly (Hebrews 12:14; Titus 2:12). Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST lovingly speaks to us all through HIS speaking blood to believe HIM and obtain HIS salvation and HE calls us all to believe HIM and obtain HIS salvation and HE calls us all to enter into heaven, the kingdom of GOD and to escape judgment and hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. Glory be to GOD!

Now, everyone must learn to fear the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Deuteronomy 31:13). We must fear the LORD for our good always, that HE might preserve us alive (Deuteronomy 6:24). We must learn to do what is good (Isaiah 1:17) and pleasing to the LORD. We must learn to obey the LORD (Hebrews 5:8). We must not imitate the ways of the heathen or the Gentiles (Jeremiah 10:2). We must learn CHRIST (Ephesians 4:20). We must learn from CHRIST how and where to find rest for our souls (St. Matthew 11:29). HE teaches through HIS true servants and we should learn from them (Philippians 4:9). **The Holy Bible, the Holy Scriptures is written for our learning** (Romans 15:4). **This precious book “ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!” – “THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD’S SECRET !!” is written to bring out some of the mysteries and secrets of the HOLY BIBLE to the attention of everyone.**

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. GOD's **salvation** rescues/saves mankind from sin and death to eternal life (Acts 4:12). GOD's **vicarious atonement** (substitutionary death) on the cross at Calvary covers people's sin (Romans 5:8; Psalm 32:1). GOD's **propitiation** (atoning sacrifice) on the cross takes people's sin on HIMSELF and imputes HIS righteousness to people (Romans 3:25; I John 2:2). Justification is a legal term which means a judge's acquittal. Our GOD is the Judge of all (Hebrews 12:23). GOD's **justification** acquits people because the penalty of sin has been paid in the death of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF on the cross (Romans 3:28; I Corinthians 6:11). GOD's **reconciliation** eliminates hostility between GOD and people and reconciles people

with GOD (Romans 5:6-11). **GOD's redemption** redeems people (Romans 3:24). The price of redemption of people from the slavery of sin and Satan, the devil is the precious blood of our LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Peter 1:18-19). Regeneration is being re-born or re-created or made alive to GOD. **GOD's regeneration** gives new life to people (St. John 3:3, 5). **GOD's sanctification** makes holy and sets apart people for GOD (I Corinthians 1:2). **GOD's glorification** glorifies people (Romans 8:30; Philippians 3:21) to worship, obey and enjoy GOD's friendship and love eternally in heaven, the kingdom of GOD—the holy habitation of GOD: the perfect, **unseen world** (Deuteronomy 26:15). Hence, all are lovingly called to enter into this unseen world of wonders, the wonderful and **divine world** of our wonderful and divine GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Glory be to GOD!

GOD will always be present in this unseen world of wonders with HIS people. There will be no sin; no curse; no temptation; no pain; no parting with loved-ones; no guilt; no shame; no darkness. GOD's own 'light perpetual' will shine on HIS people. There will be peace, freedom, security and endless life. The saved/the redeemed mankind will never again abuse their freedom; they will never again disobey GOD. So, the fall of mankind due to disobedience and abuse of freedom resulted in barred access to the 'tree of knowledge' will be reversed in heaven, the kingdom of GOD (Genesis 3:21-24; Revelation 22:2). In the end, those who are not saved/redeemed will be shut out forever from the glorious presence of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and thrown into outer darkness—hell and there will be always weeping and gnashing of teeth (St. Matthew 8:12).

**So, let all who thirst come. And let them have the water of life, the water of eternal life free of cost (Revelation 22:17). The coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST is soon (Revelation 22:20). Are you watchful to see HIM (St. Matthew 24:42)? Are you ready to meet HIM (St. Matthew 24:44)? As in a race: 'ready, steady, go' and receive the prize, the kingdom of heaven from HIM (Philippians 3:14).**

Now, CHRIST's atoning death and saving power give us the salvation experience. To be saved, we must trust CHRIST alone for our salvation. Satan, the devil has ever been opposed to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Satan, the devil and his host of devils (demons) are

ever busy to bring discredit upon CHRIST and HIS atoning death and saving power. At this juncture, it is worthy to listen the timely warnings of the apostle John in I John 2:28; 5:21:

*"And now, little children, **abide in HIM**; that, when HE shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before HIM at HIS coming."*

I John 2:28

*"Little children, **keep yourselves from idols. Amen."***

I John 5:21

"Keep yourselves from idols" means "keep yourselves from the counterfeit Christians, the false teachers and their false teachings and hence from false gods and from idol worship (idolatry)."

May our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD, encourage us all to study this book carefully by the leading of HIS HOLY SPIRIT. May our LORD help us all to be in right mind (sober mind) and to set our perfect hope fully upon the grace at JESUS' coming and to have our loins of our mind girded up (I Peter 1:13), and our lights burning by the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Luke 12:35), serving, waiting and watching for our LORD to come at any moment (St. Luke 12:36-40). May our LORD make us all walk day by day in close communion with HIM so as not to be occupied with anything we would not want to be found doing when HE comes (St. Luke 12:43). May our LORD strengthen us all to be HIS witnesses and to bear witness for HIM in a harmful world of increasing hatred and open attack against HIM. May our LORD bless us all to be with HIM and reward us all to share HIS glory, the final state of complete blessedness in heaven, the kingdom of GOD, even though the evil world despises and rejects it.

May the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD bless you and your family abundantly with all HIS spiritual blessings and with all HIS worldly and heavenly blessings; and make you and your family HIS ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE PEOPLE; and take you and your family to heaven, the kingdom of heaven or the kingdom of GOD or the divine world.

**This precious book emphasizes the theme of "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" and is entirely based on the Holy Bible. Biblical verses**

on all aspects of life in this world and also life after death have been dealt with so that every reader will be enabled to understand easily. The emphasis is not only on knowing the TRUE AND ONLY ONE GOD but also on implicit obedience to the Word of GOD. I am fully convinced that the Word of GOD alone can make the world a better place to live in and the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is the only way, the truth and the guiding light to eternal bliss. The grace and peace of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.

*“Now unto HIM that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of HIS glory with exceeding joy, To the only wise GOD our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.”*

Jude 24-25

**“The grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.”**

Revelation 22:21

## 6.7 SOME MOST IMPORTANT END-TIME EVENTS

Now, the **European Union**/the **European Community**/the **Common Market**, an economic and political association established in 1958 by the 1957 **Treaty of Rome**, now including Italy, Germany, France, Belgium, the Netherlands, Luxembourg, Britain (UK), Denmark, Ireland, Greece, Spain, Portugal, Austria, Finland and Sweden with twelve other member countries and its **European Parliament**—the legislative assembly of the European Union of 27 member countries, and its Euro—the basic monetary unit for countries in the European Union, and **Ecumenicalism**/**Ecumenicism**/**Ecumenism**—the principles or practice of **one world material church** or the **apostate church** or the **Roman Catholic church** including Buddhism, Hinduism, Islam and all other religions and denominations of the world except the true Christianity are the basic foundations of the coming satanic empire of the **beast** or the **antichrist** (Revelation 13:1-18; II Thessalonians 2:3-10). The world likes the beast and dislikes GOD. This dislike is very bad and dangerous, not at all good for any spiritual goodness. **Now, in this world, almost all people are riding on the back of the beast without realizing how terrible the consequence will be.** What a most pitiable thing it is!

On 10 December 2008, a delegation of Hindus approached the European Parliament (EP) of the European Union (EU) at Brussels with a demand to give recognition to the Hindu community (religion) in its 27 member countries. They presented a memorandum to this effect to the president of the European Parliament. They demanded adequate Hindu representation in various European Union bodies and consulting Hindus at national levels on religious and related issues as equal partners instead of patronizing only one kind of religion or denomination, viz., Christianity and promotion of inter-faith dialogue. They also demanded recognition of all other major religious communities (religions) of the world in the European Parliament. This is one of the basic foundations of the one world material church or the **one world Ecumenical church** or the **Roman Catholic church** or the **apostate church**. Catholic means Universal.

Having common country (world), common rule, common charter, common law, common apostasy, common convention, common custom, common military, common coinage, common market, common mark or common name of the beast or common number (666) of the beast (Revelation 13:13-18), common god or global god, common religion or global religion, and common worship or global worship of the beast, the antichrist (Revelation 13:14-15) will be revealed during the last and final rule of the antichrist. During the treacherous rule of the antichrist, everyone will be forced to receive a common mark in his/her right hand or in his/her forehead (Revelation 13:16). Nowadays, for this common mark, a computer chip may be easily placed in one's right hand or in one's forehead. Through these basic things or through these fundamental areas of these basic foundations, the coming satanic empire of the beast or the antichrist will be established in this world. There will be no room in this empire of the beast for any kind of freedom including the religious. The worship of the antichrist alone will be enforced fully and ruthlessly and he will be a powerful opponent of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST; HIS teachings, HIS worship, HIS plans and HIS people, for a limited period of forty-two months (Revelation 13:5).

The countries in the European Union have already connected their countries by special computers. Their main computer with the symbolic name '**beast**' (Revelation 13:1-7) and with the symbolic

number '666' (Revelation 13:18) has already been installed in Brussels, the capital of Belgium. In other words, the European Union has already started its satanic works in the name of the beast, the antichrist and in his number (Revelation 13:1-18). Further, a beast crashing against huge waves of many waters with a woman sitting on its back (Revelation 17:1-5) is depicted in the Euro coin of the European Union. This woman represents the one world ecumenical church including Buddhism, Hinduism, Islam and all other religions and denominations of the world except the true Christianity. **From these things, we can very well understand that the satanic empire of the antichrist has already been established in disguised condition for his Great Tribulation** (Revelation 13:7-10). So, be watchful and ready to meet CHRIST to enter into HIS kingdom, the kingdom of heaven.

Those who have genuine saving faith will persevere or endure all the persecutions of the beast, the antichrist, because they are GOD's saints (Revelation 13:10). These **tribulation martyrs** will be blessed through rest, resurrection, and reigning with CHRIST during the **Millennium** (Revelation 20:4-6). They will receive a great reward for their works of obedience.

Before the **Millennium**, during the battle of **Armageddon**, the beast, the first beast (Revelation 13:1-10, 18) or the antichrist and his henchman, the second beast (Revelation 13:11-17) or the false prophet will be cast alive into hell-fire, the lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 19:20). They will become the first inhabitants of the lake of fire (Revelation 20:10). Satan, the devil will then be cast into the lake of fire with them (Revelation 20:10). Their torment in hell will be eternal. At the end of the Millennium, Satan will be released from prison to make one last attempt to defeat CHRIST, to fight one last and final battle against CHRIST. He will deceive the nations into rebellion against GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Satan, the devil and his armies of **Gog and Magog** and his armies of the four corners of the earth will surround the camp of the saints and the beloved city, the earthly Jerusalem—headquarters of CHRIST's Millennial kingdom. All the rebels will be quickly devoured by fire from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Revelation 20:7-10). Then they will also be cast into hell and their torment in hell-fire will also be eternal. Those who



received the mark or name or number of the beast, the antichrist and those who worshipped the beast or his image will also be cast into hell and their torment in hell-fire will also be eternal. No one will escape hell. What a horrible thing it is!

The troubles and tribulations experienced by the people of this world are GOD's way of displaying HIS wrath against sin (Romans 1:18). The purpose of the Tribulation period at the '**end of the age**' or the '**end-time**' is to punish those who unbelieve and reject GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and to bring the remnant to faith in CHRIST.

**The Book of Revelation reveals the full identity and authority of JESUS CHRIST, the ONLY TRUE GOD and gives severe warning and good hope to believers. In this book, John the apostle described his highly symbolic and magnificent visions which GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST gave him.** He saw a vision of JESUS standing among HIS churches (Revelation 1:12-20) and he recorded the way in which JESUS analysed the seven churches in Asia Minor (Revelation 2-3). He saw a vision of the throne of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Revelation 4). He saw a vision of JESUS as the Lamb of GOD (Revelation 5). He described his visions of the Lamb opening **seven seals** of a scroll (Revelation 6-8), seven angels blowing **seven trumpets** (Revelation 8-14) and seven angels emptying **seven vials** (bowls) of GOD's wrath (Revelation 15-18). And he described his vision of the ultimate destruction of evil and the emergence of GOD's Holy City, New Jerusalem from heaven (Revelation 19-22). This book of Revelation reminds us that CHRIST is eternally alive and active from heaven as well as on earth, and that the final victory of CHRIST will end all our earthly troubles and bring us a wonderful end. There is a glorious and wonderful future for every faithful believer, especially for those who died as martyrs for CHRIST. This world is in GOD's hands. HIS love for HIS people is unending. The book of Revelation closes with the repeated promise of JESUS, "**I come quickly.**" After HIS coming, HE will reign supreme in peace and justice. Now, when the Lamb of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST opened the **first seal**, a conqueror, the rider on a white horse went out conquering and to conquer (Revelation 6:1-2). When the Lamb opened the **second seal**, a rider on a red horse was given power to take peace from the earth and to make people kill one another (Revelation 6:3-4). When the Lamb opened the **third seal**, a rider on a black horse was given

power to make scarcity of food (famine) on earth (Revelation 6:5-6). When the Lamb opened the **fourth seal**, a rider on a pale horse was given power to kill a fourth of the earth with sword, with hunger, with death, and by wild beasts of the earth (Revelation 6:7-8).

When the Lamb opened the **fifth seal**, John saw under the altar the souls of the martyrs and heard the cry of the martyrs and then he saw each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to rest a little while longer, until the number of their fellow-servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, was fulfilled (Revelation 6:9-11).

When the Lamb opened the **sixth seal**, John saw a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood, and the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind. Then the heaven (the sky) departed as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain was moved out of its place and every island was moved out of its place (Revelation 6:12-14).

As a result of the opening of the first six seals, all sinners will want to die and to hide from the wrathful face of the Lamb of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who will be seated on HIS great white throne of judgment (Revelation 20:11), but will not be able to (Revelation 6:15-16). The great day of HIS wrath or the day of the LORD (II Peter 3:10) or the day of GOD's judgment to the earth and its inhabitants (Joel 1:15; 2:1, 11, 31) will come as a result of the opening of the first six seals (Revelation 6:17). The day of HIS wrath will be terribly against the present day of HIS grace.

Now, this present universe is reserved for fire, until the great day of judgment and destruction of ungodly people (II Peter 3:7). The judgment will take place in this earth, since the present unclean heavens with all things viz., sun, moon, stars and planets (Job 15:15; 25:5; Revelation 6:12-14), except the third heaven—the holy **Paradise** (II Corinthians 12:2-4) will be dissolved and all the sinners of the earth will be devoured by the fire of HIS jealousy (Zephaniah 1:18; 3:8), just before HIS judgment; and the present unclean earth with all other things viz., mountains, oceans, seas, islands, etc., will be dissolved by the fire of HIS jealousy, just after HIS judgment (II Peter 3:10-12;

Revelation 20:11-13; 21:1). **This is one of the greatest mysteries of GOD.** Thus the judgment day will be a day without daytime or nighttime (Zechariah 14:7).

When the Lamb opened the **seventh seal**, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour (Revelation 8:1) and John saw the seven angels who stood before GOD, and to them were given seven trumpets. Then another angel, having a golden censer, came and stood at the altar. He was given much incense to offer, with the prayers of all the saints, on the golden altar before the throne. The smoke of the incense, together with the prayers of the saints, ascended before GOD from the angel's hand. Then the angel took the censer, filled it with fire from the altar, and cast it on the earth; and there were voices, thunderings, lightnings and an earthquake. Then the seven angels who had the **seven trumpets** prepared themselves to sound them (Revelation 8:2-6).

The **first angel sounded his trumpet**, and then hail and fire followed, mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth. A third of the trees were burned up, and all green trees were burned up (Revelation 8:7). Due to this, famine, lack of oxygen production, and pestilences will result. Then the **second angel sounded his trumpet**, and something like a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea. A third of the sea became blood, a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed (Revelation 8:8-9). This will produce a reduction of evaporation and thus a shortage of rain and fresh water and shortage of food. International commerce and distribution of food and water will be severely hindered. Then the **third angel sounded his trumpet**, and a great star, burning like a torch, fell from the sky on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters turned wormwood (bitter) and many people died from the waters, that had become bitter (Revelation 8:10-11). Then the **fourth angel sounded his trumpet**, and a third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a third of them were darkened. A third of the day did not shine, and also a third of the night (Revelation 8:12-13). This reduced light arriving from the sun, moon and stars will cause great fear, lack of crop production, famine, lack of oxygen production and pestilences.

Three woes are to come to the inhabitants of the earth when the fifth, the sixth and the seventh angels sounded their trumpets. The **fifth angel sounded his trumpet**, and it brings a five-month period of torment by the locusts from the bottomless pit. They were commanded not to harm the grass of the earth, or any green thing, or any tree, but only those people who do not have the seal of GOD on their foreheads. They only torment sinners for five months. The pain will be like that of a scorpion. The torment will be so great that they will seek death, but will not find it; they will desire to die, but death will flee from them (Revelation 9:1-12). Then the **sixth angel sounded his trumpet**, and it results in the death of a third of the surviving sinners on the earth. The four angels who had been kept ready for this very hour and day and month and year will be released from the great river Euphrates to kill a third of the surviving sinners. These sinners will be killed by fire and smoke and brimstone, because they will refuse to repent (Revelation 9:13-21).

GOD's two witnesses, Elijah (Elias) and Enoch, will perform miracles similar to those performed by Moses (Exodus 7:14-20; 8:12) and Elijah (I Kings 17:1; II Kings 1:10-12; St. Luke 4:25; James 5:17). They will be given power to shut heaven, so that no rain will fall in the days of their prophecy; and they will be given power over waters to turn them to blood, and to strike the earth with all plagues as often as they desire. No one can harm them for three-and-a-half years (Revelation 11:1-14). The second woe is past and the third woe is coming quickly.

The **seventh angel sounded his trumpet**, and it results in the establishment of the **millennial kingdom** of CHRIST (Revelation 11:15-19).

Now, the things which the **seven thunders** uttered were sealed up. But in the days when the seventh angel is about to sound his trumpet, the mystery of GOD which the seven thunders uttered will be accomplished, as HE declared to HIS servants the prophets. There will be no more delay (Revelation 10:4-7).

The wrath of GOD began with the seven seals (Revelation 6) and will be finished with the **seven last plagues** or the **seven vials**—the **seven bowls** (Revelation 15). The bowls are full of the wrath of GOD.

The bowls of the wrath of GOD represent the climax of GOD's punishment of sinners. No repentance is shown and no repentance is invited in this very short period of time, the emptying of the bowls. The first angel went and poured out his vial upon the earth. The emptying of the **first vial** by the first angel will produce a foul, loathsome and painful sore on all the followers of the beast or the antichrist, wherever they are (Revelation 16:2). Then the second angel poured out his vial on the sea. The emptying of the **second vial** by the second angel will turn the entire sea to blood, and will produce the death of all sea life. There will be coagulating and rotting as the blood of a dead man. No evaporation for rain would be possible (Revelation 16:3). Then the third angel poured out his vial on the rivers and springs of water. The emptying of the **third vial** by the third angel will turn all fresh waters to blood. No pure water for drinking will be left on earth. Those who shed the blood of GOD's people should drink blood (Revelation 16:4-7). Then the fourth angel poured out his vial on the sun. The emptying of the **fourth vial** by the fourth angel will scorch the earth with fire from the sun. The followers of the beast or the antichrist will be scorched with great heat, because they fully rejected GOD and followed the beast or the antichrist and they blasphemed the most holy name of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and refused to repent (Revelation 16:8-9). Then the fifth angel poured out his vial on the throne of the beast or the antichrist. The emptying of the **fifth vial** by the fifth angel will produce darkness on the seat and kingdom of the beast or the antichrist. His followers will suffer great agony, pain, and fear. The sores of the emptying of the first vial will continue (Revelation 16:10-11).

Then the sixth angel poured out his vial on the great river Euphrates (Revelation 16:12). The emptying of the **sixth vial** by the sixth angel will dry up the great river Euphrates to prepare the way of the kings from the east and it will result in the gathering of the armies of the kings of the east and of the whole world together for the battle of **Armageddon** in Israel (Palestine) to fight against CHRIST (Revelation 19:19) and to prevent HIS glorious return to establish HIS **Millennial kingdom** on earth (Revelation 20:4-6). The three unclean spirits of demons will support the rebellious activities of Satan, the devil, the beast (the antichrist) and the false prophet. By means of false signs

and miracles, they will convince the eastern kings and all the armies and kings of the earth and of the whole world to gather in Israel (Palestine), to fight against CHRIST, the Almighty GOD. They will gather all the armies of the whole world together to the place called in Hebrew Armageddon (the hill of Megiddo) to the battle of that great day of GOD Almighty (Revelation 16:13-14, 16).

Then the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, "**It is done.**" Then there were voices, thunderings, and lightnings and a tremendous earthquake. The emptying of the **seventh vial** by the seventh angel will utterly shake the earth and it will produce the destruction of **Babylon the great or Babylon, the great city** (Revelation 16:19; 17:18; 18:2-3) or **Babylon, the mighty city** (Revelation 18:10) or **the city of seven mountains or hills** (Revelation 17:9).

Now, Rome is built on the following seven mountains (hills): (1) Aventine (2) Caelian (3) Esquiline (4) Quirinal (5) Viminal (6) Palatine (7) Capitoline. Hence, Rome is the seat of the woman, the great whore, the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth (Revelation 17:1-9, 15, 18), the habitation of devils (demons) and a prison for every foul spirit and a cage for every unclean and hated bird (Revelation 18:2), the **one world material church** or the **one world Ecumenical church** or the **Roman Catholic church** or the **apostate church**. **In the Roman Catholic church, day by day, they create new false gods—new saint-gods, new arrivals (Deuteronomy 32:17) and they severely anger the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST with their worthless idols (Deuteronomy 32:21).**

Nowadays, the so-called **Christendom or Christian World** is mixing Christianity with other false religions and with other false religious beliefs and with other false religious worships; and with other false religious practices; and with other false religious festival celebrations; and with politics and with political beliefs and with political ideas. Even the so-called Christian priests worship the Hindu ways of worships and other ways of worships. English Bibles, Indianised Bibles, Europeanised Bibles and other various sorts of Bibles cause discords and offences and faults and guilts and sins and curses among the Christians and among the public. Readability, limited vocabulary,

understandability with understandable languages or translations, paraphrasing, worldly ideas, man's ideas, etc. destroy the souls of innumerable people and deceive the hearts of the simple. What a horrible thing it is!

Now, almost all Christian denominations and churches are on the move to join with this one world Ecumenical church. Soon the other religious groups (viz. Buddhists, Hindus, Muslims, Taoists, Confucians, Bahais, Jains, Zoroastrians, Voodoos, Sikhs, Jews, etc.,) and Marxists, Socialists, Communists, Atheists, Agnostics, Pagans, etc., will be on the move to join with this one world Ecumenical church. Again, on 12th February 2016, the Roman Catholic Pope and the Patriarch of the Russian Orthodox Church met for the first time to overcome the millennium-old (1000 year-old) differences in a historic encounter. Thus, Malankara Jacobite Syrian Christian Church (Syrian Orthodox Church) and Malankara Orthodox Syrian Church (Indian Orthodox Church) and all other Orthodox Churches will be on the move to join with the one world Ecumenical church. What an awful thing it is!

This one world Ecumenical church is filled with fornication, adultery, idolatry, homosexuality, lesbianism, witchcraft, sorcery, spiritualism, revelry, orgies, drunkenness, murders, lies, thievings, pagan rites and traditions, worship of human beings, worship of the dead, worship of images, photos, cross, saints, angels, Virgin Mary and devils, private confessions of one's sins to a priest, relics, penances, rosary, carrying the pedestal of their idols, scourgings, pilgrimages, child baptism, Eucharist, Lent, purgatory and a numerous heathen practices.

Thus, this sinful city, Rome is the seat or throne of the woman, the great whore, the one world Ecumenical church. **Now, the Roman Catholic church is hiding behind the one world Ecumenical church to emerge as the one world Ecumenical church.** Again, this sinful city, Rome will be the seat or throne of the beast or the antichrist. During the Great Tribulation, the beast or the antichrist will become the sole political head of the whole world as well as the sole religious head of the one world Ecumenical church or the Roman Catholic church with all other false religious systems and beliefs and denominations and all atheistic beliefs and all ungodly and unholy and apostate churches of this world.

Having once recognized the Christian religion as the absolutely true one, if anyone swerves from or rejects its infallible doctrines and principles, he/she has succumbed to the evil designs of Satan, the devil and has already fallen into the depths of **apostasy** or unbelief. Any kind of compromise with other notions will definitely result in apostasy and the believer has become an **apostate**. The apostate multiplies his/her disbelief. Remaining and persisting in this disbelief he/she terribly increases his/her unbelief and multiplies his/her transgressions, iniquities and sins (Isaiah 59:12-13) and he/she adds and heaps disbelief upon disbelief, unbelief upon unbelief, infidelity upon infidelity and sin upon sin (Isaiah 30:1).

A tremendous earthquake will destroy this sinful great city, Rome and the cities of the nations. No earthquake like it has ever occurred since men have been on earth, so tremendous will be the quake. And large hailstones of about a hundred pounds or about forty-five kilograms will fall upon people. The emptying of the seventh vial will be the last of the seven plagues and it will complete both the seventh trumpet (Revelation 11:15) and the seventh seal (Revelation 8:1). The great whore (Revelation 17:1) or Babylon the great (Revelation 17:5), the one world Ecumenical church or the Roman Catholic church with all other false religious systems and beliefs and denominations and all atheistic beliefs and all ungodly and unholy and apostate churches of this world will be doomed for ever (Revelation 18:1-8).

Further, the armies of heaven, riding on white horses, follow CHRIST, the Rider on the white horse, the most powerful Horseman—**WARRIOR-MESSIAH-KING**. Now out of HIS mouth goes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. CHRIST will seize the beast or the antichrist and the false prophet, Satan's two henchmen, and their allies without weapons, armour or battle (Revelation 19:11-21). During the battle of **Armageddon**, the beast or the antichrist and his henchman, the false prophet will be defeated and captured and cast alive into eternal hell-fire (Revelation 19:20). The remnant of their armies including the kings of the east and of the whole world will be killed by the sharp sword of HIS mouth and all the fowls of the air will gorge themselves on their corpses (Revelation 19:21). Then they will also be cast into eternal hell-fire.



Finally, after the Millennium (Revelation 20:1-2, 7), Satan, the devil and his armies of **Gog and Magog** and his armies of the four corners of the earth will gather together to battle against GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Their number will be as the sand of the sea. They will surround the camp of the saints and the beloved city, the earthly Jerusalem—headquarters of CHRIST's **Millennial kingdom**. All the rebels will be quickly devoured by fire from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and all of them will be cast into eternal hell-fire (Revelation 20:7-11). **Their torment in hell-fire will also be eternal. No one will escape hell.** What a horrible thing it is!

Now, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will totally eradicate all that is evil and take those who love HIM—the whole community of GOD's people, to be with HIM for ever and ever.

#### 6.8 INCOMPREHENSIBLE AND IMMEASURABLE DIVINE PERFECTION AND INEFFABLE DIVINE WONDERFULNESS OF GOD, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is **Wonderful (Isaiah 9:6)**. HE is the Creator of all things. When HE created the heavens (the skies) and the earth, the sun, the moon, the planets and the stars, the mountains and the oceans, the seas and all things in the seas, the world and all things of the world, HE had not used any raw material, HE had no one to help HIM or to counsel HIM, HE had no tools to work, HE had no models to copy and HE had not taken any space of time to finish. HE spoke, things happened. HE speaks, things happen. HE will speak, things will happen (Psalm 33:9). What a wonderful GOD our GOD is!

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created the man in HIS own image and according to HIS likeness (Genesis 1:26-27). Hence, man was created by GOD according to GOD's kind or GOD's race (Acts 17:28-29) and all other living things were created by GOD according to their kind (Genesis 1:11-12, 21, 24-25). Now, GOD's image is GOD's divine inner being. GOD's divine inner being is GOD's divine attributes, viz. love (I John 4:8), light (I John 1:5), holiness (Revelation 4:8), righteousness (Jeremiah 23:6), etc. GOD's likeness is GOD's divine form (Philippians 2:6). GOD's divine form is GOD's divine Person. GOD's image and GOD's likeness are one and the same. Since GOD

and man/mankind are of the same kind, it is definitely possible for man/mankind to be joined with GOD and live together with GOD (St. John 15:5; Revelation 21:3). For that, man/mankind should receive the divine spiritual experiences, viz. repentance from sins, forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holiness, holy life etc., from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and man/mankind should have one Spirit with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 6:17). For one Spirit with GOD, man/mankind should receive the SPIRIT of GOD; that is, man/mankind should be anointed with or filled with or baptized by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Further, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST created the man from the dust of the ground and HE breathed HIS living breath into his nostrils; immediately, the man became a living soul (Genesis 2:7). Thus, the living soul of every human being should not vanish. **Again, at that moment, the man's soul clung to the divine Soul of GOD and the man clung to GOD.** What a blissful thing it is! See Genesis Chapters 1 and 2. GOD gives this wonderful world to mankind to live. We live in this wonderful world of GOD but we cannot fully understand its wonders. **GOD created the visible and wonderful world not for HIMSELF or for the angels but for the service of man.**

**In GOD's Creation, there are three basic things.** They are: (1) GOD's Eternal Being (2) GOD's Eternal Power and (3) GOD's Eternal Activity. These three are fully inter-related. We can't create even an ant. Thus, we see that GOD's divine substance is entirely different from all other substances and it is entirely removed from all other substances.

**GOD's divine infinite beauty is a great amazing thing to all.** HIS divine infinite beauty is not fully seen in HIS creations but it is partly seen in HIS creations. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine infinite beauty will be fully revealed to HIS children, the saved or the true Christians in heaven, the kingdom of GOD—the divine world. What a great divine infinite beauty of GOD it will be!

**There is no change or variation in GOD** (Malachi 3:6). Thus, GOD is immutable. HE depends on nothing. HE is not subordinated to anything. HE has no predecessor. HE has no substitute. HE cannot be

subjugated. There is no compositness in GOD. HE has no parts. So, HE cannot be divided. HE is beyond our conjecture. HIS divine beauty, divine benignity, divine clemency, divine nobility, divine majesty, divine magnificence, divine glory, divine honour, divine perfection, divine goodness, divine mercy, divine love and divine grace are ineffable. **Incomprehensible and immeasurable divine perfection is seen in GOD in all HIS attributes. Our GOD is the most Just (Job 34:17). HIS grandeur of divine Justice is unexplainable.**

**Our GOD is ever working. HE is ever at rest.** HE is filling all. HE cannot be measured in quantity. HE cannot be mentioned in quality. HE is eminently perfect in all HIS attributes. HE is immeasurably good. HE is never contained. HE is changing all. But, HE is never changing. HE is All-seeing. But, HE is invisible.

Our GOD is sovereign in substance. HE is Eternal in duration. HE is infinite in being. HE is infinite in power. HE is supreme in authority. HE is so great. **HE cannot be defined by definitions.** HE has All-names with reference to HIS all divine attributes. No particular name can signify HIM specifically to specify HIS all divine attributes.

**The Holy Bible is the divine Mirror which shows the divine presence of GOD, "I AM".** In the Holy Bible, we see GOD's Eternal Being, HIS Eternal Power, HIS Eternal Activity, HIS divine Omnipotence, HIS divine Omnipresence, HIS divine Omniscience, HIS divine Providence, HIS great and wonderful creations, HIS magnificent salvation plan for mankind—the sinners, judgment, hell and heaven, as seen in a mirror (I Corinthians 13:12).

Since GOD always likes righteousness and truth, initially the first man Adam liked righteousness and truth. **But, man was having the free will during his creation. Hence, he may either choose obedience to GOD to live a righteous and truthful life or he may choose disobedience to GOD to live an unrighteous and untruthful life; he can select either of the one; he can select good or bad; he can select sin or sinlessness; he can select holiness or unholiness; he can select abominable or unabominable; he can select heaven or hell. But, he was severely warned by GOD that he will be held fully responsible for his disobedience or misdeed or sin (Genesis 2:17).**

*"But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."*

Genesis 2:17

**GOD's saying is GOD's Law.** If GOD says to us to do a thing, it must be done. If GOD says to us not to do a particular thing, it must not be done. **Thus transgression is sin. Transgression causes cracks and separations in the relationship with GOD. Transgressions bring about cracks and separations in the relationship with GOD. All disobedience is sin and all transgressions are sins.** It is the will of GOD that every one should obey the Word of GOD. GOD hates sin for ever. GOD abhors sin for ever. So, HE has appointed punishment/sentence for sin. **The consequence of sin is death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur.** By GOD's righteous and terrible judgment, HE will convict all sinners and HE will not acquit any sinner.

**One who comes forward to GOD for HIS blessings should believe that HE is and HE is the Rewarder** (Hebrews 11:6). **Nothing is ever impossible with GOD** (Jeremiah 32:27). HE gives us bodily gifts and spiritual gifts and HE gives us good gifts and perfect gifts from above (Acts 14:17; James 1:17).

*"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh (comes) down from the FATHER of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning."*

James 1:17

**In the Holy Bible, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has written HIS divine WILL. The divine WILL deed/document of GOD is HIS divine love; the divine WILL deed/document from the bottom of GOD's heart is HIS divine love.**

*"For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), that whosoever believeth (believes) in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life."*

St. John 3:16

**Now, GOD's divine Constitution Document is the Holy Bible. It is GOD's Law. It consists of the divine Penal Code and the divine Criminal Procedure Code of GOD Almighty.** It tells about sins and the punishment for sins. Each and every sin is punishable under HIS divine Penal Code. No one can escape from the punishment for his/her sins.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and **the ONE AND ONLY ONE TRUE GOD is having a number of cases (disputes), criminal cases, pending against all sinners, the unsaved and the backsliders** (Hosea 4:1), **each case for each sinner, punishable under various sections of HIS divine Penal code.** On the Day of Judgment, HE will give HIS righteous judgment on all sinners. HE will convict all sinners, the unsaved and the backsliders. HE will not acquit any sinner. HE will give them punishment/sentence according to HIS divine Penal Code and the divine Criminal Procedure Code, the Holy Bible. Harsh punishment/sentence will be given to sinners in hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur, according to their deeds. GOD's righteous punishment/sentence in hell-fire will be unimaginably harsh to all sinners and it will be unimaginably very harsh to very great sinners. Punishment/sentence in hell-fire will vary from person to person, according to their sins and according to the various punishable sections mentioned in GOD's Code. No one can escape from his/her punishment/sentence in hell-fire. No one can get relief from his/her punishment/sentence in hell-fire. Now, the cases are rightly pending against all sinners before our Righteous Judge, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. These cases will be rightly pending before HIM till the Day of HIS Judgment. On the Day of Judgment, all sinners will be gathered before HIM for HIS very fair and righteous trial and judgment on HIS left side. What a pitiful thing it is!

**Now, any one who thinks of committing an evil act/sin has already committed that evil act/sin in his/her heart. Thus, he/she is a sinner.** Any man who looks at a woman with lust has committed adultery with her in his heart (St. Matthew 5:27-28). Thus, he is an adulterer. Any woman who looks at a man with lust has committed adultery with him in her heart. Thus, she is an adulteress. Any one who thinks of killing a person has committed murder in his heart. Thus, he is a murderer. Any one who thinks of stealing has committed theft in his heart. Thus, he is a thief. Now, think about the sins that you have committed against GOD and repent for the sins you have committed against GOD with broken heart and with tears and with humility and immediately obtain forgiveness of sins and salvation from sins from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to escape judgment and hell.

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has made everything beautiful in its time. **HE has set eternity, an aspiration to seek the eternal GOD, in every man's mind/heart, to know about the eternal things and about the temporary things.** However man labours hard to seek it out without the help of GOD, he will not find it out; even if a wise man thinks that he will come to know it without seeking GOD, he is not able to find it out (Ecclesiastes 3:11; 8:17). Now, GOD has set the eternal world or the divine world or the celestial world or the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven in every man's mind/heart. HE has also set this temporary, fleeting and passing world of vanity in every man's mind/heart. Further, HE has set the eternal hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur in every man's mind/heart; and HE has also set the final judgment to sinners in every man's mind/heart. Thus, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has set all things regarding eternity in every man's mind/heart. What a wonderful thing of our glorious GOD it is!

**On the Day of Judgment, our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will be the true and faithful witness against all sinners** (Jeremiah 42:5). **HE will be the unchangeable swift witness** against the adulterers and adulteresses and against the sorcerers and against the murderers and against the idolaters and against the covetous people and against the fornicators and against the unbelievers and against the abominable people and against the unclean persons and against the drunkards and against the revilers and against the revelers and against the wicked people and against the unholy and unrighteous people and against the thieves and against the robbers and against the homosexuals and against the lesbians and against those who treat their wives treacherously and against the worshippers of devil and evil spirits and against the atheists and against the polytheists and against the false witnesses and against all liars and against those who do not fear GOD and against those who are averse to living a godly life and against the worshippers of false god or false gods and against all other sinners (Malachi 2:13-14; 3:5-6; Micah 1:2; Revelation 21:8).

**On the Day of Judgment, HE will pronounce HIS righteous judgment, after HIS righteous trial, on each and every sinner.** All sinners will be thrown into eternal hell-fire, the fiery lake of burning sulphur

where they will be in eternal wailing and eternal gnashing of teeth. In hell-fire, there will be undying worms and unquenchable fire. Not even a drop of water will be given for their terrible thirst. They will be in horrible suffocating thirst for ever and ever. Not even a morsel of bread will be given for their horrible hunger. They will be in horrible suffocating hunger for ever and ever. In hell, they will be in horrible suffocating sulphur smoke for ever and ever. They will be in terrible sleeplessness for ever and ever. They will be in the horrible hell-fire for ever and ever. What a horrible thing it is! What a terrible thing it is!

**Now, no cases are pending against HIS people, the saved or the holy or the righteous or the redeemed or the regenerated or the true Christians. Hence, HIS people have no judgment and they have no punishment/sentence in hell-fire.** They have no judgment. They have no punishment/sentence. They have no hell-fire. They will inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever in eternal joy and happiness. They will be in ineffable amazement for ever and ever. What a blissful thing it is! What a blessed thing it is!

If this world is filled with the saved or the true Christians, then everyone can live in peace and happiness in this world of ineffable divine wonderfulness of GOD and everyone can see the incomprehensible and immeasurable divine perfection of GOD. **Lastly, the saved or the true Christians will inherit heaven, the kingdom of GOD and they will see the ineffable divine wonderfulness of GOD and the incomprehensible and immeasurable divine perfection of GOD fully for ever and ever in heaven—the divine world.** What a great ineffable divine wonderfulness of GOD it will be in heaven! What a great incomprehensible and immeasurable divine perfection of GOD it will be in heaven!

For each and everyone, **devout meditation** upon all the divine attributes of our loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is very essential, especially on HIS divine love, mercy and grace and on HIS very great sufferings and death on the cross at Calvary. Glory be to GOD!

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has given many evidences about HIS glorious and divine existence in the Holy Bible. Our Self-Existing GOD can feed us, prosper us and lift us in anyway. HE can do any miracle at anytime in anyone in anyplace as a single Person.**

*"The heavens declare the glory of GOD; and the firmament (expanse of heaven) sheweth HIS handywork (the work of HIS hands). Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth (reveals) knowledge."*

Psalm 19:1-2

*"Because that which may be known of GOD is manifest in them; for GOD hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of HIM from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even HIS eternal power and GODHEAD; so that they are without excuse."*

Romans 1:19-20

*"Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another."*

Romans 2:15

*"Nevertheless HE left not HIMSELF without witness, in that HE did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness."*

Acts 14:17

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Omnipotent (All-Powerful).**

**Our GOD is the Almighty GOD, the GOD with Unlimited Power. HIS omnipotence is seen in HIS awesome flashes of lightning, peals of thunder and voice, terrible shaking of the earth's foundations and fall of large hail stones (Revelation 11:19; Job 36:32; 40:9).** The velocity of light is 1,86,000 miles per second. Light travels faster than sound. So, we see the flashes of lightning first and then we hear the peals of thunder. The Richter scale gives an earthquake measurement.

**All things are possible with GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST only (St. Mark 10:27).** GOD alone can do things which men cannot do. The things which are impossible with men are possible with GOD



only (St. Luke 18:27). **GOD alone can make anything out of (from) nothing.** GOD made the heavens (the skies) and the earth out of (from) nothing (Genesis 1:1-25). No man can make anything out of (from) nothing. **Moreover, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone upholds all things by the Word of HIS power.** HE upholds the heavens (the skies) and all things (the sun, the moon, the stars, the planets, etc.) in the heavens by the Word of HIS power. HE upholds the earth and all things (human beings, beasts, cattle, creeping things that move on the earth, birds, fishes, mountains, oceans, rivers, etc.) in the earth by the Word of HIS power. And HE upholds even a child in its mother's womb by HIS Word of HIS power. No man can uphold anything by the word of his power. **GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST calls those things which do not exist as though they were** (Romans 4:17; St. John 21:9-13). Our GOD only has this most wondrous power and ability to do such miraculous things. No man has such power and ability to do such things. **GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone makes the dead live again** (Romans 4:17; Ezekiel 37:13-14; Revelation 20:4-6; I Thessalonians 4:14-17). No man can make the dead live again. **GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone is the most powerful and HE is able to subdue all things unto HIMSELF** (Philippians 3:21; St. Mark 4:35-41). No man can make all things obey him. **Further, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone is able to destroy both soul and body of the sinners in hell—hell-fire, the fiery lake of burning sulphur** (St. Matthew 10:28; Revelation 21:8; Psalm 9:17). So, everyone should fear HIM, HIM only. **Again, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST alone is able to give the kingdom of heaven, the kingdom of GOD or the divine world or the celestial world to HIS saints or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the righteous or the true Christians or the believers. Hence, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Omnipotent (All-Powerful).** What an All-Powerful GOD our GOD is!

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

*"But our GOD is in the heavens: HE hath done whatsoever HE hath pleased."*

Psalm 115:3

*"For with GOD nothing shall be impossible."*

St. Luke 1:37

*"Now unto HIM that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us."*

Ephesians 3:20

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith (says) the LORD, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty."*

Revelation 1:8

*"For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which CHRIST hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed, Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of GOD;..."*

Romans 15:18-19

*"Who being the brightness of HIS glory, and the express image of HIS person, and upholding all things by the word of HIS power, when HE had by HIMSELF purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high."*

Hebrews 1:3

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Omnipresent (Present at All Times Everywhere).**

*"Whither shall I go from THY Spirit? or whither shall I flee from THY presence? If I ascend up into heaven, THOU art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, THOU art there: If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall THY hand lead me, and THY right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from THEE; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to THEE."*

Psalms 139:7-12

*"Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD."*

Jeremiah 23:24

*"The eyes of the LORD are in every place, beholding the evil and the good."*

Proverbs 15:3

*"Which is HIS body , the fullness of HIM that filleth all in all."*

Ephesians 1:23

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Omniscient (All-Knowing).**

*"Great is our LORD, and of great power: HIS understanding is infinite."*

Psalm 147:5

*"Known unto GOD are all HIS works from the beginning of the world."*

Acts 15:18

*"HE saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou ME? He saith unto HIM, Yea, LORD; THOU knowest that I love THEE. HE saith unto him, Feed MY sheep."*

St. John 21:16

*"Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of GOD; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of GOD."*

I Corinthians 2:12

*"Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in HIS sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of HIM with whom we have to do (must give account)."*

Hebrews 4:13

*"For if our heart condemn us, GOD is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things."*

I John 3:20

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Creator of all things.**

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

*"For by HIM were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by HIM, and for HIM."*

Colossians 1:16

*"The Spirit of GOD hath made me, and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life."*

Job 33:4

*"By HIS Spirit HE hath garnished the heavens; HIS hand hath formed the crooked serpent."*

Job 26:13

*"Let them praise the name of the LORD: for HE commanded, and they were created."*

Psalms 148:5

*"Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of GOD."*

St. John 1:13

*"But to us there is but one GOD, the FATHER, of whom are all things, and we in (for) HIM; and one LORD JESUS CHRIST, by whom are all things, and we by (live by) HIM."*

I Corinthians 8:6

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Eternally Present.**

*"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."*

Revelation 22:13

*"How much more shall the blood of CHRIST, who through the eternal Spirit offered HIMSELF without spot to GOD, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living GOD?"*

Hebrews 9:14

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Eternally Holy.**

*"And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him ; and they were full of eyes within And they rest not day and night, saying Holy, holy, holy, LORD GOD Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come."*

Revelation 4:8

*"Who shall not fear THEE, O LORD, and glorify THY name? for THOU only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before THEE; for THY judgments are made manifest."*

Revelation 15:4

*"But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things."*

I John 2:20

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Eternal Truth.**

*"JESUS saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the FATHER, but by ME."*

St. John 14:6

*"Then said JESUS to those Jews which believed on HIM, if ye continue in MY word, then are ye MY disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."*

St. John 8:31-32

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Eternal Sanctifier.**

*"And ye shall keep MY statutes, and do them: I am the LORD which sanctify you."*

Leviticus 20:8

*"Jude, the servant of JESUS CHRIST, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by GOD the FATHER, and preserved in JESUS CHRIST, and called."*

Jude 1

*"Elect according to the foreknowledge of GOD the FATHER, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of JESUS CHRIST: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied."*

I Peter 1:2

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Eternal Preacher.**

*"I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with mine eye."*

Psalm 32:8

*"And all thy children shall be taught of the LORD; and great shall be the peace of thy children."*

Isaiah 54:13

*"For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist."*

St. Luke 21:15

*"But the Comforter, which is the HOLY GHOST, whom the FATHER will send in MY name, HE shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you."*

St. John 14:26

*“Thus saith the LORD, thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; I am the LORD thy GOD which teacheth thee to profit, which leadeth thee by the way that thou shouldest go.”*

Isaiah 48:17

### **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Eternal Counsellor.**

*“For unto us a Child is born, unto us a SON is given: and the government shall be upon HIS shoulder: and HIS name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty GOD, The Everlasting FATHER, The Prince of Peace.”*

Isaiah 9:6

*“And the Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon HIM, the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD.”*

Isaiah 11:2

*“This also cometh forth from the LORD of hosts, which is wonderful in counsel, and excellent in working.”*

Isaiah 28:29

## **6.9 EVERYONE REQUIRES THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD**

There is a GOD. There is ONE GOD. There is ONLY GOD. There is ONLY TRUE GOD. There is ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Now, a man requires one head. Hence, GOD has given one head for a man. **Thus, a man requires one head and he has one head. As such, a man requires the ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, GOD HIMSELF has given HIMSELF as the only begotten SON—the ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to man or mankind.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*“For GOD so loved the world, that HE gave HIS only begotten SON (the LORD JESUS CHRIST), that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting life.”*

St. John 3:16

Now, If a man has two or more heads, then his heads will be a great abomination to him as well as to others. If a man has two heads, then the two heads must have two kinds of functions. Also, one head must be superior to the other head to regulate and control the

functions of the whole body. Two heads cannot regulate and control the functions of a body properly, correctly, decently and in order. Again, if a man has three heads, then the three heads must have three kinds of functions. And one head must be superior to the other heads. Three heads cannot regulate and control the functions of the whole body properly, correctly, decently and in order. **As such, if there are two or more gods, their different kinds of functions will be an abomination and they cannot regulate and control the functions of the whole world properly, correctly, decently and in order.** What an ugly thing it will be! What a dangerous thing it will be!

Further, if there are two or three kings for an empire to rule, then their rule will not prosper and their rule will collapse quickly. They cannot rule their empire properly, correctly, decently and in order for the welfare of the public. There will be discord, disharmony, contentions and strife between themselves and between their people. There will be fights and quarrels between themselves and between their people. There will be separatism and secessionism between themselves and between their people. As such, if there are two or more governors for a state, then their rule will not prosper and their rule will certainly collapse. They cannot rule the state properly, correctly, decently and in order for the well-being of the public.

**In the same manner, if there are two or more gods, then there will be discord, disharmony, contentions and strife between themselves; there will be separatism and secessionism between themselves and their rule will not prosper and it will certainly collapse to ground zero.** What an ugly thing it will be! What a dangerous thing it will be!

Now, in this world, there is one god worship in some religions. But, they are not worshipping the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Hence, they are all futile. Those religions do not unite all people in one brotherhood under the loving GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who is the FATHER of all. They are not being opened to all that are bound by sins, iniquities and trespasses. They do not focus the divine work of the Almighty GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST who is living in HIS everlasting kingdom, the kingdom of GOD or the kingdom of heaven. In CHRIST as well as Christianity, there is neither Jew nor Greek (the Gentiles); there is neither bond nor free; and there is

neither male nor female. In Christianity, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is found not merely outside HIS people but within the hearts and minds of HIS people. Glory be to GOD!

**Thus, from the above things we correctly infer that everyone requires the ONE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST only and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.** So, everyone must worship, adore, venerate, revere and pray for all our blessings and requirements to HIM only. Glory be to GOD!

Now, **CHRIST's teachings alone are of truly divine origin. HIS teachings unite all the people of the world to HIMSELF—the Most High GOD.** The worship of the Most High GOD, LORD JESUS CHRIST is for the spiritual needs and bodily needs; and it is for the inheritance in heaven, the kingdom of GOD—the divine world.

**In our LORD JESUS CHRIST alone we can see the divinity of the ONE GOD and the ONLY GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. The birth of our LORD JESUS CHRIST was divine and holy. HE alone was born without sin (sinless) and therefore HE alone is qualified to be the SAVIOUR of the whole world. But the Roman Catholic Church falsely and blasphemously teaches that Mary was also born without sin.** They falsely and blasphemously say it as 'Immaculate Conception of our Lady'. The Roman Catholic Church is seriously severely falsifying the truth. Further, our LORD JESUS CHRIST alone has ascended into heaven on the 40th day of HIS glorious resurrection from the dead. But the Roman Catholic Church falsely and blasphemously teaches that Mary was also ascended into heaven. They falsely and blasphemously say it as 'Ascension of our Lady'. In this also the Roman Catholic Church is severely falsifying the truth. Catholic means Universal.

The false Roman Catholic Church teaching, falsely divides the entire sins as venial sins and mortal sins. **Venial sins**—sins not very serious and therefore able to be forgiven without any remorse and confession. **Mortal sins**—very serious sins for which you can be sent to hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur unless you confess and are forgiven. This is a false Roman Catholic Church teaching. The Holy Bible, the Holy Word of GOD does not divide the sins like this. But, the Holy Bible clearly says,

*“Behold, all souls are MINE; as the soul of the father, so also the*



*soul of the son is MINE: the soul that sinneth (who sins), it (he) shall (will) die."*

Ezekiel 18:4

Further, the Roman Catholic Church festivals in honour of the dead, held on 2 November—**All Souls Day**; and in honour of the saints held on 1 November—**All Saints Day** are extra-Biblical and anti-Biblical and hence they are sins.

Again, the **Roman Catholic Church falsely and blasphemously teaches that** Mary is the mother of GOD and Mary is the mother of the whole world. Now, our GOD has no beginning or end. HE is Ever Living from eternity. No one has ever lived before HIM. If Mary is the mother of GOD and is the mother of the whole world, no one could have ever lived before her. Thus, the Roman Catholic teachings that Mary is the mother of GOD and Mary is the mother of the whole world are utter blasphemies. Moreover, how could a "hand-made of the LORD" (St. Luke 1:38) or a creature of GOD or a created being of GOD can become the mother of GOD, the Creator?

Besides, there is totally no record in the Holy Bible that our LORD JESUS CHRIST addressed her 'mother' even once. In the beginning of HIS ministry, HE addressed her, "Woman, what have I to do with thee (you)?" (St. John 2:4). Again, as HE was hanging on the cross at Calvary, HE addressed her, "Woman, Behold thy (your) son!" (St. John 19:26). And HE said to HIS disciple John, "Behold thy (your) mother!" HE has spoken these words to John, the apostle to take care of Mary after HIS death. From that hour, the apostle John took her to his own home (St. John 19:27). Now, if such is the case, how could the Roman Catholic Church consider and depict Mary as the mother of GOD and Mary as the mother of the whole world? The divine secret of GOD is that by HIS divine will, HE has selected Mary to bring JESUS as SAVIOUR of the whole world who came as GOD in the human form. **Mary had known all these things about HIM clearly. And she had fully known that our LORD JESUS was her SAVIOUR (St. Luke 1:47) and that HE was the heavenly Master to her and that she was an earthly disciple to HIM (St. Luke 1:48). So, she should never have the thought or imagined that HE was her son; and that she was HIS mother.**

Further, the **Roman Catholic Church blasphemously offers prayers and praises to Mary.** As a result, millions of prayers and praises to Mary are repeated everyday around the world using the Rosary. In these repetitive prayers, they are to keep on rotating the beads of Rosary by saying ten 'Hail Marys' for every 'Our FATHER' and ending up with 'Hail Mary the Holy Queen'. Thus, the Roman Catholic Church offers blasphemous prayers at the rate of eleven per hour to Mary, whole-heartedly and one to JESUS, the FATHER nominally. The devotees of the Roman Catholic Church recite these blasphemous prayers day by day to Mary. For Mary to hear and listen to these millions of prayers and answer to these millions of prayers, she should be omnipotent (all-powerful), omniscient (all-knowing) and omnipresent (present at all times everywhere). **We do know that GOD alone is Omnipotent, Omniscient and Omnipresent and GOD alone has the eternal power to hear and listen and answer and grant our prayers which we offer unto HIM at all times from anywhere.**

Now, **so many Roman Catholic Churches are in the name of Mary.** The Roman Catholic 'pilgrim centres' attract a number of pilgrims where Mary is exalted. Not even a single prayer is made to JESUS by the pilgrims. No one even mentions the name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Some pilgrims are going to get their head clean shaved and offering it to Mary and they think they are really blessed. The Roman Catholic Church is exalting Mary over CHRIST. It is exalting Mary as our Lady. In fact, Mary was the lady of Joseph, since he was the real husband of Mary, after the divine and holy birth of JESUS as the first-born child to Mary (St. Matthew 1:25). Hence, Mary did not remain perpetually a virgin. Mary was blessed because she was obedient to the Word of GOD. Her blessedness was a matter of both hearing and doing the Word of GOD. Hence, her position as JESUS' earthly mother did not carry with it any special titles such as co-mediatrix or co-redemptrix or queen of heaven or any other of the other forms of deification. Giving such blasphemous titles to her is a terrible sin. **No one should elevate Mary as a special object of veneration or deification. Elevating her as a special object of veneration or deification is a terrible sin. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF rebuked those who wanted to elevate Mary to a place of veneration (St. Luke 11:27-28).**

Further, **the false and blasphemous Roman Catholic teachings encourage idolatry.** So, the Roman Catholic devotees idolize many forms of idols such as Mary, Mary and child, Joseph and child, etc. But the Holy Bible says, "Flee from idolatry" (I Corinthians 10:14). Further the Holy Bible severely warns, "Idolaters shall have their part in the lake which burneth (burns) with fire and brimstone" (Revelation 21:8). The Roman Catholic Church has no belief about this severe warning of GOD. What a pathetic thing it is!

Again, **against the commandment of GOD, the Roman Catholic Church performs consecration of idols of Mary and others.** And against the commandment of GOD, the Roman Catholics are garlanding the idols of Mary and others; kissing the idols of Mary and others; consecrating the idols of Mary and others with oil or milk or honey or with some other liquid; saying prayers to the idols of Mary or others by kneeling down before them; giving praises to the idols of Mary or others; carrying some small idols of Mary or others or a small cross on their necks by fastening it with a thread or hanging it on a chain; hanging some photos of Mary or others in their houses; wearing some small photos of Mary or others on their necks or on their rings; fastening some old clothes of the demised, saying them as saints' clothes, on their hands or on their hips or on their necks; and carrying the idols of Mary and others during festivals in a small palanquin like or chariot like tabernacle. And against the commandment of GOD, the Roman Catholics plant pillars and statue-pillars and flagstuffs in their churches and consecrate them with oil or with some other liquid. **But, the Roman Catholics have no idea about the glorious spiritual experience of the anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the fresh oil (Psalm 92:10).**

Besides, the **Roman Catholic teachings about the apparitions of Mary at many places at various times are also false and blasphemous.** After the death of Mary, she is resting in Paradise—the third heaven (II Corinthians 12:1-4) with other saints or believers who died in CHRIST. So, Mary would not come and give any apparition to anyone at any place at any time. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST has never told about any apparition of Mary or any other. JESUS never said, "Come to ME through Mary or through the apparitions of Mary." Again,

JESUS' disciples (the apostles) never said, "Come to JESUS through Mary or through the apparitions of Mary."

Further, JESUS never ordained HIS apostle Peter of the first century Christian Church as the first Pope of the Roman Catholic Church which was fully and officially formed in the sixth century and Peter never said, "Pray to GOD through Mary or come to GOD through Mary." Peter, the apostle died in CHRIST in the first century itself, then how could he become the Pope of the sixth century? In the whole of the Holy Bible, we do not read any prayer prayed to Mary or through Mary. But, we do read in the Holy Bible that with about 120 persons (including the disciples/the apostles of JESUS and the women), Mary the mother of JESUS (Mary of the Holy Bible) also continued in one accord in prayer to receive the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD and received it on the day of Pentecost with about 120 persons (Acts 1:12-14; 2:1-4). Mary continued in one accord in prayer to receive the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD since she had fully known the fact that without obtaining the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or without the anointing with the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or without the baptizing by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or without the filling up by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or without the sealing of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the holy power of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (Acts 1:8), she could not live a holy life in this world. As this is the factual thing, the Roman Catholic Church is cunningly and deceitfully placing a Mary in the place of our LORD JESUS CHRIST to pray to Mary or pray through Mary. Hence, no one requires this Mary or any other Mary or any other such a person. **Now, everyone requires the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD and HIS Holy Word, the Holy Bible. But, almost all Roman Catholics do not even remember HIS Holy Name or not even touch HIS Holy Bible. They do not know who the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is! and what the Holy Bible is!**

Now, the divine power of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is coming down from heaven to enter into HIS people. **The HOLY SPIRIT is the SPIRIT of Resurrection Power (Resurrection Life) of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Philippians 3:10). The HOLY SPIRIT is the SPIRIT of Ascension Power of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Acts 1:9-11). The HOLY SPIRIT is the SPIRIT of Descension Power**

of the LORD JESUS CHRIST (I Thessalonians 4:16). **The HOLY SPIRIT is the SPIRIT of Flying Power of the LORD JESUS CHRIST** (Acts 8:26-40).

**By our LORD JESUS CHRIST's SPIRIT of Resurrection Power**, the saints or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the true Christians or the believers will be resurrected from the grave during the secret coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST to catch up with HIS church (I Corinthians 15:51-52). **By our LORD JESUS CHRIST's SPIRIT of Ascension Power**, the saints or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the true Christians or the believers will be ascended up with HIM during HIS secret coming to catch up together with HIS church (I Thessalonians 4:16-17). **By our LORD JESUS CHRIST's SPIRIT of Descension Power**, the saints or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the true Christians or the believers will be descended down with HIM during HIS open coming to give judgment to sinners (Jude 14-15). **By our LORD JESUS CHRIST's SPIRIT of Flying Power**, the saints or the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the true Christians or the believers will be flying everywhere during the Thousand Years Rule of CHRIST—the Millennium Rule of CHRIST (Revelation 20:6). The divinity of our divine GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is clearly reflected on HIS people by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. The HOLY SPIRIT shines in the hearts of all believers to illuminate the knowledge of the glory of GOD, the light of knowing GOD's divine and wonderful shining-greatness of HIS Gospel which is seen in the most glorious face of JESUS CHRIST (II Corinthians 4:6).

Further, **Christians have a loving heavenly Master, the LORD JESUS CHRIST**. So, they meditate upon HIM and concentrate on HIS great passion in the garden of Gethsemane and on HIS horrible sufferings and vicarious death and atonement on the cross at Calvary. HE horribly suffered from the garden of Gethsemane to Calvary for our sins. So, they meditate upon and concentrate on all HIS horrible sufferings from the garden of Gethsemane to Calvary. They love their loving heavenly Master above all things, since HE laid down and sacrificed HIS most glorious life for them and for the whole world, by HIS divine self-surrender. HE died for our benefit and HE died in our place—the sinners' place. HIS death was a substitutionary sacrifice. HE died as a substitute for sin. HE died in the place of all sinners. Thus, HIS love is very great (Hebrews 2:9). **There is no love like the**

**love of JESUS.** HIS love is boundless. HIS love is infinite. HIS love is wondrous. HIS love is forgiving. HIS love is saving. HIS love is redeeming. HIS love is purifying all sins.

**To satisfy GOD's (the LORD JESUS CHRIST's) terrible wrath against the sinners of the whole world, our LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF had suffered great agony and pain in HIS most holy body.** From Gethsemane to Calvary, to satiate GOD's terrible wrath against us, the sinners, HE HIMSELF had entered into the terrible furnace-fire of GOD's terrible wrath. **This terrible furnace-fire of GOD's terrible wrath was far more severe than the fire in hell, the hell-fire** (Zephaniah 1:18; Malachi 4:1). When HE was on the cross during 12 noon to 3 P.M., HE HIMSELF had suffered HIS utmost sufferings in the terrible furnace-fire of GOD's terrible wrath for us, the sinners. At that time, HIS most holy face was fully hidden by utter darkness due to the sudden sunset at noon. So, no one could see HIS most agonizing and most painful face when HE was in the furnace-fire of GOD's terrible wrath which was far more severe than the fire in hell, the hell-fire. What a tremendous furnace-fire of GOD's wrath it was! That time was the most critical time for our LORD JESUS CHRIST. At that time, the final fight against sin and Satan was fought by our LORD JESUS CHRIST. But, HE fought to the finish and HE gloriously triumphed over sin and Satan, the devil. Glory be to GOD!

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST shed HIS most holy and precious blood for the forgiveness (remission) of our sins (St. Matthew 26:28) and for the consummation of the New Testament—New Covenant (St. Matthew 26:29). HIS most holy blood purchased the church for GOD (Acts 20:28). HIS most holy blood cleanses us from our sins (I John 1:7), purges our conscience from dead works (Hebrews 9:14), sanctifies us (Hebrews 13:12) and speaks better things for us (Hebrews 12:24). HIS most holy blood gives us boldness to enter into the Holy Place (Hebrews 10:19). By HIS most holy blood we overcome Satan, the devil—the accuser (Revelation 12:10-11). HIS most holy and precious blood accomplishes our eternal redemption (Hebrews 9:12).**

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST put away sin once for all by the sacrifice of HIMSELF (Hebrews 9:26). Sin is not in HIM (I John 3:5). HE did not know sin (II Corinthians 5:21). HE committed no sin (I Peter 2:22). HE was without sin (Hebrews 4:15). HE asks, "Which one of**

you can convict ME of sin?" (St. John 8:46). No one can convict HIM of sin. Hence, these divine qualities of Our LORD JESUS CHRIST qualified HIM to take away our sins, the indwelling sin (sinful nature) and the sins (sinful deeds) committed in one's daily life (St. John 1:29). If anyone wants to be delivered from this indwelling sin and from the sins committed in his/her daily life, he/she should pray to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST by confessing his/her sins for forgiveness of sins, salvation from sins, holy life, etc., with broken heart and with tears and with crying and with humility, by remembering HIS death on the cross at Calvary.

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the LORD of all** (Acts 2:36). **The LORD, HE is the GOD** (I Kings 18:39). **HE alone is GOD. HE is over all, GOD blessed for ever** (Romans 9:5). HE is the Head over all things (Ephesians 1:22). HIS name is above all names (Philippians 2:9). In HIM all fullness dwells (Colossians 1:19). HE is crowned with glory and honour (Hebrews 2:9). HE is having all authority in heaven and on earth (St. Matthew 28:18) to rule over the heavens, the earth and the nations.

**There is no heart like the heart of JESUS.** HIS most holy heart is filled with tender love, mercy and compassion. **There is no word like the Words of JESUS.** HIS Words are filled with divine life, full of comfort, joy and courage. HIS Words are very precious to our souls. No man can speak like JESUS. **No man has ever spoken like JESUS speaks** (St. John 7:46).

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Lover of our souls.** HE loved us so greatly that HE gave HIMSELF for us on the cross at Calvary. **HIS divine infinite love flows as an endless river of blood, around the world to meet the sinners, from the cross at Calvary to all eternity.** **There is none like JESUS.** No one can find any, like our LORD JESUS CHRIST. **I am so glad that the LORD JESUS CHRIST loves me and loves even me—the worst sinner.** Before I was saved by JESUS CHRIST, I was the worst sinner. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's love for us is the divine infinite love which no one deserves (Romans 5:8). HE loves HIS church. HE loves HIS ministry. HE loves the whole world.

Now, as commanded by the LORD GOD, Moses erected the Tabernacle (Exodus 25:40; Hebrews 8:5). **The Tabernacle was in the**

model and shadow of heaven, the kingdom of GOD. The Tabernacle consisted of the Court—the open space, the Holy Place (sanctuary) and the Most Holy Place of All or the Holiest of All—the Holy of Holies (Exodus 27:9; 26:33; Hebrews 9:2-3). No one can even approach that Most Holy Place of All or the Holiest Place of All in heaven, where our Ever Living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is dwelling in the unapproachable (so bright) light (I Timothy 6:16). It is the highest ever place, far above the heavens (skies). In heaven or in the kingdom of GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will reveal HIMSELF in the Holy Place at HIS right time where HIS people, the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the saints or the true Christians or the righteous or the believers can see and worship HIM face to face. What a glorious GOD our GOD is! What a wonderful GOD our GOD is! What a powerful GOD our GOD is! What an honourable GOD our GOD is!

In the eternal state, in the kingdom of heaven or in the kingdom of GOD—in the divine world or in the celestial world, our LORD JESUS CHRIST will give HIS people, the saved or the redeemed or the regenerated or the true Christians or the believers, HIS eternal joy and happiness, HIS eternal bliss and HIS eternal reign with HIM. There will be no sin/evil and there will be no tears, death, sorrow, crying or pain (Revelation 21:4). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**O my GOD, give me YOUR divine infinite grace:**

- To see YOUR divine infinite love.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite mercy.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite goodness.*
- To see YOUR incomprehensible perfection.*
- To see YOUR ineffable wonderfulness.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite honour.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite glory.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite magnificence.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite beauty.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite majesty.*
- To see YOUR divine infinite nobility.*



- To see YOUR *divine infinite clemency.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite benignity.***
- To see YOUR *grandeur of divine justice.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite holiness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite righteousness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite affection.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite compassion.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite meekness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite patience.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite humility.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite modesty.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite orderliness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite peerlessness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite peace.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite truth.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite gentleness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite longsuffering.***
- To see YOUR *vicarious atonement.***
- To see YOUR *vicarious substitutionary death.***
- To see YOUR *great sacrifice.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite flawlessness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite spotlessness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite kindness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite pity.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite faithfulness.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite favour.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite consideration.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite sovereignty.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite omnipotence.***

- To see YOUR *divine infinite omnipresence.***
- To see YOUR *divine infinite omniscience.***
- To see YOUR *divine eternal presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine personal presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine resting presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine rejoicing presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine regarding presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine restoring presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine resuscitating presence.***
- To see YOUR *divine reflecting presence.***
- To hear YOUR *divine sweet and gentle and delicate little voice.***
- To hear YOUR *divine eternal Gospel (the Good News).***
- To hear YOUR *divine reproof of sin.***
- To receive YOUR *divine repentance from sins.***
- To receive YOUR *divine forgiveness (remission) of sins.***
- To receive YOUR *divine salvation (deliverance) from sins.***
- To receive YOUR *divine redemption from sins.***
- To receive YOUR *divine conversion.***
- To receive YOUR *divine justification.***
- To receive YOUR *divine sanctification.***
- To receive YOUR *divine anointment of the HOLY SPIRIT.***
- To receive YOUR *divine guidance of the HOLY SPIRIT.***
- To receive YOUR *divine glorification.***
- To receive YOUR *divine healing.***
- To receive YOUR *divine comfort.***
- To receive YOUR *everlasting life or eternal life.***
- To receive YOUR *divine body of redemption (glorified body).***
- To receive YOUR *glorious immortal body.***
- To see YOUR *secret coming.***

**To see YOUR glorious presence always.**

**To receive YOUR Millennial reign in YOUR Thousand Years Rule.**

**To receive YOUR eternal joy and happiness.**

**To receive YOUR eternal bliss.**

**To receive YOUR eternal glorification in YOUR eternal kingdom.**

**To receive YOUR eternal reign in YOUR eternal kingdom.**

**To receive YOUR unsearchable and untraceable riches in eternity.**

**To receive the Superiority and Finality and Fullness of Christianity.**

**To receive the Superior and Final Triumphant Status of Christians.**

**To be with You for ever and ever in heaven, the kingdom of GOD or the divine world. Amen.**

GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST came into the world from heaven, to bring GOD (HIM) into man through HIS divine birth as Saviour of the world. Then HE gloriously ascended into heaven to bring man into GOD and into heaven, the kingdom of GOD through HIS horrible death and glorious resurrection. Glory be to GOD!

## 6.10 THE UNSEARCHABLE AND UNTRACEABLE RICHES OF THE RICH CHRIST

It is absolutely necessary that GOD should be eminently perfect in all HIS divine attributes. No imperfection should be seen in GOD. If there is any imperfection in HIM, then, HE is not GOD; HE must not be GOD; HE could not be GOD. In GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST only we see eminent perfection in all HIS divine attributes. In HIM, there is no imperfection. No imperfection is seen in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. **Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine perfections are incomparable to any other perfection.** Glory be to GOD!

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's eminent perfection in mighty wisdom is incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine omniscience, divine omnipotence and divine omnipresence are incomparable. HIS eminent perfection in divine infinite beauty is incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine goodness, divine providence, divine self-sacrificial love, divine mercy, divine grace, divine peace,

divine compassion, divine meekness, divine affection, divine loving-kindness, divine longsuffering and divine forgiveness are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine sanctification, divine righteousness and grandeur of divine justice are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine pity, divine reproof, divine consideration, divine favour, divine forbearance, divine power, divine strength, divine honour, divine glory and divine mystery are incomparable.

HIS eminent perfections in divine genuineness, divine truthfulness, divine sincerity, divine honesty, divine trustworthiness and divine faithfulness are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine humility, divine lowliness, divine gentleness and divine obedience are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine goodness, divine truth, divine sufferings, divine sacrifice, divine self-control, divine holiness, divine sinlessness, divine flawlessness, divine spotlessness and divine orderliness are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine Creation, divine sustainability and divine peerlessness are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in divine guidance counselling and divine teachings are incomparable. HIS eminent perfections in all HIS divine attributes including so bright divine light without any darkness at all are incomparable. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

**The unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST** are HIS divine life, divine light, divine love, divine holiness, divine righteousness, divine justice, divine sanctification, divine justification, divine sinlessness, divine flawlessness, divine spotlessness, divine kindness, divine grace, divine mercy, divine compassion, divine pity, divine forbearance, divine favour, divine meekness, divine self-control, divine modesty, divine goodness, divine truth, divine humility, divine obedience, divine consideration, divine lowliness, divine gentleness, divine longsuffering, divine peace, divine sacrifice, divine forgiveness, divine salvation, divine redemption, divine wisdom, divine understanding, divine knowledge, divine comfort, divine presence, divine sovereignty, divine omnipotence, divine omniscience, divine omnipresence, divine wonderfulness, divine benevolence, divine bounty, divine beauty, divine providence, divine perfection, divine benignity, divine majesty, divine clemency, divine sweetness, divine nobility, divine orderliness, divine genuineness, divine truthfulness,

divine sincerity, divine honesty, divine trustworthiness, divine faithfulness, divine peerlessness, divine honour, divine glory and divine mystery (Colossians 2:2; Ephesians 3:8; I Corinthians 1:30).

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the hiding GOD who takes care of HIS people secretly, and saves and protects them openly while acting in secrecy (Isaiah 45:15). In the Holy Bible, the Book of Esther does not mention the name of GOD. Since our GOD is the hiding GOD who takes care of HIS people secretly and saves them openly while acting in secrecy, the name of GOD is not mentioned even in Esther 4:3, 16 where the name of GOD should have been mentioned. **Thus, we can clearly understand that our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine acting in secrecy is also one of the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST.** Glory be to GOD!

The church of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is also the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST (Acts 20:28). The divine seal of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD is also the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST (Ephesians 4:30). The glorious redemption of body given to the saved/the believers during the secret coming of CHRIST to catch up with HIM HIS church is also the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST (Romans 8:23; Philippians 3:21). The Thousand Years' Rule (the Millennium Rule) of the saved/the believers with CHRIST is also the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST (Revelation 20:6). The eternal/the everlasting reign of the saved/the believers with CHRIST with HIS eternal, matchless glory in the eternal kingdom/the kingdom of GOD/the kingdom of heaven is also the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST (Revelation 1:6).

The earth was created by the rich CHRIST to produce a rich harvest. Because of the fall of man, the earth was cursed to grow thorns and thistles, and man had to labour with sweat for food (Genesis 3:17-18). In the Millennium (1000 Years Rule), the light of the sun will be sevenfold (Isaiah 30:26) to grow the living things on earth in a specially rich way. Then the produce of the earth will be seven times richer than it is in this age and there will be no scarcity but plenitude and riches (Joel 3:18). In the kingdom of GOD or in the kingdom of heaven or in the New Jerusalem or in the heavenly Zion, the LAMB of GOD—the rich CHRIST, by HIS most glorious divine

**Light of Life will much more brightly and gloriously shine, continuously day and night (Revelation 21:23), by showing HIS most glorious divine fame and riches of HIS most glorious heavenly kingdom and the divine honour of HIS excellent majesty (Esther 1:4), sole dominion and All power (authority) for ever and ever (Jude 25). Glory be to GOD!**

**To enter into the heavenly FATHER's house, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's heavenly house—the kingdom of GOD/the kingdom of heaven, everyone should be adorned with the holy and righteous adornment—the spiritual adornment, the fine, bright, white and clean robe of righteousness and the garments of salvation (Isaiah 61:10; Revelation 19:8), the signet ring (Haggai 2:23) of being sealed (anointed) with the HOLY SPIRIT (Ephesians 4:30) and the shoes of preparation of the Gospel of peace (Ephesians 6:15) to match and satisfy our rich FATHER and to qualify us to enter into the FATHER's house and feast with the FATHER and to enjoy the riches in the house of the rich FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST.**

**Our rich CHRIST has riches beyond the count of arithmetic, beyond the measurement of reason, beyond the dream of imagination, beyond the power of knowledge and beyond the eloquence of words. The riches of the rich CHRIST are unsearchable and untraceable.**

Our rich CHRIST has riches of TRUE HAPPINESS to bestow upon us. HE is the good Shepherd. HE can make us lie down in green pastures and lead us beside still waters (Psalm 23:1-2). When HE is the Shepherd and we are HIS sheep and we lie down at HIS Feet, we can hear the most charming music of HIS pipe. There is no music like the music of HIS pipe. **There is no love like HIS, neither earth nor heaven can match it. HE gives to HIS people as a king giveth (gives) to a king; HE gives to them two heavens—a heaven below in serving HIM here and a heaven above in delighting in HIM for ever and ever. What a loving GOD, our LORD JESUS CHRIST is!**

**Our rich CHRIST's unsearchable and untraceable riches will be best known in eternity.** HE will give HIS people on the way to heaven all they need; their place of defence will be munitions of rocks, their bread will be given them and their waters will be sure (Isaiah 33:15-17); but it is there, THERE, where they will see the KING, the LORD

JESUS CHRIST in HIS divine infinite beauty; they will hear the song of them that triumph and the shout of them that feast, and will have a face-to-face view of the most glorious and beloved ONE, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. May the tune for the minstrels of the earth, and the song for the harp-singers of heaven will be about the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST. **About the unsearchable and untraceable riches of the rich CHRIST, O my LORD GOD, give me more and more wisdom and understanding and knowledge of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and I will proclaim the Good News to all.**

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's Gospel of salvation reveals the riches of the rich CHRIST (Ephesians 3:8). GOD's so great a salvation separates us from the ugly and dirty sins of the earth and adorns us with CHRIST. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the FATHER makes us enjoy the riches in the FATHER's house and to be always merry with the rich FATHER (St. Luke 15: 11-24), by worshipping HIM in holy adornment (spiritual adornment) in the beauty of holiness (I Chronicles 16:29) and giving HIM praise and thanks to HIS holy name to the remembrance of HIS holiness (Psalm 30:4) and enjoying the riches of the rich CHRIST by drinking the water of life and by eating the hidden manna of life and the fruit of the tree of life (Revelation 2:17; 22:1-2). Praise and thanksgiving and glory and majesty and might and wisdom and honour and power, be to GOD, our rich FATHER, the LORD JESUS CHRIST for ever and ever. Amen.**

## **6.11 THE DIVINE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST**

**Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the GOD of heaven and earth (Ezra 5:11). HE has all power and authority in heaven and earth (St. Matthew 28:18). HE is the righteous Judge of all, the living and the dead (II Timothy 4:8; Hebrews 12:23; Acts 10:42). HE has the heavenly rule (Daniel 4:26). HE will put down all other rule and all other authority and all other power and HE will put all enemies under HIS feet and reign (I Corinthians 15:24-25). Dominion and dread are with HIM (Job 25:2). HE changes anyone's dominion (Isaiah 22:21). There is no authority except from GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST (Romans 13:1). So, everyone should obey the worldly authority in the LORD (Romans 13:2).**

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Head of all rule and authority (Colossians 2:10). In HIM dwells all the fulness of the GOD-HEAD bodily (Colossians 2:9). HE is above all rule and authority and power and lordship. No one else can have this place of honour and authority and power. No one in this world or in the world to come can have such honour and authority and power (Ephesians 1:21). Angels and authorities and powers are subjected to HIM (I Peter 3:22). By HIS mighty power, HE created all things (Colossians 1:16). HIS divine authority and power cannot be explained in words. HE is upholding and bearing all things by the Word of HIS power (Hebrews 1:3).

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in the world, HE taught HIS Word, the new doctrine to the people with authority and HE commanded even the unclean spirits with authority and power and they came out (St. Mark 1:22, 27; St. Luke 4:32, 36). When JESUS began to preach, people were greatly astonished (St. Matthew 13:54),

*"For HE taught them as ONE having authority, and not as the scribes."*

St. Matthew 7:29

*"And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this MAN letters, having never learned (having never studied or having never been to school)?"*

St. John 7:15

Our LORD JESUS proclaimed HIS message on HIS own authority.

*"But I say unto you, ..."*

St. Matthew 5:22

Our LORD JESUS' divine authority manifested in HIS miraculous cures (St. Mark 5:30) and HIS divine power manifested in forgiving sins (St. Matthew 9:6). HE gave HIS divine power and authority to HIS disciples over all devils (demons) and unclean (evil) spirits, so that they would cast them out and heal every disease and every sickness (St. Matthew 10:1; St. Luke 9:1) and sent them to preach HIS Gospel, the Good News about the kingdom of GOD (St. Mark 1:15; 3:14). HE gave them HIS divine authority to forbid and to permit (St. Matthew 18:18). HE authorized them to receive disciples in HIS name, to baptize them and to teach them HIS divine way of life (St. Matthew 28:19-20).



Now also, JESUS gives HIS divine power and authority to HIS ministers (servants) over all devils and unclean spirits, so that they would drive them out and heal every disease and every sickness and HE sends them to preach HIS Gospel about HIS kingdom. HE gives HIS divine authority to HIS ministers for edification (building up) of believers (II Corinthians 10:8). HE gives HIS divine authority to HIS ministers, to each one his work (St. Mark 13:34). HE gives HIS divine authority to HIS ministers to speak and exhort and rebuke with all authority (Titus 2:15). A GOD's minister is empowered to act on behalf of CHRIST, his heavenly Master, to the extent in which he is officially empowered to act on behalf of HIM. He should not speak from his own wisdom and he should not apply any worldly medicine to heal the sick. He can teach and heal by HIS divine authority only.

Our LORD JESUS did not exercise HIS divine authority as worldly rulers. So, HE said to HIS disciples, if anyone wants to become great among them, let him be their minister and if anyone wants to be chief among them, let him be their servant or slave (St. Matthew 20:25-28).

Our LORD JESUS gives HIS divine authority to become children of GOD to those who receive HIM and to those who put their trust in HIS name (St. John 1:12). HE delivers HIS people out of the authority of darkness and transfers them into HIS kingdom (Colossians 1:13). HE gives HIS divine authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions and over all the power of the enemy; so, we should receive this divine authority from HIM (St. Luke 10:19). HIS divine authority subdues the power of the enemy.

Our LORD JESUS gives HIS divine authority to HIS holy men to prophecy by the HOLY SPIRIT (II Peter 1:21). HE will give HIS divine authority to HIS people over the nations (Revelation 2:26). HE will give HIS divine authority to HIS two witnesses (Enoch and Elijah) to torment sinners (Revelation 11:6). HE will give HIS divine authority to HIS saints, the saved to execute a kind of judgment to the world (I Corinthians 6:2).

Our LORD JESUS has power and authority on earth to forgive sins (St. Matthew 9:6). HE has authority to execute judgment (St. John 5:27). HE has authority to lay down HIS life and HE has authority to

take HIS life again (St. John 10:18). JESUS has power over the day of death of a man. So, no man has any right and power over his spirit (breath) to retain his spirit (Ecclesiastes 8:8). JESUS has authority to give eternal life to mankind (St. John 17:2). **HIS divine power and authority are from eternity past through the present time, unto eternity future** (Jude 25). **Thus, no power or no authority or nothing will be able to separate HIS people from the love of GOD, which is in CHRIST JESUS, our LORD at any time** (Romans 8:38-39).

#### 6.11.1. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY REGARDING OBEDIENCE

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Way, the Truth and the Life (St. John 14:6). So, with HIS divine authority, HE always demands obedient to the faith (Acts 6:7) to save us. Everyone should have this obedience to the faith; and everyone should recognize HIS divine authority and realize that HIS Word or even a touch has the divine authority to heal (St. Matthew 8:8, 15); and everyone should be obedient to HIM by obeying HIS divine commands as a man obeys to the commands of a worldly authority (St. Matthew 8:8-10).

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST humbled HIMSELF and was obedient unto death (Philippians 2:8). HE saves us through HIS obedience and makes us righteous (Romans 5:19). To a Christian, obedience to GOD refers to one surrender to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in faith (Romans 1:5). When one embraces Christianity, it means that he/she comes to obey or surrender to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST in faith (Romans 15:18). Being a Christian means obeying the Gospel, the Good News in faith (Romans 10:16). The Gospel is the power of GOD for the salvation of everyone who believes (Romans 1:16). The sanctity (purity) of a Christian in every part of his/her life (I Peter 1:15) consists in obeying without any lust (I Peter 1:14) and in obeying with all his/her heart the doctrine or the teaching that is delivered to him/her (Romans 6:17).

Obedience to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST means that one acknowledges his dependence to GOD for his salvation and for his existence. Obedience to GOD is very essential in our Christian life. Obedience to GOD essentially includes obedience to human authorities as well in GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. Obedience to GOD gives us the happiest life by the loving guidance of HIS HOLY SPIRIT.

We should obey our worldly authorities or masters as though we are serving CHRIST, as slaves of CHRIST (Ephesians 6:5-6). Obedience should be shown to those in authority, whether they are kind and considerate or harsh (I Peter 2:18). If the person in authority does wrong, GOD will punish him (Colossians 3:25). So, it does not give us an excuse, not to obey.

Obedience to the church is very essential (St. Matthew 18:17). In the church, there is no place for disobedient people. Apostle Paul exacted obedience from the faithful whether he was living with them (Philippians 2:12) or addressing them through an epistle (II Thessalonians 3:14). He praised the Corinthians for having been obedient to Titus who had been a delegate of him (II Corinthians 7:15).

#### **6.11.2. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY ON DIGNITY**

When JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE wanted a very common dignity. When HE was born, HE was put in a manger (St. Luke 2:7). Those who were invited to celebrate HIS divine birth were common shepherds (St. Luke 2:8-18). HE spent HIS early life in Nazareth, a hum-drum place (St. John 1:46). HE freely moved with publicans (tax collectors) and sinners or outcasts (St. Matthew 9:11). Even though JESUS was GOD the SON or the SON of GOD, HE walked all the way and preached the Gospel (Good News) and healed the sick and drove out devils (demons) and unclean (evil) spirits from people (St. Matthew 4:23-24). But HE did preach and act with HIS divine authority. HE recognized the authority of the scribes, since they were the authorized interpreters of the Law. But HE condemned their works and rejected their claim on having a higher status (St. Matthew 23:2-10).

Our LORD JESUS did not want HIS disciples to form a higher-status group. Because all of them are brothers to one another and they have only one FATHER who is in heaven and their only one Master is the CHRIST (St. Matthew 23:8-10). He who is greatest among them will be their servant or slave. He who exalts himself will be abased and he who humbles himself will be exalted (St. Matthew 23:11-12).

#### **6.11.3. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IS NOT OF THIS WORLD**

As our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's kingdom is not of this world, HIS divine authority is not of this world (St. John 18:36).

Thus, JESUS' divine authority of HIS people is not of this world. It is entirely different from all secular (worldly) authorities. It is entirely different from secular kingship, secular leadership, secular political ruling—electing someone for secular ruling by election and secular judging. Hence, the present day secular (worldly) leadership or ruling in most of the churches is not of JESUS' divine authority. If anyone wants to know the divine authority of JESUS, let him pray to HIM faithfully with patience and with spiritual understanding. JESUS forbids competition—exalting oneself (St. Luke 18:14), party formation—loving those who love you (St. Luke 6:32) and the struggle for rank or power—to be the greatest (St. Mark 10:35-41). If everyone knows everyone's entrusted nature of authority of JESUS CHRIST by the HOLY SPIRIT, then there is no tension between us.

#### **6.11.4. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IS PATERNALISTIC**

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HIS divine way of dealing with all people was paternalistic (Psalm 103:13-14; St. Matthew 14:13-21; St. Mark 15:27-32, 37; St. Luke 15:11-32; 23:33-34). But HE displayed HIMSELF like a brother (Hebrews 2:17) and like a servant or slave (St. John 13:4-5) and like a friend and called HIS disciples "friends" (St. John 15:15). Again, JESUS called HIMSELF as "the SON of MAN" (St. Matthew 10:23) which in Aramaic freely means "the common man" or "the ordinary man" or "the man like everyone else." JESUS' paternal love towards all people made HIM an admirable "FATHER" (St. Luke 15:11-32); and an admirable "FATHER in heaven" (St. Matthew 6:9); and an admirable "LORD" (St. John 9:1-38); and an admirable "SON of MAN" (St. Matthew 12:8); and an admirable "SON of GOD or GOD the SON" (St. John 20:31); and an admirable "LORD and GOD" (St. John 20:26-28). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

#### **6.11.5. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY ON CHILDREN AND PARENTAL CARE**

Our LORD JESUS' divine heritage and reward are seen in HIS divine authority on children and HIS tender mercies and loving-pity are seen in HIS divine authority on parental care.

*"Lo, children are an heritage of the LORD: and the fruit of the*

*womb is HIS reward."*

Psalm 127:3

*"Children, obey your parents in the LORD: for this is right. Honour thy father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise;) That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth. And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the LORD."*

Ephesians 6:1-4

When our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST was in this world, HE eagerly blessed the children.

*"And HE took them up in HIS arms, put HIS hands upon them, and blessed them."*

St. Mark 10:16

Again, HE said,

*"... Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."*

St. Matthew 18:3

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST commanded Moses to instruct parents to teach HIS commandments diligently to their children and talk about it to them while sitting in their houses, lying down and rising up and while they are walking (Deuteronomy 6:7). The Israelites taught their children till the death of Joshua, the successor of Moses.

After the death of Joshua, the Israelites had given up teaching the Law of the LORD, to their children, given through Moses. Parents did not submit themselves to GOD and they did not submit themselves to their preachers and teachers. Children did not submit themselves to their parents. The preachers and teachers were also turned away from GOD, the LORD and they did not submit themselves to GOD. The result was, there came another generation after them who did not know the LORD GOD, the most holy GOD and all-powerful GOD and about the things GOD had done for the people of Israel and they had no fear about GOD, their Redeemer (Judges 2:10). They fully turned away from the LORD, the GOD of their fathers and served and worshipped other false gods of the nations around them. Thus, they

made the LORD GOD angry (Judges 2:11-13). The LORD GOD was angry with Israel. So, the LORD GOD delivered them into the hands of spoilers who spoiled them and HE sold them into the hands of their enemies around them (Judges 2:14). The Israelites could no longer stand in front of their enemies. The LORD GOD punished them everywhere they went. The people were greatly distressed (Judges 2:15). So, parents should teach about GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS commandments diligently to their children to obey HIS commandments as they are.

Now, the Holy Bible advises fathers that in their eagerness to instruct, "*Provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the LORD*" (Ephesians 6:4).

Again, the Holy Bible advises to "*Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it*" (Proverbs 22:6).

Further, the Holy Bible exhorts not to withdraw correction from a child because, "*...If thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die*" (Proverbs 23:13) and "*Thou ... shalt (you will) deliver his soul from hell,*" the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Proverbs 23:14). Besides, the Holy Bible exhorts that "*The rod and reproof give wisdom*" (Proverbs 29:15).

Parents should pray for their children (I Samuel 1:27) and they should show their tender mercies and loving-pity on their children (Psalm 103:13), for their bodily growth and spiritual growth to be like olive plants (Psalm 128:3).

Parents should bring up their children in the fear of GOD and devotion. Now, most of the parents spend all their time and money for their children's education so that they shine forth in their education and worldly life. They never teach them about GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST or encourage them to seek GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. They utterly fail to understand that "*The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the Holy (the Holy ONE) is understanding*" (Proverbs 9:10) and utterly fail to teach that "*..Seek ye first the kingdom of GOD, and HIS righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you*" (St. Matthew 6:33). 'All these things' mean 'all worldly blessings'. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST comforts HIS children as one is comforted by his mother (Isaiah 66:13).

Now, regarding children and parents and others, who are the children of GOD? or who are the true Christians? Those who are led by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD are the children of GOD or true Christians (Romans 8:14). There are confusions, conflicts, contentions, dissension and strife among Christians because the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or the SPIRIT of TRUTH (St. John 14:17) is not upon them to guide or lead them unto truth. They have no spiritual life or Spirit-filled life in any aspect of their life. What a sorrowful thing it is!

Timothy's grandmother Lois and his mother Eunice taught about GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD to Timothy and gave HIM to Timothy (II Timothy 1:5). Likewise, parents and grandparents should teach GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST to their children and grandchildren and give HIM to their children and grandchildren. This is one of the most important duties of parents and grandparents. Glory be to GOD!

#### 6.11.6. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IN LEADERSHIP

For every kind of leadership, one special talent is required. In our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST, we see HIS special talent in HIS divine love (I John 4:8). JESUS' own ministry was born out of HIS divine love for the people who were faint and helpless, like sheep without shepherd (St. Matthew 9:36). JESUS' own mission proceeded also from HIS divine love (St. John 3:16). JESUS sent HIS disciples to continue HIS ministry and mission (St. John 20:28). It is love that JESUS insisted on Simon Peter when confirming him in HIS apostolic ministry (St. John 21:15-17).

*"...JESUS saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou ME more than these? He saith unto HIM, Yea, LORD; THOU knowest that I love THEE. HE saith unto him, Feed MY lambs."*

St. John 21:15

Absolute loyalty to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and dedicated devotion to HIS sheep, HIS people are also required for JESUS' divine leadership. HE expects HIS ministry to take utmost care for the spiritual welfare of even one person, as a shepherd looking for the lost sheep, hundredth sheep (St. Matthew 18:11-14). HE wants HIS minister to be ready to die for HIS sheep, HIS people (St. John 10:11).

Then, no one can separate one's divine authority in leadership from HIS divine Person or from HIS divine Love (Romans 8:38-39). Glory be to GOD!

#### 6.11.7. JESUS NEVER IMPOSED HIS DIVINE AUTHORITY ON OTHERS

Our LORD JESUS CHRIST, the greatest Leader of all times with universal authority, did not impose HIMSELF HIS divine authority on others. Even though HE was omnipotent, HE did not press the weak. St. Matthew characterised JESUS' divine approach as follows:

*"HE shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear HIS voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall HE not break, and smoking flax shall HE not quench, till HE send forth judgment unto victory."*

St. Matthew 12:19-20

Not to impose JESUS' divine authority on others, HE had not taken initiative in all things (St. John 1:40-42; 2:4; 3:2; 4:40; 6:5-9). HE allowed HIMSELF to be led by suggestions made by others (St. John 6:5-9). It is a highly remarkable thing in JESUS' divine authority.

#### 6.11.8. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY REGARDING FREEDOM

JESUS liberates, delivers or saves, regenerates and redeems man from sin and Satan, the devil. HE gave HIS divine life as a ransom to redeem mankind (St. Matthew 20:28). HE forgives sins (St. Matthew 9:6) by HIS most holy blood, shed for mankind for the forgiveness (remission) of sins (St. Matthew 26:28).

Real spiritual freedom means freedom from the works of the Old Testament Law and from sin and from Satan, the devil which JESUS gives from their slavery (Galatians 3:10; St. John 8:34-36; Hebrews 2:14-15). Our LORD JESUS wants true inner purity (sanctity) and true inner chastity (St. Mark 7:8) with an inner life of brotherly love (St. Matthew 5:21-24). The Old Testament Law against adultery was superseded by true inner chastity (St. Matthew 5:27-30). By the Law of the SPIRIT of Life (the New Testament Law), JESUS has abolished the Old Testament Law of sin and death (Romans 8:2).

Through the New Testament Law, JESUS pours HIS divine love in our hearts through HIS HOLY SPIRIT for our spiritual freedom in our



spiritual life (Romans 5:5). JESUS writes HIS spiritual Law in our hearts with the SPIRIT of the Living GOD, the SPIRIT of the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF (II Corinthians 3:3). JESUS has set HIS people free for their freedom. So, no one should entangle or submit oneself again with any yoke of slavery (Galatians 5:1). The HOLY SPIRIT of the LORD JESUS CHRIST gives us liberty or freedom.

*"Now the LORD is that (the) SPIRIT and where the SPIRIT of the LORD is, there is liberty."*

II Corinthians 3:17

The SPIRIT of GOD or the SPIRIT of the LORD or the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD changes us into HIS very likeness by giving HIS liberty or freedom (II Corinthians 3:18). Glory be to GOD!

Now, only JESUS can set people free from sin; only JESUS can condemn and forgive sin. Our LORD JESUS CHRIST's divine authority in giving freedom or liberty is clearly seen in St. John 8:2-11. JESUS is the ONLY ONE who is qualified to condemn sin, qualified to forgive sin and able to set people free from sin. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD with HIS divine authority convicts the world concerning sin and concerning righteousness and concerning judgment (St. John 16:8), to give freedom or liberty from death, the second death, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8).

#### **6.11.9. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY IN SPEAKING**

Our LORD JESUS' frankness and sincerity were very delightful. HE was always honest and straight forward in HIS thoughts and deeds. Even though JESUS experienced major and minor crises, HE did have any covering up of any necessary thing in HIS speaking (St. Matthew 23:35-38; St. John 6:60-64; 19:9-11). JESUS' Words were SPIRIT and Life. JESUS showed HIS great amount of love and patience towards all people, especially towards HIS enemies. HE even spoke to Pilate who was going to condemn HIM to the cross (St. John 19:9-11). HE did not speak to Herod, since he did not want any serious debate or any spiritual debate with JESUS but he wanted to see some miracle done by HIM (St. Luke 23:8-9) and he treated HIM with great contempt and mocked HIM and ridiculed HIM with his soldiers (St. Luke 23:11).

### 6.11.10. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY ON POWER OF MONEY

Our LORD JESUS did not like any authority through the power of money (St. Matthew 6:8-9; 10:8-10). HE wants everyone to pray to HIM for all his/her livelihood (St. Matthew 6:8-13). JESUS' divine doctrine in this matter to HIS disciples is:

*"Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give."*

St. Matthew 10:8

Material riches would become an obstacle to get salvation from sins (St. Matthew 13:22). If economic factors influence one's life, he will not live as a spiritual man. Everyone should adhere to the principle that money means power. The power of money would be a great temptation for the fall of our spiritual life. As we ought to engage in spiritual life, spiritual things should be given priority. If anyone wants to do HIS ministry, he should give up and hate everything he has:

*"Then Peter began to say unto HIM, Lo, we have left all, and have followed THEE. And JESUS answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for MY sake, and the gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life."*

St. Mark 10:28-30

*"If any man come (comes) to ME, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be MY disciple. And whosoever doth (does) not bear his cross, and come after ME, cannot be MY disciple. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh (forsakes) not all that he hath (has), he cannot be MY disciple."*

St. Luke 14:26-27, 33

### 6.11.11. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY REGARDING HIS MINISTRY

It would be very easy to a GOD's minister to lead HIS ministry, when the believers are fully grown-up in their spiritual life and

not like little children, playing children's games, in spiritual life. It is very hard to make little children understand, the Gospel (the Good News) preaching—"piping (playing) the flute" for the joy of salvation—"dance"; and it is very hard to cause them to grieve for their sins—"mourning a dirge (funeral song)" for repentance from sins (St. Matthew 11:16-17). It is the duty of the ministers of GOD (the shepherds) to preach such people again and again to rescue their souls from hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur. In rescuing, protecting, feeding, binding up the crippled and healing the wounded, special attention and care and patience are needed to them by the ministers of GOD (Ezekiel 34:11-16). GOD's ministers should cherish and nourish HIS people, as a nursing mother (I Thessalonians 2:7). They should not destroy the life of anyone, as our LORD JESUS CHRIST came not to destroy men's lives but to save them (St. Luke 9:52-56). They should save the souls of people for heaven, the kingdom of GOD or the unseen world of wonders or the eternal world.

#### **6.11.12. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY OVER HIS CHURCH**

By the divine authority of our LORD JESUS, the early Christians used to come together in the church for common worship and for common functions. The normal time of meeting for the church was Sunday, the first day of the week (Acts 20:7) and it was also convened at another occasions (Acts 14:27). By the divine authority of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the church at Antioch sent Paul and Barnabas on their missionary journey (Acts 13:2-3) and it received their first report (Acts 14:26-28).

No church can function properly without the GOD-appointed leader or principal minister. To "the church of GOD" (I Corinthians 11:22) JESUS CHRIST is the Head (Ephesians 1:22; 5:23). The church without the GOD-appointed leader or principal minister is like sheep without shepherd (St. Matthew 9:36). Without the GOD-appointed leader or principal minister, the believers run in their spiritual race as though without any clear aim and fight in the spiritual warfare as though beating the air (I Corinthians 9:26). In HIS church, our LORD JESUS CHRIST gloriously shines forth through HIS people, the people of GOD (I Peter 2:9-10). Glory be to GOD!

### 6.11.13. JESUS' DIVINE AUTHORITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the power from on High (St. Luke 24:49). The HOLY SPIRIT gives us power and strength to live as HIS holy witnesses (Acts 1:8). Renewing of the HOLY SPIRIT in our lives is very essential for our new spiritual life (Titus 3:5). The HOLY SPIRIT is the power of resurrection (Philippians 3:10).

The wonderful divine working of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD was manifest in JESUS (Acts 10:38). HIS divine preaching and miracles were a manifestation of the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Luke 4:18). JESUS' ecstasy in the HOLY SPIRIT could be seen by others (St. Luke 10:21).

When our LORD JESUS CHRIST drove the merchants out of the temple, HE did it in a storm of HIS holy anger, aroused by the HOLY SPIRIT (St. John 2:13-17). When the chief priests questioned about HIS divine authority (St. Matthew 21:23), JESUS did not answer by pointing out one of HIS divine names "the SON of GOD". But HE questioned them with HIS divine authority of the HOLY SPIRIT (St. Matthew 21:24-27). By the divine power of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, JESUS drove out devils (St. Matthew 12:28). No one should ignore JESUS' divine authority of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD. Speaking against or going against the manifestation of the HOLY SPIRIT is the worst sin one can commit (St. Matthew 12:31-32).

The HOLY SPIRIT manifests HIMSELF in many ways and through many persons in the Church (Hebrews 1:1). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD does work not only through HIS ministers, but also through HIS faithful.

When our LORD JESUS commissioned HIS apostles, HE said,

*"...Receive ye the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT)."*

St. John 20:22

Our LORD JESUS' divine promise of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the SPIRIT of TRUTH (St. John 14:16-17) has always relevance to all HIS faithful. The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, which JESUS has graciously given to us, we are able to know the divine deep things of GOD (I Corinthians 2:12). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD gives us HIS divine guidance (Acts 13:2), divine visions and revelations (Galatians 2:2;

II Corinthians 12:1-5), divine warning (Acts 20:23; 21:4) and divine prophecies (I Thessalonians 5:20). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD guides and declares that are to come (St. John 16:12-13) and convicts the world concerning sin and concerning righteousness and concerning judgment (St. John 16:8). So, no one should despise or quench the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (I Thessalonians 5:19-20).

The divine teaching and preaching of a prophet or GOD's minister are the divine commandments of the LORD, having the authentic authority of the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST (I Corinthians 14:37). The prophet or GOD's minister should be strong and his word should be frank in dealing with the disorderly believers or the back sliders or the sinners (I Timothy 5:20; Titus 1:13; 2:15).

The Body of CHRIST is HIS Church (Ephesians 1:22-23). CHRIST's Church consists of the saved/the redeemed/the believers (Acts 2:47). So, CHRIST's Body consists of HIS believers (I Corinthians 12:27). Apostle Paul teaches that all the members (parts) of one's body are essential for the health of one's body and no organ should be neglected. Thus, all members or believers of the Church are equally essential and no one should be neglected (I Corinthians 12:12-27). The spiritual man spiritually discerns all these things, but he himself is discerned by no one (I Corinthians 2:14-15). The HOLY SPIRIT of GOD or the divine COMFORTER comforts us and teaches all things to us and brings all things to our remembrance (St. John 14:26).

The world cannot receive the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the SPIRIT of TRUTH. The world cannot receive HIM, because it does not see HIM or know HIM. But HIS people know HIM, because HE dwells with them and will be with them.

*“Even the SPIRIT of TRUTH; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth HIM not, neither knoweth HIM: but ye know HIM; for HE dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.”*

St. John 14:17

Apostle Paul distinguishes different kinds of ministers, viz. apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers for the working of different ministries in the Church, by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (I Corinthians 12:28; Ephesians 4:11-13). He also distinguishes

different kinds of spiritual gifts by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the self-same SPIRIT (I Corinthians 12:4-11).

*“For to one is given by the SPIRIT the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same SPIRIT; To another faith by the same SPIRIT; to another the gifts of healing by the same SPIRIT; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that ONE and the selfsame SPIRIT, dividing to every man severally as HE will.”*

I Corinthians 12:8-11

Apostle Paul tells about the fruit of the SPIRIT by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, to have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, the works of the flesh (Galatians 5:19-21), but rather reprove them (Ephesians 5:11), for it is shameful even to speak of those things which are done by them in secret (Ephesians 5:12). Love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance, righteousness and truth are the fruit of the SPIRIT (Galatians 5:22-23; Ephesians 5:9). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

## 6.12 THE SUPERIOR AND FINAL TRIUMPHANT STATUS OF CHRISTIANS! THE SUPERIORITY AND FINALITY AND FULLNESS OF CHRISTIANITY!

**Our GOD, JESUS CHRIST'S wonderful doing is HIS Glorification.** GOD's glorifying is certain. In the final stage of GOD's Glorification, the saved will be like JESUS CHRIST by the glorious work of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD (I John 3:2; Romans 8:11). Thus, I John 3:2 tells us what the saved are becoming—reflections of GOD, JESUS CHRIST. This transfiguration process from glory to glory has already begun in the believers' life (II Corinthians 3:18). Final glorification is the ultimate step in GOD's perfect salvation, in which, GOD will perfectly change or transfigure the believers' mortal lowly body, conforming it to the resurrected glorious body of CHRIST (Philippians 3:21). At last, in the kingdom of GOD, **GOD's eternal glory** will be shared by the believers fully (I Peter 5:10).

Now, the believers or the saved or the saints or the redeemed or the true Christians or the ONE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD have come to the most glorious and joyful company of GOD, saints and angels.

***"But ye are come unto mount Zion***—they have come to mount Zion, the New Jerusalem, the eternal dwelling place of the eternal GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and HIS people,

***and unto the city of the Living GOD, the heavenly Jerusalem***—the New Jerusalem, the full and ultimate rewards and reality of heavenly Jerusalem are depicted in Revelation 21; 22:1-5; everything will be new, pure, secure and blissful in New Jerusalem,

***and to an innumerable company of angels***—an indefinitely large number of joyful heavenly angels, and

***To the general assembly and church of the first-born, which are written in heaven***—the believers or the saints in general are the church of the first-born whose names are written in the Book of Life in heaven,

***and to GOD the Judge of all***—GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the righteous Judge of all, the righteous Judge of the living and the dead,

***and to the spirits of just men made perfect***—the souls of the pre-Christian believers or the Old Testament saints who received this eternal blessing by the horrible death of our LORD JESUS CHRIST on the cross at Calvary,

***And to JESUS the Mediator of the new covenant***—JESUS, the Mediator of the new covenant brings men into HIS divine communion; HE seems very close to us and HE welcomes us into HIS divine presence,

***and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel***"—the most holy blood of JESUS, the living blood sprinkled all over on earth speaks to GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF and to us, the sinners. The power and presence of sins are completely removed by the blood of JESUS. HIS blood cleanses us from all sin. Just as JESUS CHRIST rose from the grave, we rise to a new life of divine fellowship with HIM. As true Christians, we are citizens of the heavenly Jerusalem right now; because CHRIST

rules over our lives, the HOLY SPIRIT is always with us, and we experience divine fellowship with HIM and with HIS saints and with HIS angels. **This is the superior and final triumphant status of Christians. This is the superiority and finality and fullness of Christianity.** Our LORD JESUS CHRIST calls us all to receive these glorious blessings of HIM. Glory be to GOD! **See *Hebrews 12:22-24*.**

Again, the **Most Holy Place of All** or the **Holiest Place of All** (the **Holy of Holies**) is the highest ever place, far above the heavens (skies), is in heaven, the kingdom of GOD (Exodus 26:33; Hebrews 8:5; 9:2-3). **No one can even approach that Most Holy Place of All or the Holiest of All in heaven, where our Ever Living GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is dwelling in the unapproachable (so bright) light** (I Timothy 6:16). **This is one of the divine secrets of GOD.**

**In the Most Holy Place of All or in the Holiest of All, there are two excellently glorious and majestic thrones; one for GOD the FATHER and the other for GOD the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST. GOD the SON's throne is on the right hand side of the throne of GOD the FATHER (St. Mark 16:19). This is also one of the divine secrets of GOD.**

Further, **GOD the FATHER is All-Spirit** (St. John 4:24; II Corinthians 3:17-18); **and HE is invisible** (I Timothy 6:16; I John 4:12). **GOD the SON, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is visible; and HE is the exact image of the invisible GOD, GOD the FATHER** (Colossians 1:14-15). **GOD the HOLY SPIRIT is also All-Spirit and invisible. In GOD the SON—the LORD JESUS CHRIST, GOD the FATHER as well as GOD the HOLY SPIRIT abides as ONE GOD and ONLY TRUE GOD and ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. This is also one of the divine secrets of GOD.**

Now, the **Holy Place** is also in heaven, the kingdom of GOD. **Our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will reveal HIMSELF in the Holy Place at HIS right time where HIS people/the saved/the redeemed/the regenerated/the born-again/the holy/the righteous/the true believers/the saints/the true Christians can see and worship HIM face to face. This is also one of the divine secrets of GOD.**

**In the eternal state, in the kingdom of heaven/in the kingdom of GOD/in the divine world/in the unseen world of wonders/in the celestial world/in the New Jerusalem/in the heavenly Zion, our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST will give HIS people,**



HIS eternal joy and happiness and gladness, HIS eternal bliss and HIS eternal reign with HIM. There will be no sin or evil and there will be no tears, death, sorrow, crying or pain (Revelation 21:4). **This is also one of the divine secrets of GOD.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Now, our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST lovingly calls us all for this superior and final triumphant status of Christians and for this superiority and finality and fullness of Christianity. For this, the divine sweet and gentle and delicate little voice of the ONE GOD and the ONLY TRUE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's final call to be the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY TRUE PEOPLE and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is continuously reverberating in our hearts.

*"Unto you, O men, I call; and MY voice is to the sons of man."*

Proverbs 8:4

*"For I have satiated the weary soul, and I have replenished every sorrowful soul."*

Jeremiah 31:25

**True Christians live a life eternal for JESUS CHRIST in faith and love. Christianity is the faith and love of JESUS CHRIST with ever-new and everlasting beginnings.**

**"... Peace be with you all that are in CHRIST JESUS. Amen."**

I Peter 5:14

### 6.13 MY MOST HOLY FAITH (BELIEF) AND LIVING HOPE.

**My** beloved brothers and sisters in CHRIST,

As the darkest hour of dawn indicates first light, this present time of the darkest spiritual hour of dawn indicates the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST—the Sun of Righteousness (Malachi 4:2) through HIS divine righteous light of life (St. John 8:12), is going to reveal HIS glorious secrets and fulfil all HIS divine promises of the former and latter spiritual rains (Joel 2:23) about HIS absolutely wonderful works—even greater works or greater things than HE has done in this world, when HE was in this world (St. John 14:12-14), in spreading HIS divine kingdom—the kingdom of GOD or

the kingdom of heaven through the preaching of the Gospel of GOD's Salvation by HIS called and the ordained and the sent-ministers, by the divine leading and directing and moving and working of HIS HOLY SPIRIT. What a great divine leading and directing and moving and working of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD it will be!

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's revelations will surely come to pass. All HIS promises will be fulfilled appropriately at HIS appointed time (Habakkuk 2:3). **Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is never early or never late. HE is always on time.** Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST and HIS glorious and miraculous works will be revealed to the whole world by great labours, pains, tribulations, sufferings, afflictions, trials, striving and efforts of HIS ministers/servants only. Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) had already filled up the LORD-given things in his flesh for HIS Body's sake, which is the church (Galatians 4:11, 19; Colossians 1:24-25, 29).

The raising up of the righteous man Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) from the east (Isaiah 41:2)—from India, from the east of Jerusalem in Israel, that is, from Malavilai in India, Tamil Nadu, Kanniyakumari District—Kanniyakumari is Cape Comorin, the southernmost point, a headland of India, by our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and the great wonders and miraculous things to happen through him in the world are great mysteries/secrets, which were kept secret by the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST from generations and before the world began for our glory; but now the mysteries/secrets are made manifest by the Scriptures and by the Gospel preaching, according to the commandment of the everlasting GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, to make it known to all nations. These secrets/mysteries of GOD are revealed and manifested by the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD for all people in the world to know and believe. And these are all written by me in the most wonderful name of the LORD JESUS CHRIST by my most holy faith (belief) which is spreading throughout the whole world unto all in every place and by my living hope by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST from the dead (Romans 16:25-26; I Corinthians 2:6-16; Ephesians 3:5; Colossians 1:26-28; Romans 1:8; I Thessalonians 1:8; Jude 20; I Peter 1:3). Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

The above miraculous thing is *"the mystery (secret) of HIS (the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's) will, according to HIS good pleasure which HE hath (has) purposed in HIMSELF"* (Ephesians 1:9). *"In whom also we (GOD's ministers) have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated (predestined) according to the purpose of HIM who worketh (works) all things after (according to) the counsel of HIS own will"* (Ephesians 1:11). Glory be to GOD!

In the 20th Century, when Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) was alive, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has prophesied in America, Mumbai (India) and in various parts of the world about the glorious works of the former and latter spiritual rains (Joel 2: 23; Zechariah 10:1). After he slept in CHRIST, in the 21st century also, the LORD has prophesied in India and in various parts of the world about the glorious works of the former and latter spiritual rains. **The LORD has prophesied in India and in various parts of the world that these spiritual rains will start from the southernmost point of India, in the headland of India. In the southernmost point of India, in the headland of India lies Kanniyakumari (Cape Comorin) which is in Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu. Thus, from Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India, the LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST's glorious works of the former and latter spiritual rains will start. In Kanniyakumari District lies Malavilai. In Malavilai, our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST has raised HIS Church, Adhi Penthecosthe Sathya Sabhai (Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church) as the continuing church of the first century Christian church by Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya), for these last days, for HIS glorious spiritual works. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!**

Once our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST has revealed in a vision to Sadhu. G. Devanesan (Aiya) about the raining of the former spiritual rain and about the latter spiritual rain. The Word of GOD or the seeds are selected and prepared and made ready for sowing; darkness and gloominess and clouds and thick clouds and flashing clouds are seen; thunderings and voices are heard for raining. Hereafter, the rain has to be rained (Joel 2:23; Zechariah 10:1). Glory be to GOD!

Peace be with you all. The grace of our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen.

SADHU. C. SELVA RAJ (APPA)

*The Author of "ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!"—  
"THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET!"*

Now is the year of GOD's redemption (Isaiah 63:4). Now is the day of GOD's salvation and now is GOD's well-acceptable right time (II Corinthians 6:2). So, everyone should be saved/redeemed/regenerated/born-again at this blessed time and live a holy life with the anointment of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD to see GOD (Hebrews 12:14). This blessed time has already begun from the first century during the first century Christian church—from the First Coming of our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST as our SAVIOUR AND REDEEMER—from the death and resurrection of our LORD JESUS CHRIST—from the day of Pentecost, that is, from the day of the filling or the pouring or the raining or the baptizing or the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD of the former spiritual rain (Acts 2:1-12); and this blessed time will continue till the filling or the pouring or the raining or the baptizing or the anointing of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD of the former spiritual rain and the latter spiritual rain (Joel 2:23)—till the fulfilling of the Great Promise, the Wonderful Promise of our LORD JESUS CHRIST in St. John 14:12-14, doing even greater works or greater things than our LORD JESUS CHRIST has done in this world, by a man who believes or who has faith in HIM. **This is also one of the divine secrets of GOD.**

*"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on ME, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto MY FATHER. And whatsoever ye shall ask in MY name, that will I do, that the FATHER may be glorified in the SON. If ye shall ask any thing in MY name, I will do it."*

St. John 14:12-14

In the days to come, GOD's people will take root; they will begin to grow; they will flower; and they will fill the whole world with fruit (Isaiah 27:6). They will have their root downward, holding CHRIST, the Head of the Body—the Head of the Church, for their

nourishment (Colossians 2:19) and bear their fruit upward (Isaiah 37:31), according to HIS glorious promise. Glory be to GOD!

*"HE shall (will) cause them that come of Jacob to take root: Israel shall (will) blossom and bud, and fill the face of the world with fruit."*

Isaiah 27:6

Spiritually 'Jacob or Israel' means 'GOD's people or the saved.'

**N**ow, My beloved brothers and sisters in CHRIST, who read this precious book, give the most sincere thought to what you have read in this precious book.

**Do not destroy your precious souls; do not destroy your precious lives; do not commit any sin; do not play with sin; do not play with eternal fire; do not play in sin; do not play in eternal fire. Sin is more horrible than any horribly stretching flames of horrible fire. Playing with sin means committing sin; playing in sin also means committing sin. Playing with sin or playing in sin or committing sin will bring the second death—the eternal hell—the everlasting hell-fire—the most horribly stretching flames of the most horrible hell-fire—the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8). Those who are playing with sin or playing in sin or committing sin or indulging in sin will be totally destroyed eternally in hell, the eternal hell-fire. What a pitiful thing it will be! What a pathetic thing it will be! What a painful thing it will be! What a sorrowful thing it will be!**

To escape hell and enter into CHRIST's eternal kingdom/the kingdom of heaven/the kingdom of GOD/the divine world/the unseen world of wonders/the celestial world/the New Jerusalem/the heavenly Zion, everyone should be saved/redeemed/regenerated/born-again; everyone should be holy/righteous; everyone should be true believers/true Christians; everyone should be filled with (Acts 2:1-4)/baptized with (Acts 1:4-5)/anointed with (I John 2:20) the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD, the Holy Power from on High (St. Luke 24:49; Acts 1:8) to live a holy life; everyone should have a prayerful and contemplative (thoughtful) life of a true Christian with the full spiritual growth; everyone should have GOD's glorious decorative presence, HIS

divine holiness, divine righteousness and divine beauty (Psalm 17:15; 96:9); everyone's conduct, character and behaviour should be holy, righteous and beautiful in the sight of all others; everyone should always remember and do according to the heavenly commandments of the heavenly GOD; and everyone should always be under the heavenly binding of the heavenly Government of the heavenly GOD (Numbers 15:38-40)—the ONE GOD and the ONLY TRUE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST our REDEEMER. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, will be present in this divine unseen world of wonders/in HIS kingdom of heaven with HIS people/the saved/the redeemed/the regenerated/the born-again/the holy/the righteous/the saints/the true believers/the true Christians and they can see and worship HIM face to face. What a blessed people they are! These people are the ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE PEOPLE and the ONLY ONE TRUE PEOPLE of the ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE GOD and the ONLY ONE TRUE GOD—the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST our REDEEMER. Glory be to GOD!

In the divine unseen world of wonders/in the kingdom of GOD/in the kingdom of heaven, there will be peace, freedom, security and endless life. There will be eternal joy and happiness and gladness. There will be no sin; no guilt; no evil; no transgression (no disobedience); no trespass; no guile; no malice; no hypocrisy; no unholiness; no unrighteousness; no fall; no shame; no curse; no temptation; no pain; no disease; no weeping; no gnashing of teeth; no tears; no sorrows; no sighing; no crying; no death; no parting with loved-ones; no darkness. Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's own 'light perpetual' will shine on HIS people for ever and ever. HE will give HIS people, HIS eternal joy and happiness and gladness, HIS eternal bliss and HIS eternal reign with HIM. What a joyful heaven it is! What a wonderful heaven it is! See also 7 HEAVEN, THE KINGDOM OF GOD at pages 556-558; 7.1 THE MOST WONDERFUL HEAVEN at pages 558-559; 7.2 THE MOST GLORIOUS LIFE IN HEAVEN at pages 559-560 and 7.3 GOD'S KINGDOM FOR MANKIND at page 560.

Now, the Holy Bible begins with the first verse,

*"In the beginning GOD created the heaven and the earth."*

Genesis 1:1

And **the Holy Bible ends with the last verse,**

*"The grace of our LORD JESUS CHRIST be with you all. Amen."*

Revelation 22:21

**The first and the last verses of the Holy Bible or the Beginning and the Ending of the Holy Bible, reveal the following divine secrets of GOD:**

1. There is a GOD. There is ONE GOD. There is ONLY ONE GOD. There is ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. HE is the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.
2. GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is GOD for ever and ever—from everlasting to everlasting—from eternity past to eternity future (Psalm 90:2). So, GOD has no beginning and no ending. But, HE is the Beginning and HE is the Ending. HE is the First and HE is the Last (Revelation 22:13).
3. Thus, GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the Great 'I AM'. HE is 'I AM THAT (WHO) I AM' (Exodus 3:14).
4. GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the sole Creator. HE created the heaven and the earth out of nothing. HE created all things, except mankind, out of nothing, without any raw material, without anyone's help, without anyone's counsel or plan and without any space of time. For HE spoke, and they were (Psalm 33:9). [But, HE created man from the dust of the ground by HIS most holy hands and breathed into HIS nostrils and the man became a living soul. Thus, his living soul will never die or vanish. In every human being, there is a living soul and it will never die or vanish. At last, after the judgment of GOD, the souls of sinners will be thrown into hell, the eternal hell-fire and the souls of the saved/the redeemed/the regenerated/the born-again/the holy/the righteous/the saints/the true believers/the true Christians will enter into heaven, the eternal kingdom of GOD. See also Genesis Chapters 1 and 2.]

5. GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is the great Mighty GOD. HE is the Almighty GOD (Revelation 1:8). HE is Omnipotent—All-Powerful (St. Matthew 28:18).
6. GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Omnipresent—Present at All Times Everywhere (Psalm 139:7-12). Heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain HIM (II Chronicles 6:18).
7. GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST is Omniscient—All-Knowing (Jeremiah 51:15).
8. The Holy Bible's ending or the last verse of the Holy Bible itself clearly reveals that the Almighty GOD mentioned in the first verse of the Holy Bible is the LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.
9. So, the divine grace of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the ONE GOD and the ONLY TRUE GOD and the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD is always essential for everyone/everybody.

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST says,**

*"Heaven (the sky) and earth shall (will) pass away: but MY Words shall (will) not pass away."*

St. Mark 13:31

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST asks a question,**

*"For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"*

St. Mark 8:36-37

**So, no one should decay his/her own soul and inherit hell, the fiery lake of burning sulphur (Revelation 21:8)—the eternal hell-fire.**

**Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST warns,**

*"And, behold, I come quickly; and MY reward is with ME, to give every man according as his work shall be."*

Revelation 22:12

'shall be' means 'is'.

**Again, HE warns,**



*"Surely I come quickly."*

Revelation 22:20

Our GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST's revelations will surely come to pass. All HIS promises will be fulfilled appropriately at HIS appointed time (Habakkuk 2:3). **Our LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST is never early or never late. HE is always on time.** Glory be to GOD!

The Apostle John's prayer (the last prayer in the Holy Bible) as well as his response to the LORD's warning is,

*"Amen. Even so, Come, LORD JESUS."*

Revelation 22:20

So, we should also pray this prayer and have this response—"Come, LORD JESUS." We should also pray to HIM for HIS divine love and divine mercy and divine grace (Revelation 22:21) be with us always, for us to be always ready to see the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST with HIS divine holiness (Hebrews 12:14). O our GOD, be love upon us always; be mercy upon us always; and be grace upon us always. We should also ask these in the most wonderful name of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, the REDEEMER, the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD. Amen.

The entire Holy Bible concludes with a strong and overwhelming desire for the LORD JESUS CHRIST's coming expressed as a prayer—"Come, LORD JESUS." So, we should also have this prayer and have this desire to see the coming of our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST, during HIS Secret Coming to catch up with HIM HIS saints/the saved/the true Christians. Praise The LORD! Alleluia!

*"But it is good for me to draw near to GOD: I have put my trust in the LORD GOD, that I may declare all THY works."*

Psalms 73:28

**"The grace of the LORD JESUS CHRIST, and the love of GOD, and the communion of the HOLY GHOST (the HOLY SPIRIT), be with you all. Amen."**

II Corinthians 13:14

To complete this divine GOD's work "ONE GOD !!  
ONE PEOPLE !!" - "THE DOCUMENT REVEALING  
GOD'S SECRET !!" took about 18 years.

*Praise The LORD! Alleluia!*

## PRAYERS OF ADORATION!

**We praise** YOUR *Holy name, most Holy* FATHER, FATHER,

**We extol** YOUR *wonderful name, most wonderful* FATHER, FATHER,

**We glorify** YOUR *eternal name, eternal* FATHER, FATHER,

**We honour** YOUR *mighty name above all names, Almighty* FATHER, FATHER,

**We worship** YOUR *gracious name, most gracious* FATHER, FATHER,

**We lift up** YOUR *blessed name, most blessed* FATHER, FATHER,

**We magnify** YOUR *majesty's name, most majestic* FATHER, FATHER,

**We adore** YOUR *excellent greatness, most excellent* FATHER, FATHER,

**We admire** YOUR *endless love, most admirable* FATHER, FATHER,

**We thank** YOUR *bountiful goodness, most bounteous* FATHER, FATHER,

**We revere** YOUR *astonishing healings, most astonishing* FATHER, FATHER,

**We esteem** YOUR *high dignity, most dignified* FATHER, FATHER.

**Glory be to our GOD the FATHER, and to our GOD the SON and to our GOD the HOLY SPIRIT—the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST, as it was in the beginning, is now and ever shall be, world without end. Amen.**

## *A* CHRISTMAS ADORATION!

**TO OUR GOD THE FATHER** *WHO HAS CREATED*  
*all the worlds and all the creatures, be:*

*Praise! Alleluia! Amen! Glory!*

**To our LORD GOD** *who has all might and*  
*all authority, be:*

*Thanks! Honour! Glory! Amen!*

**To our LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST**  
*who is the Triune GOD, be:*

*Praise! Alleluia! Hosanna! Hosanna!*

## *A* VICTORY ADORATION!

**With St. Paul, let us sing a victory song of praise  
and thanksgiving (I Corinthians 15:51-57).**

*Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but  
we shall all be changed,*

*In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for  
the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible,  
and we shall be changed.*

*For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal  
must put on immortality.*

*So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and  
this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought  
to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in  
victory.*

*O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?*

*The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.*

*But thanks be to GOD, which giveth us the victory through  
our LORD JESUS CHRIST.*

***May this precious book***

**"ONE GOD !! ONE PEOPLE !!" –**

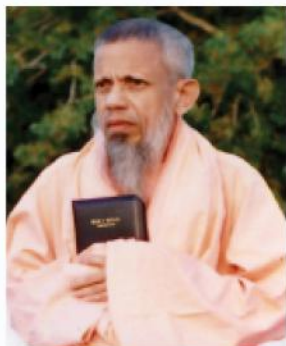
**"THE DOCUMENT REVEALING GOD'S SECRET !!"**

***bring great worldly and heavenly blessings  
to you and help you to reach heaven,  
the kingdom of GOD.***

***Glory***

*be to our ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD,  
the LORD JESUS CHRIST,  
the ONE who gives us air to breathe;  
the ONE who gives us water to drink;  
the ONE who gives us food to eat;  
the ONE who gives us clothes to clothe;  
the ONE who gives us shelters to shelter; and  
the ONE who gives to all, life and breath and  
all temporal and spiritual things (Acts 17:25).*

***Amen.***



It is a well-known fact that the ancient Tamil proverb, "ONE GOD!! ONE PEOPLE!!" has been widely accepted, approved, recognized and often quoted as truth. Yet, the question arises—Why are there so many sects of people, so many gods and so many ways of worship? It is because of man's sins, vain thoughts, immoralities (including incest, adultery, fornication, homosexuality, lesbian relationship, bestiality, or even the desire for such immoral activities), lasciviousness, hallucinations, revellings (revelries, orgies and carousals), rivalries, obscenities, debauchery, insensitiveness, selfishness, envy, murder, idolatry, sorcery, greediness, covetousness, drunkenness, ignorance and lack of true wisdom. It is because of man's heart and mind, depraved and deceived by Satan, the devil and darkened and hardened by him. As a result, man's heart is embedded in pride and rebellion and nurtured in wickedness and evil.

No wonder, man with such a heart is unwilling to receive the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD, the LORD JESUS CHRIST and to worship HIM in spirit and in truth, with holiness and fear.

The LORD GOD, JESUS CHRIST knew Sadhu. C. Selva Raj (Aiya) and predestined him by HIS will to be a servant of JESUS CHRIST before HE formed him in his mother's womb and accordingly ordained him to glorify, in these last days the ONE AND ONLY TRUE GOD through this book. This book is a divine writing of the subject of this present time and eternity. Now, by HIS abundant grace, he is leading HIS church, Beginning Pentecostal Truth Church at Malavilai [Post Bag No. 3, Kulasekharam-629 161, Kanniyakumari District, Tamil Nadu, India].

The LORD by HIS abundant grace gave him the desire and the talent to write this book. The ways to seek, to find and to know intimately and to continue to serve and please the ONE GOD through the Word of GOD, have been lucidly explained and exhaustively dealt with. To understand its contents one should read it thoroughly and thoughtfully with prayer and devotion. If we keep and obey the facts and truths of this book we will receive immense blessings.

[www.bptchurch.org](http://www.bptchurch.org)

[www.onegodonepeople-sadhuselvaraj.com](http://www.onegodonepeople-sadhuselvaraj.com)